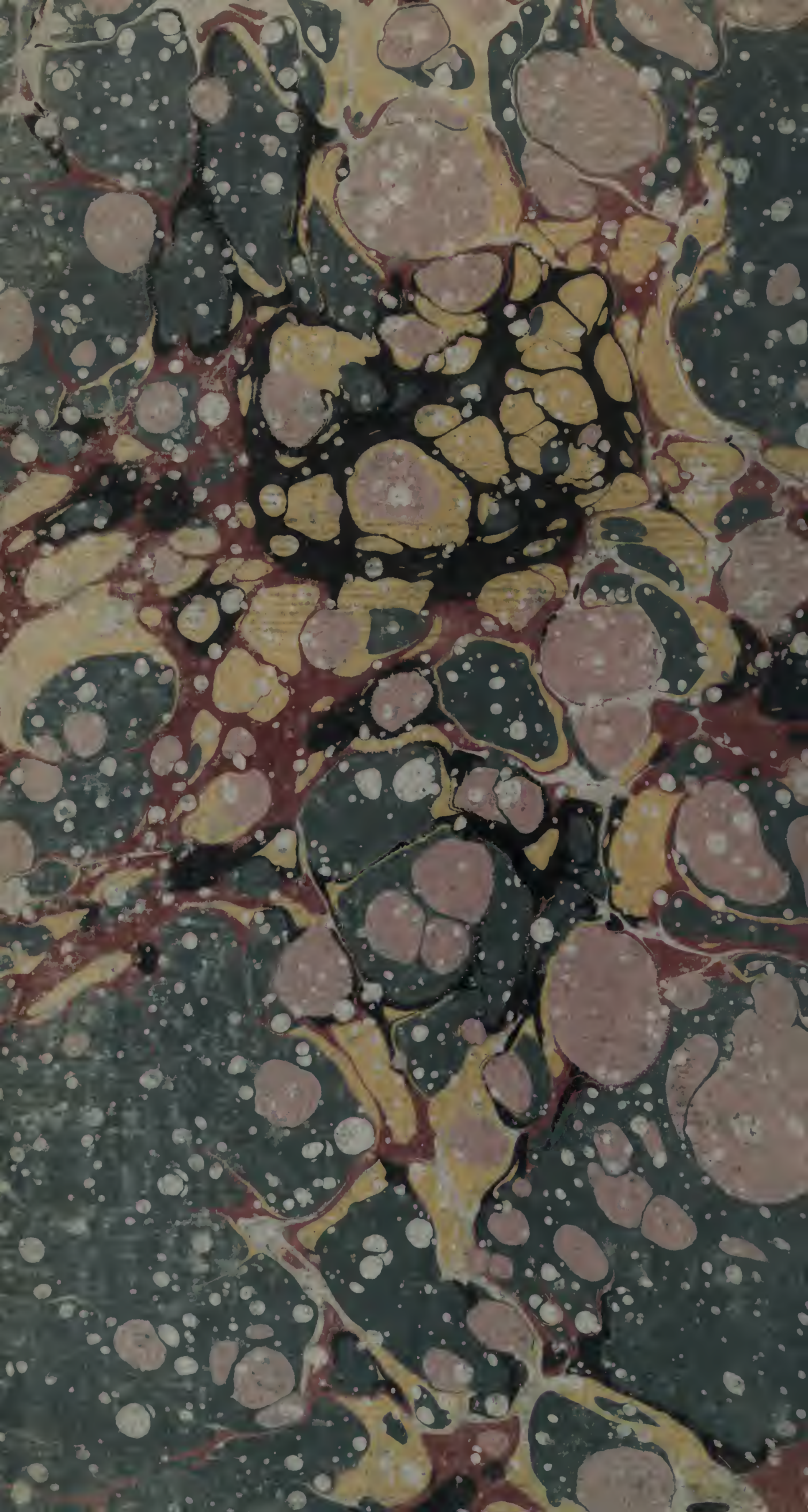
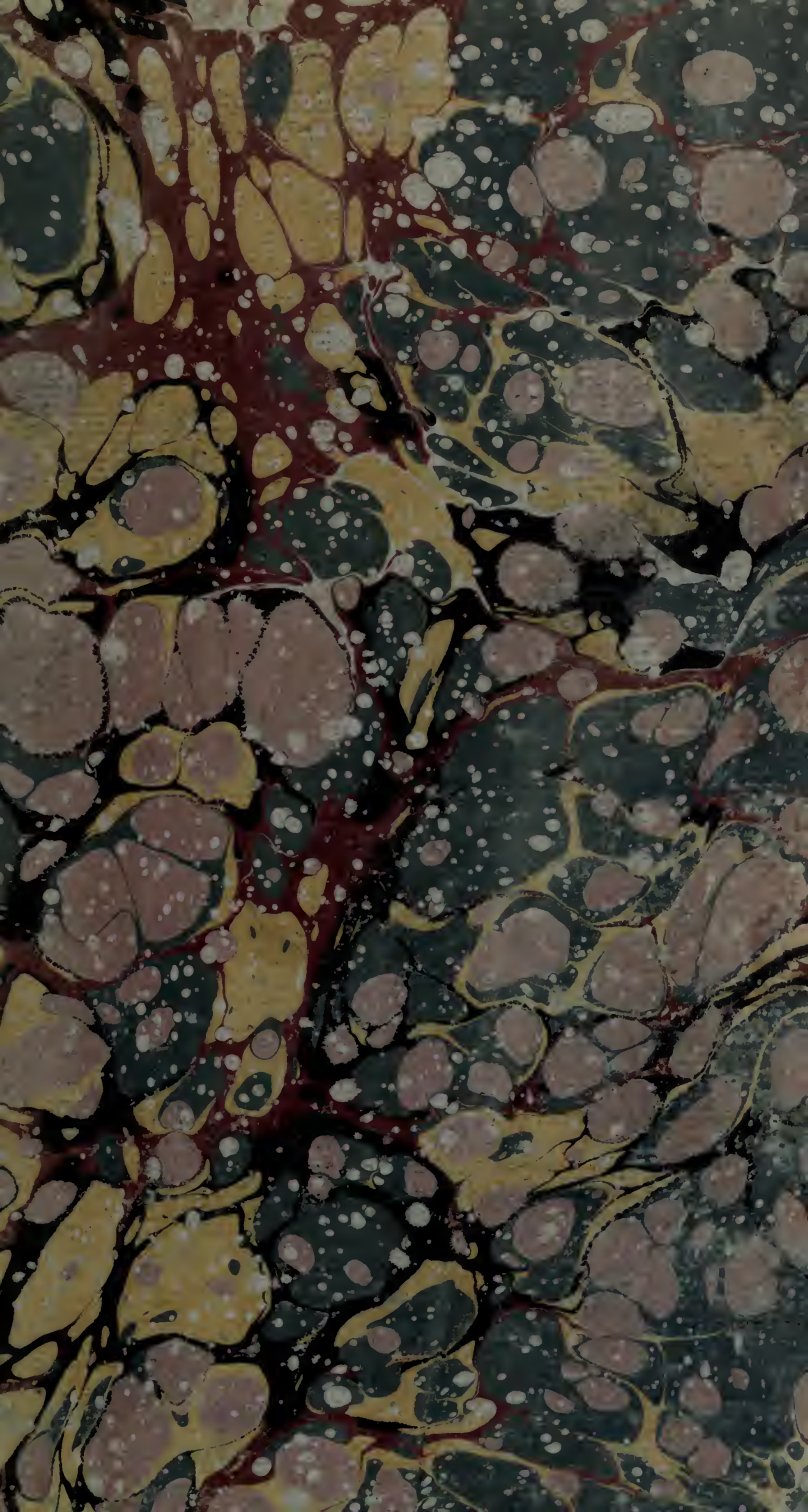




7
49
81
95
108
140
226
238
292
356
412
10
46
98
141
183
202

THE
Noveliſt's Magazine.

VOL. VI.

(CONTAINING)

Peregrine Pickle,

and

Marmontel's Tales.

LONDON:

Printed for Harriſon and Co.

No. 18, Paternoſter-Row.

1783.

PR
1297
N6
V.6

LIBRARY
FEB 2 1965
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

957868

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

BY DR. SMOLLETT.

RESPICERE EXEMPLAR VITÆ MORUMQUE JUBEBO
DOCTUM IMITATOREM, ET VERAS HINC DUCERE VOCES. HOR.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. Paternoster-Row.
MDCC LXXXI.

markable degree. Nature, in all probability, had mixed little or nothing inflammable in his compoſition; or, whatever ſeeds of exceſs ſhe might have ſown within him, were effectually ſtifled and deſtroyed by the auſterity of his education.

The ſallies of his youth, far from being inordinate or criminal, never exceeded the bounds of that decent jollity which an extraordinary pot, on extraordinary occaſions, may be ſuppoſed to have produced in a club of ſedate book-keepers, whoſe imaginations were neither very warm nor luxuriant. Little ſubject to refined ſenſations, he was ſcarce ever diſturbed with violent emotions of any kind. The paſſion of love never interrupted his tranquillity; and if, as Mr. Creech ſays after Horace,

Not to admire is all the art I know,
To make men happy, and to keep them ſo;

Mr. Pickle was, undoubtedly, poſſeſſed of that invaluable ſecret; at leaſt, he was never known to betray the faintest ſymptom of tranſport, except one evening at the club, where he obſerved, with ſome demonſtrations of vivacity, that he had dined upon a delicate loin of veal.

Notwithſtanding this appearance of phlegm, he could not help feeling his diſappointments in trade; and upon the failure of a certain under-writer, by which he loſt five hundred pounds, declared his deſign of relinquiſhing buſineſs, and retiring to the country. In this reſolution he was comforted and encouraged by his only ſiſter, Mrs. Grizzle, who had managed his family ſince the death of his father, and was now in the thirtieth year of her maidenhood, with a fortune of five thouſand pounds, and a large ſtock of œconomy and devotion.

Theſe qualifications, one would think, might have been the means of abridging the terms of her celibacy, as ſhe never expreſſed any averſion to wedlock; but, it ſeems, ſhe was too delicate in her choice, to find a mate to her inclination in the city: for I cannot ſuppoſe that ſhe remained ſo long unſolicited; though the charms of her perſon were not altogether enchanting, nor her manner over and above agreeable. Excluſive of a very wan (not to call it ſallow) complexion, which, perhaps, was the effects of her virginity and mortification, ſhe had a caſt in her eyes that was not at all engaging, and ſuch an extent of mouth, as no art or affectation could contract into any proportionable dimenſion: then, her piety was rather peeviſh than reſigned, and did not in the leaſt diminiſh a certain ſtateline ſs in her demeanour and converſation, that delighted in communicating the importance and honour of her family; which, by the bye, was not to be traced two generations back, by all the power of heraldry or tradition.

She ſeemed to have renounced all the ideas ſhe had acquired before her father ſerved the office of ſheriff; and the æra which regulated the dates of all her obſervations, was the mayoralty of her papa. Nay, ſo ſolicitous was this good lady for the ſupport and propagation of the family-name, that, ſuppreſſing every ſelfiſh motive, ſhe actually prevailed upon her brother to combat with his own diſpoſition, and even ſurmount it ſo far, as to declare a paſſion for the perſon whom he afterwards wedded, as we ſhall ſee in the ſequel. Indeed, ſhe was the ſpur that inſtigated him in all his extraordinary undertakings; and I queſtion whether or not he would have been able to diſengage himſelf from that courſe of life in which he had ſo long mechanically moved, unleſs he had been rouzed and actuated by her inceſſant exhortations. London, ſhe obſerved, was a receptacle of iniquity, where an honeſt unſuſpecting man was every day in danger of falling a ſacrifice to craft; where innocence was expoſed to continual temptations, and virtue eternally perſecuted by malice and ſlander; where every thing was ruled by caprice and corruption, and merit utterly diſcouraged and deſpiſed. This laſt imputation ſhe pronounced with ſuch emphaſis and chagrin, as plainly denoted how far ſhe conſidered herſelf as an example of what ſhe advanced; and really the charge was juſtified by the conſtructions that were put upon her retreat by her female friends, who, far from imputing it to the laudable motives that induced her, inſinuated, in ſarcaſtick commendations, that ſhe had good reaſon to be diſſatisfied with a place where ſhe had been ſo long overlooked; and that it was certainly her wiſeſt courſe to make her laſt effort in the country, where, in all probability, her talents would be

leſs

less eclipsed, and her fortune more attractive.

Be this as it will, her admonitions, though they were powerful enough to convince, would have been insufficient to overcome the languor and *vis inertiæ* of her brother, had she not reinforced her arguments, by calling in question the credit of two or three merchants, with whom he was embarked in trade.

Alarmed at these hints of intelligence, he exerted himself effectually; he withdrew his money from trade, and laying it out in bank-stock and India-bonds, removed to a house in the country, which his father had built near the sea-side, for the convenience of carrying on a certain branch of traffick in which he had been deeply concerned.

Here then Mr. Pickle fixed his habitation for life, in the six and thirtieth year of his age; and though the pangs he felt at parting with his intimate companions, and quitting all his former connexions, were not quite so keen as to produce any dangerous disorder in his constitution, he did not fail to be extremely disconcerted at his first entrance into a scene of life to which he was totally a stranger. Not but that he met with abundance of people in the country, who, in consideration of his fortune, courted his acquaintance, and breathed nothing but friendship and hospitality: yet even the trouble of receiving and returning these civilities, was an intolerable fatigue to a man of his habits and disposition. He therefore left the care of the ceremonial to his sister, who indulged herself in all the pride of formality; while he himself having made a discovery of a publick-house in the neighbourhood, went thither every evening, and enjoyed his pipe and cann; being very well satisfied with the behaviour of the landlord, whose communicative temper was a great comfort to his own taciturnity; for he shunned all superfluity of speech, as much as he avoided any other unnecessary expence.

CHAP. II.

HE IS MADE ACQUAINTED WITH THE CHARACTERS OF COMMODORE TRUNNION AND HIS ADHERENTS; MEETS WITH THEM BY ACCIDENT, AND CONTRACTS AN INTIMACY WITH THAT COMMANDER.

THIS loquacious publican soon gave him sketches of all the characters in the county; and, among others, described that of his next neighbour, Commodore Trunnion, which was altogether singular and odd. 'The commodore and your worship,' said he, 'will in a short time be hand and glove; he has a power of money, and spends it like a prince—that is, in his own way; for to be sure he is a little humorsome, as the saying is, and swears woundily; though I'll be sworn he means no more harm than a sucking babe. Lord help us! it will do your honour's heart good to hear him tell a story, as how he lay along-side of the French, yard-arm and yard-arm, board and board, and of heaving grapplings, and stink-pots, and grapes, and round and double-headed partridges, crows and carters. Laud have mercy upon us! he has been a great warrior in his time, and lost an eye and a heel in the service.—Then he does not live like any other Christian landman; but keeps garrison in his house, as if he were in the midst of his enemies, and makes his servants turn out in the night, watch and watch, (as he calls it) all the year round. His habitation is defended by a ditch, over which he has laid a draw-bridge, and planted his court-yard with patereroes continually loaded with shot, under the direction of one Mr. Hatchway, who had one of his legs shot away while he acted as lieutenant on board the commodore's ship; and now being on half-pay, lives with him as his companion. The lieutenant is a very brave man, a great joker, and, as the saying is, hath got the length of his commander's foot. Though he has another favourite in the house, called Tom Pipes, that was his boatswain's mate, and now keeps the servants in order. Tom is a man of a few words, but an excellent hand at a song concerning the boatswain's whistle, husse-cap and chuck-farthing—there is not such another pipe in the county. So that the commodore lives very happy in his own manner; thof he be sometimes thrown into perilous passions and quandaries, by the application of his poor kinsmen, whom

'he

'he can't abide, becauſe as how ſome 'of them were the firſt occaſion of his 'going to ſea. Then he ſweats with 'agony at the ſight of an attorney; juſt 'for all the world, as ſome people have 'an antipathy to a cat; for it ſeems he 'was once at law for ſtriking one of his 'officers, and caſt in a ſwinging ſum. 'He is, moreover, exceedingly afflicted 'with goblins that diſturb his reſt, and 'keep ſuch a racket in his houſe, that 'you would think (God bleſs us!) all 'the devils in hell had broke looſe upon 'him. It was no longer ago than laſt 'year, about this time, that he was 'tormented the live-long night by two 'miſchievous ſpirits that got into his 'chamber, and played a thouſand pranks 'about his hammock, (for there is not 'one bed within his walls.) Well, 'Sir, he rung his bell, called up all his 'ſervants, got lights, and made a 'thorough ſearch; but the devil a gob-'lin was to be found. He had no ſooner 'turned in again, and the reſt of the 'family gone to ſleep, than the foul 'fiends began their game anew. The 'commodore got up in the dark, drew 'his cutlaſs, and attacked them both ſo 'manfully, that, in five minutes, every 'thing in the apartment went to pieces. 'The lieutenant hearing the noiſe, came 'to his aſſiſtance. Tom Pipes being 'told what was the matter, lighted his 'match, and going down to the yard, 'fired all the patereroes as ſignals of 'diſtreſs. Well, to be ſure, the whole 'pariſh was in a pucker! ſome thought 'the French had landed; others ima-'gined the commodore's houſe was be-'ſet by thieves. For my own part, I 'called up two dragoons that are quar-'tered upon me; and they ſwore with 'deadly oaths, it was a gang of ſmug-'glers engaged with a party of their re-'giment that lies in the next village; 'and mounting their horſes like luſty 'fellows, rod up into the country as 'faſt as their beaſts could carry them. 'Ah, maſter! theſe are hard times, 'when an induſtrious body cannot earn 'his bread without fear of the gallows. 'Your worſhip's father (God reſt his 'ſoul!) was a good gentleman, and as 'well reſpected in this pariſh, as e'er a 'he that walks upon neat's leather. 'And if your honour ſhould want a 'ſmall parcel of fine tea, or a few an-'chors of right Nantz, I'll be bound 'you ſhall be furniſhed to your heart's 'content. But, as I was ſaying, the 'hubbub continued till morning, when 'the parſon being ſent for, conjured 'the ſpirits into the Red Sea; and the 'houſe has been pretty quiet ever ſince. 'True it is, Mr. Hatchway makes a 'mock of the whole affair; and told 'his commander in this very bleſſed 'ſpot, that the two gobblins were no 'other than a couple of jack-daws which 'had fallen down the chimney, and 'made a flapping with their wings up 'and down the apartment. But the 'commodore, who is very cholerick, 'and does not like to be jeered, fell 'into a main high paſſion, and ſtormed 'like a perfect hurricane, ſwearing that 'he knew a devil from a jack-daw as 'well as e'er a man in the three king-'doms. He owned, indeed, that the 'birds were found, but denied that they 'were the occaſion of the uproar. For 'my own part, maſter, I believe much 'maybe ſaid on both ſides of the queſtion; 'thoft to be ſure, the devil is always 'going about, as the ſaying is.'

This circumſtantial account, extra-ordinary as it was, never altered one feature in the countenance of Mr. Pickle, who having heard it to an end, took the pipe from his mouth, ſaying, with a look of infinite ſagacity and deliberation, 'I do ſuppoſe he is of the Corniſh 'Trunnions. What ſort of a woman 'is his ſpouſe?'—'Spouſe!' cried the other; 'odds heart! I don't think he 'would marry the Queen of Sheba. 'Lack-a-day, Sir! he won't ſuffer his 'own maids to lie in the garriſon, but 'turns them into an out-houſe every 'night before the watch is ſet. Bleſs 'your honour's ſoul! he is, as it were, 'a very oddiſh kind of a gentleman. 'Your worſhip would have ſeen him 'before now; for, when he is well, he 'and my good maſter Hatchway come 'hither every evening, and drink a cou-'ple of canns of rumbo a-piece; but 'he has been confined to his houſe this 'fortnight by a plaguy fit of the gout, 'which, I'll aſſure your worſhip, is a 'good penny out of my pocket.'

At that inſtant, Mr. Pickle's ears were ſaluted with ſuch a ſtrange noiſe, as even diſcompoſed the muſcles of his face, which gave immediate indications of alarm. This compoſition of notes at firſt reſembled the crying of quails, and croaking of bull-frogs; but as it approached nearer, he could diſtinguiſh articulate

Stothard del. Heath sculp.

Plate XI.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Oct. 21. 1781.

ticulate ſounds pronounced with great violence, in ſuch a cadence as one would expect to hear from a human creature ſcolding through the organs of an aſs. It was neither ſpeaking nor braying, but a ſurprizing mixture of both, employed in the utterance of terms abſolutely unintelligible to our wondering merchant, who had juſt opened his mouth to expreſs his curioſity, when the landlord, ſtarting up at the well known ſound, cried, 'Odd's niggers! there is 'the commodore with his company, as 'ſure as I live!' and with his apron began to wipe the duſt off an elbow chair placed at one ſide of the fire, and kept ſacred for the eaſe and convenience of this infirm commander. While he was thus occupied, a voice ſtill more uncouth than the former, bauled aloud, 'Ho! the houſe, a hoy!' Upon which the publican, clapping a hand to each ſide of his head, with his thumbs fixed to his ears, rebellowed in the ſame tone, which he had learned to imitate, 'Hil-'loah!' The voice again exclaimed, 'Have you got any attorneys aboard?' And when the landlord replied, 'No, 'no;' this man of ſtrange expectation came in, ſupported by his two dependants, and diſplayed a figure every way anſwerable to the oddity of his character. He was in ſtature at leaſt ſix feet high, though he had contracted a habit of ſtooping, by living ſo long on board; his complexion was tawny, and his aſpect rendered hideous by a large ſcar acroſs his noſe, and a patch that covered the place of one eye. Being ſeated in his chair, with great formality the landlord complimented him upon his being able to come abroad again; and having, in a whiſper, communicated the name of his fellow-gueſt, whom the commodore already knew by report, went to prepare, with all imaginable diſpatch, the firſt allowance of his favourite liquor, in three ſeparate canns, (for each was accommodated with his own portion apart) while the lieutenant ſat down on the blind ſide of his commander; and Tom Pipes, knowing his diſtance, with great modeſty took his ſtation in the rear. After a pauſe of ſome minutes, the converſation was begun by this ferocious chief, who fixing his eye upon the lieutenant with a ſternneſs of countenance not to be deſcribed, addreſſed him in theſe words: 'D—n my eyes! Hatch-'way, I always took you to be a better 'ſeaman than to overſet our chaiſe in 'ſuch fair weather. Blood! didn't I 'tell you we were running bump aſhore, 'and bid you ſet in the lee-brace, and 'haul upon a wind?'—'Yes,' replied the other with an arch ſneer, 'I do con-'feſs as how you did give ſuch orders, 'after you had run us foul of a poſt, 'ſo as that the carriage lay along, and 'could not right herſelf.'—'I run you 'foul of a poſt!' cried the commander; 'd—n my heart! you're a pretty dog, 'an't you, to tell me ſo above-board to 'my face? Did I take charge of the 'chaiſe? Did I ſtand at the helm?'—'No,' anſwered Hatchway; 'I muſt 'confeſs you did not ſteer; but how-'ſomever, you cunned all the way; and 'ſo, as you could not ſee how the land 'lay, being blind of your larboard eye, 'we were faſt aſhore, before you knew 'any thing of the matter. Pipes, who 'ſtood abaft, can teſtify the truth of 'what I ſay.'—'D—n my limbs!' reſumed the commodore, 'I don't value 'what you or Pipes ſay a rope-yarn. 'You're a couple of mutinous——I'll 'ſay no more; but, you ſhan't run your 'rig upon me, d—n ye! I am the 'man that learnt you, Jack Hatchway, 'to ſplice a rope, and raiſe a perpendi-'cular.'

The lieutenant, who was perfectly well acquainted with the trim of his captain, did not chuſe to carry on the altercation any farther; but taking up his cann, drank to the health of the ſtranger, who very courteouſly returned the compliment, without, however, preſuming to join in the converſation, which ſuffered a conſiderable pauſe. During this interruption, Mr. Hatchway's wit diſplayed itſelf in ſeveral practical jokes upon the commodore, with whom, he knew, it was dangerous to tamper in any other way. Being without the ſphere of his viſion, he ſecurely pilfered his tobacco, drank his rumbo, made wry faces, and (to uſe the vulgar phraſe) cocked his eye at him, to the no ſmall entertainment of the ſpectators, Mr. Pickle himſelf not excepted, who gave evident tokens of uncommon ſatisfaction at the dexterity of this marine pantomime.

Meanwhile, the captain's choler gradually ſubſided, and he was pleaſed to deſire Hatchway, by the familiar and friendly diminutive of Jack, to read a newſpaper that lay on the table before him.

him. This task was accordingly undertaken by the lame lieutenant, who, among other paragraphs, read that which follows, with an elevation of voice that seemed to prognosticate something extraordinary. 'We are informed, that Admiral Bower will very soon be created a British peer, for his eminent services during the war, particularly in his late engagement with the French fleet.' Trunnion was thunderstruck at this piece of intelligence. The mug dropped from his hand and shivered into a thousand pieces; his eye glistened like that of a rattle-snake, and some minutes elapsed before he could pronounce, 'Avast! overhaul that article again.' It was no sooner read the second time, than smiting the table with his fist, he started up, and with the most violent emphasis of rage and indignation, exclaimed, 'D—n my heart and liver! it is a lawd lye, d'ye see; and I will maintain it to be a lye, from the spritsail yard to the mizen-top-sail haul-yards! Blood and thunder! Will Bower a peer of this realm! a fellow of yesterday, that scarce knows a mast from a manger; a snotty-nose boy, whom I myself have ordered to the gun, for stealing eggs out of the hen-coops! and I, Hawser Trunnion, who commanded a ship before he could keep a reckoning, am laid aside, d'ye see, and forgotten! If so be, as this be the case, there is a rotten plank in our constitution, which ought to be hove down and repaired, d—n my eyes! For my own part, d'ye see, I was none of your Guinea-pigs; I did not rise in the service by parliamenteering interest, or a handsome bitch of a wife. I was not hoisted over the bellies of better men, nor strutted athwart the quarter-deck in a laced doublet, and thingumbobs at the wrists. D—n my limbs! I have been a hard-working man, and served all offices on board, from cook's shifter to the command of a vessel. Here, you Tunley, there's the hand of a seaman, you dog.' So saying, he laid hold on the landlord's fist, and honoured him with such a squeeze, as compelled him to roar with great vociferation, to the infinite satisfaction of the commodore, whose features were a little unbended, by this acknowledgment of his vigour; and he thus proceeded in a less outrageous strain: 'They make a damned noise about this engagement with the French; but, egad! it was no more than a bum-boat battle, in comparison with some that I have seen. There was old Rook, and Jennings, and another whom I'll be damned before I name, that knew what fighting was. As for my own share, d'ye see, I am none of those that hallo in their own commendation: but if so be that I were minded to stand my own trumpeter, some of those little fellows that hold their heads so high, would be taken all aback, as the saying is; they would be ashamed to shew their colours, d—n my eyes! I once lay eight glasses along-side of the *Flour de Louse*, a French man of war, though her metal was much heavier, and her complement larger by a hundred hands than mine.—You, Jack Hatchway, d—n ye, what d'ye grin at? D'ye think I tell a story, because you never heard it before?'

'Why, look ye, Sir,' answered the lieutenant, 'I am glad to find you can stand your own trumpeter, on occasion: thof I wish you would change the tune; for that is the same you have been piping every watch for these ten months past. Tunley himself will tell you, he has heard it five hundred times.'—'God forgive you, Mr. Hatchway,' said the landlord, interrupting him; 'as I'm an honest man and a housekeeper, I never heard a syllab of the matter.'

This declaration, though not strictly true, was extremely agreeable to Mr. Trunnion, who, with an air of triumph, observed, 'Aha! Jack, I thought I should bring you up, with your gibes and your jokes; but, suppose you had heard it before, is that any reason why it shouldn't be told to another person? There's the stranger; belike he has heard it five hundred times too—han't you, brother?' addressing himself to Mr. Pickle; who, replying with a look expressing curiosity, 'No, never;' he thus went on: 'Well, you seem to be an honest, quiet sort of a man; and therefore you must know, as I said before, I fell in with a French man of war, Cape Finisterre bearing about six leagues on the weather-bow, and the chace three leagues to leeward, going before the wind: whereupon I set my studding sails, and coming up with her, hoisted my

jack

'jack and enſign, and poured in a whole 'broadſide, before you could count 'three rattlins in the mizen ſhrouds; 'for I always keep a good look-out, 'and love to have the firſt fire.'— 'That I'll be ſworn,' ſaid Hatchway: 'for the day we made the triumph, you 'ordered the men to fire when ſhe was 'hull to, by the ſame token we below 'pointed the guns at a flight of gulls; 'and I won a cann of punch from the 'gunner, by killing the firſt bird.' 'Exaſperated at this ſarcaſm, he replied, with great vehemence, 'You lye, lubber! d—n your bones! what buſineſs 'have you to come always athwart my 'hauſe in this manner?—You, Pipes, 'was upon deck, and can bear witneſs, 'whether or not I fired too ſoon. Speak, 'you blood of a ——, and that upon 'the word of a ſeaman: how did the 'chace bear off us, when I gave orders 'to fire?'

Pipes, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, being thus called upon to give his evidence, after diverſe ſtrange geſticulations, opened his mouth like a gaſping cod, and with a cadence like that of the eaſt-wind ſinging through a cranny, pronounced, 'Half a quarter of a league right upon 'our lee-beam.'—'Nearer, you por-'puſs-fac'd ſwab!' cried the commodore; 'nearer by twelve fathom: but, 'howſomever, that's enough to prove 'the falſhood of Hatchway's jaw— 'and ſo, brother, d'ye ſee,' turning to Mr. Pickle, 'I lay along-ſide of the '*Flour de Louſe*, yard-arm and yard-'arm, plying our great guns and 'ſmall arms, and heaving in ſtink-'pots, powder-bottles, and hand-gre-'nades, till our ſhot was all expended, 'double-headed, partridge, and grape: 'then we loaded with iron crows, 'marlin-ſpikes, and old nails; but 'finding the Frenchman took a great 'deal of drubbing, and that he had 'ſhot away all our rigging, and killed 'and wounded a great number of our 'men, d'ye ſee! I reſolved to run him 'on board upon his quarter; and ſo 'ordered our grapplings to be got ready: 'but Monſieur perceiving what we 'were about, filled his topſails, and 'ſheered off; leaving us like a log upon 'the water and our ſcuppers running 'with blood.'

Mr. Pickle and the landlord paid ſuch extraordinary attention to the rehearſal of this exploit, that Trunnion was encouraged to entertain them with more ſtories of the ſame nature; after which he obſerved, by way of encomium on the government, that all he had gained in the ſervice was a lame foot, and the loſs of an eye. The lieutenant, who could not find in his heart to loſe any opportunity of being witty at the expence of his commander, gave a looſe to his ſatirical talent once more; ſaying, 'I have heard as how you came 'by your lame foot, by having your 'upper decks overſtowed with liquor, 'whereby you became crank, and roll-'ed, d'ye ſee, in ſuch a manner, that 'by a pitch of the ſhip, your ſtarboard 'heel was jammed in one of the ſcup-'pers; and as for the matter of your 'eye, that was knocked out by your 'own crew when the Lightning was 'paid off. There's poor Pipes, who 'was beaten into all the colours of the 'rainbow for taking your part, and 'giving you time to ſheer off; and I 'don't find as how you have rewarded 'him according as he deſerves.' As the commodore could not deny the truth of theſe anecdotes, however unſeaſonably they were introduced, he affected to receive them with good humour, as jokes of the lieutenant's own inventing; and replied, 'Aye, aye, Jack, every 'body knows your tongue is no ſlan-'der; but, howſomever, I'll work you 'to an oil for this, you dog.' So ſaying, he lifted up one of his crutches, intending to lay it gently a-croſs Mr. Hatchway's pate; but Jack, with great agility, tilted up his wooden leg, with which he warded off the blow, to the no ſmall admiration of Mr. Pickle, and utter aſtoniſhment of the landlord; who, by the bye, had expreſſed the ſame amazement, at the ſame feat, at the ſame hour, every night for three month before. Trunnion then directing his eye to the boatſwain's mate, 'You, Pipes,' ſaid he, 'do you go about and tell 'people that I did not reward you for 'ſtanding by me, when I was huſsled by 'theſe rebellious rapſcallions; d—n ye! 'ha'n't you been rated on the books 'ever ſince?' Tom, who indeed had no words to ſpare, ſat ſmoaking his pipe with great indifference, and never dreamed of paying any regard to theſe interrogations, which being repeated and reinforced with many oaths, that however

produced no effect, the commodore pulled out his purſe, ſaying, 'Here, you 'bitch's baby, here's ſomething better 'than a ſmart ticket!' and threw it at his ſilent deliverer, who received and pocketed his bounty, without the leaſt demonſtration of ſurprize or ſatisfaction; while the donor turning to Mr. Pickle, 'You ſee, brother,' ſaid he, 'I make 'good the old ſaying; we ſailors get 'money like horſes, and ſpend it like 'aſſes.—Come, Pipes, let's have the 'boatſwain's whiſtle, and be jovial.' This muſician accordingly applied to his mouth the ſilver inſtrument that hung at a button-hole of his jacket, by a chain of the ſame metal, and though not quite ſo raviſhing as the pipe of Hermes, produced a ſound ſo loud and ſhrill, that the ſtranger (as it were inſtinctively) ſtopped his ears, to preſerve his organs of hearing from ſuch a dangerous invaſion. The prelude being thus executed, Pipes fixed his eyes upon the egg of an oſtrich that depended from the ceiling, and without once moving them from that object, performed the whole cantata in a tone of voice that ſeemed to be the joint iſſue of an Iriſh bag-pipe and a ſow-gelder's horn; the commodore, the lieutenant, and landlord, joined in the chorus, repeating this elegant ſtanza:

'Buſtle, buſtle, brave boys!
'Let us ſing, let us toil,
'And drink all the while—
'Since labour's the price of our joys.'

The third line was no ſooner pronounced, than the cann was lifted to every man's mouth with admirable uniformity; and the next word taken up at the end of their draught with a twang equally expreſſive and harmonious. In ſhort, the company began to underſtand one another; Mr. Pickle ſeemed to reliſh the entertainment, and a correſpondence immediately commenced between him and Trunnion, who ſhook him by the hand, drank to farther acquaintance, and even invited him to a meſs of pork and peas in the garriſon. The compliment was returned, good fellowſhip prevailed, and the night was pretty far advanced, when the merchant's man arrived with a lanthorn to light his maſter home; upon which the new friends parted, after a mutual promiſe of meeting next evening in the ſame place.

CHAP. III.

MRS. GRIZZLE EXERTS HERSELF IN FINDING A PROPER MATCH FOR HER BROTHER; WHO IS ACCORDINGLY INTRODUCED TO THE YOUNG LADY, WHOM HE MARRIES IN DUE SEASON.

I Have been the more circumſtantial in opening the character of Trunnion, becauſe he bears a conſiderable ſhare in the courſe of theſe memoirs; but now it is high time to reſume the conſideration of Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſince her arrival in the country, had been engroſſed by a double care; namely, that of finding a ſuitable match for her brother, and a comfortable yoke-fellow for herſelf.

Neither was this aim the reſult of any ſiniſter or frail ſuggeſtion, but the pure dictates of that laudable ambition, which prompted her to the preſervation of the family name. Nay, ſo diſintereſted was ſhe in this purſuit, that, poſtponing her neareſt concern, or at leaſt leaving her own fate to the ſilent operation of her charms, ſhe laboured with ſuch indefatigable zeal in behalf of her brother, that before they had been three months ſettled in the country, the general topick of converſation in the neighbourhood, was an intended match between the rich Mr. Pickle and the fair Miſs Appleby, daughter of a gentleman who lived in the next pariſh, and who, though he had but little fortune to beſtow upon his children, had (to uſe his own phraſe) repleniſhed their veins with ſome of the beſt blood in the country.

This young lady, whoſe character and diſpoſition Mrs. Grizzle had inveſtigated to her own ſatisfaction, was deſtined for the ſpouſe of Mr. Pickle, and an overture accordingly made to her father; who being overjoyed at the propoſal, gave his conſent without heſitation, and even recommended an immediate execution of the project with ſuch eagerneſs, as ſeemed to indicate either a ſuſpicion of Mr. Pickle's conſtancy, or a diffidence of his own daughter's complexion, which, perhaps, he though too ſanguine to keep much longer cool. The previous point being thus ſettled, our merchant, at the inſtigation of Mrs. Grizzle, went to viſit his future father-in-law, and was introduced to the daughter, with whom he had, that ſame afternoon,

ternoon, an opportunity of being alone. What paſſed in that interview, I never could learn; though, from the character of the ſuitor, the reader may juſtly conclude, that ſhe was not much teized with the impertinence of his addreſſes. He was not, I believe, the leſs welcome for that reaſon: certain it is, ſhe made no objection to his taciturnity; and when her father communicated his reſolution, acquieſced with the moſt pious reſignation. But Mrs. Grizzle, in order to give the lady a more favourable idea of his intellects than what his converſation could poſſibly inſpire, was reſolved to dictate a letter, which her brother ſhould tranſcribe and tranſmit to his miſtreſs, as the produce of his own underſtanding; and had actually compoſed a very tender billet for this purpoſe; yet her intention was entirely fruſtrated by the miſapprehenſion of the lover himſelf; who, in conſequence of his ſiſter's repeated admonitions, anticipated her ſcheme, by writing for himſelf, and diſpatching the letter one afternoon, while Mrs. Grizzle was viſiting at the parſon's.

Neither was this ſtep the effect of his vanity or precipitation; but having been often aſſured by his ſiſter, that it was abſolutely neceſſary for him to make a declaration of his love in writing, he took this opportunity of acting in conformity with her advice, when his imagination was unengaged or undiſturbed by any other ſuggeſtion, without ſuſpecting in the leaſt that ſhe intended to ſave him the trouble of exerciſing his own genius. Left, therefore, as he imagined, to his own inventions, he ſat down and produced the following morceau, which was tranſmitted to Miſs Appleby, before his ſiſter and counſellor had the leaſt intimation of the affair.

'MISS SALLY APPLEBY.

'MADAM,

'UNDERSTANDING you have 'a parcel of heart, warranted 'ſound, to be diſpoſed of, ſhall be 'willing to treat for ſaid commodity, 'on reaſonable terms; doubt not, ſhall 'agree for ſame; ſhall wait of you for 'farther information, when and where 'you ſhall appoint. This the needful 'from yours, &c.

'GAM. PICKLE.'

This laconick epiſtle, ſimple and unadorned as it was, met with as cordial a reception from the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, as if it had been couched in the moſt elegant terms that delicacy of paſſion and cultivated genius could ſupply; nay, I believe, was the more welcome, on account of it's mercantile plainneſs; becauſe, when an advantageous match is in view, a ſenſible woman often conſiders the flowery profeſſions and rapturous exclamations of love, as enſnaring ambiguities, or at beſt impertinent preliminaries, that retard the treaty they are deſigned to promote; whereas Mr. Pickle removed all diſagreeable uncertainty, by deſcending at once to the moſt intereſting particular.

She had no ſooner, as a dutiful child, communicated this billet-doux to her father, than he, as a careful parent, viſited Mr. Pickle, and in preſence of Mrs. Grizzle, demanded a formal explanation of his ſentiments with regard to his daughter Sally. Mr. Gamaliel, without any ceremony, aſſured him he had a reſpect for the young woman, and, with his good leave, would take her for better for worſe. Mr. Appleby, after having expreſſed his ſatisfaction that he had fixed his affections in his family, comforted the lover with the aſſurance of his being agreeable to the young lady, and they forthwith proceeded to the articles of the marriage-ſettlement; which being diſcuſſed and determined, a lawyer was ordered to engroſs them, the wedding cloaths were bought, and, in ſhort, a day was appointed for the celebration of their nuptials, to which every body of any faſhion in the neighbourhood was invited. Among theſe, Commodore Trunnion and Mr. Hatchway were not forgotten, being the ſole companions of the bridegroom, with whom, by this time, they had contracted a ſort of intimacy at their nocturnal rendezvous.

They had received a previous intimation of what was on the anvil, from the landlord, before Mr. Pickle thought proper to declare himſelf; in conſequence of which, the topick of the one-eyed commander's diſcourſe, at their meeting for ſeveral evenings before, had been the folly and plague of matrimony; on which he held forth with great vehemence of abuſe, levelled at the fair-ſex, whom he repreſented as devils incarnate, ſent from hell to torment mankind; and in parti-

cular, inveighed againſt old maids, for whom he ſeemed to entertain a ſingular averſion; while his friend Jack confirmed the truth of all his allegations, and gratified his own malignant vein at the ſame time, by clenching every ſentence with a ſly joke upon the married ſtate, built upon ſome alluſion to a ſhip, or ſea-faring life. He compared a woman to a great gun loaded with fire, brimſtone, and noiſe, which being violently heated, will bounce and fly, and play the devil, if you don't take ſpecial care of her breechings. He ſaid, ſhe was like a hurricane, that never blows from one quarter, but veers about to all points of the compaſs. He likened her to a painted galley curiouſly rigged, with a leak in her hold, which her huſband would never be able to ſtop. He obſerved that her inclinations were like the Bay of Biſcay; for why? becauſe you may heave your deep-ſea lead long enough, without ever reaching the bottom. That he who comes to anchor on a wife, may find himſelf moored in damned foul ground, and after all, can't for his blood ſlip his cable; and that for his own part, thof he might make ſhort trips for paſtime, he would never embark in woman on the voyage of life, becauſe he was afraid of foundering in the firſt foul weather.

In all probability, theſe inſinuations made ſome impreſſion on the mind of Mr. Pickle, who was not very much inclined to run great riſks of any kind; but the injunctions and importunities of his ſiſter, who was bent upon the match, over-balanced the opinion of his ſea-friends, who finding him determined to marry, notwithſtanding all the hints of caution they had thrown out, reſolved to accept his invitation, and honoured his nuptials with their preſence accordingly.

CHAP. IV.

THE BEHAVIOUR OF MRS. GRIZZLE AT THE WEDDING, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE GUESTS.

I Hope it will not be thought uncharitable, if I advance, by way of conjecture, that Mrs. Grizzle, on this grand occaſion, ſummoned her whole exertion to play off the artillery of her charms upon the ſingle gentlemen who were invited to the entertainment: ſure I am, ſhe diſplayed to the beſt advantange all the engaging qualities ſhe poſſeſſed. Her affability at dinner was altogether uncommon; her attention to the gueſts was ſuperfluouſly hoſpitable; her tongue was ſheathed with a moſt agreeable and infantine liſp; her addreſs was perfectly obliging; and though, conſcious of the extraordinary capacity of her mouth, ſhe would not venture to hazard a laugh, ſhe modelled her lips into an enchanting ſimper, which played upon her countenance all day long; nay, ſhe even profited by that defect in her viſion we have already obſerved, and ſecurely contemplated thoſe features which were moſt to her liking, while the reſt of the company believed her regards were diſpoſed in a quite contrary direction. With what humility of complaiſance did ſhe receive the compliments of thoſe who could not help praiſing the elegance of the banquet; and how piouſly did ſhe ſeize that opportunity of commemorating the honours of her ſire, by obſerving, that it was no merit in her to underſtand ſomething of entertainments, as ſhe had occaſion to preſide at ſo many during the mayoralty of her papa. Far from diſcovering the leaſt ſymptom of pride and exultation when the opulence of her family became the ſubject of converſation, ſhe aſſumed a ſeverity of countenance; and after having moralized on the vanity of riches, declared, that thoſe who looked upon her as a fortune, were very much miſtaken; for her father had left her no more than poor five thouſand pounds, which, with what little ſhe had ſaved of the intereſt ſince his death, was all ſhe had to depend upon: indeed, if ſhe had placed her chief felicity in wealth, ſhe ſhould not have been ſo forward in deſtroying her own expectations, by adviſing and promoting the event at which they were now ſo happily aſſembled; but ſhe hoped ſhe ſhould always have virtue enough to poſtpone any intereſted conſideration, when it ſhould happen to claſh with the happineſs of her friends. Finally, ſuch was her modeſty and ſelf-denial, that ſhe induſtriouſly informed thoſe whom it might concern, that ſhe was no leſs than three years older than the bride; though, had ſhe added ten to the reckoning, ſhe would have committed no miſtake in point of computation.

To contribute as much as lay in her power

power to the satisfaction of all present, she in the afternoon regaled them with a tune on the harpsichord, accompanied with her voice, which, though not the most melodious in the world, I dare say, would have been equally at their service, could she have vied with Philomel in song; and as the last effort of her complaisance, when dancing was proposed, she was prevailed upon, at the request of her new sister, to open the ball in person.

In a word, Mrs. Grizzle was the principal figure in this festival, and almost eclipsed the bride; who, far from seeming to dispute the preheminence, very wisely allowed her to make the best of her talents; contenting herself with the lot to which fortune had already called her, and which she imagined would not be the less desirable, if her sister-in-law were detached from the family.

I believe I need scarce advertise the reader, that during this whole entertainment, the commodore and his lieutenant were quite out of their element; and this indeed was the case with the bridegroom himself, who being utterly unacquainted with any sort of polite commerce, found himself under a very disagreeable restraint during the whole scene.

Trunnion, who had scarce ever been on shore till he was paid off, and never once in his whole life in the company of any females above the rank of those who herd upon the Point at Portsmouth, was more embarrassed about his behaviour than if he had been surrounded at sea by the whole French navy. He had never pronounced the word *Madam* since he was born; so that far from entering into conversation with the ladies, he would not even return the compliment, or give the least nod of civility when they drank to his health; and I verily believe, would rather have suffered suffocation than allowed the simple phrase, *your servant*, to proceed from his mouth. He was altogether as inflexible with respect to the attitudes of his body; for either through obstinacy or bashfulness, he sat upright without motion, insomuch, that he provoked the mirth of a certain wag, who addressing himself to the lieutenant, asked whether that was the commodore himself, or the wooden lion that used to stand at his gate: an image, to which, it must be owned, Mr. Trunnion's person bore no faint resemblance.

Mr. Hatchway, who was not quite so unpolished as the commodore, and had certain notions that seemed to approach the ideas of common life, made a less uncouth appearance; but then he was a wit, and though of a very peculiar genius, partook largely of that disposition which is common to all wits, who never enjoy themselves, except when their talents meet with those marks of distinction and veneration, which (in their own opinion) they deserve.

These circumstances being premised, it is not to be wondered at, if this triumvirate made no objections to the proposal, when some of the grave personages of the company made a motion for adjourning into another apartment, where they might enjoy their pipes and bottles, while the young folks indulged themselves in the continuance of their own favourite diversion. Thus rescued, as it were, from a state of annihilation, the first use the two lads of the castle made of their existence, was to ply the bridegroom so hard with bumpers, that in less than an hour he made divers efforts to sing, and soon after was carried to bed, deprived of all manner of sensation, to the utter disappointment of the bridemen and maids, who, by this accident, were prevented from throwing the stocking, and performing certain other ceremonies practised on such occasions. As for the bride, she bore this misfortune with great good-humour; and, indeed, on all occasions, behaved like a discreet woman, perfectly well acquainted with the nature of her own situation.

CHAP. V.

MRS. PICKLE ASSUMES THE REINS OF GOVERNMENT IN HER OWN FAMILY. HER SISTER-IN-LAW UNDERTAKES AN ENTERPRIZE OF GREAT MOMENT, BUT IS FOR SOME TIME DIVERTED FROM HER PURPOSE BY A VERY INTERESTING CONSIDERATION.

WHATEVER deference, not to say submission, she had paid to Mrs. Grizzle before she was so nearly allied to her family, she no sooner became Mrs. Pickle, than she thought it incumbent upon her to act up to the dignity of the character; and the very day after the marriage, ventured to dis-

pute

pute with her ſiſter-in-law on the ſubject of her own pedigree, which ſhe affirmed to be more honourable in all reſpects than that of her huſband; obſerving, that ſeveral younger brothers of her houſe had arrived at the ſtation of Lord Mayor of London, which was the higheſt pitch of greatneſs that any of Mr. Pickle's predeceſſors had ever attained.

This preſumption was like a thunderbolt to Mrs. Grizzle, who began to perceive that ſhe had not ſucceeded quite ſo well as ſhe imagined, in ſelecting for her brother a gentle and obedient yoke-fellow, who would always treat her with that profound reſpect which ſhe thought due to her ſuperior genius, and be entirely regulated by her advice and direction: however, ſhe ſtill continued to manage the reins of government in the houſe, reprehending the ſervants as uſual; an office ſhe performed with great capacity, and in which ſhe ſeemed to take ſingular delight, until Mrs. Pickle, on pretence of conſulting her eaſe, told her one day ſhe would take that trouble upon herſelf, and for the future aſſume the management of her own family.—Nothing could be more mortifying to Mrs. Grizzle than ſuch a declaration; to which, after a conſiderable pauſe, and ſtrange diſtortion of look, ſhe replied, 'I ſhall never refuſe or repine at 'any trouble that may conduce to my 'brother's advantage.'—'Dear Ma'dam,' anſwered the ſiſter, 'I am in'finitely obliged to your kind concern 'for Mr. Pickle's intereſt, which I con'ſider as my own; but I cannot bear to 'ſee you a ſufferer by your friendſhip, 'and therefore inſiſt upon exempting 'you from the fatigue you have borne ſo 'long.'

In vain did the other proteſt that ſhe took pleaſure in the taſk; Mrs. Pickle aſcribed the aſſurance to her exceſs of complaiſance, and expreſſed ſuch tenderneſs of zeal for her dear ſiſter's health and tranquillity, that the reluctant maiden found herſelf obliged to reſign her authority, without enjoying the leaſt pretext for complaining of her being depoſed.

This diſgrace was attended by a fit of peeviſh devotion that laſted three or four weeks; during which period, ſhe had the additional chagrin of ſeeing the young lady gain an abſolute aſcendancy over the mind of her brother, who was perſuaded to ſet up a gay equipage, and improve his houſe-keeping, by an augmentation in his expence, to the amount of a thouſand a year at leaſt: though his alteration in the œconomy of his houſhold effected no change in his own diſpoſition, or manner of life; for as ſoon as the painful ceremony of receiving and returning viſits was performed, he had recourſe again to the company of his ſea-friends, with whom he ſpent the beſt part of his time. But if he was ſatisfied with his condition, the caſe was otherwiſe with Mrs. Grizzle, who finding her importance in the family greatly diminiſhed, her attractions neglected by all the male-ſex in the neighbourhood, and the withering hand of time hang threatening over her head, began to feel the horror of eternal virginity; and, in a ſort of deſperation, reſolved at any rate to reſcue herſelf from that reproachful and uncomfortable ſituation. Thus determined, ſhe formed a plan, the execution of which, to a ſpirit leſs enterprizing and ſufficient than her's, would have appeared altogether impracticable; this was no other, than to make a conqueſt of the commodore's heart; which the reader will eaſily believe was not very ſuſceptible of tender impreſſions; but, on the contrary, fortified with inſenſibility and prejudice againſt the charms of the whole ſex; and particularly prepoſſeſſed to the prejudice of that claſs diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of old-maids, in which Mrs. Grizzle was, by this time, unhappily ranked. She, nevertheleſs, took the field; and having inveſted this ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs, began to break ground one day, when Trunnion dined at her brother's, by ſpringing certain enſnaring commendations on the honeſty and ſincerity of ſea-faring people, paying a particular attention to his plate, and affecting a ſimper of approbation at every thing he ſaid, which by any means ſhe could conſtrue into a joke, or with modeſty be ſuppoſed to hear: nay, even when he left decency on the left-hand, (which was often the caſe) ſhe ventured to reprimand his freedom of ſpeech with a gracious grin, ſaying, 'Sure, you gentlemen belong'ing to the ſea have ſuch an odd way 'with you!' But all this complacency was ſo ineffectual, that, far from ſuſpecting the true cauſe of it, the commodore, that very evening, at the club, in preſence of her brother, with whom,

by

by this time, he could take any manner of freedom, did not ſcruple to damn her for a ſquinting, block-faced, chattering piſs-kitchen; and immediately after, drank deſpair to all old maids. The toaſt Mr. Pickle pledged without the leaſt heſitation, and next day intimated to his ſiſter, who bore the indignity with ſurprizing reſignation, and did not therefore deſiſt from her ſcheme, unpromiſing as it ſeemed to be, until her attention was called off, and engaged in another care, which, for ſome time, interrupted the progreſs of this deſign. Her ſiſter had not been married many months, when ſhe exhibited evident ſymptoms of pregnancy, to the general ſatisfaction of all concerned, and the inexpreſſible joy of Mrs. Grizzle, who (as we have already hinted) was more intereſted in the preſervation of the family-name, than in any other conſideration whatever. She therefore no ſooner diſcovered appearances to juſtify and confirm her hopes, than poſtponing her own purpoſe, and laying aſide that pique and reſentment ſhe had conceived from the behaviour of Mrs. Pickle, when ſhe ſuperſeded her authority; or, perhaps, conſidering her in no other light than that of the vehicle which contained, and was deſtined to convey her brother's heir to light; ſhe determined to exert her uttermoſt in nurſing, tending, and cheriſhing her, during the term of her important charge. With this view, ſhe purchaſed Culpepper's Midwifery; which, with that ſagacious performance, dignified with Ariſtotle's name, ſhe ſtudied with indefatigable care, and diligently peruſed the Compleat Houſewife, together with Quincy's Diſpenſatory; culling every jelly, marmalade, and conſerve, which theſe authors recommend as either ſalutary or toothſome, for the benefit and comfort of her ſiſter-in-law during her geſtation. She reſtricted her from eating roots, pot-herbs, fruit, and all ſorts of vegetables: and one day, when Mrs. Pickle had plucked a peach with her own hand, and was in the very act of putting it between her teeth, Mrs. Grizzle perceived the raſh attempt, and running up to her, fell upon her knees in the garden, intreating her, with tears in her eyes, to reſiſt ſuch a pernicious appetite. Her requeſt was no ſooner complied with, than, recollecting that if her ſiſter's longing was baulked, the child might be affected with ſome diſagreeable mark, or deplorable diſeaſe, ſhe begged as earneſtly that ſhe would ſwallow the fruit; and, in the mean time, ran for ſome cordial water of her own compoſing, which ſhe forced upon her ſiſter, as an antidote to the poiſon ſhe had received.

This exceſſive zeal and tenderneſs did not fail to be very troubleſome to Mrs. Pickle; who having revolved divers plans for the recovery of her own eaſe, at length determined to engage Mrs. Grizzle in ſuch employment as would interrupt that cloſe attendance which ſhe found ſo teazing and diſagreeable. Neither did ſhe wait long for an opportunity of putting her reſolution in practice. The very next day, a gentleman happening to dine with Mr. Pickle, unfortunately mentioned a pine-apple, part of which he had eaten a week before at the houſe of a nobleman who lived in another part of the country, at the diſtance of a hundred miles at leaſt.

The name of this fatal fruit was no ſooner pronounced, than Mrs. Grizzle, who inceſſantly watched her ſiſter's looks, took the alarm, becauſe ſhe thought they gave certain indications of curioſity and deſire; and after having obſerved that ſhe herſelf never could eat pine-apples, which were altogether unnatural productions, extorted by the force of artificial fire, out of filthy manure, aſked, with a faultering voice, if Mrs. Pickle was not of her way of thinking. This young lady, who wanted neither ſlyneſs nor penetration, at once divined her meaning; and replied, with ſeeming unconcern, that for her own part, ſhe ſhould never repine, if there was not a pine-apple in the univerſe, provided ſhe could indulge herſelf with the fruits of her own country.

This anſwer was calculated for the benefit of the ſtranger, who would certainly have ſuffered for his imprudence by the reſentment of Mrs. Grizzle, had her ſiſter expreſſed the leaſt reliſh for the fruit in queſtion. It had the deſired effect, and re-eſtabliſhed the peace of the company, which was not a little endangered by the gentleman's want of conſideration. Next morning, however, after breakfaſt, the pregnant lady, in purſuance of her plan, yawned (as it were by accident) full in the face of her maiden ſiſter; who being infinitely diſ-

turbed

turbed by this convulsion, affirmed it was a symptom of longing, and insisted upon knowing the object in desire; when Mrs. Pickle, affecting an affected smile, told her she had eaten a most delicious pine-apple in her sleep. This declaration was attended with an immediate scream, uttered by Mrs. Grizzle; who instantly perceiving her sister surprized at the exclamation, clasped her in her arms, and assured her, with a sort of hysterical laugh, that she could not help screaming with joy, because she had it in her power to gratify her dear sister's wish: a lady in the neighbourhood having promised to send her, in a present, a couple of delicate pine apples, which she would that very day go in quest of.

Mrs. Pickle would by no means consent to this proposal, on pretence of sparing the other unnecessary fatigue; and assured her, that if she had any desire to eat a pine-apple, it was so faint, that the disappointment could produce no bad consequence. But this assurance was conveyed in a manner, (which she knew very well how to adopt) that, instead of dissuading, rather stimulated Mrs. Grizzle to set out immediately; not on a visit to that lady, whose promise she herself had feigned, with a view of consulting her sister's tranquillity, but on a random search through the whole country for this unlucky fruit, which was like to produce so much vexation and prejudice to her and her father's house.

During three whole days and nights did she, attended by a valet, ride from place to place without success, unmindful of her health, and careless of her reputation, that began to suffer from the nature of her enquiry, which was pursued with such peculiar eagerness and distraction, that every body with whom she conversed, looked upon her as an unhappy person, whose intellects were not a little disordered.

Baffled in all her researches within the county, she at length resolved to visit that very nobleman, at whose house the officious stranger had been (for her) so unfortunately regaled; and actually arrived in a post-chaise at the place of his habitation; where she introduced her business as an affair on which the happiness of a whole family depended. By virtue of a present to his lordship's gardener, she procured the Hesperian fruit, with which she returned in triumph.

CHAP. VI.

MRS. GRIZZLE IS INDEFATIGABLE IN GRATIFYING HER SISTER'S LONGINGS. PEREGRINE IS BORN, AND MANAGED CONTRARY TO THE DIRECTIONS AND REMONSTRANCES OF HIS AUNT, WHO IS DISGUSTED UPON THAT ACCOUNT, AND RESUMES THE PLAN WHICH SHE HAD BEFORE REJECTED.

THE success of this device would have encouraged Mrs. Pickle to practise more of the same sort upon her sister-in-law, had she not been deterred by a violent fever which seized her zealous ally, in consequence of the fatigue and uneasiness she had undergone; which, while it lasted, as effectually conduced to her repose, as any other stratagem she could invent. But Mrs. Grizzle's health was no sooner restored, than the other, being as much incommoded as ever, was obliged, in her own defence, to have recourse to some other contrivance; and managed her artifices in such a manner, as leaves it at this day a doubt whether she was really so whimsical and capricious in her appetites as she herself pretended to be; for her longings were not restricted to the demands of the palate and stomach, but also affected all the other organs of sense, and even invaded her imagination, which at this period seemed to be strangely diseased.

One time she longed to pinch her husband's ear; and it was with infinite difficulty that his sister could prevail upon him to undergo the operation. Yet this task was easy, in comparison with another she undertook for the gratification of Mrs. Pickle's unaccountable desire; which was no other than to persuade the commodore to submit his chin to the mercy of the big-bellied lady, who ardently wished for an opportunity of plucking three black hairs from his beard. When this proposal was first communicated to Mr. Trunnion by the husband, his answer was nothing but a dreadful effusion of oaths, accompanied with such a stare, and delivered in such a tone of voice, as terrified the poor beseecher

beſeecher into immediate ſilence; ſo that Mrs. Grizzle was fain to take the whole enterprize upon herſelf, and next day went to the garriſon accordingly, where having obtained entrance by means of the lieutenant, who, while his commander was aſleep, ordered her to be admitted for the joke's ſake, ſhe waited patiently till he turned out, and then accoſted him in the yard, where he uſed to perform his morning walk. He was thunderſtruck at the appearance of a woman in a place which he had hitherto kept ſacred from the whole ſex, and immediately began to utter an apoſtrophe to Tom Pipes, whoſe turn it was then to watch; when Mrs. Grizzle falling on her knees before him, conjured him with many pathetick ſupplications, to hear and grant her requeſt; which was no ſooner ſignified, than he bellowed in ſuch an outrageous manner that the whole court re-echoed the opprobrious term *bitch*, and the word *damnation*, which he repeated with ſurprizing volubility, without any ſort of propriety or connection; and retreated into his penetralia, leaving the baffled devotee in the humble poſture ſhe had ſo unſucceſsfully choſen to melt his obdurate heart.

Mortifying as this repulſe muſt have been to a lady of her ſtately diſpoſition, ſhe did not relinquiſh her aim, but endeavoured to intereſt the commodore's counſellors and adherents in her cauſe. With this view ſhe ſolicited the intereſt of Mr. Hatchway, who, being highly pleaſed with a circumſtance ſo productive of mirth and diverſion, readily entered into her meaſures, and promiſed to employ his whole influence for her ſatisfaction: and as for the boatſwain's mate, he was rendered propitious by the preſent of a guinea which ſhe ſlipt into his hand. In ſhort, Mrs. Grizzle was continually engaged in this negociation for the ſpace of ten days, during which the commodore was ſo inceſſantly peſtered with her remonſtrances, and the admonitions of his aſſociates, that he ſwore his people had a deſign upon his life, which becoming a burden to him, he at laſt complied, and was conducted to the ſcene like a victim to the altar; or rather like a reluctant bear, when he is led to the ſtake amidſt the ſhouts and cries of butchers and their dogs. After all, this victory was not quite ſo deciſive as the conquerors imagined; for the patient being ſet, and the performer prepared with a pair of pincers, a ſmall difficulty occurred: ſhe could not for ſome time diſcern one black hair on the whole ſuperficies of Mr. Trunnion's face; when Mrs. Grizzle, very much alarmed and diſconcerted, had recourſe to a magnifying glaſs that ſtood upon her toilet; and after a moſt accurate examination, diſcovered a fibre of a duſky hue, to which the inſtrument being applied, Mrs. Pickle pulled it up by the roots, to the no ſmall diſcompoſure of the owner, who feeling the ſmart much more ſevere than he had expected, ſtarted up, and ſwore he would not part with another hair to ſave them all from damnation.

Mr. Hatchway exhorted him to patience and reſignation, Mrs. Grizzle repeated her entreaties with great humility; but finding him deaf to all her prayers, and abſolutely bent upon leaving the houſe, ſhe claſped his knees, and begged for the love of God that he would have compaſſion upon a diſtreſſed family, and endure a little more for the ſake of the poor infant, who would otherwiſe be born with a grey beard upon it's chin. Far from being melted, he was rather exaſperated by this reflection; to which he replied with great indignation, 'D—n you for a yaw-ſighted 'bitch! he'll be hanged long enough 'before he has any beard at all.' So ſaying, he diſengaged himſelf from her embraces, flung out at the door, and halted homewards with ſuch ſurprizing ſpeed, that the lieutenant could not overtake him until he had arrived at his own gate; and Mrs. Grizzle was ſo much affected with his eſcape, that her ſiſter, in pure compaſſion, deſired ſhe would not afflict herſelf, proteſting that her own wiſh was already gratified, for ſhe had plucked three hairs at once, having, from the beginning, been dubious of the commodore's patience. But the labours of this aſſiduous kinſwoman did not end with the atchievement of this adventure; her eloquence or induſtry was employed without ceaſing, in the performance of other taſks impoſed by the ingenious craft of her ſiſter-in-law; who at another time conceived an inſuppreſſible affection for a fricaſſee of frogs, which ſhould be the genuine natives of France, ſo that there was a neceſſity for diſpatching a meſſenger on purpoſe to that kingdom; but as ſhe

could not depend upon the integrity of any common ſervant, Mrs. Grizzle undertook that province, and actually ſet ſail in a cutter for Bologne, from whence ſhe returned in eight and forty hours with a tub full of thoſe live animals; which being dreſſed according to art, her ſiſter would not taſte them, on pretence that her fit of longing was paſt. But then her inclinations took a different turn, and fixed themſelves upon a curious implement belonging to a lady of quality in the neighbourhood, which was reported to be a very great curioſity; this was no other than a porcelain chamber-pot of admirable workmanſhip, contrived by the honourable owner, who kept it for her own private uſe, and cheriſhed it as an utenſil of inеſtimable value.

Mrs. Grizzle ſhuddered at the firſt hint ſhe received of her ſiſter's deſire to poſſeſs this piece of furniture; becauſe ſhe knew it was not to be purchaſed; and the lady's character, which was none of the moſt amiable in point of humanity and condeſcenſion, forbade all hopes of borrowing it for a ſeaſon: ſhe therefore attempted to reaſon down this capricious appetite, as an extravagance of imagination which ought to be combated and repreſſed; and Mrs. Pickle, to all appearance, was convinced and ſatisfied by her arguments and advice: but, nevertheleſs, could make uſe of no other convenience, and was threatened with a very dangerous ſuppreſſion. Rouzed at the peril in which ſhe ſuppoſed her to be, Mrs. Grizzle flew to the lady's houſe, and having obtained a private audience, diſcloſed the melancholy ſituation of her ſiſter, and implored the benevolence of her ladyſhip; who, contrary to expectation, received her very graciouſly, and conſented to indulge Mrs. Pickle's longing. Mr. Pickle began to be out of humour at the expence to which he was expoſed by the caprice of his wife, who was herſelf alarmed at this laſt accident, and for the future kept her fancy within bounds; inſomuch, that without being ſubject to any more extraordinary trouble, Mrs. Grizzle reaped the long-wiſhed fruits of her deareſt expectation in the birth of a fine boy, whom her ſiſter in a few months brought into the world.

I ſhall omit the deſcription of the rejoicings, which were infinite on this important occaſion, and only obſerve that Mrs. Pickle's mother and aunt ſtood godmothers, and the commodore aſſiſted at the ceremony as godfather to the child, who was chriſtened by the name of Peregrine, in compliment to the memory of a deceaſed uncle. While the mother was confined to her bed, and incapable of maintaining her own authority, Mrs. Grizzle took charge of the infant by a double claim: and ſuperintended, with ſurprizing vigilance, the nurſe and midwife in all the particulars of their reſpective offices, which were performed by her expreſs direction. But no ſooner was Mrs. Pickle in a condition to re-aſſume the management of her own affairs, than ſhe thought proper to alter certain regulations concerning the child, which had obtained in conſequence of her ſiſter's orders; directing, among other innovations, that the bandages with which the infant had been ſo neatly rolled up, like an Egyptian mummy, ſhould be looſened and laid aſide, in order to rid nature of all reſtraint, and give the blood free ſcope to circulate; and with her own hands ſhe plunged him headlong every morning in a tub full of cold water. This operation ſeemed ſo barbarous to the tender-hearted Mrs. Grizzle, that ſhe not only oppoſed it with all her eloquence, ſhedding abundance of tears over the ſacrifice when it was made, but took horſe immediately, and departed for the habitation of an eminent country phyſician, whom ſhe conſulted in theſe words. 'Pray, doctor, is it not both 'dangerous and cruel to be the means 'of letting a poor tender infant periſh, 'by ſouſing it in water as cold as ice?' —'Yes,' replied the doctor, 'downright murder, I affirm.'—'I ſee you 'are a perſon of great learning and ſagacity,' ſaid the other: 'and I muſt 'beg you will be ſo good as to ſignify 'your opinion in your own hand-writing.' The doctor immediately complied with her requeſt, and expreſſed himſelf upon a ſlip of paper to this purpoſe.

'THESE are to certify whom it 'may concern, that I firmly 'believe, and it is my unalterable opi'nion, that whoſoever letteth an infant 'periſh, by ſouſing it in cold water, 'even though the ſaid water ſhould not 'be ſo cold as ice, is in effect guilty

'of

'of the murder of the said infant, as 'witness my hand,

'COMFIT COLYCYNTH.'

Having obtained this certificate, for which the physician was handsomely acknowledged, she returned exulting, and hoping, with such authority, to overthrow all opposition. Accordingly, next morning, when her nephew was about to undergo his diurnal baptism, she produced the commission, whereby she conceived herself impowered to overrule such inhuman proceedings. But she was disappointed in her expectation, confident as it was; not that Mrs. Pickle pretended to differ in opinion from Dr. Colycynth, 'For whose cha-'racter and sentiments,' said she, 'I 'have such veneration, that I shall 'carefully observe the caution implied 'in this very certificate, by which, far 'from condemning my method of prac-'tice, he only asserts that killing is 'murder; an asseveration, the truth 'of which, it is to be hoped, I shall 'never dispute.'

Mrs. Grizzle, who, sooth to say, had rather too superficially considered the clause by which she thought herself authorized, perused the paper with more accuracy, and was confounded at her own want of penetration. Yet though she was confuted, she was by no means convinced that her objections to the cold-bath were unreasonable; on the contrary, after having bestowed sundry opprobrious epithets on the physician, for his want of knowledge and candour, she protested in the most earnest and solemn manner against the pernicious practice of dipping the child; a piece of cruelty which, with God's assistance, she should never suffer to be inflicted on her own issue; and washing her hands of the melancholy consequence that would certainly ensue, shut herself up in her closet, to indulge her sorrow and vexation. She was deceived, however, in her prognostick; the boy, instead of declining in point of health, seemed to acquire fresh vigour from every plunge, as if he had been resolved to discredit the wisdom and foresight of his aunt, who, in all probability, could never forgive him for this want of reverence and respect. This conjecture is founded upon her behaviour to him in the sequel of his infancy, during which she was known to torture him more than once, when she had opportunities of thrusting pins into his flesh, without any danger of being detected. In a word, her affections were in a little time altogether alienated from this hope of her family, whom she abandoned to the conduct of his mother, whose province it undoubtedly was to manage the nurture of her own child; while she herself resumed her operations upon the commodore, whom she was resolved at any rate to captivate and enslave. And it must be owned, that Mrs. Grizzle's knowledge of the human heart never shone so conspicuous as in the methods she pursued for the accomplishment of this important aim.

Through the rough unpolished husk that cased the soul of Trunnion, she could easily distinguish a large share of that vanity and self-conceit that generally predominate even in the most savage breast; and to this she constantly appealed. In his presence she always exclaimed against the craft and dishonest dissimulation of the world; and never failed of uttering particular invectives against those arts of chicanery, in which the lawyers are so conversant to the prejudice and ruin of their fellow-creatures: observing, that in a seafaring life, so far as she had opportunities of judging or being informed, there was nothing but friendship, sincerity, and a hearty contempt for every thing that was mean or selfish.

This kind of conversation, with the assistance of certain particular civilities, insensibly made an impression on the mind of the commodore; and that the more effectual, as his former prepossessions were built upon very slender foundations: his antipathy to old maids, which he had conceived upon hearsay, began gradually to diminish, when he found they were not quite such infernal animals as they had been represented; and it was not long before he was heard to observe at the club, that Pickle's sister had not so much of the core of bitch in her as he had imagined. This negative compliment, by the medium of her brother, soon reached the ears of Mrs. Grizzle, who, thus encouraged, redoubled all her arts and attention; so that in less than three months after, he in the same place distinguished her with the epithet of a damned sensible jade.

Hatchway taking the alarm at this

declaration, which he feared foreboded something fatal to his interest, told his commander with a sneer, that she had sense enough to bring him to, under her stern; and he did not doubt but that such an old crazy vessel would be the better for being taken in tow. 'But 'howsomever,' added this arch adviser, 'I'd have you take care of your upper 'works; for if once you are made fast 'to her poop, agad! she'll spank it 'away, and make every beam in your 'body crack with straining.' Our sheprojectors whole plan had like to have been ruined by the effect which this malicious hint had upon Trunnion, whose rage and suspicion being wakened at once, his colour changed from tawny to a cadaverous pale, and then shifting to a deep and dusky red, such as we sometimes observe in the sky when it is replete with thunder, he, after his usual preamble of unmeaning oaths, answered in these words: 'D—n ye, you 'jury-legged dog, you would give all 'the stowage in your hold to be as 'sound as I am; and as for being taken 'in tow, d'ye see, I m not so disabled 'but that I can lie my course, and perform my voyage without any assist-'ance; and, agad! no man shall ever 'see Hawser Trunnion lagging a-stern 'in the wake of e'er a bitch in Christen-'dom.'

Mrs. Grizzle, who every morning interrogated her brother with regard to the subject of his night's conversation with his friends, soon received the unwelcome news of the commodore's aversion to matrimony; and justly imputing the greatest part of his disgust to the satirical insinuations of Mr. Hatchway, resolved to level this obstruction to her success, and actually found means to interest him in her scheme. She had, indeed, on some occasions, a particular knack at making converts, being probably not unacquainted with that grand system of persuasion, which is adopted by the greatest personages of the age, as fraught with maxims much more effectual than all the eloquence of Tully or Demosthenes, even when supported by the demonstrations of truth: besides, Mr. Hatchway's fidelity to his new ally was confirmed, by his foreseeing in his captain's marriage an infinite fund of gratification for his own cynical disposition. Thus, therefore, converted and properly cautioned, he, for the future, suppressed all the virulence of his wit against the matrimonial state; and as he knew not how to open his mouth in the positive praise of any person whatever, took all opportunities of excepting Mrs. Grizzle by name, from the censures he liberally bestowed upon the rest of her sex. 'She is not a drunk-'ard, like Nan Castick of Deptford,' he would say; 'not a nincompoop, like 'Peg Simper of Woolwich; not a brim-'stone, like Kate Coddle of Chatham; 'nor a shrew, like Nell Griffin on the 'Point Portsmouth;' (ladies to whom, at different times, they had both paid their addresses;) 'but a tight, good-hu-'moured, sensible wench, who knows 'very well how to box her compass; 'well trimmed aloft, and well sheathed 'alow, with a good cargo under her 'hatches.' The commodore at first imagined this commendation was ironical, but hearing it repeated again and again, was filled with astonishment at this surprizing change in the lieutenant's behaviour; and after a long fit of musing, concluded that Hatchway himself harboured a matrimonial design on the person of Mrs. Grizzle.

Pleased with this conjecture, he rallied Jack in his turn, and one night toasted her health as a compliment to his passion; a circumstance which the lady learned next day by the usual canal of her intelligence, and interpreting as the result of his own tenderness for her, she congratulated herself upon the victory she had obtained; and thinking it unnecessary to continue the reserve she had hitherto industriously affected, resolved from that day to sweeten her behaviour towards him with such a dish of affection, as could not fail to persuade him that he had inspired her with a reciprocal flame. In consequence of this determination, he was invited to dinner; and, while he staid, treated with such cloying proofs of her regard, that not only the rest of the company, but even Trunnion himself, perceived her drift; and taking the alarm accordingly, could not help exclaiming, 'Oho! 'I see how the land lies; and if I don't 'weather the point, I'll be d—'d!' Having thus expressed himself to his afflicted inamorato, he made the best of his way to the garrison, in which he shut himself up for the space of ten days, and had no communication with his friends and domesticks but by looks, which

which were moſt ſignificantly picturesque.

CHAP. VII.

DIVERS STRATAGEMS ARE INVENTED AND PUT IN PRACTICE, IN ORDER TO OVERCOME THE OBSTINACY OF TRUNNION, WHO AT LENGTH IS TEAZED AND TORTURED INTO THE NOOSE OF WEDLOCK.

THIS abrupt departure, and unkind declaration, affected Mrs. Grizzle ſo much, that ſhe fell ſick of ſorrow and mortification: and after having confined herſelf to her bed for three days, ſent for her brother, told him ſhe perceived her end drawing near, and deſired that a lawyer might be brought, in order to write her laſt will. Mr. Pickle, ſurprized at her demand, began to act the part of a comforter, aſſuring her, that her diſtemper was not at all dangerous, and that he would inſtantly ſend for a phyſician, who would convince her that ſhe was in no manner of jeopardy; ſo that there was no occaſion at preſent to employ any officious attorney in ſuch a melancholy taſk. Indeed, this affectionate brother was of opinion, that a will was altogether ſuperfluous at any rate, as he himſelf was heir at law to his ſiſter's whole real and perſonal eſtate. But ſhe inſiſted upon his compliance with ſuch determined obſtinacy, that he could no longer reſiſt her importunities; and a ſcrivener arriving, ſhe dictated and executed her will; in which ſhe bequeathed to Commodore Trunnion one thouſand pounds, to purchaſe a mourning ring, which ſhe hoped he would wear as a pledge of her friendſhip and affection. Her brother, though he did not much reliſh this teſtimony of her love, nevertheleſs, that ſame evening, gave an account of this particular to Mr. Hatchway, who was alſo, as Mr. Pickle aſſured him, generouſly remembered by the teſtatrix.

The lieutenant, fraught with this piece of intelligence, watched for an opportunity, and as ſoon as he perceived the commodore's features a little unbended from that ferocious contraction they had retained ſo long, ventured to inform him, that Pickle's ſiſter lay at the point of death, and that ſhe had left him a thouſand pounds in her will.—This piece of news overwhelmed him with confuſion; and Mr. Hatchway imputing his ſilence to remorſe, reſolved to take advantage of that favourable moment, and counſelled him to go and viſit the poor young woman, who was dying for love of him. But his admonition happened to be ſomewhat unſeaſonable; for Trunnion no ſooner heard him mention the cauſe of her diſorder, than his moroſity recurring, he burſt out into a violent fit of curſing, and forthwith betook himſelf again to his hammock, where he lay uttering, in a low growling tone of voice, a repetition of oaths and impreprecations, for the ſpace of four and twenty hours, without ceaſing. This was a delicious meal to the lieutenant; who, eager to inhance the pleaſure of the entertainment, and at the ſame time conduce to the ſucceſs of the cauſe he had eſpouſed, invented a ſtratagem, the execution of which had all the effect he could deſire. He prevailed upon Pipes, who was devoted to his ſervice, to get upon the top of the chimney belonging to the commodore's chamber, at midnight, and to lower down by a rope a bunch of ſtinking whitings, which being performed, he put a ſpeaking trumpet to his mouth, and hollowed down the vent, in a voice like thunder, 'Trunnion! Trunnion! 'turn out and be ſpliced, or lie ſtill and 'be damned!' This dreadful note, the terror of which was increaſed by the ſilence and darkneſs of the night, as well as the echo of the paſſage through which it was conveyed, no ſooner reached the ears of the aſtoniſhed commodore, than turning his eye towards the place from whence this ſolemn addreſs ſeemed to proceed, he beheld a glittering object that vaniſhed in an inſtant. Juſt as his ſuperſtitious fear had improved the apparition into ſome ſupernatural meſſenger cloathed in ſhining array, his opinion was confirmed by a ſudden exploſion, which he took for thunder, though it was no other than the noiſe of a piſtol fired down the chimney by the boatſwain's mate, according to the inſtructions he had received; and he had time enough to deſcend before he was in any danger of being detected by his commander, who could not for a whole hour recollect

recollect himself from the amazement and consternation which had overpowered his faculties.

At length, however, he got up and rung his bell with great agitation. He repeated the summons more than once; but no regard being paid to this alarm, his dread returned with double terror, a cold sweat bedewed his limbs, his knees knocked together, his hair bristled up, and the remains of his teeth were shattered to pieces in the convulsive vibrations of his jaws.

In the midst of this agony, he made one desperate effort, and bursting open the door of his apartment, bolted into Hatchway's chamber, which happened to be on the same floor. There he found the lieutenant in a counterfeit swoon; who pretended to wake from his trance in an ejaculation of 'Lord have mercy 'upon us!' And being questioned by the terrified commodore with regard to what had happened, assured him he had heard the same voice and clap of thunder by which Trunnion himself had been discomposed.

Pipes, whose turn it was to watch, concurred in giving evidence to the same purpose; and the commodore not only owned that he had heard the voice, but likewise communicated his vision, with all the aggravation which his disturbed fancy suggested.

A consultation immediately ensued, in which Mr. Hatchway very gravely observed, that the finger of God was plainly perceivable in those signals; and that it would be both sinful and foolish to disregard his commands; especially as the match proposed was, in all respects, more advantageous than any that one of his years and infirmities could reasonably expect; declaring, that for his own part he would not endanger his soul and body by living one day longer under the same roof with a man who despised the holy will of Heaven; and Tom Pipes adhered to the same pious resolution.

Trunnion's perseverance could not resist the number and diversity of considerations that assaulted it; he revolved in silence all the opposite motives that occurred to his reflection; and after having been, to all appearance, bewildered in the labyrinth of his own thoughts, he wiped the sweat from his forehead, and heaving a piteous groan, yielded to their remonstrances in these words: 'Well, since it must be so, I think 'we must e'en grapple; but d—n my 'eyes! 'tis a d—n'd hard case that a 'fellow of my years should be compell'ed, d'ye see, to beat up to windward 'all the rest of my life, against the cur'rent of his own inclination.'

This important article being discussed, Mr. Hatchway set out in the morning to visit the despairing shepherdess, and was handsomely rewarded for the enlivening tidings with which he blessed her ears. Sick as she was, she could not help laughing heartily at the contrivance, in consequence of which her swain's assent had been obtained; and gave the lieutenant ten guineas for Tom Pipes, in consideration of the part he acted in the farce.

In the afternoon the commodore suffered himself to be conveyed to her apartment, like a felon to execution, and was received by her in a languishing manner and genteel dishabille, accompanied by her sister-in-law; who was, for very obvious reasons, extremely solicitous about her success. Though the lieutenant had tutored him touching his behaviour at this interview, he made a thousand wry faces before he could pronounce the simple salutation of *How d'ye* to his mistress; and after his counsellor had urged him with twenty or thirty whispers, to each of which he had replied aloud, 'D—n your eyes, I 'won't!' he got up, and halting towards the couch on which Mrs. Grizzle reclined in a state of strange expectation, he seized her hand, and pressed it to his lips; but this piece of gallantry he performed in such a reluctant, uncouth, indignant manner, that the nymph had need of all her resolution to endure the compliment without shrinking; and he himself was so disconcerted at what he had done, that he instantly retired to the other end of the room, where he sat silent, and broiled with shame and vexation. Mrs. Pickle, like a sensible matron, quitted the place, on pretence of going to the nursery; and Mr. Hatchway taking the hint, recollected that he had left his tobacco-pouch in the parlour, whither he immediately descended, leaving the two lovers to their mutual endearments. Never had the commodore found himself in such a disagreeable dilemma before. He sat in an agony of suspense, as if he every moment dreaded the dissolution of nature; and

and the imploring ſighs of his future bride added, if poſſible, to the pangs of his diſtreſs. Impatient of his ſituation, he rolled his eye around in queſt of ſome relief, and unable to contain himſelf, exclaimed, 'D———n ſeize 'the fellow and his pouch too! I be- 'lieve he has ſheered off, and left me 'here in the ſtays.' Mrs. Grizzle, who could not help taking ſome notice of this manifeſtation of chagrin, lamented her unhappy fate in being ſo diſagreeable to him that he could not put up with her company for a few moments without repining; and began in very tender terms to reproach him with his inhumanity and indifference. To this expoſtulation he replied, 'Zounds! what 'would the woman have? Let the par- 'ſon do his office when he wool, here 'I am, ready to be reeved in the ma- 'trimonial block, d'ye ſee! and d—n all 'nonſenſical palaver!' So ſaying, he retreated, leaving his miſtreſs not at all diſobliged at his plain-dealing. That ſame evening the treaty of marriage was brought upon the carpet; and, by means of Mr. Pickle and the lieutenant, ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all parties, without the intervention of lawyers, whom Mr. Trunnion expreſsly excluded from all ſhare in the buſineſs; making that condition the indiſpenſible preliminary of the whole agreement. Things being brought to this bearing, Mrs. Grizzle's heart dilated with joy; her health, which, by the bye, was never dangerouſly impaired, ſhe recovered as if by enchantment; and a day being fixed for the nuptials, employed the ſhort period of her celibacy in chuſing ornaments for the celebration of her entrance into the married ſtate.

CHAP. VIII.

PREPARATIONS ARE MADE FOR THE COMMODORE'S WEDDING, WHICH IS DELAYED BY AN ACCIDENT THAT HURRIED HIM THE LORD KNOWS WHITHER.

THE fame of this extraordinary conjunction ſpread all over the county; and on the day appointed for their ſpouſals, the church was ſurrounded with an inconceivable multitude. The commodore, to give a ſpecimen of his gallantry, by the advice of his friend Hatchway, reſolved to appear on horſeback on the grand occaſion, at the head of all his male attendants, whom he had rigged with the white ſhirts and black caps formerly belonging to his barge's crew; and he bought a couple of hunters for the accommodation of himſelf and his lieutenant. With this equipage then he ſet out from the garriſon for the church, after having diſpatched a meſſenger to apprize the bride that he and his company were mounted. She got immediately into the coach, accompanied by her brother and his wife, and drove directly to the place of aſſignation, where ſeveral pews were demoliſhed, and divers perſons almoſt preſſed to death, by the eagerneſs of the crowd that broke in to ſee the ceremony performed. Thus arrived at the altar, and the prieſt in attendance, they waited a whole half hour for the commodore, at whoſe ſlowneſs they began to be under ſome apprehenſion, and accordingly diſmiſſed a ſervant to quicken his pace. The valet having rode ſomething more than a mile, eſpied the whole troop diſpoſed in a long field, croſſing the road obliquely, and headed by the bridegroom and his friend Hatchway, who finding himſelf hindered by a hedge from proceeding farther in the ſame direction, fired a piſtol, and ſtood over to the other ſide, making an obtuſe angle with the line of his former courſe; and the reſt of the ſquadron followed his example, keeping always in the rear of each other, like a flight of wild geeſe.

Surprized at this ſtrange method of journeying, the meſſenger came up, and told the commodore that his lady and her company expected him in the church, where they had tarried a conſiderable time, and were beginning to be very uneaſy at his delay; and therefore deſired he would proceed with more expedition. To this meſſage Mr. Trunnion replied, 'Hark ye, brother, don't you ſee we 'make all poſſible ſpeed? Go back, and 'tell thoſe who ſent you, that the wind 'has ſhifted ſince we weighed anchor, 'and that we are obliged to make very 'ſhort trips in tacking, by reaſon of 'the narrowneſs of the channel; and 'that as we lie within ſix points of the 'wind, they muſt make ſome allowance 'for variation and lee-way.'—'Lord, 'Sir!' ſaid the valet, 'what occaſion 'have you to go zig-zag in that man- 'ner? Do but clap ſpurs to your horſes, 'and

'and ride straight forward, and I'll engage you shall be at the church porch 'in less than a quarter of an hour.'— 'What! right in the wind's eye?' answered the commander. 'Ahey, brother! where did you learn your navigation? Hawser Trunnion is not to 'be taught, at this time of day, how 'to lie his course, or keep his own 'reckoning. And as for you, brother, 'you best know the trim of your own 'frigate.' The courier finding he had to do with people who would not be easily persuaded out of their own opinions, returned to the temple, and made a report of what he had seen and heard, to the no small consolation of the bride, who had begun to discover some signs of disquiet. Composed, however, by this piece of intelligence, she exerted her patience for the space of another half hour, during which period seeing no bridegroom arrive, she was exceedingly alarmed; so that all the spectators could easily perceive her perturbation, which manifested itself in frequent palpitations, heart-heavings, and alterations of countenance, in spite of the assistance of a smelling-bottle, which she incessantly applied to her nostrils.

Various were the conjectures of the company on this occasion: some imagined he had mistaken the place of rendezvous, as he had never been at church since he first settled in that parish; others believed he had met with some accident, in consequence of which his attendants had carried him back to his own house; and a third set, in which the bride herself was thought to be comprehended, could not help suspecting that the commodore had changed his mind. But all these suppositions, ingenious as they were, happened to be wide of the true cause that detained him, which was no other than this: the commodore and his crew had, by dint of turning, almost weathered the parson's house that stood to windward of the church, when the notes of a pack of hounds unluckily reached the ears of the two hunters which Trunnion and the lieutenant bestrode. These fleet animals no sooner heard the enlivening sound, than eager for the chace, they sprung away all of a sudden, and strained every nerve to partake of the sport, flew across the fields with incredible speed, over-leaped hedges and ditches, and every thing in their way, without the least regard to their unfortunate riders. The lieutenant, whose steed had got the heels of the other, finding it would be great folly and presumption in him to pretend to keep the saddle with his wooden leg, very wisely took the opportunity of throwing himself off in his passage through a field of rich clover, among which he lay at his ease; and seeing his captain advancing at full gallop, hailed him with the salutation of 'What chear? ho!' The commodore, who was in infinite distress, eyeing him askance as he passed, replied with a faultering voice, 'O, d—n 'you! you are safe at anchor; I wish 'to God I were as fast moored.' Nevertheless, conscious of his disabled heel, he would not venture to try the experiment which had succeeded so well with Hatchway, but resolved to stick as close as possible to his horse's back, until Providence should interpose in his behalf. With this view he dropped his whip, and with his right-hand laid fast hold on the pummel, contracting every muscle in his body to secure himself in his seat, and grinning most formidably, in consequence of this exertion. In this attitude he was hurried on a considerable way, when all on a sudden his view was comforted by a five-bar gate that appeared before him, as he never doubted that there the career of his hunter must necessarily end. But, alas! he reckoned without his host; far from halting at this obstruction, the horse sprung over it with amazing agility, to the utter confusion and disorder of his owner, who lost his hat and periwig in the leap, and now began to think in good earnest, that he was actually mounted on the back of the devil. He recommended himself to God, his reflection forsook him, his eye-sight and all his other senses failed, he quitted the reins, and fastening by instinct on the mane, was in this condition conveyed into the midst of the sportsmen, who were astonished at the sight of such an apparition. Neither was their surprize to be wondered at, if we reflect on the figure that presented itself to their view. The commodore's person was at all times an object of admiration; much more so on this occasion, when every singularity was aggragated by the circumstances of his dress and disaster.

He had put on in honour of his nuptials his best coat of blue broad-cloth, cut by a taylor of Ramsgate, and trimmed

med with five dozen of braſs buttons large and ſmall; his breeches were of the ſame piece, faſtened at the knees with large bunches of tape; his waiſtcoat was of red pluſh lapelled with green velvet, and garniſhed with vellum holes; his boots bore an infinite reſemblance both in colour and ſhape to a pair of leather buckets; his ſhoulder was graced with a broad buff belt, from whence depended a huge hanger with a hilt like that of a backſword; and on each ſide of his pummel appeared a ruſty piſtol rammed in a caſe covered with a bear-ſkin. The loſs of his tie-periwig and laced hat, which were curioſities of the kind, did not at all contribute to the improvement of the picture, but on the contrary, by exhibiting his bald pate, and the natural extenſion of his lant-horn-jaws, added to the peculiarity and extravagance of the whole. Such a ſpectacle could not have failed of diverting the whole company from the chace, had his horſe thought proper to purſue a different route, but the beaſt was too keen a ſporter to chuſe any other way than that which the ſtag followed; and therefore, without ſtopping to gratify the curioſity of the ſpectators, he in a few minutes outſtripped every hunter in the field. There being a deep hollow way betwixt him and the hounds, rather than ride round about the length of a furlong to a path that croſſed the lane, he tranſported himſelf at one jump, to the unſpeakable aſtoniſhment and terror of a waggoner who chanced to be underneath, and ſaw this phenomenon fly over his carriage. This was not the only adventure he atchieved. The ſtag having taken a deep river that lay in his way, every man directed his courſe to a bridge in the neighbourhood; but our bridegroom's courſer deſpiſing all ſuch conveniences, plunged into the ſtream without heſitation, and ſwam in a twinkling to the oppoſite ſhore. This ſudden immerſion into an element of which Trunnion was properly a native, in all probability helped to recruit the exhauſted ſpirits of his rider, who at his landing on the other ſide gave ſome tokens of ſenſation, by hallooing aloud for aſſiſtance, which he could not poſſibly receive, becauſe his horſe ſtill maintained the advantage he had gained, and would not allow himſelf to be overtaken.

In ſhort, after a long chace that laſted ſeveral hours, and extended to a dozen miles at leaſt, he was the firſt in at the death of the deer, being ſeconded by the lieutenant's gelding, which, actuated by the ſame ſpirit, had, without a rider, followed his companion's example.

Our bridegroom finding himſelf at laſt brought up, or, in other words, at the end of his career, took the opportunity of this firſt pauſe to deſire the huntſmen would lend him a hand in diſmounting; and was by their condeſcenſion ſafely placed on the graſs, where he ſat ſtaring at the company as they came in, with ſuch wildneſs of aſtoniſhment in his looks, as if he had been a creature of another ſpecies, dropped among them from the clouds.

Before they had fleſhed the hounds, however, he recollected himſelf, and ſeeing one of the ſportſmen take a ſmall flaſk out of his pocket and apply it to his mouth, judged the cordial to be no other than neat Coniac, which it really was; and expreſſing a deſire of participation, was immediately accommodated with a moderate doſe, which perfectly compleated his recovery.

By this time he and his two horſes had engroſſed the attention of the whole crowd: while ſome admired the elegant proportion and uncommon ſpirit of the two animals, the reſt contemplated the ſurprizing appearance of their maſter, whom before they had only ſeen *en paſſant*; and at length, one of the gentlemen accoſting him very courteouſly, ſignified his wonder at ſeeing him in ſuch an equipage, and aſked if he had not dropped his companion by the way. 'Why, look ye, brother,' replied the commodore, 'mayhap you think me 'an odd ſort of a fellow, ſeeing me in 'this trim, eſpecially as I have loſt part 'of my rigging; but this here is the 'caſe, d'ye ſee: I weighed anchor from 'my own houſe this morning at ten 'A. M. with fair weather, and a favourable breeze at S. S. E. being 'bound to the next church on the voyage 'of matrimony: but howſomever, we 'had not run down a quarter of a 'league, when the wind ſhifting, blowed directly in our teeth; ſo that we 'were forced to tack all the way, d'ye 'ſee, and had almoſt beat up within ſight 'of the port, when theſe ſons of bitches 'of horſes, which I had bought but 'two days before, (for my own part, I 'believe they are devils incarnate) luffed 'round in a trice, and then refuſing the

'helm, drove away like lightning with 'me and my lieutenant, who ſoon came 'to anchor in an exceeding good birth. 'As for my own part, I have been 'carried over rocks, and flats, and 'quick-ſands; among which I have 'pitched away a ſpecial good tie-periwig 'and an iron-bound hat; and at laſt, 'thank God! am got into ſmooth wa-'ter and ſafe riding: but if ever I ven-'ture my carcaſe upon ſuch a hare-'um-ſcare'um blood of a bitch again, 'my name is not Hawſer Trunnion, 'd—n my eyes!'

One of the company, ſtruck with this name, which he had often heard, immediately laid hold on his declaration at the cloſe of this ſingular account; and obſerving that his horſes were very vicious, aſked how he intended to return. 'As for that matter,' replied Mr. Trunnion, 'I am reſolved to hire a 'ſledge, or waggon, or ſuch a thing as 'a jack-aſs; for I'll be d—n'd if ever I 'croſs the back of a horſe again.'—'And what do you propoſe to do with 'theſe creatures?' ſaid the other, pointing to the hunters, 'they ſeem to have 'ſome mettle; but then they are mere 'colts, and will take the devil and all of 'breaking. Methinks this hinder one 'is ſhoulder-ſlipped.'—'Damn them!' cried the commodore, 'I wiſh both their 'necks were broke, thof the two coſt 'me forty good yellow-boys.'—'Forty 'guineas!' exclaimed the ſtranger, who was a ſquire and a jocky, as well as owner of the pack; 'Lord! Lord! how a man 'may be impoſed upon! Why, theſe cattle are clumſy enough to go to plough: 'mind what a flat counter; do but obſerve how ſharp this here one is in the 'withers: then he's fired in the farther 'fetlock.' In ſhort, this connoiſſeur in horſe-fleſh, having diſcovered in them all the defects which can poſſibly be found in that ſpecies of animals, offered to give him ten guineas for the two, ſaying, he would convert them into beaſts of burden. The owner, who (after what had happened) was very well diſpoſed to liſten to any thing that was ſaid to their prejudice, implicitly believed the truth of the ſtranger's aſſeverations, diſcharged a furious volley of oaths againſt the raſcal who had taken him in, and forthwith ſtruck a bargain with the ſquire, who paid him inſtantly for his purchaſe; in conſequence of which he won the plate at the next Canterbury races.

This affair being tranſacted to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties, as well as to the general entertainment of the company, who laughed in their ſleeves at the dexterity of their friend, Trunnion was ſet upon the ſquire's own horſe, and led by his ſervant in the midſt of this cavalcade, which proceeded to a neighbouring village, where they had beſpoke dinner, and where our bridegroom found means to provide himſelf with another hat and wig. With regard to his marriage, he bore his diſappointment with the temper of a philoſopher; and the exerciſe he had undergone having quickened his appetite, ſat down at table in the midſt of his new acquaintance, making a very hearty meal, and moiſtening every morſel with a draught of the ale, which he found very much to his ſatisfaction.

CHAP. IX.

HE IS FOUND BY THE LIEUTENANT; RECONDUCTED TO HIS OWN HOUSE; MARRIED TO MRS. GRIZZLE, WHO MEETS WITH A SMALL MISFORTUNE IN THE NIGHT, AND ASSERTS HER PREROGATIVE NEXT MORNING: IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH HER HUSBAND'S EYE IS ENDANGERED.

MEANWHILE, Lieutenant Hatchway made ſhift to hobble to the church, where he informed the company of what had happened to the commodore; and the bride behaved with great decency on the occaſion; for, as ſoon as ſhe underſtood the danger to which her future huſband was expoſed, ſhe fainted in the arms of her ſiſter-in-law, to the ſurprize of all the ſpectators, who could not comprehend the cauſe of her diſorder; and when ſhe was recovered by the application of ſmelling-bottles, earneſtly begged that Mr. Hatchway and Tom Pipes would take her brother's coach, and go in queſt of their commander.

This taſk they readily undertook, being eſcorted by all the reſt of his adherents on horſeback; while the bride and her friends were invited to the parſon's houſe, and the ceremony deferred till another occaſion.

The lieutenant, ſteering his courſe as near

near the line of direction in which Trunnion went off, as the coach-road would permit, got intelligence of his track from one farm-houſe to another; for ſuch an apparition could not fail of attracting particular notice; and one of the horſemen having picked up his hat and wig in a bye-path, the whole troop entered the village where he was lodged about four o'clock in the afternoon. When they underſtood he was ſafely houſed at the George, they rode up to the door in a body, and expreſſed their ſatisfaction in three chears; which were returned by the company within, as ſoon as they were inſtructed in the nature of the ſalute by Trunnion, who by this time had entered into all the jollity of his new friends, and was indeed more than half ſeas over. The lieutenant was introduced to all preſent as his ſworn brother, and had ſomething toſſed up for his dinner. Tom Pipes and the crew were regaled in another room; and a freſh pair of horſes being put to the coach, about ſix in the evening the commodore, with all his attendants, departed for the garriſon, after having ſhook hands with every individual in the houſe.

Without any farther accident he was conveyed in ſafety to his own gate before nine, and committed to the care of Pipes, who carried him inſtantly to his hammock, while the lieutenant was driven away to the place where the bride and her friends remained with great anxiety, which vaniſhed when he aſſured them that his commodore was ſafe, being ſucceeded by abundance of mirth and pleaſantry at the account he gave of Trunnion's adventure.

Another day was fixed for the nuptials; and in order to baulk the curioſity of idle people, which had given great offence, the parſon was prevailed upon to perform the ceremony in the garriſon, which all that day was adorned with flags and pendants diſplayed, and at night illuminated by the direction of Hatchway, who alſo ordered the pateraroes to be fired as ſoon as the marriage-knot was tied. Neither were the other parts of the entertainment neglected by this ingenious contriver, who produced undeniable proofs of his elegance and art in the wedding ſupper, which had been committed to his management and direction. This genial banquet was entirely compoſed of ſea diſhes; a huge pillaw, conſiſting of a large piece of beef ſliced, a couple of fowls, and half a peck of rice, ſmoaked in the middle of the board: a diſh of hard fiſh ſwimming in oil, appeared at each end, the ſides being furniſhed with a meſs of that ſavoury compoſition known by the name of lob's courſe, and a plate of ſalmagundy. The ſecond courſe diſplayed a gooſe of a monſtrous magnitude, flanked with two Guinea-hens, a pig barbacued, an hock of ſalt pork in the midſt of a peas pudding, a leg of mutton roaſted with potatoes, and another boiled with yams. The third ſervice was made up of a loin of freſh pork with apple-ſauce, a kid ſmothered with onions, and a terrapin baked in the ſhell; and laſt of all, a prodigious ſea-pye was preſented, with an infinite volume of pancakes and fritters. That every thing might be anſwerable to the magnificence of this delicate feaſt, he had provided vaſt quantities of ſtrong beer, ſlip, rumbo, and burnt brandy, with plenty of Barbadoes water for the ladies; and hired all the fiddles within ſix miles, who with the addition of a drum, bagpipe, and Welch-harp, regaled the gueſts with a moſt melodious concert.

The company, who were not at all exceptious, ſeemed extremely well pleaſed with every particular of the entertainment; and the evening being ſpent in the moſt ſocial manner, the bride was by her ſiſter conducted to her apartment, where, however, a trifling circumſtance had like to have deſtroyed the harmony which had been hitherto maintained.

I have already obſerved, that there was not one ſtanding bed within the walls; therefore, the reader will not wonder that Mrs. Trunnion was out of humour, when ſhe found herſelf under the neceſſity of being confined with her ſpouſe in a hammock, which, though enlarged with a double portion of canvas, and dilated with a yoke for the occaſion, was at beſt but a diſagreeable, not to ſay dangerous ſituation. She accordingly complained with ſome warmth of this inconvenience, which ſhe imputed to diſreſpect, and at firſt abſolutely refuſed to put up with the expedient: but Mrs. Pickle ſoon brought her to reaſon and compliance, by obſerving, that one night would ſoon be elapſed, and next day ſhe might regulate her own œconomy.

Thus perſuaded, ſhe ventured into the vehicle, and was viſited by her huſband in leſs than an hour, the company being departed to their own homes, and the garriſon left to the command of his lieutenant and mate. But it ſeems the hooks that ſupported this ſwinging couch were not calculated for the addition of weight which they were now deſtined to bear; and therefore gave way in the middle of the night, to the no ſmall terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who perceiving herſelf falling, ſcreamed aloud, and by that exclamation brought Hatchway, with a light, into the chamber. Though ſhe had received no injury by the fall, ſhe was extremely diſcompoſed and incenſed at the accident, which ſhe even openly aſcribed to the obſtinacy and whimſical oddity of the commodore in ſuch petulant terms, as evidently declared that ſhe thought her great aim accompliſhed, and her authority ſecured againſt all the ſhocks of fortune. Indeed, her bed-fellow ſeemed to be of the ſame opinion, by his tacit reſignation; for he made no reply to her inſinuations, but with a moſt vinegar aſpect crawled out of his neſt, and betook himſelf to reſt in another apartment, while his irritated ſpouſe diſmiſſed the lieutenant, and from the wreck of the hammock made an occaſional bed for herſelf on the floor, fully determined to provide better accommodation for the next night's lodging.

Having no inclination to ſleep, her thoughts during the remaining part of the night were engroſſed by a ſcheme of reformation ſhe was reſolved to execute in the family; and no ſooner did the firſt lark bid ſalutation to the morn, than ſtarting from her humble couch, and huddling on her cloaths, ſhe ſallied from her chamber, explored her way through paths before unknown, and in the courſe of her reſearches perceived a large bell, to which ſhe made ſuch effectual application as alarmed every ſoul in the family. In a moment ſhe was ſurrounded by Hatchway, Pipes, and all the reſt of the ſervants half dreſſed; but ſeeing none of the feminine gender appear, ſhe began to ſtorm at the ſloth and lazineſs of the maids, who, ſhe obſerved, ought to have been at work an hour at leaſt before ſhe called; and then, for the firſt time, underſtood that no woman was permitted to ſleep within the walls.

She did not fail to exclaim againſt this regulation; and being informed that the cook and chambermaid lodged in a ſmall office-houſe that ſtood without the gate, ordered the draw-bridge to be let down, and in perſon beat up their quarters, commanding them forthwith to ſet about ſcouring the rooms, which had not been hitherto kept in a very decent condition, while two men were immediately employed to tranſport the bed on which ſhe uſed to lie from her brother's houſe to her new habitation; ſo that, in leſs than two hours, the whole œconomy of the garriſon was turned topſy-turvy, and every thing involved in tumult and noiſe. Trunnion being diſturbed and diſtracted with the uproar, turned out in his ſhirt like a maniack, and arming himſelf with a cudgel of crab-tree, made an irruption into his wife's apartment, where perceiving a couple of carpenters at work, in joining a bedſtead, he, with many dreadful oaths and opprobrious invectives, ordered them to deſiſt, ſwearing, he would ſuffer no bulk-heads nor hurricane houſes to ſtand where he was maſter; but finding his remonſtrances diſregarded by theſe mechanicks, who believed him to be ſome madman belonging to the family, who had broke from his confinement, he aſſaulted them both with great fury and indignation, and was handled ſo roughly in the encounter, that in a very ſhort time he meaſured his length on the floor, in conſequence of a blow that he received from a hammer, by which the ſight of his remaining eye was grievouſly endangered.

Having thus reduced him to a ſtate of ſubjection, they reſolved to ſecure him with cords, and were actually buſy in adjuſting his fetters, when he was exempted from the diſgrace by the accidental entrance of his ſpouſe, who reſcued him from the hands of his adverſaries; and, in the midſt of her condolence, imputed his misfortune to the inconſiderate roughneſs of his own diſpoſition.

He breathed nothing but revenge, and made ſome efforts to chaſtiſe the inſolence of the workmen; who, as ſoon as they underſtood his quality, aſked forgiveneſs for what they had done with great humility, proteſting that they did not know he was maſter of the houſe. But, far from being ſatisfied with this apology, he groped about for the bell, (the inflammation

flammation of his eye having utterly deprived him of sight) and the rope being, by the precaution of the delinquents, conveyed out of his reach, began to storm with incredible vociferation, like a lion roaring in the toil, pouring forth innumerable oaths and execrations, and calling by name Hatchway and Pipes, who being within hearing, obeyed the extraordinary summons, and were ordered to put the carpenters in irons, for having audaciously assaulted him in his own house.

His myrmidons seeing he had been evil-intreated, were exasperated at the insult he had suffered, which they considered as an affront upon the dignity of the garrison; the more so, as the mutineers seemed to put themselves in a posture of defence, and set their authority at defiance: they therefore unsheathed their cutlasses, which they commonly wore as badges of their commission; and a desperate engagement, in all probability, would have ensued, had not the lady of the castle interposed, and prevented the effects of their animosity, by assuring the lieutenant that the commodore had been the aggressor; and that the workmen, finding themselves attacked in such an extraordinary manner, by a person whom they did not know, were obliged to act in their own defence, by which he had received that unlucky contusion.

Mr. Hatchway no sooner learned the sentiments of Mrs. Trunnion, than sheathing his indignation, he told the commodore he should always be ready to execute his lawful commands; but that he could not in conscience be concerned in oppressing poor people who had been guilty of no offence.

This unexpected declaration, together with the behaviour of his wife, who in his hearing desired the carpenters to resume their work, filled the breast of Trunnion with rage and mortification. He pulled off his woollen night-cap, pummelled his bare pate, beat the floor alternately with his feet, swore his people had betrayed him, and cursed himself to the lowest pit of hell, for having admitted such a cockatrice into his family. But all these exclamations did not avail; they were among the last essays of his resistance to the will of his wife, whose influence among his adherents had already swallowed up his own; and who now peremptorily told him, that he must leave the management of every thing within doors to her, who understood best what was for his honour and advantage. She then ordered a poultice to be prepared for his eye, which being applied, he was committed to the care of Pipes, by whom he was led about the house like a blind bear growling for prey, while his industrious yoke-fellow executed every circumstance of the plan she had projected; so that, when he recovered his vision, he was an utter stranger in his own house.

CHAP. X.

THE COMMODORE BEING IN SOME CASES RESTIF, HIS LADY HAS RECOURSE TO ARTIFICE IN THE ESTABLISHMENT OF HER THRONE. SHE EXHIBITS SYMPTOMS OF PREGNANCY, TO THE UNSPEAKABLE JOY OF TRUNNION, WHO NEVERTHELESS IS BAULKED IN HIS EXPECTATION.

THESE innovations were not effected without many loud objections on his part; and divers curious dialogues passed between him and his yoke-fellow, who always came off victorious from the dispute; insomuch that his countenance gradually fell; he began to suppress, and at length entirely devoured his chagrin: the terrors of superior authority were plainly perceivable in his features, and in less than three months he became a thorough paced husband. Not that his obstinacy was extinguished, though overcome; in some things he was as inflexible and mulish as ever, but then he durst not kick so openly, and was reduced to the necessity of being passive in his resentments.—Mrs. Trunnion, for example, proposed that a coach and six should be purchased, as she could not ride on horseback, and the chaise was a scandalous carriage for a person of her condition; the commodore, conscious of his own inferior capacity in point of reasoning, did not think proper to dispute the proposal, but lent a deaf ear to her repeated remonstrances, though they were enforced with every argument which she thought could soothe, terrify, shame, or decoy him into compliance: in vain did she urge the excess of affection she had for him, as meriting some return of tenderness and condescension;

condescension; he was even proof against certain menacing hints she gave, touching the resentment of a slighted woman; and he stood out against all the considerations of dignity or disgrace, like a bulwark of brass. Neither was he moved to any indecent or unkind expressions of contradiction, even when she upbraided him with his sordid disposition, and put him in mind of the fortune and honour he had acquired by his marriage; but seemed to retire within himself, like a tortoise when attacked, that shrinks within it's shell, and silently endured the scourge of her reproaches, without seeming sensible of the smart.

This, however, was the only point in which she had been baffled since her nuptials; and as she could by no means digest the miscarriage, she tortured her invention for some new plan, by which she might augment her influence and authority: what her genius refused, was supplied by accident; for she had not lived four months in the garrison, when she was seized with frequent qualms and reachings; her breasts began to harden, and her stomach to be remarkably prominent: in a word, she congratulated herself on the symptoms of her own fertility, and the commodore was transported with joy at the prospect of an heir of his own begetting.

She knew this was the proper season for vindicating her own sovereignty, and accordingly employed the means which nature had put in her power. There was not a rare piece of furniture and apparel for which she did not long; and one day as she went to church, seeing Lady Stately's equipage arrive, she suddenly fainted away. Her husband, whose vanity had never been so perfectly gratified as with this promised harvest of his own sowing, took the alarm immediately; and, in order to prevent relapses of that kind, which might be attended with fatal consequences to his hope, gave her leave to bespeak a coach, horses, and liveries, to her own liking. Thus authorized, she, in a very little time, exhibited such a specimen of her own taste and magnificence, as afforded speculation to the whole county, and made Trunnion's heart quake within him, because he foresaw no limits to her extravagance, which also manifested itself in the most expensive preparations for her lying-in.

Her pride, which had hitherto regarded the representative of her father's house, seemed now to lose all that hereditary respect, and prompt her to outshine and under value the elder branch of her family. She behaved to Mrs. Pickle with a sort of civil reserve, that implied a conscious superiority; and an emulation, in point of grandeur, immediately commenced between the two sisters. She every day communicated her importance to the whole parish, under pretence of taking the air in her coach, and endeavoured to extend her acquaintance among people of fashion. Nor was this an undertaking attended with great difficulty; for all persons whatever, capable of maintaining a certain appearance, will always find admission into what is called the best company, and be rated in point of character according to their own valuation, without subjecting their pretensions to the smallest doubt or examination. In all her visits and parties, she seized every opportunity of declaring her present condition; observing that she was forbid by her physicians to taste such a pickle, and that such a dish was poison to a woman in her way: nay, where she was on a footing of familiarity, she affected to make wry faces, and complained that the young rogue began to be very unruly, writhing herself into divers contortions, as if she had been grievously incommoded by the mettle of this future Trunnion. The husband himself did not behave with all the moderation that might have been expected: at the club he frequently mentioned this circumstance of his own vigour, as a pretty successful feat to be performed by an old fellow of fifty-five; and confirmed the opinion of his strength by redoubled squeezes of the landlord's hand, which never failed of extorting a satisfactory certificate of his might. When his companions drank to the *Hans en kelder*, or Jack in the low cellar, he could not help displaying an extraordinary complacence of countenance, and signified his intention of sending the young dog to sea, as soon as he should be able to carry a cartridge, in hopes of seeing him an officer before his own death.

This hope helped to console him under the extraordinary expence to which he was exposed by the profusion of his wife; especially when he considered, that his compliance with her prodigality would be limited to the expiration of the

nine

nine months, of which the beſt part was by this time elapſed; yet, in ſpite of all this philoſophical reſignation, her fancy ſometimes ſoared to ſuch a ridiculous and intolerable pitch of inſolence and abſurdity, that his temper forſook him, and he could not help wiſhing in ſecret, that her pride might be confounded in the diſſipation of her moſt flattering hopes, even though he himſelf ſhould be a principal ſufferer by the diſappointment. Theſe, however, were no other than the ſuggeſtions of temporary diſguſts, that commonly ſubſided as ſuddenly as they aroſe, and never gave the leaſt diſturbance to the perſon who inſpired them, becauſe he took care to conceal them carefully from her knowledge.

Meanwhile ſhe happily advanced in her reckoning, with the promiſe of a favourable iſſue; the term of her computation expired, and in the middle of the night ſhe was viſited by certain warnings that ſeemed to beſpeak the approach of the critical moment. The commodore got up with great alacrity, and called the midwife, who had been ſeveral days in the houſe; the goſſips were immediately ſummoned, and the moſt intereſting expectations prevailed: but the ſymptoms of labour gradually vaniſhed; and, as the matrons ſagely obſerved, this was no more than a falſe alarm.

Two nights after, they received a ſecond intimation; and, as ſhe was ſenſibly diminiſhed in the waiſt, every thing was ſuppoſed to be in a fair way; yet this viſitation was not more concluſive than the former; her pains wore off in ſpite of all her endeavours to encourage them; and the good women betook themſelves to their reſpective homes, in expectation of finding the third attack deciſive, alluding to the well-known maxim, that *number three is always fortunate*. For once, however, this apothegm failed; the next call was altogether as ineffectual as the former; and moreover attended with a phenomenon which to them was equally ſtrange and inexplicable: this was no other than ſuch a reduction in the ſize of Mrs. Trunnion as might have been expected after the birth of a full-grown child. Startled at ſuch an unaccountable event, they ſat in cloſe divan; and concluding that the caſe was in all reſpects unnatural and prodigious, deſired that a meſſenger might be immediately diſpatched for ſome male practitioner in the art of midwifery.

The commodore, without gueſſing the cauſe of their perplexity, ordered Pipes immediately on this piece of duty; and in leſs than two hours they were aſſiſted by the advice of a ſurgeon of the neighbourhood, who boldly affirmed, that the patient had never been with child. This aſſeveration was like a clap of thunder to Mr. Trunnion, who had been, during eight whole days and nights, in continual expectation of being hailed with the appellation of father.

After ſome recollection, he ſwore the ſurgeon was an ignorant fellow, and that he would not take his word for what he advanced; being comforted and confirmed in his want of faith by the inſinuations of the midwife, who ſtill perſiſted to feed Mrs. Trunnion with hopes of a ſpeedy and ſafe delivery; obſerving, that ſhe had been concerned in many a caſe of the ſame nature, where a fine child was found, even after all ſigns of the mother's pregnancy had diſappeared. Every twig of hope, how ſlender ſoever it may be, is eagerly caught hold on by people who find themſelves in danger of being diſappointed. To every queſtion propoſed by her to the lady, with the preambles of 'Han't you?' or 'Don't you?' an anſwer was made in the affirmative, whether agreeable to truth or not; becauſe the reſpondent could not find in her heart to diſown any ſymptom that might favour the notion ſhe had ſo long indulged.

This experienced proficient in the obſtetrick art was therefore kept in cloſe attendance for the ſpace of three weeks, during which the patient had ſeveral returns of what ſhe pleaſed herſelf with believing to be labour pains: till at length ſhe and her huſband became the ſtanding joke of the pariſh; and this infatuated couple could ſcarce be prevailed upon to part with their hopes, even when ſhe appeared as lank as a greyhound, and they were furniſhed with other unqueſtionable proofs of their having been deceived. But they could not for ever remain under the influence of this ſweet deluſion; which at laſt faded away, and was ſucceeded by a paroxiſm of ſhame and confuſion, that kept the huſband within doors for the ſpace of a whole fortnight, and confined

fined his lady to her bed for a series of weeks, during which she suffered all the anguish of the most intense mortification; yet even this was subdued by the lenient hand of time.

The first respite from her chagrin was employed in the strict discharge of what are called the duties of religion, which she performed with the most rancorous severity; setting on foot a persecution in her own family, that made the house too hot for all the menial servants; even ruffled the almost invincible indifference of Tom Pipes, harassed the commodore himself out of all patience, and spared no individual but Lieutenant Hatchway, whom she never ventured to disoblige.

CHAP. XI.

MRS. TRUNNION ERECTS A TYRANNY IN THE GARRISON, WHILE HER HUSBAND CONCEIVES AN AFFECTION FOR HIS NEPHEW PERRY, WHO MANIFESTS A PECULIARITY OF DISPOSITION EVEN IN HIS TENDER YEARS.

HAVING exercised herself three months in such pious amusements, she appeared again in the world; but her misfortune had made such an impression on her mind, that she could not bear the sight of a child, and trembled whenever the conversation happened to turn upon a christening. Her temper, which was naturally none of the sweetest, seemed to have imbibed a double proportion of souring from her disappointment; of consequence, her company was not much coveted, and she found very few people disposed to treat her with those marks of consideration which she looked upon as her due. This neglect detached her from the society of an unmannerly world; she concentred the energy of all her talents in the government of her own house, which groaned accordingly under her arbitrary sway; and in the brandy-bottle found ample consolation for all the affliction she had undergone.

As for the commodore, he, in a little time, weathered his disgrace, after having sustained many severe jokes from the lieutenant; and now his chief aim being to be absent from his own house as much as possible, he frequented the publick-house more than ever, more assiduously cultivated the friendship of his brother-in-law Mr. Pickle; and, in the course of their intimacy, conceived an affection for his nephew Perry, which did not end but with his life. Indeed, it must be owned, that Trunnion was not naturally deficient in the social passions of the soul; which, though they were strangely warped, disguised, and overborne, by the circumstance of his boisterous life and education, did not fail to manifest themselves occasionally through the whole course of his behaviour.

As all the hopes of propagating his own name had perished, and his relations lay under the interdiction of his hate, it is no wonder, that through the familiarity and friendly intercourse subsisting between him and Mr. Gamaliel, he contracted a liking for the boy, who by this time entered the third year of his age, and was indeed a very handsome, healthy, and promising child; and what seemed to ingratiate him still more with his uncle, was a certain oddity of disposition for which he had been remarkable even from his cradle. It is reported of him, that before the first year of his infancy was elapsed, he used very often, immediately after being dressed, in the midst of the caresses which were bestowed upon him by his mother, while she indulged herself in the contemplation of her own happiness, all of a sudden to alarm her with a fit of shrieks and cries, which continued with great violence till he was stripped to the skin with the utmost expedition by order of his affrighted parent, who thought his tender body was tortured by the misapplication of some unlucky pin; and when he had given them all this disturbance and unnecessary trouble, he would lie sprawling and laughing in their faces, as if he ridiculed the impertinence of their concern. Nay, it is affirmed, that one day, when an old woman who attended in the nursery had by stealth conveyed a bottle of cordial waters to her mouth, he pulled his nurse by the sleeve, and by a slight glance detecting the theft, tipt her the wink with a particular slyness of countenance, as if he had said with a sneer, 'Aye, aye, that is what you must all 'come to!' But these instances of reflection in a babe nine months old are so incredible, that I look upon them as

ex

ex post facto observations, founded upon imaginary recollection, when he was in a more advanced age, and his peculiarities of temper became much more remarkable; of a piece with the ingenious discoveries of those sagacious observers, who can discern something evidently characteristick in the features of any noted personage whose character they have previously heard explained; yet, without pretending to specify at what period of his childhood this singularity first appeared, I can with great truth declare, that when he first attracted the notice and affection of his uncle, it was plainly perceivable.

One would imagine he had marked out the commodore as a proper object of ridicule, for almost all his little childish satire was levelled against him. I will not deny that he might have been influenced in this particular by the example and instruction of Mr. Hatchway, who delighted in superintending the first essays of his genius. As the gout had taken up it's residence in Mr. Trunnion's great-toe, from whence it never removed, no not for a day, little Perry took great pleasure in treading by accident on this infirm member; and when his uncle, incensed by the pain, used to damn him for a hell-begotten brat, he would appease him in a twinkling by returning the curse with equal emphasis, and asking what was the matter with old Hannibal Tough; an appellation by which the lieutenant had taught him to distinguish this grim commander.

Neither was this the only experiment he tried upon the patience of the commodore, with whose nose he used to take indecent freedoms, even while he was fondled on his knee; in one month he put him to the expence of two guineas in seal-skin, by picking his pocket of divers tobacco-pouches, all of which he in secret committed to the flames. Nor did the caprice of his disposition abstain from the favourite beverage of Trunnion, who more than once swallowed a whole draught in which his brother's snuff-box had been emptied, before he perceived the disagreeable infusion: and one day, when the commodore had chastised him by a gentle tap with his cane, he fell flat on the floor, as if he had been deprived of all sense and motion, to the terror and amazement of the striker; and after having filled the whole house with confusion and dismay, opened his eyes, and laughed heartily at the success of his own imposition.

It would be an endless, and perhaps no very agreeable task, to enumerate all the unlucky pranks he played upon his uncle and others, before he attained the fourth year of his age; about which time he was sent, with an attendant, to a day-school in the neighbourhood, that (to use his good mother's own expression) he might be out of harm's way. Here, however, he made little progress, except in mischief, which he practised with impunity, because the school-mistress would run no risk of disobliging a lady of fortune, by exercising unnecessary severities upon her only child.—Nevertheless, Mrs. Pickle was not so blindly partial as to be pleased with such unseasonable indulgence. Perry was taken out of the hands of this courteous teacher, and committed to the instruction of a pedagogue, who was ordered to administer such correction as the boy should in his opinion deserve. This authority he did not neglect to use; his pupil was regularly flogged twice a day, and after having been subjected to this course of discipline for the space of eighteen months, declared the most obstinate, dull, and untoward genius, that ever had fallen under his cultivation; instead of being reformed, he seemed rather hardened and confirmed in his vicious inclinations, and was dead to all sense of fear as well as shame. His mother was extremely mortified at these symptoms of stupidity, which she considered as an inheritance derived from the spirit of his father, and consequently insurmountable by all the efforts of human care. But the commodore rejoiced over the ruggedness of his nature, and was particularly pleased when upon inquiry he found that Perry had beaten all the boys in the school; a circumstance from which he prognosticated every thing that was fair and fortunate in his future fate; observing, that at his age he himself was just such another. The boy, who was now turned of six, having profitted so little under the birch of his unsparing governor, Mrs. Pickle was counselled to send him to a boarding-school not far from London, which was kept by a certain person very eminent for his successful method of education. This advice she the more readily embraced, because at that time she found herself pretty far

gone with another child, that she hoped would console her for the disappointment she had met with in the unpromising talents of Perry, or at any rate divide her concern, so as to enable her to endure the absence of either.

CHAP. XII.

PEREGRINE IS SENT TO A BOARDING-SCHOOL, BECOMES REMARKABLE FOR HIS GENIUS AND AMBITION.

THE commodore understanding her determination, to which her husband did not venture to make the least objection, interested himself so much in behalf of his favourite, as to fit him out at his own charge, and accompany him in person to the place of his destination; where he defrayed the expence of his entrance, and left him to the particular care and inspection of the usher, who having been recommended to him as a person of parts and integrity, received *per* advance a handsome consideration for the task he undertook.

Nothing could be better judged than this piece of liberality: the assistant was actually a man of learning, probity, and good-sense; and though obliged by the scandalous administration of fortune to act in the character of an inferior teacher, had, by his sole capacity and application, brought the school to that degree of reputation which it never could have obtained from the talents of his superior. He had established an œconomy, which, though regular, was not at all severe, by enacting a body of laws suited to the age and comprehension of every individual; and each transgressor was fairly tried by his peers, and punished according to the verdict of the jury. No boy was scourged for want of apprehension, but a spirit of emulation was raised by well-timed praise and artful comparison, and maintained by a distribution of small prizes, which were adjudged to those who signalized themselves either by their industry, sobriety, or genius. This tutor, whose name was Jennings, began with Perry, according to his constant maxim, by examining the soil; that is, studying his temper, in order to consult the bias of his disposition, which was strangely perverted by the absurd discipline he had undergone. He found him in a state of sullen insensibility, which the child had gradually contracted in a long course of stupifying correction; and at first he was not in the least actuated by that commendation which animated the rest of his school-fellows; nor was it in the power of reproach to excite his ambition, which had been buried, as it were, in the grave of disgrace: the usher therefore had recourse to contemptuous neglect, with which he affected to treat this stubborn spirit; foreseeing, that if he retained any seeds of sentiment, this weather would infallibly raise them into vegetation. His judgment was justified by the event; the boy in a little time began to make observations; he perceived the marks of distinction with which virtue was rewarded; grew ashamed of the despicable figure he himself made among his companions, who, far from courting, rather shunned his conversation; and actually pined at his own want of importance.

Mr. Jennings saw and rejoiced at his mortification, which he suffered to proceed as far as possible, without endangering his health. The child lost all relish for diversion, loathed his food, grew pensive, solitary, and was frequently found weeping by himself. These symptoms plainly evinced the recovery of his feelings, to which his governor thought it now high time to make application; and therefore, by little and little, altered his behaviour from the indifference he had put on, to the appearance of more regard and attention. This produced a favourable change in the boy, whose eyes sparkled with satisfaction one day, when his master expressed himself with a shew of surprize in these words. 'So, Perry! I find you don't want genius, when you think proper to use it.' Such encomiums kindled the spirit of emulation in his little breast; he exerted himself with surprizing alacrity, by which he soon acquitted himself of the imputation of dullness, and obtained sundry honorary silver pennies, as acknowledgments of his application: his school fellows now solicited his friendship as eagerly as they had avoided it before; and in less than a twelve-month after his arrival, this supposed dunce was remarkable for the brightness of his parts; having in that short period learnt to read English perfectly well, made great progress in writing, enabled himself

ſelf to ſpeak the French language without heſitation, and acquired ſome knowledge in the rudiments of the Latin tongue. The uſher did not fail to tranſmit an account of his proficiency to the commodore, who received it with tranſport, and forthwith communicated the happy tidings to the parents.

Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, who was never ſubject to violent emotions, heard them with a ſort of phlegmatick ſatisfaction, that ſcarce manifeſted itſelf either in his countenance or expreſſions; nor did the child's mother break forth into that rapture and admiration which might have been expected, when ſhe underſtood how much the talents of her firſt-born had exceeded the hope of her warmeſt imagination. Not but that ſhe profeſſed herſelf well pleaſed with Perry's reputation; though ſhe obſerved, that in theſe commendations the truth was always exaggerated by ſchool maſters, for their own intereſt; and pretended to wonder that the uſher had not mingled more probability with his praiſe. Dunnion was offended at her indifference and want of taſte; and believing that ſhe refined too much in her diſcernment, ſwore that Jennings had declared the truth, and nothing but the truth; for he himſelf had prophecied from the beginning, that the boy would turn out a credit to his family. But by this time Mrs. Pickle was bleſſed with a daughter, whom ſhe had brought into the world about ſix months before the intelligence arrived; ſo that her care and affection being otherwiſe engroſſed, the praiſe of Perry was the leſs greedily devoured. The abatement of her fondneſs was an advantage to his education, which would have been retarded, and perhaps, ruined by pernicious indulgence and prepoſterous interpoſition, had her love conſidered him as an only child; whereas her concern being now diverted to another object that ſhared, at leaſt, one half of her affection, he was left to the management of his preceptor, who tutored him according to his own plan, without any let or interruption. Indeed, all his ſagacity and circumſpection were but barely ſufficient to keep the young gentleman in order; for now that he had won the palm of victory from his rivals in point of ſcholarſhip, his ambition dilated, and he was ſeized with a deſire of ſubjecting the whole ſchool by the valour of his arm. Before he could bring his project to bear, innumerable battles were fought with various ſucceſs; every day a bloody noſe and complaint were preſented againſt, and his own viſage commonly bore ſome livid marks of obſtinate contention. At length, however, he accompliſhed his aim; his adverſaries were ſubdued, his proweſs acknowledged, and he obtained the laurel in war as well as in wit. Thus triumphant, he was intoxicated with ſucceſs. His pride roſe in proportion to his power, and in ſpite of all the endeavours of Jennings, who practiſed every method he could invent for curbing his licentious conduct, without depreſſing his ſpirit, he contracted a large proportion of inſolence, which a ſeries of misfortunes that happened to him in the ſequel could ſcarce effectually tame. Nevertheleſs, there was a fund of good nature and generoſity in his compoſition; and though he eſtabliſhed a tyranny among his comrades, the tranquillity of his reign was maintained by the love rather than by the fear of his ſubjects.

In the midſt of all this enjoyment of empire, he never once violated that reſpectful awe with which the uſher had found means to inſpire him; but he by no means preſerved the ſame regard for the principal maſter, an old illiterate German quack, who had formerly practiſed corn-cutting among the quality, and ſold coſmetick waſhes to the ladies, together with teeth-powers, hair-dying liquors, prolifick elixirs, and tinctures to ſweeten the breath. Theſe noſtrums, recommended by the art of cringing, in which he was conſummate, ingratiated him ſo much with people of faſhion, that he was enabled to ſet up ſchool with five and twenty boys of the beſt families, whom he boarded on his own terms, and undertook to inſtruct in the French and Latin languages, ſo as to qualify them for the colleges of Weſtminſter and Eton. While this plan was in it's infancy, he was ſo fortunate as to meet with Jennings, who for the paltry conſideration of thirty pounds a year, which his neceſſities compelled him to accept, took the whole trouble of educating the children upon himſelf, contrived an excellent ſyſtem for that purpoſe, and by his aſſiduity and knowledge executed all the particulars to the entire ſatisfaction of thoſe concerned; who, by the bye,

never enquired into his qualifications, but suffered the other to enjoy the fruits of his labour and ingenuity.

Over and above a large stock of avarice, ignorance, and vanity, this superior had certain ridiculous peculiarities in his person, such as a hunch upon his back, and distorted limbs, that seemed to attract the satirical notice of Peregrine; who, young as he was, took offence at his want of reverence for his usher, over whom he sometimes chose opportunities of displaying his authority, that the boys might not displace their veneration. Mr. Keypstick, therefore, such as I have described him, incurred the contempt and displeasure of this enterprizing pupil, who now being in the tenth year of his age, had capacity enough to give him abundance of vexation. He underwent many mortifying jokes from the invention of Pickle and his confederates; so that he began to entertain suspicion of Mr. Jennings, who he could not help thinking had been at the bottom of them all, and spirited up principles of rebellion in the school, with a view of making himself independent. Possessed of this chimera, which was void of all foundation, the German descended so low as to tamper in private with the boys, from whom he hoped to draw some very important discovery; but he was disappointed in his expectation; and this mean practice reaching the ears of his usher, he voluntarily resigned his employment. Finding interest to obtain holy orders in a little time after, he left the kingdom, hoping to find a settlement in some of our American plantations.

The departure of Mr. Jennings produced a great revolution in the affairs of Keypstick, which declined from that moment, because he had neither authority to enforce obedience, nor prudence to maintain order among his scholars; so that the school degenerated into anarchy and confusion, and he himself dwindled in the opinion of his employers, who looked upon him as superannuated, and withdrew their children from his tuition.

Peregrine seeing this dissolution of their society, and finding himself every day deprived of some companion, began to repine at his situation, and resolved, if possible, to procure his release from the jurisdiction of the person whom he both detested and despised. With this view he went to work, and composed the following billet, addressed to the commodore, which was the first specimen of his composition in the epistolary way.

'HONOURED AND LOVING UNCLE,

'HOPING you are in good health, 'this serves to inform you, 'that Mr. Jennings is gone, and Mr. 'Keypstick will never meet with his 'fellow. The school is already almost 'broke up, and the rest daily going 'away; and I beg of you of all love to 'have me fetched away also, for I can'not bear to be any longer under one 'who is a perfect ignoramus, who 'scarce knows the declination of *musa*, 'and is more fit to be a scare-crow 'than a school-master; hoping you will 'send for me soon, with my love to my 'aunt, and my duty to my honoured 'parents, craving their blessing and 'yours. And this is all at present 'from, honoured uncle, your well'beloved and dutiful nephew and god'son, and humble servant to command 'till death,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Trunnion was overjoyed at the receipt of this letter, which he looked upon as one of the greatest efforts of human genius, and as such communicated the contents to his lady, whom he had disturbed for the purpose in the middle of her devotion, by sending a message to her closet, whither it was her custom very frequently to retire. She was out of humour at being interrupted, and therefore did not peruse this specimen of her nephew's understanding with all the relish that the commodore himself had enjoyed; on the contrary, after sundry paralytical endeavours to speak, (for her tongue sometimes refused it's office) she observed that the boy was a pert jackanapes, and deserved to be severely chastised for treating his betters with such disrespect. Her husband undertook his godson's defence, representing with great warmth that he knew Keypstick to be a good for nothing, pimping old rascal, and that Perry shewed a great deal of spirit and good sense in desiring to be taken from under his command; he therefore declared that the boy should not live a week longer with such a shambling

bling ſon of a bitch, and ſanctioned his declaration with abundance of oaths.

Mrs. Trunnion compoſing her countenance into a look of religious demureneſs, rebuked him for his profane way of talking; and aſked him, in a magiſterial tone, if he intended never to lay aſide that brutal behaviour. Irritated at this reproach, he anſwered in terms of indignation, that he knew how to behave himſelf as well as e'er a woman that wore a head; bade her mind her own affairs, and with another repetition of oaths, gave her to underſtand that he would be maſter in his own houſe.

This inſinuation operated upon her ſpirits like friction upon a glaſs globe; her face gleamed with reſentment, and every pore ſeemed to emit particles of flame. She replied with incredible fluency of the bittereſt expreſſions. He retorted equal rage in broken hints and incoherent imprecations. She rejoined with redoubled fury, and in concluſion he was fain to betake himſelf to flight, ejaculating curſes againſt her; and muttering ſomething concerning the brandy-bottle, which, however, he took care ſhould never reach her ears.

From his own houſe he went directly to viſit Mrs. Pickle, to whom he imparted Peregrine's epiſtle, with many encomiums upon the boy's promiſing parts; and finding his commendations but coldly received, deſired ſhe would permit him to take his godſon under his own care.

This lady, whoſe family was now increaſed by another ſon, who ſeemed to ingroſs her care for the preſent, had not ſeen Perry during a courſe of four years, and with regard to him, was perfectly weaned of that infirmity known by the name of maternal fondneſs; ſhe therefore conſented to the commodore's requeſt with great condeſcenſion, and a polite compliment to him on the concern he had all along manifeſted for the welfare of the child.

CHAP. XIII.

THE COMMODORE TAKES PEREGRINE UNDER HIS OWN CARE. THE BOY ARRIVES AT THE GARRISON; IS STRANGELY RECEIVED BY HIS OWN MOTHER; ENTERS INTO A CONFEDERACY WITH HATCHWAY AND PIPES, AND EXECUTES A COUPLE OF WAGGISH ENTERPRIZES UPON HIS AUNT.

TRUNNION having obtained this permiſſion, that very afternoon diſpatched the lieutenant in a poſt-chaiſe to Keypſtick's houſe, from whence in two days he returned with our young hero; who being now in the eleventh year of his age, had out-grown the expectation of all his family, and was remarkable for the beauty and elegance of his perſon. His godfather was tranſported at his arrival, as if he had been actually the iſſue of his own loins. He ſhook him heartily by the hand, turned him round and round, ſurveyed him from top to bottom, bade Hatchway take notice how handſomely he was built; ſqueezed his hand again, ſaying, 'D—n ye, you dog! 'I ſuppoſe you don't value ſuch an old 'crazy ſon of a bitch as me a rope's end. 'You have forgot how I wont to dandle 'you on my knee, when you was a little 'urchin no bigger than the davit, and 'played a thouſand tricks upon me, 'burning my bacco-pouches and poiſoning my rumbo—O! d—n ye, you 'can grin faſt enough, I ſee; I warrant 'you have learnt more things than writing and the Latin lingo.' Even Tom Pipes expreſſed uncommon ſatisfaction on this joyful occaſion; and coming up to Perry, thruſt forth his fore-paw, and accoſted him with the ſalution of 'What 'chear, my young maſter? I am glad 'to ſee thee with all my heart!' Theſe compliments being paſſed, his uncle halted to the door of his wife's chamber, at which he ſtood hallooing, 'Here's 'your kinſman Perry, belike you won't 'come and bid him welcome.'—'Lord! 'Mr. Trunnion,' ſaid ſhe, 'why will 'you continually haraſs me in this 'manner with your impertinent intruſion?'—'I harrow you!' replied the commodore; ''ſblood! I believe your 'upper works are damaged! I only 'came to inform you that here was your 'couſin, whom you have not ſeen theſe 'four long years; and I'll be damned 'if there is ſuch another of his age within the king's dominions, d'ye ſee, 'either for make or mettle! he's a credit to the name, d'ye ſee; but, d—n 'my eyes! I'll ſay no more of the matter; if you come you may, if you 'won't you may let it alone.'—'Well, 'I won't come then,' anſwered his

yoke-

yoke-fellow, 'for I am at preſent more 'agreeably employed.'—'Oho! you 'are? I believe ſo too!' cried the commodore, making wry faces and mimicking the action of dram-drinking. Then addreſſing himſelf to Hatchway, 'Pr'ythee, Jack,' ſaid he, 'go and try 'thy ſkill on that ſtubborn hulk; if any 'body can bring her about, I know you 'wool.' The lieutenant accordingly taking his ſtation at the door, conveyed his perſuaſion in theſe words. 'What, 'won't you turn out and hail little Perry? 'It will do your heart good to ſee ſuch 'a handſome young dog; I'm ſure he is 'the very moral of you, and as like as 'if he had been ſpit out of your own 'mouth, as the ſaying is: do ſhew a 'little reſpect for your kinſman, can't 'you?' To this remonſtrance he replied in a mild tone of voice, 'Dear 'Mr. Hatchway, your are always teaz 'ing one in ſuch a manner; ſure I am, 'nobody can tax me with unkindneſs, or 'want of natural affection.' So ſaying, ſhe opened the door, and advancing to the hall where her nephew ſtood, received him very graciouſly, and obſerved that he was the very image of her papa.

In the afternoon he was conducted by the commodore to the houſe of his parents; and, ſtrange to tell, no ſooner was he preſented to his mother, than her countenance changed, ſhe eyed him with tokens of affliction and ſurprize, and burſting into tears, exclaimed her child was dead, and this was no other than an impoſtor whom they had brought to defraud her ſorrow. Trunnion was confounded at this unaccountable paſſion, which had no other foundation than caprice and whim; and Gamaliel himſelf ſo diſconcerted and unſettled in his own belief, which began to waver, that he knew not how to behave towards the boy, whom his godfather immediately carried back to the garriſon, ſwearing all the way that Perry ſhould never croſs their threſhold again with his good-will. Nay, ſo much was he incenſed at this unnatural and abſurd renunciation, that he refuſed to carry on any farther correſpondence with Pickle, until he was appeaſed by his ſolicitations and ſubmiſſion, and Peregrine owned as his ſon and heir. But this acknowledgment was made without the privity of his wife, whoſe vicious averſion he was obliged, in appearance, to adopt. Thus exiled from his father's houſe, the young gentleman was left entirely to the diſpoſal of the commodore, whoſe affection for him daily increaſed, inſomuch that he could ſcarce prevail upon himſelf to part with him, when his education abſolutely required that he ſhould be otherwiſe diſpoſed of.

In all probability, this extraordinary attachment was, if not produced, at leaſt rivetted, by that peculiar turn in Peregrine's imagination, which we have already obſerved; and which, during his reſidence in the caſtle, appeared in ſundry ſtratagems he practiſed upon his uncle and aunt, under the auſpicies of Mr. Hatchway, who aſſiſted him in the contrivance and execution of all his ſchemes. Nor was Pipes exempted from a ſhare in their undertakings; for, being a truſty fellow, not without dexterity in ſome caſes, and altogether reſigned to their will, they found him a ſerviceable inſtrument for their purpoſe, and uſed him accordingly.

The firſt ſample of their art was exhibited upon Mrs. Trunnion. They terrified that good lady with ſtrange noiſes when ſhe retired to her devotion. Pipes was a natural genius in the compoſition of diſcords; he could imitate the ſound produced by the winding of a jack, the filing of a ſaw, and the ſwinging of a malefactor hanging in chains; he could counterfeit the braying of an aſs, the ſcreeching of a night owl, the caterwauling of cats, the howling of a dog, the ſqueaking of a pig, the crowing of a cock: and he had learned the war-whoop, uttered by the Indians in North America. Theſe talents were exerted ſucceſſively, at different times and places, to the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, the diſcompoſure of the commodore himſelf, and the conſternation of all the ſervants in the caſtle. Peregrine, with a ſheet over his cloaths, ſometimes tumbled before his aunt in the twilight, when her organs of viſion were a little impaired by the cordial ſhe had ſwallowed; and the boatſwain's mate taught him to ſhoe cats with walnut ſhells, ſo that they made a moſt dreadful clattering in their nocturnal excurſions. The mind of Mrs. Trunnion was not a little diſturbed by theſe alarms, which, in her opinion, portended the death of ſome principal perſon in the family; ſhe redoubled her religious exerciſes, and fortified her ſpirits with freſh

freſh potations; nay, ſhe began to take notice that Mr. Trunnion's conſtitution was very much broke, and ſeemed diſſatisfied when people obſerved that they never ſaw him look better. Her frequent viſits to the cloſet, where all her conſolation was depoſited, inſpired the confederates with a device which had like to have been attended with tragical conſequences. They found an opportunity to infuſe jallap in one of her caſe-bottles; and ſhe took ſo largely of this medicine, that her conſtitution had well nigh ſunk under the violence of it's effect. She ſuffered a ſucceſſion of fainting fits that reduced her to the brink of the grave, in ſpite of all the remedies that were adminiſtered by a phyſician who was called in the beginning of her diſorder. After having examined the ſymptoms, he declared that the patient had been poiſoned with arſenic, and preſcribed oily draughts and lubricating injections, to defend the coats of the ſtomach and inteſtines from the vellicating particles of that pernicious mineral; at the ſame time hinting, with a look of infinite ſagacity, that it was not difficult to divine the whole myſtery. He affected to deplore the poor lady, as if ſhe was expoſed to more attempts of the ſame nature; thereby glancing obliquely at the innocent commodore, whom the officious ſon of Æſculapius ſuſpected as the author of this expedient, to rid his hands of a yoke-fellow for whom he was well known to have no great devotion. This impertinent and malicious inſinuation made ſome impreſſion upon the by-ſtanders, and furniſhed ample field for ſlander, to aſperſe the morals of Trunnion, who was repreſented through the whole diſtrict as a monſter of barbarity. Nay, the ſufferer herſelf, though ſhe behaved with great decency and prudence, could not help entertaining ſome ſmall diffidence of her huſband; not that ſhe imagined he had any deſign upon her life, but that he had been at pains to adulterate the brandy, with a view of detaching her from that favourite liquor.

On this ſuppoſition, ſhe reſolved to act with more caution for the future, without ſetting on foot any inquiry about the affair: while the commodore, imputing her indiſpoſition to ſome natural cauſe, after the danger was paſt, never beſtowed a thought upon the ſubject; ſo that the perpetrators were quit of their fear, which, however, had puniſhed them ſo effectually, that they never would hazard any more jokes of the ſame nature.

The ſhafts of their wit were now directed againſt the commander himſelf, whom they teized and terrified almoſt out of his ſenſes. One day, while he was at dinner, Pipes came and told him, that there was a perſon below that wanted to ſpeak with him immediately about an affair of the greateſt importance, that would admit of no delay: upon which he ordered the ſtranger to be told that he was engaged, and that he muſt ſend up his name and buſineſs. To this demand he received for anſwer a meſſage, importing that the perſon's name was unknown to him, and his buſineſs of ſuch a nature, that it could not be diſcloſed to any one but the commodore himſelf, whom he earneſtly deſired to ſee without loſs of time.

Trunnion, ſurprized at this importunity, got up with great reluctance in the middle of his meal, and deſcending to a parlour where the ſtranger was, aſked in a ſurly tone what he wanted with him in ſuch a damned hurry, that he could not wait till he had made an end of his meſs. The other, not at all diſconcerted at this rough addreſs, advanced cloſe up to him on his tiptoes, and with a look of confidence and conceit, laying his mouth to one ſide of the commodore's head, whiſpered ſoftly in his ear, 'Sir, I am the attorney whom 'you wanted to converſe with in pri-'vate.'—'The attorney!' cried Trunnion, ſtaring and half choaked with choler. 'Yes, Sir, at your ſervice,' replied this retainer to the law; 'and if 'you pleaſe, the ſooner we diſpatch the 'affair the better; for it is an old ob-'ſervation, that delay breeds danger.' —'Truly, brother,' ſaid the commodore, who could no longer contain himſelf, 'I do confeſs that I am very much 'of your way of thinking, d'ye ſee; 'and therefore you ſhall be diſpatched 'in a trice.' So ſaying, he lifted up his walking-ſtaff, which was ſomething between a crutch and a cudgel, and diſcharged it with ſuch energy on the ſeat of the attorney's underſtanding, that if there had been any thing but ſolid bone, the contents of his ſkull muſt have been evacuated.

Fortified as he was by nature againſt all ſuch aſſaults, he could not withſtand the

the momentum of the blow, which in an inſtant laid him flat on the floor, deprived of all ſenſe and motion; and Trunnion hopped up ſtairs to dinner, applauding himſelf in ejaculations all the way for the vengeance he had taken on ſuch an impudent pettifogging miſcreant.

The attorney no ſooner awaked from his trance, into which he had been ſo unexpectedly lulled, than he caſt his eyes around in queſt of evidence, by which he might be enabled the more eaſily to prove the injury he had ſuſtained; but not a ſoul appearing, he made ſhift to get upon his legs again, and with the blood trickling over his noſe, followed one of the ſervants into the dining-room, reſolved to come to an explanation with the aſſailant, and either extort money from him by way of ſatisfaction, or provoke him to a ſecond application before witneſſes. With this view he entered the room in a peal of clamour, to the amazement of all preſent, and the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who ſhrieked at the appearance of ſuch a ſpectacle; and addreſſing himſelf to the commodore, 'I'll tell you what, Sir,' ſaid he, 'if there be law in England, 'I'll make you ſmart for this here aſ'ſault; you think you have ſcreened 'yourſelf from a proſecution, by ſending 'all your ſervants out of the way, but 'that circumſtance will appear upon tri'al to be a plain proof of the malice 'prepenſe with which the fact was com'mitted: eſpecially when corroborated 'by the evidence of this here letter, un'der your own hand, whereby I am 'deſired to come to your own houſe to 'tranſact an affair of conſequence.' So ſaying, he produced the writing, and read the contents in theſe words.

'Mr. ROGER RAVINE,

'SIR,

'BEING in a manner priſoner in 'my own houſe, I deſire you will 'give me a call preciſely at three o'clock 'in the afternoon, and inſiſt upon ſee'ing myſelf, as I have an affair of great 'conſequence, in which your particular 'advice is wanted by your humble ſer'vant,

'HAWSER TRUNNION.'

The one-eyed commander, who had been ſatisfied with the chaſtiſement he had already beſtowed upon the plaintiff, hearing him read this audacious piece of forgery, which he conſidered as the effect of his own villainy, ſtarted up from table, and ſeizing a huge turkey that lay in a diſh before him, would have applied it ſauce and all by way of poultice to his wound, had he not been reſtrained by Hatchway, who laid faſt hold on both his arms, and fixed him to his chair again, adviſing the attorney to ſheer off with what he had got. Far from following this ſalutary counſel, he redoubled his threats, and ſet Trunnion at defiance; telling him he was not a man of true courage, although he had commanded a ſhip of war, or elſe he would not have attacked any perſon in ſuch a cowardly and clandeſtine manner. This provocation would have anſwered his purpoſe effectually, had not his adverſary's indignation been repreſſed by the ſuggeſtions of the lieutenant, who deſired his friend in a whiſper to be eaſy, for he would take care to have the attorney toſſed in a blanket for his preſumption. This propoſal, which he received with great approbation, pacified him in a moment; he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and his features relaxed into a grim ſmile.

Hatchway diſappeared, and Ravine proceeded with great fluency of abuſe, until he was interrupted by the arrival of Pipes; who, without any expoſtulation, led him out by the hand, and conducted him to the yard, where he was put into a carpet, and in a twinkling ſent into the air by the ſtrength and dexterity of five ſtout operators, whom the lieutenant had ſelected from the number of domeſticks for that ſingular ſpell of duty.

In vain did the aſtoniſhed vaulter beg for the love of God and paſſion of Chriſt, that they would take pity upon him, and put an end to his involuntary gambols; they were deaf to his prayers and proteſtations, even when he ſwore in the moſt ſolemn manner, that if they would ceaſe tormenting him, he would forget and forgive what was paſt, and depart in peace to his own habitation; and continued the game till they were fatigued with the exerciſe.

Ravine being diſmiſſed in a moſt melancholy plight, brought an action of aſſault and battery againſt the commodore, and ſubpœnaed all the ſervants as evidences

evidences in the cauſe; but as none of them had ſeen what happened, he did not find his account in the proſecution, though he himſelf examined all the witneſſes; and among other queſtions, aſked whether they had not ſeen him come in like another man; and whether they had ever ſeen any other man in ſuch a condition as that in which he had crawled off. But this laſt interrogation they were not obliged to anſwer, becauſe it had reference to the ſecond diſcipline he had undergone, in which they, and they only, were concerned; and no perſon is bound to give teſtimony againſt himſelf.

In ſhort, the attorney was nonſuited, to the ſatisfaction of all who knew him; and found himſelf under the neceſſity of proving that he had received in courſe of poſt, the letter which was declared in court a ſcandalous forgery, in order to prevent an indictment with which he was threatened by the commodore, who little dreamed that the whole affair had been planned and executed by Peregrine and his aſſociates.

The next enterprize in which this triumvirate engaged, was a ſcheme to frighten Trunnion with an apparition, which they prepared and exhibited in this manner. To the hide of a large ox, Pipes fitted a leathern vizor of a moſt terrible appearance, ſtretched on the jaws of a ſhark, which he had brought from ſea, and accommodated with a couple of broad glaſſes inſtead of eyes. On the inſide of theſe he placed two ruſh-lights; and with a compoſition of ſulphur and ſaltpetre, made a pretty large fuſe, which he fixed between two rows of the teeth. This equipage being finiſhed, he, one dark night choſen for the purpoſe, put it on; and following the commodore into a long paſſage, in which he was preceded by Perry with a light in his hand, kindled his fire-work with a match, and began to bellow like a bull. The boy, as was concerted, looking behind him, ſcreamed aloud, and dropped the light, which was extinguiſhed in the fall; when Trunnion, alarmed at his nephew's conſternation, exclaimed, 'Zounds! what's the matter?' And turning about to ſee the cauſe of his diſmay, beheld a hideous phantom vomiting blue flame, which aggravated the horrors of it's aſpect. He was inſtantly ſeized with an agony of fear, which diveſted him of his reaſon; nevertheleſs, he, as it were mechanically, raiſed his truſty ſupporter in his own defence, and the apparition advancing towards him, aimed it at this dreadful annoyance with ſuch a convulſive exertion of ſtrength, that had not the blow chanced to light upon one of the horns, Mr. Pipes would have had no cauſe to value himſelf upon his invention. Miſapplied as it was, he did not fail to ſtagger at the ſhock, and dreading another ſuch ſalutation, cloſed with the commodore, and having tripped up his heels, retreated with great expedition.

It was then that Peregrine, pretending to recollect himſelf a little, ran with all the marks of diſturbance and affright, and called up the ſervants to the aſſiſtance of their maſter, whom they found in a cold ſweat upon the floor, his features betokening horror and confuſion. Hatchway raiſed him up, and having comforted him with a cup of Nantz, began to enquire into the cauſe of his diſorder; but he could not extract one word of anſwer from his friend; who, after a conſiderable pauſe, during which he ſeemed to be wrapped up in profound contemplation, pronounced aloud, 'By 'the Lord! Jack, you may ſay what 'you wool; but I'll be damned if it 'was not Davy Jones himſelf. I know 'him by his ſaucer-eyes, his three rows 'of teeth, his horns and tail, and the 'blue ſmoke that came out of his no-'ſtrils. What does the black-guard 'hell's baby want with me? I'm ſure 'I never committed murder, except in 'the way of my profeſſion, nor wrong-'ed any man whatſomever, ſince I firſt 'went to ſea.' This ſame Davy Jones, according to the mythology of ſailors, is the fiend that preſides over all the evil ſpirits of the deep, and is often ſeen in various ſhapes, perching among the rigging on the eve of hurricanes, ſhipwrecks, and other diſaſters to which a ſea-faring life is expoſed; *warning the devoted wretch of death and woe.* No wonder, then, that Trunnion was diſturbed by a ſuppoſed viſit of this dæmon; which, in his opinion, foreboded ſome dreadful calamity.

CHAP. XIV.

HE IS ALSO BY THEIR DEVICE ENGAGED IN AN ADVENTURE WITH THE EXCISEMAN, WHO

DOES NOT FIND HIS ACCOUNT IN HIS OWN DROLLEY.

HOWEVER prepoſterous and unaccountable that paſſion may be, which prompts perſons, otherwiſe generous and ſympathiſing, to afflict and perplex their fellow-creatures, certain it is, our confederates entertained ſuch a large proportion of it, that not ſatisfied with the pranks they had already played, they ſtill perſecuted the commodore without ceaſing. In the courſe of his own hiſtory, the particulars of which he delighted to recount, he had often rehearſed an adventure of deer-ſtealing, in which (during the unthinking impetuoſity of his youth he had been unfortunately concerned.) Far from ſucceeding in that atchievement, he and his aſſociates had (it ſeems) been made priſoners, after an obſtinate engagement with the keepers, and carried before a neighbouring juſtice of the peace, who uſed Trunnion with great indignity, and with his companions committed him to jail.

His own relations, and in particular an uncle on whom he chiefly depended, treated him during his confinement with great rigour and inhumanity, and abſolutely refuſed to interpoſe his influence in his behalf, unleſs he would ſign a writing, obliging himſelf to go to ſea within thirty days after his releaſe, under the penalty of being proceeded againſt as a felon. The alternative was either to undergo this voluntary exile, or remain in priſon diſowned and deſerted by every body, and after all ſuffer an ignominious trial, that might end in a ſentence of tranſportation for life. He therefore, without much heſitation, embraced the propoſal of his kinſman, and (as he obſerved) was in leſs than a month after his diſcharge turned adrift to the mercy of the wind and waves.

Since that period he had never maintained any correſpondence with his relations, all of whom had concurred in ſending him off; nor would he ever pay the leaſt regard to the humiliations and ſupplications of ſome among them, who had proſtrated themſelves before him on the advancement of his fortune: but he retained a moſt inveterate reſentment againſt his uncle, who was ſtill in being, though extremely old and infirm, and frequently mentioned his name with all the bitterneſs of revenge.

Perry being perfectly well acquainted with the particulars of this ſtory, which he had heard ſo often repeated, propoſed to Hatchway, that a perſon ſhould be hired to introduce himſelf to the commodore, with a ſuppoſititious letter of recommendation from this deteſted kinſman; an impoſition that, in all likelihood, would afford abundance of diverſion.

The lieutenant reliſhed the ſcheme, and young Pickle having compoſed an epiſtle for the occaſion, the exciſeman of the pariſh, a fellow of great impudence, and ſome humour, in whom Hatchway could confide, undertook to tranſcribe and deliver it with his own hand, and alſo perſonate the man in whoſe favour it was feigned to be writ. He, accordingly, one morning arrived on horſeback at the garriſon, two hours at leaſt before Trunnion uſed to get up, and gave Pipes, who admitted him, to underſtand, that he had a letter for his maſter, which he was ordered to deliver to none but the commodore himſelf. This meſſage was no ſooner communicated, than the indignant chief (who had been waked for the purpoſe) began to curſe the meſſenger for breaking his reſt, and ſwore he would not budge till his uſual time of turning out. This reſolution being conveyed to the ſtranger, he deſired the carrier to go back and tell him, he had ſuch joyful tidings to impart, that he was ſure the commodore would think himſelf amply rewarded for his trouble, even if he had been raiſed from the grave to receive them.

This aſſurance, flattering as it was, would not have been powerful enough to perſuade him, had it not been aſſiſted with the exhortations of his ſpouſe, which never failed to influence his conduct. He therefore crept out of bed, though not without great repugnance, and wrapping himſelf in his morning-gown, was ſupported down ſtairs, rubbing his eye, yawning fearfully, and grumbling all the way. As ſoon as he popped his head into the parlour, the ſuppoſed ſtranger made divers aukward bows, and with a grinning aſpect accoſted him in theſe words: 'Your moſt 'humble ſervant, moſt noble commo-'dore! I hope you are in good health; 'you look pure and hearty; and if it 'was not for that misfortune of your 'eye, one would not deſire to ſee a more 'pleaſant countenance in a ſummer's 'day,

'day. Sure as I am a living ſoul, 'one would take you to be on this ſide 'of threeſcore. Laud help us! I ſhould 'have known you to have been a Trun-'nion if I had met with you in the midſt 'of Saliſbury Plain, as the ſaying is.' The commodore, who was not at all in the humour of reliſhing ſuch an impertinent preamble, interrupted him in this place, ſaying, with a peeviſh accent, 'Pſhaw! pſhaw! brother, there's no 'occaſion to bowſs out ſo much unne-'ceſſary gum; if you can't bring your 'diſcourſe to bear on the right ſubject, 'you had much better clap a ſtopper 'on your tongue, and bring yourſelf 'up, d'ye ſee: I was told you had 'ſomething to deliver.'—'Deliver!' cried the waggiſh impoſtor, 'odds heart! 'I have got ſomething for you that will 'make your very entrails rejoice with-'in your body. Here's a letter from a 'dear and worthy friend of yours. 'Take, read it, and be happy. Bleſ-'ſings on his old heart! one would 'think he had renewed his age, like the 'eagles.' Trunnion's expectation being thus raiſed, he called for his ſpectacles, adjuſted them to his eye, took the letter, and being curious to know the ſubſcription, no ſooner perceived his uncle's name, than he ſtarted back, his lip quivered, and he began to ſhake in every limb with reſentment and ſurprize: nevertheleſs, eager to know the ſubject of an epiſtle from a perſon who had never before troubled him with any ſort of addreſs, he endeavoured to recollect himſelf, and peruſed the contents, which were theſe.

'LOVING NEPHEW,

'I Doubt not but you will rejoice to 'hear of my welfare; and well 'you may, conſidering what a kind 'uncle I have been to you in the days of 'your youth, and how little you deſerv-'ed any ſuch thing; for you was always 'a graceleſs young man, given to wick-'ed courſes and bad company, whereby 'you would have come to a ſhameful 'end, had it not been for my care in 'ſending you out of miſchief's way. 'But this is not the cauſe of my preſent 'writing. The bearer, Mr. Timothy 'Trickle, is a diſtant relation of yours, 'being the ſon of the couſin of your 'aunt Margery, and is not over and 'above well as to worldly matters. He 'thinks of going to London, to ſee for 'ſome poſt in the exciſe or cuſtoms, if 'ſo be that you will recommend him 'to ſome great man of your acquain-'tance, and give him a ſmall matter to 'keep him till he is provided. I doubt 'not, nephew, but you will be glad to 'ſerve him, if it was no more but for 'the reſpect you bear to me, who am, 'loving nephew, your affectionate un-'cle, and ſervant to command,

'TOBIAH TRUNNION.'

It would be a difficult taſk for the inimitable Hogarth himſelf to exhibit the ludicrous expreſſion of the commodore's countenance, while he read this letter. It was not a ſtare of aſtoniſhment, a convulſion of rage, or a ghaſtly grin of revenge, but an aſſociation of all three, that took poſſeſſion of his features. At length he hawked up, with incredible ſtraining, the interjection 'Ah!' that ſeemed to have ſtuck ſome time in his windpipe, and thus gave vent to his indignation: 'Have I come along aſide 'of you at laſt, you old ſtinking cur-'mudgeon! you lye, you louſy hulk, 'ye lie! you did all in your power to 'founder me when I was a ſtripling; 'and as for being graceleſs, and wick-'ed, and keeping bad company, you 'tell a damned lye again, you thief! 'there was not a more peaceable lad in 'the county, and I kept no bad com-'pany but your own, d'ye ſee. There-'fore, you Trickle, or what's your 'name, tell the old raſcal that ſent you 'hither, that I ſpit in his face, and 'call him *Horſe*; and that I tear his 'letter into rags, ſo; and that I trample 'upon it as I would upon his own vil-'lainous carcaſe, d'ye ſee!' So ſaying, he danced in a ſort of frenzy upon the fragments of the paper, which he had ſcattered about the room, to the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of the triumvirate, who beheld the ſcene.

The exciſeman having got between him and the door, which was left open for his eſcape, in caſe of neceſſity, affected great confuſion and ſurprize at his behaviour, ſaying, with an air of mortification, 'Lord be merciful unto 'me! is this the way you treat your 'own relations, and the recommenda-'tion of your beſt friend? Surely all 'gratitude and virtue has left this ſin-'ful world! What will couſin Tim,

'and Dick, and Tom, and good mother Pipkin, and her daughters, cousin Sue, and Prue, and Peg, with all 'the reſt of our kinsfolks ſay, when 'they hear of this unconſcionable reception that I have met with? Conſider, Sir, that ingratitude is worſe 'than the ſin of witchcraft, as the 'apoſtle wiſely obſerves; and do not 'ſend me away with ſuch unchriſtian 'uſage, which will lay a heavy load of 'guilt upon your poor miſerable ſoul.' —'What, you are on the cruize for a 'poſt, brother Trickle, an't ye?' ſaid Trunnion, interrupting him; 'we ſhall 'find a poſt for you in a trice, my boy. '—Here, Pipes, take this ſaucy ſon of a 'bitch, belay him to the whipping-poſt 'in the yard. I'll teach you to rowce 'me in the morning with ſuch impertinent meſſages.' Pipes, who wanted to carry the joke farther than the exciſeman dreamed of, laid hold of him in a twinkling; and executed the orders of his commander, notwithſtanding all his nods, winking, and ſignificant geſtures, which the boatſwain's mate would by no means underſtand: ſo that he began to repent of the part he acted in this performance, which was like to end ſo tragically, and ſtood faſtened to the ſtake, in a very diſagreeable ſtate of ſuſpenſe; caſting many a rueful look over his left-ſhoulder, (while Pipes was abſent in queſt of a cat and nine tails) in expectation of being relieved by the interpoſition of the lieutenant, who did not, however, appear. Tom returning with the inſtrument of correction, undreſſed the delinquent in a trice, and whiſpering in his ear that he was very ſorry for being employed in ſuch an office, but durſt not for his ſoul diſobey the orders of his commander, flouriſhed the ſcourge about his head, and with admirable dexterity made ſuch a ſmarting application to the offender's back and ſhoulders, that the diſtracted gauger performed ſundry new cuts with his feet, and bellowed hideouſly with pain, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators. At length, when he was almoſt flea'd from his rump to then ape of his neck, Hatchway, who had purpoſely abſented himſelf hitherto, appeared in the yard, and interpoſing in his behalf, prevailed upon Trunnion to call off the executioner, and ordered the malefactor to be releaſed.

The exciſeman, mad with the cataſtrophe he had undergone, threatened to be revenged upon his employers, by making a candid confeſſion of the whole plot; but the lieutenant giving him to underſtand, that in ſo doing he would bring upon himſelf a proſecution for fraud, forgery, and impoſture, he was fain to put up with his loſs, and ſneaked out of the garriſon, attended with a volley of curſes diſcharged upon him by the commodore, who was exceedingly irritated by the diſturbance and diſappointment he had undergone.

CHAP. XV.

THE COMMODORE DETECTS THE MACHINATIONS OF THE CONSPIRATORS, AND HIRES A TUTOR FOR PEREGRINE, WHOM HE SETTLES AT WINCHESTER SCHOOL.

THIS was not the leaſt affliction he ſuffered from the unwearied endeavours and inexhauſted invention of his tormentors, who haraſſed him with ſuch a variety of miſchievous pranks, that he began to think all the devils in hell had conſpired againſt his peace; and accordingly became very ſerious and contemplative on the ſubject.

In the courſe of his meditations, when he recollected and compared the circumſtances of every mortification to which he had been lately expoſed, he could not help ſuſpecting that ſome of them muſt have been contrived to vex him; and as he was not ignorant of his lieutenant's diſpoſition, nor unacquainted with the talents of Peregrine, he reſolved to obſerve them both for the future with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. This reſolution, aided by the incautious conduct of the conſpirators, whom, by this time, ſucceſs had rendered heedleſs and indiſcreet, was attended with the deſired effect. He in a little time detected Perry in a new plot, and by dint of a little chaſtiſement, and a great many threats, extorted from him a confeſſion of all the contrivances in which he had been concerned. The commodore was thunderſtruck at the diſcovery, and ſo much incenſed againſt Hatchway for the part he had acted in the whole, that he deliberated with himſelf, whether he ſhould demand ſatisfaction with ſword and piſtol, or diſmiſs him from the garriſon, and

and renounce all friendſhip with him at once. But he had been ſo long accuſtomed to Jack's company, that he could not live without him; and upon more cool reflection, perceiving that what he had done was rather the effect of wantonneſs than malice, which he himſelf would have laughed to ſee take place upon any other perſon, he determined to devour his chagrin, and extend his forgiveneſs even to Pipes, whom, in the firſt ſally of his paſſion, he had looked upon in a more criminal light than that of a ſimple mutineer. This determination was ſeconded by another, which he thought abſolutely neceſſary for his own repoſe, and in which his own intereſt and that of his nephew concurred.

Peregrine, who was now turned of twelve, had made ſuch advances under the inſtruction of Jennings, that he often diſputed upon grammar, and was ſometimes thought to have the better in his conteſts, with the pariſh-prieſt; who, notwithſtanding this acknowledged ſuperiority of his antagoniſt, did great juſtice to his genius, which he aſſured Mr. Trunnion would be loſt for want of cultivation, if the boy was not immediately ſent to proſecute his ſtudies at ſome proper ſeminary of learning.

This maxim had been more than once inculcated upon the commodore by Mrs. Trunnion; who, over and above the deference ſhe paid to the parſon's opinion, had a reaſon of her own for wiſhing to ſee the houſe clear of Peregrine, at whoſe prying diſpoſition ſhe began to be very uneaſy. Induced by theſe motives, which were joined by the ſolicitation of the youth himſelf, who ardently longed to ſee a little more of the world, his uncle determined to ſend him forthwith to Wincheſter, under the immediate care and inſpection of a governor, to whom he allowed a very handſome appointment for that purpoſe. This gentleman, whoſe name was Mr. Jacob Jolter, had been ſchool-fellow with the parſon of the pariſh, who recommended him to Mrs. Trunnion as a perſon of great worth and learning, in every reſpect qualified for the office of a tutor. He likewiſe added, by way of eulogium, that he was a man of exemplary piety, and particularly zealous for the honour of the church of which he was a member, having been many years in holy orders, though he did not then exerciſe any function of the prieſthood. Indeed, Mr. Jolter's zeal was ſo exceedingly fervent, as, on ſome occaſions, to get the better of his diſcretion: for, being an high-churchman, and of conſequence a malcontent, his reſentment was habituated into an inſurmountable prejudice againſt the preſent diſpoſition of affairs, which, by confounding the nation with the miniſtry, ſometimes led him into erroneous, not to ſay abſurd calculations; otherwiſe, a man of good morals, well verſed in mathematicks and ſchool-divinity, ſtudies which had not at all contributed to ſweeten and unbend the natural ſourneſs and ſeverity of his complexion.

This gentleman being deſtined to the charge of ſuperintending Perry's education, every thing was prepared for their departure; and Tom Pipes, in conſequence of his own petition, put into livery, and appointed footman to the young ſquire. But, before they ſet out, the commodore paid the compliment of communicating his deſign to Mr. Pickle, who approved of the plan, though he durſt not venture to ſee the boy; ſo much was he intimidated by the remonſtrances of his wife, whoſe averſion to her firſt-born became every day more inveterate and unaccountable. This unnatural caprice ſeemed to be ſupported by a conſideration which, one would imagine, might have rather vanquiſhed her diſguſt. Her ſecond ſon Gam, who was now in the fourth year of his age, had been ricketty from the cradle, and as remarkably unpromiſing in appearance as Perry was agreeable in his perſon. As the deformity increaſed, the mother's fondneſs was augmented, and the virulence of her hate againſt the other ſon ſeemed to prevail in the ſame proportion.

Far from allowing Perry to enjoy the common privileges of a child, ſhe would not ſuffer him to approach his father's houſe, expreſſed uneaſineſs whenever his name happened to be mentioned, ſickened at his praiſe, and in all reſpects behaved like a moſt rancorous ſtep-mother. Though ſhe no longer retained that ridiculous notion of his being an impoſtor, ſhe ſtill continued to abhor him, as if ſhe really believed him to be ſuch; and when any perſon deſired to know the cauſe of her ſurprizing diſlike, ſhe always loſt her temper, and peeviſhly replied, that ſhe had reaſons of her own, which ſhe was not obliged to declare: nay, ſo much was ſhe infected

by

by this vicious partiality, that she broke off all commerce with her sister-in-law and the commodore, because they favoured the poor child with their countenance and protection.

Her malice, however, was frustrated by the love and generosity of Trunnion, who having adopted him as his own son, equipped him accordingly, and carried him and his governor in his own coach to the place of destination, where they were settled on a very genteel footing, and every thing regulated according to their desires.

Mrs. Trunnion behaved with great decency at the departure of her nephew, to whom, with a great many pious advices, and injunctions to behave with submission and reverence towards his tutor, she presented a diamond ring of small value, and a gold medal, as tokens of her affection and esteem. As for the lieutenant, he accompanied them in the coach; and such was the friendship he had contracted for Perry, that when the commodore proposed to return, after having accomplished the intent of his journey, Jack absolutely refused to attend him, and signified his resolution to stay where he was.

Trunnion was the more startled at this declaration, as Hatchway was become so necessary to him in almost all the purposes of his life, that he foresaw he should not be able to exist without his company. Not a little affected with this consideration, he turned his eye ruefully upon the lieutenant, saying, in a piteous tone, 'What! leave me at 'last, Jack, after we have weathered so 'many hard gales together? D—n my 'limbs! I thought you had been more 'of an honest heart: I looked upon you 'as my foremast, and Tom Pipes as 'my mizzen; now he is carried away, 'if so be as you go too, my standing 'rigging being decayed, d'ye see, the 'first squall will bring me by the board. 'D—n ye! if in case I have given of-'fence, can't ye speak above-board, 'and I shall make you amends?'

Jack being ashamed to own the true situation of his thoughts, after some hesitation, answered, with perplexity and incoherence, 'No, damme! that an't 'the case neither: to be sure you al-'ways used me in an officer-like man-'ner, that I must own, to give the de-'vil his due, as the saying is: but for 'all that, this here is the case; I have 'some thoughts of going to school my-'self to learn your Latin lingo; for, as 'the saying is, *Better late mend than* '*never*. And I am informed as how 'one can get more for the money here 'than any where else.'

In vain did Trunnion endeavour to convince him of the folly of going to school at his years, by representing, that the boys would make game of him, and that he would become a laughing-stock to all the world; he persisted in his resolution to stay, and the commodore was fain to have recourse to the mediation of Pipes and Perry, who employed their influence with Jack, and at last prevailed upon him to return to the garrison; after Trunnion had promised he should be at liberty to visit them once a month. This stipulation being settled, he and his friend took leave of the pupil, governor and attendant, and next morning set out for their habitation, which they reached in safety that same night.

Such was Hatchway's reluctance to leave Peregrine, that he is said, for the first time in his life, to have looked misty at parting: certain I am, that on the road homewards, after a long pause of silence, which the commodore never dreamed of interrupting, he exclaimed all of a sudden, 'I'll be damned if the 'dog ha'nt given me some stuff to make 'me love him.' Indeed, there was something congenial in the dispositions of these two friends, which never failed to manifest itself in the sequel, howsoever different their education, circumstances, and connections, happened to be.

CHAP. XVI.

PEREGRINE DISTINGUISHES HIMSELF AMONG HIS SCHOOL-FELLOWS; EXPOSES HIS TUTOR, AND ATTRACTS THE PARTICULAR NOTICE OF THE MASTER.

THUS left to the prosecution of his studies, Peregrine was in a little time a distinguished character, not only for his acuteness of apprehension, but also for that mischievous fertility of fancy, of which we have already given such pregnant examples. But as there was a great number of such luminaries in this new sphere to which he belonged, his talents were not so conspicuous, while they shone in his single capacity, as they afterwards

afterwards appeared, when they concentrated and reflected the rays of the whole conſtellation.

At firſt he confined himſelf to piddling game, exerciſing his genius upon his own tutor, who attracted his attention, by endeavouring to ſeaſon his mind with certain political maxims, the fallacy of which he had diſcernment enough to perceive. Scarce a day paſſed in which he did not find means to render Mr. Jolter the object of ridicule; his violent prejudices, ludicrous vanity, awkward ſolemnity, and ignorance of mankind, afforded continual food for the raillery, petulance, and ſatire of his pupil, who never neglected an opportunity of laughing, and making others laugh at his expence.

Sometimes in their parties, by mixing brandy in his wine, he decoyed this pedagogue into a debauch, during which his caution forſook him, and he expoſed himſelf to the cenſure of the company. Sometimes, when the converſation turned upon intricate ſubjects, he practiſed upon him the Socratick method of confutation; and, under pretence of being informed, by an artful train of puzzling queſtions, inſenſibly betrayed him into ſelf-contradiction.

All the remains of authority which he had hitherto preſerved over Peregrine ſoon vaniſhed; ſo that, for the future, no ſort of ceremony ſubſiſted between them, and all Mr. Jolter's precepts were conveyed in hints of friendly advice, which the other might either follow or neglect at his own pleaſure. No wonder, then, that Peregrine gave a looſe to his inclinations, and by dint of genius, and an enterprizing temper, made a figure among the younger claſs of heroes in the ſchool.

Before he had been a full year at Wincheſter, he had ſignalized himſelf in ſo many atchievements, in defiance to the laws and regulations of the place, that he was looked upon with admiration, and actually choſen *dux*, or leader, by a large body of his cotemporaries. It was not long before his fame reached the ears of the maſter, who ſent for Mr. Jolter, communicated to him the informations he had received, and deſired him to check the vivacity of his charge, and redouble his vigilance in time to come, elſe he ſhould be obliged to make a publick example of his pupil for the benefit of the ſchool.

The governor, conſcious of his own unimportance, was not a little diſconcerted at this injunction, which it was not in his power to fulfil by any compulſive means. He therefore went home in a very penſive mood, and after mature deliberation, reſolved to expoſtulate with Peregrine in the moſt familiar terms, and endeavour to diſſuade him from practices which might affect his character as well as intereſt. He accordingly frankly told him the ſubject of the maſter's diſcourſe, repreſented the diſgrace he might incur by neglecting this warning; and putting him in mind of his own ſituation, hinted the conſequences of the commodore's diſpleaſure, in caſe he ſhould be brought to diſapprove of his conduct. Theſe inſinuations made the greater impreſſion, as they were delivered with many expreſſions of friendſhip and concern. The young gentleman was not ſo raw, but that he could perceive the ſolidity of Mr. Jolter's advice, to which he promiſed to conform, becauſe his pride was intereſted in the affair: and he conſidered his own reformation as the only means of avoiding that infamy, which even in idea he could not bear.

His governor, finding him ſo reaſonable, profited by theſe moments of reflection; and, in order to prevent a relapſe, propoſed that he ſhould engage in ſome delightful ſtudy that would agreeably amuſe his imagination, and gradually detach him from thoſe connections which had involved him in ſo many troubleſome adventures. For this purpoſe he, with many rapturous encomiums, recommended the mathematicks, as yielding more rational and ſenſible pleaſures to a youthful fancy than any other ſubject of contemplation; and actually began to read Euclid with him that ſame afternoon.

Peregrine entered upon this branch of learning with all that warmth of application which boys commonly yield on the firſt change of ſtudy; but he had ſcarce advanced beyond the *Pons Aſinorum*, when his ardour abated; the teſt of truth by demonſtration, did not elevate him to thoſe tranſports of joy with which his preceptor had regaled his expectation; and before he arrived at the fortieth and ſeventh propoſition, he began to yawn drearily, make abundance of wry faces, and thought himſelf but indifferently paid for his attention, when

he

he ſhared the vaſt diſcovery of Pythagoras, and underſtood that the ſquare of the hypothenuſe was equal to the ſquares of the other two ſides of a right-angled triangle. He was aſhamed, however, to fail in his undertaking, and perſevered with great induſtry, until he had finiſhed the firſt four books, acquired plain trigonometry, with the method of algebraical calculation, and made himſelf well acquainted with the principles of ſurveying. But no conſideration could prevail upon him to extend his inquiries farther in this ſcience: and he returned with double reliſh to his former avocations; like a ſtream, which being dammed, accumulates more force, and burſting over it's mounds, ruſhes down with double impetuoſity.

Mr. Jolter ſaw with aſtoniſhment and chagrin, but could not reſiſt the torrent. His behaviour was now no other than a ſeries of licence and effrontery; prank ſucceeded prank, and outrage followed outrage, with ſurprizing velocity. Complaints were every day preferred againſt him; in vain were admonitions beſtowed by the governor in private, and menaces diſcharged by the maſters in publick; he diſregarded the firſt, deſpiſed the latter, diveſted himſelf of all manner of reſtraint, and proceeded in his career to ſuch a pitch of audacity, that a conſultation was held upon the ſubject, in which it was determined, that this untoward ſpirit ſhould be humbled by a ſevere and ignominious flogging for the very next offence he ſhould commit. In the mean time, Mr. Jolter was deſired to write in the maſter's name to the commodore, requeſting him to remove Tom Pipes from the perſon of his nephew, the ſaid Pipes being a principal actor and abettor in all his malverſations; and to put a ſtop to the monthly viſitations of the mutilated lieutenant, who had never once failed to uſe his permiſſion, but came punctual to a day, always fraught with ſome new invention. Indeed, by this time, Mr. Hatchway was as well known, and much better beloved, by every boy in the ſchool, than the maſter who inſtructed him, and always received by a number of ſcholars, who uſed to attend Peregrine when he went forth to meet his friend, and conduct him to his lodging with publick teſtimonies of joy and applauſe.

As for Tom Pipes, he was not ſo properly the attendant of Peregrine, as maſter of the revels to the whole ſchool. He mingled in all their parties, and ſuperintended the diverſions, deciding between boy and boy, as if he acted by commiſſion under the great ſeal. He regulated their motions by his whiſtle; inſtructed the young boys in the games of huſtle-cap, leap-frog, and chuck-farthing; imparted to thoſe of a more advanced age the ſciences of cribbage and all fours, together with the method of ſtorming the caſtle, acting the comedy of Prince Arthur, and other pantomimes, as they are commonly exhibited at ſea; and inſtructed the ſeniors, who were diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of bloods, in cudgel-playing, dancing the St. Giles's hornpipe, drinking flip, and ſmoaking tobacco. Theſe qualifications had rendered him ſo neceſſary and acceptable to the ſcholars, that, excluſive of Perry's concern in the affair, his diſmiſſion, in all probability, would have produced ſome dangerous convulſion in the community. Jolter, therefore, knowing his importance, informed his pupil of the directions he had received, and very candidly aſked how he ſhould demean himſelf in the execution; for he durſt not write to the commodore without this previous notice, fearing that the young gentleman, as ſoon as he ſhould get an inkling of the affair, would follow the example, and make his uncle acquainted with certain anecdotes, which it was the governor's intereſt to keep concealed. Peregrine was of opinion that he ſhould ſpare himſelf the trouble of conveying any complaints to the commodore; and if queſtioned by the maſter, aſſure him he had complied with his deſire; at the ſame time he promiſed faithfully to conduct himſelf with ſuch circumſpection for the future, that the maſters ſhould have no temptation to revive the inquiry. But the reſolution attending this extorted promiſe was too frail to laſt, and in leſs than a fortnight our young hero found himſelf intangled in an adventure from which he was not extricated with his uſual good fortune.

CHAP. XVII.

HE IS CONCERNED IN A DANGEROUS ADVENTURE WITH A CERTAIN

Stothard del. Collyer sculp.

Plate III. Publish'd as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug.t 17. 1781.

TAIN GARDENER; SUBLIMES HIS IDEAS, COMMENCES GALLANT, AND BECOMES ACQUAINTED WITH MISS EMILY GAUNTLET.

HE and some of his companions one day entered a garden in the suburbs, and having indulged their appetites, desired to know what satisfaction they must make for the fruit they had pulled. The gardener demanded what (in their opinion) was an exorbitant price; and they, with many approbrious terms, refused to pay it. The peasant, being surly and untractable, insisted upon his right; neither was he deficient or sparing in the eloquence of vulgar abuse. His guests attempted to retreat; a scuffle ensued, in which Peregrine lost his cap, and the gardener being in danger from the number of his foes, called to his wife to let loose the dog, who instantly flew to his master's assistance; and after having tore the leg of one, and the shoulder of another, put the whole body of scholars to flight. Enraged at the indignity which had been offered them, they solicited a reinforcement of their friends; and with Tom Pipes at their head, marched back to the field of battle. Their adversary seeing them approach, called his apprentice, who worked at the other end of the ground, to his assistance, armed him with a mattock, while he himself wielded an hoe, bolted his door on the inside, and flanked with his man and mastiff, waited the attack without flinching. He had not remained three minutes in this posture of defence, when Pipes, who acted as the enemy's forlorn hope, advanced to the gate with great intrepidity, and clapping his foot to the door, which was none of the stoutest, with the execution and dispatch of a petard, split it into a thousand pieces. This sudden execution had an immediate effect upon the prentice, who retreated with great precipitation, and escaped at a postern. But the master placed himself, like another Hercules, in the breach; and when Pipes, brandishing his cudgel, stepped forward to engage him, levelled his weapon with such force and dexterity at his head, that had the skull been made of penetrable stuff, the iron edge must have cleft his pate in twain. Casemated as he was, the instrument cut sheer even to the bone, on which it struck with such amazing violence, that sparks of real fire were produced by the collision. And let not the incredulous reader pretend to doubt the truth of this phenomenon, until he shall have first perused the ingenious Peter Kolben's Natural History of the Cape of Good Hope, where the inhabitants commonly use to strike fire with the shin-bones of lions which have been killed in that part of Africk.

Pipes, though a little disconcerted, far from being disabled by the blow, in a trice retorted the compliment with his truncheon, which, had not his antagonist expeditiously slipped his head aside, would have laid him breathless across his own threshold; but, happily for him, he received the salutation upon his right shoulder, which crashed beneath the stroke, and the hoe dropped instantly from his tingling hand. Tom perceiving, and being unwilling to forego the advantage he had gained, darted his head into the bosom of his son of earth, and overturned him on the plain; being himself that instant assaulted by the mastiff, who fastened upon the outside of his thigh. Feeling himself incommoded by this assailant in his rear, he quitted the prostrate gardener to the resentment of his associates, who poured upon him in shoals, and turning about, laid hold with both his hands of this ferocious animal's throat, which he squeezed with such incredible force and perseverance, that the creature quitted his hold; his tongue lolled out of his jaws, the blood started from his eyes, and he swung a lifeless trunk between the hands of his vanquisher.

It was well for his master that he did not longer exist; for by this time he was overwhelmed by such a multitude of foes, that his whole body scarce afforded points of contact to all the fists that drummed upon it; consequently, to use a vulgar phrase, his wind was almost knocked out, before Pipes had leisure to interpose in his behalf, and persuade his offenders to desist, by representing that the wife had gone to alarm the neighbourhood, and that in all probability they would be intercepted in their return. They accordingly listened to his remonstrances, and marched homewards in triumph, leaving the gardener in the embraces of his mother earth, from which he had not power to move when he was found by his disconsolate help-mate and some

friends whom she had assembled for his assistance. Among these was a blacksmith and farrier, who took cognizance of his carcase, every limb of which having examined, he declared there was no bone broke, and taking out his fleam, blooded him plentifully as he lay. He was then conveyed to his bed, from which he was not able to stir during a whole month. His family coming upon the parish, a formal complaint was made to the master of the school, and Peregrine represented as the ring-leader of those who committed this barbarous assault. An enquiry was immediately set on foot, and the articles of impeachment being fully proved, our hero was sentenced to be severely chastised in the face of the whole school. This was a disgrace, the thoughts of which his proud heart could not brook. He resolved to make his elopement rather than undergo the punishment to which he was doomed; and having signified his sentiments to his confederates, they promised, one and all, to stand by him, and either screen him from chastisement, or share his fate.

Confiding in this friendly protestation, he appeared unconcerned on the day that was appointed for his punishment; and when he was called to his destiny, advanced towards the scene, attended by the greatest part of the scholars, who intimated their determination to the master, and proposed that Peregrine should be forgiven. The superior behaved with that dignity of demeanor which became his place, represented the folly and presumption of their demand, reprehended them for their audacious proceeding, and ordered every boy to his respective station. They obeyed his command, and our unfortunate hero was publickly horsed, *in terrorem* of all whom it might concern.

This disgrace had a very sensible effect upon the mind of Peregrine, who having by this time passed the fourteenth year of his age, began to adopt the pride and sentiments of a man. Thus dishonourably stigmatized, he was ashamed to appear in publick as usual; he was incensed against his companions for their infidelity and irresolution, and plunged into a profound reverie that lasted several weeks, during which he shook off his boyish connections, and fixed his view upon objects which he thought more worthy of his attention.

In the course of his gymnastick exercises, at which he was very expert, he contracted intimacies with several youths who were greatly his superiors in point of age, and who, pleased with his aspiring genius and address, introduced him into parties of gallantry which strongly captivated his inclination. He was by nature particularly adapted for succeeding in adventures of this kind; over and above a most engaging person, that improved with his years, he possessed a dignified assurance, an agreeable ferocity, which inhanced the conquest of the fair who had the good fortune to enslave him, unlimited generosity, and a fund of humour which never failed to please. Nor was he deficient in the more solid accomplishments of youth; he had profited in his studies beyond expectation, and besides that sensibility of discernment which is the foundation of taste, and in consequence of which he distinguished and enjoyed the beauties of the classicks, he had already given several specimens of a very promising poetick talent.

With this complexion and these qualifications, no wonder that our hero attracted the notice and affections of the young Delias in town, whose hearts had just began to flutter for they knew not what. Inquiries were made concerning his condition; and no sooner were his expectations known, than he was invited and caressed by all the parents, while their daughters vied with each other in treating him with particular complacency. He inspired love and emulation wherever he appeared; envy and jealous rage followed of course; so that he became a very desirable, though a very dangerous acquaintance. His moderation was not equal to his success; his vanity took the lead of his passions, dissipating his attention, which might otherwise have fixed him to one object; and he was possessed with the rage of increasing the number of his conquests. With this view he frequented publick-walks, concerts, and assemblies, became remarkably rich and fashionable in his cloaths, gave entertainments to the ladies, and was in the utmost hazard of turning out a most egregious coxcomb.

While his character thus wavered between the ridicule of some, and the regard of others, an accident happened, which, by contracting his view to one object,

object, detached him from those vain pursuits that would in time have plunged him into an abyss of folly and contempt. Being one evening at the ball which is always given to the ladies at the time of the races, the person who acted as master of the ceremonies, knowing how fond Mr. Pickle was of every opportunity to display himself, came up and told him, that there was a fine young creature at the other end of the room, who seemed to have a great inclination to dance a minuet, but wanted a partner, the gentleman who attended her being in boots.

Peregrine's vanity being aroused at this intimation, he went up to reconnoitre the young lady, and was struck with admiration at her beauty. She seemed to be of his own age, was tall, and, though slender, exquisitely shaped; her hair was auburn, and in such plenty, that the barbarity of dress had not been able to prevent it from shading both sides of her forehead, which was high and polished; the contour of her face was oval, her nose very little raised into the aquiline form, that contributed to the spirit and dignity of her aspect; her mouth was small, her lips plump, juicy, and delicious, her teeth regular and white as driven snow, her complexion incredibly delicate, and glowing with health, and her full blue eyes beamed forth vivacity and love: her mien was at the same time commanding and engaging, her address perfectly genteel, and her whole appearance so captivating, that our young Adonis looked, and was overcome.

He no sooner recollected himself from his astonishment, than he advanced to her with a graceful air of respect, and begged she would do him the honour to walk a minuet with him. She seemed particularly pleased with his application, and very frankly complied with his request. This pair was too remarkable to escape the particular notice of the company; Mr. Pickle was well known by almost every body in the room, but his partner was altogether a new face, and of consequence underwent the criticism of all the ladies in the assembly: one whispered, 'She has a good complexion, but don't 'you think she is a little awry?' A second pitied her for her masculine nose; a third observed, that she was awkward for want of seeing company; a fourth distinguished something very bold in her countenance; and, in short, there was not a beauty in her whole composition, which the glass of envy did not pervert into a blemish.

The men, however, looked upon her with different eyes; among them her appearance produced an universal murmur of applause; they encircled the space on which she danced, and were enchanted by her graceful motion. While they launched out in the praises of her, they expressed their displeasure at the good fortune of her partner, whom they damned for a little finical coxcomb, that was too much engrossed by the contemplation of his own person, to discern or deserve the favour of his fate. He did not hear, therefore could not repine at these invectives; but while they imagined he indulged his vanity, a much more generous passion had taken possession of his heart.

Instead of that petulance of gaiety for which he had been distinguished in his publick appearance, he now gave manifest signs of confusion and concern; he danced with an anxiety which impeded his performance, and blushed to the eyes at every false step he made. Though this extraordinary agitation was overlooked by the men, it could not escape the observation of the ladies, who perceived it with equal surprize and resentment; and when Peregrine led his fair unknown to her seat, expressed their pique in an affected titter, which broke from every mouth at the same instant, as if all of them had been informed by the same spirit.

Peregrine was nettled at this unmannerly mark of disapprobation; and, in order to increase their chagrin, endeavoured to enter into particular conversation with their fair rival. The young lady herself, who neither wanted penetration, nor the consciousness of her own accomplishments, resented their behaviour, though she triumphed at the cause of it, and gave her partner all the encouragement he could desire. Her mother, who was present, thanked him for his civility in taking such notice of a stranger, and he received a compliment of the same nature from the young gentleman in boots, who was her own brother.

If he was charmed with her appearance, he was quite ravished which her discourse, which was sensible, spirited, and gay. Her frank and sprightly demeanour

meanour excited his own confidence and good-humour; and he described to her the characters of those females who had honoured them with such a spiteful mark of distinction, in terms so replete with humorous satire, that she seemed to listen with particular complacency of attention, and distinguished every nymph thus ridiculed with such a significant glance, as overwhelmed her with chagrin and mortification. In short, they seemed to relish each other's conversation, during which our young Damon acquitted himself with great skill in all the duties of gallantry; he laid hold of proper opportunities to express his admiration of her charms, had recourse to the silent rhetorick of tender looks, breathed divers insidious sighs, and attached himself wholly to her during the remaining part of the entertainment.

When the company broke up, he attended her to her lodgings, and took leave of her with a squeeze of the hand, after having obtained permission to visit her next morning, and been informed by the mother that her name was Miss Emilia Gauntlet.

All night long he closed not an eye, but amused himself with plans of pleasure, which his imagination suggested, in consequence of this new acquaintance. He arose with the lark, adjusted his hair into an agreeable negligence of curl, and dressing himself in a genteel grey frock trimmed with silver binding, waited with the utmost impatience for the hour of ten, which no sooner struck than he hied him to the place of appointment, and enquiring for Miss Gauntlet, was shewn into a parlour. Here he had not waited above ten minutes, when Emilia entered in a most enchanting undress, with all the graces of nature playing about her person, and in a moment rivetted the chains of his slavery beyond the power of accident to unbind.

Her mother being still a-bed, and her brother gone to give orders about the chaise, in which they proposed to return that same day to their own habitation, he enjoyed her company *tête a tête* a whole hour, during which he declared his love in the most passionate terms, and begged that he might be admitted into the number of those admirers whom she permitted to visit and adore her.

She affected to look upon his vows and protestations as the ordinary effects of gallantry, and very obligingly assured him, that were she to live in that place, she should be glad to see him often; but as the spot on which she resided was at a considerable distance, she could not expect he would go so far upon such a trifling occasion, to take the trouble of providing himself with her mamma's permission.

To this favourable hint he answered with all the eagerness of the most fervid passion, that he uttered nothing but the genuine dictates of his heart; that he desired nothing so much as an opportunity of evincing the sincerity of his professions; and that though he lived at the extremity of the kingdom, he would find means to lay himself at her feet, provided he could visit her with her mother's consent, which he assured her he would not fail to solicit.

She then gave him to understand, that her habitation was about sixteen miles from Winchester; in a village which she named, and where (as he could easily collect from her discourse) he would be no unwelcome guest.

In the midst of this communication they were joined by Mrs. Gauntlet, who received him with great courtesy, thanking him again for his politeness to Emy at the ball, and anticipated his intention, by saying that she should be very glad to see him at her house, if ever his occasions should call him that way.

CHAP. XVIII.

HE INQUIRES INTO THE SITUATION OF THIS YOUNG LADY, WITH WHOM HE IS ENAMOURED; ELOPES FROM SCHOOL; IS FOUND BY THE LIEUTENANT, CONVEYED TO WINCHESTER, AND SENDS A LETTER WITH A COPY OF VERSES TO HIS MISTRESS.

HE was transported with pleasure at this invitation, which he assured her he should not neglect; and after a little more conversation on general topicks, took his leave of the charming Emilia, and her prudent mamma, who had perceived the first emotions of Mr. Pickle's passion for her daughter, and been at some pains to inquire about his family and fortune.

Neither was Peregrine less inquisitive about

about the ſituation and pedigree of his new miſtreſs; who, he learned, was the only daughter of a field-officer, who died before he had it in his power to make ſuitable proviſion for his children; that the widow lived in a frugal, though decent manner, on her penſion, aſſiſted by the bounty of her relations; that the ſon carried arms as volunteer in the company which his father had commanded; and that Emilia had been educated in London, at the expence of a rich uncle, who was ſeized with the whim of marrying at the age of fifty-five; in conſequence of which, his niece had returned to her mother, without any viſible dependance, except on her own conduct and qualifications.

This account, though it could not diminiſh his affection, nevertheleſs alarmed his pride; for his warm imagination had exaggerated all his own proſpects; and he began to fear, that his paſſion for Emilia might be thought to derogate from the dignity of his ſituation. The ſtruggle between his intereſt and love produced a perplexity which had an evident effect upon his behaviour; he became penſive, ſolitary, and peeviſh, avoided all publick diverſions, and grew ſo remarkably negligent in his dreſs, that he was ſcarce diſtinguiſhable by his own acquaintance. This contention of thoughts continued ſeveral weeks, at the end of which the charms of Emilia triumphed over every other conſideration. Having received a ſupply of money from the commodore, who acted towards him with great generoſity, he ordered Pipes to put up ſome linen, and other neceſſaries, in a ſort of knapſack which he could conveniently carry, and thus attended, ſet out early one morning on foot for the village where his charmer lived, at which he arrived before two o'clock in the afternoon; having choſen this method of travelling, that his route might not be ſo eaſily diſcovered, as it muſt have been had he hired horſes, or taken a place in the ſtage-coach.

The firſt thing he did was to ſecure a convenient lodging at the inn where he dined; then he ſhifted himſelf, and according to the direction he had received, went to the houſe of Mrs. Gauntlet in a tranſport of joyous expectation. As he approached the gate, his agitation increaſed; he knocked with impatience and concern, the door opened, and he had actually aſked if Mrs. Gauntlet was at home, before he perceived that the portreſs was no other than his dear Emilia. She was not without emotion at the unexpected ſight of her lover, who inſtantly recognizing his charmer, obeyed the irreſiſtible impulſe of his love, and caught the fair creature in his arms. Nor did ſhe ſeem offended at this forwardneſs of behaviour, which might have diſpleaſed another of a leſs open diſpoſition, or leſs uſed to the freedom of a ſenſible education; but her natural frankneſs had been encouraged and improved by the eaſy and familiar intercourſe in which ſhe had been bred; and therefore, inſtead of reprimanding him with a ſeverity of look, ſhe with great good-humour rallied him upon his aſſurance, which ſhe obſerved, was undoubtedly the effect of his own conſcious merit, and conducted him into a parlour, where he found her mother, who in very polite terms expreſſed her ſatisfaction at ſeeing him within her houſe.

After tea, Miſs Emy propoſed an evening walk, which they enjoyed through a variety of little copſes and lawns, watered by a moſt romantick ſtream, that quite enchanted the imagination of Peregrine.

It was late before they returned from this agreeable excurſion, and when our lover wiſhed the ladies good night, Mrs. Gauntlet inſiſted upon his ſtaying to ſupper, and treated him with particular demonſtrations of regard and affection. As her œconomy was not encumbered with an unneceſſary number of domeſticks, her own preſence was often required in different parts of the houſe, ſo that the young gentleman was ſupplied with frequent opportunities of promoting his ſuit, by all the tender oaths and inſinuations that his paſſion could ſuggeſt. He proteſted her idea had taken ſuch entire poſſeſſion of his heart, that finding himſelf unable to ſupport her abſence one day longer, he had quitted his ſtudies, and left his governor by ſtealth, that he might viſit the object of his adoration, and be bleſſed in her company for a few days without interruption.

She liſtened to his addreſſes with ſuch affability as denoted approbation and delight, and gently chid him as a thoughtleſs

less truant, but carefully avoided the confession of a mutual flame; because she discerned in the midst of all his tenderness, a levity of pride which she durst not venture to trust with such a declaration. Perhaps she was confirmed in this caution by her mother, who very wisely, in her civilities to him, maintained a sort of ceremonious distance, which she thought not only requisite for the honour and interest of her family, but likewise for her own exculpation, should she ever be taxed with having encouraged or abetted him in the imprudent sallies of his youth: yet, notwithstanding this affected reserve, he was treated with such distinction by both, that he was ravished with his situation, and became more and more enamoured every day.

While he remained under the influence of this sweet intoxication, his absence produced great disturbance at Winchester. Mr. Jolter was grievously afflicted at his abrupt departure, which alarmed him the more, as it happened after a long fit of melancholy which he had perceived in his pupil. He communicated his apprehensions to the master of the school, who advised him to apprize the commodore of his nephew's disappearance, and in the mean time, inquire at all the inns in town, whether he had hired horses, or any sort of carriage, for his conveyance, or was met with on the road by any person who could give an account of the direction in which he travelled.

This scrutiny, though performed with great diligence and minuteness, was altogether ineffectual; they could obtain no intelligence of the run-away. Mr. Trunnion was well nigh distracted at the news of his flight; he raved with great fury at the imprudence of Peregrine, whom in his first transports he damned as an ungrateful deserter; then he cursed Hatchway and Pipes, who he swore had foundered the lad by their pernicious counsels; and, lastly, transferred his execrations upon Jolter, because he had not kept a better look-out: finally, he made an apostrophe to that son of a bitch the gout, which for the present disabled him from searching for his nephew in person. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power, he immediately dispatched expresses to all the sea-port towns on that coast, that he might be prevented from leaving the kingdom; and the lieutenant, at his own desire, was sent across the country in quest of this young fugitive.

Four days had he unsuccessfully carried on his inquiries with great accuracy; when, resolving to return by Winchester, where he hoped to meet with some hints of intelligence, by which he might profit in his future search, he struck off the common road to take the benefit of a nearer cut; and finding himself benighted near a village, took up his lodgings at the first inn to which his horse directed him. Having bespoke something for supper, and retired to his chamber, where he amused himself with a pipe, he heard a confused noise of rustick jollity, which being all of a sudden interrupted, after a short pause his ear was saluted with the voice of Pipes, who, at the solicitation of the company, began to entertain them with a song.

Hatchway instantly recognized the well-known sound, in which indeed he could not possibly be mistaken, as nothing in nature bore the least resemblance to it; he threw his pipe into the chimney, and snatching up one of his pistols, ran immediately to the apartment from whence the voice issued; he no sooner entered, than distinguishing his old ship-mate in a crowd of country peasants, he in a moment sprung upon him, and clapping his pistol to his breast, exclaimed, 'D—n you, Pipes, 'you are a dead man, if you don't 'immediately produce young master!'

This menacing application had a much greater effect upon the company than upon Tom, who looking at the lieutenant, with great tranquillity, replied, 'Why so I can, Master Hatch-'way.'—'What! safe and sound?' cried the other. 'As a roach!' answered Pipes, so much to the satisfaction of his friend Jack, that he shook him by the hand, and desired him to proceed with his song. This being performed, and the reckoning discharged, the two friends adjourned to the other room, where the lieutenant was informed of the manner in which the young gentleman had made his elopement from college, as well as of the other particulars

of

of his preſent ſituation, as far as they had fallen within the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While they ſat thus conferring together, Peregrine having taken leave of his miſtreſs for the night, came home, and was not a little ſurprized, when Hatchway entering his chamber in his ſea attitude, thruſt out his hand by way of ſalutation. His old pupil received him as uſual, with great cordiality, and expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at meeting him in that place; but when he underſtood the cauſe and intention of his arrival, he ſtarted with concern; and his viſage glowing with indignation, told him he was old enough to be judge of his own conduct, and when he ſhould ſee it convenient, would return of himſelf; but thoſe who thought he was to be compelled to his duty, would find themſelves egregiouſly miſtaken.

The lieutenant aſſured him, that for his own part he had no intention to offer him the leaſt violence; but, at the ſame time, he repreſented to him the danger of incenſing the commodore, who was already almoſt diſtracted on account of his abſence: and, in ſhort, conveyed his arguments, which were equally obvious and valid, in ſuch expreſſions of friendſhip and reſpect, that Peregrine yielded to his remonſtrances, and promiſed to accompany him next day to Wincheſter.

Hatchway, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his negociation, went immediately to the hoſtler, and beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Mr. Pickle and his man, with whom he afterwards indulged himſelf in a double cann of rumbo; and when the night was pretty far advanced, left the lover to his repoſe, or rather to the thorns of his own meditation; for he ſlept not one moment, being inceſſantly tortured with the proſpect of parting from his divine Emilia, who had now acquired the moſt abſolute empire over his ſoul. One minute he propoſed to depart early in the morning, without ſeeing this enchantreſs, in whoſe bewitching preſence he durſt not truſt his own reſolution. Then the thoughts of leaving her in ſuch an abrupt and diſreſpectful manner, interpoſed in favour of his love and honour. This war of ſentiments kept him all night upon the rack, and it was time to riſe before he had determined to viſit his charmer, and candidly impart the motives that induced him to leave her.

He accordingly repaired to her mother's houſe with a heavy heart, being attended to the gate by Hatchway, who did not chuſe to leave him alone; and being admitted, found Emilia juſt riſen, and, in his opinion, more beautiful than ever.

Alarmed at his early viſit, and the gloom that overſpread his countenance, ſhe ſtood in ſilent expectation of hearing ſome melancholy tidings; and it was not till after a conſiderable pauſe, that he collected reſolution enough to tell her he was come to take his leave. Though ſhe ſtrove to conceal her ſorrow, nature was not to be ſuppreſſed; every feature of her countenance ſaddened in a moment, and it was not without the utmoſt difficulty that ſhe kept her lovely eyes from overflowing. He ſaw the ſituation of her thoughts, and in order to alleviate her concern, aſſured her he ſhould find means to ſee her again in a very few weeks; meanwhile he communicated his reaſons for departing, in which ſhe readily acquieſced; and having mutually conſoled each other, their tranſports of grief ſubſided, and before Mrs. Gauntlet came down ſtairs, they were in a condition to behave with great decency and reſignation.

This good lady expreſſed her concern when ſhe learned his reſolution, ſaying, ſhe hoped his occaſions and inclinations would permit him to favour them with his agreeable company another time.

The lieutenant, who began to be uneaſy at Peregrine's ſtay, knocked at the door, and being introduced by his friend, had the honour of breakfaſting with the ladies; on which occaſion his heart received ſuch a rude ſhock from the charms of Emilia, that he afterwards made a merit with his friend of having conſtrained himſelf ſo far, as to forbear commencing his profeſſed rival.

At length they bade adieu to their kind entertainers, and in leſs than an hour ſetting out from the inn, arrived about two o'clock in Wincheſter, where Mr. Jolter was overwhelmed with joy at their appearance.

The nature of this adventure being unknown to all except thoſe who could be depended upon, every body who enquired about the cauſe of Peregrine's abſence, was told that he had been with a relation in the country, and the maſter condeſcended to overlook his indiſcretion; ſo that Hatchway ſeeing every thing

thing ſettled to the ſatisfaction of his friend, returned to the garriſon, and gave the commodore an account of his expedition.

The old gentleman was very much ſtartled when he heard there was a lady in the caſe, and very emphatically obſerved, that a man had better be ſucked into the Gulph of Florida, than once get into the indraught of a woman; becauſe, in one caſe, he may with good pilotage bring out his veſſel ſafe between the Bahama's and the Indian ſhore; but in the other there is no outlet at all, and it is in vain to ſtrive againſt the current; ſo that of courſe he muſt be embayed, and run chuck upon a lee-ſhore. He reſolved, therefore, to lay the ſtate of the caſe before Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, and concert ſuch meaſures with him as ſhould be thought likelieſt to detach his ſon from the purſuit of an idle amour, which could not fail of interfering in a dangerous manner with the plan of his education.

In the mean time, Perry's ideas were totally engroſſed by his amiable miſtreſs; who, whether he ſlept or waked, was ſtill preſent in his imagination; which produced the following ſtanzas in her praiſe.

I.

Adieu, ye ſtreams that ſmoothly flow,
Ye vernal airs that ſoftly blow,
Ye plains by blooming ſpring array'd,
Ye birds that warble thro' the ſhade.

II.

Unhurt, from you my ſoul could fly,
Nor drop one tear, nor heave one ſigh;
But forced from Celia's charms to part,
All joy deſerts my drooping heart.

III.

O! fairer than the roſy morn,
When flowers the dewy fields adorn;
Unſullied as the genial ray,
That warms the balmy breeze of May.

IV.

Thy charms divinely bright appear,
And add new ſplendor to the year;
Improve the day with freſh delight,
And gild with joy the dreary night!

This juvenile production was incloſed in a very tender billet to Emilia, and committed to the charge of Pipes, who was ordered to ſet out for Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation with a preſent of veniſon, and a compliment to the ladies; and directed to take ſome opportunity of delivering the letter to Miſs, without the knowledge of her mamma.

CHAP. XIX.

HIS MESSENGER MEETS WITH A MISFORTUNE, TO WHICH HE APPLIES A VERY EXTRAORDINARY EXPEDIENT THAT IS ATTENDED WITH STRANGE CONSEQUENCES.

AS a ſtage-coach paſſed within two miles of the village where ſhe lived, Tom bargained with the driver for a ſeat on the box, and accordingly departed on this meſſage, though he was but indifferently qualified for commiſſions of ſuch a nature: having received particular injunctions about the letter, he reſolved to make that the chief object of his care, and very ſagaciouſly conveyed it between his ſtocking and the ſole of his foot, where he thought it would be perfectly ſecure from all injury and accident. Here it remained until he arrived at the inn where he had formerly lodged; when, after having refreſhed himſelf with a draught of beer, he pulled off his ſtocking, and found the poor billet ſullied with duſt, and torn in a thouſand tatters by the motion of his foot in walking the laſt two miles of his journey. Thunder-ſtruck at this phenomenon, he uttered a long and loud *wheew!* which was ſucceeded by an exclamation of 'D—n my old ſhoes! 'a bite by G—!' then he reſted his elbows on the table, and his forehead upon his two fiſts, and in that attitude deliberated with himſelf upon the means of remedying this misfortune.

As he was not diſtracted by a vaſt number of ideas, he ſoon concluded that his beſt expedient would be to employ the clerk of the pariſh, who he knew was a great ſcholar, to write another epiſtle according to the directions he ſhould give him; and never dreaming that the mangled original would in the leaſt facilitate this ſcheme, he very wiſely committed it to the flames, that it might never riſe up in judgment againſt him.

Having taken this wiſe ſtep, he went in queſt of the ſcribe, to whom he communicated his buſineſs, and promiſed a full pot by way of gratification. The clerk, who was alſo ſchool-maſter, proud of an opportunity to diſtinguiſh his talents,

lents, readily undertook the task; and repairing with his employer to the inn, in less than a quarter of an hour produced a morsel of eloquence so much to the satisfaction of Pipes, that he squeezed his hand by way of acknowledgment, and doubled his allowance of beer. This being discussed, our courier betook himself to the house of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the haunch of venison and this succedaneous letter, and delivered his message to the mother, who received it with great respect, and many kind enquiries about the health and welfare of his master, attempting to tip the messenger a crown, which he absolutely refused to accept, in consequence of Mr. Pickle's repeated caution. While the old gentlewoman turned to a servant, in order to give directions about the disposal of the present, Pipes looked upon this as a favourable occasion to transact his business with Emilia, and therefore shutting one eye, with a jirk of his thumb towards his left shoulder, and a most significant twist of his countenance, he beckoned the young lady into another room, as if he had been fraught with something of consequence, which he wanted to impart. She understood the hint, howsoever strangely communicated; and by stepping to one side of the room, gave him an opportunity of slipping the epistle into her hand, which he gently squeezed at the same time in token of regard: then throwing a side-glance at the mother, whose back was turned, clapped his finger on the side of his nose, thereby recommending secrecy and discretion.

Emelia conveying the letter into her bosom, could not help smiling at Tom's politeness and dexterity; but left her mamma should detect him in the execution of his pantomime, she broke off this intercourse of signs, by asking aloud, when he proposed to set out on his return to Winchester. When he answered, 'To-morrow morning.' Mrs. Gauntlet recommended him to the hospitality of her own footman, desiring him to make much of Mr. Pipes below, where he was kept to supper, and very cordially entertained. Our young heroine, impatient to read her lover's billet, which made her heart throb with rapturous expectation, retired to her chamber as soon as possible, with a view of perusing the contents, which were these.

'DIVINE EMPRESS OF MY SOUL!

'IF the refulgent flames of your beauty had not evaporated the particles of my transported brain, and scorched my intellects into a cinder of stolidity, perhaps the resplendency of my passion might shine illustrious through the sable curtain of my ink, and in sublimity transcend the galaxy itself, though wafted on the pinions of a grey goose-quill! But, ah! celestial enchantress! the necromancy of thy tyrannical charms hath fettered my faculties with adamantine chains, which unless thy compassion shall melt, I must eternally remain in the Tartarean gulph of dismal despair. Vouchsafe, therefore, O thou brightest luminary of this terrestrial sphere! to warm as well as shine; and let the genial rays of thy benevolence melt the icy emanations of thy disdain, which hath frozen up the spirits of angelick preheminence! Thy most egregious admirer and superlative slave,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Never was astonishment more perplexing than that of Emilia, when she read this curious composition, which she repeated verbatim three times before she would credit the evidence of her own senses. She began to fear in good earnest that love had produced a disorder in her lover's understanding; but after a thousand conjectures, by which she attempted to account for this extraordinary fustian of style, she concluded that it was the effect of mere levity, calculated to ridicule the passion he had formerly professed. Irritated by this supposition, she resolved to baulk his triumph with affected indifference, and in the mean time endeavour to expel him from that place which he possessed within her heart. And, indeed, such a victory over her inclinations might have been obtained without great difficulty; for she enjoyed an easiness of temper, that could accommodate itself to the emergencies of her fate; and her vivacity, by amusing her imagination, preserved her from the keener sensations of sorrow. Thus determined and disposed, she did not send any sort of answer, or the least token of remembrance by Pipes, who was suffered to depart with a general compliment from the mother, and arrived at Winchester the next day.

Peregrine's eyes ſparkled when he ſaw his meſſenger come in, and he ſtretched out his hand in full confidence of receiving ſome particular mark of his Emilia's affection; but how was he confounded, when he found his hope ſo cruelly diſappointed! In an inſtant his countenance fell. He ſtood for ſome time ſilent and abaſhed, then thrice repeated the interrogation of, 'What! not 'one word from Emilia?' And, dubious of his courier's diſcretion, enquired minutely into all the particulars of his reception. He aſked if he had ſeen the young lady; if ſhe was in good health; if he had found an opportunity of delivering his letter; and how ſhe looked when he put it into her hand. Pipes anſwered, that he had never ſeen her in better health or higher ſpirits; that he had managed matters ſo as not only to preſent the billet unperceived, but alſo to aſk her commands in private before he took his leave, when ſhe told him that the letter required no reply. This laſt circumſtance he conſidered as a manifeſt mark of diſreſpect, and gnawed his lips with reſentment. Upon farther reflection, however, he ſuppoſed that ſhe could not conveniently write by the meſſenger, and would undoubtedly favour him by the poſt. This conſideration conſoled him for the preſent, and he waited impatiently for the fruits of his hope; but after he had ſeen eight days elapſed without reaping the ſatisfaction with which he had flattered himſelf, his temper forſook him, he raved againſt the whole ſex, and was ſeized with a fit of ſullen chagrin; but his pride in a little time came to his aſſiſtance, and reſcued him from the horrors of the melancholy fiend. He reſolved to retort her own neglect upon his ungrateful miſtreſs; his countenance gradually reſumed it's former ſerenity; and though by this time he was pretty well cured of his foppery, he appeared again at publick diverſions with an air of gaiety and unconcern, that Emilia might have a chance of hearing how much, in all likelihood, he diſregarded her diſdain.

There are never wanting certain officious perſons, who take pleaſure in promoting intelligence of this ſort. His behaviour ſoon reached the ears of Miſs Gauntlet, and confirmed her in the opinion ſhe had conceived from his letter; ſo that ſhe fortified herſelf in her former ſentiments, and bore his indifference with great philoſophy. Thus, a correſpondence which had commenced with all the tenderneſs and ſincerity of love, and every promiſe of duration, was interrupted in it's infancy by a miſunderſtanding occaſioned by the ſimplicity of Pipes, who never once reflected upon the conſequences of his deceit.

Though their mutual paſſion was by theſe means ſuppreſſed for the preſent, it was not altogether extinguiſhed, but glowed in ſecret, though even to themſelves unknown, until an occaſion which afterwards offered, blew up the latent flame, and Love reſumed his empire in their breaſts.

While they moved, as it were, without the ſphere of each other's attraction, the commodore, fearing that Perry was in danger of involving himſelf in ſome pernicious engagement, reſolved, by advice of Mr. Jolter and his friend the pariſh prieſt, to recal him from the place where he had contracted ſuch imprudent connections, and ſend him to the univerſity, where his education might be compleated, and his fancy weaned from all puerile amuſements.

This plan had been propoſed to his own father, who, as hath been already obſerved, ſtood always neuter in every thing that concerned his eldeſt ſon; and as for Mrs. Pickle, ſhe had never heard his name mentioned ſince his departure with any degree of temper or tranquillity, except when her huſband informed her that he was in a fair way of being ruined by this indiſcreet amour. It was then ſhe began to applaud her own foreſight, which had diſcerned the mark of reprobation in that vicious boy, and launched out in compariſon between him and Gammy; who, ſhe obſerved, was a child of uncommon parts and ſolidity, and, with the bleſſing of God, would be a comfort to his parents, and an ornament to the family.

Should I affirm that this favourite, whom ſhe commended ſo much, was in every reſpect the reverſe of what ſhe deſcribed; that he was a boy of mean capacity, and though remarkably diſtorted in his body, much more crooked in his diſpoſition; and that ſhe had perſuaded her huſband to eſpouſe her opinion, though it was contrary to common ſenſe, as well as to his own perception; I am afraid the reader will think I repreſent a monſter that never

exiſted

existed in nature, and be apt to condemn the œconomy of my invention: nevertheless, there is nothing more true than every circumstance of what I have advanced; and I wish the picture, singular as it is, may not be thought to resemble more than one original.

CHAP. XX.

PEREGRINE IS SUMMONED TO ATTEND HIS UNCLE; IS MORE AND MORE HATED BY HIS OWN MOTHER; APPEALS TO HIS FATHER, WHOSE CONDESCENSION IS DEFEATED BY THE DOMINION OF HIS WIFE.

BUT waving these reflections, let us return to Peregrine, who received a summons to attend his uncle, and in a few days arrived with Mr. Jolter and Pipes at the garrison, which he filled with joy and satisfaction. The alteration which, during his absence, had happened in his person, was very favourable in his appearance; which, from that of a comely boy, was converted into that of a most engaging youth. He was already taller than a middle-sized man, his shape ascertained, his sinews well knit, his mien greatly improved, and his whole figure as elegant and graceful, as if it had been cast in the same mould with the Apollo of Belvidere.

Such an outside could not fail of prepossessing people in his favour. The commodore, notwithstanding the advantageous reports he had heard, found his expectation exceeded in the person of Peregrine, and signified his approbation in the most sanguine terms. Mrs. Trunnion was struck with his genteel address, and received him with uncommon marks of complacency and affection: he was caressed by all the people in the neighbourhood; who, while they admired his accomplishments, could not help pitying his infatuated mother, for being deprived of that unutterable delight which any other parent would have enjoyed in the contemplation of such an amiable son.

Divers efforts were made by some well-disposed people, to conquer, if possible, this monstrous prejudice; but their endeavours, instead of curing, served only to inflame the distemper, and she never could be prevailed upon to indulge him with the least mark of maternal regard. On the contrary, her original disgust degenerated into such inveteracy of hatred, that she left no stone unturned to alienate the commodore's affection for this her innocent child, and even practised the most malicious defamation to accomplish her purpose. Every day did she abuse her husband's ear with some forged instance of Peregrine's ingratitude to his uncle, well knowing that it would reach the commodore's knowledge at night.

Accordingly, Mr. Pickle used to tell him at the club, that his hopeful favourite had ridiculed him in such a company, and aspersed his spouse upon another occasion; and thus retail the little scandalous issue of his own wife's invention. Luckily for Peregrine, the commodore paid no great regard to the authority of his informer, because he knew from what canal his intelligence flowed; besides, the youth had a staunch friend in Mr. Hatchway, who never failed to vindicate him when he was thus unjustly accused, and always found argument enough to confute the assertions of his enemies. But though Trunnion had been dubious of the young gentleman's principles, and deaf to the remonstrances of the lieutenant, Perry was provided with a bulwark strong enough to defend him from all such assaults. This was no other than his aunt, whose regard for him was perceived to increase in the same proportion as his own mother's diminished; and, indeed, the augmentation of the one was, in all probability, owing to the decrease of the other; for the two ladies, with great civility, performed all the duties of good neighbourhood, and hated each other most piously in their hearts.

Mrs. Pickle having been disobliged at the splendor of her sister's new equipage, had ever since that time, in the course of her visiting, endeavoured to make people merry with satirical jokes on the poor lady's infirmities; and Mrs. Trunnion seized the very first opportunity of making reprisals, by inveighing against her unnatural behaviour to her own child; so that Peregrine, as on the one hand he was abhorred, so on the other was he caressed, in consequence of this contention; and I firmly believe, that the most effectual method of destroying his interest at the garrison, would have

been the ſhew of countenancing him at his father's houſe: but, whether this conjecture be reaſonable or chimerical, certain it is, the experiment was never tried, and therefore Mr. Peregrine ran no riſque of being diſgraced. The commodore, who aſſumed, and juſtly too, the whole merit of his education, was now as proud of the youth's improvements, as if he had actually been his own offspring; and ſometimes his affection roſe to ſuch a pitch of enthuſiaſm, that he verily believed him to be the iſſue of his own loins. Notwithſtanding this favourable predicament in which our hero ſtood with his aunt and her huſband, he could not help feeling the injury he ſuffered from the caprice of his mother; and though the gaiety of his diſpoſition hindered him from afflicting himſelf with reflections of any gloomy caſt, he did not fail to foreſee that if any ſudden accident ſhould deprive him of the commodore, he would in all likelihood find himſelf in a very diſagreeable ſituation. Prompted by this conſideration, he one evening accompanied his uncle to the club, and was introduced to his father, before that worthy gentleman had the leaſt inkling of his arrival.

Mr. Gamaliel was never ſo diſconcerted as at this rencounter. His own diſpoſition would not ſuffer him to do any thing that might create the leaſt diſturbance, or interrupt his evening's enjoyment; ſo ſtrongly was he impreſſed with the terror of his wife, that he durſt not yield to the tranquillity of his temper: and, as I have already obſerved, his inclination was perfectly neutral. Thus diſtracted between different motives, when Perry was preſented to him, he ſat ſilent and abſorpt, as if he did not or would not perceive the application; and when he was urged to declare himſelf by the youth, who pathetically begged to know how he had incurred his diſpleaſure, he anſwered in a peeviſh ſtrain, 'Why, good now, child, what 'would you have me to do? your mo'ther can't abide you.'—'If my mo'ther is ſo unkind, I will not call it 'unnatural,' ſaid Peregrine, the tears of indignation ſtarting from his eyes, 'as to baniſh me from her preſence and 'affection, without the leaſt cauſe aſſign'ed; I hope you will not be ſo unjuſt 'as to eſpouſe her barbarous prejudices.' Before Mr. Pickle had time to reply to this expoſtulation, for which he was not at all prepared, the commodore interpoſed, and enforced his favourite's remonſtrance, by telling Mr. Gamaliel that he was aſhamed to ſee any man drive in ſuch a miſerable manner under his wife's petticoat. 'As for my own part,' ſaid he, raiſing his voice, and aſſuming a look of importance and command, 'before I would ſuffer myſelf to be 'ſteered all weathers by any woman in 'Chriſtendom, d'ye ſee! I'd raiſe ſuch a 'hurricane about her ears, that—' Here he was interrupted by Mr. Hatchway, who thruſting his head towards the door, in the attitude of one that liſtens, cried, 'Ahey! there's your ſpouſe come to 'pay us a viſit.' Trunnion's features that inſtant adopted a new diſpoſition: fear and confuſion took poſſeſſion of his countenance; his voice from a tone of vociferation ſunk into a whiſper of, 'Sure you muſt be miſtaken, Jack;' and in great perplexity he wiped off the ſweat which had ſtarted on his forehead at this falſe alarm. The lieutenant having thus puniſhed him for the rhodomontade he had uttered, told him with an arch ſneer, that he was deceived by the ſound of the outward door creaking upon it's hinges, which he miſtook for Mrs. Trunnion's voice, and deſired him to proceed with his admonitions to Mr. Pickle. It is not to be denied that this arrogance was a little unſeaſonable in the commodore, who was in all reſpects as effectually ſubdued to the dominion of his wife, as the perſon whoſe ſubmiſſion he then ventured to condemn; with this difference of diſpoſition: Trunnion's ſubjection was like that of a bear, chequered with fits of ſurlineſs and rage; whereas Pickle bore the yoke like an ox, without repining. No wonder, then, that this indolence, this ſluggiſhneſs, this ſtagnation of temper, rendered Gamaliel incapable of withſtanding the arguments and importunity of his friends, to which he at length ſurrendered. He acquieſced in the juſtice of their obſervations, and taking his ſon by the hand, promiſed to favour him for the future with his love and fatherly protection.

But this laudable reſolution did not laſt; Mrs. Pickle, ſtill dubious of his conſtancy, and jealous of his communication with the commodore, never failed to interrogate him every night about the converſation that happened at the club; and regulate her exhortation according

according to the intelligence she received. He was no sooner, therefore, safely conveyed to bed (that academy in which all notable wives communicate their lectures) when her catechism began; and she in a moment perceived something reluctant and equivocal in her husband's answers. Aroused at this discovery, she employed her influence and skill with such success, that he disclosed every circumstance of what had happened; and after having sustained a most severe rebuke for his simplicity and indiscretion, humbled himself so far as to promise that he would next day annul the condescensions he had made, and for ever renounce the ungracious object of her disgust. This undertaking was punctually performed in a letter to the commodore, which she herself dictated in these words.

'SIR,

'WHEREAS my good-nature 'being last night imposed 'upon, I was persuaded to countenance and promise I know not what 'to that vicious youth, whose parent I 'have the misfortune to be; I desire 'you will take notice that I revoke all 'such countenance and promises, and 'shall never look upon that man as my 'friend, who will henceforth in such a 'cause solicit, Sir, yours, &c.

'GAM. PICKLE.'

CHAP. XXI.

TRUNNION IS ENRAGED AT THE CONDUCT OF PICKLE. PEREGRINE RESENTS THE INJUSTICE OF HIS MOTHER, TO WHOM HE EXPLAINS HIS SENTIMENTS IN A LETTER. IS ENTERED AT THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD, WHERE HE SIGNALIZES HIMSELF AS A YOUTH OF AN ENTERPRIZING GENIUS.

UNSPEAKABLE were the transports of rage to which Trunnion was incensed by this absurd renunciation: he tore the letter with his gums (teeth he had none) spit with furious grimaces, in token of the contempt he entertained for the author, whom he not only damned as a lousy, scabby, nasty, scurvy, sculking, lubberly noodle, but resolved to challenge to single combat with fire and sword; but he was dissuaded from this violent measure, and appeased by the intervention and advice of the lieutenant and Mr. Jolter, who represented the message as the effect of the poor man's infirmity, for which he was rather an object of pity than of resentment; and turned the stream of his indignation against the wife, whom he reviled accordingly. Nor did Peregrine himself bear with patience this injurious declaration, the nature of which he no sooner understood from Hatchway, than equally shocked and exasperated, he retired to his apartment, and in the first emotions of his ire, produced the following epistle, which was immediately conveyed to his mother.

'MADAM,

'HAD nature formed me a bug-'bear to the sight, and inspired 'me with a soul as vicious as my body 'was detestable, perhaps I might have 'enjoyed particular marks of your af-'fection and applause: seeing you have 'persecuted me with such unnatural 'aversion, for no other visible reason, 'than that of my differing so widely in 'shape as well as disposition, from that 'deformed urchin who is the object of 'your tenderness and care. If those be 'the terms on which alone I can obtain 'your favour, I pray God you may 'never cease to hate, Madam, your 'most injured son,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

This letter, which nothing but his passion and inexperience could excuse, had such an effect upon his mother, as may be easily conceived. She was enraged to a degree of frenzy against the writer: though at the same time she considered the whole as the production of Mrs. Trunnion's particular pique, and represented it to her husband as an insult that he was bound in honour to resent, by breaking off all correspondence with the commodore and his family. This was a bitter pill to Gamaliel; who, through a long course of years, was so habituated to Trunnion's company, that he could as easily have parted with a limb, as have relinquished the club all at once. He therefore ventured to represent

preſent his own incapacity to follow her advice, and begged that he might at leaſt be allowed to drop the connection gradually; proteſting that he would do his endeavour to give her all manner of ſatisfaction.

Meanwhile preparations were made for Peregrine's departure to the univerſity, and in a few weeks he ſet out, in the ſeventeenth year of his age, accompanied by the ſame attendants who lived with him at Wincheſter. His uncle laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to avoid the company of immodeſt women, to mind his learning, to let him hear of his welfare as often as he could ſpare time to write, and ſettled his appointments at the rate of five hundred a year, including his governor's ſalary, which was one fifth part of the ſum. The heart of our young gentleman, dilated at the proſpect of the figure he ſhould make with ſuch an handſome annuity, the management of which was left at his own diſcretion: and he amuſed his imagination with the moſt agreeable reveries during his journey to Oxford, which he performed in two days. Here being introduced to the head of the college, to whom he had been recommended, accommodated with genteel apartments, entered as gentleman commoner in the books, and provided with a judicious tutor, inſtead of returning to the ſtudy of Greek and Latin, in which he thought himſelf already ſufficiently inſtructed, he renewed his acquaintance with ſome of his old ſchool-fellows, whom he found in the ſame ſituation, and was by them initiated in all the faſhionable diverſions of the place.

It was not long before he made himſelf remarkable for his ſpirit and humour, which were ſo acceptable to the bucks of the univerſity, that he was admitted as a member of their corporation, and in a very little time became the moſt conſpicuous perſonage of the whole fraternity; not that he valued himſelf upon his ability in ſmoaking the greateſt number of pipes, and drinking the largeſt quantity of ale; theſe were qualifications of too groſs a nature to captivate his refined ambition. He piqued himſelf on his talent for raillery, his genius and taſte, his perſonal accompliſhments, and his ſucceſs at intrigue: nor were his excurſions confined to the ſmall villages in the neighbourhood, which are commonly viſited once a week by the ſtudents for the ſake of carnal recreation. He kept his own horſes, traverſed the whole country in parties of pleaſure, attended all the races within fifty miles of Oxford, and made frequent jaunts to London, where he uſed to lie incognito during the beſt part of many a term.

The rules of the univerſity were too ſevere to be obſerved by a youth of his vivacity; and therefore he became acquainted with the proctor by times. But all the checks he received were inſufficient to moderate his career; he frequented taverns and coffee-houſes, committed midnight frolicks in the ſtreets, inſulted all the ſober and pacifick claſs of his fellow-ſtudents; the tutors themſelves were not ſacred from his ridicule; he laughed at the magiſtrate, and neglected every particular of college diſcipline.

In vain did they attempt to reſtrain his irregularities by the impoſition of fines; he was liberal to profuſion, and therefore paid without reluctance. Thrice did he ſcale the windows of a tradeſman, with whoſe daughter he had an affair of gallantry; as often was he obliged to ſeek his ſafety by a precipitate leap; and one night would in all probability have fallen a ſacrifice to an ambuſcade that was laid by the father, had not his truſty ſquire Pipes interpoſed in his behalf, and manfully reſcued him from the clubs of his enemies.

In the midſt of theſe exceſſes, Mr. Jolter finding his admonitions neglected, and his influence utterly deſtroyed, attempted to wean his pupil from his extravagant courſes, by engaging his attention in ſome more laudable purſuit. With this view he introduced him into a club of politicians, who received him with great demonſtrations of regard, accommodated themſelves more than he could have expected to his jovial diſpoſition, and while they revolved ſchemes for the reformation of the ſtate, drank with ſuch devotion to the accompliſhment of their plans, that before parting, the cares of their patriotiſm were quite overwhelmed.

Peregrine, though he could not approve of their doctrine, reſolved to attach himſelf for ſome time to their company; becauſe he perceived ample ſubject for his ridicule, in the characters of theſe wrong-headed enthuſiaſts. It was a conſtant practice with them, in their midnight

midnight conſiſtories, to ſwallow ſuch plentiful draughts of inſpiration, that their myſteries commonly ended like thoſe of the Bacchanalian Orgia; and they were ſeldom capable of maintaining that ſolemnity of decorum which, by the nature of their functions, moſt of them were obliged to profeſs. Now as Peregrine's ſatirical diſpoſition was never more gratified than when he had an opportunity of expoſing grave characters in ridiculous attitudes, he laid a miſchievous ſnare for his new confederates, which took effect in this manner. In one of their nocturnal deliberations, he promoted ſuch a ſpirit of good fellowſhip, by the agreeable ſallies of his wit, which were purpoſely levelled againſt their political adverſaries, that by ten o'clock they were all ready to join in the moſt extravagant propoſal that could be made. They broke their glaſſes in conſequence of his ſuggeſtion, drank healths out of their ſhoes, caps, and the bottoms of the candleſticks that ſtood before them, ſometimes ſtanding with one foot on a chair, and the knee bent on the edge of the table; and when they could no longer ſtand in that poſture, ſetting their bare poſteriors on the cold floor. They huzzaed, hallooed, danced, and ſung; and, in ſhort, were elevated to ſuch a pitch of intoxication, that when Peregrine propoſed that they ſhould burn their periwigs, the hint was immediately approved, and they executed the frolick as one man. Their ſhoes and caps underwent the ſame fate, by the ſame inſtigation; and in this trim he led them forth into the ſtreet, where they reſolved to compel every body they ſhould find to ſubſcribe to their political creed, and pronounce the Shiboleth of their party. In the atchievement of this enterprize, they met with more oppoſition than they expected; they were encountered with arguments which they could not well withſtand; the noſes of ſome, and eyes of others, in a very little time bore the marks of obſtinate diſputation. Their conductor having at length engaged the whole body in a fray with another ſquadron, which was pretty much in the ſame condition, he very fairly gave them the ſlip, and ſlily retreated to his apartment, foreſeeing that his companions would ſoon be favoured with the notice of their ſuperiors: nor was he deceived in his prognoſtick; the proctor going his round, chanced to fall in with this tumultuous uproar, and interpoſing his authority, found means to quiet the diſturbance. He took cognizance of their names, and diſmiſſed the rioters to their reſpective chambers, not a little ſcandalized at the behaviour of ſome among them, whoſe buſineſs and duty it was to ſet far other examples to the youth under their care and direction.

About midnight, Pipes, who had orders to attend at a diſtance, and keep an eye upon Jolter, brought home that unfortunate governor upon his back, (Peregrine having before-hand ſecured his admittance into the college;) and among other bruiſes he was found to have received a couple of contuſions on his face, which next morning appeared in a black circle that ſurrounded each eye. This was a mortifying circumſtance to a man of his character and deportment, eſpecially as he had received a meſſage from the proctor, who deſired to ſee him forthwith. With great humility and contrition he begged the advice of his pupil, who being uſed to amuſe himſelf with painting, aſſured Mr. Jolter, that he would cover thoſe ſigns of diſgrace with a ſlight coat of fleſh-colour, ſo dexterouſly, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to diſtinguiſh the artificial from the natural ſkin. The rueful governor, rather than expoſe ſuch opprobrious tokens to the obſervation and cenſure of the magiſtrate, ſubmitted to the expedient. Although his counſellor had over-rated his own ſkill, he was perſuaded to confide in the diſguiſe, and actually attended the proctor, with ſuch a ſtaring addition to the natural ghaſtlineſs of his features, that his viſage bore a very apt reſemblance to ſome of thoſe ferocious countenances that hang over the doors of certain taverns and alehouſes, under the denomination of the Saracen's head.

Such a remarkable alteration of phyſiognomy could not eſcape the notice of the moſt undiſcerning beholder, much leſs the penetrating eye of his ſevere judge, already whetted with what he had ſeen over-night. He was therefore upbraided with this ridiculous and ſhallow artifice, and together with the companions of his debauch, underwent ſuch a cutting reprimand, for the ſcandalous irregularity of his conduct, that all

of

of them remained creſt-fallen, and were aſhamed, for many weeks, to appear in the publick execution of their duty.

Peregrine was too vain of his fineſſe, to conceal the part he acted in this comedy, with the particulars of which he regaled his companions, and thereby intailed upon himſelf the hate and reſentment of the community, whoſe maxims and practices he had diſcloſed; for he was conſidered as a ſpy, who had intruded himſelf into their ſociety, with a view of betraying it; or, at beſt, as an apoſtate and renegado from the faith and principles which he had profeſſed.

CHAP. XXII.

HE IS INSULTED BY HIS TUTOR, WHOM HE LAMPOONS; MAKES A CONSIDERABLE PROGRESS IN POLITE LITERATURE; AND IN AN EXCURSION TO WINDSOR, MEETS WITH EMILIA BY ACCIDENT, AND IS VERY COLDLY RECEIVED.

AMONG thoſe who ſuffered by his craft and infidelity was Mr. Jumble, his own tutor, who could not at all digeſt the mortifying affront he had received, and was reſolved to be revenged on the inſulting author. With this view he watched the conduct of Mr. Pickle with the utmoſt rancour of vigilance, and let ſlip no opportunity of treating him with diſreſpect, which he knew the diſpoſition of his pupil could leſs brook than any other ſeverity it was in his power to exerciſe.

Peregrine had been ſeveral mornings abſent from chapel; and as Mr. Jumble never failed to queſtion him in a very peremptory ſtyle about his non-attendance, he invented ſome very plauſible excuſes; but at length his ingenuity was exhauſted; he received a very galling rebuke for his profligacy of morals, and that he might feel it the more ſenſibly, was ordered, by way of exerciſe, to compoſe a paraphraſe in Engliſh verſe, upon theſe two lines in Virgil:

Vane ligur, fruſtraque animis elate ſuperbis,
Nec quicquam, patrias, tentaſti lubricus, artes.

The impoſition of this invidious theme had all the deſired effect upon Peregrine, who not only conſidered it as a piece of unmannerly abuſe levelled againſt his own conduct, but alſo as a retroſpective inſult on the memory of his grandfather, who (as he had been informed) was in his life-time more noted for his cunning than candour in trade.

Exaſperated at this inſtance of the pedant's audacity, he had well nigh (in his firſt tranſports) taken corporal ſatisfaction on the ſpot; but foreſeeing the troubleſome conſequences that would attend ſuch a flagrant outrage againſt the laws of the univerſity, he checked his indignation, and reſolved to revenge the injury in a more cool and contemptuous manner. Thus determined, he ſet on foot an enquiry into the particulars of Jumble's parentage and education. He learned that the father of this inſolent tutor was a bricklayer, that his mother ſold pyes, and that the ſon, at different periods of his youth, had amuſed himſelf in both occupations, before he converted his views to the ſtudy of learning. Fraught with this intelligence, he compoſed the following ballad in doggerel rhymes, and next day preſented it as a gloſs upon the text which the tutor had choſen.

I.

Come, liſten, ye ſtudents of ev'ry degree,
I ſing of a wit and a tutor *perdie*,
A ſtateſman profound, a critick immenſe,
In ſhort, a mere jumble of learning and ſenſe:
And yet of his talents, though laudably vain,
His own family arts he could never attain.

II.

His father intending his fortune to build,
In his youth would have taught him the trowel to wield;
But the mortar of diſcipline never would ſtick,
For his ſkull was ſecur'd by a facing of brick;
And with all his endeavours of patience and pain,
The ſkill of his ſire he could never attain.

III.

His mother, an houſewife, neat, artful, and wiſe,
Renown'd for her delicate biſcuit and pyes,
Soon alter'd his ſtudies, by flatt'ring his taſte,
From the raiſing of walls to the rearing of paſte!
But all her inſtructions were fruitleſs and vain,
The pye-making myſt'ry he ne'er could attain.

Yet

IV.

Yet true to his race, in his labours were ſeen
A jumble of both their profeſſions, I ween;
For, when his own genius he ventur'd to truſt,
His pyes ſeem'd of brick, and his houſes of cruſt.
Then, good Mr. Tutor, pray be not ſo vain,
Since your family arts you could never attain.

This impudent production was the moſt effectual vengeance he could have taken on his tutor, who had all the ſupercilious arrogance and ridiculous pride of a low-born pedant. Inſtead of overlooking this petulant piece of ſatire with that temper and decency of diſdain that became a perſon of his gravity and ſtation, he no ſooner caſt his eye over the performance, than the blood ruſhed into his countenance, which immediately after exhibited a ghaſtly pale colour. With a quivering lip he told his pupil that he was an impertinent jackanapes, and he would take care that he ſhould be expelled from the univerſity, for having preſumed to write and deliver ſuch a licentious and ſcurrilous libel. Peregrine anſwered with great reſolution, that when the provocation he had received ſhould be known, he was perſuaded that he ſhould be acquitted by the opinion of all impartial people; and that he was ready to ſubmit the whole to the deciſion of the maſter.

This arbitration he propoſed, becauſe he knew the maſter and Jumble were at variance; and for that reaſon the tutor durſt not venture to put the cauſe on ſuch an iſſue. Nay, when this reference was mentioned, Jumble, who was naturally jealous, ſuſpected that Peregrine had a promiſe of protection before he undertook to commit ſuch an outrageous inſult; and this notion had ſuch an effect upon him, that he reſolved to devour his vexation, and wait for a more proper opportunity of gratifying his hate. Meanwhile, copies of the ballad were diſtributed among the ſtudents, who ſung it under the very noſe of Mr. Jumble, to the tune of 'A cobler there was,' &c. and the triumph of our hero was compleat. Neither was his whole time devoted to the riotous extravagances of youth. He enjoyed many lucid intervals, during which he contracted a more intimate acquaintance with the claſſicks, applied himſelf to the reading of hiſtory, improved his taſte for painting and muſick, in which he made ſome progreſs; and, above all things, cultivated the ſtudy of natural philoſophy. It was generally after a courſe of cloſe attention to ſome of theſe arts and ſciences, that his diſpoſition broke out into thoſe irregularities and wild ſallies of a luxuriant imagination, for which he became ſo remarkable; and he was perhaps the only young man in Ox—d, who at the ſame time maintained an intimate and friendly intercourſe with the moſt unthinking, as well as with the moſt ſedate ſtudents at the univerſity.

It is not to be ſuppoſed that a young man of Peregrine's vanity, inexperience, and profuſion, could ſuit his expence to his allowance, liberal as it was; for he was not one of thoſe fortunate people who are born œconomiſts, and knew not the art of withholding his purſe when he ſaw his companion in difficulty. Thus naturally generous and expenſive, he ſquandered away his money, and made a moſt ſplendid appearance upon the receipt of his quarterly appointment; but long before the third month was elapſed, his finances were conſumed; and as he could not ſtoop to aſk an extraordinary ſupply, was too proud to borrow, and too haughty to run in debt with tradeſmen, he devoted thoſe periods of poverty to the proſecution of his ſtudies, and ſhone forth again at the revolution of quarter-day.

In one of theſe irruptions, he and ſome of his companions went to Windſor, in order to ſee the royal apartments in the caſtle, whither they repaired in the afternoon; and as Peregrine ſtood contemplating the picture of Hercules and Omphale, one of his fellow-ſtudents whiſpered in his ear, 'Z—ds, Pickle! 'there are two fine girls.' He turned inſtantly about, and in one of them recognized his almoſt forgotten Emilia. Her appearance acted upon his imagination like a ſpark of fire that falls among gunpowder; that paſſion which had lain dormant for the ſpace of two years flaſhed up in a moment, and he was ſeized with an univerſal trepidation. She perceived and partook of his emotion; for their ſouls, like uniſons, vibrated with the ſame impulſe. However, ſhe called her pride and reſentment to her aid, and found reſolution enough to retire from ſuch a dangerous ſcene. Alarmed at

her retreat, he recollected all his assurance, and impelled by love which he could no longer resist, followed her into the next room, where in the most disconcerted manner he accosted her with, 'Your humble servant, Miss Gauntlet!' to which salutation she replied, with an affectation of indifference, that did not, however, conceal her agitation, 'Your 'servant, Sir!' and immediately extending her finger towards the picture of Duns Scotus, which is fixed over one of the doors, asked her companion, in a giggling tone, if she did not think he looked like a conjuror. Peregrine, nettled into spirits by this reception, answered for the other lady, that it was an easy matter to be a conjuror in those times, when the simplicity of the age assisted his divination; but were he, or Merlin himself, to rise from the dead now, when such deceit and dissimulation prevail, they would not be able to earn their bread by the profession. 'O, 'Sir!' said she, turning full upon him, 'without doubt they would adopt new 'maxims; it is no disparagement, in 'this enlightened age, for one to alter 'one's opinion.'—'No, sure, Madam!' replied the youth, with some precipitation, 'provided the change be for the 'better.'—'And should it happen other-'wise,' retorted the nymph, with a flirt of her fan, 'inconstancy will never want 'countenance from the practice of man-'kind.'—'True, Madam,' resumed our hero, fixing his eyes upon her; 'exam-'ples of levity are every where to be 'met with.'—'O Lord, Sir!' cried Emilia, tossing her head, 'you'll scarce 'ever find a fop without it.' By this time his companion, seeing him engaged with one of the ladies, entered into conversation with the other; and in order to favour his friend's gallantry, conducted her into the next apartment, on pretence of entertaining her with the sight of a remarkable piece of painting.

Peregrine laying hold on this opportunity of being alone with the object of his love, assumed a most seducing tenderness of look, and heaving a profound sigh, asked if she had utterly discarded him from her remembrance. Reddening at this pathetick question, which recalled the memory of the imagined slight he had put upon her, she answered in great confusion, 'Sir, I believe I once 'had the pleasure of seeing you at a 'ball in Winchester.'—'Miss Emilia,' said he, very gravely, 'will you be so 'candid as to tell me what misbehavi-'our of mine you are pleased to punish, 'by restricting your remembrance to 'that single occasion?'—'Mr. Pickle,' she replied, in the same tone, 'it is 'neither my province nor inclination to 'judge your conduct; and therefore you 'misapply your question, when you ask 'such an explanation of me.'—'At 'least,' resumed our lover, 'give me 'the melancholy satisfaction to know 'for what offence of mine you refused 'to take the least notice of that letter 'which I had the honour to write from 'Winchester by your own express per-'mission.'—'Your letter,' said Miss, with great vivacity, 'neither required, 'nor, in my opinion, deserved an answer; 'and to be free with you, Mr. Pickle, 'it was but a shallow artifice to rid your-'self of a correspondence you had deign-'ed to solicit.' Peregrine, confounded at this repartee, replied, that howsoever he might have failed in point of elegance or discretion, he was sure he had not been deficient in expressions of respect and devotion for those charms which it was his pride to adore: 'As for the 'verses,' said he, 'I own they were 'unworthy of the theme; but I flatter-'ed myself that they would have merit-'ed your acceptance, though not your 'approbation, and been considered not 'so much as the proof of my genius, 'as the genuine effusion of my love.'—'Verses!' cried Emilia, with an air of astonishment; 'what verses? I really 'don't understand you.' The young gentleman was thunderstruck at this exclamation, to which, after a long pause, he answered, 'I begin to suspect, and 'heartily wish, it may appear that we 'have misunderstood each other from 'the beginning. Pray, Miss Gaunt-'let, did not you find a copy of verses 'inclosed in that unfortunate letter?'—'Truly, Sir,' said the lady, 'I am not 'so much of a connoisseur as to distin-'guish whether that facetious produc-'tion which you merrily stile an unfor-'tunate letter, was composed in verse or 'prose; but, methinks, the jest is a little 'too stale to be brought upon the carpet 'again.' So saying, she tripped away to her companion, and left her lover in a most tumultuous suspense. He now perceived that her neglect of his addresses

when

when he was at Winchester, must have been owing to some mystery which he could not comprehend: and she began to suspect, and to hope, that the letter which she received was spurious, though she could not conceive how that could possibly happen, as it had been delivered to her by the hands of his own servant.

However, she resolved to leave the task of unravelling the affair to him, who, she knew, would infallibly exert himself for his own as well as her satisfaction. She was not deceived in her opinion; he went up to her again at the stair-case, and as they were unprovided with a male-attendant, insisted upon squiring the ladies to their lodgings. Emilia saw his drift, which was no other than to know where she lived; and though she approved of his contrivance, thought it was incumbent upon her, for the support of her own dignity, to decline the civility: she therefore thanked him for his polite offer, but would by no means consent to his giving himself such unnecessary trouble, especially as they had a very little way to walk. He was not repulsed by this refusal, the nature of which he perfectly understood; nor was she sorry to see him persevere in his determination: he therefore accompanied them in their return, and made divers efforts to speak with Emilia in particular; but she had a spice of the coquette in her disposition, and being determined to whet his impatience, artfully baffled all his endeavours, by keeping her companion continually engaged in the conversation, which turned upon the venerable appearance and imperial situation of the place. Thus tantalized, he lounged with them to the door of the house in which they lodged, when his mistress perceiving by the countenance of her comrade, that she was on the point of desiring him to walk in, checked her intention with a frown, then turning to Mr. Pickle, dropped him a very formal curtsey, seized the other young lady by the arm, and saying, 'Come, cousin Sophy!' vanished in a moment.

CHAP. XXIII.

AFTER SUNDRY UNSUCCESFUL EFFORTS, HE FINDS MEANS TO COME TO AN EXPLANATION WITH HIS MISTRESS; AND A RECONCILIATION ENSUES.

PEREGRINE, disconcerted at their sudden disappearance, stood for some minutes gaping in the street, before he could get the better of his surprize; and then deliberated with himself whether he should demand immediate admittance to his mistress, or chuse some other method of application. Piqued at her abrupt behaviour, though pleased with her spirit, he set his invention to work, in order to contrive some means of seeing her; and in a fit of musing arrived at the inn, where he found his companions whom he had left at the castle-gate. They had already made inquiry about the ladies, in consequence of which he learned that Miss Sophy was daughter of a gentleman in town to whom his mistress was related; that an intimate friendship subsisted between the two young ladies; that Emilia had lived about a month with her cousin, and appeared at the last assembly, where she was universally admired; and that several young gentlemen of fortune had since that time teized her with addresses.

Our hero's ambition was flattered, and his passion inflamed, with this intelligence; and he swore within himself that he would not quit the spot until he should have obtained an indisputed victory over all his rivals.

That same evening he composed a most eloquent epistle, in which he earnestly intreated that she would favour him with an opportunity of vindicating his conduct; but she would neither receive his billet, nor see his messenger. Baulked in this effort, he inclosed it in a new cover, directed by another hand, and ordered Pipes to ride next morning to London, on purpose to deliver it at the post-office; that coming by such conveyance, she might have no suspicion of the author, and open it before she should be aware of the deceit.

Three days he waited patiently for the effect of this stratagem, and in the afternoon of the fourth, ventured to hazard a formal visit, in quality of an old acquaintance. But here too he failed in his attempt; she was indisposed, and could not see company. These obstacles served only to increase his eagerness; he still adhered to his former resolution; and his companions understanding his determination, left him next day to his

own inventions. Thus relinquiſhed to his own ideas, he doubled his aſſiduity, and practiſed every method his imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to promote his plan.

Pipes was ſtationed all day long within ſight of her door, that he might be able to give his maſter an account of her motions; but ſhe never went abroad except to viſit in the neighbourhood, and was always houſed before Peregrine could be apprized of her appearance. He went to church with a view of attracting her notice, and humbled his deportment before her; but ſhe was ſo miſchievouſly devout as to look at nothing but her book, ſo that he was not favoured with one glance of regard. He frequented the coffee-houſe, and attempted to contract an acquaintance with Miſs Sophy's father, who, he hoped, would invite him to his houſe; but this expectation was alſo defeated. That prudent gentleman looked upon him as one of thoſe forward fortune-hunters who go about the country ſeeking whom they may devour, and warily diſcouraged all his advances. Chagrined by ſo many unſucceſsful endeavours, he began to deſpair of accompliſhing his aim; and, as the laſt ſuggeſtion of his art, paid off his lodging, took horſe at noon, and departed, in all appearance, for the place from whence he had come. He rode, however, but a few miles, and in the duſk of the evening returned unſeen, alighted at another inn, ordered Pipes to ſtay within doors, and keeping himſelf *incognito*, employed another perſon as a centinel upon Emilia.

It was not long before he reaped the fruits of his ingenuity. Next day in the afternoon, he was informed by his ſpy, that the two young ladies were gone to walk in the park, whither he followed them on the inſtant, fully determined to come to an explanation with his miſtreſs, even in preſence of her friend, who might poſſibly be prevailed upon to intereſt herſelf in his behalf.

When he ſaw them at ſuch a diſtance that they could not return to town before he ſhould have an opportunity of putting his reſolution in practice, he mended his pace, and found means to appear before them ſo ſuddenly, that Emilia could not help expreſſing her ſurprize in a ſcream. Our lover putting on a mien of humility and mortification, begged to know if her reſentment was implacable; and aſked why ſhe had ſo cruelly refuſed to grant him the common privilege that every criminal enjoyed. 'Dear Miſs Sophy,' ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to her companion, 'give me 'leave to implore your interceſſion with 'your couſin; I am ſure you have humanity enough to eſpouſe my cauſe, 'did you but know the juſtice of it: 'and I flatter myſelf that by your kind 'interpoſition, I may be able to rectify that fatal miſunderſtanding which 'hath made me wretched.'—'Sir,' ſaid Sophy, 'you appear like a gentleman, 'and I doubt not but your behaviour 'has been always ſuitable to your appearance; but you muſt excuſe me 'from undertaking any ſuch office in 'behalf of a perſon whom I have not 'the honour to know.'—'Madam,' anſwerered Peregrine, 'I hope Miſs Emy 'will juſtify my pretenſions to that character, notwithſtanding the myſtery 'of her diſpleaſure, which, upon my 'honour, I cannot for my ſoul explain.'—'Lord! Mr. Pickle,' ſaid Emilia, (who had by this time recollected herſelf) 'I never queſtioned your 'gallantry and taſte, but I am reſolved 'that you ſhall never have cauſe to exerciſe your talents at my expence; ſo 'that you teize yourſelf and me to no 'purpoſe!—Come, Sophy, let us walk 'home again.'—'Good God, Madam!' cried the lover with great emotion, 'why will you diſtract me with 'ſuch barbarous indifference? Stay, 'dear Emilia! I conjure you on my 'knees to ſtay and hear me: by all that 'is ſacred! I was not to blame; you 'muſt have been impoſed upon by ſome 'villain who envied my good fortune, 'and took ſome treacherous method to 'ruin my love.'

Miſs Sophy, who poſſeſſed a large ſtock of good-nature, and to whom her couſin had communicated the cauſe of her reſerve, ſeeing the young gentleman ſo much affected with that diſdain which ſhe knew to be feigned, laid hold on Emilia's ſleeve, ſaying with a ſmile, 'Not quite ſo faſt, Emily! I begin to 'perceive that this is a love quarrel, 'and therefore there may be hopes of a 'reconciliation; for I ſuppoſe both parties are open to conviction.'—'For my 'own part,' cried Peregrine with great eagerneſs, 'I appeal to Miſs Sophy's 'deciſion. But why do I ſay, appeal? 'Though I am conſcious of having

'com-

'committed no offence, I am ready to 'submit to any penance, let it be never 'so rigorous, that my fair inſlaver her- 'ſelf ſhall impoſe, provided it will en- 'title me to her favour and forgiveneſs 'at laſt.' Emily, well nigh overcome by this declaration, told him, that as ſhe taxed him with no guilt, ſhe expected no atonement; and preſſed her companion to return into town. But Sophy, who was too indulgent to her friend's real inclination, to comply with her requeſt, obſerved that the gentleman ſeemed ſo reaſonable in his conceſſions, ſhe began to think her couſin was in the wrong, and felt herſelf diſpoſed to act as umpire in the diſpute.

Overjoyed at this condeſcenſion, Mr. Pickle thanked her in the moſt rapturous terms, and in the tranſport of his expectation, kiſſed the hand of his kind mediatrix; a circumſtance which had a remarkable effect on the countenance of Emilia, who did not ſeem to reliſh the warmth of his acknowledgment.

After many ſupplications on one hand, and preſſing remonſtrances on the other, ſhe yielded at length; and turning to her lover, while her face was overſpread with bluſhes, 'Well, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'ſuppoſing I were to put the 'difference on that iſſue, how could you 'excuſe the ridiculous letter which you 'ſent to me from Wincheſter?' This expoſtulation introduced a diſcuſſion of the whole affair, in which all the circumſtances were canvaſſed; and Emilia ſtill affirmed, with great heat, that the letter muſt have been calculated to affront her; for ſhe could not ſuppoſe the author was ſo weak as to deſign it for any other purpoſe.

Peregrine, who ſtill retained in his memory the ſubſtance of this unlucky epiſtle, as well as the verſes which were incloſed, could recollect no particular expreſſion which could have juſtly given the leaſt umbrage; and therefore, in the agonies of perplexity, begged that the whole might be ſubmitted to the judgment of Miſs Sophy; and faithfully promiſed to ſtand to her award.

In ſhort, this propoſal was with ſeeming reluctance embraced by Emilia, and an appointment made to meet next day in the ſame place, whither both parties were deſired to come provided with their credentials, according to which definitive ſentence would be pronounced.

Our lover having ſucceeded thus far, overwhelmed Sophy with acknowledgments on account of her generous mediation, and in the courſe of their walk, which Emilia was now in no hurry to conclude, whiſpered a great many tender proteſtations in the ear of his miſtreſs, who, nevertheleſs, continued to act upon the reſerve, until her doubts ſhould be more fully reſolved.

Mr. Pickle having found means to amuſe them in the fields till the twilight, was obliged to wiſh them good even, after having obtained a ſolemn repetition of their promiſe to meet him at the appointed time and place; and then retreated to his apartment, where he ſpent the whole night in various conjectures on the ſubject of this letter, the Gordian knot of which he could by no means untie.

One while he imagined that ſome wag had played a trick upon his meſſenger, in conſequence of which Emilia had received a ſuppoſititious letter; but, upon farther reflection, he could not conceive the practicability of any ſuch deceit. Then he began to doubt the ſincerity of his miſtreſs; who, perhaps, had only made that an handle for diſcarding him, at the requeſt of ſome favoured rival: but his own integrity forbade him to harbour this mean ſuſpicion; and therefore he was again involved in the labyrinth of perplexity. Next day he waited on the rack of impatience for the hour of five in the afternoon; which no ſooner ſtruck, than he ordered Pipes to attend him, in caſe there ſhould be occaſion for his evidence; and repaired to the place of rendezvous, where he had not tarried five minutes before the ladies appeared. Mutual compliments being paſſed, and the attendants ſtationed at a convenient diſtance, Peregrine perſuaded them to ſit down upon the graſs, under the ſhade of a ſpreading oak, that they might be more at their eaſe; while he ſtretched himſelf at their feet, and deſired that the paper on which his doom depended might be examined. It was accordingly put into the hand of his fair arbitreſs, who read it immediately with an audible voice. The firſt two words of it were no ſooner pronounced, than he ſtarted with great emotion, and raiſed himſelf upon his hand and knee, in which poſture he liſtened to the reſt of the ſentence; then ſprung upon his feet in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and glowing with reſentment at the ſame time, exclaimed,

claimed, 'Hell and the devil! what's 'all that? Sure you make a jeſt of me, 'Madam.'—'Pray, Sir,' ſaid Sophy, 'give me the hearing for a few mo-'ments, and then urge what you ſhall 'think proper in your own defence.' Having thus cautioned him, ſhe proceeded; but before ſhe had finiſhed one half of the performance her gravity forſook her, and ſhe was ſeized with a violent fit of laughter, in which neither of the lovers could help joining, notwithſtanding the reſentment which at that inſtant prevailed in the breaſts of both. The judge, however, in a little time, reſumed her ſolemnity, and having read the remaining part of this curious epiſtle, all three continued ſtaring at each other alternately for the ſpace of half a minute, and then broke forth at the ſame inſtant in another paroxyſm of mirth. From this unanimous convulſion, one would have thought that both parties were extremely well pleaſed with the joke, yet this was by no means the caſe.

Emilia imagined, that notwithſtanding his affected ſurprize, her lover, in ſpite of himſelf, had renewed the laugh at her expence, and in ſo doing, applauded his own unmannerly ridicule. This ſuppoſition could not fail of raiſing and reviving her indignation, while Peregrine highly reſented the indignity with which he ſuppoſed himſelf treated, in their attempting to make him the dupe of ſuch a groſs and ludicrous artifice. This being the ſituation of their thoughts, their mirth was ſucceeded by a mutual gloomineſs of aſpect; and the judge, addreſſing herſelf to Mr. Pickle, aſked if he had any thing to offer why ſentence ſhould not be pronounced. 'Madam,' anſwered the culprit, 'I am 'ſorry to find myſelf ſo low in the opi-'nion of your couſin, as to be thought 'capable of being deceived by ſuch a 'ſhallow contrivance.'——'Nay, Sir,' ſaid Emilia, 'the contrivance is your 'own; and I cannot help admiring your 'confidence in imputing it to me.'—'Upon my honour, Miſs Emily,' reſumed our hero, 'you wrong my un-'derſtanding as well as my love, in ac-'cuſing me of having written ſuch a 'ſilly impertinent performance; the very 'appearance and addreſs of it is ſo un-'like the letter which I did myſelf the 'honour to write, that I dare ſay my 'man, even at this diſtance of time, 'will remember the difference.' So ſaying, he extended his voice, and beckoned to Pipes, who immediately drew near. His miſtreſs ſeemed to object to the evidence, by obſerving, that to be ſure Mr. Pipes had his cue; when Peregrine begging ſhe would ſpare him the mortification of conſidering him in ſuch a diſhonourable light, deſired his valet to examine the outſide of the letter, and recollect if it was the ſame which he had delivered to Miſs Gauntlet about two years ago. Pipes having taken a ſuperficial view of it, pulled up his breeches, ſaying, 'Mayhap it is, 'but we have made ſo many trips, and 'been in ſo many creeks and corners 'ſince that time, that I can't pretend 'to be certain; for I neither keep jour-'nal nor log-book of our proceedings.' Emilia commended him for his candour, at the ſame time darting a ſarcaſtick look at his maſter, as if ſhe thought he had tampered with his ſervant's integrity in vain; and Peregrine began to rave and curſe his fate, for having ſubjected him to ſuch mean ſuſpicion, atteſting heaven and earth in the moſt earneſt manner, that far from having compoſed and conveyed that ſtupid production, he had never ſeen it before, nor been privy to the leaſt circumſtance of the plan.

Pipes, now for the firſt time, perceived the miſchief which he had occaſioned, and moved with the tranſports of his maſter, for whom he had a moſt inviolable attachment, frankly declared he was ready to make oath that Mr. Pickle had no hand in the letter which he delivered. All three were amazed at this confeſſion, the meaning of which they could not comprehend. Peregrine, after ſome pauſe, leaped upon Pipes, and ſeizing him by the throat, exclaimed in an extaſy of rage, 'Raſcal! tell me this 'inſtant what became of the letter I in-'truſted to your care?' The patient valet, half ſtrangled as he was, ſquirted a collection of tobacco juice out of one corner of his mouth, and with great deliberation replied, 'Why, burnt it; 'you wouldn't have me give the young 'woman a thing that ſhook all in the 'wind in tatters, would you?' The ladies interpoſed in behalf of the diſtreſſed ſquire, from whom, by dint of queſtions which he had neither art nor inclinations to evade, they extorted an explanation of the whole affair.

Such

Such ridiculous simplicity and innocence of intention appeared in the composition of his expedient, that even the remembrance of all the chagrin which it had produced, could not rouze their indignation, or enable them to resist a third eruption of laughter, which they forthwith underwent.

Pipes was dismissed with many menacing injunctions, to beware of such conduct for the future; Emilia stood with a confusion of joy and tenderness in her countenance; Peregrine's eyes kindled into rapture; and when Miss Sophy pronounced the sentence of reconciliation, advanced to his mistress, saying, 'Truth is mighty, and will 'prevail!' then clasping her in his arms, very impudently ravished a kiss, which she had not power to refuse. Nay, such was the impulse of his joy, that he took the same freedom with the lips of Sophy; calling her his kind mediatrix and guardian angel; and behaved with such extravagance of transport, as plainly evinced the fervour and sincerity of his love.

I shall not pretend to repeat the tender protestations that were uttered on one side, or describe the bewitching glances of approbation with which they were received on the other; suffice it to say, that the endearing intimacy of their former connexion was instantly renewed, and Sophy, who congratulated them upon the happy termination of their quarrel, favoured with their mutual confidence. In consequence of this happy pacification, they deliberated upon the means of seeing each other often; and as he could not, without some previous introduction, visit her openly at the house of her relation, they agreed to meet every afternoon in the park till the next assembly, at which he would solicit her as a partner, and she be unengaged, in expectation of his request. By this connection he would be intitled to visit her next day, and thus an avowed correspondence would of course commence. This plan was actually put in execution, and attended with a circumstance which had well nigh produced some mischievous consequence, had not Peregrine's good fortune been superior to his discretion.

CHAP. XXIV.

HE ATCHIEVES AN ADVENTURE AT THE ASSEMBLY, AND QUARRELS WITH HIS GOVERNOR.

AT the assembly were no fewer than three gentlemen of fortune, who rivalled our lover in his passion for Emilia, and who had severally begged the honour of dancing with her upon that occasion. She had excused herself to each, on pretence of a slight indisposition that she foresaw would detain her from the ball, and desired they would provide themselves with other partners. Obliged to admit her excuse, they accordingly followed her advice; and after they had engaged themselves beyond the power of retracting, had the mortification to see her there unclaimed.

They in their turn made up to her, and expressed their surprize and concern at finding her in the assembly unprovided, after she had declined their invitation; but she told them that her cold had forsaken her since she had the pleasure of seeing them, and that she would rely upon accident for a partner. Just as she pronounced these words to the last of the three, Peregrine advanced as an utter stranger, bowed with great respect, told her he understood she was unengaged, and would think himself highly honoured in being accepted as her partner for the night; and he had the good fortune to succeed in his application.

As they were by far the handsomest and best accomplished couple in the room, they could not fail of attracting the notice and admiration of the spectators, which inflamed the jealousy of his three competitors, who immediately entered into a conspiracy against this gaudy stranger; whom, as their rival, they resolved to affront in publick. Pursuant to the plan which they projected for this purpose, the first country-dance was no sooner concluded, than one of them, with his partner, took place of Peregrine and his mistress, contrary to the regulation of the ball. Our lover imputing his behaviour to inadvertency, informed the gentleman of his mistake, and civilly desired he would rectify his error. The other told him, in an imperious tone, that he wanted none of his advice, and bade him mind his own affairs. Peregrine answered with some warmth, and insisted upon his right; a dispute commenced, high words ensued, in the course of which, our impetuous youth

youth hearing himself reviled with the appellation of scoundrel, pulled off his antagonist's periwig, and flung it in his face. The ladies immediately shrieked, the gentlemen interposed, Emilia was seized with a fit of trembling, and conducted to her seat by her youthful admirer, who begged pardon for having discomposed her, and vindicated what he had done, by representing the necessity he was under to resent the provocation he had received.

Though she could not help owning the justice of his plea, she was not the less concerned at the dangerous situation in which he had involved himself; and in the utmost consternation and anxiety, insisted upon going directly home: he could not resist her importunities, and her cousin being determined to accompany her, he escorted them to their lodgings, where he wished them good night, after having, in order to quiet their apprehensions, protested that if his opponent was satisfied, he should never take any step towards the prosecution of the quarrel. Meanwhile the assembly-room became a scene of tumult and uproar; the person who conceived himself injured, seeing Peregrine retire, struggled with his companions, in order to pursue and take satisfaction of our hero, whom he loaded with terms of abuse, and challenged to single combat.

The director of the ball held a consultation with all the subscribers who were present, and it was determined by a majority of votes, that the two gentlemen who had occasioned the disturbance should be desired to withdraw. This resolution being signified to one of the parties then present, he made some difficulty of complying, but was persuaded to submit by his two confederates, who accompanied him to the street-door, where he was met by Peregrine on his return to the assembly.

This cholerick gentleman, who was a country squire, no sooner saw his rival, than he began to brandish his cudgel in a menacing posture; when our adventurous youth stepping back with one foot, laid his hand upon the hilt of his sword, which he drew half way out of the scabbard. This attitude, and the sight of the blade, which glistened by moon-light in his face, checked, in some sort, the ardour of his assailant, who desired he would lay aside his toaster, and take a bout with him at equal arms. Peregrine, who was an expert cudgel-player, accepted the invitation: then exchanging weapons with Pipes, who stood behind him, put himself in a posture of defence, and received the attack of his adversary, who struck at random without either skill or œconomy. Pickle could have beaten the cudgel out of his hand at the first blow, but as in that case he would have been obliged in honour to give immediate quarter, he resolved to discipline his antagonist without endeavouring to disable him, until he should be heartily satisfied with the vengeance he had taken. With this view he returned the salute, and raised such a clatter about the squire's pate, that one who had heard without seeing the application, would have mistaken the sound for that of a salt-box, in the hand of a dextrous Merry-Andrew belonging to one of the booths at Bartholomew-Fair. Neither was this salutation confined to his head; his shoulders, arms, thighs, ankles, and ribs, were visited with amazing rapidity, while Tom Pipes sounded the charge through his fist. Peregrine, tired with this exercise, which had almost bereft his enemy of sensation, at last struck the decisive blow, in consequence of which the squire's weapon flew out of his grasp, and he allowed our hero to be the better man. Satisfied with this acknowledgment, the victor walked up stairs with such elevation of spirits, and insolence of mien, that nobody chose to intimate the resolution which had been taken in his absence: there having amused himself for some time in beholding the country-dances, he retreated to his lodging, where he indulged himself all night in the contemplation of his own success.

Next day in the forenoon he went to visit his partner; and the gentleman at whose house she lived, having been informed of his family and condition, received him with great courtesy, as the acquaintance of his Cousin Gauntlet, and invited him to dinner that same day.

Emilia was remarkably well pleased, when she understood the issue of his adventure, which began to make some noise in town, even though it deprived her of a wealthy admirer. The squire having consulted an attorney about the nature of the dispute, in hopes of being able to prosecute Peregrine for an assault, found little encouragement to go

to

to law: he therefore reſolved to pocket the inſult and injury he had undergone, and to diſcontinue his addreſſes to her who was the cauſe of both.

Our lover being told by his miſtreſs, that ſhe propoſed to ſtay a fortnight longer at Windſor, he determined to enjoy her company all that time, and then to give her a convoy to the houſe of her mother, whom he longed to ſee. In conſequence of this plan, he every day contrived ſome freſh party of pleaſure for the ladies, to whom he had by this time free acceſs; and intangled himſelf ſo much in the ſnares of love, that he ſeemed quite enchanted by Emilia's charms, which were now indeed almoſt irreſiſtible. While he thus heedleſsly roved in the flowery paths of pleaſure, his governor at Oxford, alarmed at the unuſual duration of his abſence, went to the young gentlemen who had accompanied him in his excurſion, and very earneſtly entreated them to tell him what they knew concerning his pupil; they accordingly gave him an account of the rencounter that happened between Peregrine and Miſs Emily Gauntlet in the caſtle, and mentioned circumſtances ſufficient to convince him that his charge was very dangerouſly engaged.

Far from having an authority over Peregrine, Mr. Jolter durſt not even diſoblige him; therefore, inſtead of writing to the commodore, he took horſe immediately, and that ſame night reached Windſor, where he found his ſtray ſheep very much ſurprized at his unexpected arrival.

The governor deſiring to have ſome ſerious converſation with him, they ſhut themſelves up in an apartment; when Jolter, with great ſolemnity, communicated the cauſe of his journey, which was no other than his concern for his pupil's welfare; and very gravely undertook to prove by mathematical demonſtration, that this intrigue, if farther purſued, would tend to the young gentleman's ruin and diſgrace. This ſingular propoſition raiſed the curioſity of Peregrine, who promiſed to yield all manner of attention, and deſired him to begin without farther preamble.

The governor, encouraged by this appearance of candour, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in finding him ſo open to conviction, and told him he would proceed upon geometrical principles. Then hemming thrice, obſerved, that no mathematical enquiries could be carried on, except upon certain *data*, or conceſſions to truths, that were ſelf-evident; and therefore he muſt crave his aſſent to a few axioms, which he was ſure Mr. Pickle would ſee no reaſon to diſpute. 'In the firſt place, then,' ſaid he, 'you 'will grant, I hope, that youth and 'diſcretion are with reſpect to each other 'as two parallel lines, which, though 'infinitely produced, remain ſtill equi-'diſtant, and will never coincide; then 'you muſt allow, that paſſion acts upon 'the human mind, in a ratio compounded of the acuteneſs of ſenſe, and conſtitutional heat; and, thirdly, you will 'not deny, that the angle of remorſe is 'equal to that of precipitation. Theſe '*poſtulata* being admitted,' added he, taking pen, ink, and paper, and drawing a parallelogram, 'let youth be repreſented by the right line *a*, *b*, and 'diſcretion by another right line *c*, *d*, 'parallel to the former. Compleat the 'parallelogram *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, and let the 'point of interſection, *b*, repreſent perdition. Let paſſion, repreſented under the letter *c*, have a motion in the 'direction *c*, *a*. At the ſame time, let 'another motion be communicated to it 'in the direction *c*, *d*, it will proceed in 'the diagonal *c*, *b*, and deſcribe it in 'the ſame time that it would have deſcribed the ſide *c*, *a*, by the firſt motion, or the ſide, *c*, *d*, by the ſecond. 'To underſtand the demonſtration of 'this corollary, we muſt premiſe this 'obvious principle, that when a body 'is acted upon by a motion of power 'parallel to a right line given in poſition, this power, or motion, has no 'effect to cauſe the body to approach 'towards that line, or recede from it, 'but to move in a line parallel to a 'right line only; as appears from the 'ſecond law of motion: therefore, *c*, *a*, 'being parallel to *d*, *b*——'

His pupil having liſtened to him thus far, could contain himſelf no longer, but interrupted the inveſtigation with a loud laugh, and told him that his *poſtulata* put him in mind of a certain learned and ingenious gentleman, who undertook to diſprove the exiſtence of natural evil, and aſked no other *datum* on which to found his demonſtration, but an acknowledgment that *every thing that is, is right*. 'You may, there-'fore,' ſaid he, in a peremptory tone, 'ſpare yourſelf the trouble of torturing

'your invention; for, after all, I am 'pretty certain that I shall want capa-'city to comprehend the discussion of 'your lemma, and consequently be 'obliged to refuse my assent to your de-'duction.'

Mr. Jolter was disconcerted at this declaration, and so much offended at Peregrine's disrespect, that he could not help expressing his displeasure, by telling him flatly, that he was too violent and headstrong to be reclaimed by reason and gentle means; that he (the tutor) must be obliged, in the discharge of his duty and conscience, to inform the commodore of his pupil's imprudence; that if the laws of this realm were effectual, they would take cognizance of the gipsy who had led him astray; and observed, by way of contrast, that if such a preposterous intrigue had happened in France, she would have been clapped up in a convent two years ago.

Our lover's eyes kindled with indignation, when he heard his mistress treated with such irreverence; he could scarce refrain from inflicting manual chastisement on the blasphemer, whom he reproached in his wrath as an arrogant pedant, without either delicacy or sense, and cautioned him against using any such impertinent freedoms with his affairs for the future, on pain of incurring more severe effects of his resentment.

Mr. Jolter, who entertained very high notions of that veneration to which he thought himself intitled by his character and qualifications, had not bore, without repining, his want of influence and authority over his pupil, against whom he cherished a particular grudge, ever since the adventure of the painted eye; and therefore, on this occasion, his politick forbearance had been overcome by the accumulated motives of his disgust. Indeed, he would have resigned his charge with disdain, had not he been encouraged to persevere, by the hopes of a good living which Trunnion had in his gift, or known how to dispose of himself for the present to better advantage.

CHAP. XXV.

HE RECEIVES A LETTER FROM HIS AUNT, BREAKS WITH THE COMMODORE, AND DISOBLIGES THE LIEUTENANT, WHO NEVERTHELESS UNDERTAKES HIS CAUSE.

MEANWHILE he quitted the youth in high dugeon, and that same evening dispatched a letter for Mrs. Trunnion, which was dictated by the first transports of his passion, and of course replete with severe animadversions on the misconduct of his pupil.

In consequence of this complaint, it was not long before Peregrine received an epistle from his aunt; wherein she commemorated all the circumstances of the commodore's benevolence towards him, when he was helpless and forlorn, deserted and abandoned by his own parents; upbraided him for his misbehaviour, and neglect of his tutor's advice; and insisted upon his breaking off all intercourse with that girl who had seduced his youth, as he valued the continuance of her affection and her husband's regard.

As our lover's own ideas of generosity were extremely refined, he was shocked at the indelicate insinuations of Mrs. Trunnion, and felt all the pangs of an ingenuous mind that labours under obligations to a person whom it contemns. Far from obeying her injunction, or humbling himself by a submissive answer to her reprehension, his resentment buoyed him up above every selfish consideration; he resolved to attach himself to Emilia, if possible, more than ever; and although he was tempted to punish the officiousness of Jolter, by recriminating upon his life and conversation, he generously withstood the impulse of his passion, because he knew that his governor had no other dependance than the good opinion of the commodore. He could not, however, digest in silence the severe expostulations of his aunt; to which he replied by the following letter, addressed to her husband.

'SIR,

'THOUGH my temper could ne-'ver stoop to offer, nor, I be-'lieve, your disposition deign to receive, 'that gross incense which the illiberal 'only expect, and none but the base-'minded condescend to pay; my senti-'ments have always done justice to your 'generosity, and my intention scrupu-'lously adhered to the dictates of my 'duty,

'duty. Conſcious of this integrity of 'heart, I cannot but ſeverely feel your 'lady's unkind (I will not call it un-'generous) recapitulation of the favours 'I have received; and as I take it for 'granted, that you knew and approved 'of her letter, I muſt beg leave to aſſure 'you, that far from being ſwayed by 'menaces and reproach, I am deter-'mined to embrace the moſt abject ex-'tremity of fortune, rather than ſubmit 'to ſuch diſhonourable compulſion. 'When I am treated in a more delicate 'and reſpectful manner, I hope I ſhall 'behave as becomes, Sir, your obliged

'P. PICKLE.'

The commodore, who did not under-ſtand thoſe nice diſtinctions of behavi-our, and dreaded the conſequence of Peregrine's amour, againſt which he was ſtrangely prepoſſeſſed, ſeemed exaſpe-rated at the inſolence and obſtinacy of this adopted ſon; to whoſe epiſtle he wrote the following anſwer, which was tranſmitted by the hands of Hatchway, who had orders to bring the delinquent along with him to the garriſon.

'HARK YE, CHILD!

'YOU need not bring your fine 'ſpeeches to bear upon me. 'You only expend your ammunition to 'no purpoſe. Your aunt told you no-'thing but truth; for it is always fair 'and honourable to be above board, 'd'ye ſee. I am informed as how you are 'in chace of a painted galley, which will 'decoy you upon the flats of deſtruc-'tion, unleſs you keep a better look-'out, and a ſurer reckoning, than you 'have hitherto done; and I have ſent 'Jack Hatchway to ſee how the land 'lies, and warn you of your danger: 'if ſo be as you will put about ſhip, 'and let him ſteer you into this har-'bour, you ſhall meet with a ſafe 'birth and friendly reception; but if 'you refuſe to alter your courſe, you 'cannot expect any farther aſſiſtance 'from yours, as you behave,

'HAWSER TRUNNION.'

Peregrine was equally piqued and diſ-concerted at the receipt of this letter, which was quite different from what he had expected; and declared in a reſolute tone to the lieutenant, who brought it, that he might return as ſoon as he pleaſed, for he was determined to conſult his own inclination, and remain for ſome time longer where he was.

Hatchway endeavoured to perſuade him by all the arguments which his ſa-gacity and friendſhip could ſupply, to ſhew a little more deference for the old man, who was by this time rendered fretful and peeviſh by the gout, which now hindered him from enjoying him-ſelf as uſual, and who might, in his paſſion, take ſome ſtep very much to the detriment of the young gentleman, whom he had hitherto conſidered as his own ſon. Among other remonſtrances, Jack obſerved, that mayhap Peregrine had got under Emilia's hatches, and did not chuſe to ſet her adrift; and if that was the caſe, he himſelf would take charge of the veſſel, and ſee her cargo ſafely de-livered; for he had a reſpect for the young woman; and his needle pointed towards matrimony; and as, in all pro-bability, ſhe could not be much the worſe for the wear, he would make ſhift to ſcud through life with her under an eaſy ſail.

Our lover was deaf to all his admo-nitions, and having thanked him for this laſt inſtance of his complaiſance, repeated his reſolution of adhering to his firſt purpoſe. Hatchway having pro-fited ſo little by mild exhortations, aſ-ſumed a more peremptory aſpect, and plainly told him he neither could nor would go home without him; ſo he had beſt make immediate preparation for the voyage.

Peregrine made no other reply to this declaration, than by a contemptuous ſmile, and roſe from his ſeat in order to retire; upon which the lieutenant ſtart-ed up, and poſting himſelf by the door, proteſted with ſome menacing geſtures, that he would not ſuffer him to run a-head neither. The other, incenſed at his preſumption in attempting to detain him by force, tripped up his wooden leg, and laid him on his back in a mo-ment; then walked deliberately towards the park, in order to indulge his reflec-tion, which at that time teemed with diſagreeable thoughts. He had not proceeded two hundred ſteps, when he heard ſomething blowing and ſtamp-ing behind him; and looking back, perceived the lieutenant at his heels, with rage and indignation in his coun-

tenance. This exasperated seaman, impatient of the affront he had received, and forgetting all the circumstances of their former intimacy, advanced with great eagerness to his old friend, saying, 'Look ye, brother, you're a saucy boy, 'and if you was at sea, I would have 'your backside brought to the davit for 'your disobedience; but as we are on 'shore, you and I must crack a pistol 'at one another; here is a brace, you 'shall take which you please.'

Peregrine, upon recollection, was sorry for having been laid under the necessity of disobliging honest Jack, and very frankly asked his pardon for what he had done. But this condescension was misinterpreted by the other, who refused any other satisfaction but that which an officer ought to claim; and, with some irreverend expressions, asked if Perry was afraid of his bacon. The youth, inflamed at this unjust insinuation, darted a ferocious look at the challenger, told him he had paid but too much regard to his infirmities, and bid him walk forward to the park, where he would soon convince him of his error, if he thought his concession proceeded from fear.

About this time they were overtaken by Pipes, who having heard the lieutenant's fall, and seen him pocket his pistols, suspected that there was a quarrel in the case, and followed him with a view of protecting his master. Peregrine seeing him arrive, and guessing his intention, assumed an air of serenity, and pretending that he had left his handkerchief at the inn, ordered his man to go thither and fetch it to him in the park, where he would find them at his return. This command was twice repeated before Tom would take any other notice of the message, except by shaking his head; but being urged with many threats and curses to obedience, he gave them to understand that he knew their drift too well to trust them by themselves. 'As for you, Lieute-'nant Hatchway,' said he, 'I have 'been your ship-mate, and know you 'to be a sailor, that's enough; and as 'for master, I know him to be as good 'a man as ever stepped betwixt stem 'and stern; whereby, if you have any 'thing to say to him, I am your man, 'as the saying is. Here's my sapling, 'and I don't value your crackers of a 'rope's end.' This oration, the longest that ever Pipes was known to make, he concluded with a flourish of his cudgel, and enforced with such determined refusals to leave them, that they found it impossible to bring the cause to mortal arbitrement at that time, and strolled about the park in profound silence; during which, Hatchway's indignation subsiding, he all of a sudden thrust out his hand as an advance to reconciliation, which being cordially shaken by Peregrine, a general pacification ensued; and was followed by a consultation about the means of extricating the youth from his present perplexity. Had his disposition been like that of most other young men, it would have been no difficult task to overcome his difficulties; but such was the obstinacy of his pride, that he deemed himself bound in honour to resent the letters he had received; and instead of submitting to the pleasure of the commodore, expected an acknowledgment from him, without which he would listen to no terms of accommodation. 'Had I been his own 'son,' said he, 'I should have bore his 'reproof, and sued for forgiveness; 'but knowing myself to be on the foot-'ing of an orphan, who depends en-'tirely upon his benevolence, I am jea-'lous of every thing that can be con-'strued into disrespect, and insist upon 'being treated with the most punctual 'regard. I shall now make applica-'tion to my father, who is obliged to 'provide for me by the ties of nature, 'as well as the laws of the land; and 'if he shall refuse to do me justice, I 'can never want employment while 'men are required for his majesty's ser-'vice.'

The lieutenant, alarmed at this intimation, begged he would take no new step until he should hear from him; and that very evening set out for the garrison, where he gave Trunnion an account of the miscarriage of his negociation; told him how highly Peregrine was offended at the letter; communicated the young gentleman's sentiments and resolution; and finally assured him, that unless he should think proper to ask pardon for the offence he had committed, he would, in all appearance, never more behold the face of his godson.

The old commodore was utterly confounded at this piece of intelligence: he had expected all the humility of obedience and contrition from the young man;

man; and instead of that, received nothing but the most indignant opposition, and even found himself in the circumstances of an offender, obliged to make atonement, or forfeit all correspondence with his favourite. These insolent conditions at first threw him into an agony of wrath, and he vented execrations with such rapidity, that he left himself no time to breathe, and had almost been suffocated with his choler. He inveighed bitterly against the ingratitude of Peregrine, whom he mentioned with many opprobrious epithets, and swore that he ought to be keel-hauled for his presumption; but when he began to reflect more coolly upon the spirit of the young gentleman, which had already manifested itself on many occasions, and listened to the suggestions of Hatchway, whom he had always considered as an oracle in his way, his resentment abated, and he determined to take Perry into favour again; this placability being not a little facilitated by Jack's narrative of our hero's intrepid behaviour at the assembly, as well as in the contest with him in the park. But still this plaguy amour occurred like a bug-bear to his imagination; for he held it as an infallible maxim, that woman was an eternal source of misery to man. Indeed, this apothegm he seldom repeated since his marriage, except in the company of a very few intimates, to whose secresy and discretion he could trust. Finding Jack himself at a nonplus in the affair of Emilia, he consulted Mrs. Trunnion, who was equally surprized and offended, when she understood that her letter did not produce the desired effect; and after having imputed the youth's obstinacy to his uncle's unseasonable indulgence, had recourse to the advice of the parson, who still with an eye to his friend's advantage, counselled them to send the young gentleman on his travels, in the course of which he would, in all probability, forget the amusements of his greener years. The proposal was judicious, and immediately approved; when Trunnion going into his closet, after divers efforts, produced the following billet, with which Jack departed for Windsor that same afternoon.

'MY GOOD LAD,

'IF I gave offence in my last letter, 'I'm sorry for't, d'ye see; I thought 'it was the likeliest way to bring you 'up; but, in time to come, you shall 'have a larger swing of cable. When 'you can spare time, I shall be glad if 'you will make a short trip, and see 'your aunt, and him who is your lov-'ing godfather and humble servant,

'HAWSER TRUNNION.

'P. S. If you want money, you 'may draw upon me payable at sight.'

CHAP. XXVI.

HE BECOMES MELANCHOLY AND DESPONDENT; IS FAVOURED WITH A CONDESCENDING LETTER FROM HIS UNCLE; RECONCILES HIMSELF TO HIS GOVERNOR, AND SETS OUT WITH EMILIA AND HER FRIEND FOR MRS. GAUNTLET'S HOUSE.

PEREGRINE, fortified as he was with pride and indignation, did not fail to feel the smarting suggestions of his present situation: after having lived so long in an affluent and imperious manner, he could ill brook the thoughts of submitting to the mortifying exigencies of life. All the gaudy schemes of pomp and pleasure, which his luxuriant imagination had formed, began to dissolve; a train of melancholy ideas took possession of his thoughts; and the prospect of losing Emilia was not the least part of his affliction. Though he endeavoured to suppress the chagrin that preyed upon his heart, he could not conceal the disturbance of his mind from the penetration of that amiable young lady, who sympathized with him in her heart, though she could not give her tongue the liberty of asking the cause of his disorder: for, notwithstanding all the ardour of his addresses, he never could obtain from her the declaration of a mutual flame; because, though he had hitherto treated her with the utmost reverence of respect, he had never once mentioned the final aim of his passion. However honourable she supposed it to be, she had discernment enough to foresee, that vanity or interest co-operating with the levity of youth, might one day deprive her of her lover, and she was too proud to give him any handle of exulting at her expence. Although he was received by her with the most distinguished civility, and even an intimacy of friendship, all his solicitations could never

never extort from her an acknowledgment of love: on the contrary, being of a gay disposition, she sometimes coquetted with other admirers, that his attention thus whetted might never abate, and that he might see she had other resources, in case he should flag in his affection.

This being the prudential plan on which she acted, it cannot be supposed that she would condescend to inquire into the state of his thoughts, when she saw him thus affected; but she, nevertheless, imposed that task on her cousin and confidante, who, as they walked together in the park, observed that he seemed to be out of humour. When this is the case, such a question generally increases the disease; at least it had that effect upon Peregrine, who replied somewhat peevishly, 'I assure you, Ma-'dam, you never was more mistaken in 'your observations.'—'I think so too,' said Emilia, 'for I never saw Mr. 'Pickle in higher spirits!' This ironical encomium compleated his confusion; he affected to smile, but it was a smile of anguish, and in his heart he cursed the vivacity of both. He could not for his soul recollect himself, so as to utter one connected sentence; and the suspicion that they observed every circumstance of his behaviour, threw such a damp on his spirits, that he was quite overwhelmed with shame and resentment, when Sophy, casting her eyes towards the gate, said, 'Yonder is your 'servant, Mr. Pickle, with another 'man who seems to have a wooden 'leg.' Peregrine started at this intelligence, and immediately underwent sundry changes of complexion, knowing that his fate, in a great measure, depended upon the information he would receive from his friend.

Hatchway advancing to the company, after a brace of sea bows to the ladies, took the youth aside, and put the commodore's letter into his hand; which threw him into such an agitation, that he could scarce pronounce, 'Ladies, 'will you give me leave?' When, in consequence of their permission, he attempted to open the billet, he fumbled with such manifest disorder, that his mistress, who watched his motions, began to think there was something very interesting in the message; and so much was she affected with his concern, that she was fain to turn her head another way, and wipe the tears from her lovely eyes.

Meanwhile Peregrine no sooner read the first sentence than his countenance, which before was overcast with a deep gloom, began to be lighted up, and every feature, unbending by degrees, he recovered his serenity. Having perused the letter, his eyes sparkling with joy and gratitude, he hugged the lieutenant in his arms, and presented him to the ladies as one of his best friends. Jack met with a most gracious reception, and shook Emilia by the hand, telling her, with the familiar appellation of *old acquaintance*, that he did not care how soon he was master of such another clean-going frigate as herself.

The whole company partook of this favourable change that evidently appeared in our lover's recollection, and enlivened his conversation with such an uncommon flow of sprightliness and good-humour, as even made an impression on the iron countenance of Pipes himself, who actually smiled with satisfaction as he walked behind them.

The evening being pretty far advanced, they directed their course homeward; and while the valet attended Hatchway to the inn, Peregrine escorted the ladies to their lodging, where he owned the justness of Sophy's remark, in saying he was out of humour, and told them he had been extremely chagrined at a difference which had happened between him and his uncle, to whom (by the letter which they had seen him receive) he now found himself happily reconciled.

Having received their congratulations, and declined staying to sup with them, on account of the longing desire he had to converse with his friend Jack, he took his leave, and repaired to the inn, where Hatchway informed him of every thing that had happened in the garrison upon his representations. Far from being disgusted, he was perfectly well pleased with the prospect of going aboad, which flattered his vanity and ambition, gratified his thirst after knowledge, and indulged that turn for observation, for which he had been remarkable from his most tender years. Neither did he believe a short absence would tend to the prejudice of his love, but, on the contrary, enhance the value of his heart, because he should return better accomplished, and consequently a more welcome

come offering to his miſtreſs. Elevated with theſe ſentiments, his heart dilated with joy, and the ſluices of his natural benevolence being opened by this happy turn of his affairs, he ſent his compliments to Mr. Jolter, to whom he had not ſpoken during a whole week, and deſired he would favour Mr. Hatchway and him with his company at ſupper.

The governor was not weak enough to decline this invitation; in conſequence of which he forthwith appeared, and was cordially welcomed by the relenting pupil, who expreſſed his ſorrow for the miſunderſtanding which had prevailed between them, and aſſured him that for the future he would avoid giving him any juſt cauſe of complaint. Jolter, who did not want affection, was melted by this acknowledgment, which he could not have expected, and earneſtly proteſted, that his chief ſtudy had always been, and ever ſhould be, to promote Mr. Pickle's intereſt and happineſs.

The beſt part of the night being ſpent in the circulation of a chearful glaſs, the company broke up; and next morning Peregrine went out with a view of making his miſtreſs acquainted with his uncle's intention of ſending him out of the kingdom for his improvement, and of ſaying every thing which he thought neceſſary for the intereſt of his love. He found her at breakfaſt with her couſin; and as he was very full of the ſubject of his viſit, had ſcarce fixed himſelf in his ſeat, when he brought it upon the carpet, by aſking with a ſmile, if the ladies had any commands for Paris. Emilia at this queſtion began to ſtare, and her confidante deſired to know who was going thither. He no ſooner gave them to underſtand, that he himſelf intended in a ſhort time to viſit that capital, than his miſtreſs with great precipitation wiſhed him a good journey, and affected to talk with indifference about the pleaſures he would enjoy in France: but when he ſeriouſly aſſured Sophy, who aſked if he was in earneſt, that his uncle actually inſiſted upon his making a ſhort tour, the tears guſhed in poor Emilia's eyes, and ſhe was at great pains to conceal her concern, by obſerving that the tea was ſo ſcalding hot, as to make her eyes water. This pretext was too thin to impoſe upon her lover, or even deceive the obſervation of her friend Sophy, who, after breakfaſt, took an opportunity of quitting the room.

Thus left by themſelves, Peregrine imparted to her what he had learned of the commodore's intention, without, however, mentioning a ſyllable of his being offended at their correſpondence; and accompanied his information with ſuch fervent vows of eternal conſtancy, and ſolemn promiſes of a ſpeedy return, that Emily's heart, which had been invaded by a ſuſpicion that this ſcheme of travelling was the effect of her lover's inconſtancy, began to be more at eaſe; and ſhe could not help ſignifying her approbation of his deſign.

This affair being amicably compromiſed, he aſked how ſoon ſhe propoſed to ſet out for her mother's houſe; and underſtanding that her departure was fixed for next day but one, and that her couſin Sophy intended to accompany her in her father's chariot, he repeated his intention of attending her. In the mean time he diſmiſſed his governor and the lieutenant to the garriſon, with his compliments to his aunt and the commodore, and a faithful promiſe of his being with them in ſix days at fartheſt.

Theſe previous meaſures being taken, he, attended by Pipes, ſet out with the ladies; and they had alſo a convoy for twelve miles from Sophy's father, who, at parting, recommended them piouſly to the care of Peregrine, with whom, by this time, he was perfectly well acquainted.

CHAP. XXVII.

THEY MEET WITH A DREADFUL ALARM ON THE ROAD; ARRIVE AT THEIR JOURNEY'S END. PEREGRINE IS INTRODUCED TO EMILY'S BROTHER; THESE TWO YOUNG GENTLEMEN MISUNDERSTAND EACH OTHER. PICKLE DEPARTS FOR THE GARRISON.

AS they travelled at an eaſy rate, they had performed ſomething more than one-half of their journey when they were benighted near an inn, at which they reſolved to lodge; the accommodation was very good, they ſupped together with great mirth and enjoyment, and it was not till after he had been warned by the yawns of the ladies, that he conducted them to their apart-

ment;

ment; where wiſhing them good night, he retired to his own, and went to reſt.

The houſe was crouded with country people who had been at a neighbouring fair, and now regaled themſelves with ale and tobacco in the yard; ſo that their conſideration, which at any time was but ſlender, being now overwhelmed by this debauch, they ſtaggered into their reſpective kennels, and left a lighted candle ſticking to one of the wooden pillars that ſupported the gallery. The flame in a little time laid hold on the wood, which was as dry as tinder, and the whole gallery was on fire, when Peregrine ſuddenly waked, and found himſelf almoſt ſuffocated. He ſprung up in an inſtant, ſlipped on his breeches, and throwing open the door of his chamber, ſaw the whole entry in a blaze.

Heavens! what were the emotions of his ſoul, when he beheld the volumes of flame and ſmoke rolling towards the room where his dear Emilia lay! Regardleſs of his own danger, he darted himſelf through the thickeſt of the gloom, when knocking hard, and calling at the ſame time to the ladies, with the moſt anxious intreaty to be admitted; the door was opened by Emilia in her ſhift, who aſked, with the utmoſt trepidation, what was the matter? He made no reply, but ſnatching her up in his arms, like another Æneas, bore her through the flames to a place of ſafety; where leaving her before ſhe could recollect herſelf, or pronounce one word, but 'Alas! my couſin Sophy!' he flew back to the reſcue of that young lady, and found her already delivered by Pipes; who having been alarmed by the ſmell of fire, had got up, ruſhed immediately to the chamber where he knew theſe companions lodged, and (Emily being ſaved by her lover) brought off Miſs Sophy with the loſs of his own ſhock-head of hair, which was ſinged off in his retreat.

By this time the whole inn was alarmed; every lodger, as well as ſervant, exerted himſelf, in order to ſtop the progreſs of this calamity; and there being a well-repleniſhed horſe-pond in the yard, in leſs than an hour the fire was totally extinguiſhed, without having done any other damage than of conſuming about two yards of the wooden gallery.

All this time our young gentleman cloſely attended his fair charge, each of whom had ſwooned with apprehenſion; but as their conſtitutions were good, and their ſpirits not eaſily diſſipated, when upon reflection they found themſelves and their company ſafe, and that the flames were happily quenched, the tumult of their fears ſubſided, they put on their cloaths, recovered their good-humour, and began to rally each other on the trim in which they had been ſecured. Sophy obſerved, that now Mr. Pickle had an indiſputable claim to her couſin's affection; and therefore ſhe ought to lay aſide all affected reſerve for the future, and frankly avow the ſentiments of her heart. Emily retorted the argument, putting her in mind, that by the ſame claim Mr. Pipes was intitled to the like return from her. Her friend admitted the force of the concluſion, provided ſhe could not find means of ſatisfying her deliverer in another ſhape; and turning to the valet, who happened to be preſent, aſked if his heart was not otherwiſe engaged. Tom, who did not conceive the meaning of the queſtion, ſtood ſilent according to cuſtom; and the interrogation being repeated, anſwered with a grin, 'Heart-whole as a biſcuit, I'll 'aſſure you, Miſtreſs.'—'What?' ſaid Emilia, 'have you never been in love, 'Thomas?'—'Yes, forſooth,' replied the valet without heſitation, 'ſometimes 'of a morning.' Peregrine could not help laughing, and his miſtreſs looked a little diſconcerted at this blunt repartee; while Sophy ſlipping a purſe into his hand, told him there was ſomething to purchaſe a periwig. Tom having conſulted his maſter's eyes, refuſed the preſent, ſaying, 'No, thank ye as much 'as if I did.' And though ſhe inſiſted upon his putting it in his pocket, as a ſmall teſtimony of her gratitude, he could not be prevailed upon to avail himſelf of her generoſity; but following her to the other end of the room, thruſt it into her ſleeve without ceremony, exclaiming, 'I'll be damned to 'hell if I do!' Peregrine having checked him for his booriſh behaviour, ſent him out of the room, and begged that Miſs Sophy would not endeavour to debauch the morals of his ſervant; who, rough and uncultivated as he was, had ſenſe enough to perceive that he had no pretenſion to any ſuch acknowledgment. But ſhe argued with great vehemence, that ſhe ſhould never be able to make an acknowledgment adequate to the ſervice

Stothard del. Walker Sculp.

Publish'd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Aug.t 4. 1781.

vice he had done her, and that she should never be perfectly easy in her own mind, until she found some opportunity of manifesting the sense she had of the obligation. 'I do not pretend,' said she, 'to reward Mr. Pipes; but I shall be 'absolutely unhappy, unless I am allowed to give him some token of my 'regard.'

Peregrine, thus earnestly solicited, desired, that since she was bent upon displaying her generosity, she would not bestow upon him any pecuniary gratification, but honour him with some trinket, as a mark of consideration; because he himself had such a particular value for the fellow, on account of his attachment and fidelity, that he should be sorry to see him treated on the footing of a common mercenary domestick.

There was not one jewel in the possession of this grateful young lady, that she would not have gladly given as a recompence, or badge of distinction to her rescuer; but his master pitched upon a seal-ring of no great value that hung at her watch, and Pipes being called in, had permission to accept that testimony of Miss Sophy's favour. Tom received it accordingly with sundry scrapes, and having kissed it with great devotion, put it on his little finger, and strutted off, extremely proud of his acquisition.

Emilia, with a most enchanting sweetness of aspect, told her lover, that he had instructed her how to behave towards him; and taking a diamond ring from her finger, desired he would wear it for her sake. He received the pledge as became him, and presented another in exchange, which she at first refused, alledging that it would destroy the intent of her acknowledgment; but Peregrine assured her, he had accepted her jewel, not as a proof of her gratitude, but as the mark of her love; and that if she refused a mutual token, he should look upon himself as the object of her disdain. Her eyes kindled, and her cheeks glowed with resentment at this impudent intimation, which she considered as an unseasonable insult; and the young gentleman perceiving her emotion, stood corrected for his temerity, and asked pardon for the liberty of his remonstrance, which he hoped she would ascribe to the prevalence of that principle alone which he had always taken pride in avowing.

Sophy seeing him disconcerted, interposed in his behalf, and chid her cousin for having practised such unnecessary affectation; upon which Emilia, softened into compliance, held out her finger as a signal of her condescension. Peregrine put on the ring with great eagerness, mumbled her soft white hand in an extasy which would not allow him to confine his embraces to that limb, but urged him to seize her by the waist, and snatch a delicious kiss from her lovely pouting lips; nor would he leave her a butt to the ridicule of Sophy, on whose mouth he instantly committed a rape of the same nature; so that the two friends, countenanced by each other, reprehended him with such gentleness of rebuke, that he was almost tempted to repeat the offence.

The morning being now lighted up, and the servants of the inn on foot, he ordered some chocolate for breakfast, and at the desire of the ladies, sent Pipes to see the horses fed, and the chariot prepared, while he went to the bar and discharged the bill.

These measures being taken, they set out about five o'clock, and having refreshed themselves and their cattle at another inn on the road, proceeded in the afternoon. Without meeting with any other accident, they safely arrived at the place of their destination; where Mrs. Gauntlet expressed her joy at seeing her old friend Mr. Pickle, whom, however, she kindly reproached for the long discontinuance of his regard. Without explaining the cause of that interruption, he protested that his love and esteem had never been discontinued, and that for the future he should omit no occasion of testifying how much he had her friendship at heart. She then made him acquainted with her son, who at that time was in the house, being excused from his duty by furlough.

This young man, whose name was Godfrey, was about the age of twenty, of a middling size, vigorous make, remarkably well shaped, and the scars of the small-pox, of which he bore a good number, added a peculiar manliness to the air of his countenance. His capacity was good, and his disposition naturally frank and easy; but he had been a soldier from his infancy, and his education was altogether in the military style. He looked upon taste and letters as mere pedantry, beneath the consideration of a gentleman, and every

civil ſtation of life as mean, when compared with the profeſſion of arms. He had made great progreſs in the gymnaſtick ſciences of dancing, fencing, and riding; played perfectly well on the German flute; and, above all things, valued himſelf upon a ſcrupulous obſervance of all the points of honour.

Had Peregrine and he conſidered themſelves upon equal footing, in all probability they would have immediately entered into a league of intimacy and friendſhip; but this ſufficient ſoldier looked upon his ſiſter's admirer as a young ſtudent raw from the univerſity, and utterly ignorant of mankind; while Squire Pickle beheld Godfrey in the light of a needy volunteer, greatly inferior to himſelf in fortune, as well as every other accompliſhment. This mutual miſunderſtanding could not fail of producing animoſities. The very next day after Peregrine's arrival, ſome ſharp repartees paſſed between them in preſence of the ladies, before whom each endeavoured to aſſert his own ſuperiority. In theſe conteſts, our hero never failed of obtaining the victory, becauſe his genius was more acute, and his talents better cultivated than thoſe of his antagoniſt, who therefore took umbrage at his ſucceſs, became jealous of his reputation, and began to treat him with marks of ſcorn and diſreſpect.

His ſiſter ſaw, and dreading the conſequence of his ferocity, not only took him to taſk in private for his impolite behaviour, but alſo intreated her lover to make allowances for the roughneſs of her brother's education. He kindly aſſured her, that whatever pains it might coſt him to vanquiſh his own impetuous temper, he would for her ſake endure all the mortifications to which her brother's arrogance might expoſe him; and after having ſtayed with her two days, and enjoyed ſeveral private interviews, during which he acted the part of a moſt paſſionate lover, he took his leave of Mrs. Gauntlet over night, and told the young ladies he would call early next morning to bid them farewel. He did not neglect this piece of duty, and found the two friends at breakfaſt already prepared in the parlour. All three being extremely affected with the thoughts of parting, a moſt pathetick ſilence for ſome time prevailed, till Peregrine put an end to it by lamenting his fate, in being obliged to exile himſelf ſo long from the dear object of his moſt intereſting wiſh. He begged with the moſt earneſt ſupplications, that ſhe would now, in conſideration of the cruel abſence he muſt ſuffer, give him the conſolation which ſhe had hitherto refuſed; namely, that of knowing he poſſeſſed a place within her heart. The confidante ſeconded his requeſt, repreſenting that it was now no time to diſguiſe her ſentiments, when her lover was about to leave the kingdom, and might be in danger of contracting other connections, unleſs he was confirmed in his conſtancy, by knowing how far he could depend upon her love; and, in ſhort, ſhe was plied with ſuch irreſiſtible importunities, that ſhe anſwered in the utmoſt confuſion, 'Though I have avoided literal acknowledgments, methinks the circumſtances of my behaviour might have convinced Mr. Pickle, that I do not regard him as a common acquaintance.'—'My charming Emily!' cried the impatient lover, throwing himſelf at her feet, 'why will you deal out my happineſs in ſuch ſcanty portions? Why will you thus mince the declaration which would overwhelm me with pleaſure, and chear my lonely reflection, while I ſigh amid the ſolitude of ſeparation?' His fair miſtreſs, melted by this image, replied, with the tears guſhing from her eyes, 'I'm afraid I ſhall feel that ſeparation more ſeverely than you imagine.' Tranſported at this flattering confeſſion, he preſſed her to his breaſt, and while her head reclined upon his neck, mingled his tears with her's in great abundance, breathing the moſt tender vows of eternal fidelity. The gentle heart of Sophy could not bear this ſcene unmoved; ſhe wept with ſympathy, and encouraged the lovers to reſign themſelves to the will of fate, and ſupport their ſpirits with the hope of meeting again on happier terms. Finally, after mutual promiſes, exhortations, and endearments, Peregrine took his leave, his heart being ſo full that he could ſcarce pronounce the word, *Adieu!* and mounting his horſe at the door, ſet out with Pipes for the garriſon.

CHAP. XXVIII.

PEREGRINE IS OVERTAKEN BY MR. GAUNTLET, WITH WHOM HE FIGHTS

FIGHTS A DUEL, AND CONTRACTS AN INTIMATE FRIENDSHIP. HE ARRIVES AT THE GARRISON, AND FINDS HIS MOTHER AS IMPLACABLE AS EVER. HE IS INSULTED BY HIS BROTHER GAM, WHOSE PRECEPTOR HE DISCIPLINES WITH A HORSE-WHIP.

IN order to expel the melancholy images that took poſſeſſion of his fancy, at parting from his miſtreſs, he called in the flattering ideas of thoſe pleaſures he expected to enjoy in France; and before he had rode ten miles, his imagination was effectually amuſed.

While he thus proſecuted his travels by anticipation, and indulged himſelf in all the inſolence of hope, at the turning of a lane he was all of a ſudden overtaken by Emilia's brother on horſeback, who told him he was riding the ſame way, and ſhould be glad of his company.

This young gentleman, whether prompted by perſonal pique, or actuated with zeal for the honour of his family, had followed our hero, with a view of obliging him to explain the nature of his attachment to his ſiſter. Peregrine returned his compliment with ſuch diſdainful civility, as gave him room to believe that he ſuſpected his errand; and therefore, without farther preamble, he declared his buſineſs in theſe words: 'Mr. Pickle, you have 'carried on a correſpondence with my 'ſiſter for ſome time, and I ſhould be 'glad to know the nature of it.' To this queſtion our lover replied, 'Sir, I 'ſhould be glad to know what title you 'have to demand that ſatisfaction?'—'Sir,' anſwered the other, 'I demand 'it in the capacity of a brother, jea-'lous of his own honour, as well as of 'his ſiſter's reputation; and if your 'intentions are honourable, you will 'not refuſe it.'—'Sir,' ſaid Peregrine, 'I am not at preſent diſpoſed to appeal 'to your opinion for the rectitude of 'my intentions; and I think you aſ-'ſume a little too much importance, 'in pretending to judge my conduct.' —'Sir,' replied the ſoldier, 'I pretend 'to judge the conduct of every man 'who interferes with my concerns, and 'even to chaſtiſe him, if I think he acts 'amiſs.'—'Chaſtiſe!' cried the youth, with indignation in his looks; 'ſure you 'dare not apply that term to me?'—'You are miſtaken,' ſaid Godfrey, 'I 'dare do any thing that becomes the 'character of a gentleman.'—'Gentle-'man, God wot!' replied the other, looking contemptuouſly at his equipage, which was none of the moſt ſuperb; 'a 'very pretty gentleman, truly!' The ſoldier's wrath was inflamed by this ironical repetition, the contempt of which his conſcious poverty made him feel; and he called his antagoniſt preſumptuous boy, inſolent upſtart, with other epithets, which Perry retorted with great bitterneſs. A formal challenge having paſſed between them, they alighted at the firſt inn, and walked into the next field, in order to decide their quarrel by the ſword. Having pitched upon the ſpot, helped to pull off each other's boots, and laid aſide their coats and waiſtcoats, Mr. Gauntlet told his opponent, that he himſelf was looked upon in the army as an expert ſwordſman, and that if Mr. Pickle had not made that ſcience his particular ſtudy, they ſhould be upon a more equal footing in uſing piſtols. Peregrine was too much incenſed to thank him for his plain dealing, and too confident of his own ſkill to reliſh the other's propoſal, which he accordingly rejected: then drawing his ſword, he obſerved, that were he to treat Mr. Gauntlet according to his deſerts, he would order his man to puniſh his audacity with a horſe-whip. Exaſperated at this expreſſion, which he conſidered as an indelible affront, he made no reply, but attacked his adverſary with equal ferocity and addreſs. The youth parried his firſt and ſecond thruſt, but received the third in the outſide of his ſword-arm. Though the wound was ſuperficial, he was tranſported with rage at ſight of his own blood, and returned the aſſault with ſuch fury and precipitation, that Gauntlet, loth to take advantage of his unguarded heat, ſtood upon the defenſive. In the ſecond longe, Peregrine's weapon entering a kind of net-work in the ſhell of Godfrey's ſword, the blade ſnapped in two, and left him at the mercy of the ſoldier; who, far from making an inſolent uſe of the victory he had gained, put up his Toledo with great deliberation, like a man who had been uſed to that kind of rencounters, obſerved that ſuch a blade as Peregrine's was not to be truſted with a man's life: then adviſing the owner to treat a gentleman in diſtreſs with more

reſpect for the future, he ſlipped on his boots, and with ſullen dignity of demeanour ſtalked back to the inn.

Though Pickle was extremely mortified at his miſcarriage in this adventure, he was alſo ſtruck with the behaviour of his antagoniſt; which affected him the more, as he underſtood that Godfrey's *fierté* had proceeded from the jealous ſenſibility of a gentleman declined into the vale of misfortune. Gauntlet's valour and moderation induced him to put a favourable conſtruction on all thoſe circumſtances of that young ſoldier's conduct, which before had given him diſguſt. Though in any other caſe he would have induſtriouſly avoided the leaſt appearance of ſubmiſſion, he followed his conqueror to the inn, with a view of thanking him for his generous forbearance, and of ſoliciting his friendſhip and correſpondence.

Godfrey had his foot in the ſtirrup to mount, when Peregrine coming up to him, deſired he would defer his departure for a quarter of an hour, and favour him with a little private converſation. The ſoldier, who miſtook the meaning of the requeſt, immediately quitted his horſe, and followed Pickle into a chamber, where he expected to find a brace of piſtols loaded on the table; but he was very agreeably deceived, when our hero, in the moſt reſpectful terms, acknowledged his noble deportment in the field, owned that till then he had miſunderſtood his character, and begged that he would honour him with his intimacy and correſpondence.

Gauntlet, who had ſeen undoubted proofs of Peregrine's courage, which had conſiderably raiſed him in his eſteem, and had ſenſe enough to perceive that this conceſſion was not owing to any ſordid or ſiniſter motive, embraced his offer with demonſtrations of infinite ſatisfaction. When he underſtood the terms on which Mr. Pickle was with his ſiſter, he proffered his ſervice in his turn, either as an agent, mediator, or confidante: nay, to give this new friend a convincing proof of his ſincerity, he diſcloſed to him a paſſion which he had for ſome time entertained for his couſin, Miſs Sophy, though he durſt not reveal his ſentiments to her father, leſt he ſhould be offended at his preſumption, and withdraw his protection from the family.

Peregrine's generous heart was wrung with anguiſh, when he underſtood that this young gentleman, who was the only ſon of a diſtinguiſhed officer, had carried arms for the ſpace of five years, without being able to obtain a ſubaltern's commiſſion, though he had always behaved with remarkable regularity and ſpirit, and acquired the friendſhip and eſteem of all the officers under whom he had ſerved.

He would, at that time, with the utmoſt pleaſure, have ſhared his finances with him; but as he would not run the riſk of offending the young ſoldier's delicacy of honour, by a premature exertion of his liberality, he reſolved to inſinuate himſelf into an intimacy with him, before he would venture to take ſuch freedoms; and with that view preſſed Mr. Gauntlet to accompany him to the garriſon, where he did not doubt of having influence enough to make him a welcome gueſt. Godfrey thanked him very courteouſly for his invitation, which he ſaid he could not immediately accept, but promiſed if he would favour him with a letter, and fix the time at which he propoſed to ſet out for France, he would endeavour to viſit him at the commodore's habitation, and from thence give him a convoy to Dover. This new treaty being ſettled, and a doſſil of lint, with a ſnip of plaſter, applied to our adventurer's wound, he parted from the brother of his dear Amelia, to whom, and his friend Sophy, he ſent his kindeſt wiſhes; and having lodged one night upon the road, arrived next day in the afternoon at the garriſon, where he found all his friends in good health, and overjoyed at his return.

The commodore, who was by this time turned of ſeventy, and altogether crippled by the gout, ſeldom went abroad; and as his converſation was not very entertaining, had but little company within doors; ſo that his ſpirits muſt have quite ſtagnated, had not they been kept in motion by the converſation of Hatchway, and received at different times a wholeſome fillip from the diſcipline of his ſpouſe who, by the force of pride, religion, and Coniac, had erected a moſt terrible tyranny in the houſe. There was ſuch a quick circulation of domeſticks in the family, that every ſuit of livery had been worn by figures of all dimenſions: Trunnion himſelf had long before this time yielded

ed to the torrent of her arbitrary sway; though not without divers obstinate efforts to maintain his liberty; and now, that he was disabled by his infirmities, when he used to hear his empress singing the loud Orthyan song among the servants below, he would often in whispers communicate to the lieutenant, hints of what he would do, if so be as how he was not deprived of the use of his precious limbs. Hatchway was the only person whom the temper of Mrs. Trunnion respected, either because she dreaded his ridicule, or looked upon his person with eyes of affection. This being the situation of things in the garrison, it is not to be doubted that the old gentleman highly enjoyed the presence of Peregrine, who found means to ingratiate himself so effectually with his aunt, that while he remained at home, she seemed to have exchanged the disposition of a tigress for that of a gentle kid: but he found his own mother as implacable, and his father as much hen-pecked, as ever.

Gamaliel, who now very seldom enjoyed the conversation of his old friend the commodore, had some time ago entered into an amicable society, consisting of the barber, apothecary, attorney, and excise-man of the parish, among whom he used to spend the evening at Tunley's, and listen to their disputes upon philosophy and politicks, with great comfort and edification, while his sovereign lady domineered at home as usual, visited with great pomp in the neighbourhood, and employed her chief care in the education of her darling son Gam, who was now in the fifteenth year of his age, and so remarkable for his perverse disposition, that in spite of his mother's influence and authority, he was not only hated, but also despised, both at home and abroad. She had put him under the tuition of the curate, who lived in the family, and was obliged to attend him in all his exercises and excursions. This governor was a low-bred fellow, who had neither experience nor ingenuity, but possessed a large fund of adulation and servile complaisance, by which he had gained the good graces of Mrs. Pickle, and presided over all her deliberations in the same manner as his subsuperior managed those of Mrs. Trunnion.

He had one day rode out to take the air with his pupil, who, as I have already observed, was odious to the poor people, for having killed their dogs and broken their inclosures, and on account of his hump, distinguished by the title of *my Lord*; when in a narrow lane they chanced to meet Peregrine on horseback.

The young squire no sooner perceived his elder brother, for whom he had been instructed to entertain the most inveterate grudge, than he resolved to insult him *en passant*, and actually rode against him full gallop. Our hero guessing his aim, fixed himself in his stirrups, and by a dexterous management of the reins, avoided the shock in such a manner, as that their legs only should encounter, by which means my lord was tilted out of his saddle, and in a twinkling laid sprawling in the dirt. The governor, enraged at the disgrace of his charge, advanced with great insolence and fury, and struck at Peregrine with his whip. Nothing could be more agreeable to our young gentleman than this assault, which furnished him with an opportunity of chastising an officious wretch, whose petulance and malice he had longed to punish. He therefore, spurring up his horse towards his antagonist, overthrew him in the middle of a hedge. Before he had time to recollect himself from the confusion of the fall, Pickle alighted in a trice, and exercised his horse-whip with such agility about the curate's face and ears, that he was fain to prostrate himself before his enraged conqueror, and implore his forbearance in the most abject terms. While Peregrine was thus employed, his brother Gam had made shift to rise and attack him in the rear; for which reason, when the tutor was quelled, the victor faced about, snatched the weapon out of his hand, and having broken it to pieces, remounted his horse, and rode off, without deigning to honour him with any other notice.

The condition in which they returned produced infinite clamour against the conqueror, who was represented as a ruffian who had lain in ambush to make away with his brother, in whose defence the curate was said to have received those cruel stripes, that hindered him from appearing for three whole weeks in the performance of his duty at church.

Complaints were made to the commodore, who having inquired into the circumstances of the affair, approved of what his nephew had done; adding, with

with many oaths, that, provided Peregrine had been out of the ſcrape, he wiſhed Crook-back had broke his neck in the fall.

CHAP. XXIX.

HE PROJECTS A PLAN OF REVENGE, WHICH IS EXECUTED AGAINST THE CURATE.

OUR hero, exaſperated at the villainy of the curate, in the treacherous miſrepreſentation he had made of this rencounter, determined to practiſe upon him a method of revenge, which ſhould be not only effectual, but alſo unattended with any bad conſequence to himſelf. For this purpoſe he and Hatchway, to whom he imparted his plan, went to the alehouſe one evening, and called for an empty room, knowing there was no other but that which they had choſen for the ſcene of action. This apartment was a ſort of a parlour that fronted the kitchen, with a window towards the yard; where, after they had ſat ſome time, the lieutenant found means to amuſe the landlord in diſcourſe, while Peregrine, ſtepping out into the yard, by the talent of mimickry, which he poſſeſſed in a ſurprizing degree, counterfeited a dialogue between the curate and Tunley's wife. This reaching the ears of the publican, for whoſe hearing it was calculated, inflamed his naturally jealous diſpoſition to ſuch a degree, that he could not conceal his emotion, but made an hundred efforts to quit the room; while the lieutenant, ſmoaking his pipe with great gravity, as if he neither heard what paſſed, nor took notice of the landlord's diſorder, detained him on the ſpot by a ſucceſſion of queſtions which he could not refuſe to anſwer; though he ſtood ſweating with agony all the time, ſtretching his neck every inſtant towards the window through which the voices were conveyed, ſcratching his head, and exhibiting ſundry other ſymptoms of impatience and agitation. At length, the ſuppoſed converſation came to ſuch a pitch of amorous complaiſance, that the huſband, quite frantick with his imaginary diſgrace, ruſhed out at the door, crying, 'Coming, Sir!' But, as he was obliged to make a circuit round one half of the houſe, Peregrine had got in by the window, before Tunley arrived in the yard.

According to the feigned intelligence he had received, he ran directly to the barn, in expectation of making ſome very extraordinary diſcovery; and having employed ſome minutes in rummaging the ſtraw to no purpoſe, returned in a ſtate of diſtraction to the kitchen, juſt as his wife chanced to enter at the other door. The circumſtance of her appearance confirmed him in the opinion that the deed was done. As the diſeaſe of being hen-pecked was epidemick in the pariſh, he durſt not expreſs the leaſt hint of his uneaſineſs to her, but reſolved to take vengeance on the libidinous prieſt, who, he imagined, had corrupted the chaſtity of his ſpouſe.

The two confederates, in order to be certified that their ſcheme had taken effect, as well as to blow up the flame which they had kindled, called for Tunley, in whoſe countenance they could eaſily diſcern his confuſion. Peregrine deſired him to ſit down and drink a glaſs with them, began to interrogate him about his family, and among other things, aſked him how long he had been married to that handſome wife. This queſtion, which was put with an arch ſignificance of look, alarmed the publican, who began to fear that Pickle had overheard his diſhonour; and this ſuſpicion was not at all removed, when the lieutenant, with a ſly regard, pronounced, 'Tunley, wan't you nooſed 'by the curate?'—'Yes, I was!' replied the landlord, with an eagerneſs and perplexity of tone, as if he thought the lieutenant knew, that *thereby hung a tale*; and Hatchway ſupported this ſuſpicion, by anſwering, 'Nay, as for that 'matter, the curate may be a very ſuf-'ficient man in his way.' This tranſition from his wife to the curate, convinced him that his ſhame was known to his gueſts; and in the tranſport of his indignation, he pronounced with great emphaſis, 'A ſufficient man! Odds 'heart! I believe they are all wolves in 'ſheep's cloathing. I wiſh to God I 'could ſee the day, maſter, when there 'ſhall not be a prieſt, an exciſeman, 'or a cuſtom-houſe officer, in this king-'dom. As for that fellow of a curate, 'if I do catch him—It don't ſignify 'talking—But, by the Lord!—Gen-'tlemen, my ſervice to you.'

The aſſociates being ſatisfied by theſe abrupt

abrupt insinuations, that they had so far succeeded in their aim, waited with impatience two or three days in expectation of hearing that Tunley had fallen upon some method of being revenged for this imaginary wrong; but finding that either his invention was too shallow, or his inclination too languid, to gratify their desire of his own accord, they determined to bring the affair to such a crisis, that he should not be able to withstand the opportunity of executing his vengeance. With this view, they one evening hired a boy to run to Mr. Pickle's house, and tell the curate, that Mrs. Tunley being taken suddenly ill, her husband desired he would come immediately and pray with her. Meanwhile, they had taken possession of a room in the house; and Hatchway engaging the landlord in conversation, Peregrine in his return from the yard, observed, as if by accident, that the parson was gone into the kitchen, in order, as he supposed, to catechize Tunley's wife.

The publican started at this intelligence, and under pretence of serving another company in the next room, went out to the barn, where arming himself with a flail, he repaired to a lane through which the curate was under a necessity of passing in his way home. There he lay in ambush, with fell intent; and when the supposed author of his shame arrived, greeted him in the dark with such a salutation, as forced him to stagger backward three paces at least. If the second application had taken effect, in all probability that spot would have been the boundary of the parson's mortal peregrination; but, luckily for him, his antagonist was not expert in the management of his weapon, which by a twist of the thong that connected the legs, instead of pitching upon the head of the astonished curate, descended in an oblique direction on his own pate, with such a swing, that the skull actually rung like an apothecary's mortar, and ten thousand lights seemed to dance before his eyes. The curate recollecting himself during the respite he obtained from this accident, and believing his aggressor to be some thief who lurked in that place for prey, resolved to make a running fight, until he should arrive within cry of his habitation. With this design he raised up his cudgel for the defence of his head, and betaking himself to his heels, began to roar for help with the lungs of a Stentor. Tunley throwing away the flail, which he durst no longer trust with the execution of his revenge, pursued the fugitive with all the speed he could exert; and the other, either unnerved by fear, or stumbling over a stone, was overtaken before he had run an hundred paces. He no sooner felt the wind of the publican's fist that whistled round his ears, than he fell flat upon the earth at full length, and the cudgel flew from his unclasping hand; when Tunley, springing like a tiger upon his back, rained such a shower of blows upon his carcase, that he imagined himself under the discipline of ten pair of fists at least; yet the imaginary cuckold, not satisfied with annoying the priest in this manner, laid hold on one of his ears with his teeth, and bit so unmercifully, that the curate was found almost entranced with pain by two labourers, at whose approach the assailant retreated unperceived.

The lieutenant had posted himself at the window, in order to see the landlord at his first return; and no sooner perceived him enter the yard, than he called him into the apartment, impatient to learn the effects of their stratagem. Tunley obeyed the summons, and appeared before his guests in all the violence of rage, disorder, and fatigue: his nostrils were dilated more than one-half beyond their natural capacity, his eyes rolled, his teeth chattered, he snored in breathing as if he had been oppressed by the nightmare, and streams of sweat flowed down each side of his forehead.

Peregrine affecting to start at the approach of such an uncouth figure, asked if he had been wrestling with a spirit; upon which he answered with great vehemence, 'Spirit! No, no, master, I 'have had a roll and tumble with 'the flesh.—A dog! I'll teach him to 'come a caterwauling about my doors!' Guessing from this reply, that his aim was accomplished, and curious to know the particulars of the rencounter, 'Well, 'then,' saith the youth, 'I hope you 'have prevailed against the flesh, Tun-'ley?'—'Yes, yes,' answered the publican, 'I have cooled his capissens, as 'the saying is: I have played such a 'tune about his ears, that I'll be bound 'he

'he ſhan't long for muſick this month. 'A goatiſh, ram-faced raſcal! Why, 'he's a perfect pariſh bull, as I hope 'to live.'

Hatchway obſerving that he ſeemed to have made a ſtout battle, deſired he would ſit down and recover wind; and after he had ſwallowed a brace of bumpers, his vanity prompted him to expatiate upon his own exploit in ſuch a manner, that the confederates, without ſeeming to know the curate was his antagoniſt, became acquainted with every circumſtance of the ambuſcade.

Tunley had ſcarce got the better of his agitation, when his wife entering the room, told them by way of news, that ſome waggiſh body had ſent Mr. Sackbut the curate to pray with her. This name inflamed the huſband's choler anew, and forgetting all his complaiſance for his ſpouſe, he replied with a rancorous grin, 'Add rabbit him! I 'doubt not but you found his admoni-'tions deadly comfortable!' The landlady looking at her vaſſal with a ſovereign aſpect, 'What crotchets,' ſaid ſhe, 'have you got in your fool's head, 'I trow? I know no buſineſs you have 'to ſit here like a gentleman with your 'arms a-kimbo, when there's another 'company in the houſe to be ſerved.' The ſubmiſſive huſband took the hint, and, without farther expoſtulation, ſneaked out of the room.

Next day it was reported, that Mr. Sackbut had been way-laid, and almoſt murdered by robbers, and an advertiſement was paſted upon the church-door, offering a reward to any perſon that ſhould diſcover the aſſaſſin; but he reaped no ſatisfaction from this expedient, and was confined to his chamber a whole fortnight by the bruiſes he had received.

CHAP. XXX.

MR. SACKBUT AND HIS PUPIL CONSPIRE AGAINST PEREGRINE, WHO BEING APPRIZED OF THEIR DESIGN BY HIS SISTER, TAKES MEASURES FOR COUNTERWORKING THEIR SCHEME, WHICH IS EXECUTED BY MISTAKE UPON MR. GAUNTLET. THIS YOUNG SOLDIER MEETS WITH A CORDIAL RECEPTION FROM THE COMMODORE, WHO GENEROUSLY DECOYS HIM INTO HIS OWN INTEREST.

WHEN he conſidered the circumſtances of the ambuſcade, he could not perſuade himſelf that he had been aſſaulted by a common thief, becauſe it was not to be ſuppoſed that a robber would have amuſed himſelf in pummelling rather than in rifling his prey; he therefore aſcribed his misfortune to the ſecret enmity of ſome perſon who had a deſign upon his life; and upon mature deliberation, fixed his ſuſpicion upon Peregrine, who was the only man on earth from whom he thought he deſerved ſuch treatment. He communicated his conjecture to his pupil, who readily adopted his opinion, and adviſed him ſtrenuouſly to revenge the wrong by a like contrivance, without ſeeking to make a narrower inquiry, leſt his enemy ſhould be thereby put upon his guard.

This propoſal being reliſhed, they in concert revolved the means of retorting the ambuſh with intereſt, and actually laid ſuch a villainous plan for attacking our hero in the dark, that, had it been executed according to their intention, the young gentleman's ſcheme of travelling would have been effectually marred. But their machinations were overheard by Miſs Pickle, who was now in the ſeventeenth year of her age, and, in ſpite of the prejudice of education, entertained in ſecret a moſt ſiſterly affection for her brother Perry, though ſhe had never ſpoke to him, and was deterred by the precepts, vigilance, and menaces of her mother, from attempting any means of meeting him in private. She was not, however, inſenſible to his praiſe, which was loudly ſounded forth in the neighbourhood, and never failed of going to church, and every other place where ſhe thought ſhe might have an opportunity of ſeeing this amiable brother. With theſe ſentiments it cannot be ſuppoſed that ſhe would hear the conſpiracy without emotion. She was ſhocked at the treacherous barbarity of Gam, and ſhuddered at the proſpect of the danger to which Peregrine would be expoſed from their malice. She durſt not communicate this plot to her mother, becauſe ſhe was afraid that lady's unaccountable averſion for her firſt-born would

would hinder her from interposing in his behalf, and consequently render her a sort of accomplice in the guilt of his assassins. She therefore resolved to warn Peregrine of the conspiracy, an account of which she transmitted to him in an affectionate letter, by means of a young gentleman in that neighbourhood, who made his addresses to her at that time, and who, at her request, offered his service to our hero, in defeating the projects of his adversaries.

Peregrine was startled when he read the particulars of their scheme; which was no other than an intention to sally upon him when he should be altogether unprovided against such an attack, cut off his ears, and otherwise mutilate him, in such a manner that he should have no cause to be vain of his person for the future.

Incensed as he was against the brutal disposition of his own father's son, he could not help being moved at the integrity and tenderness of his sister, of whose inclinations towards him he had been hitherto kept in ignorance. He thanked the gentleman for his honourable dealing, and expressed a desire of being better acquainted with his virtues; told him, that now he was cautioned, he hoped there would be no necessity for giving him any farther trouble, and wrote by him a letter of acknowledgment to his sister, for whom he expressed the utmost love and regard, beseeching her to favour him with an interview before his departure, that he might indulge his fraternal fondness, and be blessed with the company and countenance of one at least belonging to his own family.

Having imparted this discovery to his friend Hatchway, they came to a resolution of countermining the plan of their enemies. As they did not chuse to expose themselves to the insinuations of slander, which would have exerted itself at their expence, had they, even in defending themselves, employed any harsh means of retaliation, they invented a method of disappointing and disgracing their foes, and immediately set Pipes at work to forward the preparations.

Miss Pickle having described the spot which the assassins had pitched upon for the scene of their vengeance; our triumvirate intended to have placed a centinel among the corn, who should come and give them intelligence when the ambuscade was laid; and in consequence of that information, they would steal softly towards the place, attended by three or four of the domesticks, and draw a large net over the conspirators, who being entangled in the toil, should be disarmed, fettered, heartily scourged, and suspended between two trees in the snare, as a spectacle to all passengers that should chance to travel that way.

The plan being thus digested, and the commodore made acquainted with the whole affair, the spy was sent upon duty, and every body within doors prepared to go forth upon the first notice. One whole evening did they spend in the most impatient expectation; but on the second the scout crept into the garrison, and assured them, that he had perceived three men skulking behind the hedge, on the road that led to the publick-house from which Peregrine and the lieutenant used every night to return about that hour. Upon this intelligence, the confederates set out immediately with all their implements. Approaching the scene with as little noise as possible, they heard the sound of blows; and though the night was dark, perceived a sort of tumultuous conflict on the very spot which the conspirators had possessed. Surprized at this occurrence, the meaning of which he could not comprehend, Peregrine ordered his myrmidons to halt and reconnoitre; and immediately his ears were saluted with an exclamation of, 'You shan't 'scape me, rascal!' The voice being quite familiar to him, he all at once divined the cause of that confusion which they had observed; and running up to the assistance of the exclaimer, found a fellow on his knees, begging his life of Mr. Gauntlet, who stood over him with a naked hanger in his hand.

Pickle instantly made himself known to his friend; who told him, that having left his horse at Tunley's, he was in his way to the garrison set upon by three ruffians, one of whom, being the very individual person now in his power, had come behind him, and struck with a bludgeon at his head, which, however, he missed, and the instrument descended on his left shoulder; that upon drawing his hanger, and laying about him in the dark, the other two fled, leaving their companion, whom he had disabled, in the lurch.

Peregrine congratulated him upon his ſafety, and having ordered Pipes to ſecure the priſoner, conducted Mr. Gauntlet to the garriſon, where he met with a very hearty reception from the commodore, to whom he was introduced as his nephew's intimate friend; not but that, in all likelihood, he would have abated ſomewhat of his hoſpitality, had he known that he was the brother of Perry's miſtreſs; but her name the old gentleman had never thought of aſking, when he enquired into the particulars of his godſon's amour.

The captive being examined, in preſence of Trunnion and all his adherents, touching the ambuſcade, owned, that being in the ſervice of Gam Pickle, he had been prevailed upon by the ſolicitations of his maſter and the curate, to accompany them in their expedition, and undertake the part which he had acted againſt the ſtranger, whom he and his employers miſtook for Peregrine. In conſideration of this frank acknowledgment, and a ſevere wound he had received in his right-arm, they reſolved to inflict no other puniſhment on this malefactor, than to detain him all night in the garriſon, and next morning carry him before a juſtice of the peace, to whom he repeated all that he had ſaid over-night, and with his own hand ſubſcribed his confeſſion, copies of which were handed about the neighbourhood, to the unſpeakable confuſion and diſgrace of the curate and his promiſing pupil.

Meanwhile, Trunnion treated the young ſoldier with uncommon marks of reſpect, being prepoſſeſſed in his favour by this adventure, which he had ſo gallantly atchieved, as well as by the encomiums that Peregrine beſtowed upon his valour and generoſity. He liked his countenance, which was bold and hardy; admired his Herculean limbs; and delighted in aſking queſtions concerning the ſervice he had ſeen.

The day after his arrival, while the converſation turned on this laſt ſubject, the commodore, taking the pipe out of his mouth, 'I'll tell you what, brother,' ſaid he, 'five and forty years 'ago, when I was third lieutenant of 'the Warwick man of war, there was 'a very ſtout young fellow on board, 'a ſubaltern officer of marines; his 'name was not unlike your own, d'ye 'ſee! being Guntlet, with a G. I re-'member he and I could not abide one 'another at firſt, becauſe, d'ye ſee, I 'was a ſailor and he a land-man, till 'we fell in with a Frenchman, whom 'we engaged for eight glaſſes, and at 'length boarded and took. I was the 'firſt man that ſtood on the enemy's 'deck, and ſhould have come ſcurvily 'off, d'ye ſee, if Guntlet had not 'jumped to my aſſiſtance; but we ſoon 'cleared ſhip, and drove them to cloſe 'quarters, ſo that they were obliged to 'ſtrike; and from that day Guntlet 'and I were ſworn brothers as long as 'he remained on board. He was exchanged into a marching regiment, 'and what became of him afterwards, 'Lord in heaven knows; but this I'll 'ſay of him, whether he be dead or 'alive, he feared no man that ever 'wore a head, and was, moreover, a 'very hearty meſſmate.'

The ſtranger's breaſt glowed at this eulogium, which was no ſooner pronounced, than he eagerly aſked, if the French ſhip was not the Diligence. The commodore replied with a ſtare, 'The very ſame, my lad.'—'Then,' ſaid Gauntlet, 'the perſon of whom you 'are pleaſed to make ſuch honourable 'mention was my own father.'—'The 'devil he was!' cried Trunnion, ſhaking him by the hand; 'I am rejoiced 'to ſee a ſon of Ned Guntlet in my 'houſe.'

This diſcovery introduced a thouſand queſtions, in the courſe of which the old gentleman learned the ſituation of his friend's family; and diſcharged innumerable execrations upon the ingratitude and injuſtice of the miniſtry, which had failed to provide for the ſon of ſuch a brave ſoldier. Nor was his friendſhip confined to ſuch ineffectual expreſſions; he that ſame evening ſignified to Peregrine a deſire of doing ſomething for his friend. This inclination was ſo much praiſed, encouraged, and promoted, by his godſon, and even ſupported by his counſellor Hatchway, that our hero was empowered to preſent him with a ſum of money ſufficient to purchaſe a commiſſion.

Though nothing could be more agreeable to Pickle than this permiſſion, he was afraid that Godfrey's ſcrupulous diſpoſition would hinder him from ſubjecting himſelf to any ſuch obligation; and therefore propoſed that he ſhould be decoyed into his own intereſt by a feigned

ed ſtory, in conſequence of which he would be prevailed upon to accept of the money, as a debt which the commodore had contracted of his father at ſea. Trunnion made wry faces at this expedient, the neceſſity of which he could not conceive, without calling in queſtion the common ſenſe of Gauntlet; as he took it for granted, that ſuch offers as thoſe were not to be rejected on any conſideration whatever. Beſides, he could not digeſt an artifice, by which he himſelf muſt own that he had lived ſo many years, without manifeſting the leaſt intention of doing juſtice to his creditor. All theſe objections, however, were removed by the zeal and rhetorick of Peregrine, who repreſented that it would be impoſſible to befriend him on any other terms; that his ſilence hitherto would be imputed to his want of information touching the circumſtances and condition of his friend; and that his remembering and inſiſting upon diſcharging the obligation, after ſuch an interval of time, when the whole affair was in oblivion, would be the greateſt compliment he could pay to his own honour and integrity.

Thus perſuaded, he took an opportunity of Gauntlet's being alone with him to broach the affair; telling the young man, that his father had advanced a ſum of money for him, when they ſailed together, on account of the meſs, as well as to ſtop the mouth of a clamorous creditor at Portſmouth; and that the ſaid ſum, with intereſt, amounted to about four hundred pounds, which he would now, with great thankfulneſs, repay.

Godfrey was amazed at this declaration; and after a conſiderable pauſe replied, that he had never heard his parents mention any ſuch debt; that no memorandum or voucher of it was found among his father's papers; and that, in all probability, it muſt have been diſcharged long ago, although the commodore, in ſuch a long courſe of time and hurry of occupation, might have forgot the repayment: he therefore deſired to be excuſed from accepting what in his own conſcience he believed was not his due; and complimented the old gentleman upon his being ſo ſcrupulouſly juſt and honourable.

The ſoldier's refuſal, which was matter of aſtoniſhment to Trunnion, increaſed his inclination to aſſiſt him; and, on pretence of acquitting his own character, he urged his beneficence with ſuch obſtinacy, that Gauntlet, afraid of diſobliging him, was in a manner compelled to receive a draft for the money, for which he ſubſcribed an ample diſcharge, and immediately tranſmitted the order to his mother, whom at the ſame time he informed of the circumſtances by which they had ſo unexpectedly gained this acceſſion of fortune.

Such a piece of news could not fail of being agreeable to Mrs. Gauntlet; who, by the firſt poſt, wrote a polite letter of acknowledgment to the commodore, another to her own ſon, importing, that ſhe had already ſent the draft to a friend in London, with directions to depoſit it in the hands of a certain banker, for the purchaſe of the firſt enſigncy to be ſold; and ſhe took the liberty of ſending a third to Peregine, couched in very affectionate terms, with a kind poſtſcript, ſigned by Miſs Sophy and his charming Emily.

This affair being tranſacted to the ſatisfaction of all concerned, preparations were ſet on foot for the departure of our hero, on whom his uncle ſettled an annuity of eight hundred pounds, being little leſs than one half of his whole income. By this time indeed the old gentleman could eaſily afford to alienate ſuch a part of his fortune, becauſe he entertained little or no company, kept few ſervants, was remarkably plain and frugal in his houſe-keeping; Mrs. Trunnion being now ſome years on the wrong ſide of fifty, her infirmities began to increaſe; and though her pride had ſuffered no diminution, her vanity was altogether ſubdued by her avarice.

A Swiſs valet de chambre, who had already made the tour of Europe, was hired for the care of Peregrine's own perſon; Pipes, being ignorant of the French language, as well as otherwiſe unfit for the office of a faſhionable attendant, it was reſolved that he ſhould remain in garriſon; and his place was immediately ſupplied by a Pariſian lacquey, engaged at London for that purpoſe. Pipes did not ſeem to reliſh this diſpoſition of things; and though he made no verbal objections to it, looked remarkably ſour at his ſucceſſor upon his firſt arrival; but this ſullen fit ſeemed gradually to wear off; and long be-

fore his master's departure, he had recovered his natural tranquillity and unconcern.

CHAP. XXXI.

THE TWO YOUNG GENTLEMEN DISPLAY THEIR TALENTS FOR GALLANTRY, IN THE COURSE OF WHICH THEY ARE INVOLVED IN A LUDICROUS CIRCUMSTANCE OF DISTRESS, AND AFTERWARDS TAKE VENGEANCE ON THE AUTHOR OF THEIR MISHAP.

MEAN WHILE our hero and his new friend, together with honest Jack Hatchway, made daily excursions into the country, visited the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, and frequently accompanied them to the chace; all three being exceedingly caressed on account of their talents, which could accommodate themselves with great facility to the tempers and turns of their entertainers. The lieutenant was a droll in his way, Peregrine possessed a great fund of sprightliness and good-humour, and Godfrey, among his other qualifications already recited, sung a most excellent song; so that the company of this triumvirate was courted in all parties, whether male or female; and if the hearts of our young gentlemen had not been pre-engaged, they would have met with opportunities in abundance of displaying their address in the art of love; not but that they gave loose to their gallantry without much interesting their affections, and amused themselves with little intrigues, which, in the opinion of a man of pleasure, do not affect his fidelity to the acknowledged sovereign of his soul.

In the midst of these amusements, our hero received an intimation from his sister, that she should be overjoyed to meet him next day, at five o'clock in the afternoon, at the house of her nurse, who lived in a cottage hard by her father's habitation, she being debarred from all opportunity of seeing him in any other place by the severity of her mother, who suspected her inclination.

He accordingly obeyed the summons, and went at the time appointed to the place of rendezvous, where he met this affectionate young lady; who, when he entered the room, ran towards him with all the eagerness of transport; flung her arms about his neck, and shed a flood of tears in his bosom, before she could utter one word, except a repetition of 'My dear, dear brother!' He embraced her with all the piety of fraternal tenderness, wept over her in his turn, assured her that this was one of the happiest moments of his life, and kindly thanked her for having resisted the example and disobeyed the injunctions of his mother's unnatural aversion.

He was ravished to find by her conversation, that she possessed a great share of sensibility and prudent reflection; for she lamented the infatuation of her parents, with the most filial regret, and expressed such abhorrence and concern at the villainous disposition of her younger brother, as a humane sister may be supposed to have entertained. He made her acquainted with all the circumstances of his own fortune; and as he supposed she spent her time very disagreeably at home, among characters which must be shockingly interesting, professed a desire of removing her into some other sphere, where she could live with more tranquillity and satisfaction.

She objected to this proposal, as an expedient that would infallibly subject her to the implacable resentment of her mother, whose favour and affection she at present enjoyed but in a very inconsiderable degree; and they had canvassed divers schemes of corresponding for the future, when the voice of Mrs. Pickle was heard at the door.

Miss Julia (that was the young lady's name) finding herself betrayed, was seized with a violent agitation of fear; and Peregrine scarce had time to encourage her with a promise of protection, before the door of the apartment being flung open, this irreconcileable parent rushed in, and with a furious aspect flew directly at her trembling daughter, when the son interposing, received the first discharge of her fury.

Her eyes gleamed with all the rage of indignation, which choaked up her utterance, and seemed to convulse her whole frame; she twisted her left-hand in his hair, and with the other buffeted him about the face, till the blood gushed from his nostrils and mouth; while he defended his sister from the cruelty of Gam, who assaulted her from another quarter, seeing his brother engaged. This attack lasted several minutes with great

great violence, till at length Peregrine finding himself in danger of being overpowered, if he should remain any longer on the defensive, laid his brother on his back; then he disentangled his mother's hand from his own hair, and having pushed her gently out of the room, bolted the door on the inside; finally, turning to Gam, he threw him out at the window, among a parcel of hogs that fed under it. By this time Julia was almost quite distracted with terror; she knew she had offended beyond all hope of forgiveness, and from that moment considered herself as an exile from her father's house: in vain did her brother strive to console her with fresh protestations of love and protection; she counted herself extremely miserable in being obliged to endure the eternal resentment of a parent with whom she had hitherto lived, and dreaded the censure of the world, which from her mother's misrepresentation she was sensible would condemn her unheard. That she might not, however, neglect any means in her power of averting this storm, she resolved to appease, if possible, her mother's wrath with humiliation, and even appeal to the influence of her father, weak as it was, before she would despair of being forgiven. But the good lady spared her this unnecessary application, by telling her through the key-hole, that she must never expect to come within her father's door again; for from that hour she renounced her, as unworthy of her affection and regard. Julia weeping bitterly, endeavoured to soften the rigour of the sentence, by the most submissive and reasonable remonstrances; but as in her vindication she of necessity espoused her elder brother's cause, her endeavours, instead of soothing, served only to exasperate her mother to an higher pitch of indignation, which discharged itself in invectives against Peregrine, whom she reviled with the epithets of a worthless, abandoned reprobate.

The youth hearing these unjust aspersions, trembled with resentment through every limb, assuring the upbraider that he considered her as an object of compassion; 'For, without all doubt,' said he, 'your diabolical rancour must be 'severely punished by the thorns of your 'own conscience, which this very in-'stant taxes you with the malice and 'falshood of your reproaches. As for 'my sister, I bless God that you have 'not been able to infect her with your un-'natural prejudice, which because she is 'too just, too virtuous, too humane to 'imbibe, you reject her as an alien to 'your blood, and turn her out unpro-'vided into a barbarous world. But 'even there your vicious purpose shall 'be defeated; that same Providence that 'screened me from the cruelty of your 'hate, shall extend it's protection to her, 'until I shall find it convenient to assert 'by law that right of maintenance which 'nature, it seems, hath bestowed upon 'us in vain. In the mean time, you 'will enjoy the satisfaction of paying 'an undivided attention to that darling 'son, whose amiable qualities have so 'long engaged and engrossed your love 'and esteem.'

This freedom of expostulation exalted his mother's ire to mere frenzy; she cursed him with the bitterest imprecations, and raved like a Bedlamite at the door, which she attempted to burst open. Her efforts were seconded by her favourite son, who denounced vengeance against Peregrine, made furious assaults against the lock, which resisted all their applications, until our hero, espying his friends Gauntlet and Pipes stepping over a stile that stood about a furlong from the window, called them to his assistance; giving them to understand how he was besieged, he desired they would keep off his mother, that he might the more easily secure his sister Julia's retreat. The young soldier entered accordingly, and posting himself between Mrs. Pickle and the door, gave the signal to his friend, who lifting up his sister in his arms, carried her safe without the clutches of this she-dragon, while Pipes with his cudgel kept young master at bay.

The mother being thus deprived of her prey, sprung upon Gauntlet like a lioness robbed of her whelps; and he must have suffered sorely in the flesh, had he not prevented her mischievous intent by seizing both her wrists, and so keeping her at due distance. In attempting to disengage herself from his grasp, she struggled with such exertion, and suffered such agony of passion at the same time, that she actually fell into a severe fit, during which she was put to bed, and the confederates retired without farther molestation.

In the mean time, Peregrine was not a little perplexed about the disposal of his sister whom he had rescued. He could

could not endure the thoughts of saddling the commodore with a new expence; and he was afraid of undertaking the charge of Julia, without his benefactor's advice and direction: for the present, however, he carried her to the house of a gentleman in the neighbourhood, whose lady was her godmother, where she was received with great tenderness and condolance; and he purposed to inquire for some creditable house, where she might be genteelly boarded in his absence, resolving to maintain her from the savings of his own allowance, which he thought might very well bear such deduction. But this intention was frustrated by the publication of the whole affair, which was divulged next day, and soon reached the ears of Trunnion, who chid his godson for having concealed the adventure; and, with the approbation of his wife, ordered him to bring Julia forthwith to the garrison. The young gentleman, with tears of gratitude in his eyes, explained his design of maintaining her at his own expence, and earnestly begged that he might not be deprived of that satisfaction. But his uncle was deaf to all his intreaties, and insisted upon her living in the garrison, though for no other reason than that of being company to her aunt; who, he observed, was lost for want of conversation.

Julia was accordingly brought home, and settled under the tuition of Mrs. Trunnion; who, whatever face she might put on the matter, could have dispensed with the society of her niece: though she was not without hope of gratifying her pique to Mrs. Pickle, by the intelligence she would receive from the daughter of that lady's œconomy and domestick behaviour. The mother herself seemed conscious of this advantage which her sister-in-law had now gained over her; being as much chagrined at the news of Julia's reception in the garrison, as if she had heard of her own husband's death. She even tortured her invention to propagate calumnies against the reputation of her own daughter, whom she slandered in all companies; she exclaimed against the commodore as an old ruffian who spirited up a rebellion among her children; and imputed the hospitality of his wife, in countenancing them, to nothing else but her inveterate enmity to their mother, whom they had disobliged. She now insisted, in the most peremptory terms, upon her husband's renouncing all commerce with the old lad of the castle and his adherents; and Mr. Gamaliel having by this time contracted other friendships, readily submitted to her will; nay, even refused to communicate with the commodore one night, when they happened to meet by accident at the publick house.

CHAP. XXXII.

THE COMMODORE SENDS A CHALLENGE TO GAMALIEL, AND IS IMPOSED UPON BY A WAGGISH INVENTION OF THE LIEUTENANT, PEREGRINE, AND GAUNTLET.

THIS affront Trunnion could by no means digest: he advised with the lieutenant upon the subject; and the result of their consultation was a defiance which the old commander sent to Pickle, demanding that he would meet him at such a place on horseback with a brace of pistols, and give satisfaction for the slight he had put upon him.

Nothing could have afforded more pleasure to Jack, than the acceptance of this challenge, which he delivered verbally to Mr. Gamaliel, who was called out from the club at Tunley's for that purpose. The nature of this message had an instantaneous effect upon the constitution of the pacifick Pickle, whose bowels yearned with apprehension, and underwent such violent agitation on the spot, that one would have thought the operation proceeded from some severe joke of the apothecary which he had swallowed in his beer.

The messenger despairing of a satisfactory answer, left him in this woeful condition; and being loth to lose any opportunity of raising the laugh against the commodore, went immediately and communicated the whole affair to the young gentlemen, intreating them, for the love of God, to concert some means of bringing old Hannibal into the field. The two friends relished the proposal, and after some deliberation, it was resolved that Hatchway should tell Trunnion his invitation was accepted by Gamaliel, who would meet him at the place appointed, with his second, to morrow in the twilight, because if either should fall, the other would have the better chance for escaping in the dark; that

Godfrey

Stothard del. Walker fculp.

Plate V. Publish'd as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Sept. 2. 1781.

Godfrey ſhould perſonate old Pickle's friend, and Peregrine repreſent his own father, while the lieutenant ſhould take care in loading the piſtols to keep out the ſhot, ſo that no damage might be done in the rencounter.

Theſe circumſtances being adjuſted, the lieutenant returned to his principal with a moſt thundering reply from his antagoniſt, whoſe courageous behaviour, though it could not intimidate, did not fail to aſtoniſh the commodore, who aſcribed it to the ſpirit of his wife, which had inſpired him. Trunnion that inſtant deſired his counſellor to prepare his cartridge-box, and order the quieteſt horſe in the ſtable to be kept ready ſaddled for the occaſion; his eye ſeemed to lighten with alacrity and pleaſure at the proſpect of ſmelling gunpowder once more before his death; and when Jack adviſed him to make his will, in caſe of accident, he rejected his counſel with diſdain, ſaying, 'What! doſt think 'that Hawſer Trunnion, who has ſtood 'the fire of ſo many floating batteries, 'runs any riſk from the louſy pops of 'a land-man? Thou ſhalt ſee! thou 'ſhalt ſee how I'll make him lower 'his top-ſails.' Next day, Peregrine and the ſoldier provided themſelves with horſes at the publick-houſe, from whence, at the deſtined hour, they rode to the field of battle, each of them being muffled in a great-coat, which, with the dimneſs of the light, effectually ſhielded them from the knowledge of the one-eyed commander, who having taken horſe, on pretence of enjoying the freſh air, ſoon appeared with Hatchway in his rear. When they came within ſight of each other, the ſeconds advanced, in order to divide the ground, and regulate the meaſures of the combat; when it was determined by mutual conſent, that two piſtols ſhould be diſcharged on each ſide, and that if neither ſhould prove deciſive, recourſe muſt be had to the broad-ſwords, in order to aſcertain the victory. Theſe articles being ſettled, the opponents rode forward to their reſpective ſtations, when Peregrine cocking his piſtol, and preſenting, counterfeited his father's voice, bidding Trunnion take care of his remaining eye. The commodore took his advice, being unwilling to hazard his day-light, and very deliberately oppoſed the patched ſide of his face to the muzzle of his antagoniſt's piece, deſiring him to do his duty without farther jaw. The young man accordingly fired, and the diſtance being ſmall, the wad of his piſtol took place with a ſmart ſtroke on the forehead of Trunnion, who miſtaking it for a ball, which he thought was lodged in his brain, ſpurred up his ſteed in a ſtate of deſperation towards his antagoniſt, and holding his piece within two yards of his body, let it off, without any regard to the laws of battle. Surprized and enraged to ſee it had made no impreſſion, he hallooed in a terrible tone, 'O, damn ye! you have 'got your netting ſtuffed, I ſee!' and advancing, diſcharged his ſecond piſtol ſo near his godſon's head, that had he not been defended by his great coat, the powder muſt have ſcorched his face. Having thus thrown away his fire, he remained at the mercy of Peregrine, who clapping the piece he had in reſerve to his head, commanded him to beg his life, and aſk pardon for his preſumption. The commodore made no reply to this imperious injunction, but dropping his piſtol, and unſheathing his broad-ſword in an inſtant, attacked our hero with ſuch incredible agility, that if he had not made ſhift to ward off the ſtroke with his piece, the adventure, in all likelihood, would have turned out a very tragical joke. Peregrine finding it would be in vain for him to think of drawing his weapon, or of ſtanding on the defenſive againſt this furious aggreſſor, very fairly clapped ſpurs to his nag, and ſought his ſafety in flight. Trunnion purſued him with infinite eagerneſs, and his ſteed being the better of the two, would have overtaken the fugitive to his peril, had he not been unfortunately encountered by the bough of a tree, that happened to ſtand on his blind-ſide, and incommoded him ſo much, that he was fain to quit his ſword, and lay hold on the mane, in order to maintain his ſeat. Perry, perceiving his diſaſter, wheeled about, and now finding leiſure to produce his weapon, returned upon his diſarmed foe, brandiſhing his Ferrara, threatening to make him ſhorter by the head, if he would not immediately crave quarter, and yield. There was nothing farther from the intention of the old gentleman than ſuch ſubmiſſion, which he flatly refuſed to pay; alledging, that he had already compelled his enemy to clap on all his ſails, and that his own preſent misfortune

misfortune was owing to accident; all one as if a ship should be attacked, after she had been obliged to heave her guns overboard in a storm.

Before Peregrine had time to answer this remonstrance, the lieutenant interposed, and taking cognizance of the case, established a truce, until he and the other second should discuss and decide upon the merits of the cause. They accordingly retired to a small distance, and after having conferred a few minutes, Hatchway returned, and pronounced the commodore vanquished by the chance of war.

Never was rage more transported than that which took possession of old Hannibal, when he heard the sentence: it was some time before he could utter aught, except the reproachful expression, 'You lye!' which he repeated more than twenty times, in a sort of delirious insensibility. When he recovered the farther use of his speech, he abused the arbitrators with such bitter invectives, renouncing their sentence, and appealing to another trial, that the confederates began to repent of having carried the joke so far; and Peregrine, in order to appease his choler, owned himself overcome.

This acknowledgment calmed the tumult of his wrath, though he could not for some days forgive the lieutenant; and the two young gentlemen rode back to Tunley's; while Hatchway, taking the commodore's horse by the bridle, reconducted him to his mansion, growling all the way to Jack for his unjust and unfriendly decree; though he could not help observing, as how he had made his words good, in making his adversary strike his top-sails: 'And yet,' said he, 'before God! I think the fellow's head is made of a wool-pack; for my shot rebounded from his face like a wad of spun-yarn from the walls of a ship. But if so be that son of a bitch of a tree hadn't come athwart my weather-bow, d'ye see! I'll be damned if I had'nt snapt his main-yard in the slings, and mayhap let out his bulge-water into the bargain.' He seemed particularly vain of this exploit, which dwelt upon his imagination, and was cherished as the child of his old age; for though he could not with decency rehearse it to the young men and his wife at supper, he gave shrewd hints of his own manhood, even at these years, and attested Hatchway as a voucher for his mettle; while the triumvirate, diverted by his vanity, enjoyed in secret the success of their imposition.

CHAP. XXXIII.

PEREGRINE TAKES LEAVE OF HIS AUNT AND SISTER; SETS OUT FROM THE GARRISON; PARTS WITH HIS UNCLE AND HATCHWAY ON THE ROAD; AND, WITH HIS GOVERNOR, ARRIVES IN SAFETY AT DOVER.

THIS, however, was the last effort of invention which they practised upon him; and every thing being now prepared for the departure of his godson, that hopeful youth in two days took leave of all his friends in the neighbourhood. He was closeted two whole hours with his aunt, who enriched him with many pious advices; recapitulated all the benefits which, through her means, had been conferred upon him since his infancy; cautioned him against the temptations of lewd women, who bring many a man to a morsel of bread; laid strict injunctions upon him to live in the fear of the Lord and the true protestant faith; to eschew quarrels and contention; to treat Mr. Jolter with reverence and regard; and, above all things, to abstain from the beastly sin of drunkenness, which exposed a man to the scorn and contempt of his fellow-creatures, and by divesting him of reason and reflection, renders him fit for all manner of vice and debauchery. She recommended to him œconomy and the care of his health; bade him remember the honour of his family; and in all the circumstances of his behaviour, assured him, that he might always depend upon the friendship and generosity of the commodore. Finally, presenting him with her own picture set in gold, and a hundred guineas from her privy purse, she embraced him affectionately, and wished him all manner of happiness and prosperity.

Being thus kindly dismissed by Mrs. Trunnion, he locked himself up with his sister Julia, whom he admonished to cultivate her aunt with the most complaisant and respectful attention, without stooping to any circumstance of submission

miſſion that ſhe ſhould judge unworthy of her practice; he proteſted that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to make her amends for the privilege ſhe had forfeited by her affection for him; intreated her to enter into no engagement without his knowledge and approbation; put into her hand the purſe which he had received from his aunt, to defray her pocket expences in his abſence; and parted from her, not without tears, after ſhe had for ſome minutes hung about his neck, kiſſing him and weeping in the moſt pathetick ſilence.

Having performed theſe duties of affection and conſanguinity over night, he went to bed, and was, by his own direction, called at four o'clock in the morning, when he found the poſt-chaiſe, coach, and riding-horſes, ready at the gate, his friends Gauntlet and Hatchway on foot, the commodore himſelf almoſt dreſſed, and every ſervant in the garriſon aſſembled in the yard, to wiſh him a good journey. Our hero ſhook each of theſe humble friends by the hand, tipping them at the ſame time with marks of his bounty; and was very much ſurprized when he could not perceive his old attendant Pipes among the number. When he expreſſed his wonder at this diſreſpectful omiſſion of Tom, ſome of thoſe preſent ran to his chamber, in order to give him a call, but his hammock and room were both deſerted, and they ſoon returned with an account of his having eloped. Peregrine was diſturbed at this information, believing that the fellow had taken ſome deſperate courſe in conſequence of his being diſmiſſed from his ſervice, and began to wiſh that he had indulged his inclination, by retaining him ſtill about his perſon. However, as there was now no other remedy, he recommended him ſtrenuouſly to the particular favour and diſtinction of his uncle and Hatchway, in caſe he ſhould appear again; and as he went out of the gate, was ſaluted with three cheers by all the domeſticks in the family. The commodore, Gauntlet, lieutenant, Peregrine, and Jolter, went into the coach together, that they might enjoy each other's converſation as much as poſſible, reſolving to breakfaſt at an inn upon the road, where Trunnion and Hatchway intended to bid our adventurer farewel. The valet de chambre got into the poſt-chaiſe, the French lacquey rode one horſe and led another, one of the valets of the garriſon mounted at the back of the coach; and thus the cavalcade ſet out on the road to Dover. As the commodore could not bear the fatigue of jolting, they travelled at an eaſy pace during the firſt ſtage; ſo that the old gentleman had an opportunity of communicating his exhortations to his godſon, with regard to his conduct abroad; he adviſed him, now that he was going into foreign parts, to be upon his guard againſt the fair weather of the French politeſſe, which was no more to be truſted than a whirlpool at ſea. He obſerved that many young men had gone to Paris with good cargoes of ſenſe, and returned with a great deal of canvas, and no ballaſt at all; whereby they became crank all the days of their lives, and ſometimes carried their keels above water. He deſired Mr. Jolter to keep his pupil out of the clutches of thoſe ſharking prieſts who lie in wait to make converts of all young ſtrangers, and in a particular manner cautioned the youth againſt carnal converſation with the Pariſian dames, who, he underſtood, were no better than gaudy fire-ſhips ready primed with death and deſtruction.

Peregrine liſtened with great reſpect, thanking him for his kind admonitions, which he faithfully promiſed to obſerve. They halted and breakfaſted at the end of the ſtage, where Jolter provided himſelf with a horſe, and the commodore ſettled the method of correſponding with his nephew. The minute of parting being arrived, the old commander wrung his godſon by the hand, ſaying, 'I wiſh thee a proſperous voyage and 'good cheer, my lad! my timbers are 'now a little crazy, d'ye ſee; and God 'knows if I ſhall keep afloat till ſuch 'time as I ſee thee again; but how-'ſomever, hap what will, thou wilt 'find thyſelf in a condition to keep in 'the line with the beſt of thy fellows.' He then reminded Gauntlet of his promiſe to call at the garriſon in his return from Dover, and imparted ſomething in a whiſper to the governor, while Jack Hatchway, unable to ſpeak, pulled his hat over his eyes, and ſqueezing Peregrine by the hand, gave him an iron piſtol of curious workmanſhip, as a

memorial of his friendſhip. Our youth, who was not unmoved on this occaſion, received the pledge, which he acknowledged with the preſent of a ſilver tobacco-box, bought for that purpoſe; and the two lads of the caſtle getting into the coach, were driven homewards in a ſtate of ſilent dejection.

Godfrey and Peregrine ſeated themſelves in the poſt-chaiſe, and Jolter, the valet de chambre, and lacquey, beſtriding their beaſts, they proceeded for the place of their deſtination, at which they arrived in ſafety that ſame night, and beſpoke a paſſage in the packet-boat which was to ſail next day.

CHAP. XXXIV.

HE ADJUSTS THE METHOD OF HIS CORRESPONDENCE WITH GAUNTLET; MEETS BY ACCIDENT WITH AN ITALIAN CHARLATAN AND A CERTAIN APOTHECARY, WHO PROVES TO BE A NOTED CHARACTER.

THERE the two friends adjuſted the articles of their future correſpondence, and Peregrine having written a letter to his miſtreſs, wherein he renewed his former vows of eternal fidelity, it was entruſted to the care of her brother, while Mr. Jolter, at the deſire of his pupil, provided an elegant ſupper, and ſome excellent Burgundy, that they might ſpend this eve of his departure with the greater enjoyment.

Things being thus diſpoſed, and a ſervant employed in laying the cloth, their ears were of a ſudden invaded by a ſtrange tumultuous noiſe in the next room, occaſioned by the overthrow of tables, chairs, and glaſſes, with odd unintelligible exclamations in broken French, and a jargon of threats in the Welch dialect. Our young gentleman ran immediately into the apartment from whence this clamour ſeemed to proceed, and found a thin, meagre, ſwarthy figure, gaſping in all the agony of fear, under the hands of a ſquat, thick, hard-featured man, who collared him with great demonſtrations of wrath, ſaying, 'If you was as mighty a magician as 'Owen Glendower, or the witch of 'Endor, look you, ay, or as Paul Beor 'himſelf, I will meke pold, by the aſ'ſiſtance of Got, and in his majeſty's 'naam, to ſeize, and ſecure, and con'fine, and confront you, until ſuch 'time as you ſuffer, and endure, and 'undergo, the pains and penalties of 'the law, for your diabolical practices. '—Shentlements,' added he, turning to our adventurers, 'I take you to witneſs 'that I proteſt, and aſſert, and avow, 'that this perſon is as pig a necroman'cer as you would deſire to behold; 'and I ſupplicate, and beſeech, and in'treat of you, that he may be brought 'before his petters, and compelled to 'give an account of his compact and 'commerce with the imps of darkneſs, 'look you; for as I am a chriſtian 'ſoul, and hope for joyful reſurrection, 'I have this pleſſed evening ſeen him 'perform ſuch things as could not be 'done without the aid, and inſtruction, 'and connivance, of the tevil.'

Gauntlet ſeemed to enter into the ſentiments of this Welch reformer, and actually laid hold on the delinquent's ſhoulder, crying, 'Damn the raſcal! 'I'll lay any wager that he's a Jeſuit; 'for none of his order travel without a 'familiar.' But Peregrine, who looked upon the affair in another point of view, interpoſed in behalf of the ſtranger, whom he freed from his aggreſſors, obſerving that there was no occaſion to uſe violence; and aſked in French what he had done to incur the cenſure of the informer. The poor foreigner, more dead than alive, anſwered, that he was an Italian charlatan, who had practiſed with ſome reputation in Padua, until he had the misfortune to attract the notice of the Inquiſition, by exhibiting certain wonderful performances by his ſkill in natural knowledge, which that tribunal conſidered as the effects of ſorcery, and perſecuted him accordingly; ſo that he had been fain to make a precipitate retreat into France; where not finding his account in his talents, he was now arrived in England, with a view of practiſing his art in London; and that in conſequence of a ſpecimen which he had given to a company below, the cholerick gentleman had followed him up ſtairs to his own apartment, and aſſaulted him in that inhoſpitable manner. He therefore earneſtly begged that our hero would take him under his protection; and if he entertained the leaſt ſuſpicion of his employing preternatural means

means in the operations of his art, he would freely communicate all the ſecrets in his poſſeſſion.

The youth diſpelled his apprehenſion, by aſſuring him that he was in no danger of ſuffering for his art in England; where, if ever he ſhould be queſtioned by the zeal of ſuperſtitious individuals, he had nothing to do but appeal to the next juſtice of the peace, who would immediately acquit him of the charge, and puniſh his accuſers for their impertinence and indiſcretion.

He then told Gauntlet and the Welchman, that the ſtranger had a good action againſt them for an aſſault, by virtue of an act of parliament, which makes it criminal for any perſon to accuſe another of ſorcery and witchcraft, theſe idle notions being now juſtly exploded by all ſenſible men. Mr. Jolter, who had by this time joined the company, could not help ſignifying his diſſent from this opinion of his pupil, which he endeavoured to invalidate by the authority of ſcripture, quotations from the fathers, and the confeſſion of many wretches who ſuffered death for having carried on correſpondence with evil ſpirits, together with the evidence of Satan's Inviſible World, and Moreton's Hiſtory of Witchcraft.

The ſoldier corroborated theſe teſtimonies by facts that had happened within the ſphere of his own knowledge, and in particular mentioned the caſe of an old woman of the pariſh in which he was born, who uſed to transform herſelf into the ſhapes of ſundry animals, and was at laſt killed by ſmall-ſhot in the character of an hare. The Welchman thus ſupported, expreſſed his ſurprize at hearing that the legiſlature had ſhewn ſuch tenderneſs for criminals of ſo dark a hue; and offered to prove, by undeniable inſtances, that there was not a mountain in Wales, which had not been in his memory the ſcene of necromancy and witchcraft; 'Wherefore,' ſaid he, 'I am aſſuredly 'more than apove aſtoniſhed, and con'founded, and concerned, that the par'liament of Great Pritain ſhould in 'their great wiſdoms, and their pru'dence, and their penetration, give 'countenance and encouragement, look 'you, to the works of darkneſs, and 'the empire of Pelzepup; ofer and 'apove the evidence of holy writ, and 'thoſe writers who have been quoted 'by that aggurate and learned ſhentle'man, we are informed by profane hiſ'tory, of the pribbles and pranks of 'the old ſerpent, in the bortents and 'oragles of antiquity; as you will find 'in that moſt excellent hiſtorian Boly'pius, and Titus Liſius; ay, and more'ofer, in the Commentaries of Julius 'Cæſar himſelf; who, as the ole world 'knows, was a moſt famous, and a 'moſt ſaliant, and a moſt wiſe, and a 'moſt prudent, and a moſt fortunate 'chieftan, and a moſt renowned ora'tor; ay, and a moſt elegant writer 'to boot.'

Peregrine did not think proper to enter the liſts of diſpute with three ſuch obſtinate antagoniſts; but contented himſelf with ſaying, that he believed it would be no difficult matter to impugn the arguments they had advanced; though he did not find himſelf at all diſpoſed to undertake the taſk, which muſt of courſe break in upon the evening's entertainment. He therefore invited the Italian to ſupper, and aſked the ſame favour of his accuſer, who ſeemed to have ſomething curious and characteriſtick in his manner and diſpoſition; reſolving to make himſelf an eye-witneſs of thoſe ſurprizing feats, which had given offence to the cholerick Briton. This ſcrupulous gentleman thanked our hero for his courteſy, but declined communicating with the ſtranger, until his character ſhould be farther explained; upon which his inviter, after ſome converſation with the charlatan, aſſured him that he would himſelf undertake for the innocence of his art; and then he was prevailed upon to favour them with his company.

In the courſe of the converſation, Peregrine learned that the Welchman was a ſurgeon of Canterbury, who had been called into a conſultation at Dover, and underſtanding that his name was Morgan, took the liberty of aſking if he was not the perſon ſo reſpectfully mentioned in the Adventures of Roderick Random. Mr. Morgan aſſumed a look of gravity and importance at this interrogation, and ſcrewing up his mouth, anſwered, 'Mr. Rantum, my 'goot Sir, I believe upon my con'ſcience and ſalfation, is my very goot 'frient and well-wiſher; and he and I 'have been companions, and meſs'mates, and fellow-ſufferers, look you; 'but nevertheleſs for all that, perad-

'venture, he hath not pehaved with ſo 'much complaiſance, and affability, and 'reſpect, as I might have expected from 'him; pecauſe he hath revealed, and 'tivulged, and bupliſhed, our private 'affairs, without my knowledge, and 'privity, and conſent; but as Got is my 'Saviour, I think he had no evil inten-'tion in his pelly; and though there 'be certain perſons, look you, who, 'as I am told, take upon them to laugh 'at his deſcriptions of my perſon, de-'portment, and converſation, I do af-'firm and maintain, and inſiſt, with my 'heart, and my plood, and my ſoul, that 'thoſe perſons are no petter than ig-'norant aſſes, and that they know not 'how to diſcern, and diſtinguiſh, and 'define, true ridicule, or as Ariſtotle 'calls it, the *to Geloion*, no more, look 'you, than a herd of mountain-goats; 'for I will make pold to obſerve, and 'I hope this goot company will be of 'the ſame opinion, that there is nothing 'ſaid of me in that performance which 'is unworthy of a Chriſtian and a ſhen-'tleman.'

Our young gentleman and his friends acquieſced in the juſtneſs of his obſerva-tion. Peregrine particularly aſſured him, that from reading the book, he had conceived the utmoſt regard and ve-neration for his character; and that he thought himſelf extremely fortunate in having this opportunity of enjoying his converſation. Morgan, not a little proud of ſuch advances from a perſon of Peregrine's appearance, returned the compliment with a profuſion of civility, and in the warmth of acknowledgment, expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing him and his company at his houſe in Canterbury: 'I will not pretend, or preſume, kind 'Sir,' ſaid he, 'to entertain you ac-'cording to your merits and deſerts; 'but you ſhall be as welcome to my 'poor cottage, and my wife and fami-'ly, as the Prince of Wales himſelf; 'and it ſhall go hard, if one way or 'other, I do not find ways and means 'of making you confeſs that there is 'ſome goot fellowſhip in an Ancient Pri-'ton: for though I am no petter than 'a ſimple apothecary, I have as goot 'plood circulating in my veins as any 'he in the county; and I can deſcribe, 'and delineate, and demonſtrate, my 'pedigree to the ſatisfaction of the 'ole 'orld; and moreofer, by Got's goot 'providence and aſſiſtance, I can afford 'to treat my friend with a joint of goot 'mutton, and a pottle of excellent wine, 'and no tradeſman can peard me with 'a bill.' He was congratulated on his happy ſituation, and aſſured that our youth would viſit him on his return from France, provided he ſhould take Canterbury in his route. As Peregrine manifeſted an inclination of being ac-quainted with the ſtate of his affairs, he very complaiſantly ſatisfied his curi-oſity, by giving him to know, that his ſpouſe had left off breeding after having bleſſed him with two boys and a girl, who were ſtill alive and well; that he lived in good eſteem with his neigh-bours, and by his practice, which was conſiderably extended immediately after the publication of Roderick Random, had ſaved ſome thouſand pounds. He had begun to think of retiring among his own relations in Glamorganſhire, though his wife had made objection to this propoſal, and oppoſed the ex-ecution of it with ſuch obſtinacy, that he had been at infinite pains in aſ-ſerting his own prerogative, by con-vincing her both from reaſon and ex-ample, that he was king and prieſt in his own family, and that ſhe owed the moſt implicit ſubmiſſion to his will. He likewiſe informed the company, that he had lately ſeen his friend Roderick, who had come from London on purpoſe to viſit him, after having gained his law-ſuit with Mr. Topehall, who was obliged to pay Narciſſa's fortune; that Mr. Random, in all appearance, led a very happy life in the converſation of his fa-ther and bed-fellow, by whom he en-joyed a ſon and daughter; and that Morgan had received in a preſent from him, a piece of very fine linen of his wife's own making, ſeveral kits of ſal-mon, and two caſks of pickled pork, the moſt delicate he had ever taſted; to-gether with a barrel of excellent herrings for ſalmagundy, which he knew to be his favourite diſh.

This topick of converſation being diſcuſſed, the Italian was deſired to ex-hibit a ſpecimen of his art, and in a few minutes conducted the company into the next room, where, to their great aſto-niſhment and affright, they beheld a thouſand ſerpents winding along the cieling. Morgan, ſtruck with this phe-nomenon, which he had not ſeen before, began to utter exorciſms with great de-votion, Mr. Jolter ran terrified out of

the

the room, Gauntlet drew his hanger, and Peregrine himself was disconcerted. The operator perceiving their confusion, desired them to retire, and calling them back in an instant, there was not a viper to be seen. He raised their admiration by sundry other performances, and the Welchman's former opinion and abhorrence of his character began to recur; when, in consideration of the civility with which he had been treated, this Italian imparted to them all the methods by which he had acted such wonders, that were no other than the effects of natural causes curiously combined; so that Morgan became a convert to his skill, asked pardon for the suspicion he had entertained, and invited the stranger to pass a few days with him at Canterbury. The scruples of Godfrey and Jolter were removed at the same time, and Peregrine testified his satisfaction by a handsome gratuity which he bestowed upon their entertainer.

The evening being spent in this sociable manner, every man retired to his respective chamber, and next morning they breakfasted together; when Morgan declared he would stay till he should see our hero fairly embarked, that he might have the pleasure of Mr. Gauntlet's company to his own habitation: meanwhile, by the skipper's advice, the servants were ordered to carry a store of wine and provision on board in case of accident; and as the packet-boat could not sail before one o'clock, the company walked up hill to visit the castle, where they saw the sword of Julius Cæsar, and Queen Elizabeth's pocket-pistol; repeated Shakespeare's description, while they surveyed the chalky cliffs on each side; and cast their eyes towards the city of Calais, that was obscured by a thick cloud, which did not much regale their eye-sight, because it seemed to portend foul weather.

Having viewed every thing remarkable in this place, they returned to the pier; where, after the compliments of parting, and an affectionate embrace between the two young gentlemen, Peregrine and his governor stepped aboard, the sails were hoisted, and they went to sea with a fair wind, while Godfrey, Morgan, and the conjuror, walked back to the inn, from whence they set out for Canterbury before dinner.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

HE EMBARKS FOR FRANCE; IS OVERTAKEN BY A STORM; IS SURPRIZED WITH THE APPEARANCE OF PIPES; LANDS AT CALAIS, AND HAS AN AFFAIR WITH THE OFFICERS OF THE CUSTOM-HOUSE.

SCARCE had the veſſel proceeded two leagues on the paſſage, when the wind ſhifting, blew directly in their teeth; ſo that they were obliged to haul upon a wind, and alter their courſe. The ſea running pretty high at the ſame time, our hero, who was below in his cabbin, began to be ſqueamiſh, and in conſequence of the ſkipper's advice, went upon deck for the comfort of his ſtomach; while the governor, experienced in theſe diſaſters, ſlipped into bed, where he lay at his eaſe, amuſing himſelf with a treatiſe on the Cycloid, with algebraical demonſtrations, which never failed to engage his imagination in the moſt agreeable manner.

In the mean time the wind increaſed to a very hard gale, the veſſel pitched with great violence, the ſea waſhed over the decks, the maſter was alarmed, the crew were confounded, the paſſengers were overwhelmed with ſickneſs and fear, and univerſal diſtraction enſued. In the midſt of this uproar, Peregrine holding faſt by the taffrill, and looking ruefully a-head, the countenance of Pipes preſented itſelf to his aſtoniſhed view, riſing as it were from the hold of the ſhip. At firſt he imagined it was a fear-formed ſhadow of his own brain; though he did not long remain in this error, but plainly perceived it was no other than the real perſon of Thomas, who jumping on the quarter-deck, took charge of the helm, and dictated to the ſailors with as much authority as if he had been commander of the ſhip. The ſkipper looked upon him as an angel ſent to his aſſiſtance, and the crew ſoon diſcovering him to be a thorough-bred ſeaman, notwithſtanding his livery-frock, obeyed his orders with ſuch alacrity, that in a little time the confuſion vaniſhed, and every neceſſary ſtep was taken to weather the gale.

Our young gentleman immediately conceived the meaning of Tom's appearance on board, and when the tumult was a little ſubſided, went up and encouraged him to exert himſelf for the preſervation of the ſhip, promiſing to take him again into his ſervice, from which he ſhould never be diſmiſſed, except at his own deſire. This aſſurance had a ſurprizing effect upon Pipes, who, though he made no manner of reply, thruſt the helm into the maſter's hand, ſaying, 'Here, you old bum-boat woman, take hold of the tiller, and keep her thus boy, thus!' and ſkipped about the veſſel, trimming the ſails, and managing

naging the ropes with such agility and skill, that every body on deck stood amazed at his dexterity.

Mr. Jolter was far from being unconcerned at the uncommon motion of the vessel, the singing of the wind, and the uproar which he heard above him; he looked towards the cabbin-door with the most fearful expectation, in hope of seeing some person who could give some account of the weather, and what was doing upon deck; but not a soul appeared, and he was too well acquainted with the disposition of his own bowels to make the least alteration in his attitude. When he had lain a good while in all the agony of suspense, the boy tumbled headlong into his apartment, with such noise, that he believed the mast had gone by the board, and starting upright in his bed, asked with all the symptoms of horror, what was the cause of that disturbance. The boy, half stunned by his fall, answered in a dolorous tone, 'I'm come to put up the 'dead-lights.' At mention of dead-lights, the meaning of which he did not understand, the poor governor's heart died within him; he shivered with despair. His recollection forsaking him, he fell upon his knees in the bed, and fixing his eyes upon the book which was in his hand, began to pronounce aloud with great fervour, 'The time 'of a compleat oscillation in the cy-'cloid, is to the time in which a body 'would fall through the axis of the 'cycloid D V, as the circumference of 'a circle to it's diameter—' He would in all liklihood have proceeded with the demonstration of this proposition, had he not been seized with such a qualm as compelled him to drop the book, and accomodate himself to the emergency of his distemper; he therefore stretched himself at full length, and putting up ejaculations to Heaven, began to prepare himself for his latter-end; when all of a sudden, the noise above was intermitted, and as he could not conceive the cause of this tremendous silence, he imagined that either the men were washed over-board, or that despairing of safety, they had ceased to oppose the tempest. While he was harrowed by this miserable uncertainty, which, however, was not altogether unenlightened by some scattered rays of hope, the master entered the cabbin; then he asked with a voice half extinguished by fear, how matters went upon deck; and the skipper with a large bottle of brandy applied to his mouth, answered in a hollow tone, 'All's over now, master.' Upon which, Mr. Jolter giving himself over for lost, exclaimed with the utmost horror, 'Lord have mercy upon 'us! Christ have mercy upon us!' and repeated this supplication as it were mechanically, until the master undeceived him, by explaining the meaning of what he had said, and assuring him that the squall was over.

Such a sudden transition from fear to joy, occasioned a violent agitation both in his mind and body; and it was a full quarter of an hour before he recovered the right use of his organs. By this time the weather cleared up, the wind began to blow again from the right corner, and the spires of Calais appeared at the distance of five leagues; so that the countenances of all on board were lighted up with joyous expectation; and Peregrine venturing to go down into the cabbin, comforted his governor with an account of the happy turn of their affairs.

Jolter, transported with the thought of a speedy landing, began to launch out in praise of that country for which they were bound. He observed, that France was the land of politeness and hospitality, which were conspicuous in the behaviour of all ranks and degrees, from the peer to the peasant; that a gentleman and a foreigner, far from being insulted and imposed upon by the lower class of people, as in England, was treated with the utmost reverence, candour, and respect; that their fields were fertile, their climate pure and healthy, their farmers rich and industrious, and the subjects in general the happiest of men. He would have prosecuted this favourite theme still farther, had not his pupil been obliged to run upon deck, in consequence of certain warnings he received from his stomach.

The skipper seeing his condition, very honestly reminded him of the cold ham and fowls, with a basket of wine which he had ordered to be sent on board, and asked if he would have the cloth laid below. He could not have chosen a more seasonable opportunity of manifesting his own disinterestedness. Peregrine made wry faces at the mention of food, bidding him, for Christ's sake, talk no more on that subject. He then descend-

ed

ed into the cabbin, and put the ſame queſtion to Mr. Jolter, who, he knew, entertained the ſame abhorrence for his propoſal; and meeting with the like reception from him, went between decks, and repeated his courteous proffer to the valet de chambre and lacquey, who lay ſprawling in all the pangs of a double evacuation, and rejected his civility with the moſt horrible loathing. Thus baffled in all his kind endeavours, he ordered his boy to ſecure the proviſion in one of his own lockers, according to the cuſtom of the ſhip.

It being low water when they arrived on the French coaſt, the veſſel could not enter the harbour, and they were obliged to bring to, and wait for a boat, which in leſs than half an hour came along-ſide from the ſhore. Mr. Jolter now came upon deck; and ſnuffing up the French air with ſymptoms of infinite ſatisfaction, aſked of the boatman, with the friendlya ppellation of, *mes enfans*, what they demanded for tranſporting him and his pupil, with their baggage, to the pier. But how was he diſconcerted, when thoſe polite, candid, reaſonable watermen, demanded a Louis-d'or for that ſervice! Peregrine, with a ſarcaſtick ſneer, obſerved, that he already began to perceive the juſtice of his encomiums on the French; and the diſappointed governor could ſay nothing in his own vindication, but that they were debauched by their intercourſe with the inhabitants of Dover. His pupil, however, was ſo much offended at their extortion, that he abſolutely refuſed to employ them, even when they abated one half in their demand, and ſwore he would ſtay on board till the packet ſhould be able to enter the harbour, rather than encourage ſuch impoſition.

The maſter, who in all probability had ſome ſort of fellow-feeling with the boatmen, in vain repreſented, that he could not with ſafety lie to, or anchor upon a lee-ſhore; our hero, having conſulted Pipes, anſwered, that he had hired his veſſel to tranſport him to Calais, and that he would oblige him to perform what he had undertaken.

The ſkipper, very much mortified at this peremptory reply, which was not over and above agreeable to Mr. Jolter, diſmiſſed the boat, notwithſtanding the ſolicitations and condeſcenſion of the watermen. Running a little farther in ſhore, they came to an anchor, and waited till there was water enough to float them over the bar. Then they ſtood into the harbour; and our gentleman, with his attendants and baggage, were landed on the pier by the ſailors, whom he liberally rewarded for their trouble.

He was immediately plied by a great number of porters; who, like ſo many hungry wolves, laid hold on his luggage, and began to carry it off piecemeal, without his order or direction. Incenſed at this officious inſolence, he commanded them to deſiſt, with many oaths and opprobrious terms that his anger ſuggeſted; and perceiving that one of them did not ſeem to pay any regard to what he ſaid, but marched off with his burden, he ſnatched a cudgel out of his lacquey's hand, and overtaking the fellow in a twinkling, brought him to the ground with one blow. He was inſtantly ſurrounded by the whole congregation of this *canaille*, who reſented the injury which their brother had ſuſtained, and would have taken immediate ſatisfaction of the aggreſſor, had not Pipes, ſeeing his maſter involved, brought the whole crew to his aſſiſtance, and exerted himſelf ſo manfully, that the enemy were obliged to retreat with many marks of defeat, and menaces of intereſting the commandant in their quarrel. Jolter, who knew and dreaded the power of the French governor, began to ſhake with apprehenſion, when he heard their repeated threats: but they durſt not apply to this magiſtrate; who, upon a fair repreſentation of the caſe, would have puniſhed them ſeverely for their rapacious and inſolent behaviour. Peregrine, without farther moleſtation, availed himſelf of his own attendants, who ſhouldered his baggage, and followed him to the gate; where they were ſtopped by the centinels, until their names ſhould be regiſtered.

Mr. Jolter, who had undergone this examination before, reſolved to profit by his experience, and cunningly repreſented his pupil as a young Engliſh lord. This intimation, ſupported by the appearance of his equipage, was no ſooner communicated to the officer, than he turned out the guard, and ordered his ſoldiers to reſt upon their arms, while his lordſhip paſſed in great ſtate to the *Lion d'Argent*, where he took up his lodging for the night, reſolving to ſet

out for Paris next morning in a poſt-chaiſe.

The governor triumphed greatly in this piece of complaiſance and reſpect with which they had been honoured, and reſumed his beloved topick of diſcourſe, in applauding the method and ſubordination of the French government, which was better calculated for maintaining order, and protecting the people, than any conſtitution upon earth. Of their courteous attention to ſtrangers, there needed no other proof than the compliment which had been paid to them, together with the governor's connivance at Peregrine's employing his own ſervants in carrying the baggage to the inn, contrary to the privilege of the inhabitants.

While he expatiated with a remarkable degree of ſelf-indulgence on this ſubject, the valet de chambre coming into the room, interrupted his harangue, by telling his maſter, that their trunks and portmanteaus muſt be carried to the cuſtom-houſe, in order to be ſearched, and ſealed with lead, which muſt remain untouched until their arrival at Paris.

Peregrine made no objection to this practice, which was in itſelf reaſonable enough; but when he underſtood that the gate was beſieged by another multitude of porters, who inſiſted upon their right of carrying the goods, and alſo of fixing their own price, he abſolutely refuſed to comply with their demand. Nay, he chaſtiſed ſome of the moſt clamorous among them with his foot, and told them, that if their cuſtom-houſe officers had a mind to examine his baggage, they might come to the inn for that purpoſe. The valet de chambre was abaſhed at this boldneſs of his maſter's behaviour, which the lacquey, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders, obſerved, was *bien a l'Angloiſe*; while the governor repreſented it as an indignity to the whole nation, and endeavoured to perſuade his pupil to comply with the cuſtom of the place. But Peregrine's natural haughtineſs of diſpoſition hindered him from giving ear to Jolter's wholeſome advice; and in leſs than half an hour they obſerved a file of muſqueteers marching up to the gate. At ſight of this detachment the tutor trembled, the valet grew pale, and the lacquey croſſed himſelf; but our hero, without exhibiting any other ſymptoms than thoſe of indignation, met them on the threſhold, and with a ferocious air demanded their buſineſs. The corporal who commanded the file anſwered with great deliberation, that he had orders to convey his baggage to the cuſtom-houſe; and ſeeing the trunks ſtanding in the entry, placed his men between them and the owner, while the porters that followed took them up, and proceeded to the Douane without oppoſition.

Pickle was not mad enough to diſpute the authority of this meſſage: but, in order to gall, and ſpecify his contempt for thoſe who brought it, he called aloud to his valet, deſiring him, in French, to accompany his things, and ſee that none of his linen and effects ſhould be ſtolen by the ſearchers. The corporal, mortified at this ſatirical inſinuation, darted a look of reſentment at the author, as if he had been intereſted for the glory of his nation; and told him, that he could perceive he was a ſtranger in France, or elſe he would have ſaved himſelf the trouble of ſuch a needleſs precaution.

CHAP. II.

HE MAKES A FRUITLESS ATTEMPT IN GALLANTRY; DEPARTS FOR BOULOGNE, WHERE HE SPENDS THE EVENING WITH CERTAIN ENGLISH EXILES.

HAVING thus yielded to the hand of power, he enquired if there was any other Engliſh company in the houſe; when underſtanding that a gentleman and lady lodged in the next apartment, and had beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Paris, he ordered Pipes to ingratiate himſelf with their footman, and, if poſſible, learn their names and condition, while he and Mr. Jolter, attended by the lacquey, took a turn round the ramparts, and viewed the particulars of the fortification.

Tom was ſo very ſucceſsful in his inquiry, that when his maſter returned, he was able to give him a very ſatisfactory account of his fellow-lodgers, in conſequence of having treated his brother with a bottle of wine. The people in queſtion were a gentleman and his lady lately arrived from England, in their way to Paris. The huſband was a man

a man of good fortune, who had been a libertine in his youth, and a profeſſed declaimer againſt matrimony. He wanted neither ſenſe nor experience; and piqued himſelf in particular upon his art of avoiding the ſnares of the female ſex, in which he pretended to be deeply verſed. But, notwithſtanding all his caution and ſkill, he had lately fallen a ſacrifice to the attractions of an oyſter-wench, who had found means to decoy him into the bands of wedlock; and, in order to evade the compliments and congratulations of his friends and acquaintance, he had come ſo far on a tour to Paris, where he intended to initiate his ſpouſe in the *beau monde*. In the mean time he choſe to live upon the reſerve, becauſe her natural talents had as yet received but little cultivation; and he had not the moſt implicit confidence in her virtue and diſcretion, which, it ſeems, had like to have yielded to the addreſſes of an officer at Canterbury, who had made ſhift to inſinuate himſelf into her acquaintance and favour.

Peregrine's curioſity being inflamed by this information, he lounged about the yard, in hopes of ſeeing the dulcinea who had captivated the old batchelor; and at length obſerving her at a window, took the liberty of bowing to her with great reſpect. She returned the compliment with a curtſey, and appeared ſo decent in her dreſs and manner, that unleſs he had been previouſly informed of her former life and converſation, he never would have dreamed that her education was different from that of other ladies of faſhion; ſo eaſy is it to acquire that external deportment on which people of condition value themſelves ſo much. Not but that Mr. Pickle pretended to diſtinguiſh a certain vulgar audacity in her countenance, which in a lady of birth and fortune would have paſſed for an agreeable vivacity that enlivens the aſpect, and gives poignancy to every feature; but as ſhe poſſeſſed a pair of fine eyes, and a clear complexion overſpread with the glow of health, which never fails of recommending the owner, he could not help gazing at her with deſire, and forming the deſign of making a conqueſt of her heart. With this view, he ſent his compliments to her huſband, whoſe name was Hornbeck, with an intimation, that he propoſed to ſet out next day for Paris; and as he underſtood that he was reſolved upon the ſame journey, he ſhould be extremely glad of his company on the road, if he was not better engaged. Hornbeck, who in all probability did not chuſe to accommodate his wife with a ſquire of our hero's appearance, ſent a civil anſwer to his meſſage, profeſſing infinite mortification at his being unable to embrace the favour of this kind offer, by reaſon of the indiſpoſition of his wife, who, he was afraid, would not be in a condition for ſome days to bear the fatigue of travelling. This rebuff, which Peregrine aſcribed to the huſband's jealouſy, ſtifled his project in embryo: he ordered his French ſervant to take a place for himſelf in the diligence, where all his luggage was ſtowed, except a ſmall trunk with ſome linen and other neceſſaries, that was fixed upon the poſt-chaiſe which they hired of the landlord; and early next morning he and Mr. Jolter departed from Calais, attended by his valet de chamber and Pipes, on horſeback. They proceeded without any accident as far as Boulogne, where they breakfaſted and viſited old father Graham, a Scottiſh gentleman of the governor's acquaintance, who had lived as a capuchin in that place for the ſpace of threeſcore years, and during that period conformed to all the auſterities of the order with the moſt rigorous exactneſs; being equally remarkable for the frankneſs of his converſation, the humanity of his diſpoſition, and the ſimplicity of his manners. From Boulogne they took their departure about noon, and as they propoſed to ſleep that night at Abbé Ville, commanded the poſtilion to drive with extraordinary ſpeed. Perhaps it was well for his cattle that the axle-tree gave way, and the chaiſe of courſe overturned, before they had travelled one third part of the ſtage.

This accident compelled them to return to the place from whence they ſet out; and as they could not procure another convenience, they found themſelves under the neceſſity of ſtaying till their chaiſe could be refitted. Underſtanding that this operation would detain them a whole day, our young gentleman had recourſe to his patience, and demanded to know what they would have for dinner; the garçon or waiter thus queſtioned, vaniſhed in a moment, and immediately they were ſurprized with the appearance of a ſtrange figure, which, from the extravagance of it's dreſs and

geſticulation, Peregrine miſtook for a madman of the growth of France. This phantom, (which, by the bye, happened to be no other than the cook) was a tall, long-legged, meagre, ſwarthy fellow, that ſtooped very much: his cheek-bones were remarkably raiſed, his noſe bent into the ſhape and ſize of a powder-horn, and the ſockets of his eyes as raw round the edges as if the ſkin had been pared off. On his head he wore an handkerchief, which had once been white, and now ſerved to cover the upper part of a black periwig, to which was attached a bag, at leaſt a foot ſquare, with a ſolitaire and roſe that ſtuck upon each ſide to his ear; ſo that he looked like a criminal on the pillory. His back was accommodated with a linen waiſtcoat, his hands adorned with long ruffles of the ſame piece; his middle was girded by an apron tucked up, that it might not conceal his white ſilk ſtockings rolled; and at his entrance he brandiſhed a bloody weapon full three feet in length. Peregrine, when he firſt ſaw him approach in this menacing attitude, put himſelf upon his guard; but being informed of his quality, peruſed his bill of fare, and having beſpoke three or four things for dinner, walked out with Mr. Jolter to view both towns, which they had not leiſure to conſider minutely before. In their return from the harbour they met with four or five gentlemen, all of whom ſeemed to look with an air of dejection, and perceiving our hero and his governor to be Engliſh by their dreſs, bowed with great reſpect as they paſſed. Pickle, who was naturally compaſſionate, felt an emotion of ſympathy; and ſeeing a perſon, who by his habit he judged to be one of their ſervants, accoſted him in Engliſh, and aſked who the gentlemen were. The lacquey gave him to underſtand that they were his own countrymen, exiled from their native homes, in conſequence of their adherence to an unfortunate and ruined cauſe; and that they were gone to the ſea ſide, according to their daily practice, in order to indulge their longing eyes, with a proſpect of the white cliffs of Albion, which they muſt never more approach.

Though our young gentleman differed widely from them in point of political principles, he was not one of thoſe enthuſiaſts, who look upon every ſchiſm from the eſtabliſhed articles of faith as damnable, and exclude the ſceptick from every benefit of humanity and Chriſtian forgiveneſs: he could eaſily comprehend how a man of the moſt unblemiſhed morals might, by the prejudice of education, or indiſpenſible attachments, be engaged in ſuch a blame-worthy and pernicious undertaking; and thought that they had already ſuffered ſeverely for their imprudence. He was affected with the account of their diurnal pilgrimage to the ſea-ſide, which he conſidered as a pathetick proof of their affliction, and inveſted Mr. Jolter with the agreeable office of going to them with a compliment in his name, and begging the honour of drinking a glaſs with them in the evening. They accepted the propoſal with great ſatisfaction and reſpectful acknowledgment, and in the afternoon waited upon the kind inviter, who treated them with coffee, and would have detained them to ſupper; but they intreated the favour of his company at the houſe which they frequented ſo earneſtly, that he yielded to their ſolicitations, and with his governor was conducted by them to the place, where they had provided an elegant repaſt, and regaled them with ſome of the beſt claret in France.

It was eaſy for them to perceive that their principal gueſt was no favourer of their ſtate maxims, and therefore they induſtriouſly avoided every ſubject of converſation which could give the leaſt offence; not but that they lamented their own ſituation, which cut them off from all their deareſt connections, and doomed them to perpetual baniſhment from their families and friends: but they did not, even by the moſt diſtant hint, impeach the juſtice of that ſentence by which they were condemned; although one among them, who ſeemed to be about the age of thirty, wept bitterly over his misfortune, which had involved a beloved wife and three children in miſery and diſtreſs; and in the impatience of his grief, curſed his own fate with frantick imprecations. His companions, with a view of beguiling his ſorrow, and manifeſting their own hoſpitality at the ſame time, changed the topick of diſcourſe, and circulated the bumpers with great aſſiduity; ſo that all their cares were overwhelmed and forgotten, ſeveral drinking French catches were ſung, and mirth and good fellowſhip prevailed.

In

Stothard del. Grignion sculp.

Plate II. Publish'd as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug.t 11. 1781.

In the midſt of this elevation, which commonly unlocks the moſt hidden ſentiment, and diſpels every conſideration of caution and conſtraint, one of the entertainers being more intoxicated than his fellows, propoſed a toaſt, to which Peregrine with ſome warmth excepted, as an unmannerly inſult. The other maintained his propoſition with indecent heat; and the diſpute beginning to grow very ſerious, the company interpoſed, and gave judgment againſt their friend, who was ſo keenly reproached and rebuked for his impolite behaviour, that he retired in high dudgeon, threatening to relinquiſh their ſociety, and branding them with the appellation of apoſtates from the common cauſe. Mortified at the behaviour of their companion, thoſe that remained were earneſt in their apologies to their gueſts, whom they beſought to forgive his intemperance, aſſuring them with great confidence that he would, upon the recovery of his reflection, wait upon them in perſon, and aſk pardon for the umbrage he had given. Pickle was ſatisfied with their remonſtrances, reſumed his good-humour, and the night being pretty far advanced, reſiſted all their importunities with which he was intreated to ſee another bottle go round, and was eſcorted to his own lodgings more than half ſeas over. Next morning about eight o'clock, he was waked by his valet de chambre, who told him that two of the gentlemen with whom he had ſpent the evening were in the houſe, and deſired the favour of being admitted into his chamber. He could not conceive the meaning of this extraordinary viſit, and ordering his man to ſhew them into his apartment, beheld the perſon who had affronted him enter with the gentleman who had reprehended his rudeneſs.

He who had given the offence, after having made an apology for diſturbing Mr. Pickle, told him that his friend there preſent had been with him early that morning, and propoſed the alternative of either fighting with him immediately, or coming to beg pardon for his unmannerly deportment over night; that though he had courage enough to face any man in the field in a righteous cauſe, he was not ſo brutal as to diſobey the dictates of his own duty and reflection, in conſequence of which, and not out of any regard to the other's menaces, which he deſpiſed, he had now taken the liberty of interrupting his repoſe, that he might, as ſoon as poſſible, atone for the injury he had done him, which he proteſted was the effect of intoxication alone, and begged his forgiveneſs accordingly. Our hero accepted of this acknowledgment very graciouſly, thanked the other gentleman for the gallant part he had acted in his behalf; and perceiving that his companion was a little irritated at his officious interpoſition, effected a reconciliation, by convincing him that what he had done was for the honour of the company. He then kept them to breakfaſt, expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing their ſituation altered for the better; and the chaiſe being repaired, took leave of his entertainers, who came to wiſh him a good journey, and with his attendants left Boulogne for the ſecond time.

CHAP. III.

PROCEEDS FOR THE CAPITAL. TAKES UP HIS LODGING AT BERNAY, WHERE HE IS OVERTAKEN BY MR. HORNBECK, WHOSE HEAD HE LONGS TO FORTIFY.

DURING this day's expedition, Mr. Jolter took an opportunity of imparting to his pupil the remarks he had made upon the induſtry of the French, as an undeniable proof of which he bid him caſt his eyes around, and obſerve with what care every ſpot of ground was cultivated; and from the fertility of that province, which is reckoned the pooreſt in France, conceive the wealth and affluence of the nation in general. Peregrine, amazed as well as diſguſted at this infatuation, anſwered, that what he had aſcribed to induſtry was the effect of mere wretchedneſs; the miſerable peaſants being obliged to plough up every inch of ground to ſatisfy their oppreſſive landlords, while they themſelves and their cattle looked like ſo many images of famine; that their extreme poverty was evident from the face of the country, on which there was not one incloſure to be ſeen, or any other object, except ſcanty crops of barley and oats, which could never reward the toil of the huſbandman; that their habitations were no better than paltry huts; that in twenty miles of extent, not

not one gentleman's house appeared; that nothing was more abject and forlorn than the attire of their country people; that the equipage of their travelling chaises was infinitely inferior to that of a dung-cart in England; and that the postilion who then drove their carriage, had neither stockings to his legs, nor a shirt to his back.

The governor finding his charge so intractable, resolved to leave him in the midst of his own ignorance and prejudice, and reserve his observations for those who would pay more deference to his opinion: and indeed this resolution he had often made, and as often broke, in the transports of his zeal, that frequently hurried him out of the plan of conduct which in his cooler moments he had laid down. They halted for a refreshment at Montreuil, and about seven in the evening arrived at a village called Bernay, where while they waited for fresh horses, they were informed by the landlord, that the gates of Abbé Ville were shut every night punctually at eight o'clock; so that it would be impossible for them to get admittance. He said, there was not another place of entertainment on the road where they could pass the night; and therefore, as a friend, he advised them to stay at his house, where they would find the best of accommodation, and proceed upon their journey betimes in the morning.

Mr. Jolter, though he had travelled on that road before, could not recollect whether or not mine host spoke truth; but his remonstrance being very plausible, our hero determined to follow his advice, and being conducted into an apartment, asked what they could have for supper. The landlord mentioned every thing that was eatable in the house, and the whole being engrossed for the use of him and his attendants, he amused himself till such time as it should be dressed, in strolling about the house, which stands in a very rural situation. While he thus loitered away the time that hung heavy on his hands, another chaise arrived at the inn; and, upon inquiry, he found that the new comers were Mr. Hornbeck and his lady. The landlord, conscious of his inability to entertain this second company, came and begged with great humiliation that Mr. Pickle would spare them some part of the victuals he had bespoke; but he refused to part with so much as the wing of a partridge; though, at the same time, he sent his compliments to the strangers, and giving them to understand how ill the house was provided for their reception, invited them to partake of his supper. Mr. Hornbeck, who was not deficient in point of politeness, and extremely well disposed for a relishing meal, which he had reason to expect from the savoury steam that issued from the kitchen, could not resist this second instance of our young gentleman's civility, which he acknowledged by a message, importing, that he and his wife would do themselves the pleasure of profiting by his courteous offer. Peregrine's cheeks glowed when he found himself on the eve of being acquainted with Mrs. Hornbeck, of whose heart he had already made a conquest in imagination; and he forthwith set his invention at work, to contrive some means of defeating her husband's vigilance.

When supper was ready, he in person gave notice to his guest, and leading the lady into his apartment, seated her in an elbow-chair at the upper end of the table, squeezing her hand, and darting a most insidious glance at the same time. This abrupt behaviour he practised, on the presumption that a lady of her breeding was not to be addressed with the tedious forms that must be observed in one's advances to a person of birth and genteel education. In all probability his calculation was just, for Mrs. Hornbeck gave no signs of discontent at this sort of treatment; but, on the contrary, seemed to consider it as a proof of the young gentleman's regard; and though she did not venture to open her mouth three times during the whole repast, she shewed herself particularly well satisfied with her entertainer, by sundry sly and significant looks, while her husband's eyes were directed another way, and divers loud peals of laughter, signifying her approbation of the sallies which he uttered in the course of their conversation. Her spouse began to be very uneasy at the frank demeanor of his yoke-fellow, whom he endeavoured to check in her vivacity, by assuming a severity of aspect; but whether she obeyed the dictates of her own disposition, which, perhaps, was merry and unreserved, or wanted to punish Mr. Hornbeck for his jealousy of temper; certain it is, her gaiety increased to such a degree, that her husband was grievously

ously alarmed and incenſed at her conduct, and reſolved to make her ſenſible of his diſpleaſure, by treading in ſecret upon her toes. He was, however, ſo diſconcerted by his indignation, that he miſtook his mark, and applied the ſharp heel of his ſhoe to the ſide of Mr. Jolter's foot, comprehending his little toe that was ſtudded with an angry corn, which he invaded with ſuch a ſudden jerk, that the governor, unable to endure the torture in ſilence, ſtarted up, and dancing on the floor, roared hideouſly with repeated bellowings, to the unſpeakable enjoyment of Peregrine and the lady, who laughed themſelves almoſt into convulſions at the joke. Hornbeck, confounded at the miſtake he had committed, begged pardon of the injured tutor with great contrition, proteſting that the blow he had ſo unfortunately received, was intended for an ugly cur, which he thought had poſted himſelf under the table. It was lucky for him that there was actually a dog in the room, to juſtify this excuſe, which Jolter admitted with the tears running over his cheeks, and the œconomy of the table was recompoſed.

As ſoon, however, as the ſtrangers could with decency withdraw, this ſuſpicious huſband took his leave of the youth, on pretence of being fatigued with his journey, after having, by way of compliment, propoſed that they ſhould travel together next day; and Peregrine handed the lady to her chamber, where he wiſhed her good night with another warm ſqueeze, which ſhe returned. This favourable hint made his heart bound with a tranſport of joy; he lay in wait for an opportunity of declaring himſelf, and ſeeing the huſband go down into the yard with a candle, glided ſoftly into his apartment, where he found her almoſt undreſſed. Impelled by the impetuoſity of his paſſion, which was ſtill more enflamed by her preſent luſcious appearance, and encourged by the approbation ſhe had already expreſſed, he ran totowards her with eagerneſs, crying, 'Zounds, Madam! your charms are 'irreſiſtible!' and without farther ceremony would have claſped her in his arms, had ſhe not begged him for the love of God to retire, for ſhould Mr. Hornbeck return and find him there, ſhe would be undone for ever. He was not ſo blinded by his paſſion, but that he ſaw the reaſonableneſs of her fear, and as he could not pretend to crown his wiſhes at that interview, he avowed himſelf her lover, aſſured her that he would exhauſt his whole invention in finding a proper opportunity for throwing himſelf at her feet; and in the mean time he raviſhed ſundry ſmall favours, which ſhe in the hurry of her fright could not withold from his impudence of addreſs. Having thus happily ſettled the preliminaries, he withdrew to his own chamber, and ſpent the whole night in contriving ſtratagems to elude the jealous caution of his fellow-traveller.

CHAP. IV.

THEY SET OUT IN COMPANY, BREAKFAST AT ABBE VILLE, DINE AT AMIENS, AND ABOUT ELEVEN O'CLOCK ARRIVE AT CHANTILLY, WHERE PEREGRINE EXECUTES A PLAN WHICH HE HAD CONCERTED UPON HORNBECK.

THE whole company by agreement roſe and departed before day, and breakfaſted at Abbé Ville, where they became acquainted with the fineſſe of their Bernay landlord, who had impoſed upon them, in affirming that they would not have been admitted after the gates were ſhut. From thence they proceeded to Amiens, where they dined and were peſtered by begging friars; and the roads being deep, it was eleven o'clock at night before they reached Chantilly, where they found ſupper already dreſſed in conſequence of having diſpatched the valet de chambre before them on horſeback.

The conſtitution of Hornbeck being very much impaired by a life of irregularity, he found himſelf ſo fatigued with his day's journey, which amounted to upwards of an hundred miles, that when he ſat down at table, he could ſcarce ſit upright; and in leſs than three minutes began to nod in his chair. Peregrine, who had foreſeen and provided for this occaſion, adviſed him to exhilarate his ſpirits with a glaſs of wine; and the propoſal being embraced, tipped his valet de chambre the wink; who, according to the inſtructions he had received, qualified the Burgundy with thirty drops of laudanum, which this unfortunate huſband ſwallowed in one glaſs,

glaſs. The doſe co-operating with his former drowſineſs, lulled him ſo faſt aſleep, as it were inſtantaneouſly, that it was found neceſſary to convey him to his own chamber, where his footman undreſſed and put him to bed. Nor was Jolter (naturally of a ſluggiſh diſpoſition) able to reſiſt his propenſity to ſleep, without ſuffering divers dreadful yawns, which encouraged his pupil to adminiſter the ſame doſe to him, which had operated ſo ſucceſsfully upon the other Argus. This cordial had not ſuch a gentle effect upon the rugged organs of Jolter, as upon the more delicate nerves of Hornbeck; but diſcovered itſelf in certain involuntary ſtartings, and convulſive motions in the muſcles of his face; and when his nature at length yielded to the power of this medicine, he ſounded the trumpet ſo loud through his noſtrils, that our adventurer was afraid the noiſe would wake his other patient, and conſequently prevent the accompliſhment of his aim. The governor was therefore committed to the care of Pipes, who lugged him into the next room, and having ſtripped off his cloaths, tumbled him into his neſt, while the two lovers remained at full liberty to indulge their mutual paſſion.

Peregrine, in the impatience of his inclination, would have finiſhed the fate of Hornbeck immediately; but his inamorata diſapproved of his intention, and repreſented that their being together by themſelves for any length of time, would be obſerved by her ſervant, who was kept as a ſpy upon her actions; ſo that they had recourſe to another ſcheme, which was executed in this manner: he conducted her into her own apartment, in preſence of her footman, who lighted them thither, and wiſhing her good reſt, returned to his own chamber, where he waited till every thing was quiet in the houſe; then ſtealing ſoftly to her door, which had been left open for his admiſſion in the dark, he found the huſband ſtill ſecure in the embraces of ſleep, and the lady in a looſe gown, ready to ſeal his happineſs. He conveyed her to his own chamber; but his guilty paſſion was not gratified.

The opium which had been given to Jolter, together with the wine he had drank, produced ſuch a peturbation in his fancy, that he was viſited with horrible dreams, and among other miſerable ſituations, imagined himſelf in danger of periſhing in the flames, which he thought had taken hold on his apartment. This viſion made ſuch an impreſſion upon his faculties, that he alarmed the whole houſe with the repeated cries of 'Fire! fire!' and even leaped out of his bed, though he ſtill continued faſt aſleep. The lovers were very diſagreeably diſturbed by this dreadful exclamation; and Mrs. Hornbeck running in great confuſion to the door, had the mortification to ſee the footman with a light in his hand, enter her huſband's chamber in order to give him notice of this accident. She knew that ſhe would be inſtantly miſſed, and could eaſily divine the conſequence, unleſs her invention could immediately trump up ſome plauſible excuſe for her abſence.

Women are naturally fruitful of expedients in caſes of ſuch emergency; ſhe employed but a few ſeconds in recollection, and ruſhing directly towards the apartment of the governor, who ſtill continued to halloo in the ſame note, exclaimed in a ſcreaming tone, 'Lord have mercy 'upon us! where! where!' By this time, all the ſervants were aſſembled in ſtrange attire; Peregrine burſt into Jolter's room, and ſeeing him ſtalking in his ſhirt with his eyes ſhut, beſtowed ſuch a ſlap upon his back, as in a moment diſſolved his dream, and reſtored him to the uſe of his ſenſes. He was aſtoniſhed and aſhamed at being diſcovered in ſuch an indecent attitude; and taking refuge under the cloaths, aſked pardon of all preſent for the diſturbance he had occaſioned; ſoliciting, with great humility, the forgiveneſs of the lady, who to a miracle counterfeited the utmoſt agitation of terror and ſurprize. Meanwhile, Hornbeck being awakened by the repeated efforts of his man, no ſooner underſtood that his wife was miſſing, than all the chimeras of jealouſy taking poſſeſſion of his imagination, he ſtarted up in a ſort of phrenzy; and ſnatching his ſword, flew ſtraight to Peregrine's chamber; where, though he found not that which he looked for, he unluckily perceived an under-petticoat, which his wife had forgot in the hurry of her retreat. This diſcovery added fuel to the flame of his reſentment. He ſeized the fatal proof of his diſhonour, and meeting his ſpouſe in her return to bed, preſented it to her view, ſaying, with a moſt expreſſive countenance, 'Madam, 'you have dropped your under-petti-

'coat

'coat in the next room.' Mrs. Hornbeck, who inherited from nature a moſt admirable preſence of mind, looked earneſtly at the object in queſtion, and with incredible ſerenity of countenance, affirmed that the petticoat muſt belong to the houſe, for ſhe had none ſuch in her poſſeſſion. Peregrine, who walked behind her, hearing this aſſeveration, immediately interpoſed; and pulling Hornbeck by the ſleeve into his chamber, 'Gads zooks!' ſaid he, 'what buſineſs had you with that petticoat! 'Can't you let a young fellow enjoy 'a little amour with an innkeeper's 'daughter, without expoſing his infirmities to your wife? Pſhaw! that's 'ſo malicious; becauſe you have quitted theſe adventures yourſelf, to ſpoil 'the ſport of other people!' The poor huſband was ſo confounded at the effrontery of his wife, and this cavalier declaration of the young man, that his faith began to waver; he diſtruſted his own conſcious diffidence of temper, which, that he might not expoſe, he expreſſed no doubts of Peregrine's veracity, but aſking pardon for the miſtake he had committed, retired. He was not yet ſatisfied with the behaviour of his ingenious help-mate; but, on the contrary, determined to enquire more minutely into the circumſtances of this adventure; which turned out ſo little to his ſatisfaction, that he ordered his ſervant to get every thing ready for his departure by break of day; and when our adventurer roſe next morning, he found that his fellow-travellers were gone above three hours, though they agreed to ſtay all the forenoon, with a view of ſeeing the Prince of Condé's palace, and to proceed all together for Paris in the afternoon.

Peregrine was a little chagrined, when he underſtood that he was ſo ſuddenly deprived of this untaſted morſel; and Jolter could not conceive the meaning of their abrupt and uncivil diſappearance; which, after many profound conjectures, he accounted for, by ſuppoſing that Hornbeck was ſome ſharper who had run away with an heireſs, whom he found it neceſſary to conceal from the enquiry of her friends.

The pupil, who was well aſſured of the true motive, allowed his governor to enjoy the triumph of his own penetration, and conſoled himſelf with the hope of ſeeing his dulcinea again at ſome of the publick places in Paris, which he propoſed to frequent. Thus comforted, he viſited the magnificent ſtables and palace of Chantilly; and immediately after dinner ſet out for Paris, where they arrived in the evening, and hired apartments at an hotel in the Fauxbourgh St. Germaine, not far from the playhouſe.

CHAP. V.

HE IS INVOLVED IN AN ADVENTURE AT PARIS, AND TAKEN PRISONER BY THE CITY GUARD. BECOMES ACQUAINTED WITH A FRENCH NOBLEMAN, WHO INTRODUCES HIM IN THE BEAU MONDE.

THEY were no ſooner ſettled in theſe lodgings, than our hero wrote to his uncle an account of their ſafe arrival; and ſent another letter to his friend Gauntlet, with a very tender billet incloſed for his dear Emilia, to whom he repeated all his former vows of conſtancy and love.

The next care that ingroſſed him, was that of beſpeaking ſeveral ſuits of cloaths ſuitable to the French mode; and in the mean time he never appeared abroad, except in the Engliſh coffee-houſe, where he ſoon became acquainted with ſome of his own countrymen, who were at Paris on the ſame footing with himſelf. The third evening after his journey, he was engaged in a party of thoſe young ſparks, at the houſe of a noted traiteur, whoſe wife was remarkably handſome, and otherwiſe extremely well qualified for alluring cuſtomers to her houſe. To this lady our young gentleman was introduced as a ſtranger freſh from England; and he was charmed with her perſonal accompliſhments, as well as with the freedom and gaiety of her converſation. Her frank deportment perſuaded him that ſhe was one of thoſe kind creatures, who granted favours to the beſt bidder; on this ſuppoſition he began to be ſo importunate in his addreſſes, that the fair Burgeoiſe was compelled to cry aloud in defence of her own virtue. Her huſband ran immediately to her aſſiſtance; and finding her in a very alarming ſituation, flew upon her raviſher with ſuch fury, that he was fain to quit his prey, and turn againſt the exaſperated traiteur,

whom he punished without mercy for his impudent intrusion. The lady seeing her yoke-fellow treated with so little respect, espoused his cause; and fixing her nails in his antagonist's face, scarified all one side of his nose. The noise of this encounter brought all the servants of the house to the rescue of their master; and Peregrine's company opposing them, a general battle ensued, in which the French were totally routed, the wife insulted, and the husband kicked down stairs.

The publican, enraged at the indignity which had been offered to him and his family, went out into the street, and implored the protection of the guet, or city guard; which, having heard his complaint, fixed their bayonets, and surrounded the door, to the number of twelve or fourteen. The young gentlemen, flushed with their success, and considering the soldiers as so many London watchmen, whom they had often put to flight, drew their swords, and sallied out, with Peregrine at their head. Whether the guard respected them as foreigners, or inexperienced youths intoxicated with liquor, they opened to right and left, and gave them room to pass without opposition. This complaisance, which was the effect of compassion, being misinterpreted by the English leader, he, out of mere wantonness, attempted to trip up the heels of the soldier that stood next him, but failed in the execution, and received a blow on his breast with the butt end of a fusil, that made him stagger several paces backward. Incensed at this audacious application, the whole company charged the detachment sword in hand, and after an obstinate engagement, in which divers wounds were given and received, every soul of them were taken, and conveyed to the main guard. The commanding officer being made acquainted with the circumstances of the quarrel, in consideration of their youth and national ferocity, for which the French make large allowances, set them all at liberty, after having gently rebuked them for the irregularity and insolence of their conduct; so that all our hero acquired by his gallantry and courage, was a number of scandalous marks upon his visage that confined him a whole week to his chamber. It was impossible to conceal this disaster from Mr. Jolter, who having obtained intelligence of the particulars, did not fail to remonstrate against the rashness of the adventure, which he observed must have been fatal to them, had their enemies been other than Frenchmen, who, of all people under the sun, most rigorously observe the laws of hospitality.

As the governor's acquaintance lay chiefly among Irish and English priests, and a set of low people who live by making themselves necessary to strangers, either in teaching the French language, or executing small commissions with which they are intrusted, he was not the most proper person in the world for regulating the taste of a young gentleman who travelled for improvement, in expectation of making a figure one day in his own country. Being conscious of his own incapacity, he contented himself with the office of a steward, and kept a faithful account of all the money that was disbursed in the course of their family expence; not but that he was acquainted with all the places which were visited by strangers on their first arrival at Paris; and he knew to a liard what was commonly given to the Swiss of each remarkable hotel; though, with respect to the curious painting and statuary that every where abound in that metropolis, he was more ignorant than the domestick that attends for a livre a day.

In short, Mr. Jolter could give a very good account of the stages on the road, and save the expence of Antonini's detail of the curiosities in Paris; he was a connoisseur in ordinaries, from twelve to five and thirty livres; knew all the rates of a fiacre and remise, could dispute with a tailleur or traiteur upon the articles of his bill, and scold the servants in tolerable French. But the laws, customs, and genius of the people, the characters of individuals, and scenes of polished life, were subjects which he had neither opportunities to observe, inclination to consider, nor discernment to distinguish. All his maxims were the suggestions of pedantry and prejudice; so that his perception was obscured, his judgment biassed, his address awkward, and his conversation absurd and unentertaining: yet such as I have represented this tutor, is the greatest part of those animals who lead raw boys about the world, under the denomination of travelling governors. Peregrine, therefore, being perfectly well acquainted

ed with the extent of Mr. Jolter's abilities, never dreamed of consulting him in the disposition of his conduct, but parcelled out his time according to the dictates of his own reflection, and the information and direction of his companions, who had lived longer in France, and consequently were better acquainted with the pleasures of the place.

As soon as he was in a condition to appear à la Françoisa, he hired a genteel chariot by the month, made the tour of the Luxembourg gallery, Palais Royal, all the remarkable hotels, churches, and celebrated places in Paris; visited St. Cloud, Marli, Versailles, Trianon, St. Germain, and Fountainbleau; enjoyed the opera, masquerades, Italian and French comedy; and seldom failed of appearing in the publick walks, in hopes of meeting with Mrs. Hornbeck, or some adventure suited to his romantick disposition. He never doubted that his person would attract the notice of some distinguished inamorata, and was vain enough to believe that few female hearts were able to resist the artillery of his accomplishments, should he once find an opportunity of planting it to advantage. He presented himself, however, at all the *spectacles* for many weeks, without reaping the fruits of his expectation; and began to entertain a very indifferent idea of the French discernment, which had overlooked him so long; when one day, in his way to the opera, his chariot was stopped by an *embarras* in the street, occasioned by two peasants, who having driven their carts against each other, quarrelled, and went to loggerheads on the spot. Such a rencounter is so uncommon in France, that the people shut up their shops, and from their windows threw cold water upon the combatants, with a view of putting an end to the battle, which was maintained with great fury and very little skill, until one of them receiving an accidental fall, the other took the advantage of this misfortune, and fastening upon him as he lay, began to thump the pavement with his head. Our hero's equipage being detained close by the field of this contention, Pipes could not bear to see the laws of boxing so scandalously transgressed, and leaping from his station, pulled the offender from his antagonist, whom he raised up, and in the English language encouraged to a second essay, instructing him at the same time, by clenching his fists according to art, and putting himself in a proper attitude. Thus confirmed, the enraged carman sprung upon his foe, and in all appearance would have effectually revenged the injury he had sustained, if he had not been prevented by the interposition of a lacquey belonging to a nobleman, whose coach was obliged to halt in consequence of the dispute. This footman, who was distinguished by a cane, descending from his post, without the least ceremony or expostulation, began to employ his weapon upon the head and shoulders of the peasant who had been patronized by Pipes; upon which Thomas resenting such ungenerous behaviour, bestowed such a stomacher upon the officious intermeddler, as discomposed the whole œconomy of his entrails, and obliged him to discharge the interjection *Ah!* with demonstrations of great anguish and amazement. The other two footmen who stood behind the coach, seeing their fellow-servant so insolently assaulted, flew to his assistance, and rained a most disagreeable shower upon the head of his agressor, who had no means of diversion or defence. Peregrine, though he did not approve of Tom's conduct, could not bear to see him so roughly handled, especially as he thought his own honour concerned in the fray, and therefore quitting his machine, came to the rescue of his attendant, and charged his adversaries sword in hand. Two of them no sooner perceived this reinforcement, than they betook themselves to flight; and Pipes having twisted the cane out of the hands of the third, belaboured him so unmercifully, that our hero thought proper to interpose his authority in his behalf. The common people stood aghast at this unprecedented boldness of Pickle, who understanding that the person whose servants he had disciplined, was a general and prince of the blood, went up to the coach, and asked pardon for what he had done, imputing his own behaviour to his ignorance of the other's quality. The old nobleman accepted of his apology with great politeness, thanking him for the trouble he had taken to reform the manners of his domesticks; and guessing from our youth's appearance that he was some stranger of condition, very courteously invited him into the coach, on the supposition that they were both going to the opera. Pickle gladly embraced this opportunity of becoming

acquainted with a perſon of ſuch rank, and ordering his own chariot to follow, accompanied the count to his *loge*, where he converſed with him during the whole entertainment.

He ſoon perceived that Peregrine was not deficient in ſpirit or ſenſe, and ſeemed particularly pleaſed with his engaging manner and eaſy deportment, qualifications for which the Engliſh nation is by no means remarkable in France, and therefore the more conſpicuous and agreeable in the character of our hero, whom the nobleman carried home that ſame evening, and introduced to his lady and ſeveral perſons of faſhion who ſupped at his houſe. Peregrine was quite captivated by their affable behaviour, and the vivacity of their diſcourſe; and after having been honoured with particular marks of conſideration, took his leave, fully determined to cultivate ſuch a valuable acquaintance.

His vanity ſuggeſted, that now the time was come when he ſhould profit by his talents among the fair-ſex, on whom he reſolved to employ his utmoſt art and addreſs. With this view he aſſiduouſly engaged in all parties, to which he had acceſs by means of his noble friend, who let ſlip no opportunity of gratifying his ambition. He for ſome time ſhared in all his amuſements, and was entertained in many of the beſt families of France; but he did not long enjoy that elevation of hope which had flattered his imagination. He ſoon perceived that it would be impoſſible to maintain the honourable connections he had made, without engaging every day at quadrille, or in other words, loſing his money; for every perſon of rank, whether male or female, was a profeſſed gameſter, who knew and practiſed all the fineſſe of the art, of which he was entirely ignorant. Beſides, he began to find himſelf a mere novice in French gallantry, which is ſupported by an amazing volubility of tongue, and obſequious and incredible attention to trifles, a ſurprizing faculty of laughing out of pure complaiſance, and a nothingneſs of converſation which he could never attain. In ſhort, our hero, who among his own countrymen would have paſſed for a ſprightly entertaining fellow, was conſidered in the brilliant aſſemblies of France as a youth of a very phlegmatick diſpoſition. No wonder, then, that his pride was mortified at his own want of importance, which he did not fail to aſcribe to their defect in point of judgment and taſte: he conceived a diſguſt at the mercenary conduct, as well as the ſhallow intellects of the ladies; and after he had ſpent ſome months, and a round ſum of money, in fruitleſs attendance and addreſſes, he fairly quitted the purſuit, and conſoled himſelf with the converſation of a merry *fille de joye*, whoſe good graces he acquired by an allowance of twenty Louis per month. That he might the more eaſily afford this expence, he diſmiſſed his chariot and French lacquey at the ſame time.

He then entered himſelf in a noted academy, in order to finiſh his exerciſes, and contracted an acquaintance with a few ſenſible people, whom he diſtinguiſhed at the coffee-houſe and ordinary to which he reſorted, and who contributed not a little to the improvement of his knowledge and taſte: for, prejudice apart, it muſt be owned, that France abounds with men of conſummate honour, profound ſagacity, and the moſt liberal education. From the converſation of ſuch, he obtained a diſtinct idea of their government and conſtitution; and though he could not help admiring the excellent order and œconomy of their police, the reſult of all his inquries was ſelf-congratulation on his title to the privileges of a Britiſh ſubject. Indeed this invaluable birth-right was rendered conſpicuous by ſuch flagrant occurrences, which fell every day almoſt under his obſervation, that nothing but the groſſeſt prejudice could diſpute it's exiſtence.

CHAP. VI.

ACQUIRES A DISTINCT IDEA OF THE FRENCH GOVERNMENT; QUARRELS WITH A MOUSQUETAIRE, WHOM HE AFTERWARDS FIGHTS AND VANQUISHES, AFTER HAVING PUNISHED HIM FOR INTERFERING IN HIS AMOROUS RECREATIONS.

AMONG many other inſtances of the ſame nature, I believe it will not be amiſs to exhibit a few ſpecimens of their adminiſtration, which happened during his abode at Paris, that thoſe who have not the opportunity of obſerving for themſelves, or are in danger of

of being influenced by misrepresentation, may compare their own condition with that of their neighbours, and do justice to the constitution under which they live.

A lady of distinguished character having been lampooned by some obscure scribbler, who could not be discovered, the ministry, in consequence of her complaint, ordered no fewer than five and twenty abbés to be apprehended and sent to the Bastile, on the maxim of Herod, when he commanded the innocents to be murdered, hoping that the principal object of his cruelty would not escape in the general calamity; and the friends of those unhappy prisoners durst not even complain of the unjust persecution, but shrugged up their shoulders, and in silence deplored their misfortune, uncertain whether or not they should ever set eyes on them again.

About the same time, a gentleman of family, who had been oppressed by a certain powerful duke that lived in the neighbourhood, found means to be introduced to the king, who receiving his petition very graciously, asked in what regiment he served; and when the memorialist answered, that he had not the honour of being in the service, returned the paper unopened, and refused to hear one circumstance of his complaint; so that far from being redressed, he remained more than ever exposed to the tyranny of his oppressors: nay, so notorious is the discouragement of all those who presume to live independent of court favour and connections, that one of the gentlemen, whose friendship Peregrine cultivated, frankly owned he was in possession of a most romantick place, in one of the provinces, and deeply enamoured of a country life; and yet he durst not reside upon his own estate, lest by slackening his attendance upon the great, who honoured him with their protection, he should fall a prey to some rapacious intendant.

As for the common people, they are so much inured to the scourge and insolence of power, that every shabby subaltern, every beggarly cadet of the noblesse, every low retainer to the court, insults and injures them with impunity. A certain *ecuyer*, or horse dealer, belonging to the king, being one day under the hands of a barber, who happened to cut the head of a pimple on his face, he started up, and drawing his sword, wounded him desperately in the shoulder. The poor tradesman, hurt as he was, made an effort to retire, and was followed by this barbarous assassin, who, not contented with the vengeance he had taken, plunged his sword a second time into his body, and killed him on the spot. Having performed this inhuman exploit, he dressed himself with great deliberation, and going to Versailles, immediately obtained a pardon for what he had done; triumphing in his brutality with such insolence, that the very next time he had occasion to be shaved he sat with his sword ready drawn, in order to repeat the murder, in case the barber should commit the same mistake. Yet so tamed are those poor people to subjection, that when Peregrine mentioned this assassination to his own trimmer, with expressions of horror and detestation, the infatuated wretch replied, that without all doubt it was a misfortune, but it proceeded from the gentleman's passion; and observed, by way of encomium on the government, that such vivacity is never punished in France.

A few days after this outrage was committed, our youth, who was a professed enemy to all oppression, being in one of the first *loges* at the comedy, was eye-witness of an adventure which filled him with indignation: a tall, ferocious fellow, in the parterre, without the least provocation, but prompted by the mere wantonness of pride, took hold of the hat of a very decent young man who happened to stand before him, and twirled it round upon his head. The party thus offended turned to his aggressor, and civilly asked the reason of such treatment; but he received no answer; and when he looked the other way, the insult was repeated: upon which he expressed his resentment as became a man of spirit, and desired the offender to walk out with him. No sooner did he thus signify his intention, than his adversary, swelling with rage, cocked his hat fiercely in his face, and fixing his hands in his sides, pronounced with the most imperious tone, 'Hark ye, Mr. Round Peri-'wig, you must know that I am a mous-'quetaire.' Scarce had this awful word escaped from his lips, when the blood forsook the lips of the poor challenger, who with the most abject submission begged pardon for his presumption, and with difficulty obtained it, on condition that he should immediately quit the place. Having thus exercised his authority,

rity, he turned to one of his companions, and with an air of disdainful ridicule, told him he was like to have had an affair with a Bourgeoise; adding, by way of heightening the irony, 'Egad! I be-'lieve he's a physician.'

Our hero was so much shocked and irritated at this licentious behaviour, that he could not suppress his resentment, which he manifested by saying to this Hector, 'Sir, a physician may 'be a man of honour.' To this remonstrance, which was delivered with a very significant countenance, the mousquetaire made no other reply, but that of echoing his assertion with a loud laugh, in which he was joined by his confederates. Peregrine, glowing with resentment, called him a *fanfaron*, and withdrew in expectation of being followed into the street. The other understood the hint, and a rencounter must have ensued, had not the officer of the guard, who overheard what passed, prevented their meeting, by putting the mousquetaire immediately under arrest. Our young gentleman waited at the door of the parterre, until he was informed of this interposition, and then went home very much chagrined at his disappointment; for he was an utter stranger to fear and diffidence on those occasions, and had set his heart upon chastizing the insolence of this bully, who had treated him with such disrespect.

This adventure was not so private but that it reached the ears of Mr. Jolter, by the canal of some English gentlemen who were present when it happened; and the governor, who entertained a most dreadful idea of the mousquetaires, being alarmed at a quarrel, the consequence of which might be fatal to his charge, waited on the British ambassador, and begged he would take Peregrine under his immediate protection. His excellency having heard the circumstances of the dispute, sent one of his gentlemen to invite the youth to dinner; and after having assured him that he might depend upon his countenance and regard, represented the rashness and impetuosity of his conduct so much to his conviction, that he promised to act more circumspectly for the future, and drop all thoughts of the mousquetaire from that moment.

A few days after he had taken this laudable resolution, Pipes, who had carried a billet to his mistress, informed him, that he had perceived a laced hat lying upon a marble slab in her apartment; and that when she came out of her own chamber to receive the letter, she appeared in manifest disorder.

From these hints of intelligence, our young gentleman suspected, or rather made no doubt of her infidelity; and being by this time well nigh cloyed with possession, was not sorry to find that she had given him cause to renounce her correspondence. That he might therefore detect her in the very breach of duty, and at the same time punish the gallant who had the presumption to invade his territories, he concerted with himself a plan which was executed in this manner. During his next interview with his dulcinea, far from discovering the least sign of jealousy or discontent, he affected the appearance of extraordinary fondness; and after having spent the afternoon with the shew of uncommon satisfaction, told her he was engaged in a party for Fountainbleau, and would set out from Paris that same evening; so that he should not have the pleasure of seeing her again for some days.

The lady, who was very well versed in the arts of her occupation, pretended to receive this piece of news with great affliction, and conjured him with such marks of real tenderness, to return as soon as possible to her longing arms, that he went away almost convinced of her sincerity. Determined, however, to prosecute his scheme, he actually departed from Paris with two or three gentlemen of his acquaintance, who had hired a remise for a jaunt to Versailles; and having accompanied them as far as the village of Passe, returned in the dusk of the evening on foot.

He waited impatiently till midnight, and then arming himself with a case of pocket-pistols, and attended by trusty Tom with a cudgel in his hand, repaired to the lodgings of his suspected inamorata. Having given Pipes his cue, he knocked gently at the door, which was no sooner opened by the lacquey than he bolted in, before the fellow could recollect himself from the confusion occasioned by his unexpected appearance; and leaving Tom to guard the door, ordered the trembling valet to light him up stairs into his lady's apartment. The first object that presented itself to his view, when he entered

tered the anti-chamber, was a ſword upon the table, which he immediately ſeized, exclaiming in a loud and menacing voice, that his miſtreſs was falſe, and then in bed with another gallant, whom he would inſtantly put to death. This declaration, confirmed by many terrible oaths, he calculated for the hearing of his rival; who, underſtanding his ſanguinary purpoſe, ſtarted up in great trepidation, and, naked as he was, dropped from the balcony into the ſtreet, while Peregrine thundered at the door for admittance, and gueſſing his deſign, gave him an opportunity of making this precipitate retreat. Pipes, who ſtood centinel at the door, obſerving the fugitive deſcend, attacked him with his cudgel, and ſweating him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, at laſt committed him to the guet, by whom he was conveyed to the officer on duty in a moſt diſgraceful and deplorable condition.

Meanwhile, Peregrine having burſt open the chamber-door, found the lady in the utmoſt dread and conſternation, and the ſpoils of her favourite ſcattered about the room: but his reſentment was doubly gratified, when he learned upon enquiry, that the perſon who had been ſo diſagreeably interrupted, was no other than that individual mouſquetaire with whom he had quarrelled at the comedy. He upbraided the nymph with her perfidy and ingratitude, and telling her that ſhe muſt not expect the continuance of his regard, or the appointments which ſhe had hitherto enjoyed from his bounty, went home to his own lodgings, overjoyed at the iſſue of the adventure.

The ſoldier, exaſperated at the diſgrace he had undergone, as well as at the outrageous inſult of the Engliſh valet, whom he believed his maſter had tutored for that purpoſe, no ſooner extricated himſelf from the opprobrious ſituation he had incurred, than breathing vengeance againſt the author of the affront, he came to Peregrine's apartment, and demanded ſatisfaction upon the ramparts, next morning before ſun-riſe. Our hero aſſured him, he would not fail to pay his reſpects to him at the time and place appointed; and foreſeeing that he might be prevented from keeping this engagement by the officious care of his governor, who ſaw the mouſquetaire come in, he told Mr. Jolter, that the Frenchman had viſited him in conſequence of an order he had received from his ſuperiors, to make an apology for his rude behaviour to him in the playhouſe, and that they had parted very good friends. This aſſurance, together with Pickle's tranquil and unconcerned behaviour through the day, quieted the terrors which had began to take poſſeſſion of his tutor's imagination; ſo that the youth had an opportunity of giving him the ſlip at night, when he betook himſelf to the lodgings of a friend, whom he engaged as his ſecond, and with whom he immediately took the field, in order to avoid the ſearch which Jolter, upon miſſing him, might ſet on foot.

This was a neceſſary precaution; for as he did not appear at ſupper, and Pipes, who uſually attended him in his excurſions, could give no account of his motions, the governor was dreadfully alarmed at his abſence, and ordered his man to run in queſt of his maſter to all the places which he uſed to frequent, while he himſelf went to the commiſſaire, and communicating his ſuſpicions, was accommodated with a party of the horſeguards, who patroled round all the environs of the city, with a view of preventing the rencounter. Pipes might have directed them to the lady, by whoſe information they could have learned the name and lodgings of the mouſquetaire, and if he had been apprehended, the duel would not have happened; but he did not chuſe to run the riſk of diſobling his maſter, by intermeddling in the affair, and was moreover very deſirous that the Frenchman ſhould be humbled, for he never doubted that Peregrine was more than a match for any two men in France. In this confidence, therefore, he ſought his maſter with great diligence, not with a view of diſappointing his intention, but in order to attend him to the battle, that he might ſtand by him, and ſee juſtice done.

While this inquiry was carried on, our hero and his companion concealed themſelves among ſome weeds that grew on the edge of the parapet, a few yards from the ſpot where he had agreed to meet the mouſquetaire; and ſcarce had the morning rendered objects diſtinguiſhable, when they perceived their men advancing boldly to the place. Peregrine

grine seeing them approach, sprung forward to the ground, that he might have the glory of anticipating his antagonist; and swords being drawn, all four were engaged in a twinkling. Pickle's eagerness had well nigh cost him his life; for, without minding his footing, he flew directly to his opposite, and stumbling over a stone, was wounded on one side of his head before he could recover his attitude. Far from being dispirited at this check, it served only to animate him the more; being endowed with uncommon agility, he retrieved his posture in a moment; and having parried a second thrust, returned the longe with such incredible speed, that the soldier had not time to resume his guard, but was immediately run through the bend of his right-arm; and the sword dropping out of his hand, our hero's victory was compleat.

Having dispatched his own business, and received the acknowledgment of his adversary; who with a look of infinite mortification observed, that his was the fortune of the day, he ran to part the seconds, just as the weapon was twisted out of his companion's hand: upon which he took his place; and in all likelihood an obstinate dispute would have ensued, had they not been interrupted by the guard, at sight of whom the two Frenchmen scampered off. Our young gentleman and his friend allowed themselves to be taken prisoners by the detachment which had been sent out for that purpose, and were carried before the magistrate; who having sharply reprimanded them for presuming to act in contempt of the laws, set them at liberty, in consideration of their being strangers, cautioning them at the same time to beware of such exploits for the future.

When Peregrine returned to his own lodgings, Pipes seeing the blood trickling down upon his master's neckcloth and solitaire, gave evident tokens of surprize and concern; not for the consequences of the wound, which he did not suppose dangerous, but for the glory of Old England, which he was afraid had suffered in the engagement; for, he could not help saying, with an air of chagrin, as he followed the youth into his chamber, 'I do suppose as how you 'gave that lubberly Frenchman as good 'as he brought.'

CHAP. VII.

MR. JOLTER THREATENS TO LEAVE HIM ON ACCOUNT OF HIS MISCONDUCT, WHICH HE PROMISES TO RECTIFY; BUT HIS RESOLUTION IS DEFEATED BY THE IMPETUOSITY OF HIS PASSIONS. HE MEETS ACCIDENTALLY WITH MRS. HORNBECK, WHO ELOPES WITH HIM FROM HER HUSBAND, BUT IS RESTORED BY THE INTERPOSITION OF THE BRITISH AMBASSADOR.

THOUGH Mr. Jolter was extremely well pleased at the safety of his pupil, he could not forgive him for the terror and anxiety he had undergone on his account; and roundly told him, that notwithstanding the inclination and attachment he had to his person, he would immediately depart for England, if ever he should hear of his being involved in such another adventure; for it could not be expected that he would sacrifice his own quiet, to an unrequited regard for one who seemed determined to keep him in continual uneasiness and apprehension.

To this declaration Pickle made answer, that Mr. Jolter, by this time, ought to be convinced of the attention he had always paid to his ease and satisfaction; since he well knew that he had ever looked upon him in the light of a friend rather than as a counsellor or tutor; and desired his company in France, with a view of promoting his interest, not for any emolument he could expect from his instruction. This being the case, he was at liberty to consult his own inclinations, with regard to going or staying; though he could not help owning himself obliged by the concern he expressed for his safety, and would endeavour, for his own sake, to avoid giving him any cause of disturbance in time to come.

No man was more capable of moralizing upon Peregrine's misconduct than himself; his reflections were extremely just and sagacious, and attended with no other disadvantage, but that of occurring too late. He projected a thousand salutary schemes of deportment; but, like other projectors, he never had interest enough with the ministry of

of his passions to bring any one of them to bear. He had in the heyday of his gallantry, received a letter from his friend Gauntlet, with a kind postscript from his charming Emilia; but it arrived at a very unseasonable juncture, when his imagination was ingrossed by conquests that more agreeably flattered his ambition; so that he could not find leisure and inclination, from that day to honour the correspondence which he himself had solicited. His vanity had by this time disapproved of the engagement he had contracted in the rawness and inexperience of youth; suggesting, that he was born to make such an important figure in life, as ought to raise his ideas above the consideration of any such middling connections, and fix his attention upon objects of the most sublime attraction. These dictates of ridiculous pride had almost effaced the remembrance of his amiable mistress, or at least so far warped his morals and integrity, that he actually began to conceive hopes of her, altogether unworthy of his own character and her deserts.

Meanwhile, being destitute of a toy for the dalliance of his idle hours, he employed several spies, and almost every day made a tour of the publick places in person, with a view of procuring intelligence of Mr. Hornbeck, with whose wife he longed to have another interview. In this course of expectation had he exercised himself a whole fortnight, when chancing to be at the hospital of the invalids with a gentleman lately arrived from England, he no sooner entered the church than he perceived this lady, attended by her spouse, who at sight of our hero changed colour and looked another way, in order to discourage any communication between them. But the young man, who was not so easily repulsed, advanced with great assurance to his fellow-traveller, and taking him by the hand, expressed his satisfaction at this unexpected meeting; kindly upbraiding him for his precipitate retreat from Chantilly. Before Hornbeck could make any reply, he went up to his wife, whom he complimented in the same manner, assuring her with some significant glances, he was extremely mortified that she had put it out of his power to pay his respects to her on his first arrival at Paris; and then turning to her husband, who thought proper to keep close to him in this conference, begged to know where he could have the honour of waiting upon him; observing, at the same time, that he himself lived *a l'academie de Palfrenier*.

Mr. Hornbeck, without making any apology for his elopement on the road, thanked Mr. Pickle for his complaisance in a very cool and disobliging manner; saying, that as he intended to shift his lodgings in a day or two, he could not expect the pleasure of seeing him, until he should be settled, when he would call at the academy, and conduct him to his new habitation.

Pickle, who was not unacquainted with the sentiments of this jealous gentleman, did not put much confidence in his promise, and therefore made divers efforts to enjoy a little private conversation with his wife; but he was baffled in all his attempts by the indefatigable vigilance of her keeper, and reaped no other immediate pleasure from this accidental meeting, than that of a kind squeeze while he handed her into the coach. However, as he had been witness to some instances of her invention, and was no stranger to the favourable disposition of her heart, he entertained some faint hopes of profiting by her understanding, and was not deceived in his expectation; for the very next forenoon a Savoyard called at the academy, and put the following billet in his hand.

'COIND SUR,

'HEAVING the playsure of 'meating with you at the ofs-'pital of anvilheads, I take this lub-'bertea of latin you know, that I lotch 'at the *hottail de May cong dangle rouy 'Doghousseten*, with two postis at the 'gait, naytheir of um very hole, ware 'I shall be at the windore, if in kais 'you will be so good as to pass that 'way at sicks a cloak in the heavening, 'when Mr. Hornbeck goes to the *Cal-'shay de Contea*. Prey for the loaf of 'Geesus keep this from the nolegs of 'my husband, ells he will make me 'leed a hell upon urth. Being all from, 'deer Sur, your most umbell servan 'wile

'DEBORAH HORNBECK.'

Our young gentleman was ravished at the receipt of this elegant epistle, which

was directed, *A Monſr Monſr Pickbell, a la Gaddamme de Paul Freny*, and did not fail to obey the ſummons at the hour of aſſignation; when the lady, true to her appointment, beckoned him up ſtairs, and he had the good fortune to be admitted unſeen.

After the firſt tranſports of their mutual joy at meeting, ſhe told him, that her huſband had been very ſurly and croſs ever ſince the adventure at Chantilly, which he had not yet digeſted; that he had laid ſevere injunctions upon her to avoid all commerce with Pickle, and even threatened to ſhut her up in a convent for life, if ever ſhe ſhould diſcover the leaſt inclination to renew that acquaintance; that ſhe had been cooped up in her chamber ſince her arrival at Paris, without being permitted to ſee the place, or indeed any company, except that of her landlady, whoſe language ſhe did not underſtand; ſo that her ſpirit being broke, and her health impaired, he was prevailed upon ſome days ago to indulge her in a few airings, during which ſhe had ſeen the gardens of the Luxembourg, the Thuilleries and Palais Royal, though at thoſe times when there was no company in the walks; and that it was in one of thoſe excurſions ſhe had the happineſs of meeting with him. Finally, ſhe gave him to underſtand, that rather than continue longer in ſuch confinement with the man whom ſhe could not love, ſhe would inſtantly give him the ſlip, and put herſelf under the protection of her lover.

Raſh and unthinking as this declaration might be, the young gentleman was ſo much of a gallant, that he would not baulk the lady's inclinations, and too infatuated by his paſſion to foreſee the conſequences of ſuch a dangerous ſtep; he therefore, without heſitation, embraced the propoſal, and the coaſt being clear, they ſallied into the ſtreet, where Peregrine calling a fiacre, ordered the coachman to drive them to a tavern: but knowing it would not be in his power to conceal her from the ſearch of the lieutenant de police, if ſhe ſhould remain within the walls of Paris, he hired a remiſe, and carried her that ſame evening to Villejuif, about four leagues from town, where he ſtaid with her all night; and having boarded her on a genteel penſion, and ſettled the œconomy of his future viſits, returned next day to his own lodgings.

While he thus enjoyed his ſucceſs, her huſband endured the tortures of the damned. When he returned from the coffee-houſe, and underſtood that his wife had eloped, without being perceived by any perſon in the family, he began to rave and foam with rage and jealouſy, and in the fury of diſtraction, accuſed the landlady of being an accomplice in her eſcape, threatening to complain of her to the commiſſaire. The woman could not conceive how Mrs. Hornbeck, who ſhe knew was an utter ſtranger to the French language, and kept no ſort of company, could elude the caution of her huſband, and find any refuge in a place where ſhe had no acquaintance, and began to ſuſpect the lodger's emotion was no other than an affected paſſion to conceal his own practices upon his wife, who had perhaps fallen a ſacrifice to his jealous diſpoſition. She therefore ſpared him the trouble of putting his menaces in execution, by going to the magiſtrate without any farther deliberation, and giving an account of what ſhe knew concerning this myſterious affair, with certain inſinuations againſt Hornbeck's character, which ſhe repreſented as peeviſh and capricious to the laſt degree.

While ſhe thus anticipated the purpoſe of the plaintiff, her information was interrupted by the arrival of the party himſelf, who exhibited his complaint with ſuch evident marks of perturbation, anger, and impatience, that the commiſſaire could eaſily perceive that he had no ſhare in the diſappearance of his wife; and directed him to the lieutenant de police, whoſe province it is to take cognizance of ſuch occurrences. This gentleman, who preſides over the city of Paris, having heard the particulars of Hornbeck's misfortune, aſked if he ſuſpected any individual perſon as the ſeducer of his yoke-fellow; and when he mentioned Peregrine as the object of his ſuſpicion, granted a warrant and a detachment of ſoldiers to ſearch for and retrieve the fugitive.

The huſband conducted them immediately to the academy, where our hero lodged, and having rummaged the whole place, to the aſtoniſhment of Mr. Jolter, without finding either his wife or the ſuppoſed raviſher, accompanied them to all the publick-houſes in the Fauxbourg; which having examined alſo without ſucceſs, he returned to the magiſtrate in a ſtate

a ſtate of deſpair, and obtained a promiſe of his making ſuch an effectual inquiry, that in three days he ſhould have an account of her, provided ſhe was alive and within the walls of Paris.

Our adventurer, who had foreſeen all this diſturbance, was not at all ſurprized when his governor told him what had happened; and conjured him to reſtore the woman to the right owner, with many pathetick remonſtrances touching the heinous ſin of adultery, the diſtraction of the unfortunate huſband, and the danger of incurring the reſentment of an arbitrary government, which, upon application being made, would not fail of eſpouſing the cauſe of the injured. He denied, with great effrontery, that he had the leaſt concern in the matter, pretended to reſent the deportment of Hornbeck, whom he threatened to chaſtiſe for his ſcandalous ſuſpicion, and expreſſed his diſpleaſure at the credulity of Jolter, who ſeemed to doubt the veracity of his aſſeveration.

Notwithſtanding this confident behaviour, Jolter could not help entertaining doubts of his ſincerity; and viſiting the diſconſolate ſwain, begged he would, for the honour of his country, as well as for the ſake of his own reputation, diſcontinue his addreſſes to the lieutenant de police, and apply to the Britiſh ambaſſador, who, by dint of friendly admonitions, would certainly prevail upon Mr. Pickle to do him all the juſtice in his power, if he was really the author of the injury he had ſuſtained. The governor urged this advice with the appearance of ſo much ſympathy and concern, promiſing to co-operate with all his influence in his behalf, that Hornbeck embraced the propoſal, communicated his purpoſe to the magiſtrate, who commended the reſolution as the moſt decent and deſirable expedient he could uſe, and then waited upon his excellency, who readily eſpouſed his cauſe, and ſending for the young gentleman that ſame evening, read him ſuch a lecture in private, as extorted a confeſſion of the whole affair. Not that he aſſailed him with ſour and ſupercilious maxims, or ſevere rebuke, becauſe he had penetration enough to diſcern that Peregrine's diſpoſition was impregnable to all ſuch attacks; but he firſt of all rallied him upon his intriguing genius; then, in an humorous manner, deſcribed the diſtraction of the poor cuckold, who he owned was juſtly puniſhed for the abſurdity of his conduct; and laſtly, upon the ſuppoſition, that it would be no great effort in Pickle to part with ſuch a conqueſt, eſpecially after it had been for ſome time poſſeſſed, repreſented the neceſſity and expediency of reſtoring her, not only out of regard to his own character, and that of his nation, but alſo with a view to his eaſe, which would in a little time be very much invaded by ſuch an incumbrance, that in all probability would involve him in a thouſand difficulties and diſguſts. Beſides, he aſſured him, that he was already, by order of the lieutenant de police, ſurrounded with ſpies, who would watch all his motions, and immediately diſcover the retreat in which he had diſpoſed his prize. Theſe arguments, and the frank familiar manner in which they were delivered, but, above all, the laſt conſideration, induced the young gentleman to diſcloſe the whole of his proceedings to the ambaſſador, and promiſed to be governed by his direction, provided the lady ſhould not ſuffer for the ſtep ſhe had taken, but be received by her huſband with due reverence and reſpect. Theſe ſtipulations being agreed to, he undertook to produce her in eight and forty hours; and taking coach immediately, drove to the place of her reſidence, where he ſpent a whole day and a night in convincing her of the impoſſibility of their enjoying each other in that manner. Then returning to Paris, he delivered her into the hands of the ambaſſador, who having aſſured her, that ſhe might depend upon his friendſhip and protection, in caſe ſhe ſhould find herſelf aggrieved by the jealous temper of Mr. Hornbeck, reſtored her to her legitimate lord, whom he counſelled to exempt her from that reſtraint, which in all probability had been the cauſe of her elopement, and endeavour to conciliate her affection by tender and reſpectful uſage.

The huſband behaved with great humility and compliance, proteſting that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to contrive parties for her pleaſure and ſatisfaction. But no ſooner did he regain poſſeſſion of his ſtray-ſheep, than he locked her up more cloſely than ever; and after having revolved various ſchemes for her reformation, determined to board her in a convent, under the inſpection of a prudent abbeſs, who ſhould ſuperintend her morals, and recal her to the paths of

virtue, which ſhe had forſaken. With this view he conſulted an Engliſh prieſt of his acquaintance, who adviſed him to ſettle her in a monaſtery at Liſle, that ſhe might be as far as poſſible from the machinations of her lover; and gave him a letter of recommendation to the ſuperior of a certain convent in that place, for which Mr. Hornbeck ſet out in a few days with his troubleſome charge.

CHAP. VIII.

PEREGRINE RESOLVES TO RETURN TO ENGLAND; IS DIVERTED WITH THE ODD CHARACTERS OF TWO OF HIS COUNTRYMEN, WITH WHOM HE CONTRACTS AN ACQUAINTANCE IN THE APARTMENTS OF THE PALAIS ROYAL.

IN the mean time, our hero received a letter from his aunt, importing, that the commodore was in a very declining way, and longed much to ſee him at the garriſon; and at the ſame time he heard from his ſiſter, who gave him to underſtand that the young gentleman who had for ſome time made his addreſſes to her, was become very preſſing in his ſolicitations; ſo that ſhe wanted to know in what manner ſhe ſhould anſwer his repeated intreaties. Thoſe two conſiderations determined the young gentleman to return to his native country; a reſolution that was far from being diſagreeable to Jolter, who knew that the incumbent on a living, which was in the gift of Trunnion, was extremely old, and that it would be his intereſt to be upon the ſpot at the ſaid incumbent's deceaſe.

Peregrine, who had reſided about fifteen months in France, thought he was now ſufficiently qualified for eclipſing moſt of his cotemporaries in England, and therefore prepared for his departure with infinite alacrity; being moreover inflamed with the moſt ardent deſire of reviſiting his friends, and renewing his connections, particularly with Emilia, whoſe heart he by this time thought he was able to reduce on his own terms.

As he propoſed to make the tour of Flanders and Holland in his return to England, he reſolved to ſtay in Paris a week or two after his affairs were ſettled, in hope of finding ſome agreeable companion diſpoſed for the ſame journey, and in order to refreſh his memory, made a ſecond circuit round all the places in that capital, where any curious production of art is to be ſeen. In the courſe of this ſecond examination he chanced to enter the Palais Royal, juſt as two gentlemen alighted from a fiacre at the gate, and all three being admitted at the ſame time, he ſoon perceived that the ſtrangers were of his own country. One of them was a young man, in whoſe air and countenance appeared all the uncouth gravity and ſupercilious ſelf-conceit of a phyſician piping hot from his ſtudies; while the other, to whom his companion ſpoke by the appellation of Mr. Pallet, diſplayed, at firſt ſight, a ſtrange compoſition of levity and aſſurance. Indeed, their characters, dreſs, and addreſs, were ſtrongly contraſted: the doctor wore a ſuit of black, and a huge tie-wig, neither ſuitable to his own age, nor the faſhion of the country where he then lived; whereas the other, though ſeemingly turned of fifty, ſtrutted in a gay ſummer dreſs of the Pariſian cut, with a bag to his own grey hair, and a red feather in his hat, which he carried under his arm. As theſe figures ſeemed to promiſe ſomething entertaining, Pickle entered into converſation with them immediately, and ſoon diſcovered that the old gentleman was a painter from London, who had ſtole a fortnight from his occupation, in order to viſit the remarkable paintings of France and Flanders; and that the doctor had taken the opportunity of accompanying him in his tour. Being extremely talkative, he not only communicated theſe particulars to our hero in a very few minutes after their meeting, but alſo took occaſion to whiſper in his ear, that his fellow-traveller was a man of vaſt learning, and, beyond all doubt, the greateſt poet of the age. As for himſelf, he was under no neceſſity of making his own eulogium; for he ſoon gave ſuch ſpecimens of his taſte and talents, as left Pickle no room to doubt of his capacity.

While they ſtood conſidering the pictures in one of the firſt apartments, which are by no means the moſt maſterly compoſitions, the Swiſs, who ſets up for a connoiſſeur, looking at a certain piece, pronounced the word '*Magnifique!*' with a note of admiration; upon which Mr. Pallet, who was not at all a critick in

in the French language, replied with great vivacity, 'Manufac, you mean, 'and a very indifferent piece of manufacture it is; pray, gentlemen, take 'notice, there is no keeping in thoſe 'heads upon the back-ground, nor no 'relief in the principal figure: then 'you'll obſerve the ſhadings are harſh 'to the laſt degree—and come a little 'cloſer this way—don't you perceive 'that the fore-ſhortening of that arm is 'monſtrous—agad, Sir! there is an 'abſolute fracture in the limb—Doctor, 'you underſtand anatomy; don't you 'think that muſcle evidently miſplaced? —'Hark ye, Mr. What-d'ye-call-um,' turning to the attendant, 'what is the 'name of the dauber who painted that 'miſerable performance?' The Swiſs imagined that he was all this time expreſſing his ſatisfaction, ſanctioned his ſuppoſed commendation, by exclaiming, *ſans prix!* 'Right,' cried Pallet, 'I 'could not recollect his name, though 'his manner is quite familiar to me. 'We have a few pieces in England, 'done by that ſame Sangpree; but there 'they are in no eſtimation; we have 'more taſte among us, than to reliſh 'the productions of ſuch a miſerable 'gout.—A'n't he an ignorant cox-'comb, doctor?' The phyſician, aſhamed of his companion's blunder, thought it was neceſſary, for the honour of his own character, to take notice of it before the ſtranger, and therefore anſwered his queſtion, by repeating this line from Horace,

'*Mutato nomine, de te fabula narratur.*'

The painter, who was rather more ignorant of Latin than of French, taking it for granted that this quotation of his friend conveyed an aſſent to his opinion, 'Very true,' ſaid he, '*Potatoe domine* '*date*, this piece is not worth a ſingle 'potatoe!' Peregrine was aſtoniſhed at this ſurprizing perverſion of the words and meaning of a Latin line, which at firſt he could not help thinking was a premeditated joke; but upon ſecond thoughts, he ſaw no reaſon to doubt that it was the extemporaneous effect of ſheer pertneſs and ignorance; at which he broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter. Pallet, believing that the gentleman's mirth was occaſioned by his arch animadverſion upon the work of Sangpree, underwent the ſame emotion in a much louder ſtrain, and endeavoured to heighten the jeſt by more obſervations of the ſame nature; while the doctor, confounded at his impudence and want of knowledge, reprimanded him in theſe words of Homer,

'*Siga me tis allos Achaion touton akouſe muthon.*'

This rebuke, the reader will eaſily perceive, was not calculated for the meridian of his friend's intellects, but uttered with a view of raiſing his own character in the opinion of Mr. Pickle, who retorted this parade of learning in three verſes from the ſame author, being part of the ſpeech of Polydamus to Hector, importing that it was impoſſible for one man to excel in every thing. The ſelf-ſufficient phyſician, who did not expect ſuch a repartee from a youth of Peregrine's appearance, looked upon his reply as a fair challenge, and inſtantly rehearſed forty or fifty lines of the Iliad in a breath. Obſerving that the ſtranger made no effort to match this effuſion, he interpreted his ſilence into ſubmiſſion; then, in order to aſcertain his victory, inſulted him with divers fragments of authors, whom his ſuppoſed competitor did not even know by name; while Mr. Pallet ſtared with admiration at the profound ſcholarſhip of his companion. Our young gentleman, far from repining at this ſuperiority, laughed within himſelf at the ridiculous ambition of the pedantick doctor. He rated him in his own mind as a mere index-hunter, who held the eel of ſcience by the tail, and foreſaw an infinite fund of diverſion in his ſolemnity and pride, if properly extracted by means of his fellow-traveller's vanity and aſſurance. Prompted by theſe conſiderations, he reſolved to cultivate their acquaintance; and, if poſſible, amuſe himſelf at their expence in his journey through Flanders, underſtanding that they were determined upon the ſame route. In this view he treated them with extraordinary attention, and ſeemed to pay particular deference to the remarks of the painter, who with great intrepidity pronounced judgment upon every picture in the palace; or, in other words, expoſed his own nakedneſs in every ſentence that proceeded from his mouth.

When they came to conſider the Mur-

der

der of the Innocents by Le Brun, the Swiss observed, that it was *un beau morceau*; and Mr. Pallet replied, 'Yes, 'yes, one may see with half an eye, 'that it can be the production of no 'other; for *Bormoso*'s style, both in colouring and drapery, is altogether peculiar; then his design is tame, and 'his expression antick and unnatural. 'Doctor, you have seen my Judgment 'of Solomon; I think I may without 'presumption—but, I don't chuse to 'make comparisons; I leave that odious 'task to other people, and let my works 'speak for themselves. France, to be 'sure, is rich in the arts, but what is 'the reason? the king encourages men 'of genius with honour and rewards: 'whereas, in England, we are obliged 'to stand upon our own feet, and combat the envy and malice of our brethren. Agad! I have a good mind to 'come and settle here in Paris; I should 'like to have an apartment in the 'Louvre, with a snug pension of so 'many thousand livres.' In this manner did Pallet proceed with an eternal rotation of tongue, floundering from one mistake to another, until it was the turn of Poussin's Seven Sacraments to be examined. Here again the Swiss, out of the abundance of his zeal, expressed his admiration, by saying these pieces were *impayable*; when the painter turning to him with an air of exultation, 'Pardon me, friend, there you happen 'to be mistaken, these are none of *Im*'*payable's*; but done by Nicholas Pou'seen. I have seen prints of them in 'England, so that none of your tricks 'upon travellers, Mr. Swiss or Swash, 'or what's your name!' He was very much elated by this imaginary triumph of his understanding, which animated him to persevere in his curious observations upon all the other pieces of that celebrated collection; but perceiving that the doctor manifested no signs of pleasure and satisfaction, but rather beheld them with a silent air of disdain, he could not digest his indifference, and asked, with a waggish sneer, if ever he had seen such a number of master-pieces before? The physician, eying him with a look of compassion mingled with contempt, observed that there was nothing there which deserved the attention of any person acquainted with the ideas of the ancients; and that the author of the finest picce now in being, was unworthy to clean the brushes of one of those great masters, who are celebrated by the Greek and Roman writers. 'O lud! O lud!' exclaimed the painter, with a loud laugh; 'you have fairly brought yourself into 'a dilemma at last, dear doctor; for it 'is well known that your ancient Greek 'and Roman artists knew nothing at 'all of the matter, in comparison with 'our modern masters; for this good 'reason, because they had but three or 'four colours, and knew not how to 'paint with oil: besides, which of all 'your old fusty Grecians would you 'put upon a footing with the divine 'Raphael, the most excellent Michael 'Angelo Bona Roti, the graceful 'Guido, the bewitching Titian, and 'above all others, the sublime Rubens; 'the——' He would have proceeded with a long catalogue of names, which he had got by heart for the purpose, without retaining the least idea of their several qualifications, had he not been interrupted by his friend, whose indignation being kindled by the irreverence with which he mentioned the Greeks, he called him blasphemer, Goth, Bœotian; and in his turn, asked with great vehemence, which of those puny moderns could match with Panænus of Athens, and his brother Phidias, Polycletus Sicyon, Polygnotus the Thrasian, Parrhasius of Ephesus, sirnamed Abrodiaitos or *the Beau*, and Apelles the prince of painters? He challenged him to shew any portrait of these days that could vie with the Helen of Zeuxis the Heraclean, or any composition equal to the sacrifice of Iphigenia, by Timanthes the Sicyonian; not to mention the twelve gods of Asclepiadorus the Athenian, for which Mnason, tyrant of Elatea, gave him about three hundred pounds apiece; or Homer's Hell by Nicias, who refused sixty talents, amounting to upwards of eleven thousand pounds, and generously made a present of it to his own country. He desired him to produce a collection equal to that in the temple of Delphos, mentioned in the *Ion* of Euripides; where Hercules and his companion Iolaus are represented in the act of killing the Lernæan hydra with golden sickles; *krusеais harpais*, where Bellerophon appears on his winged steed, vanquishing the fire-breathing chimera, *tan puripneousan*; and the war of the giants is described. Here Jupiter stands wielding the red-hot thunderbolts,

bolts, *Keraunon amphipuron*; there Pallas, dreadful to the view, *Gorgopon*, brandiſheth her ſpear againſt the huge Enceladus; and Bacchus, with ſlender ivy rods, defeats and ſlays the *gas teknon*, or mighty ſon of earth. The painter was aſtoniſhed and confounded at this rhapſody of names and inſtances, which was uttered with ſurprizing eagerneſs and rapidity; ſuſpecting at firſt that the whole was the creation of his own brain; but when Pickle, with a view of flattering the doctor's ſelf-conceit, eſpouſed his ſide of the queſtion, and confirmed the truth of every thing he advanced, Mr. Pallet changed his opinion, and in emphatick ſilence adored the immenſity of his friend's underſtanding. In ſhort, Peregrine eaſily perceived that they were falſe enthuſiaſts, without the ſmalleſt pretenſions to taſte and ſenſibility; and pretended to be in raptures with they knew not what; the one thinking it was incumbent upon him to expreſs tranſports on ſeeing the works of thoſe who had been moſt eminent in his profeſſion, whether they did or did not really raiſe his admiration; and the other, as a ſcholar, deeming it his duty to magnify the ancients above all competition, with an affected fervour, which the knowledge of their excellencies never inſpired. Indeed, our young gentleman ſo ſucceſsfully accommodated himſelf to the diſpoſitions of each, that long before their review was finiſhed, he was become a particular favourite with both.

From the Palais Royal he accompanied them to the cloiſters of the Carthuſians, where they conſidered the hiſtory of St. Bruno, by Le Sueur, whoſe name being utterly unknown to the painter, he gave judgment againſt the whole compoſition, as pitiful and paltry; though in the opinion of all good judges it is a moſt maſterly performance.

Having ſatisfied their curioſity in this place, Peregrine aſked them to favour him with their company at dinner; but whether out of caution againſt the inſinuations of one whoſe character they did not know, or by reaſon of a prior engagement, they declined his invitation, on pretence of having an appointment at a certain ordinary, though they expreſſed a deſire of being farther acquainted with him; and Mr. Pallet took the freedom of aſking his name; which he not only declared, but promiſed, as they were ſtrangers in Paris, to wait upon them next day in the forenoon, in order to conduct them to the hotel de Thouloufe, and the houſes of ſeveral other noblemen, remarkable for painting or curious furniture. They thankfully embraced his propoſal; and that ſame day made enquiry among the Engliſh gentlemen about the character of our hero; which they found ſo much to their ſatisfaction, that upon their ſecond meeting, they courted his good graces without reſerve; and as they had heard of his intended departure, begged earneſtly to have the honour of accompanying him through the Low Countries. He aſſured them, that nothing could be more agreeable to him, than the proſpect of having ſuch fellow-travellers; and they immediately appointed a day for ſetting out on that tour.

CHAP. IX.

HE INTRODUCES HIS NEW FRIENDS TO MR. JOLTER, WITH WHOM THE DOCTOR ENTERS INTO A DISPUTE UPON GOVERNMENT, WHICH HAD WELL NIGH TERMINATED IN OPEN WAR.

MEANWHILE, he not only made them acquainted with every thing worth ſeeing in town, but attended them in their excurſions to all the king's houſes within a day's journey of Paris; and in the courſe of theſe parties, treated them with an elegant dinner at his own apartments; where a diſpute aroſe between the doctor and Mr. Jolter, which had well nigh terminated in an irreconcileable animoſity. Theſe gentlemen, with an equal ſhare of pride, pedantry, and ſaturnine diſpoſition, were by the accidents of education and company, diametrically oppoſite in political maxims; the one, as we have already obſerved, being a bigotted high-churchman, and the other a rank republican. It was an article of the governor's creed, that the people could not be happy, nor the earth yield it's fruits in abundance, under a reſtricted clergy and limited government: whereas, in the doctor's opinion, it was an eternal truth, that no conſtitution was ſo perfect as the democracy, and that no country could flouriſh but under the adminiſtration of the mob.

Theſe conſiderations being premiſed,

no wonder that they happened to disagree in the freedom of an unreserved conversation, especially as their entertainer took all opportunities of encouraging and enflaming the contention. The first source of their difference was an unlucky remark of the painter, who observed that the partridge of which he was then eating had the finest relish of any he had ever tasted. His friend owned that the birds were the best of the kind he had seen in France; but affirmed, that they were neither so plump nor delicious as those that were caught in England. The governor, considering this observation as the effect of prejudice and inexperience, said, with a sarcastical smile, 'I believe, Sir, you are 'very well disposed to find every thing 'here inferior to the productions of your 'own country.'—'True, Sir,' answered the physician, with a certain solemnity of aspect, 'and not without good 'reason, I hope.' — 'And pray,' resumed the tutor, 'why may not the 'partridges of France be as good as 'those of England?' — 'For a very 'plain reason,' replied the other, 'because they are not so well fed. The 'iron hand of oppression is extended to 'all animals within the French dominions, even to the beasts of the field 'and the fowls of the air. *Kuneſſin 'oionoiſi te paſi.*'—'Egad!' cried the painter, 'that is a truth not to be controverted: for my own part, I am 'none of your tit-bits, one would think, 'but yet there's a freshness in the English complexion, a *ginſeckye*, I think 'you call it, so inviting to a hungry 'Frenchman, that I have caught several in the very act of viewing me with 'an eye of extreme appetite, as I passed; and as for their curs, or rather 'their wolves, whenever I set my eyes 'on one of 'em, "Ah! your humble "servant, Mr. Son of a Bitch!" I am 'upon my guard in an instant. The 'doctor can testify that their very horses, 'or more properly their live carrion, 'that drew our chaise, used to reach 'back their long necks, and smell at 'us, as a couple of delicious morsels.' This sally of Mr. Pallet, which was received with a general laugh of approbation, would, in all probability, have stifled the dispute in embryo, had not Mr. Jolter, with a self-applauding simper, ironically complimented the strangers on their talking like true Englishmen. The doctor, affronted at the insinuation, told him with some warmth, that he was mistaken in his conjecture, his affections and ideas being confined to no particular country; for he considered himself as a citizen of the world. He owned himself more attached to England than to any other kingdom, but this preference was the effect of reflection, and not of prejudice; because the British constitution approached nearer than any other to that perfection of government, the democracy of Athens, which he hoped one day to see revived: he mentioned the death of Charles the First, and the expulsion of his son, with raptures of applause; inveighed with great acrimony against the kingly name; and in order to strengthen his opinion, repeated forty or fifty lines from one of the Philippicks of Demosthenes. Jolter hearing him speak so disrespectfully of the higher powers, glowed with indignation. He said his doctrines were detestable, and destructive of all right, order, and society; that monarchy was of Divine institution, therefore indefeasible by any human power; and of consequence those events in the English history which he had so liberally commended, were no other than flagrant instances of sacrilege, perfidy, and sedition; that the democracy of Athens was a most absurd constitution, productive of anarchy and mischief, which must always happen when the government of a nation depends upon the caprice of the ignorant hair-brained vulgar; that it was in the power of the most profligate member of the commonwealth, provided he was endowed with eloquence, to ruin the most deserving, by a desperate exertion of his talents upon the populace, who had been often persuaded to act in the most ungrateful and imprudent manner, against the greatest patriots that their country had produced: and finally, he averred, that the liberal arts and sciences had never flourished so much in a republick, as under the encouragement and protection of absolute power; witness the Augustan age, and the reign of Lewis the Fourteenth; nor was it to be supposed, that genius and merit could ever be so amply recompensed by the individuals, or distracted councils of a commonwealth, as by the generosity and magnificence of one, who had the whole treasures at his own command.

Peregrine

Peregrine, who was pleaſed to find the conteſt grow warm, obſerved that there ſeemed to be a good deal of truth in what Mr. Jolter advanced: and the painter, whoſe opinion began to waver, looked with a face of expectation at his friend, who modelling his features into an expreſſion of exulting diſdain, aſked of his antagoniſt, if he did not think that very power of rewarding merit, enabled an abſolute prince to indulge himſelf in the moſt arbitrary licence over the lives and fortunes of his people. Before the governor had time to anſwer this queſtion, Pallet broke forth into an exclamation of, 'By the Lord! 'that is certainly fact; egad! that was 'a home thruſt, doctor.' When Mr. Jolter chaſtiſing this ſhallow intruder with a contemptuous look, affirmed, that though ſupreme power furniſhed a good prince with the means of exerting his virtues, it would not ſupport a tyrant in the exerciſe of cruelty and oppreſſion; becauſe in all nations the genius of the people muſt be conſulted by their governors, and the burden proportioned to the ſhoulders on which it is laid. 'Elſe, what follows?' ſaid the phyſician. 'The conſequence is plain,' replied the governor; 'inſurrection, re-'volt, and his own deſtruction: for it 'is not to be ſuppoſed that the ſubjects 'of any nation would be ſo abject and 'puſillanimous, as to neglect the means 'which Heaven hath put in their power 'for their own preſervation.'—'Gad-'zooks! you're in the right, Sir,' cried Pallet; 'that, I grant you, muſt be con-'feſſed. Doctor, I'm afraid we have 'got into the wrong box.' This ſon of Pæan, however, far from being of his friend's opinion, obſerved, with an air of triumph, that he would not only demonſtrate the ſophiſtry of the gentleman's laſt allegation, by argument and facts, but even confute him with his own words. Jolter's eyes kindling at this preſumptuous declaration, he told his antagoniſt, while his lip quivered with reſentment, that if his arguments were no better than his breeding, he was ſure he would make very few converts to his opinion: and the doctor, with all the inſolence of triumph, adviſed him to beware of diſputes for the future, until he ſhould have made himſelf more maſter of his ſubject.

Peregrine both wiſhed and hoped to ſee the diſputants proceed to arguments of more weight and conviction; and the painter, dreading the ſame iſſue, interpoſed with the uſual exclamation of 'For God's ſake, gentlemen!' when the governor roſe from table in great dudgeon, and left the room, muttering ſome ejaculation, of which the word coxcomb only could be diſtinctly heard. The phyſician being thus left maſter of the field of battle, was complimented on his victory by Peregrine; and ſo elevated by his ſucceſs, that he declaimed a full hour on the abſurdity of Jolter's propoſition, and the beauty of the democratick adminiſtration; canvaſſed the whole ſcheme of Plato's republick, with many quotations from that ideal author, touching the το καλον; from thence he made a tranſition to the moral ſenſe of Shafteſbury, and concluded his harangue with the greateſt part of that frothy writer's rhapſody, which he repeated with all the violence of enthuſiaſtick agitation; to the unſpeakable ſatisfaction of his entertainer, and the unutterable admiration of Pallet, who looked upon him as ſomething ſupernatural and divine. So intoxicated was this vain young man with the ironical praiſes of Pickle, that he forthwith ſhook off all reſerve; and having profeſſed a friendſhip for our hero, whoſe taſte and learning he did not fail to extol, intimated in plain terms, that he was the only perſon in theſe latter ages, who poſſeſſed that ſublime genius, that portion of the divinity or Ti Theion, which immortalized the Grecian Poets; that as Pythagoras affirmed the ſpirit of Euphorbus had tranſmigrated into his body, he, the doctor, was ſtrangely poſſeſſed with the opinion that he himſelf was inſpired by the ſoul of Pindar; becauſe, making allowance for the difference of languages in which they wrote, there was a ſurprizing affinity between his own works and thoſe of that celebrated Theban; and as a confirmation of this truth, he immediately produced a ſample of each, which though in ſpirit and verſification as different as the Odes of Horace and our preſent poet-laureat, Peregrine did not ſcruple to pronounce altogether congenial; notwithſtanding the violence he by this ſentence offered to his own conſcience, and a certain alarm of his pride, that was weak enough to be diſturbed by the phyſician's ridiculous vanity and preſumption, which, not contented with diſplay-

ing his importance in the world of taſte and polite literature, manifeſted itſelf in arrogating certain material diſcoveries in the province of phyſick, which could not fail to advance him to the higheſt pinnacle of that profeſſion, conſidering the recommendation of his other talents, together with a liberal fortune which he inherited from his father.

CHAP. X.

THE DOCTOR PREPARES AN ENTERTAINMENT IN THE MANNER OF THE ANCIENTS, WHICH IS ATTENDED WITH DIVERS RIDICULOUS CIRCUMSTANCES.

IN a word, our young gentleman, by his inſinuating behaviour, acquired the full confidence of the doctor, who invited him to an entertainment, which he intended to prepare in the manner of the ancients. Pickle, ſtruck with this idea, eagerly embraced the propoſal, which he honoured with many encomiums, as a plan in all reſpects worthy of his genius and apprehenſion; and the day was appointed at ſome diſtance of time, that the treater might have leiſure to compoſe certain pickles and confections which were not to be found among the culinary preparations of theſe degenerate days.

With a view of rendering the phyſician's taſte more conſpicuous, and extracting from it the more diverſion, Peregrine propoſed that ſome foreigners ſhould partake of the banquet; and the taſk being left to his care and diſcretion, he actually beſpoke the company of a French marquis, an Italian count, and a German baron; whom he knew to be egregious coxcombs, and therefore more likely to enhance the joy of the entertainment.

Accordingly, the hour being arrived, he conducted them to the hotel where the phyſician lodged, after having regaled their expectations with an elegant meal in the genuine old Roman taſte; and they were received by Mr. Pallet, who did the honours of the houſe, while his friend ſuperintended the cook below. By this communicative painter, the gueſts underſtood that the doctor had met with numerous difficulties in the execution of his deſign; that no fewer than five cooks had been diſmiſſed, becauſe they could not prevail upon their own conſciences to obey his directions in things that were contrary to the preſent practice of their art; and that although he had at laſt engaged a perſon, by an extraordinary premium, to comply with his orders, the fellow was ſo aſtoniſhed, mortified, and incenſed, at the commands he had received, that his hair ſtood on end, and he begged on his knees to be releaſed from the agreement he had made: but finding that his employer inſiſted upon the performance of his contract, and threatened to introduce him to the commiſſaire if he ſhould flinch from the bargain, he had, in the diſcharge of his office, wept, ſung, curſed, and capered, for two whole hours without intermiſſion.

While the company liſtened to this odd information, by which they were prepoſſeſſed with ſtrange notions of the dinner, their ears were invaded by a piteous voice, that exclaimed in French, 'For the love of God! dear Sir! for 'the paſſion of Jeſus Chriſt! ſpare me 'the mortification of the honey and oil!' Their ears ſtill vibrated with the ſound, when the doctor entering, was by Peregrine made acquainted with the ſtrangers; to whom he, in the tranſports of his wrath, could not help complaining of the want of complaiſance he had found in the Pariſian vulgar, by which his plan had been almoſt entirely ruined and ſet aſide. The French marquis, who though the honour of his nation was concerned at this declaration, profeſſed his ſorrow for what had happened, ſo contrary to the eſtabliſhed character of the people, and undertook to ſee the delinquents ſeverely puniſhed, provided he could be informed of their names or places of abode. The mutual compliments that paſſed on this occaſion were ſcare finiſhed, when a ſervant coming into the room, announced dinner; and the entertainer led the way into another apartment, where they found a long table, or rather two boards joined together, and furniſhed with a variety of diſhes, the ſteams of which had ſuch evident effect upon the nerves of the company, that the marquis made frightful grimaces, under pretence of taking ſnuff; the Italian's eyes watered, the German's viſage underwent ſeveral diſtortions of features; our hero found means to exclude the odour from his ſenſe of ſmelling, by breathing only through

through his mouth; and the poor painter running into another room, plugged his noſtrils with tobacco. The doctor himſelf, who was the only perſon then preſent whoſe organs were not diſcompoſed, pointing to a couple of couches placed on each ſide the table, told his gueſts that he was ſorry he could not procure the exact *triclinia* of the ancients, which were ſomewhat different from theſe conveniencies, and deſired they would have the goodneſs to repoſe themſelves without ceremony, each in his reſpective couchette, while he and his friend Mr. Pallet would place themſelves upright at the ends, that they might have the pleaſure of ſerving thoſe that lay along. This diſpoſition, of which the ſtrangers had no previous idea, diſconcerted and perplexed them in a moſt ridiculous manner; the marquis and baron ſtood bowing to each other, on pretence of diſputing the lower ſeat, but in reality, with a view of profiting by the example of one another, for neither of them underſtood the manner in which they were to loll; and Peregrine, who enjoyed their confuſion, handed the count to the other ſide, where, with the moſt miſchievous politeneſs, he inſiſted upon his taking poſſeſſion of the upper place.

In this diſagreeable and ludicrous ſuſpenſe, they continued acting a pantomime of geſticulations, until the doctor earneſtly intreated them to wave all compliment and form, leſt the dinner ſhould be ſpoiled before the ceremonial could be adjuſted. Thus conjured, Peregrine took the lower couch on the left-hand ſide, laying himſelf gently down, with his face towards the table. The marquis, in imitation of this pattern (though he would have much rather faſted three days than run the riſk of diſcompoſing his dreſs by ſuch an attitude) ſtretched himſelf upon the oppoſite place, reclining upon his elbow in a moſt painful and aukward ſituation, with his head raiſed above the end of the couch, that the œconomy of his hair might not ſuffer by the projection of his body. The Italian, being a thin limber creature, planted himſelf next to Pickle, without ſuſtaining any misfortune, but that of his ſtocking being torn by a ragged nail of the ſeat, as he raiſed his legs on a level with the reſt of his limbs. But the baron, who was neither ſo wieldy nor ſupple in his joints as his companions, flounced himſelf down with ſuch precipitation, that his feet ſuddenly tilting up, came in furious contact with the head of the marquis, and demoliſhed every curl in a twinkling, while his own ſkull, at the ſame inſtant, deſcended upon the ſide of his couch with ſuch violence, that his periwig was ſtruck off, and the whole room filled with pulvilio.

The drollery of diſtreſs that attended this diſaſter entirely vanquiſhed the affected gravity of our young gentleman, who was obliged to ſuppreſs his laughter by cramming his handkerchief in his mouth; for the bare-headed German aſking pardon with ſuch ridiculous confuſion, and the marquis admitting his apology with ſuch rueful complaiſance, were ſufficient to awake the mirth of a quietiſt.

This misfortune being repaired as well as the circumſtances of the occaſion would permit, and every one ſettled according to the arrangement already deſcribed, the doctor graciouſly undertook to give ſome account of the diſhes as they occurred, that the company might be directed in their choice; and with an air of infinite ſatisfaction thus began. —'This here, gentlemen, is a boiled 'gooſe, ſerved up in a ſauce compoſed 'of pepper, lovage, coriander, mint, 'rue, anchovies, and oil! I wiſh for 'your ſakes, gentlemen, it was one of 'the geeſe of Ferrara, ſo much celebrated among the ancients for the magnitude of their livers, one of which is 'ſaid to have weighed upwards of two 'pounds; with this food, exquiſite as 'it was, did the tyrant Heliogabalus 'regale his hounds. But I beg pardon, 'I had almoſt forgot the ſoup, which I 'hear is ſo neceſſary an article at all 'tables in France. At each end there 'are diſhes of the ſalacacabia of the Romans; one is made of parſley, pennyroyal, cheeſe, pine-tops, honey, vinegar, brine, eggs, cucumbers, onions, 'and hen livers; the other is much the 'ſame as the ſoup-maigre of this country. Then there is a loin of veal 'boiled with fennel and caraway-ſeed, 'on a pottage compoſed of pickle, oil, 'honey, and flour, and a curious hachis 'of the lights, liver and blood of an 'hare, together with a diſh of roaſted 'pigeons.—Monſieur le Baron, ſhall I 'help you to a plate of this ſoup?' The

German, who did not at all disapprove of the ingredients, assented to the proposal, and seemed to relish the composition; while the marquis, being asked by the painter which of the *silly-kickabys* he chose, was in consequence of his desire accommodated with a portion of the soupe-maigre; and the count, in lieu of spoon-meat, of which he said he was no great admirer, supplied himself with a pigeon, therein conforming to the choice of our young gentleman, whose example he determined to follow through the whole course of the entertainment.

The Frenchman having swallowed the first spoonful, made a full pause; his throat swelled, as if an egg had stuck in his gullet, his eyes rolled, and his mouth underwent a series of involuntary constractions and dilatations. Pallet, who looked stedfastly at this connoisseur, with a view of consulting his taste, before he himself would venture upon the soup, began to be disturbed at these emotions, and observed with some concern, that the poor gentleman seemed to be going into a fit; when Peregrine assured him, that these were symptoms of extacy, and for farther confirmation, asked the marquis how he found the soup. It was with infinite difficulty that his complaisance could so far master his disgust, as to enable him to answer, 'Altogether excellent, upon my ho-'nour!' And the painter being certified of his approbation, lifted the spoon to his mouth without scruple; but far from justifying the eulogium of his taster, when this precious composition diffused itself upon his palate, he seemed to be deprived of all sense and motion, and sat like the leaden statue of some river god, with the liquor flowing out at both sides of his mouth.

The doctor, alarmed at this indecent phenomenon, earnestly enquired into the cause of it; and when Pallet recovered his recollection, and swore that he would rather swallow porridge made of burning brimstone, than such an infernal mess as that which he had tasted; the physician, in his own vindication, assured the company, that, except the usual ingredients, he had mixed nothing in the soup but some sal-armoniac instead of the ancient nitrum, which could not now be procured; and appealed to the marquis, whether such a succedaneum was not an improvement on the whole. The unfortunate petit-maitre, driven to the extremity of his condescension, acknowledged it to be a masterly refinement; and deeming himself obliged, in point of honour, to evince his sentiments by his practice, forced a few more mouthfuls of this disagreeable potion down his throat, till his stomach was so much offended, that he was compelled to start up of a sudden; and, in the hurry of his elevation, overturned his plate into the bosom of the baron. The emergency of his occasions would not permit him to stay and make apologies for this abrupt behaviour; so that he flew into another apartment, where Pickle found him puking, and crossing himself with great devotion; and a chair, at his desire, being brought to the door, he slipped into it more dead than alive, conjuring his friend Pickle to make his peace with the company, and in particular excuse him to the baron, on account of the violent fit of illness with which he had been seized. It was not without reason that he employed a mediator; for when our hero returned to the dining-room, the German got up, and was under the hands of his own lacquey, who wiped the grease from a rich embroidered waistcoat, while he, almost frantick with his misfortune, stamped upon the ground, and in High Dutch cursed the unlucky banquet, and the impertinent entertainer, who all this time, with great deliberation, consoled him for the disaster, by assuring him, that the damage might be repaired with some oil of turpentine and a hot iron. Peregrine, who could scarce refrain from laughing in his face, appeased his indignation, by telling him how much the whole company, and especially the marquis, was mortified at the accident; and the unhappy salacacabia being removed, the places were filled with two pies, one of dormice liquored with syrup of white poppies, which the doctor had substituted in the room of toasted poppy-seed, formerly eaten with honey, as a desert; and the other composed of a hock of pork baked in honey.

Pallet hearing the first of these dishes described, lifted up his hands and eyes, and with signs of loathing and amazement pronounced, 'A pye made of dor-'mice and syrup of poppies; Lord in 'heaven! what beastly fellows those 'Romans were!' His friend checked him for his irreverent exclamation with a severe look, and recommended the veal,

veal, of which he himself chearfully eat, with such encomiums to the company, that the baron resolved to imitate his example, after having called for a bumper of Burgundy, which the physician, for his sake, wished to have been the true wine of Falernum. The painter seeing nothing else upon the table which he would venture to touch, made a merit of necessity, and had recourse to the veal also; although he could not help saying, that he would not give one slice of the roast-beef of Old England for all the dainties of a Roman emperor's table. But all the doctor's invitations and assurances could not prevail upon his guests to honour the hachis and the goose; and that course was succeeded by another, in which he told them were divers of those dishes, which among the ancients had obtained the appellation of *politeles*, or magnificent. 'That which 'smoaks in the middle,' said he, 'is a 'sows's stomach, filled with a compo-'sition of minced pork, hog's brains, 'eggs, pepper, cloves, garlick, annised, 'rue, ginger, oil, wine, and pickle. 'On the right-hand side are the teats and 'belly of a sow, just farrowed, fried 'with sweet wine, oil, flour, lovage, 'and pepper. On the left is a fricassee 'of snails, fed, or rather purged, with 'milk. At that end next Mr. Pallet 'are fritters of pompions, lovage, ori-'ganum, and oil; and here are a couple 'of pullets, roasted and stuffed in the 'manner of Appicius.'

The painter, who had by wry faces testified his abhorrence of the sow's stomach, which he compared to a bagpipe, and the snails which had undergone purgation, no sooner heard him mention the roasted pullets, than he eagerly solicited a wing of the fowl; upon which the doctor desired he would take the trouble of cutting them up, and accordingly sent them round, while Mr. Pallet tucked the table-cloth under his chin, and brandished his knife and fork with singular address; but scarce were they set down before him, when the tears ran down his cheeks, and he called aloud, in a manifest disorder, 'Z——ds! this 'is the essence of a whole bed of gar-'lick!' That he might not, however, disappoint or disgrace the entertainer, he applied his instruments to one of the birds; and when he opened up the cavity, was assaulted by such an irruption of intolerable smells, that, without staying to disengage himself from the cloth, he sprung away, with an exclamation of, 'Lord Jesus!' and involved the whole table in havock, ruin, and confusion.

Before Pickle could accomplish his escape, he was sauced with a syrup of the dormouse-pye, which went to pieces in the general wreck; and as for the Italian count, he was overwhelmed by the sow's stomach, which bursting in the fall, discharged it's contents upon his leg and thigh, and scalded him so miserably, that he shrieked with anguish, and grinned with a most ghastly and horrible aspect.

The baron, who sat secure without the vortex of this tumult, was not at all displeased at seeing his companions involved in such a calamity as that which he had already shared; but the doctor was confounded with shame and vexation. After having prescribed an application of oil to the count's leg, he expressed his sorrow for the misadventure, which he openly ascribed to want of taste and prudence in the painter, who did not think proper to return, and make an apology in person; and protested that there was nothing in the fowls which could give offence to a sensible nose, the stuffing being a mixture of pepper, lovage, and assa-fœtida, and the sauce consisting of wine and herring-pickle, which he had used instead of the celebrated garum of the Romans; that famous pickle having been prepared sometimes of the scombri, which were a sort of tunny-fish, and sometimes of the silurus, or shad-fish: nay, he observed that there was a third kind, called *garum hæmation*, made of the guts, gills, and blood of the thynnus.

The physician, finding it would be impracticable to re-establish the order of the banquet, by presenting again the dishes which had been discomposed, ordered every thing to be removed, a clean cloth to be laid, and the desert to be brought in.

Meanwhile, he regretted his incapacity to give them a specimen of the alicus, or fish meals of the ancients; such as the jus diabaton, the conger-eel, which, in Galen's opinion, is hard of digestion; the cornutta, or gurnard, described by Pliny in his Natural History, who says, the horns of many of them were a foot and a half in length; the mullet and lamprey, that were in the highest estima-

tion

tion of old; of which laſt Julius Cæſar borrowed ſix thouſand for one triumphal ſupper. He obſerved, that the manner of dreſſing them was deſcribed by Horace, in the account he gives of the entertainment to which Mæcenas was invited by the epicure Naſidenus.

'*Affertur ſquillas inter Murena natantes,*
'*&c.*'

And told them, that they were commonly eaten with the *thus ſyriacum*, a certain anodyne and aſtringent ſeed, which qualified the purgative nature of the fiſh. Finally, this learned phyſician gave them to underſtand, that though this was reckoned a luxurious diſh in the zenith of the Roman taſte, it was by no means comparable, in point of expence, to ſome preparations in vogue about the time of that abſurd voluptuary Heliogabalus, who ordered the brains of ſix hundred oſtriches to be compounded in one meſs.

By this time the deſert appeared, and the company were not a little rejoiced to ſee plain olives in ſalt and water: but what the maſter of the feaſt valued himſelf upon, was a ſort of jelly, which he affirmed to be preferable to the hypotrimma of Heſychius, being a mixture of vinegar, pickle, and honey, boiled to a proper conſiſtence, and candied aſſafœtida, which he aſſerted, in contradiction to Aumulbergius and Liſter, was no other than the *laſer ſyriacum*, ſo precious, as to be ſold among the ancients to the weight of a ſilver-penny. The gentlemen took his word for the excellency of this gum, but contented themſelves with the olives, which gave ſuch an agreeable reliſh to the wine, that they ſeemed very well diſpoſed to conſole themſelves for the diſgraces they had endured; and Pickle, unwilling to loſe the leaſt circumſtance of entertainment that could be enjoyed in their company, went in queſt of the painter, who remained in his penitentials in another apartment, and could not be perſuaded to re-enter the banqueting-room until Peregrine undertook to procure his pardon from thoſe whom he had injured. Having aſſured him of this indulgence, our young gentleman led him in like a criminal, bowing on all hands with an air of humility and contrition; and particularly addreſſing himſelf to the count, to whom he ſwore in Engliſh, as God was his Saviour, he had no intent to affront man, woman, or child; but was fain to make to make the beſt of his way, that he might not give the honourable company cauſe of offence, by obeying the dictates of nature in their preſence.

When Pickle interpreted this apology to the Italian, Pallet was forgiven in very polite terms, and even received into favour by his friend the doctor, in conſequence of our hero's interceſſion: ſo that all the gueſts forgot their chagrin, and paid their reſpects ſo piouſly to the bottle, that in a ſhort time the Champaigne produced very evident effects in the behaviour of all preſent.

CHAP. XI.

THE PAINTER IS PERSUADED TO ACCOMPANY PICKLE TO A MASQUERADE IN WOMAN'S APPAREL; IS ENGAGED IN A TROUBLESOME ADVENTURE, AND WITH HIS COMPANION CONVEYED TO THE BASTILE.

THE painter, at the requeſt of Pickle, who had a deſign upon the count's ſenſe of hearing, favoured the company with the ſong of Bumper Squire Jones, which yielded infinite ſatisfaction to the baron; but affected the delicate ears of the Italian in ſuch a manner, that his features expreſſed aſtoniſhment and diſquiet; and by his ſudden and repeated journies to the door, it plainly appeared, that he was in the ſame predicament with thoſe who, as Shakeſpeare obſerves, when the bagpipe ſings in the noſe, cannot contain their urine for affection.

With a view, therefore, of vindicating muſick from ſuch a barbarous taſte, Mr. Pallet had no ſooner performed his taſk, than the count honoured his friends with ſome favourite airs of his own country, which he warbled with infinite grace and expreſſion, though they had not energy ſufficient to engage the attention of the German, who fell faſt aſleep upon his couch, and ſnored ſo loud, as to interrupt and totally annul this raviſhing entertainment; ſo that they were fain to have recourſe again to the glaſs, which made ſuch innovation upon the brain of the phyſician, that he ſung divers odes of Anacreon to a tune of his own compoſing, and held forth upon the muſick and recitative of the ancients with great erudition; while Pallet,

Pallet, having found means to make the Italian acquainted with the nature of his profeſſion, harangued upon painting with wonderful volubility, in a language which (it was well for his own credit) the ſtranger did not underſtand.

At length the doctor was ſeized with ſuch a qualm, that he begged Peregrine to lead him to his chamber; and the baron being waked, retired with the count.

Peregrine being rendered frolickſome with the wine he had drank, propoſed that he and Pallet ſhould go to a maſquerade, which he recollected was to be given that night. The painter did not want curioſity and inclination to accompany him, but expreſſed his apprehenſion of loſing him in the ball; an accident which could not fail to be very diſagreeable, as he was an utter ſtranger to the language and the town. To obviate this objection, the landlady, who was of their council, adviſed him to appear in a woman's dreſs, which would lay his companion under the neceſſity of attending him with more care, as he could not with decency detach himſelf from the lady whom he ſhould introduce; beſides, ſuch a ſuppoſed connection would hinder the ladies of pleaſure from accoſting, and employing their ſeducing arts upon a perſon already engaged.

Our young gentleman, foreſeeing abundance of diverſion in the execution of this project, ſeconded the propoſal with ſuch importunity and addreſs, that the painter allowed himſelf to be habited in a ſuit belonging to the landlady, who alſo procured for him a maſk of domino, while Pickle provided himſelf with a Spaniſh dreſs. In this diſguiſe, which they put on about eleven o'clock, did they, attended by Pipes, ſet out in a fiacre for the ball-room, into which Pickle led this ſuppoſititious female, to the aſtoniſhment of the whole company, who had never ſeen ſuch an uncouth figure in the appearance of a woman.

After they had taken a full view of all the remarkable maſques, and the painter had been treated with a glaſs of liquor, his miſchievous companion gave him the ſlip, and vaniſhing in an inſtant, returned with another maſk and a domino over his habit, that he might enjoy Pallet's perplexity, and be at hand to protect him from inſult.

The poor painter having loſt his guide, was almoſt diſtracted with anxiety, and ſtalked about the room, in queſt of him, with ſuch huge ſtrides and oddity of geſture, that he was followed by a whole multitude, who gazed at him as a preternatural phenomenon. This attendance increaſed his uneaſineſs to ſuch a degree, that he could not help uttering a ſoliloquy aloud, in which he curſed his fate for having depended upon the promiſe of ſuch a wag; and ſwore, that if once he was clear of this ſcrape, he would not bring himſelf into ſuch a premunire again for the whole kingdom of France.

Divers petit-maitres underſtanding the maſque was a foreigner, who, in all probability could not ſpeak French, made up to him in their turns, in order to diſplay their wit and addreſs, and teized him with ſeveral arch queſtions, to which he made no other anſwer than, 'No *parly Francy*. Damn your chat-'tering! Go about your buſineſs, can't 'ye?' Among the maſques was a nobleman, who began to be very free with the ſuppoſed lady, and attempted to plunge his hand into her boſom: but the painter was too modeſt to ſuffer ſuch indecent treatment; and when the gallant repeated his efforts in a manner ſtill more indelicate, lent him ſuch a box on the ear, as made the lights dance before him, and created ſuch a ſuſpicion of Pallet's ſex, that the Frenchman ſwore he was either a male or hermaphrodite, and inſiſted upon a ſcrutiny, for the ſake of his own honour, with ſuch obſtinacy of reſentment, that the fictitious nymph was in imminent danger, not only of being expoſed, but alſo of undergoing ſevere chaſtiſement, for having made ſo free with the prince's ear; when Peregrine, who ſaw and over-heard every thing that paſſed, thought it was high time to interpoſe; and accordingly, aſſerted his pretenſions to the inſulted lady, who was overjoyed at this proof of his protection.

The affronted gallant perſevered in demanding to know who ſhe was, and our hero as ſtrenuouſly refuſed to give him that ſatisfaction: ſo that high words enſued; and the prince threatening to puniſh his inſolence, the young gentleman, who was not ſuppoſed to know his quality, pointed to the place where his own ſword uſed to hang, and ſnapping his finger's in his face, laid hold on the painter's arm, and led him

to

to another part of the room, leaving his antagoniſt to the meditations of his own revenge.

Pallet having chid his conductor for his barbarous deſertion, made him acquainted with the difficulty in which he had been involved, and flatly telling him, he would not put it in his power to give him the ſlip again, held faſt by his arm during the remaining part of the entertainment, to the no ſmall diverſion of the company, whoſe attention was altogether engroſſed in the contemplation of ſuch an aukward, ungainly, ſtalking apparition. At laſt, Pickle being tired of exhibiting this raree-ſhew, complied with the repeated deſires of his companion, and handed her into the coach; which he himſelf had no ſooner entered, than they were ſurrounded by a file of muſqueteers, commanded by an exempt, who ordering the coach-door to be be opened, took his place with great deliberation, while one of his detachment mounted the box, in order to direct the driver.

Peregrine at once conceived the meaning of this arreſt, and it was well for him that he had no weapon wherewith to ſtand upon his defence; for ſuch was the impetuoſity and raſhneſs of his temper, that had he been armed, he would have run all riſks rather than ſurrender himſelf to any odds whatever; but Pallet imagining that the officer was ſome gentleman who had miſtaken their carriage for his own, deſired his friend to undeceive the ſtranger; and when he was informed of the real ſtate of their condition, his knees began to ſhake, his teeth to chatter, and he uttered a moſt doleful lamentation, importing his fear of being carried to ſome hideous dungeon of the Baſtile, where he ſhould ſpend the reſt of his days in miſery and horror, and never ſee the light of God's ſun, nor the face of a friend; but periſh in a foreign land, far removed from his family and connections. Pickle damned him for his puſillanimity, and the exempt hearing a lady bemoaning herſelf ſo pitcouſly, expreſſed his mortification at being the inſtrument of giving her ſuch pain, and endeavoured to conſole them, by repreſenting the lenity of the French government, and the ſingular generoſity of the prince, by whoſe order they were apprehended.

Peregrine, whoſe diſcretion ſeemed to forſake him on all ſuch occaſions, exclaimed with great bitterneſs againſt the arbitrary adminiſtration of France, and inveighed with many expreſſions of contempt againſt the character of the offended prince, whoſe reſentment, far from being noble, he ſaid, was pitiful, ungenerous, and unjuſt. To this remonſtrance the officer made no reply, but ſhrugged up his ſhoulders in ſilent aſtoniſhment at the *hardieſſe* of the priſoner, and the fiacre was juſt on the point of ſetting out, when they heard the noiſe of a ſcuffle at the back of the coach, and the voice of Tom Pipes, pronouncing, 'I'll be damn'd if I do!' This truſty attendant had been deſired by one of the guard to deſcend from his ſtation in the rear, but as he reſolved to ſhare his maſter's fate, he took no notice of their intreaties, until they were ſeconded by force; and that he endeavoured to repel with his heel, which he applied with ſuch energy to the jaws of the ſoldier who firſt came in contact with him, that they emitted a craſhing ſound like a dried walnut between the grinders of a templar in the pit. Exaſperated at this outrage, the other ſaluted Tom's poſteriors with his bayonet, which incommoded him ſo much, that he could no longer keep his poſt, but, leaping upon the ground, gave his antagoniſt a chuck under the chin, and laid him upon his back, and then ſkipping over him with infinite agility, abſconded among the crowd of coaches, till he ſaw the guard mount before and behind upon his maſter's fiacre, which no ſooner ſet forward than he followed at a ſmall diſtance, to reconnoitre the place where Peregrine ſhould be confined.

After having proceeded ſlowly through many windings and turnings to a part of Paris, in which Pipes was an utter ſtranger, the coach ſtopped at a great gate, with a wicket in the middle, which being opened at the approach of the carriage, the priſoners were admitted, and the guard returning with the fiacre, Tom determined to watch in that place all night, that in the morning he might make ſuch obſervations as might be conducive to the enlargement of his maſter.

CHAP. XII.

BY THE FIDELITY OF PIPES, JOLTER IS INFORMED OF HIS PUPIL'S

PIL'S FATE. CONFERS WITH THE PHYSICIAN. APPLIES TO THE AMBASSADOR, WHO WITH GREAT DIFFICULTY OBTAINS THE DISCHARGE OF THE PRISONERS, ON CERTAIN CONDITIONS.

THIS plan he executed notwithstanding the pain of his wound, and the queſtions of the city guard both horſe and foot, to which he could make no other anſwer than, '*Anglois, Anglois!*' and as ſoon as it was light, taking an accurate ſurvey of the caſtle (for ſuch it ſeemed to be) into which Peregrine and Pallet had been conveyed, together with it's ſituation in reſpect to the river, he went home to the lodgings, and waking Mr. Jolter, gave him an account of the adventure. The governor wrung his hands in the utmoſt grief and conſternation, when he heard this unfortunate piece of news; he did not doubt that his pupil was impriſoned in the Baſtile for life; and in the anguiſh of his apprehenſion, curſed the day on which he had undertaken to ſuperintend the conduct of ſuch an imprudent young man, who had by reiterated inſults provoked the vengeance of ſuch a mild forbearing adminiſtration. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power to extricate him from his preſent misfortune, he diſpatched Thomas to the doctor, with an account of his companion's fate, that they might join their intereſt in behalf of the captives; and the phyſician being informed of what had happened, immediately dreſſed himſelf, and repaired to Jolter, whom he accoſted in theſe words. 'Now, Sir, I 'hope you are convinced of your error, 'in aſſerting that oppreſſion can never 'be the effect of arbitrary power. Such 'a calamity as this could never have 'happened under the Athenian demo'cracy: nay, even when the tyrant 'Piſiſtratus got poſſeſſion of that com'monwealth, he durſt not venture to 'rule with ſuch abſolute and unjuſt 'dominion. You ſhall ſee now that 'Mr. Pickle and my friend Pallet will 'fall a ſacrifice to the tyranny of law'leſs power; and in my opinion we 'ſhall be acceſſary to the ruin of this 'poor enſlaved people, if we beſtir our'ſelves in demanding or imploring 'the releaſe of our unhappy country'men; as we may thereby prevent the 'commiſſion of a flagrant crime, which 'would fill up the vengeance of Hea'ven againſt the perpetrators, and per'haps be the means of reſtoring a 'whole nation to the unſpeakable fru'ition of freedom. For my own part, 'I ſhould rejoice to ſee the blood of my 'father ſpilt in ſuch a glorious cauſe, 'provided ſuch a victim would furniſh 'me with the opportunity of diſſolving 'the chains of ſlavery, and vindicating 'that liberty which is the birth-right 'of man. Then would my name 'be immortalized among the patriot 'heroes of antiquity, and my memory, 'like that of Harmodius and Ariſtogi'ton, be honoured by ſtatues erected 'at the publick expence.' This rhapſody, which was delivered with great emphaſis and agitation, gave ſo much offence to Jolter, that without ſpeaking one word, he retired in great wrath to his own chamber, and the republican returned to his lodging, in full hope of his prognoſtick being verified in the death and deſtruction of Peregrine and the painter, which muſt give riſe to ſome renowned revolution, wherein he himſelf would act a principal part. But the governor, whoſe imagination was not quite ſo warm and prolifick, went directly to the ambaſſador, whom he informed of his pupil's ſituation, and beſought to interpoſe with the French miniſtry, that he and the other Britiſh ſubject might obtain their liberty.

His excellency aſked if Jolter could gueſs at the cauſe of his impriſonment, that he might be the better prepared to vindicate or excuſe his conduct; but neither he nor Pipes could give the ſmalleſt hint of intelligence on that ſubject; though he furniſhed himſelf from Tom's own mouth with a circumſtantial account of the manner in which his maſter had been arreſted, as well as of his own behaviour, and the diſaſter he had received on that occaſion. His lordſhip never doubted that Pickle had brought this calamity upon himſelf by ſome unlucky prank he had played at the maſquerade; eſpecially when he underſtood that the young gentleman had drank freely in the afternoon, and been ſo whimſical as to go thither with a man in woman's apparel: and he that ſame day waited on the French miniſter, in full confidence of obtaining his diſcharge; but met with more difficulty than he expected, the court of France being extremely punctilious in every

thing that concerns a prince of the blood. The ambaſſador was therefore obliged to talk in very high terms, and though the preſent circumſtances of the French politicks would not allow them to fall out with the Britiſh adminiſtration for trifles, all the favour he could procure, was a promiſe that Pickle ſhould be ſet at liberty, provided he would aſk pardon of the prince to whom he had given offence. His excellency thought this was but a reaſonable condeſcenſion, ſuppoſing Peregrine to have been in the wrong; and Jolter was admitted to him in order to communicate and reinforce his lordſhip's advice, which was, that he ſhould comply with the terms propoſed. The governor, who did not enter this gloomy fortreſs without fear and trembling, found his pupil in a diſmal apartment, void of all furniture but a ſtool and truckle-bed. The moment he was admitted, he perceived the youth whiſtling with great unconcern, and working with his pencil at the bare wall, on which he had delineated a ludicrous figure labelled with the name of the nobleman whom he had affronted, and an Engliſh maſtiff with his leg lifted up, in the attitude of making water in his ſhoe. He had been even ſo pretumptuous as to explain the device with ſatirical inſcriptions in the French language, which when Jolter peruſed, his hair ſtood on end with affright. The very turnkey was confounded and overawed by the boldneſs of his behaviour, which he had never ſeen matched by any inhabitant of that place; and actually joined his friend in perſuading him to ſubmit to the eaſy demand of the miniſter. But our hero, far from embracing the counſel of this advocate, handed him to the door with great ceremony, and diſmiſſed him with a kick on the breech; and to all the ſupplications, and even tears of Jolter, made no other reply, than that he would ſtoop to no condeſcenſion, becauſe he had committed no crime; but would leave his caſe to the cognizance and exertion of the Britiſh court, whoſe duty it was to ſee juſtice done to it's own ſubjects: he deſired, however, that Pallet, who was confined in another place, might avail himſelf of his own diſpoſition, which was ſufficiently pliable. But when the governor deſired to ſee his fellow-priſoner, the turnkey gave him to underſtand that he had received no orders relating to the lady, and therefore could not admit him into her apartment; though he was complaiſant enough to tell him that ſhe ſeemed very much mortified at her confinement, and at certain times behaved as if her brain was not a little diſordered. Jolter thus baffled in all his endeavours, quitted the Baſtile with a heavy heart, and reported his fruitleſs negociation to the ambaſſador, who could not help breaking forth into ſome acrimonious expreſſions againſt the obſtinacy and inſolence of the young man, who, he ſaid, deſerved to ſuffer for his folly. Nevertheleſs, he did not deſiſt from his repreſentations to the French miniſtry, which he found ſo unyielding, that he was obliged to threaten in plain terms, to make it a national concern, and not only write to his court for inſtructions, but even adviſe the council to make repriſals, and ſend ſome French gentlemen in London to the Tower.

This intimation had an effect upon the miniſtry at Verſailles, who rather than run the riſk of incenſing a people whom it was neither their intereſt nor inclination to diſoblige, conſented to diſcharge the offenders, on condition that they ſhould leave Paris in three days after their enlargement. This propoſal was readily agreed to by Peregrine, who was now a little more tractable, and heartily tired of being cooped up in ſuch an uncomfortable abode, for the ſpace of three long days, without any ſort of communication or entertainment, but that which his own imagination ſuggeſted.

CHAP. XIII.

PEREGRINE MAKES HIMSELF MERRY AT THE EXPENCE OF THE PAINTER, WHO CURSES HIS LANDLADY, AND BREAKS WITH THE DOCTOR.

As he could eaſily conceive the ſituation of his companion in adverſity, he was unwilling to leave the place, until he had reaped ſome diverſion from his diſtreſs; and with that view repaired to the dungeon of the afflicted painter, to which he had by this time free acceſs. When he entered, the firſt object that preſented itſelf to his eye, was ſo uncommonly ridiculous, that he could

could scarce preserve that gravity of countenance which he had affected in order to execute the joke he had planned. The forlorn Pallet sat upright in his bed, in a dishabille that was altogether extraordinary. He had laid aside his monstrous hoop, together with his stays, gown, and petticoat; wrapped his lappets about his head by way of night-cap, and wore his domino as a loose morning-dress; his grizzled locks hung down about his lack-lustre eyes and tawney neck, in all the disorder of negligence; his grey beard bristled about half an inch, through the remains of the paint with which his visage had been bedaubed; and every feature of his face was lengthened to the most ridiculous expression of grief and dismay. Seeing Peregrine come in, he started up in a sort of frantick extasy, and running towards him with open arms, no sooner perceived the woeful appearance into which our hero had modelled his physiognomy, than he stopped short all of a sudden, and the joy which had begun to take possession of his heart, was in a moment dispelled by the most rueful presages; so that he stood in a most ludicrous posture of dejection, like a malefactor at the Old Bailey, when sentence is about to be pronounced. Pickle taking him by the hand, heaved a profound sigh; and after having protested that he was extremely mortified at being pitched upon as the messenger of bad news, told him, with an air of sympathy and infinite concern, that the French court having discovered his sex, had resolved, in consideration of the outrageous indignity he offered in publick to a prince of the blood, to detain him in the Bastile a prisoner for life: and that this sentence was a mitigation obtained by the importunities of the British ambassador; the punishment ordained by law being no other than breaking alive upon the wheel. These tidings aggravated the horrors of the painter to such a degree, that he roared aloud, and skipped about the room in all the extravagance of distraction; taking God and man to witness, that he would rather suffer immediate death than endure one year's imprisonment in such a hideous place; and cursing the hour of his birth, and the moment on which he departed from his own country. 'For my own part,' said his tormentor, in a hypocritical tone, 'I was obliged to swallow the 'bitter pill of making submissions to 'the prince; who, as I had not pre-'sumed to strike him, received acknow-'ledgments; in consequence of which, 'I shall be this day set at liberty, and 'there is even one expedient left for the 'recovery of your freedom. It is, I 'own, a disagreeable remedy, but one 'had better undergo a little mortifica-'tion, than be for ever wretched. Be-'sides, upon second thoughts, I begin 'to imagine, that you will not, for 'such a trifle, sacrifice yourself to the 'unceasing horrors of a solitary dun-'geon; especially as your condescension 'will, in all probability, be attended 'with advantages which you could not 'otherwise enjoy.' Pallet interrupting him with great eagerness, begged, for the love of God, that he would no longer keep him in the torture of suspense, but mention that same remedy, which he was resolved to swallow, let it be never so unpalatable.

Peregrine, having thus played upon his passions of fear and hope, answered, that as the offence was committed in the habit of a woman, which was a disguise unworthy of the other sex, the French court was of opinion that the delinquent should be reduced to the neuter gender; so that there was an alternative at his own option, by which he had it in his power to regain immediate freedom. 'What!' cried the painter, in despair, 'become a singer? Gad-'zooks! and the devil, and all that! 'I'll rather lie still where I am, and let 'myself be devoured by vermin.' Then thrusting out his throat, 'Here is my 'windpipe,' said he; 'be so good, my 'dear friend, as to give it a slice or 'two; if you don't, I shall one of 'these days be found dangling in my 'garters. What an unfortunate rascal 'I am! What a blockhead, and a 'beast, and a fool was I, to trust my-'self among such a barbarous ruffian 'race? Lord forgive you, Mr. Pickle, 'for having been the immediate cause 'of my disaster; if you had stood by 'me from the beginning, according to 'your promise, I should not have been 'teized by that coxcomb who has 'brought me to this pass. And why 'did I put on this damn'd unlucky 'dress? Lard curse that chattering Je-'zabel of a landlady, who advised such 'a preposterous disguise! a disguise 'which hath not only brought me to

'this pass, but also rendered me abominable to myself, and frightful to 'others; for when I this morning signified to the turnkey, that I wanted 'to be shaved, he looked at my beard with astonishment, and crossing himself, muttered his pater-noster, believing me (I suppose) to be a witch, 'or something worse. And Heaven confound that loathsome banquet of the 'ancients, which provoked me to drink 'too freely, that I might wash away 'the taste of that accursed sillikicaby!'

Our young gentleman, having heard his lamentation to an end, excused himself for his conduct, by representing that he could not possibly foresee the disagreeable consequences that attended it; and in the mean time, strenuously counselled him to submit to the terms of this enlargement. He observed, that he was now arrived at that time of life, when the lusts of the flesh should be entirely mortified within him, and his greatest concern ought to be the health of his soul, to which nothing could more effectually contribute than the amputation which was proposed: that his body, as well as his mind, would profit by the change, because he would have no dangerous appetite to gratify, and no carnal thoughts to divert him from the duties of his profession; and his voice, which was naturally sweet, would improve to such a degree, that he would captivate the ears of all the people of fashion and taste, and in a little time be celebrated under the appellation of the English Senesino.

These arguments did not fail to make impression upon the painter, who, nevertheless, started two objections to his compliance; namely, the disgrace of the punishment, and the dread of his wife. Pickle undertook to obviate these difficulties, by assuring him, that the sentence would be executed so privately, as never to transpire; and that his wife could not be so unconscionable, after so many years of cohabitation, as to take exceptions to an expedient, by which she would not only enjoy the conversation of her husband, but even the fruits of those talents which the knife would so remarkably refine.

Pallet shook his head at his last remonstrance, as if he thought it would not be altogether convincing to his spouse; but yielded to the proposal, provided her consent could be obtained. Just as he signified this condescension, the gaoler entered, and addressing himself to the supposed lady, expressed his satisfaction in having the honour to tell her, that she was no longer a prisoner. As the painter did not understand one word of what he said, Peregrine undertook the office of interpreter, and made his friend believe, the gaoler's speech was no other than an intimation, that the ministry had sent a surgeon to execute what was proposed, and that the instruments and dressings were prepared in the next room. Alarmed and terrified at this sudden appointment, he flew to the other end of the room, and snatching up an earthen chamber-pot, which was the only offensive weapon in the place, put himself in a posture of defiance, and with many oaths threatened to try the temper of the barber's skull, if he should presume to set his nose within the apartment.

The gaoler, who little expected such a reception, concluded that the poor gentlewoman had actually lost her wits, and retreated with precipitation, leaving the door open as he went out. Upon which Pickle, gathering up the particulars of his dress with great dispatch, crammed them into Pallet's arms, and taking notice that now the coast was clear, exhorted him to follow his footsteps to the gate, where a hackney-coach stood for his reception. There being no time for hesitation, the painter took his advice, and without quitting the utensil, which in his hurry he forgot to lay down, sallied out in the rear of our hero, with all that wildness of terror and impatience which may be reasonably supposed to take possession of a man who flies from perpetual imprisonment. Such was the tumult of his agitation, that his faculty of thinking was for the present utterly overwhelmed, and he saw no object but his conductor, whom he followed by a sort of instinctive impulse, without regarding the keepers and centinels, who, as he passed with his cloaths under one arm, and his chamber-pot brandished above his head, were confounded, and even dismayed, at the strange apparition.

During the whole course of this irruption, he ceased not to cry with great vociferation, 'Drive, coachman! drive, 'in the name of God!' And the carriage had proceeded the length of a whole street, before he manifested the least sign of reflection, but stared like

the

Stothard del.

Heath. sculp.

Plate IV.

Publish'd as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug.t 26. 1781.

the Gorgon's head, with his mouth wide open, and each particular hair crawling and twining like an animated ſerpent. At length, however, he began to recover the the uſe of his ſenſes, and aſked, if Peregrine thought him now out of all danger of being retaken. This unrelenting wag, not yet ſatisfied with the affliction he had impoſed upon the ſufferer, anſwered with an air of doubt and concern, that he hoped they would not be overtaken, and prayed to God they might not be retarded by a ſtop of carriages. Pallet fervently joined in this ſupplication; and they advanced a few yards farther, when the noiſe of a coach at full ſpeed behind them invaded their ears; and Pickle having looked out of the window, withdrew his head in ſeeming confuſion, and exclaimed, 'Lord have mercy upon us! I wiſh that may not be a guard ſent after us. Methinks I ſaw the muzzle of a fuſil ſticking out of the coach.' The painter hearing theſe tidings, that inſtant thruſt himſelf half out at the window, with his helmet ſtill in his hand, bellowing to the coachman as loud as he could roar, 'Drive! damn you, drive! to the gates of Jericho, and ends of the earth! Drive! you raggamuffin, you raſcallion, you hell-hound! drive us to the pit of hell, rather than we ſhould be taken!'

Such a phantom could not paſs, without attracting the curioſity of the people, who ran to their doors and windows, in order to behold this object of admiration. With the ſame view that coach, which was ſuppoſed to be in purſuit of him, ſtopped juſt as the windows of each happened to be oppoſite; and Pallet looking behind, and ſeeing three men ſtanding upon the foot-board armed with canes, which his fear converted into fuſils, never doubted that his friend's ſuſpicion was juſt; but, ſhaking his jordan at the imaginary guard, ſwore he would ſooner die than part with his precious ware. The owner of the coach, who was a nobleman of the firſt quality, miſtook him for ſome unhappy woman deprived of her ſenſes; and ordering his coachman to proceed, convinced the fugitive, to his infinite joy, that this was no more than a falſe alarm. He was not, for all that, freed from anxiety and trepidation; but our young gentleman, fearing his brain would not bear a repetition of the ſame joke, permitted him to gain his own lodgings without farther moleſtation.

His landlady meeting him on the ſtair, was ſo affected at his appearance, that ſhe ſcreamed aloud, and betook herſelf to flight; while he, curſing her with great bitterneſs, ruſhed into the apartment with the doctor; who, inſtead of receiving him with cordial embraces, and congratulating him upon his deliverance, gave evident tokens of umbrage and diſcontent; and even plainly told him, he hoped to have heard that he and Mr. Pickle had acted the glorious part of Cato; an event which would have laid the foundation of ſuch noble ſtruggles, as could not fail to end in happineſs and freedom; and that he had already made ſome progreſs in an ode that would have immortalized their names, and inſpired the flame of liberty in every honeſt breaſt. 'There,' ſaid he, 'I would have proved, that great talents, and high ſentiments of liberty, do reciprocally produce and aſſiſt each other; and illuſtrated my aſſertions with ſuch notes and quotations from the Greek writers, as would have opened the eyes of the moſt blind and unthinking, and touched the moſt callous and obdurate heart. *O fool! to think the man, whoſe ample mind muſt graſp whatever yonder ſtars ſurvey.*—Pray, Mr. Pallet, what is your opinion of that image of the mind's graſping the whole univerſe? For my own part, I cannot help thinking it the moſt happy conception that ever entered my imagination.'

The painter, who was not ſuch a flaming enthuſiaſt in the cauſe of liberty, could not brook the doctor's reflections, which he thought favoured a little too much of indifference and deficiency in point of private friendſhip; and therefore ſeized the preſent opportunity of mortifying his pride, by obſerving, that the image was, without all doubt, very grand and magnificent; but that he had been obliged for the idea to Mr. Bayes, in the Rehearſal, who values himſelf upon the ſame figure, conveyed in theſe words, 'But all theſe clouds, when by the eye of reaſon graſp'd,' &c. Upon any other occaſion, the painter would have triumped greatly in this detection; but ſuch was the flutter and confuſion of his ſpirits, under the apprehenſion of being retaken, that without farther communication, he retreated to his own room,

room, in order to resume his own dress, which he hoped would alter his appearance in such a manner, as to baffle all search and examination; while the physician remained ashamed and abashed, to find himself convicted of bombast by a person of such contemptible talents. He was offended at this proof of his memory, and so much enraged at his presumption in exhibiting it, that he could never forgive his want of reverence, and took every opportunity of exposing his ignorance and folly in the sequel. Indeed, the ties of private affection were too weak to engage the heart of this republican, whose zeal for the community had entirely swallowed up his concern for individuals. He looked upon particular friendship as a passion unworthy of his ample soul, and was a professed admirer of L. Manlius, Junius Brutus, and those later patriots of the same name, who shut their ears against the cries of nature, and resisted all the dictates of gratitude and humanity.

CHAP. XIV.

PALLET CONCEIVES AN HEARTY CONTEMPT FOR HIS FELLOW-TRAVELLER, AND ATTACHES HIMSELF TO PICKLE, WHO NEVERTHELESS PERSECUTES HIM WITH HIS MISCHIEVOUS TALENT UPON THE ROAD TO FLANDERS.

IN the mean time, his companion having employed divers pails full of water, in cleansing himself from the squalor of a jail, submitted his face to the barber, tinged his eye-brows with a sable hue, and being dressed in his own cloaths, ventured to visit Peregrine, who was still under the hands of his valet de chambre, and who gave him to understand, that his escape had been connived at, and that the condition of their deliverance was their departure from Paris in three days.

The painter was transported with joy, when he learned that he ran no risque of being retaken; and far from repining at the terms of his enlargement, would have willingly set out on his return to England that same afternoon; for the Bastile had made such an impression upon him, that he started at the sound of every coach, and turned pale at sight of a French soldier. In the fullness of his heart, he complained of the doctor's indifference, and related what had passed at their meeting with evident marks of resentment and disrespect; which were not at all diminished, when Jolter informed him of the physician's behaviour when he sent for him, to confer about the means of abridging their confinement. Pickle himself was incensed at his want of bowels, and perceiving how much he had sunk in the opinion of his fellow-traveller, resolved to encourage these sentiments of disgust, and occasionally foment the division to a downright quarrel, which he foresaw would produce some diversion, and perhaps expose the poet's character in such a light, as would effectually punish him for his arrogance and barbarity. With this view, he levelled several satirical jokes at the doctor's pedantry and want of taste, which had appeared so conspicuous in the quotations he had got by heart, from ancient authors, in his affected disdain of the best pictures in the world; which, had he been endowed with the least share of discernment, he could not have beheld with such insensibility; and lastly, in his ridiculous banquet, which none but an egregious coxcomb, devoid of all elgance and sense, would have prepared, or presented to rational beings. In a word, our young gentleman played the artillery of his wit against him with such success, that the painter seemed to wake from a dream, and went home with the most hearty contempt for the person he had formerly adored.

Instead of using the privilege of a friend, to enter his apartment without ceremony, he sent in his servant with a message, importing, that he intended to set out from Paris next day, in company with Mr. Pickle, and desiring to know whether or not he was, or would be prepared for the journey. The doctor, struck with the manner, as well as the matter, of this intimation, went immediately to Pallet's room, and demanded to know the cause of such a sudden determination, without his privity or concurrence; and when he understood the necessity of their affairs, rather than travel by himself, he ordered his baggage to be packed up, and signified his readiness to conform to the emergency of the case; though he was not at all pleased with the cavalier behaviour of

Pallet,

Pallet, to whom he threw out some hints of his own importance, and the immensity of his condescension, in favouring him with such marks of regard. But by this time these insinuations had lost their effect upon the painter, who told him, with an arch sneer, that he did not at all question his learning and abilities, and particularly his skill in cookery, which he should never forget while his palate retained it's function; but nevertheless advised him, for the sake of the degenerate eaters of these days, to spare a little of his sal-armoniack in the next fillikickaby he should prepare; and bate somewhat of the devil's dung which he had so plentifully crammed into the roasted fowls, unless he had a mind to convert his guests into patients, with a view of licking himself whole for the expence of the entertainment.

The physician, nettled at these sarcasms, eyed him with a look of indignation and disdain; and being unwilling to express himself in English, lest, in the course of the altercation, Pallet should be so much irritated as to depart without him, he vented his anger in Greek. The painter, though by the sound he supposed this quotation to be Greek, complimented his friend upon his knowledge in the Welch language, and found means to rally him quite out of temper; so that he retired to his own chamber in the utmost wrath and mortification, and left his antagonist exulting over the victory he had won.

While these things passed between these originals, Peregrine waited on the ambassador, whom he thanked for his kind interposition, acknowledging the indiscretion of his own conduct, with such appearance of conviction, and promises of reformation, that his excellency freely forgave him for all the trouble he had been put to on his account, fortified him with sensible advices, and assuring him of his continual favour and friendship, gave him, at parting, letters of introduction to several persons of quality belonging to the British court.

Thus distinguished, our young gentleman took leave of all his French acquaintance, and spent the evening with some of those who had enjoyed the greatest share of his intimacy and confidence; while Jolter superintended his domestick concerns, and with infinite joy bespoke a post-chaise and horse, in order to convey him from a place where he lived in continual apprehension of suffering by the dangerous disposition of his pupil. Every thing being adjusted according to their plan, they and their fellow-travellers next day dined together, and about four in the afternoon took their departure in two chaises, escorted by the valet de chambre, Pipes, and the doctor's lacquey on horseback, well furnished with arms and ammunition, in case of being attacked by robbers on the road.

It was about eleven o'clock at night when they arrived at Senlis, which was the place at which they proposed to lodge, and where they were obliged to knock up the people of the inn, before they could have their supper prepared. All the provision in the house was but barely sufficient to furnish one indifferent meal; however the painter consoled himself for the quantity with the quality of the dishes, one of which was a fricassee of rabbit, a preparation that he valued above all the dainties that ever smoaked upon the table of the sumptuous Heliogabalus.

He had no sooner expressed himself to this effect, than our hero, who was almost incessantly laying traps for diversion at his neighbours expence, laid hold on the declaration; and recollecting the story of Scipio and the muleteer in Gil Blas, resolved to perpetrate a joke upon the stomach of Pallet, which seemed particularly well disposed to an hearty supper. He accordingly digested his plan; and the company being seated at table, affected to gaze with peculiar eagerness at the painter, who had helped himself to a large portion of the fricassee, and began to swallow it with infinite relish. Pallet notwithstanding the keenness of his appetite, could not help taking notice of Pickle's demeanour; and making a short pause in the exercise of his grinders, 'You are surprized,' said he, 'to 'see me make so much dispatch; but I 'was extremely hungry, and this is one 'of the best fricassees I ever tasted: the 'French are very expert in these dishes, 'that I must allow; and, upon my con'science, I would never desire to eat a 'more delicate rabbit than this that lies 'upon my plate.'

Peregrine made no other reply to this encomium, than the repetition of the word *rabbit!* with a note of admiration, and such a significant shake of the head, as effectually alarmed the other, who instantly suspended the action of his jaws,

jaws, and with the morsel half chewed in his mouth, stared round him with a certain stolidity of apprehension, which is easier conceived than described, until his eyes encountered the countenance of Thomas Pipes; who being instructed, and posted opposite to him for the occasion, exhibited an arch grin, that compleated the painter's disorder. Afraid of swallowing his mouthful, and ashamed to dispose of it any other way, he sat some time in a most distressed state of suspense; and being questioned by Mr. Jolter touching his calamity, made a violent effort of the muscles of his gullet, which with difficulty performed their office; and then, with great confusion and concern, asked if Mr. Pickle suspected the rabbit's identity. The young gentleman assuming a mysterious air, pretended ignorance of the matter; observing that he was apt to suspect all dishes of that kind, since he had been informed of the tricks which were commonly played at inns in France, Italy, and Spain; and recounted that passage in Gil Blas, which we have hinted at above; saying, he did not pretend to be a connoisseur in animals, but the legs of the creature which composed that fricassee did not, in his opinion, resemble those of the rabbits he had usually seen. This observation had an evident effect upon the features of the painter, who, with certain signs of loathing and astonishment, exclaimed, 'Lord Jesus!' and appealed to Pipes for a discovery of the truth, by asking if he knew any thing of the affair. Tom very gravely replied, that he did suppose the food was wholesome enough, for he had seen the skin and feet of a special ram-cat, now flea'd, hanging upon the door of a small pantry adjoining to the kitchen.

Before this sentence was uttered, Pallet's belly seemed to move in contact with his back-bone, his colour changed, no part but the whites of his eyes were to be seen, he dropped his lower jaw, and fixing his hands in his sides, reached with such convulsive agonies, as amazed and disconcerted the whole company; and what augmented his disorder was the tenacious retention of his stomach, which absolutely refused to part with it's contents, notwithstanding all the energy of his abhorrence, which threw him into a cold sweat, and almost into a swoon.

Pickle, alarmed at his condition, assured him it was a genuine rabbit, and that he had tutored Pipes to say otherwise for the joke's sake. But this confession he considered as a friendly artifice of Pickle's compassion, and therefore it had little effect upon his constitution. By the assistance, however, of a large bumper of brandy, his spirits were recruited, and his recollection so far recovered, that he was able to declare, with divers contortions of face, that the dish had a particular rankness of taste, which he had imputed partly to the nature of the French coney, and partly to the composition of their sauces; then he inveighed against the infamous practices of French publicans, attributing such imposition to their oppressive government, which kept them so necessitous, that they were tempted to exercise all manner of knavery upon their unwary guests.

Jolter, who could not find in his heart to let slip any opportunity of speaking in favour of the French, told him, that he was a very great stranger to their police, else he would know, that if upon information to the magistrate it should appear that any traveller, native or foreigner, has been imposed upon or ill-treated by a publican, the offender would be immediately obliged to shut up his house, and if his behaviour had been notorious, he himself would be sent to the gallies, without the least hesitation: 'And as for the dish which has 'been made the occasion of your present disorder,' said he, 'I will take 'upon me to affirm it was prepared of a 'genuine rabbit, which was skinned in 'my presence; and in confirmation of 'what I assert, though such fricassees 'are not the favourites of my taste, I 'will eat a part of this without scruple.' So saying, he swallowed several mouthfuls of the questioned coney, and Pallet seemed to eye it again with inclination; nay, he even resumed his knife and fork, and being just on the point of applying them, was seized with another qualm of apprehension, that broke out in an exclamation of, 'After all, Mr. 'Jolter, if it should be a real ram-cat! '—Lord have mercy upon me! here is 'one of the claws.' With these words, he presented the tip of a toe, of which Pipes had snipped off five or six from a duck that was roasted, and purposely scattered them in the fricassee; and the governor could not behold this testimonial without symptoms of uneasiness and remorse;

morſe; ſo that he and the painter ſat ſilenced and abaſhed, and made faces at each other, while the phyſician, who hated them both, exulted over their affliction, bidding them be of good chear, and proceed with their meal; for he was ready to demonſtrate, that the fleſh of a cat was as nouriſhing and delicious as veal or mutton, provided they could prove that the ſaid cat was not of the boar-kind, and had fed chiefly on vegetable diet, or even confined it's carnivorous appetite to rats and mice, which he affirmed to be dainties of exquiſite taſte and flavour. He ſaid, it was a vulgar miſtake, to think that all fleſh-devouring creatures were unfit to be eaten; witneſs the conſumption of ſwine and ducks, animals that delight in carnage as well as fiſh, and prey upon each other, and feed on bait and carrion; together with the demand for bear, of which the beſt hams in the world are made. He then obſerved that the Negroes on the coaſt of Guinea, who are healthy and vigorous people, prefer cats and dogs to all other fare; and mentioned from hiſtory ſeveral ſieges, during which the inhabitants, who were blocked up, lived upon theſe animals, and had recourſe even to human fleſh, which, to his certain knowledge, was in all reſpects preferable to pork; for, in the courſe of his ſtudies, he had, for the experiment's ſake, eaten a ſteak cut from the buttock of a perſon who had been hanged.

This diſſertation, far from compoſing, increaſed the diſquiet in the ſtomachs of the governor and painter, who hearing the laſt illuſtration, turned their eyes upon the orator, at the ſame inſtant, with looks of horror and diſguſt; and the one muttering the term *cannibal*, and the other pronouncing the word *abomination*, they roſe from table in a great hurry, and running towards another apartment, juſtled with ſuch violence in the paſſage, that both were overturned by the ſhock, which alſo contributed to the effect of their nauſea, that mutually defiled them as they lay.

CHAP. XV.

NOR IS THE PHYSICIAN SACRED FROM HIS RIDICULE. THEY REACH ARRAS, WHERE OUR ADVENTURER ENGAGES IN PLAY WITH TWO FRENCH OFFICERS, WHO NEXT MORNING GIVE THE LANDLORD AN INTERESTING PROOF OF THEIR IMPORTANCE.

THE doctor remained ſullen and dejected during the whole journey: not but that he attempted to recover his importance, by haranguing upon the Roman highways, when Mr. Jolter deſired the company to take notice of the fine pavement upon which they travelled from Paris into Flanders; but Pallet, who thought he had now gained the aſcendancy over the phyſician, exerted himſelf in maintaining the ſuperiority he had acquired, by venting various ſarcaſms upon his ſelf-conceit and affectation of learning, and even uttering puns and conundrums upon the remarks which the republican retailed. When he talked of the Flaminian Way, the painter queſtioned if it was a better pavement than the *Flemi-nian* way on which they travelled: and the doctor having obſerved, that this road was made for the convenience of drawing the French artillery into Flanders, which was often the ſeat of war; his competitor in wit replied with infinite vivacity, 'There are more great 'guns than the French king knows of 'drawn along this cauſeway, doctor.'

Encouraged by the ſucceſs of theſe efforts, which tickled the imagination of Jolter, and drew ſmiles as (he imagined) of approbation from our hero, he ſported in many other equivoques of the ſame nature; and at dinner told the phyſician, that he was like the root of the tongue, as being curſedly down in the mouth.

By this time, ſuch was the animoſity ſubſiſting between thoſe quondam friends, that they never converſed together, except with a view of expoſing each other to the ridicule or contempt of their fellow-travellers. The doctor was at great pains to point out the folly and ignorance of Pallet in private to Peregrine, who was often conjured in the ſame manner by the painter, to take notice of the phyſician's want of manners and taſte. Pickle pretended to acquieſce in the truth of their mutual ſeverity, which indeed was extremely juſt, and by malicious inſinuations blew up their contention, with a view of bringing it to open hoſtility. But both ſeemed ſo averſe to deeds of mortal purpoſe,

that for a long time his arts were baffled, and he could not ſpirit them up to any pitch of reſentment higher than ſcurrilous repartee.

Before they reached Arras, the city gates were ſhut, ſo that they were obliged to take up their lodging at an indifferent houſe in the ſuburbs; where they found a couple of French officers, who had alſo rode poſt for Paris ſo far on their way to Liſle. Theſe gentlemen were about the age of thirty, and their deportment diſtinguiſhed by ſuch an air of inſolence, as diſguſted our hero; who nevertheleſs accoſted them politely in the yard, and propoſed that they ſhould ſup together. They thanked him for the honour of his invitation, which, however, they declined, upon pretence of having ordered ſomething for themſelves; but promiſed to wait upon him and his company immediately after their repaſt.

This they accordingly performed; and after having drank a few glaſſes of Burgundy, one of them aſked, if the young gentleman would for paſtime take a hand at quadrille. Peregrine eaſily divined the meaning of this propoſal, which was made with no other view than that of fleecing him and his fellow-travellers; for he well knew to what ſhifts a ſubaltern in the French ſervice is reduced, in order to maintain the appearance of a gentleman, and had reaſon to believe that moſt of them were ſharpers from their youth: but, as he depended a good deal upon his own penetration and addreſs, he gratified the ſtranger's deſire; and a party was inſtantly formed of the painter, the phyſician, the propoſer, and himſelf, the other officer having profeſſed himſelf utterly ignorant of the game; yet in the courſe of the play he took his ſtation at the back of Pickle's chair, which was oppoſite to his friend, on pretence of amuſing himſelf with ſeeing his manner of conducting the cards. The youth was not ſuch a novice but that he perceived the deſign of this palpable piece of behaviour; which, notwithſtanding, he overlooked for the preſent, with a view of flattering their hopes in the beginning, that they might be the more effectually puniſhed by their diſappointment in the end.

The game was ſcarce begun, when by the reflection of a glaſs he diſcerned the officer at his back making ſigns to his companion; who, by theſe pre-concerted geſtures, was perfectly informed of the contents of Peregrine's hand, and of conſequence fortunate in the courſe of play.

Thus they were allowed to enjoy the fruits of their dexterity, until their money amounted to ſome Louis; when our young gentleman, thinking it high time to do himſelf juſtice, ſignified in very polite terms to the gentleman who ſtood behind him, that he could never play with eaſe and deliberation when he was overlooked by any by-ſtander, and begged that he would have the goodneſs to be ſeated.

As this was a remonſtrance which the ſtranger could not with any ſhew of breeding reſiſt, he aſked pardon, and retired to the chair of the phyſician, who frankly told him, that it was not th faſhion of his country for one to ſubmit his hand to the peruſal of a ſpectator; and when, in conſequence of this rebuff, he wanted to quarter himſelf upon the painter, he was refuſed by a wave of the hand, and ſhake of the head, with an exclamation of *Pardonnez moi!* which was repeated with ſuch emphaſis, as diſcompoſed his effrontery, and he found himſelf obliged to ſit down in a ſtate of mortification.

The odds being thus removed, fortune proceeded in her uſual channel; and though the Frenchman, deprived of his ally, endeavoured to practiſe divers ſtrokes of fineſſe, the reſt of the company obſerved him with ſuch vigilance and caution, as baffled all his attempts, and in a very little time he was compelled to part with his winnings: but having engaged in the match with an intention of taking all advantages, whether fair or unfair, that his ſuperior ſkill ſhould give him over the Engliſhman, the money was not refunded without a thouſand diſputes, in the courſe of which he eſſayed to intimidate his antagoniſt with high words, which were retorted by our hero with ſuch intereſt, as convinced him that he had miſtaken his man, and perſuaded him to make his retreat in quiet. Indeed, it was not without cauſe that they repined at the bad ſucceſs of their enterprize; becauſe, in all likelihood, they had nothing to depend upon for the preſent but their

own

own industry, and knew not how to defray their expences on the road, except by some acquisition of this kind.

Next morning they rose at day-break, and resolving to anticipate their fellow-lodgers, bespoke post-horses as soon as they could be admitted into the city; so that when our company appeared, their beasts were ready in the yard; and they only waited to discuss the bill, which they had ordered to be made out. The landlord of the inn presented his carte with fear and trembling to one of those ferocious cavaliers, who no sooner cast his eye upon the sum-total, than he discharged a volley of dreadful oaths, and asked if the king's officers were to be treated in that manner. The poor publican protested, with great humility, that he had the utmost respect for his majesty, and every thing that belonged to him; and that, far from consulting his own interest, all that he desired was, to be barely indemnified for the expence of their lodging.

This condescension seemed to have no other effect than that of encouraging their arrogance. They swore his extortion should be explained to the commandant of the town, who would, by making him a publick example, teach other inn-keepers how to behave towards men of honour; and threatened with such confidence of indignation, that the wretched landlord, dreading the consequence of their wrath, implored pardon in the most abject manner, begging with many supplications, that he might have the pleasure of lodging them at his own charge. This was a favour which he with great difficulty obtained; they chid him severely for his imposition, exhorted him to have more regard for his own conscience, as well as for the convenience of his guests; and cautioning him in particular touching his behaviour to the gentlemen of the army, mounted their horses, and rode off in great state, leaving him very thankful for having so successfully appeased the choler of two officers, who wanted either inclination or ability to pay their bill; for experience had taught him to be apprehensive of all such travellers, who commonly lay the landlord under contribution, by way of atonement for the extravagance of his demands, even after he has professed his willingness to entertain them on their own terms.

CHAP. XVI.

PEREGRINE MORALIZES UPON THEIR BEHAVIOUR, WHICH IS CONDEMNED BY THE DOCTOR, AND DEFENDED BY THE GOVERNOR. THEY ARRIVE IN SAFETY AT LISLE, DINE AT AN ORDINARY, VISIT THE CITADEL. THE PHYSICIAN QUARRELS WITH A NORTH BRITON, WHO IS PUT IN ARREST.

THESE honourable adventurers being gone, Peregrine, who was present during the transaction, informed himself of the particulars from the mouth of the inn-keeper himself, who took God and the saints to witness, that he should have been a loser by their custom, even if the bill had been paid; because he was on his guard against their objections, and had charged every article at an under price: but such was the authority of officers in France, that he durst not dispute the least circumstance of their will; for had the case come under the cognizance of the magistrate, he must in course have suffered by the maxims of their government, which never fail to abet the oppression of the army; and besides, run the risk of incurring their future resentment, which would be sufficient to ruin him from top to bottom.

Our hero boiled with indignation at this instance of injustice and arbitrary power; and turning to his governor, asked if this too was a proof of the happiness enjoyed by the French people. Jolter replied, that every human constitution must in some things be imperfect; and owned, that in this kingdom gentlemen were more countenanced than the vulgar, because it was to be presumed, that their own sentiments of honour and superior qualifications would entitle them to this pre eminence, which had also a retrospective view to the merit of their ancestors, in consideration of which they were at first ennobled: but he affirmed, that the inn-keeper had misrepresented the magistracy, which in France never failed to punish flagrant outrages and abuse, without respect of persons.

The painter approved of the wisdom of the French government, in bridling the insolence of the mob, by which, he

assured them, he had often suffered in his own person; having been often bespattered by hackney-coachmen, justled by draymen and porters, and reviled in the most opprobrious terms by the watermen of London, where he had once lost his bag and a considerable quantity of hair, which had been cut off by some rascal in his passage through Ludgate, during the lord-mayor's procession. On the other hand, the doctor with great warmth alledged, that those officers ought to suffer death, or banishment at least, for having plundered the people in this manner, which was so impudent and bare-faced, as plainly to prove they were certain of escaping with impunity, and that they were old offenders in the same degree of delinquency. He said, that the greatest man in Athens would have been condemned to perpetual exile, and seen his estate confiscated for publick use, had he dared in such a licentious manner to violate the rights of a fellow-citizen; and as for the little affronts to which a man may be subject, from the petulance of the multitude, he looked upon them as glorious indications of liberty, which ought not to be repressed, and would at any time rejoice to find himself overthrown in a kennel by the insolence of a son of freedom, even though the fall should cost him a limb: adding, by way of illustration, that the greatest pleasure he ever enjoyed, was in seeing a dustman wilfully overturn a gentleman's coach, in which two ladies were bruised, even to the danger of their lives. Pallet, shocked at the extravagance of this declaration; 'If that be 'the case,' said he, 'I wish you may 'see every bone in your body broke, by 'the first carman you meet in the streets 'of London.'

This argument being discussed, and the reckoning discharged without any deduction, although the landlord, in stating the articles, had an eye to the loss he had sustained by his own countrymen, they departed from Arras, and arrived in safety at Lisle, about two o'clock in the afternoon.

They had scarce taken possession of their lodgings, in a large hotel on the Grande Place, when the inn-keeper gave them to understand, that he kept an ordinary below, which was frequented by several English gentlemen who resided in town, and that dinner was then upon the table. Peregrine, who seized all opportunities of observing new characters, persuaded his company to dine in publick; and they were accordingly conducted to the place, where thy found a mixture of Scotch and Dutch officers, who had come from Holland to learn their exercises at the academy, and some gentlemen in the French service, who were upon garrison-duty in the citadel. Among these last was a person about the age of fifty, of a remarkable genteel air and polite address, dignified with a Maltese cross, and distinguished by the particular veneration of all those who knew him. When he understood that Pickle and his friends were travellers, he accosted the youth in English, which he spoke tolerably well; and as they were strangers, offered to attend them in the afternoon to all the places worth seeing in Lisle. Our hero thanked him for his excess of politeness, which (he said) was peculiar to the French nation: and struck with his engaging appearance, industriously courted his conversation, in the course of which he learned, that this chevalier was a man of good sense and great experience, that he was perfectly well acquainted with the greatest part of Europe, had lived some years in England, and was no stranger to the constitution and genius of that people.

Having dined, and drank to the healths of the English and French kings, two fiacres were called, in one of which the knight, with one of his companions, the governor, and Peregrine, seated themselves; the other being occupied by the physician, Pallet, and two Scottish officers, who proposed to accompany them in their circuit. The first place they visited was the citadel, round the ramparts of which they walked, under the conduct of the knight, who explained with great accuracy the intention of every particular fortification belonging to that seemingly impregnable fortress; and when they had satisfied their curiosity, took coach again, in order to view the arsenal, which stands in another quarter of the town: but, just as Pickle's carriage had crossed the Promenade, he heard his own name bawled aloud by the painter; and ordering the fiacre to stop, saw Pallet with one half of his body thrust out at the window of the other coach, crying with a terrified look, 'Mr. Pickle, Mr. Pickle! for the

'love

'love of God, halt, and prevent bloodshed, elſe here will be carnage and cutting of throats!' Peregrine, ſurprized at this exclamation, immediately alighted; and advancing to the other vehicle, found one of their military companions ſtanding upon the ground, at the farther ſide of the coach, with his ſword drawn, and fury in his countenance; and the phyſician, with a quivering lip and haggard aſpect, ſtruggling with the other who had interpoſed in the quarrel, and detained him in his place.

Our young gentleman, upon enquiry, found that this animoſity had ſprung from a diſpute that happened upon the ramparts, touching the ſtrength of the fortification, which the doctor, according to cuſtom, under-valued, becauſe it was a modern work; ſaying, that by the help of the military engines uſed among the ancients, and a few thouſands of pioneers, he would engage to take it in leſs than ten days after he ſhould ſit down before it. The North Briton, who was as great a pedant as the phyſician, having ſtudied fortification, and made himſelf maſter of Cæſar's Commentaries and Polybius, with the obſervations of Folard, affirmed, that all the methods of beſieging practiſed by the ancients, would be utterly ineffectual againſt ſuch a plan as that of the citadel of Liſle; and began to compare the Vineæ, Aggeres, Arietes, Scorpiones, and Catapultæ of the Romans, with the trenches, mines, batteries, and mortars, uſed in the preſent art of war. The republican, finding himſelf attacked upon what he thought his ſtrong ſide, ſummoned all his learning to his aid; and deſcribing the famous ſiege of Platæa, happened to miſquote a paſſage of Thucydides, in which he was corrected by the other, who having been educated for the church, was alſo a connoiſſeur in the Greek language. The doctor, incenſed at being detected in ſuch a blunder in preſence of Pallet, who he knew would promulgate his ſhame, told the officer, with great arrogance, that his objection was frivolous, and that he muſt not pretend to diſpute on theſe matters with one who had conſidered them with the utmoſt accuracy and care. His antagoniſt, piqued at this ſupercilious inſinuation, replied with great heat, that for aught he knew, the doctor might be a very expert apothecary, but that in the art of war, and knowledge in the Greek tongue, he was no other than an ignorant pretender. This aſſeveration produced an anſwer full of virulence, including a national reflection upon the ſoldier's country; and the contention roſe to mutual abuſe, when it was ſuppreſſed by the admonitions of the other two, who begged they would not expoſe themſelves in a ſtrange place, but behave themſelves like fellow-ſubjects and friends. They accordingly ceaſed reviling each other, and the affair was ſeemingly forgot; but after they had reſumed their places in the coach, the painter unfortunately aſked the meaning of the word *tortiſe*, which he had heard them mention among the Roman implements of war. This queſtion was anſwered by the phyſician, who deſcribed the nature of this expedient ſo little to the ſatisfaction of the officer, that he contradicted him flatly, in the midſt of his explanation; a circumſtance which provoked the republican to ſuch a degree, that in the temerity of his paſſion, he uttered the epithet *impertinent ſcoundrel!* which was no ſooner pronounced, than the Caledonian made manual application to his noſe, and leaping out of the coach, ſtood waiting for him on the plain; while he (the phyſician) made feeble efforts to join him, being eaſily retained by the other ſoldier; and Pallet, dreading the conſequence in which he himſelf might be involved, bellowed aloud for prevention.

Our hero endeavoured to quiet the commotion, by repreſenting to the Scot, that he had already taken ſatisfaction for the injury he had received; and telling the doctor that he had deſerved the chaſtiſement which was inflicted upon him: but the officer (encouraged perhaps by the confuſion of his antagoniſt) inſiſted upon his aſking pardon for what he had ſaid; and the doctor, believing himſelf under the protection of his friend Pickle, far from agreeing to ſuch conceſſion, breathed nothing but defiance and revenge: ſo that the chevalier, in order to prevent miſchief, put the ſoldier under arreſt, and ſent him to his lodgings, under the care of the other French gentleman and his own companion; they being alſo accompanied by Mr. Jolter, who having formerly ſeen all the curioſities of Liſle, willingly ſurrendered his place to the phyſician.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

PICKLE ENGAGES WITH A KNIGHT OF MALTA, IN A CONVERSATION UPON THE ENGLISH STAGE, WHICH IS FOLLOWED BY A DISSERTATION ON THE THEATRES OF THE ANCIENTS BY THE DOCTOR.

THE reſt of the company proceeded to the arſenal, which having viewed, together with ſome remarkable churches, they, in their return, went to the comedy, and ſaw the Cid of Corneille tolerably well repreſented. In conſequence of this entertainment, the diſcourſe at ſupper turned upon dramatick performances; and all the objections of Monſ. de Scudery to the piece they had ſeen acted, together with the deciſion of the French academy, were canvaſſed and diſcuſſed. The knight was a man of letters and taſte, and particularly well acquainted with the ſtate of the Engliſh ſtage; ſo that when the painter boldly pronounced ſentence againſt the French manner of acting, on the ſtrength of having frequented a Covent-Garden club of criticks, and being often admitted by virtue of an order into the pit, a compariſon immediately enſued, not between the authors, but the actors of both nations, to whom the chevalier and Peregrine were no ſtrangers. Our hero, like a good Engliſhman, made no ſcruple of giving the preference to the performers of his own country; who, he alledged, obeyed the genuine impulſes of nature, in exhibing the paſſions of the human mind; and entered ſo warmly into the ſpirit of their ſeveral parts, that they often fancied themſelves the very heroes they repreſented. Whereas, the action of the Pariſian players, even in their moſt intereſting characters, was generally ſuch an extravagance in voice and geſture, as is no where to be obſerved but on the ſtage. To illuſtrate this aſſertion, he availed himſelf of his talent, and mimicked the manner and voice of all the principal performers, male and female, belonging to the French comedy, to the admiration of the chevalier; who having complimented him upon this ſurprizing modulation, begged leave to diſſent in ſome particulars from the opinion he had avowed. 'That you have good actors in England,' ſaid he, 'it would be unjuſt and abſurd in me to deny; your theatre is adorned by one woman, whoſe ſenſibility and ſweetneſs of voice is ſuch as I have never obſerved on any other ſtage; ſhe has, beſides, an elegance of perſon and expreſſion of features, that wonderfully adapt her for the moſt engaging characters of your beſt plays; and I muſt freely own that I have been as highly delighted and as deeply affected by a Monimia and Belvidera at London, as ever I was by a Cornelia and Cleopatra at Paris. Your favourite actor is a ſurprizing genius. You can, moreover, boaſt of ſeveral comick actors who are perfect maſters of buffoonery and grimace; though, to be free with you, I think in theſe qualifications you are excelled by the players of Amſterdam. Yet one of your gracioſo's I cannot admire, in all the characters he aſſumes. His utterance is a continual ſing-ſong, like the chanting of veſpers, and his action reſembles that of heaving ballaſt into the hold of a ſhip. In his outward deportment, he ſeems to have confounded the ideas of dignity and inſolence of mien; acts the crafty, cool, deſigning Crookback, as a loud, ſhallow, bluſtering Hector; in the character of the mild patriot Brutus, loſes all temper and decorum; nay, ſo ridiculous is the behaviour of him and Caſſius at their interview, that ſetting foot to foot, and grinning at each other, with the aſpect of two coblers enraged, they thruſt their left ſides together, with repeated ſhocks, that the hilts of their ſwords may claſh for the entertainment of the audience; as if they were a couple of Merry-Andrews, endeavouring to raiſe the laugh of the vulgar, on ſome ſcaffold at Bartholomew fair. The deſpair of a great man who falls a ſacrifice to the infernal practices of a ſubtle traitor, that enjoyed his confidence, this Engliſh Æſopus repreſents, by beating his own forehead, and bellowing like a bull; and, indeed, in almoſt all his moſt intereſting ſcenes performs ſuch ſtrange ſhakings of the head, and other antick geſticulations, that when I firſt ſaw him act, I imagined the poor man laboured under that paralitical diſorder, which is known by the name of St. Vitus's dance. In ſhort, he ſeemed to be a ſtranger to the more

refined

'refined ſenſations of the ſoul, conſequently his expreſſion is of the vulgar 'kind, and he muſt often ſink under 'the idea of the poet; ſo that he has 'recourſe to ſuch violence of affected 'agitation, as impoſes upon the undiſcerning ſpectator, but to the eye 'of taſte, evinces him a mere player 'of that claſs whom your admired 'Shakeſpeare juſtly compares to nature's 'journeyman tearing a paſſion to rags. 'Yet this man, in ſpite of all theſe abſurdities, is an admirable Falſtaff, exhibits the character of the eighth Henry to the life, is reaſonably applauded in the Plain Dealer, excels in the 'part of Sir John Brute, and would 'be equal to many humorous ſituations 'in low comedy, which his pride will 'not allow him to undertake. I ſhould 'not have been ſo ſevere upon this actor, 'had I not ſeen him extolled by his 'partizans with the moſt ridiculous 'and fulſome manifeſtations of praiſe, 'even in thoſe very circumſtances wherein (as I have obſerved) he chiefly 'failed.'

Pickle, not a little piqued to hear the qualifications of ſuch a celebrated actor in England treated with ſuch freedom and diſreſpect, anſwered with ſome aſperity, that the chevalier was a true critick, more induſtrious in obſerving the blemiſhes than in acknowledging the excellence of thoſe who fell under his examination.

It was not to be ſuppoſed, that one actor could ſhine equally in all characters; and though his obſervations were undoubtedly very judicious, he himſelf could not help wondering that ſome of them had always eſcaped his notice, though he had been an aſſiduous frequenter of the playhouſe. 'The player 'in queſtion,' ſaid he, 'has, in your 'own opinion, a conſiderable ſhare of 'merit in the characters of comick life; 'and as to the manners of the great perſonages in tragedy, and the operation 'of the grand paſſions of the ſoul, I apprehend, they may be variouſly repreſented, according to the various complexion and cultivation of different 'men. A Spaniard, for example, though 'impelled by the ſame paſſion, will expreſs it very differently from a Frenchman; and what is looked upon as graceful vivacity and addreſs by the one, 'would be conſidered as impertinence 'and foppery by the other; nay, ſo oppoſite is your common deportment 'from that of ſome other nations, that 'one of your own countrymen, in the 'relation of his travels, obſerves, that 'the Perſians, even of this age, when 'they ſee any man perform unneceſſary 'geſtures, ſay he is either a fool or 'Frenchman. The ſtandard of demeanour being thus unſettled, a Turk, a 'Moor, an Indian, or inhabitant of 'any country, whoſe cuſtoms and dreſs 'are widely different from ours, may, 'in his ſentiments, poſſeſs all the dignity of the human heart, and be inſpired by the nobleſt paſſion that animates the ſoul, and yet excite the 'laughter rather than the reſpect of an 'European ſpectator.

'When I firſt beheld your famous 'Pariſian ſtage-heroine, in one of her 'principal parts, her attitudes ſeemed 'ſo violent, and ſhe toſſed her arms 'around with ſuch extravagance, that 'ſhe put me in mind of a wind-mill 'under the agitation of a hard gale; 'while her voice and features exhibited 'the lively repreſentation of an Engliſh 'ſcold. The action of your favourite 'male performer was in my opinion 'equally unnatural; he appeared with 'the affected airs of a dancing-maſter; 'at the moſt pathetick junctures of his 'fate, he lifted up his hands above his 'head, like a tumbler going to vault, 'and ſpoke as if his throat had been 'obſtructed by an hair-bruſh; yet, when 'I compared their manners with thoſe 'of the people before whom they performed, and made allowance for that 'exaggeration which obtains on all 'theatres, I was inſenſibly reconciled to 'their method of performance, and I 'could diſtinguiſh abundance of merit 'beneath that oddity of appearance.'

The chevalier perceiving Peregrine a little irritated at what he had ſaid, aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken, in cenſuring the Engliſh players; aſſuring him that he had an infinite veneration for the Britiſh learning, genius, and taſte, which were ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed in the world of letters; and that notwithſtanding the ſeverity of his criticiſm, he thought the theatre of London much better ſupplied with actors than that of Paris. The young gentleman thanked him for his polite condeſcenſion, at which Pallet exulted, ſaying, with a ſhake of the head, 'I believe ſo 'too, Monſieur!' and the phyſician, impatient

impatient of the diſpute in which he had bore no ſhare, obſerved, with a ſupercilious air, that the modern ſtage was altogether beneath the notice of one who had an idea of ancient magnificence and execution; that plays ought to be exhibited at the expence of the ſtate, as thoſe of Sophocles were by the Athenians; and that proper judges ſhould be appointed for receiving or rejecting all ſuch performances as are offered to the publick.

He then deſcribed the theatre at Rome, which contained eighty thouſand ſpectators; gave them a learned diſquiſition into the nature of the perſona, or maſk, worn by the Roman actors, which he ſaid was a machine that covered the whole head, furniſhed on the inſide with a brazen concavity, that by reverberating the ſound, as it iſſued from the mouth, raiſed the voice; ſo as to render it audible to ſuch an extended audience. He explained the difference between the ſaltator and declamator, one of whom acted, while the other rehearſed the part; and from thence took occaſion to mention the perfection of their pantomimes, who were ſo amazingly diſtinct in the exerciſe of their art, that a certain prince of Pontus being at the court of Nero, and ſeeing one of them repreſent a ſtory, begged him of the emperor, in order to employ him as an interpreter among barbarous nations, whoſe language he did not underſtand. Nay, divers cynick philoſophers, who had condemned this entertainment unſeen, when they chanced to be eye witneſſes of their admirable dexterity, expreſſed their ſorrow for having ſo long debarred themſelves of ſuch rational enjoyment.

He diſſented, however, from the opinion of Peregrine; who, as a proof of their excellence, had advanced, that ſome of the Engliſh actors fancied themſelves the very thing they repreſented, and recounted a ſtory from Lucian, of a certain celebrated pantomime, who, in acting the part of Ajax in his phrenzy, was tranſported into a real fit of delirium, during which he tore to pieces the cloaths of that actor who ſtalked before him, beating the ſtage with iron ſhoes, in order to increaſe the noiſe; ſnatched an inſtrument from one of the muſicians, and broke it over the head of him who repreſented Ulyſſes; and running to the conſular bench, miſtook a couple of ſenators for the ſheep which were to be ſlain. The audience applauded him to the ſkies; but ſo conſcious was the mimick of his own extravagance, when he recovered the uſe of his reaſon, that he actually fell ſick with mortification; and being afterwards deſired to re-act the piece, flatly refuſed to appear in any ſuch character, ſaying, that the ſhorteſt follies were the beſt, and that it was ſufficient for him to have been a madman once in his life.

CHAP. XVIII.

AN ADVENTURE HAPPENS TO PIPES, IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH HE IS DISMISSED FROM PEREGRINE'S SERVICE. THE WHOLE COMPANY SET OUT FOR GHENT IN THE DILIGENCE. OUR HERO IS CAPTIVATED BY A LADY IN THAT CARRIAGE; INTERESTS HER SPIRITUAL DIRECTOR IN HIS BEHALF.

THE doctor being fairly engaged on the ſubject of the ancients, would have proceeded the Lord knows how far, without heſitation, had not he been interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Jolter, who in great confuſion told them, that Pipes having affronted a ſoldier, was then ſurrounded in the ſtreet, and would certainly be put to death, if ſome perſon of authority did not immediately interpoſe in his behalf.

Peregrine no ſooner learned the danger of his truſty ſquire, than ſnatching up his ſword, he ran down ſtairs, and was followed by the chevalier, intreating him to leave the affair to his management. Within ten yards of the door, they found Tom with his back to a wall, defending himſelf manfully with a mopſtick againſt the aſſault of three or four ſoldiers, who at ſight of the Malteſe croſs deſiſted from the attack, and were taken into cuſtody by order of the knight. One of the aggreſſors being an Iriſhman, begged to be heard with great importunity, before he ſhould be ſent to the guard; and by the mediation of Pickle, was accordingly brought into the hotel, with his companions, all three bearing upon their heads and faces evident marks of their adverſary's proweſs and dexterity. The ſpokeſman being confronted with Pipes, informed the company, that having by accident met with Mr. Pipes, whom he conſidered as his

his countryman, though fortune had disposed of them in different services, he invited him to drink a glass of wine; and accordingly carried him to a cabaret, where he introduced him to his comrades; but in the course of the conversation, which turned upon the power and greatness of the kings of France and England, Mr. Pipes had been pleased to treat his Most Christian Majesty with great disrespect; and when he (the entertainer) expostulated with him in a friendly manner about his impolite behaviour, observing, that he being in the French service, would be under the necessity of resenting his abuse, if he did not put a stop to it before the other gentlemen of the cloth should comprehend his meaning, he had set them all three at defiance, dishonoured him in particular with the opprobrious epithet of *rebel to his native king and country*, and even drank (in broken French) to the perdition of Lewis and all his adherents! that, compelled by this outrageous conduct, he, as the person who had recommended him to their society, had, in vindication of his own character, demanded satisfaction of the delinquent, who on pretence of fetching a sword, had gone to his lodging, from whence he all of a sudden sallied upon them with the mop-stick, which he employed in the annoyance of them all without distinction, so that they were obliged to draw in their own defence.

Pipes being questioned by his master, with regard to the truth of this account, owned that every circumstance of it was justly represented; saying, he did not value their cheese-toasters a pinch of oakum; and that if the gentleman had not shot in betwixt them, he would have trimmed them to such a tune, that they should not have had a whole yard to square. Peregrine reprimanded him sharply for his unmannerly behaviour, and insisted upon his asking pardon of those he had injured upon the spot. But no consideration was efficacious enough to produce such concession; to this command he was both deaf and dumb, and the repeated threats of his master had no more effect than if they had been addressed to a marble statue. At length our hero, incensed at his obstinacy, started up, and would have chastised him with manual operation, had not he been prevented by the chevalier, who found means to moderate his indignation so far, that he contented himself with dismissing the offender from his service; and after having obtained the discharge of the prisoners, gave them a Louis to drink, by way of recompence for the disgrace and damage they had sustained.

The knight perceiving our young gentleman very much ruffled at this accident, and reflecting upon the extraordinary deportment and appearance of his valet, whose hair had by this time adopted a grizzled hue, imagined he was some favourite domestick, who had grown grey in the service of his master's family, and that, of consequence, he was uneasy at the sacrifice he had made. Swayed by this conjecture, he earnestly solicited in his behalf; but all he could obtain, was a promise of re-admitting him into favour on the terms already proposed, or at least on condition that he should make his acknowledgment to the chevalier, for his want of reverence and respect for the French monarch.

Upon this condescension, the culprit was called up stairs, and made acquainted with the mitigation of his fate; upon which he said, he would down on his marrow-bones to his own master, but would be damn'd before he would ask pardon of e'er a Frenchman in Christendom. Pickle, exasperated at this blunt declaration, ordered him out of his presence, and charged him never to appear before his face again; while the officer in vain employed all his influence and address to appease his resentment, and about midnight took his leave, with marks of mortification at his want of success.

Next day the company agreed to travel through Flanders in the diligence, by the advice of Peregrine, who was not without hope of meeting with some adventure or amusement in that carriage; and Jolter took care to secure places for them all. It being resolved that the valet de chambre and the doctor's man should attend the vehicle on horseback; and as for the forlorn Pipes, he was left to reap the fruits of his own stubborn disposition, notwithstanding the united efforts of the whole triumvirate, who endeavoured to procure his pardon.

Every previous measure being thus taken, they set out from Lisle about six in the morning, and found themselves in the company of a female adventurer, a very handsome young lady, a capu-

chin, and a Rotterdam Jew. Our young gentleman being the first of this society that entered, surveyed the strangers with an attentive eye, and seated himself immediately behind the beautiful unknown, who at once attracted his attention. Pallet seeing another lady unengaged, in imitation of his friend, took possession of her neighbourhood; the physician paired with the priest, and Jolter sat down by the Jew.

The machine had not proceeded many furlongs, when Pickle, accosting the fair incognita, congratulated himself upon his happiness, in being the fellow-traveller of so charming a lady. She, without the least reserve or affectation, thanked him for his compliment, and replied with a sprightly air, that now they were embarked in one common bottom, they must club their endeavours to make one another as happy as the nature of their situation would permit them to be. Encouraged by this frank intimation, and captivated by her fine black eyes and easy behaviour, he attached himself to her from that moment; and in a little time the conversation became so particular, that the capuchin thought proper to interfere in the discourse, in such a manner as gave the youth to understand, that he was there on purpose to superintend her conduct. He was doubly rejoiced at this discovery, in consequence of which he hoped to profit in his addresses, not only by the young lady's restraint, that never fails to operate in behalf of the lover, but also by the corruptibility of her guardian, whom he did not doubt of rendering propitious to his cause. Flushed with these expectations, he behaved with uncommon complacency to the father, who was charmed with the affability of his carriage, and on the faith of his generosity abated of his vigilance so much, that our hero carried on his suit without farther molestation; while the painter, in signs and loud bursts of laughter, conversed with his dulcinea, who was perfectly well versed in these simple expressions of satisfaction, and had already found means to make a dangerous invasion upon his heart.

Nor were the governor and physician unemployed, while their friends interested themselves in this agreeable manner. Jolter no sooner perceived the Hollander was a Jew, than he entered into an investigation of the Hebrew tongue, in which he was a connoisseur; and the doctor at the same time attacked the mendicant on the ridiculous maxims of his order, together with the impositions of priest-craft in general, which (he observed) prevailed so much among those who profess the Roman Catholick religion.

Thus coupled, each committee enjoyed their own conversation apart, without any danger of encroachment; and all were so intent upon their several topicks, that they scarce allowed themselves a small interval in viewing the desolation of Menin, as they passed through that ruined frontier. About twelve o'clock they arrived at Courtray, where the horses are always changed, and the company halt an hour for refreshment. Here Peregrine handed his charmer into an apartment, where she was joined by the other lady; and on pretence of seeing some of the churches in town, put himself under the direction of the capuchin, from whom he learned that the young lady was wife to a French gentleman, to whom she had been married about a year, and that she was now on her journey to visit her mother, who lived in Brussels, and who at that time laboured under a lingering distemper, which, in all probability, would soon put a period to her life. He then launched out in praise of her daughter's virtue and conjugal affection; and lastly told him, that he was her father confessor, and pitched upon to be her conductor through Flanders, by her husband, who, as well as his wife, placed the utmost confidence in his prudence and integrity.

Pickle easily comprehended the meaning of this insinuation, and took the hint accordingly. He tickled the priest's vanity with extraordinary encomiums upon the disinterested principles of his order, which were detached from all worldly pursuits, and altogether devoted to the eternal salvation of mankind. He applauded their patience, humility, and learning, and lavished a world of praise upon their talent in preaching, which (he said) had more than once operated so powerfully upon him, that had he not been restrained by certain considerations which he could not possibly wave, he should have embraced their tenets, and begged admission into their fraternity: but, as the circumstances of his fate would not permit him to take such a salutary

a ſalutary meaſure for the preſent, he intreated the good father to accept a ſmall token of his love and reſpect, for the benefit of that convent to which he belonged. So ſaying, he pulled out a purſe of ten guineas, which the capuchin obſerving, turned his head another way, and lifting up his arm, diſplayed a pocket almoſt as high as his collar-bone, in which he depoſited the money.

This proof of affection for the order produced a ſudden and ſurprizing effect upon the friar. In the tranſport of his zeal he wrung this ſemi-convert's hand, ſhowered a thouſand benedictions upon his head, and exhorted him with the tears flowing from his eyes, to perfect the great work which the finger of God had begun in his heart; and as an inſtance of his concern for the welfare of his precious ſoul, the holy brother promiſed to recommend him ſtrenuouſly to the pious admonitions of the young woman under his care, who was a perfect ſaint upon earth, and endued with the peculiar gift of mollifying the hearts of obdurate ſinners. 'O father!' cried the hypocritical projector, who by this time perceived that his money was not thrown away, 'if I could be favoured but for one half hour with the 'private inſtruction of that inſpired devotee, my mind preſages, that I ſhould 'be a ſtrayed ſheep brought back into 'the fold, and that I ſhould find eaſy 'entrance at the gates of heaven! There 'is ſomething ſupernatural in her aſpect; 'I gaze upon her with the moſt pious fervor, and my whole ſoul is agitated with 'tumults of hope and deſpair!' Having pronounced this rhapſody with tranſport half natural and half affected, the prieſt aſſured him, that theſe were operations of the ſpirit, which muſt not be repreſſed; and comforted him with the hope of enjoying the bleſſed interview which he deſired; proteſting, that as far as his influence extended, his wiſh ſhould be that very evening indulged. The gracious pupil thanked him for his benevolent concern, which he ſwore ſhould not be ſquandered upon an ungrateful object; and the reſt of the company interrupting the converſation, they returned in a body to the inn, where they dined all together, and the ladies were perſuaded to be our hero's gueſts.

As the ſubjects on which they had been engaged before dinner were not exhauſted, each brace reſumed their former theme, when they were replaced in the diligence. The painter's miſtreſs finiſhed her conqueſt, by exerting her ſkill in the art of ogling, accompanied by frequent bewitching ſighs, and ſome tender French ſongs, that ſhe ſung with ſuch pathetick expreſſion, as quite melted the reſolution of Pallet, and utterly ſubdued his affection: and he, to convince her of the importance of her victory, gave a ſpecimen of his own talents, by entertaining her with that celebrated Engliſh ditty, the burden of which begins with, 'The pigs they lie 'with their arſes bare.'

CHAP. XIX.

HE MAKES SOME PROGRESS IN HER AFFECTIONS; IS INTERRUPTED BY A DISPUTE BETWEEN JOLTER AND A JEW; APPEASES THE WRATH OF THE CAPUCHIN, WHO PROCURES FOR HIM AN INTERVIEW WITH HIS FAIR ENSLAVER, IN WHICH HE FINDS HIMSELF DECEIVED.

PEREGRINE, meanwhile, employed all his inſinuation and addreſs in practiſing upon the heart of the capuchin's fair charge. He had long ago declared his paſſion, not in the ſuperficial manner of a French gallant, but with all the ardour of an enthuſiaſt. He had languiſhed, vowed, flattered, kiſſed her hand by ſtealth, and had no reaſon to complain of his reception. Though by a man of leſs ſanguine diſpoſition, her particular complaiſance would have been deemed equivocal, and perhaps nothing more than the effect of French breeding and conſtitutional vivacity; he gave his own qualifications credit for the whole, and with theſe ſentiments carried on the attack with ſuch unabating vigour, that ſhe was actually prevailed upon to accept a ring, which he preſented as a token of his eſteem; and every thing proceeded in a moſt proſperous train, when they were diſturbed by the governor and Iſraelite, who in the heat of diſputation raiſed their voices, and poured forth ſuch effuſions of gutturals, as ſet our lover's teeth on edge. As they ſpoke in a language unknown to every one in the carriage but themſelves, and looked at each

other with mutual animosity and rancour, Peregrine desired to know the cause of their contention. Upon which, Jolter exclaimed in a furious tone, 'This learned Levite, forsooth, has the 'impudence to tell me that I don't understand Hebrew; and affirms, that 'the word *Benoni* signifies *child of joy*; 'whereas I can prove, and indeed have 'already said enough to convince any 'reasonable man, that in the Septuagint it is rightly translated into *son of* 'my sorrow.' Having thus explained himself to his pupil, he turned to the priest, with intention to appeal to his determination; but the Jew pulled him by the sleeve with great eagerness, saying, 'For the love of God be quiet, the 'capuchin will discover who we are!' Jolter, offended at this conjunction, echoed, 'Who we are!' with great emphasis; and repeating *nos poma natamus*, asked ironically, to which of the tribes the Jew thought he belonged. The Levite affronted at his comparing him to a ball of horse-dung, replied with a most significant grin, 'To the 'tribe of Issachar.' His antagonist, taking the advantage of his unwillingness to be known by the friar, and prompted by revenge for the freedom he had used, answered in the French language, that the judgment of God was still manifest upon their whole race, not only in their being in the state of exiles from their native land, but also in the spite of their hearts and pravity of their dispositions, which demonstrate them to be the genuine offspring of those who crucified the Saviour of the world.

His expectation was, however, defeated; the priest himself was too deeply engaged, to attend to the debates of other people. The physician, in the pride and insolence of his learning, had undertaken to display the absurdity of the Christian faith; having already (as he thought) confuted the capuchin, touching the points of belief in which the Roman Catholicks differ from the rest of the world. But not contented with the imagined victory he had gained, he began to strike at the fundamentals of religion; and the father, with incredible forbearance, suffered him to make very free with the doctrine of the Trinity: but, when he levelled the shafts of his ridicule at the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin, the good man's patience forsook him, his eyes seemed to kindle with indignation, he trembled in every joint, and uttered with a loud voice, 'Thou art an abo-'minable—I will not call thee heretick, 'for thou art worse (if possible) than a 'Jew; you deserve to be inclosed in a 'furnace seven times heated, and I 'have a good mind to lodge an infor-'mation against you with the Governor 'of Ghent, that you may be appre-'hended and punished as an impious 'blasphemer.'

This menace operated like a charm upon all present. The doctor was confounded; the governor dismayed; the Levite's teeth chattered; the painter was astonished at the general confusion, the cause of which he could not comprehend; and Pickle himself, not a little alarmed, was obliged to use all his interest and assiduity in appeasing this son of the church; who, at length, in consideration of the friendship he professed for the young gentleman, consented to forgive what had passed, but absolutely refused to sit in contact with such a profane wretch, whom he looked upon as a fiend of darkness, sent by the enemy of mankind to poison the minds of weak people; so that, after having crossed himself, and muttered certain exorcisms, he insisted upon the doctor's changing places with the Jew, who approached the offended ecclesiastick in an agony of fear.

Matters being thus compromised, the conversation flowed in a more general channel; and without the intervention of any other accident, or bone of contention, the carriage arrived at the city of Ghent about seven in the evening. Supper being bespoke for the whole company, our adventurer and his friends went out to take a superficial view of the place, leaving his new mistress to the pious exhortations of her confessor, whom (as we have already observed) he had secured in his interest. This zealous mediator spoke so warmly in his commendation, and interested her conscience so much in the affair, that she could not refuse her helping hand to the great work of his conversion, and promised to grant the interview he desired.

This agreeable piece of intelligence, which the capuchin communicated to Peregrine at his return, elevated his spirits to such a degree, that he shone at supper with uncommon brilliance, in a

thousand

thouſand ſallies of wit and pleaſantry, to the admiration and delight of all preſent, eſpecially of his fair Fleming, who ſeemed quite captivated by his perſon and behaviour.

The evening being thus ſpent to the ſatisfaction of all parties, the company broke up, and retired to their ſeveral apartments, when our lover, to his unſpeakable mortification, learned that the two ladies were obliged to lie in the ſame room, all the other chambers of the inn being pre-occupied. When he imparted this difficulty to the prieſt, that charitable father, who was very fruitful in expedients, aſſured him, that his ſpiritual concerns ſhould not be obſtructed by ſuch a ſlender impediment; and accordingly availed himſelf of his prerogative, by going in to his daughter's chamber when ſhe was almoſt undreſſed, and leading her into his own, on pretence of adminiſtering ſalutary food for her ſoul. Having brought the two votaries together, he prayed for ſucceſs to the operations of grace, and left them to their mutual meditations, after having conjured them in the moſt ſolemn manner to let no impure ſentiments, or temptations of the fleſh, interfere with the hallowed deſign of their meeting.

The reverend interceſſor being gone, and the door faſtened on the inſide, the pſeudo-convert, tranſported with his paſſion, threw himſelf at his Amanda's feet; and begging ſhe would ſpare him the tedious form of addreſſes, which the nature of their interview would not permit him to obſerve, began with all the impetuoſity of love to make the moſt by the occaſion. But whether ſhe was diſpleaſed by the intrepidity and aſſurance of his behaviour, thinking herſelf intitled to more courtſhip and reſpect, or was really better fortified with chaſtity than he or his procurer had ſuppoſed her to be, certain it is, ſhe expreſſed reſentment and ſurprize at his boldneſs and preſumption, and upbraided him with having impoſed upon the charity of the friar. The young gentleman was really as much aſtoniſhed at this rebuff, as ſhe pretended to be at his declaration, and earneſtly entreated her to conſider how precious the moments were, and for once ſacrifice ſuperfluous ceremony, to the happineſs of one who adored her with ſuch a flame, as could not fail to conſume his vitals, if ſhe would not deign to bleſs him with her favour. Notwithſtanding all his tears, vows, and ſupplications, his perſonal accompliſhments, and the tempting opportunity, all that he could obtain, was an acknowledgment of his having made an impreſſion upon her heart, which ſhe hoped the dictates of her duty would enable her to eraſe. This confeſſion he conſidered as a delicate conſent; and obeying the impulſe of his love, ſnatched her up in his arms, with an intention of ſeizing that which ſhe declined to give; when this French Lucretia, unable to defend her virtue any other way, ſcreamed aloud; and the capuchin, ſetting his ſhoulder to the door, forced it open, and entered in an affected extaſy of amazement. He lifted up his hands and eyes, and pretended to be thunderſtruck at the diſcovery he had made; then, in broken exclamations, profeſſed his horror at the wicked intention of our hero, who had covered ſuch a damnable ſcheme with the maſk of religion.

In ſhort, he performed his cue with ſuch dexterity, that the lady believing him in earneſt, begged he would forgive the ſtranger, on account of his youth and education, which had been tainted by the errors of hereſy; and he was on theſe conſiderations content to accept the ſubmiſſion of our hero, who, far from renouncing his expectations, notwithſtanding this mortifying repulſe, confided ſo much in his own talents, and the confeſſion which his miſtreſs had made, that he reſolved to make another effort, to which nothing could have prompted him but the utmoſt turbulence of unruly deſire.

CHAP. XX.

HE MAKES ANOTHER EFFORT TOWARDS THE ACCOMPLISHMENT OF HIS WISH, WHICH IS POSTPONED BY A STRANGE ACCIDENT.

HE directed his valet de chambre, who was a thorough-paced pimp, to kindle ſome ſtraw in the yard, and then paſs by the door of her apartment, crying with a loud voice, that the houſe was on fire. This alarm brought both ladies out of their chambers in a moment, and Peregrine taking the advantage of their running to the ſtreet-door, entered the room and concealed himſelf under

under a large table that ſtood in an unobſerved corner. The nymphs, as ſoon as they underſtood the cauſe of his Mercury's ſuppoſed affright, returned to their apartment, and having ſaid their prayers, undreſſed themſelves and went to bed. This ſcene, which fell under the obſervation of Pickle, did not at all contribute to the cooling of his concupiſcence, but on the contrary inflamed him to ſuch a degree, that he could ſcarce reſtrain his impatience, until by her breathing deep, he concluded the fellow-lodger of his Amanda was aſleep. This welcome note no ſooner ſaluted his ears, than he crept to his charmer's bed-ſide, and placing himſelf on his knees, gently laid hold on her white hand, and preſſed it to his lips. She had juſt begun to cloſe her eyes, and enjoy the agreeable oppreſſion of ſlumber, when ſhe was rouzed by this rape, at which ſhe ſtarted, pronouncing, in a tone of ſurprize and diſmay, 'My God! who's that?' The lover, with the moſt inſinuating humility, beſought her to hear him; vowing that his intention in approaching her thus, was not to violate the laws of decency, or that indelible eſteem which ſhe had engraven on his heart; but to manifeſt his ſorrow and contrition for the umbrage he had given, to pour forth the overflowings of his ſoul, and tell her that he neither could nor would ſurvive her diſpleaſure. Theſe and many more pathetick proteſtations, accompanied with ſighs and tears, and other expreſſions of grief, which our hero had at command, could not fail to melt the tender heart of the amiable Fleming, already prepoſſeſſed in favour of his qualifications. She ſympathized ſo much with his affliction, as to weep in her turn, when ſhe repreſented the impoſſibility of her rewarding his paſſion; and he, ſeizing the favourable moment, reinforced his ſolicitations with ſuch irreſiſtible tranſports, that her reſolution gave way, ſhe began to breathe quick, expreſſed her fear of being overheard by the other lady, and with an ejaculation of, 'O 'Heavens! I'm undone!' ſuffered him, after a faint ſtruggle, to make a lodgment upon the covered way of her bed. Her honour, however, was ſecured for the preſent, by a ſtrange ſort of knocking upon the wainſcot, at the other end of the room, hard by the bed in which the female adventurer lay.

Surprized at this circumſtance, the lady begged him for Heaven's ſake to retreat, or her reputation would be ruined for ever: but when he repreſented to her, that her character would run a much greater riſk, if he ſhould be detected in withdrawing, ſhe conſented with great trepidation to his ſtay, and they liſtened in ſilence to the ſequel of the noiſe that alarmed them. This was no other than an expedient of the painter, to awaken his dulcinea, with whom he had made an aſſignation, or at leaſt interchanged ſuch ſignals as he thought amounted to a firm appointment. His nymph being diſturbed in her firſt ſleep, immediately underſtood the ſound, and true to the agreement, roſe, and unbolting the door as ſoftly as poſſible, gave him admittance, leaving it open for his more commodious retreat.

While this happy gallant was employed in diſengaging himſelf from the diſhabille in which he had entered, the capuchin ſuſpecting that Peregrine would make another attempt upon his charge, had crept ſilently to the apartment, in order to reconnoitre, leſt the adventure ſhould be atchieved without his knowledge; a circumſtance that would deprive him of the profits he might expect from his privity and concurrence. Finding the door unlatched, his ſuſpicion was confirmed, and he made no ſcruple of creeping into the chamber on all fours; ſo that the painter having ſtripped himſelf to the ſhirt, in groping about for his dulcinea's bed, chanced to lay his hand upon the ſhaven crown of the father's head, which, by a circular motion, the prieſt began to turn round in his graſp, like a ball in a ſocket, to the ſurprize and conſternation of poor Pallet, who having neither penetration to comprehend the cauſe, nor reſolution to withdraw his fingers from this ſtrange object of his touch, ſtood ſweating in the dark, and venting ejaculations with great devotion. The friar tired with this exerciſe, and the painful poſture in which he ſtooped, raiſed himſelf gradually upon his feet, heaving up at the ſame time the hand of the painter, whoſe terror and amazement increaſed to ſuch a degree at this unaccountable elevation, that his faculties began to fail; and his palm in the confuſion of his fright ſliding over the prieſt's forehead, one of his fingers happened to ſlip into his mouth, and was immediately ſecured between the capuchin's teeth, with as firm a fixture as if it

it had been ſcrewed in a blackſmith's vice. The painter was ſo much diſordered by this ſudden ſnap, which tortured him to the bone, that forgetting all other conſiderations, he roared aloud, 'Murder! a fire! a trap, a trap! help, 'Chriſtians! for the love of God, help!' Our hero, confounded by theſe exclamations, which he knew would ſoon fill the room with ſpectators, and incenſed at his own mortifying diſappointment, was obliged to quit the untaſted banquet; and approaching the cauſe of his misfortune, juſt as his tormentor had thought proper to releaſe his finger, diſcharged ſuch a hearty ſlap between his ſhoulders, as brought him to the ground with hideous bellowing; then retiring unperceived, to his own chamber, was one of the firſt who returned with a light, on pretence of having been alarmed with his cries. The capuchin had taken the ſame precaution, and followed Peregrine into the room, pronouncing *Benedicite*, and croſſing himſelf with many marks of aſtoniſhment. The phyſician and Jolter appearing at the ſame time, the unfortunate painter was found lying naked on the floor, in all the agony of horror and diſmay, blowing upon his left-hand, that hung dangling from the elbow. The circumſtance of his being found in that apartment, and the attitude of his affliction, which was extremely ridiculuous, provoked the doctor to a ſmile, and produced a ſmall relaxation in the ſeverity of the governor's countenance; while Pickle, teſtifying ſurprize and concern, lifted him from the ground, and enquired into the cauſe of his preſent ſituation. Having, after ſome recollection, and fruitleſs endeavours to ſpeak, recovered the uſe of his tongue, he told them, that the houſe was certainly haunted by evil ſpirits, by which he had been conveyed (he knew not how) into that apartment, and afflicted with all the tortures of hell: that one of them had made itſelf ſenſible of his feeling, in the ſhape of a round ball of ſmooth fleſh, which turned round under his hand, like an aſtronomer's globe, and then riſing up to a ſurprizing height, was converted into a machine that laid hold on his finger, by a ſnap, and having pinned him to the ſpot, he continued for ſome moments in unſpeakable agony. At laſt he ſaid the engine ſeemed to melt away from his finger, and he received a ſudden thwack upon his ſhoulders, as if diſcharged by the arm of a giant, which overthrew him in an inſtant upon the floor. The prieſt hearing this ſtrange account, pulled out of one of his pouches a piece of conſecrated candle, which he lighted immediately, and muttered certain myſterious conjurations. Jolter, imagining that Pallet was drunk, ſhook his head, ſaying, he believed the ſpirit was no where but in his own brain. The phyſician, for once condeſcended to be a wag, and looking towards one of the beds, obſerved, that, in his opinion, the painter had been miſled by the fleſh, and not by the ſpirit. The fair Fleming lay in ſilent aſtoniſhment and affright; and her fellow-lodger, in order to acquit herſelf of all ſuſpicion, exclaimed with incredible volubility againſt the author of this uproar, who (ſhe did not doubt) had concealed himſelf in the apartment with a view of perpetrating ſome wicked attempt upon her precious virtue, and was puniſhed and prevented by the immediate interpoſition of Heaven. At her deſire, therefore, and at the earneſt ſolicitation of the other lady, he was conducted to his own bed, and the chamber being evacuated, they locked their door, fully reſolved to admit no more viſitants for that night: while Peregrine, mad with ſeeing the delicious morſel, ſnatched (as it were) from his very lip, ſtalked through the paſſage, like a ghoſt, in hope of finding ſome opportunity of re-entering, till the day beginning to break, he was obliged to retire, curſing the idiotical conduct of the painter, which had ſo unluckily interfered with his delight.

CHAP. XXI.

THEY DEPART FROM GHENT. OUR HERO ENGAGES IN A POLITICAL DISPUTE WITH HIS MISTRESS, WHOM HE OFFENDS, AND PACIFIES WITH SUBMISSION. HE PRACTISES AN EXPEDIENT TO DETAIN THE CARRIAGE AT ALOST, AND CONFIRMS THE PRIEST IN HIS INTEREST.

NEXT day, about one o'clock, after having ſeen every thing remarkable in town, and been preſent at the execution of two youths, who were hanged for raviſhing a whore, they took their departure from Ghent, in the ſame carriage

carriage which had brought them thither; and the converſation turning upon the puniſhment they had ſeen inflicted, the Flemiſh beauty expreſſed great ſympathy and compaſſion for the unhappy ſufferers, who (as ſhe had been informed) had fallen victims to the malice of the accuſer. Her ſentiments were eſpouſed by all the company, except the French lady of pleaſure; who, thinking the credit of the ſiſterhood concerned in the affair, bitterly inveighed againſt the profligacy of the age, and particularly the baſe and villainous attempts of man upon the chaſtity of the weaker ſex; ſaying, with a look of indignation directed to the painter, that for her own part, ſhe ſhould never be able to manifeſt the acknowledgment ſhe owed to Providence, for having protected her laſt night from the wicked aims of unbridled luſt. This obſervation introduced a ſeries of jokes, at the expence of Pallet, who hung his ears, and ſat with a ſilent air of dejection, fearing that through the malevolence of the phyſician, his adventure might reach the ears of his wife. Indeed, though we have made ſhift to explain the whole tranſaction to the reader, it was an inextricable myſtery to every individual in the diligence; becauſe the part which was acted by the capuchin was known to himſelf alone; and even he was utterly ignorant of Pickle's being concerned in the affair; ſo that the greateſt ſhare of the painter's ſufferings were ſuppoſed to be the exaggerations of his own extravagant imagination.

In the midſt of their diſcourſe on this extraordinary ſubject, the driver told them, that they were now on the very ſpot where a detachment of the allied army had been intercepted and cut off by the French; and ſtopping the vehicle, entertained them with a local deſcription of the battle of Melle. Upon this occaſion, the Flemiſh lady, who, ſince her marriage, had become a keen partizan for the French, gave a minute detail of all the circumſtances, as they had been repreſented to her by her huſband's brother, who was in the action. This account, which ſunk the number of the French to ſixteen, and raiſed that of the allies to twenty thouſand men, was ſo diſagreeable to truth, as well as to the laudable partiality of Peregrine, that he ventered to contradict her aſſertions; and a fierce diſpute commenced, that not only regarded the preſent queſtion, but alſo comprehended all the battles in which the Duke of Marlborough had commanded againſt Lewis the Fourteenth. In the courſe of theſe debates, ſhe diveſted the great general of all the glory he had acquired, by affirming, that every victory he gained was purpoſely loſt by the French generals, in order to bring the ſchemes of Madam de Maintenon into diſcredit; and as a particular inſtance, alledged that while the citadel of Liſle was beſieged, Lewis ſaid, in preſence of the dauphin, that if the allies ſhould be obliged to raiſe the ſiege, he would immediately declare his marriage with that lady; upon which, the ſon ſent private orders to Marſhal Boufflers to ſurrender the place. This ſtrange allegation was ſupported by the aſſeverations of the prieſt and the courtezan, and admitted as truth by the governor, who pretended to have heard it from good authority: while the doctor ſat neutral, as one who thought it ſcandalous to know the hiſtory of ſuch modern events. The Iſraelite, being a true Dutchman, liſted himſelf under the banners of our hero; who, in attempting to demonſtrate the abſurdity and improbability of what they had advanced, raiſed ſuch a hue and cry againſt himſelf, and being inſenſibly heated in the altercation, irritated his Amanda to ſuch a degree, that her charming eyes kindled with fury, and he ſaw great reaſon to think, that if he did not fall upon ſome method to deprecate her wrath, ſhe would in a twinkling ſacrifice all her eſteem for him, to her own zeal for the glory of the French nation. Moved by this apprehenſion, his ardour cooled by degrees, and he inſenſibly detached himſelf from the argument, leaving the whole care of ſupporting it the Jew; who, finding himſelf deſerted, was fain to yield with diſcretion; ſo that the French remained maſters of the field, and their young heroine reſumed her good humour.

Our hero having prudently ſubmitted to the ſuperior intelligence of his fair enſlaver, began to be haraſſed with the fears of loſing her for ever, and ſet his invention at work, to contrive ſome means of indemnifying himſelf for his aſſiduities, preſents, and the diſappointment he had already undergone. On pretence of enjoying a freer air, he mounted the box, and employed his elocution

cution and generosity with such success, that the driver undertook to disable the diligence from proceeding beyond the town of Alost for that day; and in consequence of his promise, gently overturned it when they were but a mile short of that baiting place. He had taken his measures so discreetly, that this accident was attended with no other inconvenience than a fit of fear that took possession of the ladies, and the necessity to which they were reduced by the declaration of the coachman, who, upon examining the carriage, assured the company that the axle-tree had given way, and advised them to walk forward to the inn, while he would jog after them at a slow pace, and do his endeavour the damage should be immediately repaired. Peregrine pretended to be very much concerned at what had happened, and even cursed the driver for his inadvertency, expressing infinite impatience to be at Brussels, and wishing that this misfortune might not detain them another night upon the road; but when his under-strapper, according to his instructions, came afterwards to the inn, and gave them to understand that the workman he had employed could not possibly refit the machine in less than six hours, the crafty youth affected to lose all temper, stormed at his emissary, whom he reviled in the most opprobrious terms, and threatened to cane for his misconduct. The fellow protested, with great humility, that their being overturned was owing to the failure of the axle-tree, and not to his want of care or dexterity in driving; though rather than be thought the cause of incommoding him, he would enquire for a post-chaise, in which he might depart for Brussels immediately. This expedient Pickle rejected, unless the whole company could be accommodated in the same manner; and he had been previously informed by the driver, that the town could not furnish more than one vehicle of that sort. His governor, who was quite ignorant of his scheme, represented that one night would soon be passed; and exhorted him to bear this small disappointment with a good grace, especially as the house seemed to be well provided for their entertainment, and the company so much disposed to be sociable. The capuchin, who had found his account in cultivating the acquaintance of the young stranger, was not ill-pleased at this event, which might, by protracting the term of their intercourse, yield him some opportunity of profiting still farther by his liberality: he therefore joined Mr. Jolter in his admonitions, congratulating himself upon the prospect of enjoying his conversation a little longer than he had expected. Our young gentleman received a compliment to the same purpose from the Hebrew, who had that day exercised his gallantry upon the French coquette, and was not without hope of reaping the fruits of his attention; his rival, the painter, being quite disgraced and dejected by the adventure of last night. As for the doctor, he was too much ingrossed in the contemplation of his own importance, to interest himself in the affair, or it's consequences, farther than by observing, that the European powers ought to establish publick games, like those that were celebrated of old in Greece; in which case, every state would be supplied with such dextrous charioteers, as would drive a machine at full speed, within a hair's breadth of a precipice, without any danger of it's being overthrown. Peregrine could not help yielding to their remonstrances, and united complaisance, for which he thanked them in very polite terms; and his passion seeming to subside, proposed they should amuse themselves in walking round the ramparts. He hoped to enjoy some private conversation with his admired Fleming, who had this whole day behaved with remarkable reserve. The proposal being embraced, he (as usual) handed her into the street, and took all opportunities of promoting his suit; but they were attended so closely by her father confessor, that he foresaw it would be impracticable to accomplish his aim, without the connivance of that ecclesiastick. This he was obliged to purchase with another purse, which he offered, and was accepted as a charitable atonement for his criminal behaviour during the interview which the friar had procured for the good of his soul. The benefaction was no sooner made, than the pious mendicant edged off by little and little, till he joined the rest of the company, leaving his generous patron at full liberty to prosecute his purpose. It is not to be doubted that our adventurer made a good use of this occasion: he practised a thousand flowers

of rhetorick, and actually exhauſted his whole addreſs, in perſuading her to have compaſſion upon his miſery, and indulge him with another private audience, without which he ſhould run diſtracted, and be guilty of extravagances, which, in the humanity of her diſpoſition, ſhe would weep to ſee. But, inſtead of complying with his requeſt, ſhe chid him ſeverely for his preſumption, in proſecuting her with his vicious addreſſes. She aſſured him, that although ſhe had ſecured a chamber for herſelf in this place, becauſe ſhe had no ambition to be better acquainted with the other lady, he would be in the wrong to diſturb her with another nocturnal viſit; for ſhe was determined to deny him admittance. The lover was comforted by this hint, which he underſtood in the true acceptation; and his paſſion being inflamed by the obſtacles he had met with, his heart beat high with the proſpect of poſſeſſion. Theſe raptures of expectation produced an inquietude, which diſabled him from bearing that ſhare of the converſation for which he uſed to be diſtinguiſhed. His behaviour at ſupper was a viciſſitude of ſtartings and reveries. The capuchin, imputing this diſorder to a ſecond repulſe from his charge, began to be invaded with the apprehenſion of being obliged to refund, and in a whiſper forbade our hero to deſpair.

CHAP. XXII.

THE FRENCH COQUETTE ENTRAPS THE HEART OF THE JEW, AGAINST WHOM PALLET ENTERS INTO A CONSPIRACY; BY WHICH PEREGRINE IS AGAIN DISAPPOINTED, AND THE HEBREW'S INCONTINENCE EXPOSED.

MEANWHILE, the French ſyren, baulked in her deſign upon her Engliſh cully, who was ſo eaſily diſheartened, and hung his ears in manifeſt deſpondence, rather than run the riſk of making a voyage that ſhould be altogether unprofitable, reſolved to practiſe her charms upon the Dutch merchant. She had already made ſuch innovation upon his heart, that he cultivated her with peculiar complacency, gazed upon her with a moſt libidinous ſtare, and unbended his aſpect into a grin that was truly Iſraelitiſh. The painter ſaw, and was offended at this correſpondence, which he conſidered as an inſult upon his misfortune, as well as an evident preference of his rival; and conſcious of his own timidity, ſwallowed an extraordinary glaſs, that his invention might be ſtimulated, and his reſolution raiſed to the contrivance and execution of ſome ſcheme of revenge. The wine, however, failed in the expected effect, and without inſpiring him with the plan, ſerved only to quicken his deſire of vengeance; ſo that he communicated his purpoſe to his friend Peregrine, and begged his aſſiſtance; but our young gentleman was too intent upon his own affair, to mind the concerns of any other perſon; and he declining to be engaged in the project, Pallet had recourſe to the genius of Pickle's valet de chambre, who readily embarked in the undertaking, and invented a plan, which was executed accordingly.

The evening being pretty far advanced, and the company ſeparated into their reſpective apartments, Pickle repaired, in all the impatience of youth and deſire, to the chamber of his charmer, and finding the door unbolted, entered in a tranſport of joy. By the light of the moon, which ſhone through the window, he was conducted to her bed, which he approached in the utmoſt agitation; and perceiving her to all appearance aſleep, eſſayed to wake her with a gentle kiſs; but this method proved ineffectual, becauſe ſhe was determined to ſave herſelf the confuſion of being an accomplice in his guilt. He repeated the application, murmured a moſt paſſionate ſalutation in her ear, and took ſuch other gentle methods of ſignifying his preſence, as perſuaded him that ſhe was reſolved to ſleep, in ſpite of all his endeavours. Fluſhed with this agreeable ſuppoſition, he locked the door, in order to prevent interruption, and ſtealing himſelf under the cloaths, ſet fortune at defiance, while he held the fair creature circled in his arms.

Nevertheleſs, near as he ſeemed to be to the happy accompliſhment of his deſire, his hope was again fruſtrated with a fearful noiſe, which in a moment awaked his Amanda in a fright, and for the preſent engaged all his attention. His valet de chambre, whom Pallet had conſulted as a confederate in his

his revenge againſt the lady of pleaſure and her Jewiſh gallant, had hired of certain Bohemians, who chanced to lodge at the inn, a jack aſs adorned with bells, which, when every body was retired to reſt, and the Hebrew ſuppoſed to be bedded with his miſtreſs, they led up ſtairs into a long thoroughfare, from which the chambers were detached on each ſide. The painter, perceiving the lady's door a-jar, according to his expectation, mounted this animal, with intention to ride into the room, and diſturb the lovers in the midſt of their mutual endearments; but the aſs, true to it's kind, finding himſelf beſtrid by an unknown rider, inſtead of advancing in obedience to his conductor, retreated backward to the other end of the paſſage, in ſpite of all the efforts of the painter, who ſpurred and kicked, and pummelled to no purpoſe. It was the noiſe of this contention between Pallet and the aſs, which invaded the ears of Peregrine and his miſtreſs, neither of whom could form the leaſt rational conjecture about the cauſe of ſuch ſtrange diſturbance, which increaſed as the animal approached their apartment. At length, the bourique's retrograde motion was obſtructed by the door, which it forced open, in a twinkling, with one kick, and entered with ſuch complication of ſound, as terrified the lady almoſt into a fit, and threw her lover into the utmoſt perplexity and confuſion. The painter, finding himſelf thus violently intruded into the bedchamber of he knew not whom, and dreading the reſentment of the poſſeſſor, who might diſcharge a piſtol at him as a robber who had broke into his apartment, was overwhelmed with conſternation, and redoubled his exertion to accompliſh a ſpeedy retreat, ſweating all the time with fear, and putting up petitions to Heaven for his ſafety; but his obſtinate companion, regardleſs of his ſituation, inſtead of ſubmitting to his conduct, began to turn round like a millſtone, the united ſound of his feet and bells producing a moſt ſurprizing concert. The unfortunate rider, whirling about in this manner, would have quitted his ſeat, and left the beaſt to his own amuſement, but the rotation was ſo rapid, that the terror of a ſevere fall hindered him from attempting to diſmount, and in the deſperation of his heart, he ſeized one of it's ears, which he pinched ſo unmercifully, that the creature ſet up his throat, and brayed aloud. This hideous exclamation was no ſooner heard by the fair Fleming, already chilled with panick, and prepared with ſuperſtition, than believing herſelf viſited by the devil, who was permitted to puniſh her for her infidelity to the marriage-bed, ſhe uttered a ſcream, and began to repeat her pater-noſter with a loud voice. Her lover, finding himſelf under the neceſſity of retiring, ſtarted up, and ſtung with the moſt violent pangs of rage and diſappointment, ran directly to the ſpot from whence this diabolical noiſe ſeemed to proceed. There encountering the aſs, he diſcharged ſuch a volley of blows at him and his rider, that the creature carried him off at a round trot, and they roared in uniſon all the way. Having thus cleared the room of ſuch diſagreeable company, he went back to his miſtreſs, and aſſuring her, that this was only ſome fooliſh prank of Pallet, took his leave, with a promiſe of returning after the quiet of the inn ſhould be eſtabliſhed.

In the mean time the noiſe of the bourique, the cries of the painter, and the lady's ſcream, had alarmed the whole houſe; and the aſs, in the precipitation of his retreat, ſeeing people with lights before him, took ſhelter in the apartment for which he was at firſt deſigned, juſt as the Levite, arouzed at the uproar, had quitted his dulcinea, and was attempting to recover his own chamber unperceived. Seeing himſelf oppoſed by ſuch an animal, mounted by a tall, meagre, lanthorn-jaw'd figure, half naked, with a white night-cap upon his head, which added to the natural paleneſs of his complexion, the Jew was ſorely troubled in mind, and believing it to be an apparition of Balaam and his aſs, fled backward with a nimble pace, and crept under the bed, where he lay concealed. Mr. Jolter, and the prieſt, who were the foremoſt of thoſe who had been arouzed by the noiſe, were not unmoved when they ſaw ſuch a ſpectacle ruſhing into his chamber, from whence the lady of pleaſure began to ſhriek. The governor made a full halt, and the capuchin diſcovered no inclination to proceed. They were, however, by the preſſure of the crowd that followed them, thruſt forward to the door, through which the viſion entered; and there Jolter, with great ceremony, com-

plimented his reverence with the *pas*, beſeeching him to walk in. The mendicant was too courteous and humble to accept this preheminence, and a very earneſt diſpute enſued; during which the aſs, in the courſe of his circuit, ſhewed himſelf and rider, and in a trice decided the conteſt; for, ſtruck with this ſecond glimpſe, both, at one inſtant, ſprung backward with ſuch force, as overturned their next men, who communicated the impulſe to thoſe that ſtood behind them, and theſe again to others; ſo that the whole paſſage was ſtrewed with a long file of people, that lay in a line, like the ſequel and dependance of a pack of cards. In the midſt of this havock, our hero returned from his own room with an air of aſtoniſhment, aſking the cauſe of this uproar. Receiving ſuch hints of intelligence as Jolter's conſternation would permit him to give, he ſnatched the candle out of his hand, and advanced into the haunted chamber without heſitation, being followed by all preſent, who broke forth into a long and loud peal of laughter, when they perceived the ludicrous ſource of their diſquiet. The painter himſelf made an effort to join their mirth, but he had been ſo harrowed by fear, and ſmarted ſo much with the pain of the diſcipline he had received from Pickle, that he could not, with all his endeavour, vanquiſh the ruefulneſs of his countenance. His attempt ſerved only to increaſe the awkwardneſs of his ſituation, which was not at all mended by the behaviour of the coquette, who, furious with her diſappointment, ſlipped on a petticoat and bed-gown, and ſpringing upon him, like another Hecuba, with her nails, deprived all one ſide of his noſe of the ſkin, and would not have left him an eye to ſee through, if ſome of the company had not reſcued him from her unmerciful talons. Provoked at this outrage, as well as by her behaviour to him in the diligence, he publickly explained his intention in entering her chamber in this equipage; and miſſing the Hebrew among the ſpectators, aſſured them that he muſt have abſconded ſomewhere in the apartment. In purſuance of this intimation, the room was immediately ſearched, and the mortified Levite pulled by the heels from his lurking-place; ſo that Pallet had the good fortune, at laſt, to transfer the laugh from himſelf to his rival and the French inamorata, who accordingly underwent the ridicule of the whole audience.

CHAP. XXIII.

PALLET ENDEAVOURING TO UNRAVEL THE MYSTERY OF THE TREATMEN THE HAD RECEIVED, FALLS OUT OF THE FRYING-PAN INTO THE FIRE.

NEVERTHELESS, Pallet was ſtill confounded, and chagrined by one conſideration, which was no other than that of his having been ſo roughly handled in the chamber, belonging, as (he found upon enquiry) to the handſome young lady, who was under the capuchin's direction. He recollected, that the door was faſt locked, when his beaſt burſt it open; and he had no reaſon to believe that any perſon followed him in his irruption; on the other hand, he could not imagine, that ſuch a gentle creature would either attempt to commit, or be able to execute ſuch a deſperate aſſault as that which his body had ſuſtained; and her demeanor was ſo modeſt and circumſpect, that he durſt not harbour the leaſt ſuſpicion of her virtue.

Theſe reflections bewildered him in the labyrinth of thought: he rummaged his whole imagination, endeavouring to account for what had happened. At length he concluded, that either Peregrine, or the devil, or both, muſt have been at the bottom of the whole affair, and determined, for the ſatisfaction of his curioſity, to watch our hero's motions, during the remaining part of the night, ſo narrowly that his conduct, myſterious as it was, ſhould not be able to elude his penetration.

With theſe ſentiments he retired to his own room, after the aſs had been reſtored to the right owners, and the prieſt had viſited and confirmed his fair ward, who had been almoſt diſtracted with fear. Silence no ſooner prevailed again, than he crawled darkling towards her door, and huddled himſelf up in an obſcure corner, from whence he might obſerve the ingreſs or egreſs of any human creature. He had not long remained in this poſture, when, fatigued with this adventure, and that of the preceding

preceding night, his faculties were gradually overpowered with ſlumber; and falling faſt aſleep, he began to ſnore like a whole congregation of preſbyterians. The Flemiſh beauty, hearing this diſcordant noiſe in the paſſage, began to be afraid of ſome new alarm, and very prudently bolted her door: ſo that when her lover wanted to repeat his viſit, he was not only ſurprized and incenſed at this diſagreeable ſerenade, the author of which he did not know; but when compelled by his paſſion, which was by this time wound to the higheſt pitch, he ventured to approach the entrance, he had the extreme mortification to find himſelf ſhut out. He durſt not knock or ſignify his preſence in any other manner, on account of the lady's reputation, which would have greatly ſuffered, had the ſnorer been waked by his endeavours. Had he known that the perſon who thus thwarted his views was the painter, he would have taken ſome effectual ſtep to remove him; but he could not conceive what ſhould induce Pallet to take up his reſidence in that corner; nor could he uſe the aſſiſtance of a light, to diſtinguiſh him, becauſe there was not a candle burning in the houſe.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the rage and vexation of our hero, while he continued thus tantalized upon the brink of bliſs, after his deſire had been exaſperated by the circumſtances of his two former diſappointments. He ejaculated a thouſand execrations againſt his own fortune; curſed all his fellow-travellers without exception; vowed revenge againſt the painter, who had twice confounded his moſt intereſting ſcheme; and was tempted to execute immediate vengeance upon the unknown cauſe of his preſent miſcarriage. In this agony of diſtraction did he ſweat two whole hours in the paſſage, though not without ſome faint hope of being delivered from his tormentor, who (he imagined) upon waking, would undoubtedly, ſhift his quarters, and leave the field free to his deſigns; but when he heard the cock repeat his ſalutation to the morn, which began to open on the rear of night, he could no longer reſtrain his indignation. Going to his own chamber, he filled a baſon with cold water, and ſtanding at ſome diſtance, diſcharged it full in the face of the gaping ſnorer, who, over and above the ſurprize occaſioned by the application, was almoſt ſuffocated by the liquor that entered his mouth, and ran down into his wind-pipe. While he gaſped like a perſon half drowned, without knowing the nature of his diſaſter, or remembering the ſituation in which he fell aſleep, Peregrine retired to his own door, and, to his no ſmall aſtoniſhment, from a long howl that invaded his ears, learned that the patient was no other than Pallet, who had now, for the third time, baulked his good fortune.

Enraged at the complicated treſpaſſes of this unfortunate offender, he ruſhed from his apartment with a horſe-whip, and encountering the painter in his flight, overturned him in the paſſage. There he exerciſed the inſtrument of his wrath with great ſeverity, on pretence of miſtaking him for ſome preſumptuous cur, which had diſturbed the repoſe of the inn; nay, when he called aloud for mercy in a ſupplicating tone, and his chaſtiſer could no longer pretend to treat him as a quadruped, ſuch was the virulence of the young gentleman's indignation, that he could not help declaring his ſatisfaction, by telling Pallet he had richly deſerved the puniſhment he had undergone, for his madneſs, folly, and impertinence, in contriving and executing ſuch idle ſchemes, as had no other tendency than that of plaguing his neighbours.

Pallet proteſted, with great vehemence, that he was innocent, as the child unborn, of an intention to give umbrage to any perſon whatever, except the Iſraelite and his doxy, who he knew had incurred his diſpleaſure. 'But, as 'God is my Saviour!' ſaid he, 'I be-'lieve I am perſecuted with witchcraft, 'and begin to think that damn'd prieſt 'is an agent for the devil; for he has 'been but two nights in our company, 'during which I have not cloſed an 'eye; but, on the contrary, have been 'tormented by all the fiends of hell.' Pickle peeviſhly replied, that his torments had been occaſioned by his own fooliſh imagination; and aſked how he came to howl in that corner. The painter, who did not think proper to own the truth, ſaid he had been tranſported thither by ſome preternatural conveyance, and ſouſed in water by an inviſible hand. The youth, in hope of profiting by his abſence, adviſed him to retire immediately to his bed, and by ſleep ſtrive to comfort his brain, which ſeemed to be not a little diſordered by the want

want of that refreſhment. Pallet himſelf began to be very much of the ſame way of thinking; and, in compliance with ſuch wholeſome counſel, betook himſelf to reſt, muttering prayers all the way for the recovery of his own underſtanding.

Pickle attended him to his chamber, and locking him up, put the key in his own pocket, that he might not have it in his power to interrupt him again: but in his return he was met by Mr. Jolter and the doctor, who had been a ſecond time alarmed by the painter's cries, and come to enquire about this new adventure. Half frantick with ſuch a ſeries of diſappointments, he curſed them in his heart for their unſeaſonable appearance. When they queſtioned him about Pallet, he told them he had found him ſtark ſtaring mad, howling in a corner, and wet to the ſkin, and conducted him to his room, where he was now a-bed. The phyſician hearing this circumſtance, made a merit of his vanity; and, under pretence of concern for the patient's welfare, deſired he might have an opportunity of examining the ſymptoms of his diſorder, without loſs of time; alledging, that many diſeaſes might have been ſtifled in the birth, which afterwards baffled all the endeavours of the medical art. The young gentleman accordingly delivered the key, and once more withdrew into his own chamber, with a view of ſeizing the firſt occaſion that ſhould preſent itſelf of renewing his application to his Amanda's door; while the doctor, in his way to Pallet's apartment, hinted to the governor his ſuſpicion, that the patient laboured under that dreadful ſymptom called the hydrophobia, which he obſerved had ſometimes appeared in perſons who were not previouſly bit by a mad dog. This conjecture he founded upon the howl he uttered when he was ſouſed with water, and began to recollect certain circumſtances of the painter's behaviour for ſome days paſt, which now he could plainly perceive had prognoſticated ſome ſuch calamity. He then aſcribed the diſtemper to the violent frights he had lately undergone; affirmed that the affair of the Baſtile had made ſuch a violent encroachment upon his underſtanding, that his manner of thinking and ſpeaking was entirely altered. By a theory of his own invention, he explained the effects of fear upon a looſe ſyſtem of nerves, and demonſtrated the *modus* in which the animal ſpirits operate upon the ideas and power of imagination.

This diſquiſition, which was communicated at the painter's door, might have laſted till breakfaſt, had not Jolter reminded him of his own maxim, *Venienti occurrite morbo*; upon which he put the key to immediate uſe, and they walked ſoftly towards the bed, where the patient lay extended at full length in the arms of ſleep. The phyſician took notice of his breathing hard, and his mouth being open; and from theſe diagnoſticks declared, that the liquidum nervoſum was intimately affected, and the ſaliva impregnated with the ſpiculated particles of the virus, howſoever contracted. This ſentence was ſtill farther confirmed by the ſtate of his pulſe, which being full and ſlow, indicated an oppreſſed circulation, from a loſs of claſticity in the propelling arteries. He propoſed that he ſhould immediately ſuffer a ſecond aſperſion of water, which would not only contribute to the cure, but alſo certify them beyond all poſſibility of doubt, with regard to the ſtate of the diſeaſe: for it would evidently appear, from the manner in which he would bear the application, whether or not his horror of water amounted to a confirmed hydrophobia. Mr. Jolter, in compliance with this propoſal, began to empty a bottle of water, which he found in the room in a baſon; when he was interrupted by the preſcriber, who adviſed him to uſe the contents of the chamber-pot, which being impregnated with ſalt, would operate more effectually than pure element. Thus directed, the governor lifted up the veſſel, which was replete with medicine, and with one turn of his hand diſcharged the whole healing inundation upon the ill-omen'd patient, who waking in the utmoſt diſtraction of horror, yelled moſt hideouſly, juſt at the time when Peregrine had brought his miſtreſs to a parley, and entertained hopes of being admitted into her chamber.

Terrified at this exclamation, ſhe inſtantly broke off the treaty, beſeeching him to retire from the door, that her honour might receive no injury from his being found in that place: and he had juſt enough of recollection left to ſee the neceſſity of obeying the order; in conformity to which he retreated well nigh deprived of his ſenſes, and almoſt perſuaded,

ſuaded, that ſo many unaccountable diſappointments muſt have proceeded from ſome ſupernatural cauſe, of which the idiot Pallet was no more than the involuntary inſtrument.

Meanwhile, the doctor having aſcertained the malady of the patient, whoſe cries, interrupted by frequent ſobs and ſighs, he interpreted into the barking of a dog; and having no more ſalt water at hand, reſolved to renew the bath with ſuch materials as chance would afford. He actually laid hold of the bottle and baſon; but by this time the painter had recovered the uſe of his ſenſes ſo well, as to perceive his drift; and ſtarting up, like a frantick Bedlamite, ran directly to his ſword, ſwearing with many horrid imprecations, that he would murder them both immediately, if he ſhould be hanged before dinner. They did not chuſe to wait the iſſue of his threat, but retired with ſuch precipitation, that the phyſician had almoſt diſlocated his ſhoulder, by running againſt one ſide of the entry. Jolter having pulled the door after him, and turned the key, betook himſelf to flight, roaring aloud for aſſiſtance. His colleague ſeeing the door ſecured, valued himſelf upon his reſolution, and exhorted him to return; declaring, that for his own part, he was more afraid of the madman's teeth than of his weapon; and admoniſhing the governor to reenter, and execute what they had left undone. 'Go in,' ſaid he, 'without 'fear or apprehenſion, and if any acci-'dent ſhall happen to you, either from 'his ſlaver or his ſword, I will aſſiſt 'you with my advice, which from this 'ſtation I can more coolly and diſtinct-'ly adminiſter, than I ſhould be able 'to ſupply, if my ideas were diſturbed, 'or my attention engaged in any per-'ſonal concern.'

Jolter, who could make no objection to the juſtneſs of the concluſion, frankly owned that he had no inclination to try the experiment; obſerving, that ſelf-preſervation was the firſt law of nature; that his connections with the unhappy lunatick were but ſlight; and that it could not be reaſonably expected that he would run ſuch riſks for his ſervice, as were declined by one who had ſet out with him from England on the footing of a companion. This inſinuation introduced a diſpute upon the nature of benevolence, and the moral ſenſe, which (the republican argued) exiſted independent of any private conſideration, and could never be affected by any contingent circumſtance of time and fortune; while the other, who abhorred his principles, aſſerted the duties and excellence of private friendſhip, with infinite rancour of altercation.

During the hotteſt of the argument, they were joined by the capuchin, who being aſtoniſhed to ſee them thus virulently engaged at the door, and to hear the painter bellowing within the chamber, conjured them, in the name of God, to tell him the cauſe of that confuſion, which had kept the whole houſe in continual alarm during the beſt part of the night, and ſeemed to be the immediate work of the devil and his angels. When the governor gave him to underſtand, that Pallet was viſited with an evil ſpirit, he muttered a prayer of St. Antonio de Padua, and undertook to cure the painter, provided he could be ſecured ſo as that he might, without danger to himſelf, burn part of a certain relick under his noſe, which he aſſured them was equal to the miraculous power of Eleazar's ring. They expreſſed great curioſity to know what this treaſure was; and the prieſt was prevailed upon to tell them in confidence, that it was a collection of the parings of the nails belonging to thoſe two madmen, whom Jeſus purged of the legion of devils that afterwards entered the ſwine. So ſaying, he pulled from one of his pockets a ſmall box, containing about an ounce of the parings of an horſe's hoof; at ſight of which, the governor could not help ſmiling, on account of the groſſneſs of the impoſition. The doctor aſked, with a ſupercilious ſmile, whether thoſe maniacks whom Jeſus cured, were of the ſorrel complexion, or dapple grey; for, from the texture of theſe parings, he could prove, that the original owners were of the quadruped order, and even diſtinguiſh, that their feet had been fortified with ſhoes of iron.

The mendicant, who bore an inveterate grudge againſt this ſon of Æſculapius, ever ſince he had made free with the catholick religion, replied, with great bitterneſs, that he was a wretch with whom no Chriſtian ought to communicate; that the vengeance of Heaven would one day overtake him, on account of his profanity; and that his heart was ſhod with a metal much harder than iron, which

which nothing but hell-fire would be able to melt.

It was now broad day, and all the ſervants of the inn were a-foot. Peregrine, ſeeing it would be impoſſible to obtain any ſort of indemnification for the time he had loſt; and the peturbation of his ſpirits hindering him from enjoying repoſe, which was, moreover, obſtructed by the noiſe of Pallet and his attendants, put on his cloaths at once, and in exceeding ill-humour, arrived at the ſpot where this triumvirate ſtood debating about the means of overpowering the furious painter, who ſtill continued his ſong of oaths and execrations, and made ſundry efforts to break open the door. Chagrined as our hero was, he could not help laughing when he heard how the patient had been treated; and his indignation changing into compaſſion, he called to him through the key-hole, deſiring to know the reaſon of his diſtracted behaviour. Pallet no ſooner recognized his voice, than lowering his own to a whimpering tone, 'My dear friend,' ſaid he, 'I have at 'laſt detected the ruffians who have per'ſecuted me ſo much. I caught them 'in the fact of ſuffocating me with cold 'water; and by the Lord I will be re'venged, or may I never live to finiſh 'my Cleopatra. For the love of God! 'open the door, and I will make that 'conceited pagan, that pretender to taſte, 'that falſe devotee of the ancients, who 'poiſons people with ſillikickabies and 'devil's dung; I ſay, I will make him 'a monument of my wrath, and an ex'ample to all the cheats and impoſtures 'of the faculty; and as for that thick'headed, inſolent pedant, his confede'rate, who emptied my own jordan 'upon me while I ſlept, he had better 'have been in his beloved Paris, botch'ing ſchemes for his friend the preten'der, than incur the effects of my re'ſentment. Gadſbodikins! I won't 'leave him a wind-pipe for the hang'man to ſtop, at the end of another re'bellion.'

Pickle told him, his conduct had been ſo extravagant, as to confirm the whole company in the belief, that he was actually deprived of his ſenſes; on which ſuppoſition, Mr. Jolter and the doctor had acted the part of friends, in doing that which they thought moſt conducive to his recovery; ſo that their concern merited his thankful acknowledgment, inſtead of his frantick menaces; that for his own part, he would be the firſt to condemn him, as one utterly bereft of his wits, and give orders for his being ſecured as a madman, unleſs he would immediately give a proof of his ſanity, by laying aſide his ſword, compoſing his ſpirits, and thanking his injured friends for their care of his perſon.

This alternative quieted his tranſports in a moment; he was terrified at the apprehenſion of being treated like a bedlamite, being dubious of the ſtate of his own brain; and, on the other hand, had conceived ſuch an horror and antipathy for his tormentors, that, far from believing himſelf obliged by what they had done, he could not even think of them without the utmoſt rage and deteſtation. He therefore, in the moſt tranquil voice he could aſſume, proteſted, that he never was leſs out of his ſenſes than at preſent, though he did not know how long he might retain them, if he ſhould be conſidered in the light of a lunatick; that in order to prove his being *compos mentis*, he was willing to ſacrifice the reſentment he ſo juſtly harboured againſt thoſe who by their malice had brought him to this paſs: but, as he apprehended, it would be the greateſt ſign of madneſs he could exhibit, to thank them for the miſchiefs they had brought upon him, he deſired to be excuſed from making any ſuch conceſſion; and ſwore he would endure every thing, rather than be guilty of ſuch mean abſurdity.

Peregrine held a conſultation upon this reply, when the governor and phyſician ſtrenuouſly argued againſt any capitulation with a maniack, and propoſed that ſome method might be taken to ſeize, fetter, and convey him into a dark room, where he might be treated according to the rules of art. But the capuchin underſtanding the circumſtances of the caſe, undertook to reſtore him to his former ſtate, without having any recourſe to ſuch violent meaſures. Pickle, who was a better judge of the affair than any perſon preſent, opened the door without farther heſitation, and diſplayed the poor painter ſtanding with a woeful countenance, ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was as wet as if he had been dragged through the Dender: a ſpectacle which gave ſuch offence to the chaſte eyes of the Hebrew's miſtreſs, who was by this time one of the ſpectators, that

that she turned her head another way, and withdrew to her own room, exclaiming against the indecent practices of men.

Pallet, seeing the young gentleman enter, ran to him, and, shaking him by the hand, called him his best friend, and said he had rescued him from those who had a design against his life. The priest would have produced his parings, and applied them to his nose; but was hindered by Pickle, who advised the patient to shift himself, and put on his cloaths. This being done, with great order and deliberation, Mr. Jolter, who with the doctor had kept a wary distance, in expectation of seeing some strange effects of his distraction, began to believe that he had been guilty of a mistake, and accused the physician of having misled him by his false diagnostick. The doctor still insisted upon his former declaration; assuring him, that although Pallet enjoyed a short interval for the present, the delirium would soon recur, unless they would profit by this momentary calm, and order him to be blooded, blistered, and purged, with all imaginary dispatch.

The governor, however, notwithstanding this caution, advanced to the injured party, and begged pardon for the share he had in giving him such disturbance. He declared in the most solemn manner, that he had no other intention than that of contributing towards his welfare; and that his behaviour was the result of the physician's prescription, which he affirmed was absolutely necessary for the recovery of his health.

The painter, who had very little gall in his disposition, was satisfied with his apology; but his resentment, which was before divided, now glowed with double fire against his first fellow-traveller, whom he looked upon as the author of all the mischances he had undergone, and marked out for his vengeance accordingly. Yet the doors of reconciliation were not shut against the doctor, who, with great justice, might have transferred this load of offence from himself to Peregrine; who was, without doubt, the source of the painter's misfortune: but, in that case, he must have owned himself mistaken in his medical capacity; and he did not think the friendship of Pallet important enough to be retrieved by such condescension; so that he resolved to neglect him entirely, and gradually forget the former correspondence he had maintained with a person whom he deemed so unworthy of his notice.

CHAP. XXIV.

PEREGRINE, ALMOST DISTRACTED WITH HIS DISAPPOINTMENTS, CONJURES THE FAIR FLEMING TO PERMIT HIS VISITS AT BRUSSELS. SHE WITHDRAWS FROM HIS PURSUIT.

THINGS being thus adjusted, and all the company dressed, they went to breakfast about five in the morning; and in less than an hour after were seated in the diligence, where a profound silence prevailed; Peregrine, who used to be the life of the society, being extremely pensive and melancholy on account of his mishap; the Israelite and his dulcinea dejected in consequence of their disgrace; the poet absorpt in lofty meditation; the painter in schemes of revenge; while Jolter, rocked by the motion of the carriage, made himself amends for the want of rest he had sustained; and the mendicant, with his fair charge, were infected by the cloudy aspect of our youth, in whose disappointment each of them, for different reasons, bore no inconsiderable share. This general languor and recess from all bodily exercise, disposed them all to receive the gentle yoke of slumber; and in half an hour after they had embarked, there was not one of them awake, except our hero and his mistress, unless the capuchin was pleased to counterfeit sleep, in order to indulge our young gentleman with an opportunity of enjoying some private conversation with his beauteous ward.

Peregrine did not neglect the occasion; but, on the contrary, seized the first minute, and, in gentle murmurs, lamented his hard hap in being thus the sport of fortune. He assured her, (and that with great sincerity) that all the cross accidents of his life had not cost him one half of the vexation and keenness of chagrin which he had suffered last night; and that now he was on the brink of parting from her, he should be overwhelmed with the blackest despair, if she would not extend her compassion so far as to give him an opportunity of sighing at her feet in Brussels, during

the few days his affairs would permit him to ſpend in that city.

This young lady, with an air of mortification, expreſſed her ſorrow for being the innocent cauſe of his anxiety; ſaid, ſhe hoped laſt night's adventure would be a ſalutary warning to both their ſouls; for ſhe was perſuaded, that her virtue was protected by the intervention of Heaven; that whatever impreſſion it might have made upon him, ſhe was enabled by it to adhere to that duty from which her paſſion had begun to ſwerve; and beſeeching him to forget her for his own peace, gave him to underſtand, that neither the plan ſhe had laid down for her own conduct, nor the dictates of her honour, would allow her to receive his viſits, or carry on any other correſpondence with him, while ſhe was reſtricted by the articles of her marriage-vow.

This explanation produced ſuch a violent effect upon her admirer, that he was for ſome minutes deprived of the faculty of ſpeech; which he no ſooner recovered, than he gave vent to the moſt unbridled tranſports of paſſion. He taxed her with barbarity and indifference; told her, that ſhe had robbed him of his reaſon and internal peace; that he would follow her to the ends of the earth, and ceaſe to live ſooner than ceaſe to love her; that he would ſacrifice the innocent fool who had been the occaſion of all this diſquiet, and murder every man whom he conſidered as an obſtruction to his views. In a word, his paſſions, which had continued ſo long in a ſtate of the higheſt fermentation, together with the want of that repoſe which calms and quiets the perturbation of the ſpirits, had wrought him up to a pitch of real diſtraction. While he uttered theſe delirious expreſſions, the tears ran down his cheeks; and he underwent ſuch agitation, that the tender heart of the fair Fleming was affected with his condition; and, while her own face was bedewed with the ſtreams of ſympathy, ſhe begged him, for Heaven's ſake, to be compoſed; and promiſed, for his ſatisfaction, to abate ſomewhat of the rigour of her purpoſe. Conſoled by this kind declaration, he recollected himſelf; and taking out his pencil, gave her his addreſs, when ſhe had aſſured him, that he ſhould hear from her in four and twenty-hours at fartheſt, after their ſeparation.

Thus ſoothed, he regained the empire of himſelf, and by degrees recovered his ſerenity. But this was not the caſe with his Amanda, who, from this ſample of his diſpoſition, dreaded the impetuoſity of his youth, and was effectually deterred from entering into any engagements that might ſubject her peace and reputation to the raſh effects of ſuch a violent ſpirit. Though ſhe was captivated by his perſon and accompliſhments, ſhe had reflection enough to foreſee, that the longer ſhe countenanced his paſſion, her own heart would be more and more irretrievably engaged, and the quiet of her life the more expoſed to continual interruption. She therefore profited by theſe conſiderations, and a ſenſe of religious honour, which helped her to withſtand the ſuggeſtions of inclination; and reſolved to amuſe her lover with falſe hopes, until ſhe ſhould have it in her power to relinquiſh his converſation, without running any riſk of ſuffering by the inconſiderate ſallies of his love. It was with this view, that ſhe deſired he would not inſiſt upon attending her to her mother's houſe, when the diligence arrived at Bruſſels; and he, cajoled by her artifice, took a formal leave of her, together with the other ſtrangers, fixing his habitation at the inn to which he and his fellow-travellers had been directed, in the impatient expectation of receiving a kind ſummons from her within the limited time.

Meanwhile, in order to divert his imagination, he went to ſee the ſtadt-houſe, park, and arſenal; took a ſuperficial view of the bookſellers cabinet of curioſities, and ſpent the evening at the Italian opera, which was at that time exhibited for the entertainment of Prince Charles of Lorrain, then governor of the Low Countries. In ſhort, the ſtated period was almoſt elapſed, when Peregrine received a letter to this purpoſe.

'SIR,

'IF you knew what violence I do my 'own heart, in declaring, that I 'have withdrawn myſelf for ever from 'your addreſſes, you would ſurely ap'plaud the ſacrifice I make to virtue, 'and ſtrive to imitate this example of 'ſelf-denial. Yes, Sir, Heaven hath 'lent me grace to ſtruggle with my 'guilty paſſion, and henceforth to avoid 'the dangerous ſight of him who in-

'ſpired

'spired it. I therefore conjure you, by 'the regard you ought to have for the 'eternal welfare of us both, as well as 'by the eſteem and affection you pro'feſs, to war with your unruly incli'nation, and deſiſt from all attempts 'of fruſtrating the laudable reſolution I 'have made. Seek not to invade the 'peace of one who loves you, to diſturb 'the quiet of a family that never did you 'wrong, and to alienate the thoughts 'of a weak woman from a deſerving 'man, who, by the moſt ſacred claim, 'ought to have the full poſſeſſion of her 'heart.'

This billet, without either date or ſubſcription, baniſhed all remains of diſcretion from the mind of our hero, who ran inſtantly to the landlord in all the extaſy of madneſs, and demanded to ſee the meſſenger who brought the letter, on pain of putting his whole family to the ſword. The innkeeper, terrified by his looks and menaces, fell upon his knees, proteſting, in the face of Heaven, that he was utterly ignorant and innocent of any thing that could give him offence, and that the billet was brought by a perſon whom he did not know, and who retired immediately, ſaying it required no anſwer. He then gave utterance to his fury in a thouſand imprecations and invectives againſt the writer, whom he diſhonoured with the appellations of a coquette, a jilt, an adventurer, who, by means of a pimping prieſt, had defrauded him of his money. He denounced vengeance againſt the mendicant, whom he ſwore he would deſtroy, if ever he ſhould ſet eyes on him again. The painter unluckily appearing during this paroxiſm of rage, he ſeized him by the throat, ſaying, he was ruined by his accurſed folly; and, in all likelihood, poor Pallet would have been ſtrangled, had not Jolter interpoſed in his behalf, beſeeching his pupil to have mercy upon the ſufferer, and with infinite anxiety deſiring to know the cauſe of this violent aſſault. He received no anſwer, but a ſtring of incoherent curſes. When the painter, with unſpeakable aſtoniſhment, took God to witneſs that he had done nothing to diſoblige him, the governor began to think, in ſad earneſt, that Peregrine's vivacity had at length riſen to the tranſports of actual madneſs, and was himſelf almoſt diſtracted with this ſuppoſition. That he might the better judge what remedy ought to be applied, he uſed his whole influence, and practiſed all his eloquence upon the youth, in order to learn the immediate cauſe of his delirium. He employed the moſt pathetick intreaties, and even ſhed tears in the courſe of his ſupplication; ſo that Pickle (the firſt violence of the hurricane being blown over) was aſhamed of his own imprudence, and retired to his chamber, in order to recollect his diſſipated thoughts: there he ſhut himſelf up, and for the ſecond time peruſing the fatal epiſtle, began to waver in his opinion of the author's character and intention. He ſometimes conſidered her as one of thoſe nymphs, who, under the maſk of innocence and ſimplicity, practiſe upon the hearts and purſes of unwary and unexperienced youths: this was the ſuggeſtion of his wrath, inflamed by diſappointment; but, when he reflected upon the circumſtances of her behaviour, and recalled her particular charms to his imagination, the ſeverity of his cenſure gave way, and his heart declared in favour of her ſincerity. Yet even this conſideration aggravated the ſenſe of his loſs, and he was in danger of relapſing into his former diſtraction, when his paſſion was a little becalmed by the hope of ſeeing her again, either by accident, or in the courſe of a diligent and minute enquiry, which he forthwith reſolved to ſet on foot. He had reaſon to believe that her own heart would eſpouſe his cauſe, in ſpite of her virtue's determination, and did not deſpair of meeting with the capuchin, whoſe good offices he knew he could at any time command. Comforted with theſe reflections, the tempeſt of his ſoul ſubſided. In leſs than two hours he joined his company, with an air of compoſure, and aſked the painter's forgiveneſs for the freedom he had taken; the cauſe of which he promiſed hereafter to explain. Pallet was glad of being reconciled on any terms to one whoſe countenance ſupported him in equilibrio with his antagoniſt the doctor; and Mr. Jolter was rejoiced beyond meaſure at his pupil's recovery.

CHAP. XXV.

PEREGRINE MEETS WITH MRS. HORNBECK, AND IS CONSOLED

FOR HIS LOSS. HIS VALET DE CHAMBRE IS EMBROILED WITH HER DUENNA; WHOM, HOWEVER, HE FINDS MEANS TO APPEASE.

EVERY thing having thus resumed it's natural channel, they dined together in great tranquillity. In the afternoon, Peregrine, on pretence of staying at home to write letters, while his companions were at the coffee-house, ordered a coach to be called, and with his valet de chambre, who was the only person acquainted with the present state of his thoughts, set out for the Promenade, to which all the ladies of fashion resort in the evening, during the summer season, in hopes of seeing his fugitive among the rest.

Having made a circuit round the walk, and narrowly observed every female in the place, he perceived at some distance, the livery of Hornbeck upon a lacquey that stood at the back of a coach: upon which, he ordered his man to reconnoitre the said carriage, while he pulled up his glasses, that he might not be discovered, before he should have received some intelligence, by which he might conduct himself on this unexpected occasion, that already began to interfere with the purpose of his coming thither, though it could not dispute his attention with the idea of his charming unknown.

His Mercury having made his observations, reported, that there was nobody in the coach but Mrs. Hornbeck and an elderly woman, who had all the air of a duenna, and that the servant was not the same footman who had attended them in France. Encouraged by this information, our hero ordered himself to be driven close up to that side of their convenience on which his old mistress sat, and accosted her with the usual salutation. This lady no sooner beheld her gallant, than her cheeks reddened with a double glow; and she exclaimed, 'Dear brother, I am overjoyed to see 'you! Pray come into our coach.' He took the hint immediately; and, complying with her request, embraced this new sister with great affection.

Perceiving that her attendant was very much surprized and alarmed at this unexpected meeting, she, in order to banish her suspicion, and at the same time give her lover his cue, told him that his brother (meaning her husband) was gone to the Spa for a few weeks, by the advice of physicians, on account of his ill state of health; and that, from his last letter, she had the pleasure to tell him, he was in a fair way of doing well. The young gentleman expressed his satisfaction at this piece of news; observing, with an air of fraternal concern, that if his brother had not made too free with his constitution, his friends in England would have had no occasion to repine at his absence and want of health, by which he was banished from his own country and connections. He then asked, with an affectation of surprize, why she had not accompanied her spouse; and was given to understand, that his tenderness of affection would not suffer him to expose her to the fatigues of the journey, which lay among rocks that were almost inaccessible.

The duenna's doubts being eased by this preamble of conversation, he changed the subject to the pleasures of the place; and, among other such questions, enquired if she had as yet visited Versailles. This is a publick-house, situated upon the canal at the distance of about two miles from town, and accommodated with tolerable gardens for the entertainment of company.—When she replied in the negative, he proposed to accompany her thither immediately; but the governante, who had hitherto sat silent, objected to this proposal; telling them in broken English, that as the lady was under her care, she could not answer to Mr. Hornbeck for allowing her to visit such a suspicious place. 'As for that matter, Ma-'dam,' said the confident gallant, 'give 'yourself no trouble; the consequences 'shall be at my peril, and I will un-'dertake to insure you against my bro-'ther's resentment.' So saying, he directed the coachman to the place, and ordered his own to follow, under the auspices of his valet de chambre; while the old gentlewoman, over-ruled by his assurance, quietly submitted to his authority.

Being arrived at the place, he handed the ladies from the coach, and then, for the first time, observed that the duenna was lame; a circumstance of which he did not scruple to take the advantage: for they had scarce alighted, and drank a glass of wine, when he advised his sister to enjoy a walk in the garden; and although

although the attendant made ſhift to keep them almoſt always in view, they enjoyed a detached converſation, in which Peregrine learned, that the true cauſe of her being left behind at Bruſſels, whilſt her huſband proceeded to Spa, was his dread of the company and familiarities of that place, to which his jealouſy durſt not expoſe her; and that ſhe had lived three weeks in a convent at Liſle, from which ſhe was delivered by his own free motion, becauſe indeed he could no longer exiſt without her company; and laſtly, our lover underſtood, that her governante was a mere dragon, who had been recommended to him by a Spaniſh merchant, whoſe wife ſhe attended to her dying day; but ſhe very much queſtioned whether or not her fidelity was proof enough againſt money and ſtrong waters. Peregrine aſſured her the experiment ſhould be tried before parting; and they agreed to paſs the night at Verſailles, provided his endeavours ſhould ſucceed.

Having exerciſed themſelves in this manner, until his duenna's ſpirits were pretty much exhauſted, that ſhe might be the better diſpoſed to recruit them with a glaſs of liquor, they returned to their apartment, and the cordial was recommended and received in a bumper: but as it did not produce ſuch a viſible alteration as the ſanguine hopes of Pickle had made him expect, and the old gentlewoman obſerved that it began to be late, and that the gates would be ſhut in a little time, he filled up a parting glaſs, and pledged her in equal quantity. Her blood was too much chilled to be warmed even by this extraordinary doſe, which made immediate innovation in the brain of our youth, who in the gaiety of his imagination overwhelmed this She-Argus with ſuch profuſion of gallantry, that ſhe was more intoxicated with his expreſſions than with the ſpirits ſhe had drank. When in the courſe of toying he dropped a purſe into her boſom, ſhe ſeemed to forget how the night wore, and with the approbation of her charge, aſſented to his propoſal of having ſomething for ſupper.

This was a great point which our adventurer had gained, and yet he plainly perceived that the governante miſtook his meaning, by giving herſelf credit for all the paſſion he had profeſſed. As this error could be rectified by no other means than thoſe of plying her with the bottle, until her diſtinguiſhing faculties ſhould be overpowered, he promoted a quick circulation. She did him juſtice, without any manifeſt ſigns of inebriation, ſo long, that his own eyes began to reel in the ſockets; and he found that before his ſcheme could be accompliſhed, he ſhould be effectually unfitted for all the purpoſes of love. He therefore had recourſe to his valet de chambre, who underſtood the hint as ſoon as it was given, and readily undertook to perform the part, of which his maſter had played the prelude. This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, and the night at odds with morning, he took an opportunity of imparting to the ear of this aged dulcinea a kind whiſper, importing a promiſe of viſiting her, when his ſiſter ſhould be retired to her own chamber, and an earneſt deſire of leaving her door unlocked.

This agreeable intimation being communicated, he conveyed a caution of the ſame nature to Mrs. Hornbeck, as he led her to her apartment; and darkneſs and ſilence no ſooner prevailed in the houſe, than he and his truſty ſquire ſet out on their different voyages. Every thing would have ſucceeded according to their wiſh, had not the valet de chambre ſuffered himſelf to fall aſleep at the ſide of his inamorata, and in the agitation of a violent dream, exclaimed in a voice ſo unlike that of her ſuppoſed adorer, that ſhe diſtinguiſhed the difference at once. Waking him with a pinch and a loud ſhriek, ſhe threatened to proſecute him for a rape, and reviled him with all the epithets her rage and diſappointment could ſuggeſt.

The Frenchman finding himſelf detected, behaved with great temper and addreſs: he begged ſhe would compoſe herſelf, on account of her own reputation, which was extremely dear to him; proteſting, that he had a moſt inviolable eſteem for her perſon. His repreſentations had weight with the duenna; who, upon recollection, comprehended the whole affair, and thought it would be her intereſt to bring matters to an accommodation. She therefore admitted the apologies of her bed-fellow, provided he would promiſe to atone by marriage for the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; and in this particular he ſet her heart at eaſe by repeated vows, which he uttered with ſurprizing volubility,

bility, though without any intention to perform the leaſt tittle of their contents.

Peregrine, who had been alarmed by her exclamation, and run to the door with a view of interpoſing, according to the emergency of the caſe, overhearing the affair thus compromiſed, returned to his miſtreſs, who was highly entertained with an account of what had paſſed, foreſeeing, that for the future ſhe ſhould be under no difficulty or reſtriction from the ſeverity of her guard.

CHAP. XXVI.

HORNBECK IS INFORMED OF HIS WIFE'S ADVENTURE WITH PEREGRINE, FOR WHOM HE PREPARES A STRATAGEM, WHICH IS RENDERED INEFFECTUAL BY THE INFORMATION OF PIPES. THE HUSBAND IS DUCKED FOR HIS INTENTION, AND OUR HERO APPREHENDED BY THE PATROLE.

THERE was another perſon, however, ſtill ungained; and that was no other than her footman, whoſe ſecreſy our hero attempted to ſecure in the morning by an handſome preſent, which he received with many profeſſions of gratitude and devotion to his ſervice: yet this complaiſance was nothing but a cloak uſed to diſguiſe the deſign he harboured of making his maſter acquainted with the whole tranſaction. Indeed, this lacquey had been hired, not only as a ſpy upon his miſtreſs, but alſo as a check on the conduct of the governante, with promiſe of ample reward, if ever he ſhould diſcover any ſiniſter or ſuſpicious practices in the courſe of her behaviour. As for the footman, whom they had brought from England, he was retained in attendance upon the perſon of his maſter, whoſe confidence he had loſt, by adviſing him to gentle methods of reclaiming his lady, when her irregularities had ſubjected her to his wrath.

The Flemiſh valet, in conſequence of the office he had undertaken, wrote to Hornbeck by the firſt poſt, giving an exact detail of the adventure at Verſailles, with ſuch a deſcription of the pretended brother, as left the huſband no room to think he could be any other perſon than his firſt diſhonourer; and exaſperated him to ſuch a degree, that he reſolved to lay an ambuſh for this invader, and at once diſqualify him from diſturbing his repoſe, by maintaining farther correſpondence with his wife.

Meanwhile the lovers enjoyed themſelves without reſtraint, and Peregrine's plan of enquiry after his dear unknown was for the preſent poſtponed. His fellow-travellers were confounded at his myſterious motions, which filled the heart of Jolter with anxiety and terror. This careful conductor was fraught with ſuch experience of his pupil's diſpoſition, that he trembled with the apprehenſion of ſome ſudden accident, and lived in continual alarm, like a man that walks under the wall of a nodding tower. Nor did he enjoy any alleviations of his fears, when, upon telling the young gentleman, that the reſt of the company were deſirous of departing for Antwerp, he anſwered, they were at liberty to conſult their own inclinations; but for his own part, he was reſolved to ſtay in Bruſſels a few days longer. By this declaration the governor was confirmed in the opinion of his having ſome intrigue upon the anvil. In the bitterneſs of his vexation, he took the liberty of ſignifying his ſuſpicion, and reminding him of the dangerous dilemmas to which he had been reduced by his former precipitation.

Peregrine took his caution in good part, and promiſed to behave with ſuch circumſpection as would ſcreen him from any troubleſome conſequences for the future; but, nevertheleſs, behaved that ſame evening in ſuch a manner, as plainly ſhewed, that his prudence was nothing elſe than vain ſpeculation. He had made an appointment to ſpend the night, as uſual, with Mrs. Hornbeck; and about nine o'clock haſtened to her lodgings, when he was accoſted in the ſtreet by his old diſcarded friend Thomas Pipes; who, without any other preamble, told him, that for all he had turned him adrift, he did not chuſe to ſee him run full ſail into his enemy's harbour, without giving him timely notice of the danger. 'I'll tell you 'what,' ſaid he, 'mayhap you think 'I want to curry favour, that I may be 'taken in tow again; if you do, you 'have made a miſtake in your reckon-'ing. I am old enough to be laid up, 'and

'and have wherewithal to keep my 'planks from the weather. But this 'here is the affair; I have known you 'ſince you were no higher than a mar-'lin-ſpike, and ſhouldn't care to ſee 'you deprived of your rigging at theſe 'years: whereby I am informed by 'Hornbeck's man, whom I this after-'noon fell in with by chance, as how 'his maſter has got intelligence of your 'boarding his wife, and has ſteered 'privately into this port, with a large 'complement of hands, in order, d'ye 'ſee, to ſecure you while you are under 'the hatches. Now if ſo be as how 'you have a mind to give him a ſalt eel 'for his ſupper, here am I without hope 'of fee or reward, ready to ſtand by you 'as long as my timbers will ſtick toge-'ther; and if I expect any recompence, 'may I be bound to eat oakum and 'drink bilge water for life.'

Startled at this information, Peregrine examined him upon the particulars of his diſcourſe with the lacquey; and when he underſtood that Hornbeck's intelligence flowed from the canal of his Flemiſh footman, he believed every circumſtance of Tom's report, thanked him for this warning, and after having reprimanded him for his miſbehaviour at Liſle, aſſured him that it ſhould be his own fault if ever they ſhould part again. He then deliberated with himſelf whether or not he ſhould retort the purpoſe upon his adverſary; but when he conſidered that Hornbeck was not the aggreſſor, and made that unhappy huſband's caſe his own, he could not help acquitting his intention of revenge; though, in his opinion, it ought to have been executed in a more honourable manner; and therefore he determined to chaſtiſe him for his want of ſpirit. Nothing, ſurely, can be more inſolent and unjuſt than this determination, which induced him to puniſh a perſon, for his want of courage to redreſs the injury which he himſelf had done to his reputation and peace; and yet this barbarity of deciſion is authorized by the opinion and practice of mankind.

With theſe ſentiments he returned to the inn, and putting a pair of piſtols in his pocket, ordered his valet de chambre and Pipes to follow him at a ſmall diſtance, ſo as that they ſhould be within call in caſe of neceſſity; then poſted himſelf within thirty yards of his dulcinea's door. There he had not been above half an hour, when he perceived four men take their ſtations on the other ſide, with a view, as he gueſſed, to watch for his going in, that he might be taken unaware. But when they had tarried a conſiderable time in that corner, without reaping the fruits of their expectation, their leader, perſuaded that the gallant had gained admittance by ſome ſecret means, approached the door with his followers; who, according to the inſtructions they had received, no ſooner ſaw it opened, than they ruſhed in, leaving their employer in the ſtreet, where he thought his perſon would be leaſt endangered. Our adventurer ſeeing him alone, advanced with ſpeed, and clapping a piſtol to his breaſt, commanded him to follow his footſteps, without noiſe, on pain of immediate death.

Terrified at this ſudden apparition, Hornbeck obeyed in ſilence; and in a few minutes they arrived at the quay, where Pickle halting, gave him to underſtand that he was no ſtranger to his villainous deſign. Told him, that if he conceived himſelf injured by any circumſtance of his conduct, he would now give him an opportunity of reſenting the wrong, in a manner becoming a man of honour. 'You have a ſword about 'you,' ſaid he; 'or if you don't chuſe 'to put the affair on that iſſue, here is 'a brace of piſtols; take which you 'pleaſe.' Such an addreſs could not fail to diſconcert a man of his character. After ſome heſitation, he in a faultering accent denied that his deſign was to mutilate Mr. Pickle, but that he thought himſelf entitled to the benefit of the law, by which he would have obtained a divorce, if he could have procured evidence of his wife's infidelity; and with that view he had employed people to take advantage of the information he had received. With regard to his alternative, he declined it entirely, becauſe he could not ſee what ſatisfaction he ſhould enjoy, in being ſhot through the head, or run through the lungs, by a perſon who had already wronged him in an irreparable manner. Laſtly, his fear made him propoſe, that the affair ſhould be left to the arbitration of two creditable men, altogether unconcerned in the diſpute.

To theſe remonſtrances, Peregrine replied, in the ſtyle of a hot-headed young man,

man, conſcious of his own unjuſtifiable behaviour, that every gentleman ought to be a judge of his own honour; and therefore he would ſubmit to the deciſion of no umpire whatſoever; that he would forgive his want of courage, which might be a natural infirmity, but his mean diſſimulation he could not pardon; that, as he was certified of the raſcally intent of his ambuſcade, by undoubted intelligence, he would treat him, not with a retaliation of his own treachery, but with ſuch indignity as a ſcoundrel deſerves to ſuffer, unleſs he would make one effort to maintain the character he aſſumed in life: ſo ſaying, he again preſented his piſtol, which being rejected as before, he called his two miniſters, and ordered them to duck him in the canal.

This command was pronounced and executed almoſt in the ſame breath, to the unſpeakable terror and diſorder of the poor ſhivering patient; who, having undergone the immerſion, ran about like a drowned rat, ſqueaking for aſſiſtance and revenge. His cries were overheard by the patrole, which, chancing to paſs that way, took him under their protection, and, in conſequence of his complaint and information, went in purſuit of our adventurer and his attendants, who were ſoon overtaken and ſurrounded. Raſh and inconſiderate as the young gentleman was, he did not pretend to ſtand upon the defenſive againſt a file of muſqueteers, although Pipes had drawn his cutlaſs at their approach, but ſurrendered himſelf without oppoſition, and was conveyed to the main guard, where the commanding officer, engaged by his appearance and addreſs, treated him with all imaginable reſpect. Hearing the particulars of his adventure, he aſſured him that the prince would conſider the whole as a *tour de jeuneſſe*, and order him to be releaſed without delay.

Next morning, when this gentleman gave in his report, he made ſuch a favourable repreſentation of the priſoner, that our hero was on the point of being diſcharged, when Hornbeck preferred a complaint, accuſing him of a purpoſed aſſaſſination, and praying that ſuch puniſhment ſhould be inflicted upon him, as his highneſs ſhould think adequate to the nature of the crime. The prince, perplexed with this petition, in conſequence of which he foreſaw that he muſt diſoblige a Britiſh ſubject, ſent for the plaintiff, of whom he had ſome knowledge, and in perſon exhorted him to drop the proſecution, which would only ſerve to propagate his own ſhame. But Hornbeck was too much incenſed to liſten to any propoſal of that kind, and peremptorily demanded juſtice againſt the priſoner, whom he repreſented as an obſcure adventurer, who had made repeated attempts upon his honour and his life. Prince Charles told him, that what he had adviſed was in the capacity of a friend; but, ſince he inſiſted upon his acting as a magiſtrate, the affair ſhould be examined, and determined according to the dictates of juſtice and truth.

The petitioner being diſmiſſed with this promiſe, the defendant was in his turn brought before the judge, whoſe prepoſſeſſion in his favour was in a great meaſure weakened by what his antagoniſt had ſaid to the prejudice of his birth and reputation.

CHAP. XXVII.

PEREGRINE IS RELEASED. JOLTER CONFOUNDED AT HIS MYSTERIOUS CONDUCT. A CONTEST HAPPENS BETWEEN THE POET AND PAINTER, WHO ARE RECONCILED BY THE MEDIATION OF THEIR FELLOW-TRAVELLERS.

OUR hero, underſtanding from ſome expreſſions which eſcaped the prince, that he was conſidered in the light of a ſharper and aſſaſſin, begged that he might have the liberty of ſending for ſome vouchers, that would probably vindicate his character from the malicious aſperſions of his adverſary. This permiſſion being granted, he wrote a letter to his governor, deſiring that he would bring to him the letters of recommendation which he had received from the Britiſh ambaſſador at Paris, and ſuch other papers as he thought conducive to evince the importance of his ſituation.

The billet was given in charge to one of the ſubaltern officers on duty, who carried it to the inn, and demanded to ſpeak with Mr. Jolter. Pallet, who happened to be at the door, when this meſſenger arrived, and heard him enquire for the tutor, ran directly to that gentle-

gentleman's apartment, and in manifeſt diſorder told him, that a huge fellow of a ſoldier, with a monſtrous pair of whiſkers, and a fur-cap as big as a buſhel, was aſking for him at the door. The poor governor began to ſhake at this intimation, though he was not conſcious of having committed any thing that could attract the attention of the ſtate. When the officer appeared at his chamber-door, his confuſion increaſed to ſuch a degree, that his perception ſeemed to vaniſh, and the ſubaltern repeated the purport of his errand three times, before he could comprehend his meaning, or venture to receive the letter which he preſented. At length, he ſummoned all his fortitude, and having peruſed the epiſtle, his terror ſunk into anxiety. His ingenious fear immediately ſuggeſted, that Peregrine was confined in a dungeon, for ſome outrage he had committed. He ran with great agitation to a trunk, and taking out a bundle of papers, followed his conductor, being attended by the painter, to whom he had hinted his apprehenſion. When they paſſed through the guard, which was under arms, the hearts of both died within them; and when they came into the preſence, there was ſuch an expreſſion of awful horror in the countenance of Jolter, that the prince obſerving his diſmay, was pleaſed to encourage him with an aſſurance that he had nothing to fear. Thus comforted, he recolled himſelf ſo well as to underſtand his pupil, when he deſired him to produce the ambaſſador's letters; ſome of which being open, were immediately read by his highneſs, who was perſonally acquainted with the writer, and knew ſeveral of the noblemen to whom they were addreſſed. Theſe recommendations were ſo warm, and repreſented the young gentleman in ſuch an advantageous light, that the prince, convinced of the injuſtice his character had ſuffered by the miſrepreſentation of Hornbeck, took our hero by the hand, aſked pardon for the doubts he had entertained of his honour, declared him from that moment at liberty, ordered his domeſticks to be enlarged, and offered him his countenance and protection, as long as he ſhould remain in the Auſtrian Netherlands. At the ſame time, he cautioned him againſt indiſcretion in the courſe of his gallantries; and took his word and honour, that he ſhould drop all meaſures of reſentment againſt the perſon of Hornbeck, during his reſidence in that place.

The delinquent, thus honourably acquitted, thanked the prince in the moſt reſpectful manner for his generoſity and candour, and retired with his two friends, who were amazed and bewildered in their thoughts at what they had ſeen and heard, the whole adventure ſtill remaining without the ſphere of their comprehenſion, which was not at all enlarged by the unaccountable appearance of Pipes, who, with the valet de chambre, joined them at the caſtle-gate. Had Jolter been a man of a luxuriant imagination, his brain would undoubtedly have ſuffered in the inveſtigation of his pupil's myſterious conduct, which he ſtrove in vain to unravel; but his intellects were too ſolid to be affected by the miſcarriage of his invention; and as Peregrine did not think proper to make him acquainted with the cauſe of his being apprehended, he contented himſelf with ſuppoſing that there was a lady in the caſe.

The painter, whoſe imagination was of a more flimſy texture, formed a thouſand chimerical conjectures, which he communicated to Pickle in imperfect inſinuations; hoping, by his anſwers and behaviour, to diſcover the truth; but the youth, in order to tantalize him, eluded all his enquiries, with ſuch appearance of induſtry and art, as heightened his curioſity, while it diſappointed his aim, and inflamed him to ſuch a degree of impatience, that his wits began to be unſettled. Then Peregrine was fain to recompoſe his brain, by telling him in confidence that he had been arreſted as a ſpy. This ſecret he found more intolerable than his former uncertainty; he ran from one apartment to another, like a gooſe in the agonies of egg-laying, with an intention of diſburdening his important load; but, Jolter being engaged with his pupil, and all the people of the houſe ignorant of the only language he could ſpeak, he was compelled, with infinite reluctance, to addreſs himſelf to the doctor, who was at that time ſhut up in his own chamber. Having knocked at the door to no purpoſe, he peeped through the key-hole, and ſaw the phyſician ſitting at a table, with a pen in one hand, and a paper before him, his head reclined upon his other hand, and his

eyes fixed upon the cieling, as if he had been entranced. Pallet, concluding that he was under the power of convulsion, endeavoured to force the door open; and the noise of his efforts recalled the doctor from his reverie. This poetical republican, being so disagreeably disturbed, started up in a passion, and opening the door, no sooner perceived who had interrupted him, than he flung it in his face with great fury, and cursed him for his impertinent intrusion, which had deprived him of the most delightful vision that ever regaled the human fancy. He imagined (as he afterwards imparted to Peregrine) that as he enjoyed himself in walking through the flowery plain of Parnassus, he was met by a venerable sage, whom, by a certain divine vivacity that lightened from his eyes, he instantly knew to be the immortal Pindar. He was immediately struck with reverence and awe, and prostated himself before the apparition, which taking him by the hand, lifted him gently from the ground; and, with words more sweet than the honey of the Hybla bees, told him, that of all the moderns, he alone was visited by that celestial impulse by which he himself had been inspired, when he produced his most applauded odes. So saying, he led him up the sacred hill, persuaded him to drink a copious draught of the waters of the Hippocrene, and then presented him to the harmonious Nine, who crowned his temples with a laurel-wreath.

No wonder that he was enraged to find himself cut off from such sublime society. He raved in Greek against the invader; who was so big with his own purpose, that, unmindful of the disgrace he had sustained, and disregarding all the symptoms of the physician's displeasure, he applied his mouth to the door, in an eager tone; 'I'll hold you any 'wager,' said he, 'that I guess the 'true cause of Mr. Pickle's imprison-'ment.' To this challenge he received no reply; and therefore repeated it, adding, 'I suppose you imagine he was 'taken up for fighting a duel, or affronting a nobleman, or lying with 'some man's wife, or some such matter; but, egad! you was never more 'mistaken in your life; and I'll lay my 'Cleopatra again your Homer's head, 'that in four and twenty hours you 'sha'n't light on the true reason.'

The favourite of the muses, exasperated at this vexatious perseverance of the painter, who he imagined had come to teize and insult him; 'I would,' said he, 'sacrifice a cock to Æsculapius, 'were I assured that any person had been 'taken up for extirpating such a trou-'blesome Goth as you are from the 'face of the earth. As for your boast-'ed Cleopatra, which you say was 'drawn from your own wife, I believe 'the copy has as much of the το καλον 'as the original. But, were it mine, 'it should be hung up in the temple of 'Cloacina, as the picture of that god-'dess; for any other apartment would 'be disgraced by it's appearance.'—'Hark ye, Sir!' replied Pallet, enraged in his turn at the contemptuous mention of his darling performance, 'you may 'make as free with my wife as you 'think proper; but 'ware my works; 'those are the children of my fancy, 'conceived by the glowing imagination, 'and formed by the art of my own 'hands; and you yourself are a Goth, 'and a Turk, and a Tartar, and an 'impudent pretending jackanapes, to 'treat with such disrespect a production 'which, in the opinion of all the con-'noisseurs of the age, will, when finish-'ed, be a master-piece in it's kind, and 'do honour to human genius and skill. 'So I say, again and again, (and I care 'not though your friend *Playtor* heard 'me) that you have no more taste than 'a drayman's horse, and that those 'foolish notions of the ancients ought 'to be drubbed out of you with a good 'cudgel, that you might learn to treat 'men of parts with more veneration. 'Perhaps you may not always be in the 'company of one who will halloo for 'assistance, when you are on the brink 'of being chastised for your insolence, 'as I did, when you brought upon 'yourself the resentment of that Scot, 'who, by the Lard! would have paid 'you both scot and lot, as Falstaff says, 'if the French officer had not put him 'in arrest.'

The physician, to this declamation, which was conveyed through the key-hole, answered, that he (the painter) was a fellow so infinitely below his consideration, that his conscience upbraided him with no action of his life, except that of chusing such a wretch for his companion and fellow-traveller; that he had viewed his character through the medium of good-nature and compassion,

which

which had prompted him to give Pallet an opportunity of acquiring ſome new ideas under his immediate inſtruction; but he had abuſed his goodneſs and condeſcenſion in ſuch a flagrant manner, that he was now determined to diſcard him entirely from his acquaintance, and deſired him, for the preſent, to take himſelf away, on pain of being kicked for his preſumption.

Pallet was too much incenſed to be intimidated by this threat, which he retorted with great virulence, defying him to come forth, that it might appear which of them was beſt ſkilled in that pedeſtrian exerciſe, which he immediately began to practiſe againſt the door with ſuch thundering application, as reached the ears of Pickle and his governor; who coming out into the paſſage, and ſeeing him thus employed, aſked him if he had forgot the chamber-pots of Aloſt, that he ventured to behave in ſuch a manner, as intitled him to a ſecond preſcription of the ſame nature.

The doctor underſtanding that there was company at hand, opened the door in a twinkling; and ſpringing upon his antagoniſt, like a tiger, a fierce contention would have enſued, to the infinite ſatisfaction of our hero, had not Jolter, to the manifeſt peril of his own perſon, interpoſed, and partly by force, and partly by exhortations, put a ſtop to the engagement before it was fairly begun. After having demonſtrated the indecency of ſuch a vulgar rencounter between two fellow-citizens in a foreign land, he begged to know the cauſe of their diſſention, and offered his good offices towards an accommodation. Peregrine alſo, ſeeing the fray was finiſhed, expreſſed himſelf to the ſame purpoſe; and the painter, for obvious reaſons, declining an explanation, his antagoniſt told the youth what a mortifying interruption he had ſuffered by the impertinent intruſion of Pallet, and gave him a detail of the particulars of his viſion, as above recited. The arbiter owned, the provocation was not to be endured; and decreed, that the offender ſhould make ſome atonement for his tranſgreſſion. Upon which the painter obſerved, that howſoever he might have been diſpoſed to make acknowledgments, if the phyſician had ſignified his diſpleaſure like a gentleman, the complainant had now forfeited all claim to any ſuch conceſſions, by the vulgar manner in which he had reviled him and his productions; obſerving, that if he (the painter) had been inclined to retort his ſlanderous inſinuations, the republican's own works would have afforded ample ſubject for his ridicule and cenſure.

After divers diſputes and repreſentations, peace was at length concluded, on condition that, for the future, the doctor ſhould never mention Cleopatra, unleſs he could ſay ſomething in her praiſe; and that Pallet, in conſideration of his having been the firſt aggreſſor, ſhould make a ſketch of the phyſician's viſion, to be engraved and prefixed to the next edition of his odes.

CHAP. XXVIII.

THE TRAVELLERS DEPART FOR ANTWERP, AT WHICH PLACE THE PAINTER GIVES A LOOSE TO HIS ENTHUSIASM.

OUR adventurer, baffled in all his efforts to retrieve his loſt Amanda, yielded at length to the remonſtrances of his governor and fellow-travellers, who, out of pure complaiſance to him, had exceeded their intended ſtay by ſix days at leaſt: and a couple of poſt-chaiſes, with three riding-horſes, being hired, they departed from Bruſſels in the morning, dining at Mechlin, and arrived about eight in the evening at the venerable city of Antwerp. During this day's journey, Pallet was elevated to an uncommon flow of ſpirits, with the proſpect of ſeeing the birth-place of Rubens, for whom he profeſſed an enthuſiaſtick admiration. He ſwore, that the pleaſure he felt was equal to that of a Muſſulman, on the laſt day of his pilgrimage to Mecca; and that he already conſidered himſelf a native of Antwerp, being ſo intimately acquainted with their ſo juſtly boaſted citizen, from whom, at certain junctures, he could not help believing himſelf derived, becauſe his own pencil adopted the manner of that great man with ſurprizing facility, and his face wanted nothing but a pair of whiſkers and a beard to exhibit the expreſs image of the Fleming's countenance. He told them he was ſo proud of this reſemblance, that, in order to render it more ſtriking, he had at one time of his life reſolved to keep his face ſacred from the

razor; and in that purpose had persevered, notwithstanding the continual reprehensions of Mrs. Pallet, who being then with child, said, his aspect was so hideous, that she dreaded a miscarriage every hour, until she threatened, in plain terms, to dispute the sanity of his intellects, and apply to the chancellor for a committee.

The doctor, on this occasion, observed, that a man who is not proof against the solicitations of a woman, can never expect to make a great figure in life; that painters and poets ought to cultivate no wives but the muses; or if they are, by the accidents of fortune, encumbered with families, they should carefully guard against that pernicious weakness, falsely honoured with the appellation of *natural affection*, and pay no manner of regard to the impertinent customs of the world. 'Granting that 'you had been, for a short time, deemed a lunatic,' said he, 'you might 'have acquitted yourself honourably of 'that imputation, by some performance that would have raised your character above all censure. Sophocles 'himself, that celebrated tragick poet, 'who, for the sweetness of his versification, was stiled μέλιττα, or *the bee*, 'in his old age suffered the same accusation from his own children, who 'seeing him neglect his family affairs, 'and devote himself entirely to poetry, 'carried him before the magistrate, 'as a man whose intellects were so 'much impaired by the infirmities of 'age, that he was no longer fit to manage his domestick concerns; upon 'which the reverend bard produced his 'tragedy of Οιδιπους επι κολωνω, as a work 'he had just finished; which being perused, instead of being declared unsound of understanding, he was dismissed with admiration and applause. 'I wish your beard and whiskers had 'been sanctioned by the like authority; 'tho' gh I am afraid you would have 'been in the predicament of those disciples of a certain philosopher, who 'drank decoctions of cummin seeds, 'that their faces might adopt the paleness of their master's complexion; 'hoping, that in being as wan, they 'would be as learned as their teacher.' The painter, stung with this sarcasm, replied, 'Or like those virtuosi, who, 'by repeating Greek, eating sillikickaby, 'and pretending to see visions, think 'they equal the ancients in taste and 'genius.' The physician retorted, Pallet rejoined, and the altercation continued, until they entered the gates of Antwerp; when the admirer of Rubens broke forth into a rapturous exclamation, which put an end to the dispute, and attracted the notice of the inhabitants, many of whom, by shrugging up their shoulders, and pointing to their foreheads, gave shrewd indications that they believed him a poor gentleman disordered in his brain.

They had no sooner alighted at the inn, than this pseudo-enthusiast proposed to visit the great church, in which he had been informed some of his master's pieces were to be seen; and was remarkably chagrined, when he understood that he could not be admitted till next day. He rose next morning by day-break, and disturbed his fellow-travellers in such a noisy and clamorous manner, that Peregrine determined to punish him with some new infliction; and while he put on his cloaths, actually formed the plan of promoting a duel between him and the doctor; in the management of which, he promised himself store of entertainment, from the behaviour of both.

Being provided with one of those domesticks who are always in waiting to offer their services to strangers on their first arrival, they were conducted to the house of a gentleman who had an excellent collection of pictures; and though the greatest part of them were painted by his favourite artist, Pallet condemned them all by the lump, because Pickle had told him before-hand, that there was not one performance of Rubens among the number.

The next place they visited, was what is called the academy of painting, furnished with a number of paltry pieces, in which our painter recognized the style of Peter Paul, with many expressions of admiration, on the same sort of previous intelligence.

From this repository they went to the great church; and being led to the tomb of Rubens, the whimsical painter fell upon his knees, and worshipped, with such appearance of devotion, that the attendant, scandalized at his superstition, pulled him up; observing, with great warmth, that the person buried in that place was no saint, but as great a sinner as himself; and that if he was spiritually

disposed,

diſpoſed, there was a chapel of the Bleſſed Virgin, at the diſtance of three yards on the right hand, to which he might retire. He thought it was incumbent upon him to manifeſt ſome extraordinary inſpiration, while he reſided on the ſpot where Rubens was born; and therefore his whole behaviour was an affectation of rapture, expreſſed in diſtracted exclamations, convulſive ſtarts, and uncouth geſticulations. In the midſt of his frantick behaviour, he ſaw an old capuchin with a white beard mount the pulpit, and hold forth to the congregation with ſuch violence of emphaſis and geſture, as captivated his fancy; and bawling aloud, 'Zounds! what an 'excellent Paul preaching at Athens!' he pulled a pencil and a ſmall memorandum book from his pocket, and began to take a ſketch of the orator, with great eagerneſs and agitation, ſaying, 'Egad! 'friend Raphael, we ſhall ſee whether you 'or I have got the beſt knack of trumping up an apoſtle.' This appearance of diſreſpect gave offence to the audience, which began to murmur againſt this heretick libertine; when one of the prieſts belonging to the choir, in order to prevent any ill conſequence from their diſpleaſure, came and told him in the French language, that ſuch liberties were not permitted in their religion, and adviſed him to lay aſide his implements, leſt the people would take umbrage at his deſign, and be provoked to puniſh him as a profane ſcoffer at their worſhip.

The painter ſeeing himſelf addreſſed by a friar, who, while he ſpoke, bowed with great complaiſance, imagined that he was a begging brother, come to ſupplicate his charity; and his attention being quite ingroſſed by the deſign he was making, he patted the prieſt's ſhaven crown with his hand, ſaying, '*Oter tems*, '*oter tems*;' and then reſumed his pencil with great earneſtneſs. The eccleſiaſtick perceiving that the ſtranger did not comprehend his meaning, pulled him by the ſleeve, and explained himſelf in the Latin tongue: upon which Pallet, provoked at his intruſion, curſed him aloud for an impudent beggarly ſon of a whore; and taking out a ſhilling, flung it upon the pavement, with manifeſt ſigns of indignation.

Some of the common people, enraged to ſee their religion contemned, and their prieſts inſulted at the very altar, roſe from their ſeats; and ſurrounding the aſtoniſhed painter, one of the number ſnatched his book from his hand, and tore it into a thouſand pieces. Frightened as he was, he could not help crying, 'Fire and faggots! all my favourite 'ideas are gone to wreck!' and was in danger of being very roughly handled by the crowd, had not Peregrine ſtepped in, and aſſured them, that he was a poor unhappy gentleman, who laboured under a tranſport of the brain. Thoſe who underſtood the French language communicated this information to the reſt, ſo that he eſcaped without any other chaſtiſement, than that of being obliged to retire. And as they could not ſee the famous deſcent from the croſs till after the ſervice was finiſhed, they were conducted by their domeſtick to the houſe of a painter, where they found a beggar ſtanding for his picture, and the artiſt actually employed in repreſenting a huge louſe that crawled upon his ſhoulder. Pallet was wonderfully pleaſed with this circumſtance, which he ſaid was altogether a new thought, and an excellent hint, of which he would make his advantage: and in the courſe of his ſurvey of this Fleming's performances, perceiving a piece in which two flies were engaged upon the carcaſe of a dog half devoured, he ran to his brother bruſh, and ſwore he was worthy of being a fellow-citizen of the immortal Rubens. He then lamented, with many expreſſions of grief and reſentment, that he had loſt his common place-book, in which he had preſerved a thouſand conceptions of the ſame ſort, formed by the accidental objects of his ſenſes and imagination; and took an opportunity of telling his fellow-travellers, that in execution he had equalled, if not excelled, the two ancient painters who vied with each other in the repreſentation of a curtain and a bunch of grapes; for he had exhibited the image of a certain object ſo like to nature, that the bare ſight of it ſet a whole hog-ſtye in an uproar.

When he had examined and applauded all the productions of this minute artiſt, they returned to the great church, and were entertained with the view of that celebrated maſter piece of Rubens, in which he has introduced the portraits of himſelf and his whole family. The doors that conceal this capital performance were no ſooner unfolded, than our enthuſiaſt, debarred the uſe of ſpeech, by a previous covenant with his friend Pickle,

Pickle, lifted up his hands and eyes, and putting himself in the attitude of Hamlet, when his father's ghost appears, adored in silent extasy and awe. He even made a merit of necessity; and when they had withdrawn from the place, protested that his whole faculties were swallowed up in love and admiration. He now professed himself more than ever enamoured of the Flemish school, raved in extravagant encomiums, and proposed that the whole company should pay homage to the memory of the divine Rubens, by repairing forthwith to the house in which he lived, and prostrating themselves on the floor of his painting-room.

As there was nothing remarkable in the tenement, which had been rebuilt more than once since the death of that great man, Peregrine excused himself from complying with the proposal, on pretence of being fatigued with the circuit they had already performed. Jolter declined it for the same reason; and the question being put to the doctor, he refused his company with an air of disdain. Pallet piqued at his contemptuous manner, asked if he would not go and see the habitation of *Pindoor*, provided he was in the city where that poet lived; and when the physician observed that there was an infinite difference between the men; 'That I'll allow,' replied the painter, 'for the devil a poet 'ever lived in Greece or Troy, that was 'worthy to clean the pencils of our be-'loved Rubens.' The physician could not with any degree of temper and forbearance hear this outrageous blasphemy, for which, he said, Pallet's eyes ought to be picked out by owls; and the dispute arose, as usual, to such scurrilities of language, and indecency of behaviour, that passengers began to take notice of their animosity, and Peregrine was obliged to interpose for his own credit.

CHAP. XXIX.

PEREGRINE ARTFULLY FOMENTS A QUARREL BETWEEN PALLET AND THE PHYSICIAN, WHO FIGHT A DUEL ON THE RAMPARTS.

THE painter betook himself to the house of the Flemish Raphael, and the rest of the company went back to their lodgings; where the young gentleman, taking the advantage of being alone with the physician, recapitulated all the affronts he had sustained from the painter's petulance, aggravating every circumstance of the disgrace, and advising him, in the capacity of a friend, to take care of his honour, which could not fail to suffer in the opinion of the world, if he allowed himself to be insulted with impunity, by one so much his inferior in every degree of consideration.

The physician assured him, that Pallet had hitherto escaped chastisement, by being deemed an object unworthy his resentment, and in consideration of the wretch's family, for which his compassion was interested; but, that repeated injuries would inflame the most benevolent disposition: and although he could find no precedent of duelling among the Greeks and Romans, whom he considered as the patterns of demeanour, Pallet should no longer avail himself of his veneration for the ancients, but be punished for the very next offence he should commit.

Having thus spirited up the doctor to a resolution from which he could not decently swerve, our adventurer acted the incendiary with the other party also; giving him to understand, that the physician treated his character with such contempt, and behaved to him with such insolence, as no gentleman ought to bear: that for his own part, he was every day put out of countenance by their mutual animosity, which appeared in nothing but vulgar expressions, more becoming shoe-boys and oyster-women than men of honour and education; and therefore he should be obliged, contrary to his inclination, to break off all correspondence with them both, if they would not fall upon some method to retrieve the dignity of their characters.

These representations would have had little effect upon the timidity of the painter, who was likewise too much of a Grecian to approve of single combat in any other way than that of boxing, an exercise in which he was well skilled, had not they been accompanied with an insinuation, that his antagonist was no Hector, and that he might humble him into any concession, without running the least personal risk. Animated by this assurance, our second Rubens set the trumpet of defiance to his mouth; swore

swore he valued not his life a rush, when his honour was concerned; and intreated Mr. Pickle to be the bearer of a challenge, which he would instantly commit to writing.

The mischievous fomentor highly applauded this manifestation of courage, by which he was at liberty to cultivate his friendship and society; but declined the office of carrying the billet, that his tenderness of Pallet's reputation might not be misinterpreted into an officious desire of promoting quarrels. At the same time he recommended Tom Pipes, not only as a very proper messenger on this occasion, but also as a trusty second in the field. The magnanimous painter took his advice, and retiring to his chamber, penned a challenge in these terms.

'SIR,

'WHEN I am heartily provok-
'ed, I fear not the devil him-
'self; much less——I will not call
'you a pedantick coxcomb, nor an un-
'mannerly fellow, because these are the
'hippythets of the wulgar: but, remem-
'ber, such as you are, I nyther love
'you nor fear you; but on the contra-
'ry, expect satisfaction for your auda-
'cious behaviour to me on divers oc-
'casions; and will, this evening, in the
'twilight, meet you on the ramparts
'with sword and pistol, where the Lord
'have mercy on the soul of one of us;
'for your body shall find no favour
'with your incensed defier, till death,

'LAYMAN PALLET.'

This resolute defiance, after having been submitted to the perusal, and honoured with the approbation of our youth, was committed to the charge of Pipes; who, according to his orders, delivered it in the afternoon; and brought for answer, that the physician would attend him at the appointed time and place. The challenger was evidently discomposed at the unexpected news of this acceptance, and ran about the house in great disorder, in quest of Peregrine, to beg his farther advice and assistance; but understanding that the youth was engaged in private with his adversary, he began to suspect some collusion, and cursed himself for his folly and precipitation. He even entertained some thoughts of retracting his invitation, and submitting to the triumph of his antagonist: but before he would stoop to this opprobrious condescension, he resolved to try another expedient, which might be the means of saving both his character and person. In this hope he visited Mr. Jolter, and very gravely desired he would be so good as to undertake the office of his second, in a duel which he was to fight that evening with the physician.

The governor, instead of answering his expectation, in expressing fear and concern, and breaking forth into exclamations of, 'Good God! gentlemen, 'what d'ye mean? You shall not mur-'der one another while it is in my pow-'er to prevent your purpose. I will 'go directly to the governor of the 'place, who shall interpose his autho-'rity.' I say, instead of these and other friendly menaces of prevention, Jolter heard the proposal with the most phlegmatick tranquillity, and excused himself from accepting the honour he intended for him, on account of his character and situation, which would not permit him to be concerned in any such rencounters. Indeed, this mortifying reception was owing to a previous hint from Peregrine; who, dreading some sort of interruption from his governor, had made him acquainted with his design, and assured him, that the affair should not be brought to any dangerous issue.

Thus disappointed, the dejected challenger was overwhelmed with perplexity and dismay; and in the terrors of death or mutilation, resolved to deprecate the wrath of his enemy, and conform to any submission he should propose; when he was accidentally encountered by our adventurer, who, with demonstrations of infinite satisfaction, told him in confidence, that his billet had thrown the doctor into an agony of consternation; that the acceptance of his challenge was a mere effort of despair, calculated to confound the ferocity of the sender, and dispose him to listen to terms of accommodation; that he had imparted the letter to him with fear and trembling, on pretence of engaging him as a second, but in reality, with a view of obtaining his good offices in promoting a reconciliation: 'But, perceiving the situation 'of his mind,' added our hero, 'I 'thought it would be more for your 'honour to baffle his expectation, and 'therefore

'therefore I readily undertook the task of attending him to the field, in full 'assurance, that he will there humble 'himself before you, even to prostration. In this security, you may go 'and prepare your arms, and bespeak 'the assistance of Pipes, who will squire 'you in the field, while I keep myself 'up, that our correspondence may not 'be suspected by the physician.' Pallet's spirits, that were sunk to dejection, rose at this encouragement to all the insolence of triumph; he again declaring his contempt of danger, and his pistols being loaded and accommodated with new flints by his trusty armour-bearer, waited, without flinching, for the hour of battle.

On the first approach of twilight, somebody knocked at his door, and Pipes having opened it at his desire, he heard the voice of his antagonist pronounce, 'Tell Mr. Pallet, that I am 'going to the place of appointment.' The painter was not a little surprized at this anticipation, which so ill agreed with the information he had received from Pickle; and his concern beginning to recur, he fortified himself with a large bumper of brandy, which, however, did not overcome the anxiety of his thoughts. Nevertheless, he set out on the expedition with his second, betwixt whom and himself the following dialogue passed, in their way to the ramparts. 'Mr. Pipes,' said the painter, with disordered accent, 'methinks 'the doctor was in a pestilent hurry 'with that message of his.'—'Ey, ey,' answered Tom, 'I do suppose he longs 'to be foul of you.'—'What!' replied the other, 'd'ye think he thirsts after 'my blood?'—'To be sure a does,' said Pipes, thrusting a large quid of tobacco in his cheek, with great deliberation. 'If that be the case,' cried Pallet, beginning to shake, 'he is no better 'than a cannibal, and no Christian 'ought to fight on an equal footing.' Tom observing his emotion, eyed him with a frown of indignation, saying, 'You an't afraid, are you?'—'God 'forbid!' replied the challenger, stammering with fear. 'What should I 'be afraid of? The worst he can do is 'to take my life, and then he'll be answerable both to God and man for the 'murder: don't you think he will?'—'I think no such matter,' answered the second; 'if so be as how he puts a brace 'of bullets through your bows, and 'kills you fairly, it is no more murder than if I was to bring down a 'noddy from the main top-sail yard.' By this time Pallet's teeth chattered with such violence, that he could scarce pronounce this reply; 'Mr. Thomas, you 'seem to make very light of a man's 'life; but I trust in the Almighty, I 'shall not be so easily brought down. 'Sure many a man has fought a duel, 'without losing his life! Do you imagine that I run such hazard of falling 'by the hand of my adversary?'—'You may, or may not,' said the unconcerned Pipes, 'just as it happens. 'What then? Death is a debt that every 'man owes, according to the song; and 'if you set foot to foot, I think one of 'you must go to pot.'—'Foot to foot!' exclaimed the terrified painter, 'that's 'downright butchery; and I'll be 'damn'd before I fight any man on 'earth in such a barbarous way. What! 'd'ye take me to be a savage beast?' This declaration he made while they ascended the ramparts. His attendant perceiving the physician and his second at the distance of an hundred paces before them, gave him notice of their appearance, and advised him to make ready, and behave like a man. Pallet in vain endeavoured to conceal his pannick, which discovered itself in an universal trepidation of body, and the lamentable tone in which he answered this exhortation of Pipes, saying, 'I do 'behave like a man; but you would 'have me act the part of a brute. Are 'they coming this way?' When Tom told him that they had faced about, and admonished him to advance, the nerves of his arm refused their office, he could not hold out his pistol, and instead of going forward, retreated with an insensibility of motion; till Pipes, placing himself in the rear, set his own back to that of his principal, and swore he should not budge an inch farther in that direction.

While the valet thus tutored the painter, his master enjoyed the terrors of the physician, which were more ridiculous than those of Pallet, because he was intent upon disguising them. His declaration to Pickle in the morning, would not suffer him to start any objections when he received the challenge; and finding that the young gentleman made no offer of mediating the affair,

but

but rather congratulated him on the occaſion, when he communicated the painter's billet, all his efforts conſiſted in oblique hints and general reflections upon the abſurdity of duelling, which was firſt introduced among civilized nations by the barbarous Huns and Longobards. He likewiſe pretended to ridicule the uſe of fire-arms, which confounded all the diſtinctions of ſkill and addreſs, and deprived a combatant of the opportunity of ſignalizing his perſonal proweſs.

Pickle aſſented to the juſtneſs of his obſervations; but at the ſame time repreſented the neceſſity of complying with the cuſtoms of the world, (ridiculous as they were) on which a man's honour and reputation depend. So that, ſeeing no hopes of profiting by that artifice, the republican's agitation became more and more remarkable; and he propoſed in plain terms, that they ſhould contend in armour, like the combatants of ancient days; for it was but reaſonable, that they ſhould practiſe the manner of fighting, ſince they adopted the diſpoſition of thoſe iron times.

Nothing could have afforded more diverſion to our hero, than the ſight of two ſuch duelliſts caſed in iron; and he wiſhed that he had promoted the quarrel in Bruſſels, where he could have hired the armour of Charles the Fifth, and the valiant Duke of Parma, for their accommodation: but as there was no poſſibility of furniſhing them cap-a-pee at Antwerp, he perſuaded him to conform to the modern uſe of the ſword, and meet the painter on his own terms; and ſuſpecting that his fear would ſupply him with other excuſes for declining the combat, he comforted him with ſome diſtant inſinuations, to the prejudice of his adverſary's courage, which would in all probability evaporate before any miſchief could happen.

Notwithſtanding this encouragement, he could not ſuppreſs the reluctance with which he went to the field, and caſt many a wiſtful look over his left ſhoulder, to ſee whether or not his adverſary was at his heels. When by the advice of his ſecond, he took poſſeſſion of the ground, and turned about with his face to the enemy, it was not ſo dark, but that Peregrine could perceive the unuſual paleneſs of his countenance, and the ſweat ſtanding in large drops upon his forehead; nay, there was a manifeſt diſorder in his ſpeech, when he regretted his want of the Pila and Parma, with which he would have made a rattling noiſe, to aſtoniſh his foe, in ſpringing forward, and ſinging the hymn to battle, in the manner of the ancients.

In the mean time, obſerving the heſitation of his antagoniſt, who, far from advancing, ſeemed to recoil, and even ſtruggle with his ſecond, he gueſſed the ſituation of the painter's thoughts; and collecting all the manhood that he poſſeſſed, ſeized the opportunity of profiting by his enemy's conſternation. Striking his ſword and piſtol together, he advanced in a ſort of trot, raiſing a loud howl, in which he repeated, in lieu of the Spartan ſong, part of the ſtrophe from one of Pindar's Pythia, beginning with *Ek theon gor makanai paſai Broteais arctais*, &c. This imitation of the Greeks had all the deſired effect upon the painter, who ſeeing the phyſician running towards him like a fury, with a piſtol in his right-hand, which was extended, and hearing the dreadful yell he uttered, and the outlandiſh words he pronounced, was ſeized with an univerſal palſy of his limbs. He would have dropped down upon the ground, had not Pipes ſupported and encouraged him to ſtand upon his defence. The doctor, contrary to his expectation, finding that he had not flinched from the ſpot, though he had now performed one half of his career, put in practice his laſt effort, by firing his piſtol; the noiſe of which no ſooner reached the ears of the affrighted painter, than he recommended his ſoul to God, and roared for mercy with great vociferation.

The republican, overjoyed at this exclamation, commanded him to yield, and ſurrender his arms, on pain of immediate death; upon which he threw away his piſtols and ſword, in ſpite of all the admonitions and even threats of his ſecond, who left him to his fate, and went up to his maſter, ſtopping his noſe with ſigns of loathing and abhorrence.

The victor having won the *Spolia Opima*, granted him his life on condition, that he would on his knees ſupplicate his pardon, acknowledge himſelf inferior to his conqueror in every virtue and qualification, and promiſe for the future to merit his favour by ſubmiſſion and reſpect. Theſe inſolent terms were readily embraced by the unfor-

tunate challenger; who fairly owned, that he was not at all calculated for the purposes of war, and that henceforth he would contend with no weapon but his pencil. He begged with great humility, that Mr. Pickle would not think the worse of his morals for this defect of courage, which was a natural infirmity inherited from his father, and suspend his opinion of his talents, until he should have an opportunity of contemplating the charms of his Cleopatra, which would be finished in less than three months.

Our hero observed, with an affected air of displeasure, that no man could be justly condemned for being subject to the impressions of fear; and therefore his cowardice might easily be forgiven: but there was something so presumptuous, dishonest, and disingenuous, in arrogating a quality to which he knew he had not the smallest pretension, that he could not forget his misbehaviour all at once, though he would condescend to communicate with him as formerly, in hopes of seeing a reformation in his conduct. Pallet protested, that there was no dissimulation in the case; for he was ignorant of his own weakness, until his resolution was put to the trial: he faithfully promised to demean himself, during the remaining part of the tour, with that conscious modesty and penitence which became a person in his condition; and, for the present, implored the assistance of Mr. Pipes, in disembarrassing him from the disagreeable consequence of his fear.

CHAP. XXX.

THE DOCTOR EXULTS IN HIS VICTORY. THEY SET OUT FOR ROTTERDAM, WHERE THEY ARE ENTERTAINED BY TWO DUTCH GENTLEMEN IN A YACHT, WHICH IS OVERTURNED IN THE MAEZE, TO THE MANIFEST HAZARD OF THE PAINTER'S LIFE. THEY SPEND THE EVENING WITH THEIR ENTERTAINERS, AND NEXT DAY VISIT A CABINET OF CURIOSITIES.

TOM was accordingly ordered to minister to his occasions; and the conqueror, elated with his success, which he in a great measure attributed to his manner of attack, and the hymn which he howled, told Peregrine, that he was now convinced of the truth of what Pindar sung in these words, *Ossa de me pephileke Zeus, atuzontai Boan Pieridon aionta*; for he had no sooner begun to repeat the mellifluent strains of that divine poet, than the wretch his antagonist was confounded, and his nerves unstrung.

On their return to the inn, he expatiated on the prudence and tranquillity of his own behaviour, and ascribed the consternation of Pallet to the remembrance of some crime that lay heavy upon his conscience: for, in his opinion, a man of virtue and common sense could not possibly be afraid of death, which is not only the peaceful harbour that receives him shattered on the tempestuous sea of life, but also the eternal seal of his fame and glory, which it is no longer in his power to forfeit and forego. He lamented his fate, in being doomed to live in such degenerate days, when war is become a mercenary trade; and ardently wished, that the day would come, when he should have such an opportunity of signalizing his courage in the cause of liberty, as that of Marathon, where an handful of Athenians, fighting for their freedom, defeated the whole strength of the Persian empire. 'Would to Heaven!' said he, 'my muse were blessed with an occasion to emulate that glorious testimony 'on the trophy in Cyprus, erected by 'Cimon, for two great victories gained 'on the same day over the Persians by 'sea and land; in which it is very remarkable, that the greatness of the 'occasion has raised the manner of expression above the usual simplicity and 'modesty of all other ancient inscriptions.' He then repeated it with all the pomp of declamation, and signified his hope, that the French would one day invade us with such an army as that which Xerxes led into Greece, that it might be in his power to devote himself, like Leonidas, to the freedom of his country.

This memorable combat being thus determined, and every thing that was remarkable in Antwerp surveyed, they sent their baggage down the Scheld to Rotterdam, and set out for the same place in a post-waggon, which that same evening brought them in safety to the banks of the Maeze. They put up at an English

lish house of entertainment, remarkable for the modesty and moderation of the landlord; and next morning the doctor went in person, to deliver letters of recommendation to two Dutch gentlemen, from one of his acquaintance at Paris. Neither of them happened to be at home when he called; so that he left a message at their lodgings, with his address; and in the afternoon they waited upon the company, and after many hospitable professions, one of the two invited them to spend the evening at his house.

Meanwhile they had provided a pleasure-yacht, in which they proposed to treat them with an excursion upon the Maeze. This being almost the only diversion that place affords, our young gentleman relished the proposal; and notwithstanding the remonstrances of Mr. Jolter, who declined the voyage on account of the roughness of the weather, they went on board without hesitation, and found a collation prepared in the cabbin. While they tacked to and fro in the river, under the impulse of a mackarel breeze, the physician expressed his satisfaction, and Pallet was ravished with the entertainment. But the wind increasing, to the unspeakable joy of the Dutchmen, who had now an opportunity of shewing their dexterity in the management of the vessel, the guests found it inconvenient to stand upon deck, and impossible to sit below, on account of the clouds of tobacco smoke which rolled from the pipes of their entertainers, in such volumes as annoyed them even to the hazard of suffocation. This fumigation, together with the extraordinary motion of the ship, began to affect the head and stomach of the painter, who begged earnestly to be set on shore: but the Dutch gentlemen, who had no idea of his sufferings, insisted, with surprizing obstinacy of regard, upon his staying until he should see an instance of the skill of their mariners; and bringing him on deck, commanded the men to carry the vessel's lee gun-wale under water. This nicety of navigation they instantly performed, to the admiration of Pickle, the discomposure of the doctor, and terror of Pallet, who blessed himself from the courtesy of a Dutchman, and prayed to Heaven for his deliverance.

While the Hollanders enjoyed the reputation of this feat, and the distress of the painter at the same time, the yacht was overtaken by a sudden squall, that overset her in a moment, and flung every man overboard into the Maeze, before they could have the least warning of their fate, much less, time to provide against the accident. Peregrine, who was an expert swimmer, reached the shore in safety; the physician, in the agonies of despair, laid fast hold on the trunk-breeches of one of the men, who dragged him to the other side; the entertainers landed at the bomb-keys, smoking their pipes all the way with great deliberation; and the poor painter must have gone to the bottom, had not he been encountered by the cable of a ship, that lay at anchor near the scene of their disaster. Though his senses had forsaken him, his hands fastened by instinct on this providential occurrence, which he held with such a convulsive grasp, that when a boat was sent out to bring him on shore, it was with the utmost difficulty that his fingers were disengaged. He was carried into a house, deprived of the use of speech, and bereft of all sensation; and being suspended by the heels, a vast quantity of water ran out of his mouth. This evacuation being made, he began to utter dreadful groans, which gradually increased to a continued roar; and after he had regained the use of his senses, he underwent a delirium that lasted several hours. As for the treaters, they never dreamed of expressing the least concern to Pickle or the physician for what had happened, because it was an accident so common as to pass without notice.

Leaving the care of the vessel to the seamen, the company retired to their respective lodgings, in order to shift their cloaths; and in the evening our travellers were conducted to the house of their new friend; who, with a view of making his invitation the more agreeable, had assembled to the number of twenty or thirty Englishmen, of all ranks and degrees, from the merchant to the periwig-maker's apprentice.

In the midst of this congregation stood a chafing-dish with live coals, for the convenience of lighting their pipes, and every individual was accommodated with a spitting-box. There was not a mouth in the apartment unfurnished with a tube, so that they resembled a convocation of chimeras breathing fire and smoak; and our gentlemen were fain to imitate their example in their own defence. It is not to be supposed that the conversation was

either very ſprightly or polite; the whole entertainment was of the Dutch caſt, frowzy and phlegmatick: and our adventurer, as he returned to his lodging, tortured with the head-ach, and diſguſted with every circumſtance of his treatment, curſed the hour in which the doctor had ſaddled them with ſuch troubleſome companions.

Next morning by eight o'clock theſe polite Hollanders returned the viſit, and after breakfaſt, attended their Engliſh friends to the houſe of a perſon that poſſeſſed a very curious cabinet of curioſities, to which they had ſecured our company's admiſſion. The owner of this collection was a cheeſemonger, who received them in a woollen night-cap, with ſtraps buttoned under his chin. As he underſtood no language but his own, he told them, by the canal of one of their conductors, that he did not make a practice of ſhewing his curioſities; but underſtanding that they were Engliſhmen, and recommended to his friends, he was content to ſubmit them to their peruſal.' So ſaying, he led them them up a dark ſtair-caſe, into a ſmall room, decorated with a few paltry figures in plaiſter of Paris, two or three miſerable landſcapes, the ſkins of an otter, ſeal, and ſome fiſhes ſtuffed; and in one corner ſtood a glaſs-caſe, furniſhed with newts, frogs, lizards, and ſerpents, preſerved in ſpirits; a human fœtus, a calf with two heads, and about two dozen of butterflies pinned upon paper.

The virtuoſo having exhibited theſe particulars, eyed the ſtrangers with a look ſoliciting admiration and applauſe; and as he could not perceive any ſymptom of either in their geſtures or countenances, withdrew a curtain, and diſplayed a wainſcot cheſt of drawers, in which he gave them to underſtand was ſomething that would agreeably amuſe the imagination. Our travellers, regaled with this notice, imagined that they would be entertained with the ſight of ſome curious medals, or other productions of antiquity; but how were they diſappointed, when they ſaw nothing but a variety of ſhells, diſpoſed in whimſical figures, in each drawer. After he had detained them full two hours with a tedious commentary upon the ſhape, ſize, and colour of each department, he, with a ſupercilious ſimper, deſired that the Engliſh gentlemen would frankly and candidly declare whether his cabinet, or that of Mynheer Sloane, at London, was the moſt valuable. When this requeſt was ſignified in Engliſh to the company, the painter inſtantly exclaimed, 'By the 'Lard! they are not to be named of a 'day. And as for that matter, I would 'not give one corner of Saltero's coffee-'houſe, at Chelſea, for all the traſh he 'hath ſhewn.' Peregrine, unwilling to mortify any perſon who had done his endeavour to pleaſe him, obſerved, that what he had ſeen was very curious and entertaining; but that no private collection in Europe was equal to that of Sir Hans Sloane, which, excluſive of preſents, had coſt an hundred thouſand pounds. The two conductors were confounded at this aſſeveration, which being communicated to the cheeſemonger, he ſhook his head with a ſignificant grin; and though he did not chuſe to expreſs his incredulity in words, gave our hero to underſtand, that he did not much depend upon his veracity.

From the houſe of this Dutch naturaliſt, they were dragged all round the city, by the painful civility of their attendants, who did not quit them till the evening was well advanced, and then not till after they had promiſed to be with them before ten o'clock next day, in order to conduct them to a country-houſe, ſituated in a pleaſant village on the other ſide of the river.

Pickle was already ſo much fatigued with their hoſpitality, that, for the firſt time of his life, he ſuffered a dejection of ſpirits; and reſolved, at any rate, to avoid the threatened perſecution of to-morrow. With this view he ordered his ſervants to pack up ſome cloaths and linen in a portmanteau; and in the morning embarked with his governor, in the treck ſkuyt, for the Hague, whither he pretended to be called by ſome urgent occaſion, leaving his fellow-travellers to make his apology to their friends; and aſſuring them, that he would not proceed for Amſterdam without their ſociety. He arrived at the Hague in the forenoon, and dined at an ordinary frequented by officers and people of faſhion; where being informed, that the princeſs would ſee company in the evening, he dreſſed himſelf in a rich ſuit of the Pariſian cut, and went to court without any introduction. A perſon of his appearance could not fail to attract the notice of ſuch a ſmall circle. The prince himſelf, underſtanding

ing he was an Engliſhman and a ſtranger, went up to him without ceremony, and having welcomed him to the place, converſed with him for ſome minutes on the common topicks of diſcourſe.

CHAP. XXXI.

THEY PROCEED TO THE HAGUE; FROM WHENCE THEY DEPART FOR AMSTERDAM, WHERE THEY SEE A DUTCH TRAGEDY. VISIT THE MUSICK-HOUSE, IN WHICH PEREGRINE QUARRELS WITH THE CAPTAIN OF A MAN OF WAR. THEY PASS THROUGH HAARLEM, IN THEIR WAY TO LEYDEN. RETURN TO ROTTERDAM. WHERE THE COMPANY SEPARATES, AND OUR HERO, WITH HIS ATTENDANTS, ARRIVES IN SAFETY AT HARWICH.

BEING joined by their fellow-travellers, in the morning, they made a tour to all the remarkable places in this celebrated village; ſaw the foundery, the Stadthouſe, the Spinhuys, Vauxhall, and Count Bentinck's gardens, and in the evening went to the French comedy, which was directed by a noted harlequin, who had found means to flatter the Dutch taſte ſo effectually, that they extolled him as the greateſt actor that ever appeared in the province of Holland. This famous company did not repreſent regular theatrical pieces, but only a ſort of impromptus, in which this noted player always performed the greateſt part of the entertainment. Among other ſallies of wit that eſcaped him, there was one circumſtance ſo remarkably adapted to the diſpoſition and genius of his audience, that it were pity to paſs it over in ſilence. A windmill being exhibited on the ſcene, harlequin, after having ſurveyed it with curioſity and admiration, aſks of one of the millers the uſe of that machine; and being told, that it was a windmill, obſerves with ſome concern, that as there was not the leaſt breath of wind, he could not have the pleaſure of ſeeing it turn round. Urged by this conſideration, he puts himſelf into the attitude of a perſon wrapped in profound meditation; and having continued a few ſeconds in this poſture, runs to the miller with great eagerneſs and joy, and telling him that he had found an expedient to make his mill work, very fairly unbuttons his breeches; then preſenting his poſteriors to the ſails of the machine, certain exploſions are immediately heard, and the arms of the mill begin to turn round, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators, who approve the joke with loud peals of applauſe.

Our travellers ſtaid a few days at the Hague, during which the young gentleman waited on the Britiſh ambaſſador, to whom he was recommended by his excellency at Paris, and loſt about thirty guineas at billiards to a French adventurer, who decoyed him into the ſnare by keeping up his game. Then they departed in a poſt-waggon for Amſterdam, being provided with letters of introduction to an Engliſh merchant reſiding in that city, under whoſe auſpices they viſited every thing worth ſeeing, and among other excurſions went to ſee a Dutch tragedy acted; an entertainment which, of all others, had the ſtrangeſt effect upon the organs of our hero; the dreſs of their chief perſonages was ſo antick, their manner ſo aukwardly abſurd, and their language ſo ridiculouſly unfit for conveying the ſentiments of love and honour, that Peregrine's nerves were diuretically affected with the complicated abſurdity, and he was compelled to withdraw twenty times before the cataſtrophe of the piece.

The ſubject of this performance was the famous ſtory of Scipio's continence and virtue, in reſtoring the fair captive to her lover. The young Roman hero was repreſented by a broad-faced Batavian, in a burgo-maſter's gown, and a fur cap, ſitting ſmoaking his pipe at a table furniſhed with a cann of beer, a drinking-glaſs, and a plate of tobacco: the lady was ſuch a perſon as Scipio might very well be ſuppoſed to give away, without any great effort of generoſity; and indeed the Celtiberian prince ſeemed to be of that opinion; for, upon receiving her from the hand of the victor, he diſcovered none of thoſe tranſports of gratitude and joy which Livy deſcribes in recounting this event. The Dutch Scipio, however, was complaiſant enough in his way; for he deſired her to ſit at his right-hand, by the appellation of *Ya frow*, and with his own fingers filling a clean pipe, preſented it to Mynheer Allucio the lover. The reſt of the œconomy of the piece was in the

ſame

ſame taſte; which was ſo agreeable to the audience, that they ſeemed to have ſhaken off their natural phlegm, in order to applaud the performance.

From the play our company adjourned to the houſe of their friend, where they ſpent the evening; and the converſation turning upon poetry, a Dutchman who was preſent, and underſtood the Engliſh language, having liſtened very attentively to the diſcourſe, lifted up with both hands the greateſt part of a Cheſhire-cheeſe that lay upon the table, ſaying, 'I do know vat is boetrie. Mine brotre 'be a great boet, and ave vrought a 'book as dick as all dat.' Pickle, diverted with this method of eſtimating an author according to the quantity of his works, enquired about the ſubjects of this bard's writings; but of theſe his brother could give no account, or other information, but that there was little market for the commodity, which hung heavy upon his hands, and induced him to wiſh he had applied himſelf to another trade.

The only remarkable ſcene in Amſterdam, which our company had not ſeen, was the Spuyl, or muſick-houſes, which, by the connivance of the magiſtrates, are maintained for the recreation of thoſe who might attempt the chaſtity of creditable women, if they were not provided with ſuch conveniences. To one of theſe night-houſes did our travellers repair, under the conduct of the Engliſh merchant, and were introduced into ſuch another place as the ever memorable coffee-houſe of Moll King; with this difference, that the company here were not ſo riotous as the Bucks of Covent-Garden, but formed themſelves into a circle, within which ſome of the number danced to the muſick of a ſcurvy organ, and a few other inſtruments, that uttered tunes very ſuitable to the diſpoſition of the hearers, while the whole apartment was ſhrouded with clouds of ſmoak impervious to the view. When our gentlemen entered, the floor was occupied by two females and their gallants, who, in the performance of their exerciſe, lifted their legs like ſo many oxen at plough; and the pipe of one of thoſe hoppers happening to be exhauſted, in the midſt of his ſaraband, he very deliberately drew forth his tobacco-box, filling and lighting it again, without any interruption to the dance. Peregrine being unchecked by the preſence of his governor, who was too tender of his own reputation to attend them in this expedition, made up to a ſprightly French girl that ſat in ſeeming expectation of a cuſtomer, and prevailing upon her to be his partner, led her into the circle, and, in his turn, took the opportunity of dancing a minuet, to the admiration of all preſent. He intended to have exhibited another ſpecimen of his ability in this art, when a captain of a Dutch man of war chancing to come in, and ſeeing a ſtranger engaged with the lady whom, it ſeems, he had beſpoke for his bed-fellow, he advanced, without any ceremony, and ſeizing her by the arm, pulled her to the other ſide of the room. Our adventurer, who was not a man to put up with ſuch a brutal affront, followed the raviſher with indignation in his eyes; and puſhing him on one ſide, retook the ſubject of their conteſt, and led her back to the place from whence ſhe had been dragged. The Dutchman, enraged at the youth's preſumption, obeyed the firſt dictates of his choler, and lent his rival a hearty box on the ear; which was immediately repaid with intereſt, before our hero could recollect himſelf ſufficiently to lay his hand upon his ſword, and beckon the aggreſſor to the door.

Notwithſtanding the confuſion and diſorder which this affair produced in the room, and the endeavours of Pickle's company, who interpoſed, in order to prevent bloodſhed, the antagoniſts reached the ſtreet; and Peregrine drawing, was ſurprized to ſee the captain advance againſt him with a long knife, which he preferred to the ſword that hung by his ſide. The youth, confounded at this prepoſterous behaviour, deſired him, in the French tongue, to lay aſide that vulgar implement, and approach like a gentleman: but the Hollander, who neither underſtood the propoſal, nor would have complied with his demand had he been made acquainted with his meaning, ruſhed forward like a deſperado, before his adverſary could put himſelf on his guard; and if the young gentleman had not been endued with ſurprizing agility, his noſe would have fallen a ſacrifice to the fury of the aſſailant. Finding himſelf in ſuch imminent jeopardy, he leaped to one ſide, and the Dutchman paſſing him, in the force of his career, he with one nimble kick made ſuch application to his enemy's heels, that he flew like light-

ning

ning into the canal, where he had almoſt periſhed by pitching upon one of the poſts with which it was faced.

Peregrine having performed this exploit, did not ſtay for the captain's coming on ſhore, but retreated with all diſpatch, by the advice of his conductor; and next day embarked, with his companions, in the ſkuyt, for Haarlem, where they dined, and in the evening arrived at the ancient city of Leyden, where they met with ſome Engliſh ſtudents, who treated them with great hoſpitality. Not but that the harmony of the converſation was that ſame night interrupted by a diſpute that aroſe between one of thoſe young gentleman and the phyſician, about the cold and hot methods of preſcription in the gout and rheumatiſm; and proceeded to ſuch a degree of mutual reviling, that Pickle, aſhamed and incenſed at his fellow-traveller's want of urbanity, eſpouſed the other's cauſe, and openly rebuked him for his unmannerly petulance, which (he ſaid) rendered him unfit for the purpoſes, and unworthy of the benefit of ſociety. This unexpected declaration overwhelmed the doctor with amazement and confuſion; he was inſtantaneouſly deprived of his ſpeech, and during the remaining part of the *partie*, ſat in ſilent mortification. In all probability he deliberated with himſelf, whether or not he ſhould expoſtulate with the young gentleman on the freedom he had taken with his character in a company of ſtrangers; but as he knew he had not a Pallet to deal with, he very prudently ſuppreſſed that ſuggeſtion, and in ſecret chewed the cud of reſentment.

After they had viſited the phyſick garden, the univerſity, the anatomical hall, and every other thing that was recommended to their view, they returned to Rotterdam, and held a conſultation upon the method of tranſporting themſelves to England. The doctor, whoſe grudge againſt Peregrine was rather inflamed than allayed by our hero's indifference and neglect, had tampered with the ſimplicity of the painter, who was proud of his advances towards a perfect reconciliation; and now took the opportunity of parting with our adventurer, by declaring that he and his friend Mr. Pallet were reſolved to take their paſſage in a trading ſloop, after he had heard Peregrine object againſt that tedious, diſagreeable, and uncertain method of conveyance. Pickle immediately ſaw his intention; and, without uſing the leaſt argument to diſſuade them from their deſign, or expreſſing the ſmalleſt degree of concern at their ſeparation, very coolly wiſhed them a proſperous voyage, and ordered his baggage to be ſent to Helvoetſluys. There he himſelf, and his retinue, went on board of the packet next day, and, by the favour of a fair wind, in eighteen hours arrived at Harwich.

CHAP. XXXII.

PEREGRINE DELIVERS HIS LETTERS OF RECOMMENDATION AT LONDON, AND RETURNS TO THE GARRISON, TO THE UNSPEAKABLE JOY OF THE COMMODORE AND HIS WHOLE FAMILY.

NOW that our hero found himſelf on Engliſh ground, his heart dilated with the proud recollection of his own improvement ſince he left his native ſoil. He began to recognize the intereſting ideas of his tender years; he enjoyed, by anticipation, the pleaſure of ſeeing his friends in the garriſon, after an abſence of eighteen months; and the image of his charming Emily, which other leſs worthy conſiderations had depreſſed, reſumed the full poſſeſſion of his breaſt. He remembered, with ſhame, that he had neglected the correſpondence with her brother, which he himſelf had ſolicited, and in conſequence of which he had received a letter from that young gentleman while he lived at Paris. In ſpite of theſe conſcientious reflections, he was too ſelf-ſufficient to think he ſhould find any difficulty in obtaining forgiveneſs for ſuch ſins of omiſſion; and began to imagine, that his paſſion would be prejudicial to the dignity of his ſituation, if it could not be gratified upon terms which formerly his imagination durſt not conceive.

Sorry I am, that the taſk I have undertaken, lays me under the neceſſity of divulging this degeneracy in the ſentiments of our imperious youth, who was now in the heyday of his blood, flushed with the conſciouſneſs of his own qualifications, vain of his fortune, and elated on the wings of imaginary expectation. Though he was deeply enamoured of Miſs Gauntlet, he was far from propoſing

posing her heart as the ultimate aim of his gallantry, which (he did not doubt) would triumph over the most illustrious females of the land, and at once regale his appetite and ambition.

Meanwhile, being willing to make his appearance at the garrison equally surprizing and agreeable, he cautioned Mr. Jolter against writing to the commodore, who had not heard of them since their departure from Paris, and hired a post-chaise and horses for London. The governor going out to give orders about the carriage, inadvertently left a paper book open upon the table; and his pupil casting his eyes upon the page, chanced to read these words. 'Sept. 15. Arrived in safety, by the blessing of God, 'in this unhappy kingdom of England. 'And thus concludes the journal of my 'last peregrination.' Peregrine's curiosity being inflamed by this extraordinary conclusion, he turned to the beginning, and perused several sheets of a diary, such as is commonly kept by that class of people known by the denomination of travelling governors, for the satisfaction of themselves and the parents or guardians of their pupils, and for the edification and entertainment of their friends.

That the reader may have a clear idea of Mr. Jolter's performance, we shall transcribe the transactions of one day, as he had recorded them; and that abstract will be a sufficient specimen of the whole plan and execution of the work.

'May 3. At eight o'clock set out from 'Boulogne in a post-chaise: the morning hazy and cold. Fortified my stomach with a cordial. Recommended 'ditto to Mr. P. as an antidote against 'the fog. Mem. He refused it. The hither horse greased in the off-pastern 'of the hind-leg. Arrive at Samers. 'Mem. This last was a post and a half, 'i. e. three leagues, or nine English 'miles. The day clears up. A fine 'champaign country, well stored with 'corn. The postilion says his prayers 'in passing by a wooden crucifix upon 'the road. Mem. The horses staled 'in a small brook that runs in a bottom betwixt two hills. Arrive at 'Cormont. A common post. A dispute with my pupil, who is obstinate, 'and swayed by an unlucky prejudice. 'Proceed to Montreuil, where we dine 'on choice pigeons. A very moderate 'charge. No chamber-pot in the room, 'owing to the negligence of the maid. 'This is an ordinary post. Set out 'again for Nampont. Troubled with 'flatulencies and indigestion. Mr. P. 'is sullen, and seems to mistake an 'eructation for the breaking of wind 'backwards. From Nampont depart for 'Bernay, at which place we arrive in the 'evening, and propose to stay all night. 'N. B. The two last are double posts, 'and our cattle very willing, though 'not strong. Sup on a delicate ragout 'and excellent partridges, in company 'with Mr. H. and his spouse. Mem. 'the said H. trod upon my corn by 'mistake. Discharge the bill, which 'is not very reasonable. Dispute with 'Mr. P. about giving money to the 'servant: he insists upon my giving a 'twenty-four sol piece; which is too 'much by two thirds, in all conscience. 'N. B. She was a pert baggage, and 'did not deserve a liard.'

Our hero was so much disobliged with certain circumstances of this amusing and instructing journal, that, by way of punishing the author, he interlined these words betwixt two paragraphs, in a manner that exactly resembled the tutor's hand-writing; 'Mem. 'Had the pleasure of drinking myself 'into a sweet intoxication, by toasting 'our lawful king, and his royal family, 'among some worthy English fathers 'of the society of Jesus.'

Having taken this revenge, he set out for London, where he waited upon those noblemen to whom he had letters of recommendation from Paris; and was not only graciously received, but even loaded with caresses and proffers of service, because they understood he was a young gentleman of fortune, who, far from standing in need of their countenance or assistance, would make an useful and creditable addition to the number of their adherents. He had the honour of dining at their tables, in consequence of pressing invitations, and of spending several evenings with the ladies, to whom he was particularly agreeable, on account of his person, address, and bleeding freely at play.

Being thus initiated in the beau monde, he thought it was high time to pay his respects to his generous benefactor the commodore; and accordingly departed one morning, with his train, for the garrison, at which he arrived in safety the same night. When he entered the

gate

gate, which was opened by a new ſervant that did not know him, he found his old friend Hatchway ſtalking in the yard, with a night-cap on his head, and a pipe in his mouth; and advancing to him, took him by the hand before he had any intimation of his approach. The lieutenant, thus ſaluted by a ſtranger, ſtared at him in ſilent aſtoniſhment, till he recollected his features, which were no ſooner known, than daſhing the pipe upon the pavement, he exclaimed, 'Smite my croſs-'trees! th'art welcome to port!' and hugged him in his arms with great affection. He then, by a cordial ſqueeze, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing his old ſhip-mate Tom, who applying his whiſtle to his mouth, the whole caſtle echoed with his performance.

The ſervants hearing the well-known ſound, poured out in a tumult of joy; and underſtanding that their young maſter was returned, raiſed ſuch a peal of acclamation, as aſtoniſhed the commodore and his lady, and inſpired Julia with ſuch an intereſting preſage, that her heart began to throb with violence. Running out in the hurry and perturbation of her hope, ſhe was ſo much overwhelmed at ſight of her brother, that ſhe actually fainted in his arms. But from this trance ſhe ſoon awaked; and Peregrine having teſtified his pleaſure and affection, went up ſtairs, and preſented himſelf before his godfather and aunt. Mrs. Trunnion roſe and received him with a gracious embrace, bleſſing God for his happy return from a land of impiety and vice, in which ſhe hoped his morals had not been corrupted, nor his principles of religion altered or impaired. The old gentleman being confined to his chair, was ſtruck dumb with pleaſure at his appearance; and having made divers ineffectual efforts to get up, at length diſcharged a volley of curſes againſt his own limbs, and held out his hand to his godſon, who kiſſed it with great reſpect.

After he had finiſhed his apoſtrophe to the gout, which was the daily and hourly ſubject of his execrations, 'Well, 'my lad,' ſaid he, 'I care not how ſoon 'I go to bottom, now I behold thee 'ſafe in harbour again: and yet, I tell 'a damn'd lye; I would I could keep 'afloat, until I ſhould ſee a luſty boy 'of thy begetting. Odds my timbers! 'I love thee ſo well, that I believe thou 'art the ſpawn of my own body; though 'I can give no account of thy being 'put upon the ſtocks.' Then turning his eye upon Pipes, who by this time had penetrated into his apartment, and addreſſed him with the uſual ſalutation of, 'What cheer?'—'Ahey!' cried he, 'are you there, you herring-faced ſon 'of a ſea-calf? What a ſlippery trick 'you played your old commander! But 'come, you dog, there's my fiſt; I for-'give you, for the love you bear to my 'godſon. Go man your tackle, and 'hoiſt a caſk of ſtrong beer into the 'yard, knock out the bung, and put 'a pump in it, for the uſe of all my 'ſervants and neighbours: and, d'ye 'hear! let the patereroes be fired, and 'the garriſon illuminated, as rejoicings 'for the ſafe arrival of your maſter. 'By the Lord! if I had the uſe of theſe 'damn'd ſhambling ſhanks, I would 'dance a hornpipe with the beſt of you.'

The next object of his attention was Mr. Jolter, who was honoured with particular marks of diſtinction, and the repeated promiſe of enjoying the living in his gift, as an acknowledgment of the care and diſcretion with which he had ſuperintended the education and morals of our hero. The governor was ſo affected by the generoſity of his patron, that the tears ran down his cheeks, while he expreſſed his gratitude, and the infinite ſatisfaction he felt, in contemplating the accompliſhments of his pupil.

Meanwhile, Pipes did not neglect the orders he had received: the beer was produced, the gates were thrown open for the admiſſion of all comers, the whole houſe was lighted up, and the patereroes were diſcharged in repeated volleys. Such phenomena could not fail to attract the notice of the neighbourhood. The club at Tunley's were aſtoniſhed at the report of the guns, which produced various conjectures among the members of that ſagacious ſociety. The landlord obſerved, that in all likelihood the commodore was viſited by hobgoblins, and ordered the guns to be fired in token of diſtreſs, as he had acted twenty years before, when he was annoyed by the ſame grievance. The exciſeman, with a waggiſh ſneer, expreſſed his apprehenſion of Trunnion's death, in conſequence of which, the patereroes might be diſcharged with an equivocal

intent, either as signals of his lady's sorrow or rejoicing. The attorney signified a suspicion of Hatchway's being married to Miss Pickle, and that the firings and illuminations were in honour of the nuptials: upon which Gamaliel discovered some faint signs of emotion, and taking the pipe from his mouth, gave it as his opinion, that his sister was brought to bed.

While they were thus bewildered in the maze of their own imaginations, a company of countrymen, who sat drinking in the kitchen, and whose legs were more ready than their invention, sallied out to know the meaning of these exhibitions. Understanding that there was a butt of strong beer abroach in the yard, to which they were invited by the servants, saved themselves the trouble and expence of returning to spend the evening at the publick-house, and listed themselves under the banner of Tom Pipes, who presided as director of this festival.

The news of Peregrine's return being communicated to the parish, the parson, and three or four neighbouring gentlemen, who were well-wishers to our hero, immediately repaired to the garrison, in order to pay their compliments on this happy event, and were detained to supper. An elegant entertainment was prepared by the direction of Miss Julia, who was an excellent housewife; and the commodore was so invigorated with joy, that he seemed to have renewed his age.

Among those who honoured the occasion with his presence was Mr. Clover, the young gentleman that made his addresses to Peregrine's sister. His heart was so big with his passion, that while the rest of the company were ingrossed by their cups, he seized an opportunity of our hero's being detached from the conversation, and in the impatience of his love, conjured him to consent to his happiness; protesting, that he would comply with any terms of settlement that a man of his fortune could embrace, in favour of a young lady who was absolute mistress of his affection.

Our youth thanked him very politely for his favourable sentiments and honourable intention towards his sister, and told him, that at present he saw no reason to obstruct his desire; that he would consult Julia's own inclinations, and confer with him about the means of gratifying his wish: but in the mean time begged to be excused from discussing any point of such importance to them both. Reminding him of the jovial purpose on which they were happily met, he promoted such a quick circulation of the bottle, that their mirth grew noisy and obstreperous; they broke forth into repeated peals of laughter, without any previous incitement, except that of claret. These explosions were succeeded by bacchanalian songs, in which the old gentleman himself attempted to bear a share; the sedate governor snapped time with his fingers, and the parish priest assisted in the chorus with a most expressive nakedness of countenance. Before midnight, they were almost all pinned to their chairs, as if they had been fixed by the power of inchantment; and what rendered the confinement still more unfortunate, every servant in the house was in the same situation; so that they were fain to take their repose as they sat, and nodded at each other like a congregation of anabaptists.

Next day, Peregrine communed with his sister on the subject of her match with Mr. Clover, who (she told him) had offered to settle a jointure of four hundred pounds, and take her to wife, without any expectation of a dowry. She, moreover, gave him to understand, that in his absence she had received several messages from her mother, commanding her to return to her father's house; but that she had refused to obey these orders, by the advice and injunction of her aunt and the commodore, which were indeed seconded by her own inclination; because she had all the reason in the world to believe, that her mother only wanted an opportunity of treating her with severity and rancour. The resentment of that lady had been carried to such indecent lengths, that seeing her daughter at church one day, she rose up, before the parson entered, and reviled her with great bitterness, in the face of the whole congregation.

CHAP. XXXIII.

SEES HIS SISTER HAPPILY MARRIED. VISITS EMILIA, WHO RECEIVES

GIVES HIM ACCORDING TO HIS DESERTS.

HER brother being of opinion, that Mr. Clover's propoſal was not to be neglected, eſpecially as Julia's heart was engaged in his favour, communicated the affair to his uncle, who, with the approbation of Mrs. Trunnion, declared himſelf well ſatisfied with the young man's addreſſes, and deſired that they might be buckled with all expedition, without the knowledge or concurrence of her parents, to whom (on account of their unnatural barbarity) ſhe was not bound to pay the leaſt regard. Though our adventurer entertained the ſame ſentiments of the matter, and the lover dreading ſome obſtruction, earneſtly begged the immediate condeſcenſion of his miſtreſs, ſhe could not be prevailed upon to take ſuch a material ſtep, without having firſt ſolicited the permiſſion of her father, reſolved, nevertheleſs, to comply with the dictates of her own heart, ſhould his objections be frivolous or unjuſt.

Urged by this determination, her admirer waited upon Mr. Gamaliel at the publick-houſe, and with the appearance of great deference and reſpect, made him acquainted with his affection for his daughter, communicated the particulars of his fortune, with the terms of ſettlement he was ready to make; and in concluſion told him, that he would marry her without a portion. This laſt offer ſeemed to have ſome weight with the father, who received it with civility, and promiſed in a day or two, to favour him with a final anſwer to his demand. He, accordingly, that ſame evening conſulted his wife; who being exaſperated at the proſpect of her daughter's independency, argued with the moſt virulent expoſtulation againſt the match, as an impudent ſcheme of her own planning, with a view of inſulting her parents, towards whom ſhe had already been guilty of the moſt vicious diſobedience. In ſhort, ſhe uſed ſuch remonſtrances, as not only averted this weak huſband's inclination from the propoſal which he had reliſhed before, but even inſtigated him to apply for a warrant to apprehend his daughter, on the ſuppoſition that ſhe was about to beſtow herſelf in marriage without his privity or conſent.

The juſtice of peace to whom this application was made, though he could not refuſe the order, yet, being no ſtranger to the malevolence of the mother, which, together with Gamaliel's ſimplicity, was notorious in the county, he ſent an intimation of what had happened to the garriſon; upon which a couple of centinels were placed on the gate, and at the preſſing ſolicitation of the lover, as well as the deſire of the commodore, her brother and aunt, Julia was wedded without farther delay; the ceremony being performed by Mr. Jolter, becauſe the pariſh-prieſt prudently declined any occaſion of giving offence, and the curate was too much in the intereſt of their enemies to be employed in that office.

This domeſtick concern being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of our hero, he eſcorted her next day to the houſe of her huſband, who immediately wrote a letter to her father, declaring his reaſons for having thus ſuperceded his authority; and Mrs. Pickle's mortification was unſpeakable.

That the new-married couple might be guarded againſt all inſult, our young gentleman and his friend Hatchway, with their adherents, lodged in Mr. Clover's houſe for ſome weeks; during which they viſited their acquaintance in the neighbourhood, according to cuſtom. When the tranquillity of their family was perfectly eſtabliſhed, and the contract of marriage executed in the preſence of the old commodore and his lady, who gave her niece five hundred pounds to purchaſe jewels and cloaths, Mr. Peregrine could no longer reſtrain his impatience to ſee his dear Emily; and told his uncle, that next day he propoſed to ride acroſs the country, in order to viſit his friend Gauntlet, whom he had not heard of a long time.

The old gentleman, looking ſtedfaſtly in his face, 'Ah! damn your cunning!' ſaid he, 'I find the anchor 'holds faſt: I did ſuppoſe as how you 'would have ſlipt your cable, and 'changed your birth; but, I ſee, when 'a young fellow is once brought up by 'a pretty wench, he may man his cap-'ſtans and viol block, if he wool; but 'he'll as ſoon heave up the Pike of 'Teneriffe, as bring his anchor aweigh! 'Odds heartlikins! had I known the 'young woman was Ned Gauntlet's 'daughter, I ſhouldn't have thrown 'out ſignal for leaving off chace.'

Our adventurer was not a little surprized to hear the commodore talk in this style; and immediately conjectured, that his friend Godfrey had informed him of the whole affair. Instead of listening to this approbation of his flame, with those transports of joy which he would have felt, had he retained his former sentiments, he was chagrined at Trunnion's declaration, and offended at the presumption of the young soldier, in presuming to disclose the secret with which he had intrusted him. Reddening with these reflections, he assured the commodore, that he never had serious thoughts of matrimony: so that if any person had told him he was under any engagement of that kind, he had abused his ear; for he protested, that he would never contract such attachment, without his knowledge and express permission.

Trunnion commended him for his prudent resolution, and observed, that though no person mentioned to him what promises had passed betwixt him and his sweetheart, it was very plain that he had made love to her; and therefore, it was to be supposed, that his intentions were honourable: for he could not believe he was such a rogue in his heart, as to endeavour to debauch the daughter of a brave officer, who had served his country with credit and reputation. Notwithstanding this remonstrance, which Pickle imputed to the commodore's ignorance of the world, he set out for the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the unjustifiable sentiments of a man of pleasure, who sacrifices every consideration to the desire of his ruling appetite; and as Winchester lay in his way, resolved to visit some of his friends who lived in that place. It was in the house of one of these, that he was informed of Emilia's being then in town with her mother; upon which he excused himself from staying to drink tea, and immediately repaired to their lodgings, according to the directions he had received.

When he arrived at the door, instead of undergoing that perturbation of spirits, which a lover in his interesting situation might be supposed to feel, he suffered no emotion but that of vanity and pride, favoured with an opportunity of self-gratification, and entered his Emilia's apartment with the air of a conceited petit-maitre, rather than that of the respectful admirer, when he visits the object of his passion after an absence of seventeen months.

The young lady having been very much disobliged at his mortifying neglect of her brother's letter, had summoned all her own pride and resolution to her aid; and by means of a happy disposition, so far overcame her chagrin at his indifference, that she was able to behave in his presence with apparent tranquillity and ease. She was even pleased to find, that he had by accident chosen a time for his visit, when she was surrounded by two or three young gentlemen, who professed themselves her admirers. Our gallant was no sooner announced, than she collected all her coquetry, put on the gayest air she could assume, and contrived to giggle just as he appeared at the room door. The compliments of salutation being performed, she welcomed him to England in a careless manner; asked the news of Paris; and, before he could make any reply, desired one of the other gentlemen to proceed with the sequel of that comical adventure, in the relation of which he had been interrupted.

Peregrine smiled within himself at this behaviour, which (without all doubt) he believed she had affected to punish him for his unkind silence while he was abroad; being fully persuaded that her heart was absolutely at his devotion. On this supposition, he practised his Parisian improvements on the art of conversation, and uttered a thousand prettinesses in the way of compliment, with such incredible rotation of tongue, that his rivals were struck dumb with astonishment; and Emilia fretted out of all temper, at seeing herself deprived of the prerogative of the sex. He persisted, however, in this surprizing loquacity, until the rest of the company thought proper to withdraw, and then contracted his discourse into the focus of love, which now put on a very different appearance from that which it had formerly worn. Instead of that awful veneration which her presence used to inspire, that chastity of sentiment and delicacy of expression, he now gazed upon her with the eyes of a libertine, he glowed with the impatience of desire, talked in a strain that barely kept within the bounds of decency, and attempted to

snatch

ſnatch ſuch favours as ſhe, in the tenderneſs of mutual acknowledgment, had once vouchſafed to beſtow.

Grieved and offended as ſhe was, at this palpable alteration in his carriage, ſhe diſdained to remind him of his former deportment, and with diſſembled good-humour, rallied him on the progreſs he had made in gallantry and addreſs: but far from ſubmitting to the liberties he would have taken, ſhe kept her perſon ſacred from his touch, and would not even ſuffer him to raviſh a kiſs of her fair hand: ſo that he reaped no other advantage from the exerciſe of his talents, during this interview, which laſted a whole hour, than that of knowing he had over-rated his own importance, and that Emily's heart was not a garriſon likely to ſurrender at diſcretion.

At length his addreſſes were interrupted by the arrival of the mother, who had gone abroad to viſit by herſelf; and the converſation becoming more general, he underſtood that Godfrey was at London, ſoliciting for a lieutenancy that had fallen vacant in the regiment to which he belonged; and that Miſs Sophy was at home with her father.

Though our adventurer had not met with all the ſucceſs he expected in his firſt viſit, he did not deſpair of reducing the fortreſs, believing that in time there would be a mutiny in his favour; and accordingly carried on the ſiege for ſeveral days, without profiting by his perſeverance: till at length, having attended the ladies to their own houſe in the country, he began to look upon this adventure as time miſpent, and reſolved to diſcontinue his attack, in hopes of meeting with a more favourable occaſion; being, in the mean time, ambitious of diſplaying, in an higher ſphere, thoſe qualifications which his vanity told him were at preſent miſapplied.

CHAP. XXXIV.

HE ATTENDS HIS UNCLE WITH GREAT AFFECTION, DURING A FIT OF ILLNESS. SETS OUT AGAIN FOR LONDON. MEETS WITH HIS FRIEND GODFREY, WHO IS PREVAILED UPON TO ACCOMPANY HIM TO BATH; ON THE ROAD TO WHICH PLACE THEY CHANCE TO DINE WITH A PERSON, WHO ENTERTAINS HIM WITH A CURIOUS ACCOUNT OF A CERTAIN COMPANY OF ADVENTURERS.

THUS determined, he took leave of Emilia and her mother, on pretence of going to London upon ſome ourgent buſineſs, and returned to the garriſon, leaving the good old lady very much concerned, and the daughter incenſed at his behaviour, which was the more unexpected, becauſe Godfrey had told them that the commodore approved of his nephew's paſſion.

Our adventurer found his uncle ſo ill of the gout, which, for the firſt time, had taken poſſeſſion of his ſtomach, that his life was in imminent danger, and the whole family in diſorder: he therefore took the reins of government in his own hands, ſent for all the phyſicians in the neighbourhood, and attended him in perſon with the moſt affectionate care, during the whole fit, which laſted a fortnight, and then retired before the ſtrength of his conſtitution.

When the old gentleman recovered his health, he was ſo penetrated with Peregrine's behaviour, that he actually would have made over to him his whole fortune, and depended upon him for his own ſubſiſtence, had not our youth oppoſed the execution of the deed with all his influence and might, and even perſuaded him to make a will, in which his friend Hatchway, and all his other adherents, were liberally remembered, and his aunt provided for on her own terms. This material point being ſettled, he, with his uncle's permiſſion, departed for London, after having ſeen the family affairs eſtabliſhed under the direction and adminiſtration of Mr. Jolter and the lieutenant: for, by this time, Mrs. Trunnion was wholly occupied with her ſpiritual concerns.

On his firſt arrival at London, he ſent a card to the lodgings of Gauntlet, in conſequence of a direction from his mother; and that young gentleman waited on him next morning, though not with that alacrity of countenance and warmth of friendſhip, which might have been expected from the intimacy of their former connection. Nor was Peregrine himſelf actuated by the ſame unreſerved affection for the ſoldier, which he had formerly entertained. Grodfrey, over and above the offence he had taken at Pickle's omiſſion in point of correſponding

ſponding with him, had been informed, by a letter from his mother, of the youth's cavalier behaviour to Emilia, during his laſt reſidence at Wincheſter; and our young gentlemen (as we have already obſerved) was diſguſted at the ſuppoſed diſcovery which the ſoldier had made, in his abſence, to the commodore. They perceived their mutual umbrage at meeting, and received each other with that civility of reſerve, which commonly happens between two perſons, when their friendſhip is in the wane.

Gauntlet at once divined the cauſe of the other's diſpleaſure; and in order to vindicate his own character, after the firſt compliments were paſſed, took the opportunity of enquiring after the health of the commodore, to tell Peregrine, that while he tarried at the garriſon, in his return from Dover, the ſubject of the converſation, one night, happening to turn on our hero's paſſion, the old gentleman had expreſſed his concern about that affair; and, among other obſervations, ſaid, he ſuppoſed the object of his love was ſome paltry huſſy, whom he had picked up when he was a boy at ſchool. Upon which, Mr. Hatchway aſſured him, that ſhe was a young woman of as good a family as any in the county; and after having prepoſſeſſed him in her favour, ventured (out of the zeal of his friendſhip) to tell who ſhe was: wherefore the diſcovery was not to be imputed to any other cauſe; and he hoped Mr. Pickle would acquit him of all ſhare in the tranſaction.

Peregrine was very well pleaſed to be thus undeceived; his countenance immediately cleared up; the formality of his behaviour relaxed into his uſual familiarity; he aſked pardon for his unmannerly neglect of Godfrey's letter, which, he proteſted, was not owing to any diſregard, or abatement of friendſhip, but to a hurry of youthful engagements, in conſequence of which he had procraſtinated his anſwer from time to time, until he was ready to return in perſon.

The young ſoldier was contented with this apology; and as Pickle's intention with reſpect to his ſiſter was ſtill dubious and undeclared, he did not think it was incumbent upon him, as yet, to expreſs any reſentment on that ſcore; but was wiſe enough to foreſee, that the renewal of his intimacy with our young gentleman, might be the means of reviving that flame which had been diſſipated by a variety of new ideas. With theſe ſentiments he laid aſide all reſerve, and their communication immediately reſumed it's former channel. Peregrine made him acquainted with all the adventures in which he had been engaged ſince their parting: and he, with the ſame confidence, related the remarkable incidents of his own fate; among other things, giving him to underſtand, that upon obtaining a commiſſion in the army, the father of his dear Sophy, without once enquiring about the occaſion of his promotion, had not only favoured him with his countenance in a much greater degree than heretofore, but alſo contributed his intereſt, and even promiſed the aſſiſtance of his purſe, in procuring for him a lieutenancy, which he was then ſoliciting with all his power; whereas, if he had not been enabled, by a moſt accidental piece of good fortune, to lift himſelf into the ſphere of an officer, he had all the reaſon in the world to believe that this gentleman, and all the reſt of his wealthy relations, would have ſuffered him to languiſh in obſcurity and diſtreſs; and, by turning his misfortune into reproach, made it a plea for their own want of generoſity and friendſhip.

Peregrine underſtanding the ſituation of his friend's affairs, would have accommodated him upon the inſtant with a ſum to accelerate the paſſage of his commiſſion through the offices; but, being too well acquainted with his ſcrupulous diſpoſition to manifeſt his benevolence in that manner, he found means to introduce himſelf to one of the gentlemen of the war-office, who was ſo well ſatisfied with the arguments he uſed in behalf of his friend, that Godfrey's buſineſs was tranſacted in a very few days, though he himſelf knew nothing of his intereſt being thus reinforced.

By this time, the ſeaſon at Bath was begun; and our hero, panting with the deſire of diſtinguiſhing himſelf at that reſort of the faſhionable world, communicated his deſign of going thither to his friend Godfrey, whom he importuned to accompany him in the excurſion: and leave of abſence from his regiment being obtained, by the influence of Peregrine's new quality-friends, the two companions departed from London in a poſt-chaiſe, attended, as uſual, by the valet

de

de chambre and Pipes, who were become almoſt as neceſſary to our adventurer as any two of his own organs.

At the inn, when they alighted for dinner, Godfrey perceived a perſon walking by himſelf in the yard, with a very penſive air; and upon obſerving him more narrowly, recognized him to be a profeſſed gameſter, whom he had formerly known at Tunbridge. On the ſtrength of this acquaintance, he accoſted the peripatetick, who knew him immediately; and in the fullneſs of his grief and vexation, told him, that he was now on his return from Bath, where he had been ſtripped by a company of ſharpers, who reſented that he ſhould preſume to trade upon his own bottom.

Peregrine, who was extremely curious in his enquiries, imagining that he might learn ſome uſeful and entertaining anecdotes from this artiſt, invited him to dinner, and was accordingly fully informed of all the political ſyſtems at the Bath. He underſtood, that there was at London one great company of adventurers, who employed agents in all the different branches of impoſition throughout the whole kingdom of England, allowing theſe miniſters a certain proportion of the profits accruing from their induſtry and ſkill, and reſerving the greateſt ſhare for the benefit of the common ſtock, which was chargeable with the expence of fitting out individuals in their various purſuits, as well as with the loſs ſuſtained in the courſe of their adventures. Some, whoſe perſons and qualifications are by the company judged adequate to the taſk, exert their talents in making love to ladies of fortune, being accommodated with money and accoutrements for that purpoſe, after having given their bonds, payable to one or other of the directors, on the day of marriage, for certain ſums, proportioned to the dowries they are to receive. Others, verſed in the doctrine of chances, and certain ſecret expedients, frequent all thoſe places where games of hazard are allowed; and ſuch as are maſters in the arts of billiards, tennis, and bowls, are continually lying in wait, in all the ſcenes of theſe diverſions, for the ignorant and unwary. A fourth claſs attend horſe-races, being ſkilled in thoſe myſterious practices, by which the knowing ones are taken in. Nor is this community unfurniſhed with thoſe who lay wanton wives and old rich widows under contribution, and extort money, by proſtituting themſelves to the embraces of their own ſex, and then threatening their admirers with proſecution. But their moſt important returns are made by that body of their undertakers who exerciſe their underſtandings in the innumerable ſtratagems of the card-table, at which no ſharper can be too infamous to be received, and even careſſed, by perſons of the higheſt rank and diſtinction. Among other articles of intelligence, our young gentleman learned, that thoſe agents, by whom their gueſt was broke and expelled from Bath, had conſtituted a bank againſt all ſporters, and monopolized the advantage in all ſorts of play. He then told Gauntlet, that if he would put himſelf under his direction, he would return with them, and lay ſuch a ſcheme as would infallibly ruin the whole ſociety at billiards, as he knew that Godfrey excelled them all in his knowledge of that game.

The ſoldier excuſed himſelf from engaging in any party of that kind; and after dinner the travellers parted; but, as the converſation between the two friends turned upon the information they had received, Peregrine projected a plan for puniſhing thoſe villainous peſts of ſociety, who prey upon their fellow-creatures; and it was put in execution by Gauntlet in this manner.

CHAP. XXXV.

GODFREY EXECUTES A SCHEME AT BATH, BY WHICH A WHOLE COMPANY OF SHARPERS IS RUINED.

ON the evening after their arrival at Bath, Godfrey, who had kept himſelf up all day for that purpoſe, went in boots to the billiard-table; and two gentlemen being at play, began to bet with ſo little appearance of judgment, that one of the adventurers then preſent was inflamed with the deſire of profiting by his inexperience; and when the table was vacant, invited him to take a game for amuſement. The ſoldier, aſſuming the air of a ſelf-conceited dupe, anſwered, that he did not chuſe to throw away his time for nothing, but, if he pleaſed, would piddle for a crown a game. This declaration was very agreeable to the other,

other, who wanted to be farther confirmed in the opinion he had conceived of the ſtranger, before he would play for any thing of conſequence. The *partie* being accepted, Gauntlet put off his coat, and beginning with ſeeming eagerneſs, won the firſt game, becauſe his antagoniſt kept up his play with a view of encouraging him to wager a greater ſum. The ſoldier purpoſely bit at the hook, the ſtakes were doubled, and he was again victorious, by the permiſſion of his competitor. He now began to yawn; and obſerving, that it was not worth his while to proceed in ſuch a childiſh manner, the other ſwore, in an affected paſſion, that he would play with him for twenty guineas. The propoſal being embraced, (through the connivance of Godfrey) the money was won by the ſharper, who exerted his dexterity to the utmoſt, fearing that otherwiſe his adverſary would decline continuing the game.

Godfrey thus conquered, pretended to loſe his temper, curſed his own ill luck, ſwore that the table had a caſt, and that the balls did not run true, changed his maſt, and with great warmth challenged his enemy to double the ſum. The gameſter, with feigned reluctance, complied with his deſire; and having got the firſt two hazards, offered to lay one hundred guineas to fifty on the game. The odds were taken; and Godfrey having allowed himſelf to be overcome, began to rage with great violence, broke the maſt to pieces, threw the balls out at the window, and, in the fury of his indignation, defied his antagoniſt to meet him to-morrow, when he ſhould be refreſhed from the fatigue of travelling. This was a very welcome invitation to the gameſter, who imagining that the ſoldier would turn out a moſt beneficial prize, aſſured him, that he would not fail to be there next forenoon, in order to give him his revenge.

Gauntlet went home to his lodgings, fully certified of his own ſuperiority; and took his meaſures with Peregrine, touching the proſecution of their ſcheme; while his opponent made a report of his ſucceſs to the brethren of the gang, who reſolved to be preſent at the deciſion of the match, with the view of taking advantage of the ſtranger's paſſionate diſpoſition.

Affairs being thus concerted on both ſides, the players met, according to appointment, and the room was immediately filled with ſpectators, who either came thither by accident, curioſity, or deſign. The match was fixed for one hundred pounds a game; the principals choſe their inſtruments, and laid aſide their coats, and one of the knights of the order proffered to lay another hundred on the head of his aſſociate. Godfrey took him upon the inſtant. A ſecond worthy of the ſame claſs, ſeeing him ſo eager, challenged him to treble the ſum; and his propoſal met with the ſame reception, to the aſtoniſhment of the company, whoſe expectation was raiſed to a very intereſting pitch. The game was begun, and the ſoldier having loſt the firſt hazard, the odds were offered by the confederacy with great vociferation: but nobody would run ſuch a riſk, in favour of a perſon who was utterly unknown. The ſharper having gained the ſecond alſo, the noiſe increaſed to a ſurprizing clamour, not only of the gang, but likewiſe of almoſt all the ſpectators, who deſired to lay two to one againſt the brother of Emilia.

Peregrine, who was preſent, perceiving the cupidity of the aſſociation ſufficiently inflamed, all of a ſudden opened his mouth, and anſwered their bets to the amount of twelve-hundred pounds; which were immediately depoſited on both ſides, in money and notes: ſo that this was, perhaps, the moſt important game that ever was played at billiards. Gauntlet ſeeing the agreement ſettled, ſtruck his antagoniſt's ball into the pocket in a twinkling, though it was in one of thoſe ſituations which are ſuppoſed to be againſt the ſtriker. The betters were a little diſcompoſed at this event, for which, however, they conſoled themſelves, by imputing the ſucceſs to accident; but when at the very next ſtroke he ſprung it over the table, their countenances underwent an inſtantaneous diſtraction of feature, and they waited, in the moſt dreadful ſuſpenſe, for the next hazard, which being likewiſe taken with infinite eaſe by the ſoldier, the blood forſook their cheeks, and the interjection *Zounds!* pronounced with a look of conſternation, and in a tone of deſpair, proceeded from every mouth at the ſame inſtant of time. They were overwhelmed with horror and aſtoniſhment, at ſeeing three hazards taken in as many ſtrokes, from a perſon

of

of their friend's dexterity; and shrewdly suspected, that the whole was a scheme pre-concerted for their destruction; on this supposition, they changed the note, and attempted to hedge for their own indemnification, by proposing to lay the odds in favour of Gauntlet; but so much was the opinion of the company altered by that young gentleman's success, that nobody would venture to espouse the cause of his competitor, who chancing to improve his game by the addition of another lucky hit, diminished the concern, and revived the hopes of his adherents. But this gleam of fortune did not long continue: Godfrey collected his whole art and capacity, and augmenting his score to number ten, indulged himself with a view of the whole fraternity. The visages of these professors had adopted different shades of complexion at every hazard he had taken; from their natural colour they had shifted into a sallow hue; from thence into pale; from pale into yellow, which degenerated into a mahogany tint; and now they saw seventeen hundred pounds of their stock depending upon a single stroke, they stood like so many swarthy Moors, jaundiced with terror and vexation. The fire which naturally glowed in the cheeks and nose of the player, seemed utterly extinct, and his carbuncles exhibited a livid appearance, as if a gangrene had already made some progress in his face: his hand began to shake, and his whole frame was seized with such trepidation, that he was fain to swallow a bumper of brandy, in order to re-establish the tranquillity of his nerves. This expedient, however, did not produce the desired effect; for he aimed the ball at the lead with such discomposure, that it struck on the wrong side, and came off at an angle which directed it full in the middle hole. This fatal accident was attended with an universal groan, as if the whole universe had gone to wreck; and notwithstanding that tranquillity, for which adventurers are so remarkable, this loss made such an impression upon them all, that each in particular manifested his chagrin, by the most violent emotions. One turned up his eyes to Heaven, and bit his nether lip; another gnawed his fingers, while he stalked across the room; a third blasphemed with horrid imprecations; and he who played the party sneaked off, grinding his teeth together, with a look that baffles all description, and as he crossed the threshold, exclaiming, 'A damned bite, 'by G—d!'

The victors, after having insulted them, by asking if they were disposed for another chance, carried off their winning with the appearance of great composure, though in their hearts they were transported with unspeakable joy; not so much on account of the booty they had gained, as in consideration of having so effectually destroyed such a nest of pernicious miscreants.

Peregrine believing, that now he had found an opportunity of serving his friend, without giving offence to the delicacy of his honour, told him upon their arrival at their lodgings, that fortune had at length enabled him to become in a manner independant, or at least make himself easy in his circumstances, by purchasing a company with the money he had won. So saying, he put his share of the success in Gauntlet's hand, as a sum that of right belonged to him, and promised to write in his behalf to a nobleman, who had interest enough to promote such a quick rise in the service.

Godfrey thanked him for his obliging intention, but absolutely refused, with great loftiness of demeanour, to appropriate to his own use any part of the money which Pickle had gained, and seemed affronted at the other's entertaining a sentiment so unworthy of his character. He would not even accept, in the way of loan, such an addition to his own stock, as would amount to the price of a company of foot; but expressed great confidence in the future exertion of that talent which had been blessed with such a prosperous beginning. Our hero finding him thus obstinately deaf to the voice of his own interest, resolved to govern himself in his next endeavours of friendship, by his experience of this ticklish punctilio; and, in the mean time, gave a handsome benefaction to the hospital, out of these first-fruits of the success in play, and reserved two hundred pounds for a set of diamond ear-rings and solitaire, which he intended for a present to Miss Emily.

CHAP. XXXVI.

THE TWO FRIENDS ECLIPSE ALL THEIR COMPETITORS IN GALLANTRY,

LANTRY, AND PRACTISE A PLEASANT PROJECT OF REVENGE UPON THE PHYSICIANS OF THE PLACE.

THE fame of their exploits againſt the ſharpers was immediately diffuſed through all companies at the Bath; ſo that when our adventurers appeared in publick, they were pointed out by an hundred extended fingers, and conſidered as conſummate artiſts in all the different ſpecies of fineſſe, which they would not fail to practiſe with the firſt opportunity. Nor was this opinion of their characters any obſtacle to their reception into the faſhionable parties in the place; but, on the contrary, ſuch a recommendation, which (as I have already hinted) never fails to operate for the advantage of the poſſeſſor.

This firſt adventure, therefore, ſerved them as an introduction to the company at Bath, who were not a little ſurprized to find their expectations baffled by the conduct of the two companions; becauſe, far from engaging deeply at play, they rather ſhunned all occaſions of gaming, and directed their attention to gallantry, in which our hero ſhone unrivalled. His external qualifications, excluſive of any other merit, were ſtrong enough to captivate the common run of the female ſex; and theſe, reinforced with a ſprightlineſs of converſation, and a moſt inſinuating addreſs, became irreſiſtible, even by thoſe who were fortified with pride, caution, or indifference. But among all the nymphs of this gay place, he did not meet with one object that diſputed the empire of his heart with Emilia, and therefore he divided his attachment according to the ſuggeſtions of vanity and whim; ſo that, before he had reſided a fortnight at the Bath, he had ſet all the ladies by the ears, and furniſhed all the hundred tongues of ſcandal with full employment. The ſplendor of his appearance excited the enquiries of envy; which, inſtead of diſcovering any circumſtance to his prejudice, was curſed with the information of his being a young gentleman of a good family, and heir to an immenſe fortune.

The countenance of ſome of his quality-friends, who arrived at Bath, confirmed this piece of intelligence: upon which his acquaintance was courted and cultivated with great aſſiduity; and he met with ſuch advances from ſome of the fair-ſex, as rendered him extremely fortunate in his amours. Nor was his friend Godfrey a ſtranger to favours of the ſame kind; his accompliſhments were exactly calculated for the meridian of female taſte; and with certain individuals of that ſex, his muſcular frame, and the robuſt connection of his limbs, were more attractive than the delicate proportions of his companion. He accordingly reigned paramount among thoſe inamoratas who were turned of thirty, without being under the neceſſity of proceeding by tedious addreſſes; and was thought to have co-operated with the waters, in removing the ſterility of certain ladies, who had long undergone the reproach and diſguſt of their huſbands: while Peregrine ſet up his throne among thoſe who laboured under the diſeaſe of celibacy, from the pert miſs of fifteen, who, with a fluttering heart, toſſes her head, bridles up, and giggles involuntarily at the ſight of an handſome young man, to the ſtaid maiden of twenty-eight, who with a demure aſpect moralizes on the vanity of beauty, the folly of youth, and ſimplicity of woman, and expatiates on friendſhip, benevolence, and good ſenſe, in the ſtyle of a Platonick philoſopher.

In ſuch a diverſity of diſpoſitions, his conqueſts were attended with all the heart-burnings, animoſities, and turmoils of jealouſy and ſpite. The younger claſs took all opportunities of mortifying their ſeniors in publick, by treating them with that indignity which (contrary to the general privilege of age) is by the conſent and connivance of mankind, levelled againſt thoſe who have the misfortune to come under the denomination of old maids; and theſe laſt retorted their hoſtilities in the private machinations of ſlander, ſupported by experience and ſubtilty of invention. Not one day paſſed, in which ſome new ſtory did not circulate, to the prejudice of one or other of thoſe rivals.

If our hero, in the long-room, chanced to quit one of the moraliſts, with whom he had been engaged in converſation, he was immediately accoſted by a number of the oppoſite faction; who, with ironical ſmiles, upbraided him with cruelty to the poor lady he had left; exhorted him to have compaſſion on her ſufferings; and turning their eyes towards the object of their interceſſion, broke forth into

into an universal peal of laughter. On the other hand, when Peregrine, in consequence of having danced with one of the minors over-night, visited her in the morning, the Platonists immediately laid hold on the occasion, tasked their imaginations, associated ideas, and with sage insinuations retailed a thousand circumstances of the interview, which never had any foundation in truth. They observed, that if girls are determined to behave with such indiscretion, they must lay their accounts with incurring the censure of the world; that she in question was old enough to act more circumspectly; and wondered that her mother would permit any young fellow to approach the chamber, while her daughter was naked in bed. As for the servants peeping through the key-hole, to be sure it was an unlucky accident; but people ought to be upon their guard against such curiosity, and give their domesticks no cause to employ their penetration. These, and other such reflections, were occasionally whispered as secrets among those who were known to be communicative; so that, in a few hours, it became the general topick of discourse; and as it had been divulged under injunctions of secresy, it was almost impossible to trace the scandal to it's origin; because every person concerned must have promulgated her own breach of trust, in discovering her author of the report.

Peregrine, instead of allaying, rather exasperated this contention, by an artful distribution of his attention among the competitors; well knowing, that should his regard be converged into one point, he would soon forfeit the pleasure he enjoyed in seeing them at variance; for both parties would join against the common enemy, and his favourite would be persecuted by the whole coalition. He perceived, that among the secret agents of scandal, none were so busy as the physicians; a class of animals who live in this place, like so many ravens hovering about a carcase, and even ply for employment, like scullers at Hungerford Stairs. The greatest part of them have correspondents in London, who make it their business to enquire into the history, character, and distemper, of every one that repairs to Bath for the benefit of the waters; and if they cannot procure interest to recommend their medical friends to these patients before they set out, they at least furnish them with a previous account of what they could collect, that their correspondents may use this intelligence for their own advantage. By these means, and the assistance of flattery and assurance, they often insinuate themselves into the acquaintance of strangers, and by consulting their dispositions, become necessary and subservient to their prevailing passions. By their connection with apothecaries and nurses, they are informed of all the private occurrences in each family; and therefore enabled to gratify the rancour of malice, amuse the spleen of peevish indisposition, and entertain the eagerness of impertinent curiosity.

In the course of these occupations, which frequently affected the reputation of our two adventurers, this whole body fell under the displeasure of our hero; who, after divers consultations with his friend, concerted a stratagem, which was practised upon the faculty in this manner. Among those who frequented the pump-room, was an old officer, whose temper, naturally impatient, was, by repeated attacks of the gout, which had almost deprived him of the use of his limbs, sublimated into a remarkable degree of virulence and perverseness: he imputed the inveteracy of his distemper to the mal-practice of a surgeon who had administered to him, while he laboured under the consequences of an unfortunate amour; and this supposition had inspired him with an insurmountable antipathy to all the professors of the medical art, which was more and more confirmed by the information of a friend at London, who had told him, that it was a common practice among the physicians at Bath, to dissuade their patients from drinking the water, that the cure, and of consequence their attendance, might be longer protracted.

Thus prepossessed, he had come to Bath, and, conformable to a few general instructions he had received, used the waters without any farther direction, taking all occasions of manifesting his hatred and contempt of the sons of Æsculapius, both by speech and gesticulations, and even by pursuing a regimen quite contrary to that which he knew they prescribed to others who seemed to be exactly in his condition. But he did not find his account in this method, how successful soever it may have been in other cases. His com-

plaints, inſtead of vaniſhing, were every day more and more enraged; and, at length, he was confined to his bed, where he lay blaſpheming from morn to night, and from night to morn; though ſtill more determined than ever to adhere to his former maxims.

In the midſt of his torture, which was become the common joke of the town, being circulated through the induſtry of the phyſicians, who triumphed in his diſaſter, Peregrine, by means of Mr. Pipes, employed a country fellow, who had come to market, to run with great haſte, early one morning, to the lodgings of all the doctors in town, and deſire them to attend the colonel with all imaginable diſpatch. In conſequence of this ſummons, the whole faculty put themſelves in motion: and three of the foremoſt arriving at the ſame inſtant of time, far from complimenting one another with the door, each ſeparately eſſayed to enter, and the whole triumvirate ſtuck in the paſſage. While they remained thus wedged together, they deſcried two of their brethren poſting towards the ſame goal, with all the ſpeed that God had enabled them to exert; upon which they came to a parley, and agreed to ſtand by one another. This covenant being made, they diſentangled themſelves, and enquiring about the patient, were told by the ſervant, that he had juſt fallen aſleep.

Having received this intelligence, they took poſſeſſion of his anti-chamber, and ſhut the door, while the reſt of the tribe poſted themſelves on the outſide, as they arrived; ſo that the whole paſſage was filled, from the top of the ſtair-caſe to the ſtreet-door; and the people of the houſe, together with the colonel's ſervant, ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment. The three leaders of this learned gang had no ſooner made their lodgment good, then they began to conſult about the patient's malady, which every one of them pretended to have conſidered with great care and aſſiduity. The firſt who gave his opinion ſaid, the diſtemper was an obſtinate arthritis; the ſecond affirmed, that it was no other than a confirmed pox; and the third ſwore it was an inveterate ſcurvy. This diverſity of opinions was ſupported by a variety of quotations from medical authors, ancient as well as modern; but theſe were not of ſufficient authority, or at leaſt not explicit enough to decide the diſpute; for there are many ſchiſms in medicine, as well as in religion, and each ſect can quote the fathers in ſupport of the tenets they profeſs. In ſhort, the contention roſe to ſuch a pitch of clamour, as not only alarmed the brethren on the ſtair, but alſo awaked the patient from the firſt nap he had enjoyed in the ſpace of ten whole days. Had it been ſimply waking, he would have been obliged to them for the noiſe that diſturbed him; for, in that caſe he would have been relieved from the tortures of hell fire, to which in his dream he fancied himſelf expoſed: but this dreadful viſion had been the reſult of that impreſſion which was made upon his brain, by the intolerable anguiſh of his joints; ſo that when he waked, the pain, inſtead of being allayed, was rather aggravated by a great acuteneſs of ſenſation; and the confuſed vociferation in the next room, invading his ears at the ſame time, he began to think his dream was realized; and, in the pangs of deſpair, applied himſelf to a bell that ſtood by his bed-ſide, which he rung with great violence and perſeverance.

This alarm put an immediate ſtop to the diſputation of the three doctors, who, upon this notice of his being awake, ruſhed into his chamber without ceremony; and two of them ſeizing his arms, the third made the like application to one of his temples. Before the patient could recollect himſelf from the amazement which had laid hold on him, at this unexpected irruption, the room was filled by the reſt of the faculty, who followed the ſervant that entered, in obedience to his maſter's call; and the bed was, in a moment, ſurrounded by theſe gaunt miniſters of death. The colonel ſeeing himſelf beſet with ſuch an aſſemblage of ſolemn viſages and figures, which he had always conſidered with the utmoſt deteſtation and abhorrence, was incenſed to a moſt inexpreſſible degree of indignation; and ſo inſpirited by his rage, that though his tongue denied it's office, his other limbs performed their function; he diſengaged himſelf from the triumvirate, who had taken poſſeſſion of his body, ſprung out of bed with incredible agility, and ſeizing one of his crutches, applied it ſo effectually to one of the three, juſt as he ſtooped to examine the patient's water, that his tie-periwig dropped into the pot, while he himſelf fell motionleſs on the floor.

This

This significant explanation disconcerted the whole fraternity; every man turned his face, as it were by instinct, towards the door; and the retreat of the community being obstructed by the efforts of individuals, confusion and tumultuous uproar ensued: for the colonel, far from limiting his prowess to the first exploit, handled his weapon with astonishing vigour and dexterity, without respect of persons; so that few or none of them had escaped without marks of his displeasure, when his spirits failed, and he sunk down again, quite exhausted, on his bed. Favoured by this respite, the discomfited faculty collected their hats and wigs, which had fallen off in the fray; and perceiving the assailant too much enfeebled to renew the attack, set up their throats together, and loudly threatened to prosecute him severely for such an outrageous assault.

By this time the landlord had interposed; and enquiring into the cause of the disturbance, was informed of what had happened by the complainants, who at the same time giving him to understand, that they had been severally summoned to attend the colonel that morning, he assured them, that they had been imposed upon by some wag, for his lodger had never dreamed of consulting any one of their profession.

Thunderstruck at this declaration, the general clamour instantaneously ceased; and each, in particular, at once comprehending the nature of the joke, they sneaked silently off with the loss they had sustained, in unutterable shame and mortification; while Peregrine and his friend, who took care to be passing that way by accident, made a full stop at sight of such an extraordinary efflux, and enjoyed the countenance and condition of every one as he appeared: nay, even made up to some of those who seemed most affected with their situation, and mischievously tormented them with questions touching this unusual congregation; then, in consequence of the information they received from the landlord and the colonel's valet, subjected the sufferers to the ridicule of all the company in town. As it would have been impossible for the authors of this farce to keep themselves concealed from the indefatigable enquiries of the physicians, they made no secret of their having directed the whole; though they took care to own it in such an ambiguous manner, as afforded no handle of prosecution.

CHAP. XXXVII.

PEREGRINE HUMBLES A NOTED HECTOR, AND MEETS WITH A STRANGE CHARACTER AT THE HOUSE OF A CERTAIN LADY.

AMONG those who never failed to reside at Bath, during the season, was a certain person, who, from the most abject misery, had by his industry and art at play, amassed about fifteen thousand pounds; and though his character was notorious, insinuated himself so far into the favour of what is called the best company, that very few private parties of pleasure took place, in which he was not principally concerned. He was of a gigantick stature, a most intrepid countenance; and his disposition, naturally overbearing, had in the course of his adventures and success, acquired a most intolerable degree of insolence and vanity. By the ferocity of his features, and audacity of his behaviour, he had obtained a reputation for the most undaunted courage, which had been confirmed by divers adventures, in which he had humbled the most assuming heroes of his own fraternity: so that he now reigned chief Hector of the place, with unquestioned authority.

With this son of Fortune was Peregrine one evening engaged at play, and so successful, that he could not help informing his friend of his good luck. Godfrey hearing the description of the loser, immediately recognized the person, whom he had known at Tunbridge; and assuring Pickle, that he was a sharper of the first water, cautioned him against any farther connection with such a dangerous companion; who (he affirmed) had suffered him to win a small sum, that he might be encouraged to lose a much greater upon some other occasion.

Our young gentleman treasured up this advice; and though he did not scruple to give the gamester an opportunity of retrieving his loss, when he next day demanded his revenge, he absolutely refused to proceed, after he had refunded his winning. The other, who considered him as a hot-headed unthinking youth,

youth, endeavoured to enflame his pride to a continuance of the game, by treating his skill with scorn and contempt; and, among other sarcastick expressions, advised him to go to school again, before he pretended to engage with masters of the art. Our hero, incensed at his arrogance, replied with great warmth, that he knew himself sufficiently qualified for playing with men of honour, who deal upon the square, and hoped he should always deem it infamous, either to learn or practise the tricks of a professed gamester. 'Blood and thun-'der! meaning me, Sir!' cried this artist, raising his voice, and curling his visage into a most intimidating frown. 'Zounds! I'll cut the throat of any 'scoundrel who has the presumption to 'suppose, that I don't play as honour-'ably as e'er a nobleman in the king-'dom: and I insist upon an explana-'tion from you, Sir; or, by hell and 'brimstone! I shall expect other sort of 'satisfaction.' Peregrine (whose blood by this time boiled within him) answered without hesitation: 'Far from think-'ing your demand unreasonable, I will 'immediately explain myself without 'reserve, and tell you, that, upon un-'questionable authority, I believe you 'to be an impudent rascal, and com-'mon cheat.'

The Hector was so amazed and confounded at the freedom of this declaration, which he thought no man on earth would venture to make in his presence, that for some minutes he could not recollect himself; but at length, whispered a challenge in the ear of our hero, which was accordingly accepted. When they arrived next morning upon the field, the gamester arming his countenance with all his terrors, advanced with a sword of a monstrous length, and putting himself in a posture, called aloud in a most terrifick voice, 'Draw, 'damn ye! draw; I will this instant 'send you to your fathers.' The youth was not slow in complying with his desire; his weapon was unsheathed in a moment, and he began the attack with such unexpected spirit and address, that his adversary, having made shift with great difficulty to parry the first pass, retreated a few paces, and demanded a parley; in which he endeavoured to persuade the young man, that to lay a man of his character under the necessity of chastizing his insolence, was the most rash and inconsiderate step that he could possibly have taken; but that he had compassion upon his youth, and was willing to spare him, if he would surrender his sword, and promise to ask pardon in publick for the offence he had given. Pickle was so much exasperated at this unparalleled effrontery, that without deigning to make the least reply, he flung his own hat in the proposer's face, and renewed the charge with such undaunted agility, that the gamester, finding himself in manifest hazard of his life, betook himself to his heels, and fled homewards with incredible speed, being closely pursued by Peregrine, who having sheathed his sword, pelted him with stones as he ran, and compelled him to go, that same day, into banishment from Bath, where he had domineered so long.

By this atchievement, which was the subject of astonishment to all the company, who had looked upon the fugitive as a person of heroick courage, our adventurer's reputation was rendered formidable in all it's circumstances; although he thereby disobliged a good many people of fashion, who had contracted an intimacy of friendship with the exile, and who resented his disgrace, as if it had been the misfortune of a worthy man. These generous patrons, however, bore a very small proportion to those who were pleased with the event of the duel; because, in the course of their residence at Bath, they had either been insulted or defrauded by the challenger. Nor was this instance of our hero's courage unacceptable to the ladies, few of whom could now resist the united force of such accomplishments. Indeed, neither he nor his friend Godfrey would have found much difficulty in picking up an agreeable companion for life: but Gauntlet's heart was pre-engaged to Sophy; and Pickle, exclusive of his attachment to Emily, which was stronger than he himself imagined, possessed such a share of ambition, as could not be satisfied with the conquest of any female he beheld at Bath.

His visits were, therefore, promiscuous, without any other view than that of amusement; and though his pride was flattered by the advances of the fair whom he had captivated, he never harboured one thought of proceeding beyond the limits of common gallantry, and carefully avoided all particular explanations,

planations. But what, above all other enjoyments, yielded him the most agreeable entertainment, was the secret history of characters, which he learned from a very extraordinary person, with whom he became acquainted in this manner.

Being at the house of a certain lady, on a visiting day, he was struck with the appearance of an old man, who no sooner entered the room than the mistress of the house very kindly desired one of the wits present to roast the old put. This petit-maitre, proud of the employment, went up to the senior, who had something extremely peculiar and significant in his countenance, and saluting him with divers fashionable congés, accosted him in these words: 'Your 'servant, you old rascal. I hope to 'have the honour of seeing you hanged. I vow to Gad! you look extremely shocking, with these gummy 'eyes, lanthorn jaws, and toothless 'chaps. What! you squint at the ladies, you old rotten medlar? Yes, 'yes, we understand your ogling; but 'you must content yourself wi'n a cook-'maid, sink me! I see you want to sit. 'These withered shanks of your's tremble under their burden: but you must 'have a little patience, old Hirco; indeed you must. I intend to mortify 'you a little longer, curse me!'

The company was so tickled with this address, which was delivered with much grimace and gesticulation, that they burst out into a loud fit of laughter, which they fathered upon a monkey that was chained in the room; and when the peal was over, the wit renewed his attack, in these words. 'I 'suppose you are fool enough to think 'this mirth was occasioned by Pug; 'aye, there he is; you had best survey 'him; he is of your own family, 'switch me! but the laugh was at your 'expence; and you ought to thank 'Heaven for making you so ridicu-'lous.' While he uttered these ingenious ejaculations, the old gentleman bowed alternately to him and the monkey, that seemed to grin and chatter in imitation of the beau, and with an arch solemnity of visage, pronounced, 'Gen-'tlemen, as I have not the honour to 'understand your compliments, they 'will be much better bestowed on each 'other.' So saying, he seated himself, and had the satisfaction to see the laugh returned upon the aggressor, who remained confounded and abashed, and in a few minutes left the room, muttering, as he retired, 'The old fellow 'grows scurrilous, stap my breath!'

While Peregrine wondered in silence at this extraordinary scene, the lady of the house perceiving his surprize, gave him to understand, that the ancient visitant was utterly bereft of the sense of hearing: that his name was Cadwallader Crabtree; his disposition altogether misanthropical; and that he was admitted into company on account of the entertainment he afforded by his sarcastick observations, and the pleasant mistakes to which he was subject from his infirmity. Nor did our hero wait a long time for an illustration of this odd character. Every sentence he spoke was replete with gall; nor did his satire consist in general reflections, but in a series of remarks, which had been made through the medium of a most whimsical peculiarity of opinion.

Among those who were present at this assembly was a young officer, who having by dint of interest obtained a seat in the lower house, thought it incumbent upon him to talk of affairs of state; and accordingly regaled the company with an account of a secret expedition which the French were busied in preparing; assuring them, that he had it from the mouth of the minister, to whom it had been transmitted by one of his agents abroad. In descanting upon the particulars of the armament, he observed, that they had twenty ships of the line, ready manned and victualled at Brest, which were destined for Toulon, where they would be joined by as many more; and from thence proceed to the execution of their scheme, which he imparted as a secret not fit to be divulged.

This piece of intelligence being communicated to all the company except Mr. Crabtree, who suffered by his loss of hearing, that cynick was soon after accosted by a lady, who, by means of an artificial alphabet, formed by a certain conjunction and disposition of the fingers, asked if he had heard any extraordinary news of late. Cadwallader, with his usual complaisance, replied that he supposed she took him for a courier or spy, by teizing him eternally with that question. He then expatiated upon the foolish curiosity of mankind, which, he said, must either proceed from idleness or want of ideas; and repeated, almost *verbatim*,

verbatim, the officer's information; a vague ridiculous report invented by some ignorant coxcomb, who wanted to give himself airs of importance, and believed only by those who were utterly unacquainted with the politicks and strength of the French nation.

In confirmation of what he had advanced, he endeavoured to demonstrate how impossible it must be for that people to fit out even the third part of such a navy, so soon after the losses they had sustained during the war; and confirmed his proof by asserting, that, to his certain knowledge, the harbours of Brest and Toulon could not at that time produce a squadron of eight ships of the line.

The member, who was an utter stranger to this misanthrope, hearing his own asseverations treated with such contempt, glowed with confusion and resentment, and raising his voice, began to defend his own veracity with great eagerness and trepidation, mingling with his arguments many blustering invectives against the insolence and ill-manners of his supposed contradictor, who sat with the most mortifying composure of countenance, till the officer's patience was quite exhausted; and then, to the manifest increase of his vexation, he was informed, that his antagonist was so deaf, that, in all probability, the last trumpet would make no impression upon him, without a previous renovation of his organs.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

HE CULTIVATES AN ACQUAINTANCE WITH THE MISANTHROPE, WHO FAVOURS HIM WITH A SHORT SKETCH OF HIS OWN HISTORY.

PEREGRINE was extremely well pleased with this occasional rebuke, which occurred so seasonably, that he could scarce believe it accidental. He looked upon Cadwallader as the greatest curiosity he had ever known, and cultivated the old man's acquaintance with such insinuating address, that in less than a fortnight he obtained his confidence. As they one day walked into the fields together, the man-hater disclosed himself in these words. 'Though 'the term of our communication has 'been but short, you must have perceived, that I treat you with uncommon marks of regard; which, I assure you, is not owing to your personal accomplishments, nor the pains 'you take to oblige me; for the first I 'overlook, and the last I see through: 'but there is something in your disposition which indicates a rooted contempt for the world; and I understand 'you have made some successful efforts 'in exposing one part of it to the ridicule of the other. It is upon this 'assurance that I offer you my advice 'and assistance, in prosecuting other 'schemes of the same nature; and to 'convince you that such an alliance is 'not to be rejected, I will now give you a 'short sketch of my history, which will 'be published after my death in forty-'seven volumes of my own compiling.

'I was born about forty miles from 'this place, of parents, who having a 'very old family-name to support, bestowed their whole fortune on my elder 'brother; so that I inherited of my father little else than a large share of choler, to which I am indebted for a great 'many adventures that did not always 'end to my satisfaction. At the age of 'eighteen I was sent up to town, with 'a recommendation to a certain peer, 'who found means to amuse me with 'the promise of a commission for seven 'whole years; and 'tis odds but I should 'have made my fortune by my perseverance, had not I been arrested, and 'thrown into the Marshalsea by my landlord, on whose credit I had subsisted 'three years, after my father had renounced me as an idle vagabond. 'There I remained six months, among 'those prisoners who have no other support than chance charity; and contracted a very valuable acquaintance, 'which was of great service to me in the 'future emergencies of my life.

'I was no sooner discharged, in consequence of an act of parliament for 'the relief of insolvent debtors, than I 'went to the house of my creditor, whom 'I cudgelled without mercy; and that 'I might leave nothing undone of those 'things which I ought to have done, 'my next stage was to Westminster 'Hall, where I waited until my patron 'came forth from the house, and saluted 'him with a blow that laid him senseless on the pavement: but my retreat 'was not so fortunate as I could have 'wished;

'wished; the chairmen and lacquies in 'waiting having surrounded and dis- 'armed me in a trice, I was committed 'to Newgate, and loaded with chains; 'and a very sagacious gentleman, who 'was afterwards hanged, having sat in 'judgment upon my case, pronounced 'me guilty of a capital crime, and fore- 'told my condemnation at the Old Bai- 'ley. His prognostick, however, was 'disappointed; for nobody appearing to 'prosecute me at the next sessions, I was 'discharged by order of the court. It 'would be impossible for me to recount, 'in the compass of one day's conver- 'sation, all the particular exploits in 'which I bore a considerable share. 'Suffice it to say, I have been, at dif- 'ferent times, prisoner in all the gaols 'within the bills of mortality. I have 'broke from every round-house on this 'side Temple-bar. No bailiff, in the 'days of my youth and desperation, 'durst execute a writ upon me without 'a dozen followers; and the justices 'themselves trembled when I was 'brought before them.

'I was once maimed by a carman, 'with whom I quarrelled, because he 'ridiculed my leek on St. David's day; 'my skull was fractured by a butcher's 'cleaver, on the like occasion. I have 'been run through the body five times, 'and lost the tip of my left-ear by a 'pistol-bullet. In a rencounter of this 'kind, having left my antagonist for 'dead, I was wise enough to make my 'retreat into France; and a few days 'after my arrival at Paris, entered into 'conversation with some officers on the 'subject of politicks; a dispute arose, 'in which I lost my temper, and spoke 'so irreverently of the *Grand Monarque*, 'that next morning I was sent to the 'Bastile, by virtue of a *Lettre de Ca-* 'chet. There I remained for some 'months, deprived of all intercourse 'with rational creatures; a circumstance 'for which I was not sorry, as I had 'the more time to project schemes of 'revenge against the tyrant who confin- 'ed me, and the wretch who had be- 'trayed my private conversation: but 'tired, at length, with these fruitless 'suggestions, I was fain to unbend the 'severity of my thoughts by a corre- 'spondence with some industrious spi- 'ders, who had hung my dungeon with 'their ingenious labours.

'I considered their work with such 'attention, that I soon became an adept 'in the mystery of weaving, and fur- 'nished myself with as many useful ob- 'servations and reflections on that art, 'as will compose a very curious Trea- 'tise, which I intend to bequeath to the 'Royal Society, for the benefit of our 'woollen manufacture; and this with 'a view to perpetuate my own name, 'rather than befriend my country; for, 'thank Heaven! I am weaned from all 'attachments of that kind, and look 'upon myself as one very little obliged 'to any society whatsoever. Although 'I presided with absolute power over 'this long-legged community, and dis- 'tributed rewards and punishments to 'each, according to his deserts, I grew 'impatient of my situation; and my 'natural disposition, one day, prevail- 'ing like a fire which had long been 'smothered, I wreaked the fury of my 'indignation upon my innocent sub- 'jects, and in a twinkling destroyed 'the whole race. While I was employ- 'ed in this general massacre, the turn- 'key, who brought me food, opened 'the door, and perceiving my transport, 'shrugged up his shoulders, and leav- 'ing my allowance, went out pronounc- 'ing, "*Le pauvre diable! la tete lui* "*tourne.*" My passion no sooner sub- 'sided, than I resolved to profit by this 'opinion of the gaoler, and from that 'day counterfeited lunacy with such 'success, that in less than three months 'I was delivered from the Bastile, and 'sent to the gallies, in which they 'thought my bodily vigour might be 'of service, although the faculties of 'my mind were decayed. Before I 'was chained to the oar, I received three 'hundred stripes by way of welcome, 'that I might thereby be rendered more 'tractable, notwithstanding I used all 'the arguments in my power to persuade 'them, I was only *mad north, north-west;* 'and when the wind was southerly, 'knew a hawk from an hand-saw.

'In our second cruize we had the good 'fortune to be overtaken by a tempest, 'during which the slaves were unbound, 'that they might contribute the more to 'the preservation of the galley, and have 'a chance for their lives, in case of 'shipwreck. We were no sooner at 'liberty, than making ourselves masters 'of the vessel, we robbed the officers, 'and ran her on shore among rocks 'on the coast of Portugal; from whence

'I haſtened to Liſbon, with a view of 'obtaining my paſſage in ſome ſhip 'bound for England, where, by this 'time, I hoped my affair was forgotten.

'But before this ſcheme could be ac-'compliſhed, my evil genius led me into 'company; and being intoxicated, I 'began to broach doctrines on the ſub-'ject of religion, at which ſome of the '*partie* were ſcandalized and incenſed; 'and I was next day dragged out of-'bed by the officers of the inquiſition, 'and conveyed to a cell in the priſon 'belonging to that tribunal.

'At my firſt examination my reſent-'ment was ſtrong enough to ſupport 'me under the torture, which I endured 'without flinching; but my reſolution 'abated, and my zeal immediately cool-'ed, when I underſtood from a fellow 'priſoner, who groaned on the other 'ſide of the partition, that in a ſhort 'time there would be an *Auto da Fe*; 'in conſequence of which I ſhould, in all 'probability, be doomed to the flames, 'if I would not renounce my heretical 'errors, and ſubmit to ſuch penance as 'the church ſhould think fit to preſcribe. 'This miſerable wretch was convicted 'of Judaiſm, which he had privately 'practiſed, by connivance, for many 'years, until he had amaſſed a fortune 'ſufficient to attract the regard of the 'church. To this he fell a ſacrifice, 'and accordingly prepared himſelf for 'the ſtake; while I, not at all ambi-'tious of the crown of martyrdom, re-'ſolved to temporize: ſo that when I 'was brought to the queſtion the ſecond 'time, I made a ſolemn recantation. 'As I had no worldly fortune to ob-'ſtruct my ſalvation, I was received 'into the boſom of the church, and, 'by way of penance, enjoined to walk 'barefoot to Rome, in the habit of a 'pilgrim.

'During my peregrination through 'Spain, I was detained as a ſpy, until 'I could procure credentials from the 'inquiſition at Liſbon; and behaved 'with ſuch a reſolution and reſerve, 'that, after being releaſed, I was deemed 'a proper perſon to be employed in qua-'lity of a ſecret intelligencer at a cer-'tain court. This office I undertook 'without heſitation; and being furniſh-'ed with money and bills of credit, 'croſſed the Pyrenees, with intention 'to revenge myſelf upon the Spaniards, 'for the ſeverities I had undergone 'during my captivity.

'Having therefore effectually diſ-'guiſed myſelf by a change of dreſs, 'and a large patch on one eye, I hired 'an equipage, and appeared at Bologna 'in quality of an itinerant phyſician; in 'which capacity I ſucceeded tolerably 'well, till my ſervants decamped in the 'night with my baggage, and left me 'in the condition of Adam. In ſhort, 'I have travelled over the greateſt part 'of Europe, as a beggar, pilgrim, prieſt, 'ſoldier, gameſter, and quack; and felt 'the extremes of indigence and opu-'lence, with the inclemency of weather, 'in all it's viciſſitudes. I have learned 'that the characters of mankind are 'every where the ſame; that common 'ſenſe and honeſty bear an infinitely 'ſmall proportion to folly and vice; 'and that life is at beſt a paltry pro-'vince.

'After having ſuffered innumerable 'hardſhips, dangers, and diſgraces, I 'returned to London, where I lived 'ſome years in a garret, and picked up 'a ſubſiſtence, ſuch as it was, by vend-'ing purges in the ſtreets, from the 'back of a pied horſe; in which ſitua-'tion, I uſed to harangue the mob in 'broken Engliſh, under pretence of 'being an High-German doctor.

'At laſt an uncle died, by whom I 'inherit an eſtate of three hundred 'pounds per annum; though, in his 'life-time, he would not have parted 'with a ſix-pence, to ſave my ſoul and 'body from perdition.

'I now appear in the world, not as 'a member of any community, or what 'is called a ſocial creature; but merely 'as a ſpectator, who entertains himſelf 'with the grimaces of a jack-pudding, 'and banquets his ſpleen in beholding 'his enemies at loggerheads. That I 'may enjoy this diſpoſition, abſtracted 'from all interruption, danger, and 'participation, I feign myſelf deaf; 'an expedient by which I not only 'avoid all diſputes, and their conſe-'quences, but alſo become maſter of a 'thouſand little ſecrets, which are every 'day whiſpered in my preſence, with-'out any ſuſpicion of their being over-'heard. You ſaw how I handled that 'ſhallow politician at my Lady Plauſ-'ible's the other day. The ſame me-'thod I practiſe upon the crazed Tory,

'the

'the bigot Whig, the four ſupercilious 'pedant, the petulant critick, the bluſ-'tering coward, the fawning tool, the 'pert pimp, fly ſharper, and every other 'ſpecies of knaves and fools with which 'this kingdom abounds.

'In conſequence of my rank and 'character I obtain free admiſſion to 'the ladies, among whom I have ac-'quired the appellation of the Scanda-'lous Chronicle. As I am conſidered '(while ſilent) in no other light than 'that of a foot-ſtool or elbow-chair, 'they diveſt their converſation of all 'reſtraint before me, and gratify my 'ſenſe of hearing with ſtrange things, 'which (if I could prevail upon myſelf 'to give the world that ſatisfaction) 'would compoſe a curious piece of ſe-'cret hiſtory, and exhibit a quite dif-'ferent idea of characters from what is 'commonly entertained.

'By this time, young gentleman, 'you may perceive, that I have it in my 'power to be a valuable correſpondent; 'and that it will be your intereſt to de-'ſerve my confidence.'

Here the miſanthrope left of ſpeaking, deſirous to know the ſentiments of our hero, who embraced the proffered alliance, in a tranſport of joy and ſurprize; and the treaty was no ſooner concluded, than Mr. Crabtree began to perform articles, by imparting to him a thouſand delicious ſecrets, from the poſſeſſion of which he promiſed himſelf innumerable ſcenes of mirth and enjoyment. By means of this aſſociate, whom he conſidered as the ring of Gyges, he foreſaw that he ſhould be enabled to penetrate not only into the chambers, but even to the inmoſt thoughts of the female ſex. In order to ward off ſuſpicion, they agreed to revile each other in publick, and meet at a certain private rendezvous, to communicate their mutual diſcoveries, and concert their future operations.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

TO LORD ———

MY LORD,

THE turn which your lordſhip gave to the converſation of laſt night, having laid me under the neceſſity of vindicating the ſtep I have lately taken in publiſhing Memoirs of my Life, I think I have a right to demand your opinion of the motives which I then explained; and this I aſk by way of appeal to your judgment from the ſentiments of thoſe who might perhaps think my inducements were weak or frivolous. For, though no perſon in the company attempted to invalidate the arguments I advanced, I could perceive that one gentleman was not altogether convinced of the rectitude of that meaſure: you may remember he dropped ſeveral diſſenting hints, couched in the modeſt expreſſions of, 'With ſubmiſſion to your ladyſhip's better judgment.—But, to 'be ſure, you would not have taken ſuch a ſtep without firſt weighing 'the conſequences.—Your provocations were certainly very great, 'although the world is apt to put the worſt conſtructions upon every 'thing.'—And other ſuch prudential inſinuations, that are often more diſconcerting than the diſplayed objections of a declared antagoniſt; becauſe they ſeem to import ſomething of great weight, which perſonal reſpect endeavours to ſuppreſs. Theſe ſententious fragments made ſuch impreſſion upon my mind, that I have been all night long taſking my recollection, in order to diſcover the weak ſide of my defence; but, as one always ſees through the miſt of partiality in one's own concerns, I muſt have recourſe to your diſcernment, and ſeriouſly inſiſt upon knowing how far you approve the juſtification of,

My lord,

your lordſhip's

moſt obedient ſervant,

* * * *

ANSWER.

MADAM,

I Cannot help obſerving, that the ſerious manner in which you aſk my opinion of the motives which induced you to publiſh your Memoirs, is exactly of a piece with the conduct of thoſe who conſult their friends, for approbation rather than advice, and by a diſappointment in their expectations of applauſe, are more than ever wedded to their own inventions. How would your ladyſhip look, ſhould I now,

I now, in conſequence of your demand, aſſume the air of a ſevere moraliſer, and tell you, that the ſtep you have taken, was altogether precipitate and inexcuſable; that you have unneceſſarily avowed your own indiſcretion, incurred the reſentment of individuals, and attracted the reproaches of a cenſorious world; and that, over and above theſe diſadvantages, you have ſubjected yourſelf for ever to a life of domeſtick diſquiet, by incenſing the tyrant of whom you complain, beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs or reconciliation? Would not all the reſentment of a diſappointed author take poſſeſſion of your ladyſhip; overcaſt that chearfulneſs of countenance with a ſullen frown, and lighten from thoſe fair eyes in gleams of diſpleaſure? No, you would be more ſurprized than offended at my obſervations. You would believe you had been all along deceived in your opinion of my delicacy and underſtanding; you would be mortified at the diſcovery of your own miſtake, and look upon me with compaſſion, as one of thoſe tame, timid rationaliſts, who being naturally phlegmatick and fearful, are utter ſtrangers to the refined ſenſations of the human heart, incapable of doing juſtice to thoſe melting tenderneſſes which they never felt, and too irreſolute to withſtand the torrent of ignorant, malicious, or wrong-headed clamour, when it affects a character in which their friendſhip ought to be intereſted. Your ſentiments, I own, would in that caſe be juſt, excepting that I ſhould engage your ladyſhip's pity, in deſerving your contempt, and inſtead of being deſpiſed as a cold friend, be ſtill regarded by you, as a weak and timorous well-wiſher. If your character ſuffered cruelly from miſrepreſentations; if your foibles were magnified and multiplied with all the aggravation of envy and fiction; if the qualities of your heart were decried or traduced, and even your underſtanding called in queſtion; I agree with your ladyſhip, that it was not only excuſeable, but highly neceſſary, to publiſh a detail of your conduct, which would acquit you of all or moſt of thoſe ſcandalous imputations. This taſk you have (in my opinion) performed, to the ſatisfaction of all the intelligent and unprejudiced part of mankind. He muſt be very deficient in candour and feeling, who, in reading your Memoirs, is not intereſted in your favour; who does not eſpouſe the cauſe of beauty, innocence, and love; who does not ſee that as you once were, you would ſtill have continued to be the pattern of conjugal faith and felicity; had not the croſs accidents of fortune forced you from the natural bias of your diſpoſition: who does not excuſe the tenderneſs, which youth and ſenſibility, ſo circumſtanced, could not poſſibly reſiſt; and who does not freely forgive the fault, when he conſiders the particulars of the temptation. He muſt be void of all taſte and reflection, who does not admire your ſpirit, elegance, and ſenſe; and dead to all the finer movements of the ſoul, if he is not agitated, thrilled, and tranſported, with the pathetick circumſtances of your ſtory. Some people, who are your ladyſhip's friends, and highly entertained with the performance, have wiſhed you had ſpared yourſelf ſome unneceſſary confeſſions, which they thought could ſerve no end, but that of affording a handle to your enemies for cenſure and defamation: I myſelf, I own, was of the ſame opinion, until you convinced me, that in ſuppreſſing one circumſtance which might be afterwards diſcovered, your ſincerity through the whole piece would have been called in queſtion. And what have you avowed, that your moſt malicious foes dare blame, except your diſ-

regard

regard of an unnatural contract, which (though authorized by the laws of your country) was impoſed upon your neceſſity, youth, and inexperience? Nor was this conduct the reſult of vicious levity and intemperance: you had already given undeniable proofs of your conſtancy and conjugal virtue, to the firſt lord of your affections, who was the choice of your love, and to whom your heart was unalterably wedded. Your natural ſenſibility had been, by his extraordinary care, tenderneſs, and attention, cheriſhed and improved to ſuch a degree of delicacy, as could not poſſibly reliſh the attachment of the common run of huſbands. No wonder, then, that you was uneaſy under a ſecond engagement ſo much unlike the firſt; that every circumſtance of the contraſt appeared to you in the moſt aggravating light, and made a ſuitable impreſſion upon your imagination; and that you was not inſenſible to thoſe attractions which had formerly captivated your heart, nor able to reſiſt the flattering inſinuations, incredible aſſiduity, and ſurprizing perſeverance, of an artful lover. And ſure he could not have choſen a more favourable opportunity to prefer his addreſſes: your paſſions were unuſually intendered by grief; you was diſſatisfied with your domeſtick ſituation; you was ſolitary for want of that intimate connection in which you had been ſo happy before, and your breaſt glowed with the moſt pathetick ſuſceptibility, while you was yet a ſtranger to the inſidious wiles of man. In ſuch diſtreſs the mind longs for ſympathy and conſolation; it ſeeks to repoſe itſelf upon the tender friendſhip of ſome kind partner, that will ſhare and alleviate it's ſorrows. Such a comforter appeared in the accompliſhed youth: your judgment was pleaſed with his qualifications; his demeanour acquired your eſteem; your friendſhip was engaged by his ſincerity; and your affection was inſenſibly ſubdued. In ſhort, every thing conſpired to promote his ſuit, and my wonder is not that he ſucceeded, but that you held out ſo long. Your ſentiments with regard to thoſe who have inveighed againſt your performance, are altogether conformable to that good-ſenſe and benevolent diſpoſition, which I have always admired and eſteemed. As for writers who have exerciſed their pens in abuſing your ladyſhip, they are either objects of mirth or compaſſion. They, poor harmleſs creatures, in their hearts, wiſh you no evil. Their buſineſs is to eat, honeſtly if they can—but, at any rate, to eat. I am fully perſuaded, that for a very ſmall ſum you might engage the whole tribe to refute their own revilings, and bellow with all their might in your praiſe. It would really be uncharitable as well as abſurd, to expreſs the leaſt reſentment againſt ſuch feeble antagoniſts, who are literally the beings of a ſummer-day: they are the noiſy inſects, which the ſun of merit never fails to produce; the ſhadows that continually accompany ſucceſs; and, indeed, a man might as well fight with his own ſhadow, as attempt to chaſtiſe ſuch unſubſtantial phantoms. But of all the emotions of your heart, that which I am at preſent tempted chiefly to applaud, is the ſorrow you expreſs for having been obliged, in your own juſtification, to vilify and expoſe the man to whom your fate is inſeparably connected; and the laudable reſolution you have taken to live amicably with him for the future, provided he ſhall perſiſt in that conduct, which he hath of late choſen to maintain. On the whole, though you may have inflamed the virulence of envy and malice, rouzed the reſentment of ſome whoſe folly and ingratitude you had occaſion to diſplay, and incurred the cenſure of thoſe who think it their duty to exclaim

exclaim againſt the leaſt infringement of the nuptial tie, howſoever unequally impoſed; your Memoirs will always be peruſed with pleaſure by all readers of taſte and diſcernment, and your fame as a beauty and author, long ſurvive the ill offices of prejudice and perſonal animoſity. And now that I have performed the taſk enjoined, give me leave to add, that I have the honour to be,

Madam,

your moſt devoted

humble ſervant,

* * * *

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

VOLUME THE THIRD.

CHAP. I.

PEREGRINE ARRIVES AT THE GARRISON, WHERE HE RECEIVES THE LAST ADMONITIONS OF COMMODORE TRUNNION, WHO NEXT DAY RESIGNS HIS BREATH, AND IS BURIED ACCORDING TO HIS OWN DIRECTIONS. SOME GENTLEMEN IN THE COUNTRY MAKE A FRUITLESS ATTEMPT TO ACCOMMODATE MATTERS BETWIXT MR. GAMALIEL PICKLE AND HIS ELDEST SON.

ABOUT four o'clock in the morning our hero arrived at the garrison, where he found his generous uncle in extremity, supported in bed by Julia on one side, and Lieutenant Hatchway on the other, while Mr. Jolter administered spiritual consolation to his soul, and between whiles comforted Mrs. Trunnion, who, with her maid, sat by the fire, weeping with great decorum; the physician having just taken his last fee, and retired, after pronouncing the fatal prognostick, in which he anxiously wished he might not be mistaken.

Though the commodore's speech was interrupted by a violent hiccup, he still retained the use of his senses; and when Peregrine approached, stretched out his hand with manifest signs of satisfaction. The young gentleman, whose heart overflowed with gratitude and affection, could not behold such a spectacle unmoved. He endeavoured to conceal his tenderness, which, in the wildness of his youth, and in the pride of his disposition, he considered as a derogation from his manhood; but, in spite of all his endeavours, the tears gushed from his eyes, while he kissed the old man's hand; and he was so utterly disconcerted by his grief, that when he attempted to speak, his tongue denied it's office: so that the commodore, perceiving his disorder, made a last effort of strength, and consoled him in these words. 'Swab the spray from 'your bowsprit, my good lad, and coil 'up your spirits. You must not let the 'top-lifts of your heart give way, be'cause you see me ready to go down at 'these years; many a better man has 'foundered before he has made half 'my way; thof I trust, by the mercy 'of God, I shall be sure in port in a 'very few glasses, and fast moored in a 'most blessed riding: for my good 'friend Jolter has overhauled the jour'nal of my sins; and by the observa'tion he hath taken of the state of my 'soul, I hope I shall happily conclude 'my voyage, and be brought up in the 'latitude of heaven. Here has been a 'doctor that wanted to stow me chock-'full of physick; but when a man's 'hour is come, what signifies his tak'ing his departure with a 'pothecary's

'ſhep in his hold? Thoſe fellows come 'along-ſide of dying men, like the meſ-'ſengers of the admiralty with ſailing-'orders: but I told him as how I 'could ſlip my cable without his direc-'tion or aſſiſtance, and ſo he hawled off 'in dudgeon. This curſed hiccup makes 'ſuch a rippling in the current of my 'ſpeech, that mayhap you don't un-'derſtand what I ſay. Now, while the 'ſucker of my wind-pump will go, I 'would willingly mention a few things, 'which I hope you will ſet down in the 'log-book of your remembrance, when 'I am ſtiff, d'ye ſee. There's your 'aunt ſitting whimpering by the fire; I 'deſire you will keep her tight, warm, 'and eaſy in her old age: ſhe's an ho-'neſt heart in her own way; and thof 'ſhe goes a little crank and humour-'ſome, by being often over-ſtowed with 'Nantz and religion, ſhe hath been a 'faithful ſhip-mate to me, and I dare 'ſay never turned in with another man, 'ſince we firſt embarked in the ſame 'bottom.—Jack Hatchway, you know 'the trim of her as well as e'er a man 'in England, and I believe ſhe has a 'kindneſs for you; whereby, if you 'two will grapple in the way of matri-'mony, when I am gone, I do ſuppoſe 'that my godſon, for love of me, will 'allow you to live in the garriſon all 'the days of your life.'

Peregrine aſſured him, he would with pleaſure comply with any requeſt he ſhould make, in behalf of two perſons whom he eſteemed ſo much. The lieu-tenant, with a waggiſh ſneer, which even the gravity of the ſituation could not pre-vent, thanked them both for their good-will, telling the commodore, he was obliged to him for his friendſhip, in ſeeking to promote him to the command of a veſſel which he himſelf had wore out in the ſervice: that notwithſtand-ing, he ſhould be content to take charge of her, though he could not help being ſhy of coming after ſuch an able navi-gator.

Trunnion, exhauſted as he was, ſmil-ed at this ſally; and, after ſome pauſe, reſumed his admonitions in this man-ner. 'I need not talk of Pipes, be-'cauſe I know you'll do for him, with-'out my recommendation; the fellow 'has ſailed with me in many a hard 'gale, and I'll warrant him as ſtout a 'ſeaman as ever ſet face to the weather: 'but I hope you will take care of the 'reſt of my crew, and not diſtreſs them 'after I am dead, in favour of new 'followers. As for that young wo-'man, Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I'm 'informed as how ſhe is an excellent 'wench, and has a reſpect for you; 'whereby, if you run her on board in 'an unlawful way, I leave my curſe 'upon you, and truſt you will never 'proſper in the voyage of life: but, I 'believe you are more of an honeſt 'man, than to behave ſo much like a 'pirate. I beg of all love, you wool 'take care of your conſtitution, and 'beware of running foul of harlots, 'who are no better than ſo many mer-'maids, that ſit upon rocks in the ſea, 'and hang out a fair face for the de-'ſtruction of paſſengers; thof I muſt 'ſay, for my own part, I never met 'with any of thoſe ſweet ſingers, and 'yet I have gone to ſea for the ſpace 'of thirty years. But howſomever, ſteer 'your courſe clear of all ſuch brimſtone 'bitches. Shun going to law as you 'would ſhun the devil, and look upon 'all attornies as devouring ſharks, or 'ravenous fiſh of prey. As ſoon as the 'breath is out of my body, let minute 'guns be fired, till I am ſafe under 'ground. I would alſo be buried in 'the red jacket I had on when I board-'ed and took the *Renummy*. Let my 'piſtols, cutlaſs, and pocket-compaſs, 'be laid in the coffin along with me. 'Let me be carried to the grave by my 'own men, rigged in the black caps 'and white ſhirts which my barge's 'crew were wont to wear; and they 'muſt keep a good look-out, that none 'of your pilfering raſcallions may come 'and heave me up again, for the lucre 'of what they can get, until the car-'caſe is belayed by a tomb-ſtone. As 'for the motto, or what you call it, I 'leave that to you and Mr. Jolter, who 'are ſcholars; but I do deſire, that it 'may not be engraved in the Greek 'or Latin lingos, and much leſs in 'the French, which I abominate, but 'in plain Engliſh, that when the angel 'comes to pipe *all hands*, at the great 'day, he may know that I am a Bri-'tiſh man, and ſpeak to me in my mo-'ther tongue. And now I have no 'more to ſay, but God in heaven have 'mercy upon my ſoul, and ſend you 'all fair weather, whereſoever you are 'bound!' So ſaying, he regarded every individual around him with a look of com-

complacency, and closing his eye, composed himself to rest, while the whole audience (Pipes himself not excepted) were melted with sorrow; and Mrs. Trunnion consented to quit the room, that she might not be exposed to the unspeakable anguish of seeing him expire.

His last moments, however, were not so near as they imagined; he began to dose, and enjoyed small intervals of ease till next day in the afternoon; during which remissions, he was heard to pour forth many pious ejaculations; expressing his hope, that, for all the heavy cargo of his sins, he should be able to surmount the puttock-shrouds of despair, and get aloft to the cross-trees of God's good favour. At last, his voice sunk so low, as not to be distinguished; and having laid about an hour, almost without any perceptible signs of life, he gave up the ghost, with a groan which announced his decease.

Julia was no sooner certified of this melancholy event, than she ran to her aunt's chamber, weeping aloud; and immediately a very decent concert was performed by the good widow and her attendants. Peregrine and Hatchway retired till the corpse should be laid out; and Pipes having surveyed the body, with a face of rueful attention, 'Well 'fare thy soul, old Hawser Trunnion!' said he: 'man and boy I have known 'thee these five and thirty years; and 'sure a truer heart never broke biscuit. 'Many a hard gale hast thou weathered; 'but now thy spells are all over, and 'thy hull fairly laid up. A better com-'mander I'd never desire to serve; and 'who knows but I may help to set up 'thy standing rigging in another world?'

All the servants of the house were affected with the loss of their old master; and the poor people in the neighbourhood assembled at the gate, and by repeated howlings, expressed their sorrow for the death of their charitable benefactor. Peregrine, though he felt every thing which love and gratitude could inspire on this occasion, was not so much overwhelmed with affliction, as to be incapable of taking the management of the family into his own hands. He gave directions about the funeral with great discretion, after having paid the compliments of condolance to his aunt, whom he consoled with the assurance of his inviolable esteem and affection. He ordered a suit of mourning to be made for every person in the garrison, and inviting all the neighbouring gentlemen to the burial, not even excepting his father and brother Gam, who did not however honour the ceremony with their presence; nor was his mother humane enough to visit her sister-in-law in her distress.

In the method of interment, the commodore's injunctions were obeyed to a tittle; and at the same time our hero made a donation of fifty pounds to the poor of the parish, as a benefaction which his uncle had forgot to bequeath.

Having performed these obsequies with the most pious punctuality, he examined the will, to which there was no addition since it had been first executed; adjusted the payment of all the legacies; and being sole executor, took an account of the estate to which he had succeeded, and which, after all deductions, amounted to thirty thousand pounds. The possession of such a fortune, of which he was absolute master, did not at all contribute to the humiliation of his spirit, but inspired him with new ideas of grandeur and magnificence, and elevated his hope to the highest pinnacle of expectation.

His domestick affairs being settled, he was visited by almost all the gentlemen of the country, who came to pay their compliments of congratulation, on his accession to the estate; and some of them offered their good offices towards a reconciliation betwixt his father and him, induced by the general detestation which was entertained for his brother Gam, who was by this time looked upon by his neighbours as a prodigy of insolence and malice. Our young squire thanked them for their kind proposal, which he accepted; and old Gamaliel, at their intreaties, seemed very well disposed to an accommodation: but, as he would not venture to declare himself, before he had consulted his wife, his favourable disposition was rendered altogether ineffectual, by the instigations of that implacable woman; and our hero resigned all expectation of being reunited to his father's house. His brother, as usual, took all opportunities of injuring his character, by false aspersions and stories misrepresented, in order to prejudice his reputation: nor was his sister Julia suffered to enjoy her good fortune in peace. Had he undergone

dergone such persecution from an alien to his blood, the world would have heard of his revenge; but, notwithstanding his indignation, he was too much tinctured by the prejudices of consanguinity, to lift his arm in judgment against the son of his own parents; and this consideration abridged the term of his residence at the garrison, where he had proposed to stay for some months.

CHAP. II.

THE YOUNG GENTLEMAN HAVING SETTLED HIS DOMESTICK AFFAIRS, ARRIVES IN LONDON, AND SETS UP A GAY EQUIPAGE. HE MEETS WITH EMILIA, AND IS INTRODUCED TO HER UNCLE.

HIS aunt, at the earnest solicitations of Julia and her husband, took up her quarters at the house of that affectionate kinswoman, who made it her chief study to comfort and cherish the disconsolate widow; and Jolter, in expectation of the living, which was not yet vacant, remained in garrison, in quality of land-steward upon our hero's country estate. As for the lieutenant, our young gentleman communed with him in a serious manner, about the commodore's proposal of taking Mrs. Trunnion to wife; and Jack, being quite tired of the solitary situation of a batchelor, which nothing but the company of his old commander could have enabled him him to support so long, far from discovering aversion to the match, observed with an arch smile, that it was not the first time he had commanded a vessel in the absence of Captain Trunnion; and therefore, if the widow was willing, he would chearfully stand by her helm; and, as he hoped the duty would not be of long continuance, do his endeavour to steer her safe into the port, where the commodore might come on board, and take charge of her again.

In consequence of this declaration, it was determined that Mr. Hatchway should make his addresses to Mrs. Trunnion, as soon as decency would permit her to receive them; and Mr. Clover and his wife promised to exert their influence in his behalf. Meanwhile, Jack was desired to live at the castle as usual, and assured, that it should be put wholly in his possession, as soon as he should be able to accomplish this matrimonial scheme.

When Peregrine had settled all these points to his own satisfaction, he took leave of all his friends, and repairing to the great city, purchased a new chariot and horses, put Pipes and another lacquey into rich liveries, took elegant lodgings in Pall Mall, and made a most remarkable appearance among the people of fashion. It was owing to this equipage, and the gaiety of his personal deportment, that common fame, which is always a common lyar, represented him as a young gentleman who had just succeeded to an estate of five thousand pounds per annum, by the death of an uncle; that he was intitled to an equal fortune at the decease of his own father, exclusive of two considerable jointures, which would devolve upon him at the demise of his mother and aunt. This report (false and ridiculous as it was) he could not find in his heart to contradict; not but that he was sorry to find himself so misrepresented: but his vanity would not allow him to take any step that might diminish his importance in the opinion of those who courted his acquaintance, on the supposition that his circumstances were actually as affluent as they were said to be. Nay, so much was he infatuated by this weakness, that he resolved to encourage the deception, by living up to the report: and accordingly engaged in the most expensive parties of pleasure; believing that, before his present finances should be exhausted, his fortune would be effectually made, by the personal accomplishments he should have occasion to display to the beau monde, in the course of his extravagance. In a word, vanity and pride were the ruling foibles of our adventurer, who imagined himself sufficiently qualified to retrieve his fortune in various shapes, long before he could have any idea of want or difficulty. He thought he should have it in his power, at any time, to make prize of a rich heiress, or opulent widow: his ambition had already aspired to the heart of a young handsome duchess dowager, to whose acquaintance he had found means to be introduced; or, should matrimony chance to be unsuitable to his inclinations, he never doubted, that by the interest he might acquire among the nobility, he should be favoured with some lucrative post, that would amply recompense

recompenſe him for the liberality of his diſpoſition. There are many young men who entertain the ſame expectations, with half the reaſon he had to be ſo preſumptuous.

In the midſt of theſe chimerical calculations, his paſſion for Emilia did not ſubſide; but, on the contrary, began to rage to ſuch an inflammation of deſire, that her idea interfered with every other reflection, and abſolutely diſabled him from proſecuting the other lofty ſchemes which his imagination had projected. He therefore laid down the honeſt reſolution of viſiting her in all the ſplendor of his ſituation, in order to practiſe upon her virtue with all his art and addreſs, to the utmoſt extent of his influence and fortune. Nay, ſo effectually had his guilty paſſion abſorbed his principles of honour, conſcience, humanity, and regard for the commodore's laſt words, that he was baſe enough to rejoice at the abſence of his friend Godfrey, who being then with his regiment in Ireland, could not dive into his purpoſe, or take meaſures for fruſtrating his vicious deſign.

Fraught with theſe heroick ſentiments, he determined to ſet out for Suſſex in his chariot and ſix, attended by his valet de chambre and two footmen; and as he was now ſenſible, that in his laſt eſſay he had miſtaken his cue, he determined to change his battery, and ſap the fortreſs by the moſt ſubmiſſive, ſoft, and inſinuating behaviour.

On the evening that preceded this purpoſed expedition, he went into one of the boxes at the playhouſe, as uſual, to ſhew himſelf to the ladies; and in reconnoitring the company through a glaſs, (for no other reaſon, but becauſe it was faſhionable to be purblind) perceived his miſtreſs very plainly dreſſed, in one of the ſeats above the ſtage, talking to another young woman of a very homely appearance. Though his heart beat the alarm with the utmoſt impatience at ſight of his Emilia, he was for ſome minutes deterred from obeying the impulſe of his love, by the preſence of ſome ladies of faſhion, who, he feared, would think the worſe of him, ſhould they ſee him make his compliment in publick to a perſon of her figure. Nor would the violence of his inclination have ſo far prevailed over his pride, as to lead him thither, had not he recollected, that his quality friends would look upon her as ſome handſome Abigail, with whom he had an affair of gallantry, and of conſequence give him credit for the intrigue.

Encouraged by this ſuggeſtion, he complied with the dictates of love, and flew to the place where his charmer ſat. His air and dreſs were ſo remarkable, that it was almoſt impoſſible he ſhould have eſcaped the eyes of a curious obſerver, eſpecially as he had choſen a time for coming in, when his entrance could not fail to attract the notice of the ſpectators; I mean, when the whole houſe was huſhed in attention to the performance on the ſtage. Emilia, therefore, perceived him at his firſt approach; ſhe found herſelf diſcovered by the direction of his glaſs, and gueſſing his intention by his abrupt retreat from the box, ſummoned all her fortitude to her aid, and prepared for his reception. He advanced to her with an air of eagerneſs and joy, tempered with modeſty and reſpect, and expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing her, with a ſeeming reverence of regard. Though ſhe was extremely well pleaſed at this unexpected behaviour, ſhe ſuppreſſed the emotions of her heart, and anſwered his compliments with affected eaſe and unconcern, ſuch as might denote the good-humour of a perſon who meets by accident with an indifferent acquaintance. After having certified himſelf of her own good health, he very kindly enquired about her mother and Miſs Sophy; gave her to underſtand, that he had lately been favoured with a letter from Godfrey; that he had actually intended to ſet out next morning on a viſit to Mrs. Gauntlet, which (now that he was ſo happy as to meet with her) he would poſtpone, until he ſhould have the pleaſure of attending her to the country. After having thanked him for his polite intention, ſhe told him, that her mother was expected in town in a few days, and that ſhe herſelf had come to London ſome weeks ago, to give her attendance upon her aunt, who had been dangerouſly ill, but was now pretty well recovered.

Although the converſation of courſe turned upon general topicks, during the entertainment he took all opportunities of being particular with his eyes, through which he conveyed a thouſand tender proteſtations. She ſaw, and inwardly rejoiced at the humility of his looks, but far from rewarding it with one approving

proving glance, she industriously avoided this ocular intercourse, and rather coquetted with a young gentleman that ogled her from the opposite box. Peregrine's penetration easily detected her sentiments, and he was nettled at her dissimulation, which served to confirm him in his unwarrantable designs upon her person. He persisted in his assiduities with indefatigable perseverance; when the play was concluded, handed her and her companion to an hackney-coach, and with difficulty was permitted to escort them to the house of Emilia's uncle, to whom our hero was introduced by the young lady, as an intimate friend of her brother Godfrey.

The old gentleman, who was no stranger to the nature of Peregrine's connection with his sister's family, prevailed upon him to stay supper, and seemed particularly well pleased with his conversation and deportment, which, by help of his natural sagacity, he wonderfully adapted to the humour of his entertainer. After supper, when the ladies were withdrawn, and the citizen called for his pipe, our sly adventurer followed his example. Though he abhorred the plant, he smoaked with an air of infinite satisfaction, and expatiated upon the virtues of tobacco, as if he had been deeply concerned in the Virginia trade. In the progress of the discourse, he consulted the merchant's disposition; and the national debt coming upon the carpet, held forth upon the funds like a professed broker. When the alderman complained of the restrictions and discouragement of trade, his guest inveighed against exorbitant duties, with the nature of which he seemed as well acquainted as any commissioner of the customs; so that the uncle was astonished at the extent of his knowledge, and expressed his surprize, that a gay young gentleman like him, should have found either leisure or inclination to consider subjects so foreign to the fashionable amusements of youth.

Pickle laid hold on this opportunity to tell him, that he was descended from a race of merchants; and that, early in life, he had made it his business to instruct himself in the different branches of trade, which he not only studied as his family profession, but also as the source of all our national riches and power. He then launched out in praise of commerce, and the promoters thereof; and by way of contrast, employed all his ridicule, in drawing such ludicrous pictures of the manners and education of what is called high life, that the trader's sides were shaken by laughter, even to the danger of his life; and he looked upon our adventurer as a miracle of sobriety and good-sense.

Having thus ingratiated himself with the uncle, Peregrine took his leave, and next day in the forenoon visited the niece in his chariot, after she had been admonished by her kinsman to behave with circumspection, and cautioned against neglecting or discouraging the addresses of such a valuable admirer.

CHAP. III.

HE PROSECUTES HIS DESIGN UPON EMILIA WITH GREAT ART AND PERSEVERANCE.

OUR adventurer, having by his hypocrisy obtained free access to his mistress, began the siege, by professing the most sincere contrition for his former levity, and imploring her forgiveness with such earnest supplication, that, guarded as she was against his flattering arts, she began to believe his protestations, which were even accompanied with tears, and abated a good deal of that severity and distance she had proposed to maintain during this interview. She would not, however, favour him with the least acknowledgment of a mutual passion, because, in the midst of his vows of eternal constancy and truth, he did not mention one syllable of wedlock, though he was now entirely master of his own conduct; and this consideration created a doubt, which fortified her against all his attacks: yet, what her discretion would have concealed, was discovered by her eyes, which, in spite of all her endeavours, breathed forth complacency and love. For her inclination was flattered by her own self-sufficiency, which imputed her admirer's silence, in that particular, to the hurry and perturbation of his spirits, and persuaded her, that he could not possibly regard her with any other than honourable intentions.

The insidious lover exulted in the tenderness of her looks, from which he presaged a compleat victory; but, that he might not over-shoot himself by his

own

own precipitation, he would not run the risk of declaring himself, until her heart should be so far entangled within his snares, as that neither the suggestions of honour, prudence, or pride, should be able to disengage it. Armed with this resolution, he restrained the impatience of his temper within the limits of the most delicate deportment. After having solicited and obtained permission to attend her to the next opera, he took her by the hand, and pressing it to his lips in the most respectful manner, went away, leaving her in a most whimsical state of suspense, chequered with an interesting vicissitude of hope and fear.

On the appointed day, he appeared again about five o'clock in the afternoon, and found her native charms so much improved by the advantages of dress, that he was transported with admiration and delight; and while he conducted her to the Hay Market, could scarce bridle the impetuosity of his passion, so as to observe the forbearing maxims he had adopted. When she entered the pit, he had abundance of food for the gratification of his vanity; for, in a moment, she eclipsed all the female part of the audience, each individual allowing in her own heart, that the stranger was by far the handsomest woman there present, except herself.

Here it was that our hero enjoyed a double triumph; he was vain of this opportunity to enhance his reputation for gallantry among the ladies of fashion, who knew him, and proud of an occasion to display his quality acquaintance to Emilia, that she might entertain the greater idea of the conquest she had made, and pay the more deference to his importance in the sequel of his addresses. That he might profit as much as possible by this situation, he went up and accosted every person in the pit, with whom he ever had the least communication, whispered and laughed with an affected air of familiarity, and even bowed at a distance to some of the nobility, on the slender foundation of having stood near them at court, or presented them with a pinch of rappee at White's chocolate-house.

This ridiculous ostentation, though now practised with a view of promoting his design, was a weakness that in some degree infected the whole of his behaviour; for nothing gave him so much joy in conversation, as an opportunity of giving the company to understand, how well he was with persons of distinguished rank and character: he would often (for example) observe, as it were occasionally, that the Duke of G—— was one of the best-natured men in the world, and illustrate this assertion by some instance of his affability, in which he himself was concerned; then, by an abrupt transition, he would repeat some repartee of Lady T——, and mention a certain bon mot of the Earl of C——, which was uttered in his hearing.

Abundance of young men, in this manner, make free with the names, though they have never had access to the persons of the nobility; but this was not the case with Peregrine, who, in consideration of his appearance and supposed fortune, together with the advantage of his introduction, was by this time freely admitted to the tables of the great.

In his return with Emilia from the opera, though he still maintained the most scrupulous decorum in his behaviour, he plied her with the most passionate expressions of love, squeezed her hand with great fervency, protested that his whole soul was engrossed by her idea, and that he could not exist independent of her favour. Pleased as she was with his warm and pathetick addresses, together with the respectful manner of his making love, she yet had prudence and resolution sufficient to contain her tenderness, which was ready to run over; being fortified against his arts, by reflecting, that if his aim was honourable, it was now his business to declare it. On this consideration, she refused to make any serious reply to his earnest expostulations, but affected to receive them as the undetermined effusions of gallantry and good-breeding.

This fictitious gaiety and good-humour, though it baffled his hope of extorting from her an acknowledgment of which he might have taken immediate advantage, nevertheless encouraged him to observe, (as the chariot passed along the Strand) that the night was far advanced; that supper would certainly be over before they could reach her uncle's house; and to propose, that he should wait upon her to some place, where they might be accommodated with a slight refreshment. She was offended at the freedom of this proposal; which, however,

however, she treated as a joke, thanking him for his courteous offer, and assuring him, that when she should be disposed for a tavern treat, he alone should have the honour of bestowing it.

Her kinsman being engaged with company abroad, and her aunt retired to rest, he had the good fortune to enjoy a *tête à tête* with her during a whole hour, which he employed with such consummate skill, that her caution was almost overcome. He not only assailed her with the artillery of sighs, vows, prayers, and tears, but even pawned his honour in behalf of his love. He swore with many imprecations, that although her heart were surrendered to him at discretion, there was a principle within him, which would never allow him to injure such innocence and beauty; and the transports of his passion had, upon this occasion, so far over-shot his purpose, that if she had demanded an explanation, while he was thus agitated, he would have engaged himself to her wish by such ties, as he could not possibly break with any regard to his reputation. But from such expostulation she was deterred, partly by pride, and partly by the dread of finding herself mistaken in such an interesting conjecture. She therefore enjoyed the present flattering appearance of her fate, was prevailed upon to accept the jewels, which he purchased with part of his winning at Bath, and with the most inchanting condescension submitted to a warm embrace; when he took his leave, after having obtained permission to visit her, as often as his inclination and convenience would permit.

In his return to his own lodgings, he was buoyed up with his success to an extravagance of hope; already congratulated himself upon his triumph over Emilia's virtue; and began to project future conquests among the most dignified characters of the female sex. But his attention was not all dissipated by these vain reflections; he resolved to concentrate the whole exertion of his soul upon the execution of his present plan; desisted, in the mean time, from all other schemes of pleasure, interest, and ambition; and took lodgings in the city, for the more commodious accomplishment of his purpose.

While our lover's imagination was thus agreeably regaled, his mistress did not enjoy her expectations, without the intervention of doubts and anxiety. His silence touching the final aim of his addresses was a mystery on which she was afraid of exercising her sagacity; and her uncle tormented her with enquiries into the circumstances of Peregrine's professions and deportment. Rather than give this relation the least cause of suspicion, which must have cut off all intercourse betwixt her and her admirer, she said every thing which she thought would satisfy his care and concern for her welfare; and in consequence of such representation, she enjoyed, without reserve, the company of our adventurer, who prosecuted his plan with surprizing eagerness and perseverance.

CHAP. IV.

HE PREVAILS UPON EMILIA TO ACCOMPANY HIM TO A MASQUERADE; MAKES A TREACHEROUS ATTEMPT UPON HER AFFECTION, AND MEETS WITH A DESERVED REPULSE.

SCARCE a night elapsed in which he did not conduct her to some publick entertainment. When, by the dint of his insidious carriage, he thought himself in full possession of her confidence and affection, he lay in wait for an opportunity; and hearing her observe in conversation, that she had never been at a masquerade, begged leave to attend her to the next ball; at the same time, extending his invitation to the young lady, in whose company he had found her at the play, she being present when this subject of discourse was introduced. He had flattered himself, that this gentlewoman would decline the proposal, as she was a person seemingly of a demure disposition, who had been born and bred in the city, where such diversions are looked upon as scenes of lewdness and debauchery. For once, however, he reckoned without his host; curiosity is as prevalent in the city as at the court end of the town: Emilia no sooner signified her assent to his proposal, than her friend, with an air of satisfaction, agreed to make one of the *partie*; and he was obliged to thank her for that complaisance which laid him under infinite mortification. He set his genius at work, to invent some scheme for preventing her unseasonable intrusion. Had

an opportunity offered, he would have acted as her phyſician, and adminiſtered a medicine that would have laid her under the neceſſity of ſtaying at home; but his acquaintance with her being too ſlight to furniſh him with the means of executing this expedient, he deviſed another, which was practiſed with all imaginable ſucceſs. Underſtanding that her grandmother had left her a ſum of money independent of her parents, he conveyed a letter to her mother, intimating, that her daughter, on pretence of going to the maſquerade, intended to beſtow herſelf in marriage to a certain perſon, and that in a few days ſhe would be informed of the circumſtances of the whole intrigue, provided ſhe would keep this information ſecret, and contrive ſome excuſe for detaining the young lady at home, without giving her cauſe to believe ſhe was apprized of her intention. This billet, ſubſcribed, 'Your well-'wiſher, and unknown humble ſervant,' had the deſired effect upon the careful matron; who, on the ball-day, feigned herſelf ſo extremely ill, that Miſs could not, with any decency, quit her mamma's apartment; and therefore ſent her apology to Emilia in the afternoon, immediately after the arrival of Peregeine, who pretended to be very much afflicted with the diſappointment, while his heart throbbed with a tranſport of joy.

About ten o'clock the lovers ſet out for the Hay Market, he being dreſſed in the habit of Pantaloon, and ſhe in that of Columbine; and they had ſcarce entered the houſe, when the muſick ſtruck up, the curtain was withdrawn, and the whole ſcene diſplayed at once, to the admiration of Emilia, whoſe expectation was infinitely ſurpaſſed by this exhibition. Our gallant having conducted her through all the different apartments; and deſcribed the œconomy of the place, led her into the circle, and, in their turn, they danced ſeveral minuets; then going to the ſide-board, he prevailed upon her to eat ſome ſweetmeats and drink a glaſs of Champagne. After a ſecond review of the company, they engaged in country-dances, at which exerciſe they continued, until our adventurer concluded, that his partner's blood was ſufficiently warmed for the proſecution of his deſign. On this ſuppoſition, which was built upon her deſcaring, that ſhe was thirſty and fatigued, he perſuaded her to take a little refreſhment and repoſe; and for that purpoſe, handed her down ſtairs into the eating-room, where, having ſeated her on the floor, he preſented her with a glaſs of wine and water; and, as ſhe complained of being faint, enriched the draught with ſome drops of a certain elixir, which he recommended as a moſt excellent reſtorative, though it was no other than a ſtimulative tincture, which he had treacherouſly provided for the occaſion. Having ſwallowed this potion, by which her ſpirits were manifeſtly exhilarated, ſhe ate a ſlice of ham, with the wing of a cold pullet, and concluded the meal with a glaſs of Burgundy, which ſhe drank at the earneſt intreaty of her admirer. Theſe extraordinary cordials co-operating with the ferment of her blood, which was heated by violent motion, could not fail to affect the conſtitution of a delicate young creature, who was naturally ſprightly and volatile. Her eyes began to ſparkle with unuſual fire and vivacity, a thouſand brilliant ſallies of wit eſcaped her, and every maſque that accoſted her underwent ſome ſmarting repartee.

Peregrine, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his adminiſtration, propoſed that they ſhould reſume their places at the country-dances, with a view to promote and aſſiſt the efficacy of his elixir; and when he thought her diſpoſition was properly adapted for the ſcheme, began to ply her with all the elocution of love. In order to elevate his own ſpirits to that pitch of reſolution which his ſcheme required, he drank two whole bottles of Burgundy, which inflamed his paſſion to ſuch a degree, that he found himſelf capable of undertaking and perpetrating any ſcheme for the gratification of his deſire.

Emilia, warmed by ſo many concurring incentives, in favour of the man ſhe loved, abated conſiderably of her wonted reſerve, liſtened to his proteſtations with undiſſembled pleaſure, and in the confidence of her ſatisfaction, even owned him abſolute maſter of her affections. Raviſhed with this confeſſion, he now deemed himſelf on the brink of reaping the delicious fruits of his art and aſſiduity; and the morning being already pretty far advanced, aſſented with rapture to the firſt propoſal ſhe made of retiring to her lodgings. The blinds of the chariot being pulled up, he took advantage of the favourable

ſituation of her thoughts, and on pretence of being whimſical, in conſequence of the wine he had ſwallowed, claſped her in his arms, and imprinted a thouſand kiſſes on her pouting lips, a freedom which ſhe pardoned as the privilege of intoxication. While he thus indulged himſelf with impunity, the carriage halted, and Pipes opening the door, his maſter handed her into the paſſage, before ſhe perceived that it was not her uncle's houſe, at which they had alighted.

Alarmed at this diſcovery, ſhe with ſome confuſion deſired to know his reaſon for conducting her to a ſtrange place at theſe hours: but he made no reply, until he had led her into an apartment, when he gave her to underſtand, that as her uncle's family muſt be diſturbed by her going thither ſo late in the night, and the ſtreets near Temple-bar were infeſted by a multitude of robbers and cut-throats, he had ordered his coachman to halt at this houſe, which was kept by a relation of his, a mighty good ſort of a gentlewoman, who would be proud of an opportunity to accomodate a perſon for whom he was known to entertain ſuch tenderneſs and eſteem.

Emilia had too much penetration to be impoſed upon by this plauſible pretext: in ſpite of her partiality for Peregrine, which had never been inflamed to ſuch a pitch of complacency before, ſhe comprehended his whole plan in a twinkling. Though her blood boiled with indignation, ſhe thanked him with an affected air of ſerenity for his kind concern, and expreſſed her obligation to his couſin; but, at the ſame time, inſiſted upon going home, leſt her abſence ſhould terrify her uncle and aunt, who ſhe knew would not retire to reſt till her return.

He urged her, with a thouſand remonſtrances, to conſult her own eaſe and ſafety, promiſing to ſend Pipes into the city, for the ſatisfaction of her relations: but finding her obſtinately deaf to his intreaties, he aſſured her, that he would in a few minutes comply with her requeſt; and, in the mean time, begged ſhe would fortify herſelf againſt the cold with a cordial, which he poured out in her preſence, and which (now that her ſuſpicion was aroused) ſhe refuſed to taſte, notwithſtanding all his importunities. He then fell upon his knees before her, and the tears guſhing from his eyes, ſwore that his paſſion was wound up to ſuch a pitch of impatience, that he could no longer live upon the unſubſtantial food of expectation; and that, if ſhe would not vouchſafe to crown his happineſs, he would forthwith ſacrifice himſelf to her diſdain. Such an abrupt addreſs, accompanied with all the ſymptoms of frantick agitation, could not fail to perplex and affright the gentle Emilia; who, after ſome recollection, replied with a reſolute tone, that ſhe could not ſee what reaſon he had to complain of her reſerve, which ſhe was not at liberty to lay entirely aſide, until he ſhould have avowed his intentions in form, and obtained the ſanction of thoſe whom it was her duty to obey. 'Divine creature!' cried he, ſeizing her hand, and preſſing it to his lips, 'it is from you alone I hope for 'that condeſcenſion, which would over-'whelm me with tranſports of celeſtial 'bliſs. The ſentiments of parents are 'ſordid, ſilly, and confined; ſeek not 'then to ſubject my paſſion to ſuch low 'reſtrictions as were calculated for the 'purpoſes of common life: My love 'is too delicate and refined to wear 'thoſe vulgar fetters, which ſerve only 'to deſtroy the merit of voluntary af-'fection, and to upbraid a man inceſ-'ſantly with the articles of compulſion, 'under which he lies. My dear angel! 'ſpare me the mortification of being 'compelled to love you, and reign ſole 'empreſs of my heart and fortune. I 'will not affront you ſo much as to talk 'of ſettlements; my all is at your diſ-'poſal. In this pocket-book are notes 'to the amount of two thouſand pounds; 'do me the pleaſure to accept of them; 'to-morrow I will lay ten thouſand 'more in your lap. In a word, you 'ſhall be miſtreſs of my whole eſtate, 'and I ſhall think myſelf happy in living 'dependent on your bounty!'

Heavens! what were the emotions of the virtuous, the ſenſible, the delicate, the tender Emilia's heart, when ſhe heard this inſolent declaration from the mouth of a man whom ſhe had honoured with her affection and eſteem! It was not ſimply horror, grief, or indignation, that ſhe felt, in conſequence of this unworthy treatment, but the united pangs of all together, which produced a ſort of hyſterick laugh, while ſhe told him, that ſhe could not help admiring his generoſity.

Deceived

Stothard Del.

Grignion Sculp.

Plate X.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Oct 7 1781.

Deceived by this convulſion, and the ironical compliment that attended it, the lover thought he had already made great progreſs in his operations, and that it was now his buſineſs to ſtorm the fort by a vigorous aſſault, that he might ſpare her the confuſion of yielding without reſiſtance. Poſſeſſed by this vain ſuggeſtion, he ſtarted up, and folding her in his arms, began to obey the furious dictate of his unruly and ungenerous deſire. With an air of cool determination, ſhe demanded a parley; and when, upon her repeated requeſt, he granted it, addreſſed herſelf to him in theſe words, while her eyes gleamed with all the dignity of the moſt awful reſentment. 'Sir, I ſcorn to upbraid 'you with a repetition of your former 'vows and proteſtations, nor will I 'recapitulate the little arts you have 'practiſed to enſnare my heart; be'cauſe, though by dint of the moſt per'fidious diſſimulation, you have found 'means to deceive my opinion, your 'utmoſt efforts have never been able to 'lull the vigilance of my conduct, or 'to engage my affection beyond the 'power of diſcarding you without a 'tear, whenever my honour ſhould de'mand ſuch a ſacrifice. Sir, you are 'unworthy of my concern or regret, 'and the ſigh that now ſtruggles from 'my breaſt, is the reſult of ſorrow, for 'my own want of diſcernment. As 'for your preſent attempt upon my 'chaſtity, I deſpiſe your power as I 'deteſt your intention. Though, under 'the maſk of the moſt delicate reſpect, 'you have decoyed me from the imme'diate protection of my friends, and 'contrived other impious ſtratagems to 'ruin my peace and reputation, I con'fide too much in my own innocence, 'and the authority of the law, to admit 'one thought of fear, much leſs to ſink 'under the horror of this ſhocking ſitua'tion, into which I have been ſeduced. 'Sir, your behaviour on this occaſion, 'is, in all reſpects, low and contemp'tible: for, ruffian as you are, you 'durſt not harbour one thought of exe'cuting your execrable ſcheme, while 'you knew my brother was near enough 'to prevent or revenge the inſult; ſo 'that you muſt not only be a treache'rous villain, but alſo a moſt deſpi'cable coward!' Having expreſſed herſelf in this manner, with a moſt majeſtick ſeverity of aſpect, ſhe opened the door, and walking down ſtairs with ſurprizing reſolution, committed herſelf to the care of a watchman, who accommodated her with a hackney-chair, in which ſhe was ſafely conveyed to her uncle's houſe.

Meanwhile, the lover was ſo confounded and over-awed by theſe cutting reproaches, and her animated behaviour, that all his reſolution forſook him, and he found himſelf not only incapable of obſtructing her retreat, but even of uttering one ſyllable to deprecate her wrath, or extenuate the guilt of his own conduct. The nature of his diſappointment, and the keen remorſe that ſeized him, when he reflected upon the diſhonourable footing on which his character ſtood with Emilia, raiſed ſuch perturbation in his mind, that his ſilence was ſucceeded by a violent fit of diſtraction, during which he raved like a Bedlamite, and acted a thouſand extravagances, which convinced the people of the houſe (a certain bagnio) that he had actually loſt his wits. Pipes, with great concern, adopted the ſame opinion; and, being aſſiſted by the waiters, hindered him, by main force, from running out and purſuing the fair fugitive; whom, in his delirium, he alternately curſed and commended, with horrid imprecations and laviſh applauſe. His faithful valet, having waited two whole hours, in hope of ſeeing this guſt of paſſion overblown, and perceiving that the paroxyſm ſeemed rather to increaſe, very prudently ſent for a phyſician of his maſter's acquaintance; who having conſidered the circumſtances and ſymptoms of the diſorder, directed that he ſhould be plentifully blooded, without loſs of time, and preſcribed a draught to compoſe the tumult of his ſpirits. Theſe orders being punctually performed, he grew more calm and tractable; recovered his reflection ſo far, as to be aſhamed of the extaſy he had undergone; ſuffered himſelf quietly to be undreſſed, and put to bed; where the fatigue occaſioned by his exerciſe at the maſquerade, co-operated with the preſent diſſipation of his ſpirits to lull him into a profound ſleep, which greatly tended to the preſervation of his intellects: not that he found himſelf in a ſtate of perfect tranquillity, when he awaked about noon. The remembrance of what had paſſed overwhelmed him with mortification. Emilia's invectives ſtill ſounded in his ears:

and while he deeply resented her disdain, he could not help admiring her spirit, and in his heart did homage to her charms.

CHAP. V.

HE ENDEAVOURS TO RECONCILE HIMSELF TO HIS MISTRESS, AND EXPOSTULATES WITH THE UNCLE, WHO FORBIDS HIM THE HOUSE.

IN this state of division, he went home to his own lodgings in a chair; and while he deliberated with himself whether he should relinquish the pursuit, and endeavour to banish her idea from his breast, or go immediately and humble himself before his exasperated mistress, and offer his hand as an atonement for his crime, his servant put in his hand a packet, which had been delivered by a ticket-porter at the door. He no sooner perceived that the superscription was in Emilia's hand-writing, than he guessed the nature of the contents; and opening the seal with disordered eagerness, found the jewels he had given to her, inclosed in a billet couched in these words.

'THAT I may have no cause to 'reproach myself with having 'retained the least memorial of a wretch 'whom I equally despise and abhor, I 'take this opportunity of restoring these 'ineffectual instruments of his infamous 'design upon the honour of

'EMILIA.'

His chagrin was so much galled and inflamed at the bitterness of this contemptuous message, that he gnawed his fingers till the blood ran over his nails, and even wept with vexation. Sometimes he vowed revenge against her haughty virtue, and reviled himself for his precipitate declaration, before his scheme was brought to maturity; then he would consider her behaviour with reverence and regard, and bow before the irresistible power of her attractions. In short, his breast was torn by conflicting passions; love, shame, and remorse, contended with vanity, ambition, and revenge; and the superiority was still doubtful, when headstrong desire interposed, and decided in favour of an attempt towards a reconciliation with the offended fair.

Impelled by this motive, he set out in the afternoon for the house of her uncle, not without hopes of that tender enjoyment which never fails to attend an accommodation betwixt two lovers of taste and sensibility. Though the consciousness of his trespass encumbered him with an air of awkward confusion, he was too confident of his own qualifications and address to despair of forgiveness; and by that time he arrived at the citizen's gate, he had conned a very artful and pathetick harangue, which he proposed to utter in his own behalf, laying the blame of his conduct on the impetuosity of his passion, incensed by the Burgundy, which he had too liberally drank: but he did not meet with an opportunity to avail himself of this preparation. Emilia, suspecting that he would take some step of this kind to retrieve her favour, had gone abroad on pretence of visiting, after having signified to her kinsman, her resolution to avoid the company of Peregrine, on account of some ambiguities which (she said) were last night remarkable in his demeanour at the masquerade. She chose to insinuate her suspicions in these hints, rather than give an explicit detail of the young man's dishonourable contrivance, which might have kindled the resentment of the family to some dangerous pitch of animosity and revenge.

Our adventurer, finding himself baffled in his expectation of seeing her, enquired for the old gentleman, with whom he thought he had influence enough to make his apology good, in case he should find him prepossessed by the young lady's information. But here too he was disappointed; the uncle had gone to dine in the country, and his wife was indisposed; so that he had no pretext for staying in the house till the return of his charmer. Being, however, fruitful of expedients, he dismissed his chariot, and took possession of a room in a tavern, the windows of which fronted the merchant's gate; and there he proposed to watch until he should see her approach. This scheme he put in practice with indefatigable patience, though it was not attended with the expected success.

Emilia, whose caution was equally vigilant and commendable, foreseeing that

that she might be exposed to the fertility of his invention, came home by a private passage, and entered by a postern, which was altogether unknown to her admirer; and her uncle did not arrive until it was so late that he could not with any decency demand a conference.

Next morning he did not fail to present himself at the door, and his mistress being denied by her own express direction, insisted upon seeing the master of the house; who received him with such coldness of civility, as plainly gave him to understand, that he was acquainted with the displeasure of his neice. He therefore, with an air of candour, told the citizen, he could easily perceive, by his behaviour, that he was the confident of Miss Emily, of whom he was come to ask pardon for the offence he had given; and did not doubt, if he could be admitted to her presence, that he should be able to convince her, that he had not erred intentionally, or at least propose such reparation as would effectually atone for his fault.

To this remonstrance the merchant, without any ceremony or circumlocution, answered, that though he was ignorant of the nature of his offence, he was very certain, that it must have been something very flagrant that could irritate his neice to such a degree, against a person for whom she had formerly a most particular regard. He owned, she had declared her intention to renounce his acquaintance for ever, and, doubtless, she had good reason for so doing; neither would he undertake to promote an accommodation, unless he would give him full power to treat on the score of matrimony, which he supposed would be the only means of evincing his own sincerity, and obtaining Emilia's forgiveness.

Peregrine's pride was kindled by this blunt declaration, which he could not help considering as the result of a scheme concerted betwixt the young lady and her uncle, in order to take the advantage of his heat. He therefore replied, with manifest signs of disgust, that he did not apprehend there was any occasion for a mediator to reconcile the difference betwixt Emilia and him; and that all he desired was an opportunity of pleading in his own behalf.

The citizen frankly told him, that as his neice had expressed an earnest desire of avoiding his company, he would not put the least constraint upon her inclination; and in the mean time gave him to know, that he was particularly engaged.

Our hero glowing with indignation at this supercilious treatment; 'I was 'in the wrong,' said he, 'to look for 'good-manners so far on this side of 'Temple-bar: but you must give me 'leave to tell you, Sir, that unless I 'am favoured with an interview with 'Miss Gauntlet, I shall conclude, that 'you have actually laid a constraint 'upon her inclination for some sinister 'purposes of your own.'—'Sir,' replied the old gentleman, 'you are welcome to make what conclusions shall 'seem good unto your own imagination; 'but, pray be so good as to allow me 'the privilege of being master in my 'own house.' So saying, he very complaisantly shewed him to the door; and our lover being diffident of his own temper, as well as afraid of being used with greater indignity, in a place where his personal prowess would only serve to heighten his disgrace, quitted the house in a transport of rage which he could not wholly suppress, telling the landlord, that if his age did not protect him, he would have chastised him for his insolent behaviour.

CHAP. VI.

HE PROJECTS A VIOLENT SCHEME, IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH HE IS INVOLVED IN A MOST FATIGUING ADVENTURE, WHICH GREATLY TENDS TOWARDS THE AUGMENTATION OF HIS CHAGRIN.

THUS debarred of personal communication with his mistress, he essayed to retrieve her good graces by the most submissive and pathetick letters, which he conveyed by divers artifices to her perusal; but reaping no manner of benefit from these endeavours, his passion acquired a degree of impatience, little inferior to downright frenzy; and he determined to run every risk of life, fortune, and reputation, rather than desist from his unjustifiable pursuit. Indeed, his resentment was now as deeply concerned as his love, and each of these passions equally turbulent and loud in demanding gratification. He kept centinels

tinels continually in pay, to give him notice of her outgoings, in expectation of finding some opportunity to carry her off; but her circumspection entirely frustrated this design; for she suspected every thing of that sort from a disposition like his, and regulated her motions accordingly.

Baffled by her prudence and penetration, he altered his plan. On pretence of being called to his country-house by some affair of importance, he departed from London, and taking lodgings at a farmer's house, that stood near the road through which she must have necessarily passed, in her return to her mother, concealed himself from all intercourse, except with his valet de chambre and Pipes, who had orders to scour the country, and reconnoitre every horse, coach, or carriage, that should appear on that highway, with a view of intercepting his Amanda in her passage.

He had waited in this ambuscade a whole week, when his valet gave him notice, that he and his fellow-scout had discovered a chaise and six, driving at full speed towards them; upon which, they had flapped their hats over their eyes, so as that they might not be known, in case they should be seen, and concealed themselves behind a hedge, from whence they could perceive in the carriage, as it passed, a young man plainly dressed, with a lady in a mask, of the exact size, shape, and air of Emilia; and that Pipes followed them at a distance, while he rode back to communicate this piece of intelligence.

Peregrine would scarce allow him time to conclude his information; he ran down to the stable, where his horse was kept ready saddled for the purpose, and never doubting that the lady in question was his mistress, attended by one of her uncle's clerks, mounted immediately, and rode full gallop after the chaise, which, when he had proceeded about two miles, he understood from Pipes had put up at a neighbouring inn. Though his inclination prompted him to enter her apartment without farther delay, he suffered himself to be dissuaded from taking such a precipitate step, by his privy-counsellor, who observed, that it would be impracticable to execute his purpose of conveying her against her will from a publick inn, that stood in the midst of a populous village, which would infallibly rise in her defence. He advised him, therefore, to lie in wait for the chaise, in some remote and private part of the road, where they might accomplish their aim without difficulty or danger. In consequence of this admonition, our adventurer ordered Pipes to reconnoitre the inn, that she might not escape another way, while he and the valet, in order to avoid being seen, took a circuit by an unfrequented path, and placed themselves in ambush, on a spot which they chose for the scene of their atchievement. Here they tarried a full hour, without seeing the carriage, or hearing from their centinel: so that the youth, unable to exert his patience one moment longer, left the foreigner in his station, and rode back to his faithful lacquey, who assured him, that the travellers had not yet hove up their anchor, or proceeded on their voyage.

Notwithstanding this intimation, Pickle began to entertain such alarming suspicions, that he could not refrain from advancing to the gate, and enquire for the company which had lately arrived in a chaise and six. The inn-keeper, who was not at all pleased with the behaviour of those passengers, did not think proper to observe the instructions he had received; on the contrary, he plainly told him, that the chaise did not halt, but only entered at one door, and went out at the other, with a view to deceive those who pursued it, as he guessed from the words of the gentleman, who had earnestly desired, that his rout might be concealed from any person who should enquire about their motions. 'As for my own peart, 'measter,' continued this charitable publican, 'I believes as how they are no better 'than they should be, else they wouldn't 'be in such a deadly fear of being over-'taken. "Methinks," said I, when I 'saw them in such a woundy pother to 'be gone, "oddsheartikins! this must be "some London 'prentice running away "with his measter's daughter, as sure "as I am a living soul." But, be he 'who he will, sartain it is, a has nothing 'of the gentleman about en; for, thof 'a axed such a favour, a never once put 'hand in pocket, or said, "Dog, will "you drink?" Howsomever, that don't 'argufy in reverence of his being in a 'hurry; and a man may be sometimes 'a little too judgmatical in his con-'jectures.' In all probability, this loquacious landlord would have served the traveller

traveller effectually, had Peregrine heard him to an end; but this impetuous youth, far from liſtening to the ſequel of his obſervations, interrupted him in the beginning of his career, by aſking eagerly, which road they followed; and having received the inn-keeper's direction, clapped ſpurs to his horſe, commanding Pipes to make the valet acquainted with his courſe, that they might attend him with all imaginary diſpatch.

By the publican's account of their conduct, his former opinion was fully confirmed; he plied the ſteed to the height of his mettle, and ſo much was his imagination ingroſſed by the proſpect of having Emilia in his power, that he did not perceive the road on which he travelled was quite different from that which led to the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet. The valet de chambre was an utter ſtranger to that part of the country; and as for Mr. Pipes, ſuch conſiderations were altogether foreign to the œconomy of his reflection.

Ten long miles had our hero rode, when his eyes were bleſſed with the ſight of the chaiſe aſcending an hill, at the diſtance of a good league; upon which he doubled his diligence in ſuch a manner, that he gained upon the carriage every minute, and at length approached ſo near to it, that he could diſcern the lady and her conductor, with their heads thruſt out at the windows, looking back, and ſpeaking to the driver alternately, as if they earneſtly beſought him to augment the ſpeed of his cattle.

Being thus, as it were, in ſight of port, while he croſſed the road, his horſe happened to plunge into a cart-rut with ſuch violence, that he was thrown ſeveral yards over his head; and the beaſt's ſhoulder being ſlipped by the fall, he found himſelf diſabled from plucking the fruit, which was almoſt within his reach; for he had left his ſervants at a conſiderable diſtance behind him; and although they had been at his back, and ſupplied him with another horſe, they were ſo indifferently mounted, that he could not reaſonably expect to overtake the flyers, who profited ſo much by this diſaſter, that the chaiſe vaniſhed in a moment.

It may be eaſily conceived, how a young man of his diſpoſition paſſed his time in this tantalizing ſituation. He ejaculated with great fervency, but his prayers were not the effects of reſignation. He ran back on foot with incredible ſpeed, in order to meet his valet, whom he unhorſed in a twinkling; and, taking his ſeat, began to exerciſe his whip and ſpurs, after having ordered the Swiſs to follow him on the other gelding, and committed the lame hunter to the care of Pipes.

Matters being adjuſted in this manner, our adventurer proſecuted the race with all his might; and having made ſome progreſs, was informed by a countryman, that the chaiſe had ſtruck off into another road, and, according to his judgment, was by that time about three miles a-head; though, in all probability, the horſes would not be able to hold out much longer, becauſe they ſeemed to be quite ſpent when they paſſed his door. Encouraged by this intimation, Peregrine puſhed on with great alacrity; though he could not regain ſight of the deſired object, till the clouds of night began to deepen, and even then he enjoyed nothing more than a tranſient glimpſe; for the carriage was no ſooner ſeen, than ſhrouded again from his view. Theſe vexatious circumſtances animated his endeavours, while they irritated his chagrin: in ſhort, he continued his purſuit till the night was far advanced, and himſelf ſo uncertain about the object of his care, that he entered a ſolitary inn, with a view of obtaining ſome intelligence, when, to his infinite joy, he perceived the chaiſe ſtanding by itſelf, and the horſes panting in the yard. In full confidence of his having arrived at laſt at the goal of all his wiſhes, he alighted inſtantaneouſly, and running up to the coachman, with a piſtol in his hand, commanded him, in an imperious tone, to conduct him to the lady's chamber, on pain of death. The driver, affrighted at this menacing addreſs, proteſted with great humility, that he did not know whither his fare had retired; for that he himſelf was paid and diſmiſſed from this ſervice, becauſe he would not undertake to drive them all night acroſs the country, without ſtopping to refreſh his horſes: but he promiſed to go in queſt of the waiter, who would ſhew him to their apartment. He was accordingly detached on that errand, while our hero ſtood centinel at the gate, till the arrival of his valet de chambre, who joining him by accident, before the coachman returned, relieved him in his watch; and then the young gentleman, exaſperated

rated at his meſſenger's delay, ruſhed with fury in his eyes from room to room, denouncing vengeance upon the whole family; but he did not meet with one living ſoul, until he entered the garret, where he found the landlord and his wife in bed. This chicken-hearted couple, by the light of a ruſh-candle that burned on the hearth, ſeeing a ſtranger burſt into the chamber, in ſuch a terrible attitude, were ſeized with conſternation; and exalting their voices, in a moſt lamentable ſtrain, begged for the paſſion of Chriſt, that he would ſpare their lives, and take all they had.

Peregrine gueſſing from this exclamation, and the circumſtance of their being a-bed, that they miſtook him for a robber, and were ignorant of that which he wanted to know, diſpelled their terror, by making them acquainted with the cauſe of his viſit, and deſired the huſband to get up with all poſſible diſpatch, in order to aſſiſt and attend him in his ſearch.

Thus reinforced, he rummaged every corner of the inn, and at laſt finding the oſtler in the ſtable, was by him informed, (to his unſpeakable mortification) that the gentleman and lady who arrived in the chaiſe, had immediately hired poſt-horſes for a certain village at the diſtance of fifteen miles, and departed without halting for the leaſt refreſhment. Our adventurer, mad with his diſappointment, mounted his horſe in an inſtant, and, with his attendant, took the ſame road, with full determination to die, rather than deſiſt from the proſecution of his deſign. He had, by this time, rode upwards of thirty miles ſince three o'clock in the afternoon; ſo that the horſes were almoſt quite jaded, and travelled this ſtage ſo ſlowly, that it was morning before they reached the place of their deſtination, where, far from finding the fugitives, he underſtood, that no ſuch perſons as he deſcribed had paſſed that way, and that in all likelihood they had taken a quite contrary direction, while, in order to miſlead him in his purſuit, they had amuſed the oſtler with a falſe route. This conjecture was ſtrengthened by his perceiving, (now, for the firſt time) that he had deviated a conſiderable way from the road, through which they muſt have journeyed, in order to arrive at the place of her mother's reſidence; and theſe ſuggeſtions utterly deprived him of the ſmall remains of recollection, which he had hitherto retained. His eyes rolled about, witneſſing rage and diſtraction; he foamed at the mouth, ſtamped upon the ground with great violence, uttered incoherent imprecations againſt himſelf and all mankind, and would have ſallied forth again: he knew not whither, upon the ſame horſe, which he had already almoſt killed with fatigue, had not his confident found means to quiet the tumult of his thoughts, and recal his reflection, by repreſenting the condition of the poor animals, and adviſing him to hire freſh horſes, and ride poſt acroſs the country, to the village in the neighbourhood of Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation, where they ſhould infallibly intercept the daughter, provided they could get the ſtart of her upon the road.

Peregrine not only reliſhed, but forthwith acted in conformity with this good counſel. His own horſes were committed to the charge of the landlord, with directions for Pipes, in caſe he ſhould come in queſt of his maſter; and a couple of ſtout geldings being prepared, he and his valet took the road again, ſteering their courſe according to the motions of the poſt-boy, who undertook to be their guide. They had almoſt finiſhed the firſt ſtage, when they deſcried a poſt-chaiſe juſt halting at the inn where they propoſed to change horſes; upon which our adventurer, glowing with a moſt intereſting preſage, put his beaſt to the full ſpeed, and approached near enough to diſtinguiſh, as the travellers quitted the carriage, that he had at laſt come up with the very individual perſons whom he had purſued ſo long.

Fluſhed with this diſcovery, he galloped into the yard ſo ſuddenly, that the lady and her conductor ſcarce had time to ſhut themſelves up in a chamber, to which they retreated with great precipitation; ſo that the purſuer was now certain of having houſed his prey. That he might, however, leave nothing to fortune, he placed himſelf upon the ſtair, by which they had aſcended to the apartment, and ſent up his compliments to the young lady, deſiring the favour of being admitted to her preſence, otherwiſe he ſhould be obliged to wave all ceremony, and take that liberty which ſhe would not give. The ſervant having conveyed his meſſage through the key-hole, returned with an anſwer, importing, that ſhe would adhere to the reſolu-

tion

tion she had taken, and perish rather than comply with his will. Our adventurer, without staying to make any rejoinder to this reply, ran up stairs, and thundering at the door for entrance, was given to understand by the nymph's attendant, that he would do well to spare him the necessity of shedding blood, in defence of a person who had put herself under his protection. 'All the laws of the 'land,' said he, 'cannot now untie the 'knots by which we are bound toge-'ther; and therefore I will guard her 'as my own property; so that you had 'better desist from your fruitless at-'tempt, and thereby consult your own 'safety: for, by the God that made 'me! I will discharge my piece upon 'you, as soon as you set your nose with-'in the door; and your blood be upon 'your own head.' These menaces from a citizen's clerk would have been sufficient motives for Pickle to storm the breach, although they had not been reinforced by that declaration, which informed him of Emilia's having bestowed herself in marriage upon such a contemptible rival. This sole consideration added wings to his impetuosity, and he applied his foot to the door with such irresistible force, as bursted it open in an instant, entering at the same time with a pistol ready cocked in his hand. His antagonist, instead of firing his blunderbuss, when he saw him approach, started back with evident signs of surprize and consternation, exclaiming, 'Lord Jesus! Sir, you are not the man! 'and, without doubt, are under some 'mistake with regard to us.'

Before Peregrine had time to answer this salutation, the lady hearing it, advanced to him, and pulling off a mask, discovered a face which he had never seen before. The Gorgon's head, according to the fables of antiquity, never had a more instantaneous or petrifying effect, than that which this countenance produced in the astonished youth. His eyes were fixed upon this unknown object, as if they had been attracted by the power of inchantment; his feet seemed rivetted to the ground; and after having stood motionless for the space of a few minutes, he dropped down in an apoplexy of disappointment and despair. The Swiss, who had followed him, seeing his master in this condition, lifted him up, and laying him upon a bed in the next room, let him blood immediately, without hesitation, being always provided with a case of lancets, against all accidents on the road. To this foresight our hero, in all probability, was indebted for his life. By virtue of a very copious evacuation, he recovered the use of his senses; but the complication of fatigues, and violent transports which he had undergone, brewed up a dangerous fever in his blood; and a physician being called from the next market-town, several days elapsed before he would answer for his life.

CHAP. VII.

PEREGRINE SENDS A MESSAGE TO MRS. GAUNTLET, WHO REJECTS HIS PROPOSAL. HE REPAIRS TO THE GARRISON.

AT length, however, his constitution overcame his disease, though not before it had in a great measure tamed the fury of his disposition, and brought him to a serious consideration of his conduct. In this humiliation of his spirits, he reflected with shame and remorse upon his treachery to the fair, the innocent Emilia; he remembered his former sentiments in her favour, as well as the injunctions of his dying uncle; he recollected his intimacy with her brother, against which he had so basely sinned; and revolving all the circumstances of her conduct, found it so commendable, spirited, and noble, that he deemed her an object of sufficient dignity to merit his honourable addresses, even though his duty had not been concerned in the decision: but, obligated as he was, to make reparation to a worthy family, which he had so grossly injured, he thought he could not manifest his reformation too soon; and, whenever he found himself able to hold a pen, wrote a letter to Mrs. Gauntlet, wherein he acknowledged, with many expressions of sorrow and contrition, that he had acted a part altogether unbecoming a man of honour, and should never enjoy the least tranquillity of mind, until he should have merited her forgiveness. He protested, that although his happiness entirely depended upon the determination of Emilia, he would even renounce all hope of being blessed with her favour, if she could point out any other method of making reparation to that amiable

young lady, but by laying his heart and fortune at her feet, and submitting himself to her pleasure during the remaining part of his life. He conjured her, therefore, in the most pathetick manner, to pardon him, in consideration of his sincere repentance, and to use her maternal influence with her daughter, so as that he might be permitted to wait upon her with a wedding ring, as soon as his health would allow him to undertake the journey.

This explanation being dispatched by Pipes, who had by this time found his master, the young gentleman enquired about the couple whom he had so unfortunately pursued, and understood from his valet de chambre, who learned the story from their own mouths, that the lady was the only daughter of a rich Jew, and her attendant no other than his apprentice, who had converted her to Christianity, and married her at the same time; that this secret having taken air, the old Israelite had contrived a scheme to separate them for ever; and they being apprized of his intention, had found means to elope from his house, with a view of sheltering themselves in France, until the affair could be made up; that seeing three men ride after them with such eagerness and speed, they never doubted that the pursuers were her father, and some friends or domesticks, and on that supposition had fled with the utmost dispatch and trepidation, until they had found themselves happily undeceived, at that very instant when they expected nothing but mischief and misfortune: lastly, the Swiss gave him to understand, that after having professed some concern for his deplorable situation, and enjoyed a slight refreshment, they had taken their departure for Dover, and in all likelihood were safely arrived at Paris.

In four and twenty hours after Pipes was charged with his commission, he brought back an answer from the mother of Emilia, couched in these words.

'SIR,

'I Received the favour of yours, and 'am glad, for your own sake, that 'you have attained a due sense and con'viction of your unkind and unchris'tian behaviour to poor Emy. I thank 'God, none of my children were ever 'so insulted before. Give me leave to 'tell you, Sir, my daughter was no 'upstart, without friends or education, 'but a young lady as well bred, and 'better born, than most private gentle'women in the kingdom: and therefore, 'though you had no esteem for her per'son, you ought to have paid some re'gard to her family, which (no dis'paragement to you, Sir) is more ho'nourable than your own. As for your 'proposal, Miss Gauntlet will not hear 'of it, being that she thinks her ho'nour will not allow her to listen to any 'terms of reconciliation; and she is 'not yet so destitute, as to embrace an 'offer to which she has the least objec'tion. In the mean time, she is so 'much indisposed, that she cannot pos'sibly see company; so I beg you will 'not take the trouble of making a fruit'less journey to this place. Perhaps 'your future conduct may deserve her 'forgiveness; and really, as I am con'cerned for your happiness, which you 'assure me depends upon her conde'scension, I wish with all my heart it 'may; and am, notwithstanding all 'that has happened, your sincere well 'wisher,

'CECILIA GAUNTLET.'

From this epistle, and the information of his messenger, our hero learned, that his mistress had actually profited by his wild-goose chace, so as to make a safe retreat to her mother's house. Though sorry to hear of her indisposition, he was also piqued at her implacability, as well as at some stately paragraphs of the letter, in which (he thought) the good lady had consulted her own vanity rather than her good-sense. These motives of resentment helped him to bear his disappointment like a philosopher, especially as he had now quieted his conscience, in proffering to redress the injury he had done; and, moreover, found himself, with regard to his love, in a calm state of hope and resignation.

A seasonable fit of illness is an excellent medicine for the turbulence of passion. Such a reformation had the fever produced in the economy of his thoughts, that he moralized like an apostle, and projected several prudential schemes for his future conduct.

In the mean time, as soon as his health was sufficiently re-established, he took a trip to the garrison, in order to visit his friends; and learned from Hatchway's own

own mouth, that he had broke the ice of courtſhip to his aunt, and that his addreſſes were now fairly afloat; though when he firſt declared himſelf to the widow, after ſhe had been duly prepared for the occaſion by her niece and the reſt of her friends, ſhe had received his propoſal with a becoming reſerve, and piouſly wept at the remembrance of her huſband, obſerving, that ſhe ſhould never meet with his fellow.

Peregrine promoted the lieutenant's ſuit with all his influence; and all Mrs. Trunnion's objections to the match being ſurmounted, it was determined that the day of marriage ſhould be put off for three months, that her reputation might not ſuffer by a precipitate engagement. His next care was to give orders for erecting a plain marble monument to the memory of his uncle, on which the following inſcription, compoſed by the bridegroom, actually appeared in golden letters.

Here lies,
Foundered in a fathom and half,
The ſhell
Of
HAWSER TRUNNION, Eſq.
Formerly commander of a ſquadron
In his majeſty's ſervice,
Who broach'd to, at five P. M. Oct. X.
In the year of his age
Threeſcore and nineteen.

He kept his guns always loaded,
And his tackle ready manned,
And never ſhewed his poop to the enemy,
Except when he took her in tow;
But, his ſhot being expended,
His match burnt out,
And his upper-works decayed,
He was ſunk
By Death's ſuperior weight of metal.
Nevertheleſs,
He will be weighed again
At the Great Day,
His rigging refitted,
And his timbers repaired;
And, with one broad-ſide,
Make his adverſary
Strike in his turn.

CHAP. VIII.

HE RETURNS TO LONDON, AND MEETS WITH CADWALLADER, WHO ENTERTAINS HIM WITH MANY CURIOUS PARTICULARS. CRABTREE SOUNDS THE DUCHESS, AND UNDECEIVES PICKLE; WHO, BY AN EXTRAORDINARY ACCIDENT, BECOMES ACQUAINTED WITH ANOTHER LADY OF QUALITY.

THE young gentleman having performed theſe laſt offices, in honour of his deceaſed benefactor, and preſented Mr. Jolter to the long-expected living, which at this time happened to be vacant, returned to London, and reſumed his former gaiety: not that he was able to ſhake Emilia from his thought, or even to remember her without violent emotions; for, as he recovered his vigour, his former impatience recurred; and therefore he reſolved to plunge himſelf headlong into ſome intrigue, that might engage his paſſions, and amuſe his imagination.

A man of his accompliſhments could not fail to meet with a variety of ſubjects, on which his gallantry would have been properly exerciſed; and this abundance diſtracted his choice, which at any time was apt to be influenced by caprice and whim. I have already obſerved, that he had lifted his view, through a matrimonial perſpective, as high as a lady of the firſt quality and diſtinction; and now that he was refuſed by Miſs Gauntlet, and enjoyed a little reſpite from the agonies of that flame which her charms had kindled in his heart, he renewed his aſſiduities to her grace. Though he durſt not yet riſk an explanation, he enjoyed the pleaſure of ſeeing himſelf ſo well received in quality of a particular acquaintance, that he flattered himſelf with the belief of his having made ſome progreſs in her heart; and was confirmed in this conceited notion, by the aſſurances of her woman, whom by liberal largeſſes he retained in his intereſt, becauſe ſhe found means to perſuade him, that ſhe was in the confidence of her lady. But, notwithſtanding this encouragement, and the ſanguine ſuggeſtions of his own vanity, he dreaded the thoughts of expoſing himſelf to her ridicule and reſentment by a premature declaration, and determined to poſtpone his addreſſes, until he ſhould be more certified of the probability of ſucceeding in his attempt.

While he remained in this heſitation and ſuſpenſe, he was one morning very agreeably ſurprized with the appearance

of his friend Crabtree; who, by the permiſſion of Pipes, to whom he was well known, entered his chamber before he was awake, and, by a violent ſhake of the ſhoulder, diſengaged him from the arms of ſleep. The firſt compliments having mutually paſſed, Cadwallader gave him to underſtand, that he had arrived in town over night in the ſtage-coach from Bath, and entertained him with ſuch a ludicrous account of his fellow-travellers, that Peregrine, for the firſt time ſince their parting, indulged himſelf in mirth, even to the hazard of ſuffocation.

Crabtree having rehearſed theſe adventures, in ſuch a peculiarity of manner, as added infinite ridicule to every circumſtance, and repeated every ſcandalous report which had circulated at the Bath after Peregrine's departure, was informed by the youth, that he harboured a deſign upon the perſon of ſuch a ducheſs, and in all appearance had no reaſon to complain of his reception; but, that he would not venture to declare himſelf, until he ſhould be more aſcertained of her ſentiments: and therefore, he begged leave to depend upon the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader, who, he knew, was admitted to her parties.

The miſanthrope, before he would promiſe his aſſiſtance, aſked if his proſpect verged towards matrimony; and our adventurer (who gueſſed the meaning of his queſtion) replying in the negative, he undertook the office of reconnoitring her inclination; proteſting at the ſame time, that he would never concern himſelf in any ſcheme that did not tend to the diſgrace and deception of all the ſex. On theſe conditions, he eſpouſed the intereſt of our hero; and a plan was immediately concerted, in conſequence of which they met by accident at her grace's table. Pickle having ſtayed all the fore-part of the evening, and ſat out all the company, except the miſanthrope and a certain widow lady, who was ſaid to be in the ſecrets of my lady ducheſs, went away on pretence of an indiſpenſible engagement, that Crabtree might have a proper opportunity of making him the ſubject of converſation.

Accordingly, he had ſcarce quitted the apartment, when this cynic attending him to the door, with a look of moroſe diſdain. 'Were I an abſolute 'prince,' ſaid he, 'and that fellow one 'of my ſubject, I would order him to 'be cloathed in ſack-cloth, and he 'ſhould drive my aſſes to water, that 'his lofty ſpirit might be lowered to 'the level of his deſerts. The pride of a 'peacock is downright ſelf-denial, when 'compared with the vanity of that cox-'comb, which was naturally arrogant, 'but is now rendered altogether intole-'rable, by the reputation he acquired at 'Bath, for kicking a bully, outwitting a 'club of raw ſharpers, and divers other 'pranks, in the execution of which he 'was more lucky than wiſe. But no-'thing has contributed ſo much to the 'increaſe of his inſolence and ſelf-con-'ceit, as the favour he found among the 'ladies. Aye, the ladies, Madam! I 'care not who knows it: the ladies, 'who (to their honour be it ſpoken) 'never fail to patronize foppery and 'folly, provided they ſolicit their en-'couragement. And yet this dog was 'not on the footing of thoſe hermaphro-'ditical animals, who may be reckon-'ed among the number of waiting-'women, who air your ſhifts, comb 'your lap-dogs, examine your noſes 'with magnifying glaſſes in order to 'ſqueeze out the worms, clean your 'teeth-bruſhes, ſweeten your handker-'chiefs, and ſoften waſte paper for your 'occaſions. This fellow, Pickle, was 'entertained for more important pur-'poſes; his turn of duty never came 'till all thoſe lapwings were gone to 'rooſt; then he ſcaled windows, leap-'ed over garden walls, and was let in 'by Mrs. Betty in the dark. Nay, 'the magiſtrates of Bath complimented 'him with the freedom of the corpo-'ration, merely becauſe, through his 'means, the waters had gained extra-'ordinary credit; for every female of 'a tolerable appearance, that went thi-'ther on account of her ſterility, got 'the better of her complaint, during 'his reſidence at the Bath; and now, 'the fellow thinks no woman can with-'ſtand his addreſſes. He had not been 'here three minutes, when I could per-'ceive with half an eye that he had 'marked out your grace for a con-'queſt; I mean, in an honourable way; 'though the raſcal has impudence e-'nough to attempt any thing.' So ſaying, he fixed his eyes upon the ducheſs, who (while her face glowed with indignation) turning to her confidante, expreſſed

preſſed herſelf in theſe words. 'Upon 'my life! I believe there is actually 'ſome truth in what this old ruffian 'ſays; I have myſelf obſerved that 'young fellow eying me with a very 'particular ſtare.'—'It is not to be at 'all wondered at,' ſaid her friend, 'that 'a youth of his complexion ſhould be 'ſenſible to the charms of your grace! 'but I dare ſay, he would not preſume 'to entertain any but the moſt honour-'able and reſpectful ſentiments.'—— 'Reſpectful ſentiments!' cried my lady, with a look of ineffable diſdain; 'if I 'thought the fellow had aſſurance e-'nough to think of me in any ſhape, 'I proteſt I would forbid him my houſe. 'Upon my honour, ſuch inſtances of 'audacity ſhould induce perſons of qua-'lity to keep your ſmall gentry at a 'greater diſtance; for they are very apt 'to grow impudent upon the leaſt coun-'tenance or encouragement.'

Cadwallader, ſatisfied with this declaration, changed the ſubject of diſcourſe, and next day communicated his diſcovery to his friend Pickle; who, upon this occaſion, felt the moſt ſtinging ſenſations of mortified pride, and reſolved to quit his proſpect with a good grace. Nor did the execution of this ſelf-denying ſcheme coſt him one moment's uneaſineſs; for his heart had never been intereſted in the purſuit, and his vanity triumphed in the thoughts of manifeſting his indifference. Accordingly, the very next time he viſited her grace, his behaviour was remarkably frank, ſprightly, and diſengaged; and the ſubject of love being artfully introduced by the widow, who had been directed to ſound his inclinations, he rallied the paſſion with great eaſe and ſeverity, and made no ſcruple of declaring himſelf heart-whole.

Though the ducheſs had reſented his ſuppoſed affection, ſhe was now offended at his inſenſibility, and even ſignified her diſguſt, by obſerving, that perhaps his attention to his own qualifications ſcreened him from the impreſſion of all other objects.

While he enjoyed this ſarcaſm, the meaning of which he could plainly diſcern, the company was joined by a certain virtuoſo, who had gained free acceſs to all the great families of the land, by his notable talent of goſſipping and buffoonery. He was now in the ſeventy-fifth year of his age; his birth was ſo obſcure, that he ſcarce knew his father's name; his education ſuitable to the dignity of his deſcent; his character publickly branded with homicide, profligacy, and breach of truſt: yet this man, by the happy inheritance of impregnable effrontery, and a lucky proſtitution of all principle in rendering himſelf ſubſervient to the appetites of the great, had attained to an independency of fortune, as well as to ſuch a particular ſhare of favour among the quality, that although he was well known to have pimped for three generations of the nobility, there was not a lady of faſhion in the kingdom who ſcrupled to admit him to her toilette, or even to be ſquired by him in any publick place of entertainment. Not but that this ſage was occaſionally uſeful to his fellow-creatures, by theſe connexions with people of fortune; for, he often undertook to ſolicit charity in behalf of diſtreſſed objects, with a view of embezzling one half of the benefactions. It was an errand of this kind that now brought him to the houſe of her grace.

After having ſat a few minutes, he told the company, that he would favour them with a very proper opportunity to extend their benevolence, for the relief of a poor gentlewoman, who was reduced to the moſt abject miſery, by the death of her huſband, and juſt delivered of a couple of fine boys. They, moreover, underſtood from his information, that this object was daughter of a good family, who had renounced her, in conſequence of her marrying an enſign without a fortune; and even obſtructed his promotion with all their influence and power; a circumſtance of barbarity, which had made ſuch an impreſſion upon his mind, as diſordered his brain, and drove him to deſpair, in a fit of which he had made away with himſelf, leaving his wife then big with child, to all the horrors of indigence and grief.

Various were the criticiſms on this pathetick picture, which the old man drew with great expreſſion. My lady ducheſs concluded, that ſhe muſt be a creature void of all feeling and reflection, who could ſurvive ſuch aggravated miſery; therefore, did not deſerve to be relieved, except in the character of a common beggar; and was generous enough to offer a recommendation, by which ſhe would be admitted into an infirmary, to which her grace was a ſubſcriber;

ſcriber; at the ſame time, adviſing the ſolicitor to ſend the twins to the Foundling Hoſpital, where they would be carefully nurſed and brought up, ſo as to become uſeful members to the commonwealth. Another lady, with all due deference to the opinion of the ducheſs, was free enough to blame the generoſity of her grace, which would only ſerve to encourage children in their diſobedience to their parents, and might be the means not only of prolonging the diſtreſs of the wretched creature, but alſo of ruining the conſtitution of ſome young heir, perhaps the hope of a great family! for ſhe did ſuppoſe that Madam, when her month ſhould be up, and her brats diſpoſed of, would ſpread her attractions to the publick, (provided ſhe could profit by her perſon) and, in the uſual way, make a regular progreſs from St. James's to Drury Lane. She apprehended, for theſe reaſons, that their compaſſion would be moſt effectually ſhewn, in leaving her to periſh in her preſent neceſſity: and that the old gentleman would be unpardonable, ſhould he perſiſt in his endeavours to relieve her. A third member of this tender-hearted ſociety, after having aſked if the young woman was handſome, and been anſwered in the negative, allowed that there was a great deal of reaſon in what had been ſaid by the honourable perſon who ſpoke laſt; nevertheleſs, ſhe humbly conceived her ſentence would admit of ſome mitigation. 'Let the bantlings,' ſaid ſhe, 'be ſent to the hoſpital, according to the advice of her grace, 'and a ſmall collection be made for 'the preſent ſupport of the mother; 'and when her health is recovered, I 'will take her into my family, in quality of an upper ſervant, or medium 'between me and my woman; for, 'upon my life! I can't endure to chide, 'or give directions to a creature, who 'is, in point of birth and education, 'but one degree above the vulgar.'

This propoſal met with univerſal approbation. The ducheſs (to her immortal honour) began the contribution with a crown; ſo that the reſt of the company were obliged to reſtrict their liberality to half the ſum, that her grace might not be affronted: and the propoſer demanding the poor woman's name and place of abode, the old mediator could not help giving her ladyſhip a verbal direction, though he was extremely mortified (on more accounts than one) to find ſuch an iſſue to his ſolicitation.

Peregrine, who, *though humorous as winter, had a tear for pity, and an hand open as day for melting charity*, was ſhocked at the nature and reſult of this ungenerous conſultation. He contributed his half-crown, however; and retiring from the company, betook himſelf to the lodgings of the forlorn lady in the ſtraw, according to the direction he had heard. Upon enquiry, he underſtood, that ſhe was then viſited by ſome charitable gentlewoman, who had ſent for a nurſe, and waited the return of the meſſenger; and he ſent up his reſpects, deſiring he might be permitted to ſee her, on pretence of having been intimate with her late huſband.

Though the poor woman had never heard of his name, ſhe did not think proper to deny his requeſt; and he was conducted to a paltry chamber in the third ſtory, where he found this unhappy widow ſitting upon a truckle-bed, and ſuckling one of her infants, with the moſt piteous expreſſion of anguiſh in her features, which were naturally regular and ſweet, while the other was fondled on the knee of a perſon, whoſe attention was ſo much ingroſſed by her little charge, that for the preſent ſhe could mind nothing elſe: and it was not till after the firſt compliments paſſed betwixt the hapleſs mother and our adventurer, that he perceived the ſtranger's countenance, which inſpired him with the higheſt eſteem and admiration. He beheld all the graces of elegance and beauty, breathing ſentiment and beneficence, and ſoftened into the moſt inchanting tenderneſs of weeping ſympathy. When he declared the cauſe of his viſit, which was no other than the deſire of befriending the diſtreſſed lady, to whom he preſented a bank-note for twenty pounds, he was favoured with ſuch a look of complacency by this amiably phantom, who might have been juſtly taken for an angel miniſtering to the neceſſities of mortals, that his whole ſoul was tranſported with love and veneration. Nor was this prepoſſeſſion diminiſhed by the information of the widow; who, after having manifeſted her gratitude in a flood of tears, told him, that the unknown object of his eſteem was a perſon of honour, who having heard by accident of her deplorable ſituation, had

imme-

Stothard del

Angus sculp

Plate VII.

Publish'd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Sep. 16. 1781.

immediately obeyed the dictates of her humanity, and come in person to relieve her distress; that she had not only generously supplied her with money for present sustenance, but also undertaken to provide a nurse for her babes, and even promised to favour her with protection, should she survive her present melancholy situation. To these articles of intelligence she added, that the name of her benefactress was the celebrated Lady ——, to whose character the youth was no stranger, though he had never seen her person before. The killing edge of her charms was a little blunted by the accidents of time and fortune; but no man of taste and imagination, whose nerves were not quite chilled with the frost of age, could even at that time look upon her with impunity. And as Peregrine saw her attractions heightened by the tender office in which she was engaged, he was smitten with her beauty, and so ravished with her compassion, that he could not suppress his emotions, but applauded her benevolence with all the warmth of enthusiasm.

Her ladyship received his compliments with great politeness and affability. And the occasion on which they met being equally interesting to both, an acquaintance commenced between them, and they concerted measures for the benefit of the widow and her two children, one of whom our hero bespoke for his own godson; for Pickle was not so obscure in the beau monde, but that his fame had reached the ears of this lady, who, therefore, did not discourage his advances towards her friendship and esteem.

All the particulars relating to their charge being adjusted, he attended her ladyship to her own house; and, by her conversation, had the pleasure of finding her understanding suitable to her other accomplishments. Nor had she any reason to think, that our hero's qualifications had been exaggerated by common report.

One of their adopted children died before it was baptized; so that their care concentered in the other, for whom they stood sponsors. Understanding that the old agent was become troublesome in his visits to the mother, to whom he now began to administer such counsel as shocked the delicacy of her virtue, they removed her into another lodging, where she would not be exposed to his machinations. In less than a month, our hero learned from a nobleman of his acquaintance, that the hoary pandar had actually engaged to procure for him this poor afflicted gentlewoman; and being frustrated in his intention, substituted in her room a nymph from the purlieus of Covent Garden, that made his lordship smart severely for the favours she bestowed.

Meanwhile, Peregrine cultivated his new acquaintance with all his art and assiduity, presuming, from the circumstances of her reputation and fate, as well as on the strength of his own merit, that, in time, he should be able to indulge that passion which had begun to glow within his breast.

As her ladyship had undergone a vast variety of fortune and adventure, which he had heard indistinctly related, with numberless errors and misrepresentations, he was no sooner entitled, by the familiarity of communication, to ask such a favour, than he earnestly entreated her to entertain him with the particulars of her story; and, by dint of importunity, she was at length prevailed upon (in a select *partie*) to gratify his curiosity in these words.

CHAP. IX.

THE MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

'BY the circumstances of the story 'which I am going to relate, 'you will be convinced of my candour; 'while you are informed of my indiscretion: you will be enabled, I hope, 'to perceive, that howsoever my head 'may have erred, my heart hath always been uncorrupted, and that I 'have been unhappy, *because I loved, and was a woman.*

'I believe I need not observe, that I 'was the only child of a man of good 'fortune, who indulged me in my infancy, with all the tenderness of paternal affection; and when I was six 'years old, sent me to a private school, 'where I stayed till my age was doubled, and became such a favourite, 'that I was (even in those early days) 'carried to all the places of publick diversion, the court itself not excepted; 'an indulgence that flattered my love 'of pleasure, to which I was naturally 'addicted, and encouraged those ideas

'of

'of vanity and ambition which spring 'up so early in the human mind.

'I was lively and good-natured, 'my imagination apt to run riot, my 'heart liberal and disinterested; though 'I was so obstinately attached to my 'own opinions that I could not well 'brook contradiction; and in the whole 'of my disposition, resembled that of 'Henry the Fifth, as described by 'Shakespeare.

'In my thirteenth year I went to 'Bath, where I was first introduced 'into the world as a woman, having 'been intitled to that privilege by my 'person, which was remarkably tall for 'my years; and there my fancy was quite 'captivated by the variety of diversions 'in which I was continually engaged: 'not that the parties were altogether 'new to me, but because I now found 'myself considered as a person of con-'sequence, and surrounded by a crowd 'of admirers, who courted my ac-'quaintance, and fed my vanity with 'praise and adulation. In short, whe-'ther or not I deserved their encomiums, 'I leave the world to judge; but my 'person was commended, and my ta-'lent in dancing met with universal ap-'plause. No wonder, then, that every 'thing appeared joyous to a young crea-'ture, who was so void of experience 'and dissimulation, that she believed 'every body's heart as sincere as her 'own, and every object such as it ap-'peared to be.

'Among the swains who sighed, or 'pretended to sigh for me, were two 'that bore a pretty equal share of my 'favour; (it was too superficial to de-'serve the name of love.) One of these 'was a forward youth of sixteen, ex-'tremely handsome, lively, and impu-'dent: he attended in quality of page 'upon the Princess Amelia, who spent 'that season at the Bath. The other 'was a Scotch nobleman turned of 'thirty, who was graced with a red 'ribband, and danced particularly well; 'two qualifications of great weight with 'a girl of my age, whose heart was not 'deeply interested in the cause. Never-'theless, the page prevailed over this 'formidable rival; though our amour 'went no farther than a little flirting, 'and ceased entirely when I left the 'place.

'Next year, however, I revisited this 'agreeable scene, and passed my time 'in the same circle of amusements; in 'which, indeed, each season at Bath is 'exactly resembled by that which suc-'ceeds, allowing for the difference of 'company, which is continually vary-'ing. There I met with the same in-'cense, and again had my favourite, 'who was a North Briton, and captain 'of foot, near forty years of age, and 'a little lame; an impediment which I 'did not discover, until it was point-'ed out by some of my companions, 'who rallied me upon my choice. He 'was always chearful, and very amo-'rous; had a good countenance, and 'an excellent understanding; possessed 'a great deal of art, and would have 'persuaded me to marry him, had I 'not been restrained by the authority 'of my father, whose consent was to be 'obtained in favour of a man of his 'fortune.

'At the same time, many proposals 'of marriage were made to my parents; 'but as they came from people whom 'I did not like, I rejected them all; 'being determined to refuse every man 'who did not make his addresses to 'myself in person, because I had no 'notion of marrying for any thing but 'love.

'Among these formal proposers was a 'Scottish earl, whose pretensions were 'broke off by some difference about 'settlements; and the son of an English 'baron, with whom my father was in 'treaty, when he carried me to town, 'on a visit to a young lady, with whom 'I had been intimate from my infancy. 'She was just delivered of her first son, 'for whom we stood sponsors: so that 'this occasion detained us a whole 'month; during which, I went to a 'ball at court on the queen's birth-'day, and there, for the first time, felt 'what love and beauty were.

'The second son of Duke H——, 'who had just returned from his tra-'vels, was dancing with the princess-'royal, when a young lady came and 'desired me to go and see a stranger, 'whom all the world admired: upon 'which I followed her into the circle, 'and observed this object of admira-'tion. He was dressed in a coat of 'white cloth, faced with blue sattin 'embroidered with silver, of the same 'piece with his waistcoat; his fine hair 'hung down his back in ringlets below 'his waist, his hat was laced with sil-

'ver,

'ver, and garnished with a white feather; but his person beggared all description. He was tall and graceful, neither corpulent nor meagre; his limbs finely proportioned, his countenance open and majestick, his eyes full of sweetness and vivacity, his teeth regular, and his pouting lips of the complexion of the damask rose. In short, he was formed for love, and inspired it wherever he appeared; nor was he a niggard of his talents, but liberally returned it; at least, what passed for such; for he had a flow of gallantry, for which many ladies of this land can vouch from their own experience: but he exclaimed against marriage, because he had as yet met with no woman to whose charms he would surrender his liberty, though a princess of France, and a lady of the same rank in ——, were said to be at that time enamoured of his person.

'I went home, totally ingrossed by his idea, flattering myself, that he had observed me with some attention; for I was young and new, and had the good fortune to attract the notice and approbation of the queen herself.

'Next day, being at the opera, I was agreeably surprized with the appearance of this amiable stranger, who no sooner saw me enter, than he approached so near to the place where I sat, that I overheard what he said to his companions; and was so happy as to find myself the object of his discourse, which abounded with rapturous expressions of love and admiration.

'I could not listen to these transports without emotion; my colour changed, my heart throbbed with unusual violence, and my eyes betrayed my inclination in sundry favourable glances, which he seemed to interpret aright, though he could not then avail himself of his success, so far as to communicate his sentiments by speech, because we were strangers to each other.

'I passed that night in the most anxious suspense, and several days elapsed before I saw him again. At length, however, being at court on a ball-night, and determined against dancing, I perceived him among the crowd; and, to my unspeakable joy, saw him advance with my Lord P——, who introduced him to my acquaintance. He soon found means to alter my resolution; and I condescended to be his partner all the evening; during which he declared his passion in the most tender and persuasive terms that real love could dictate, or fruitful imagination invent.

'I believed his protestations, because I wished them true, and was an unexperienced girl of fifteen. I complied with his earnest request of being permitted to visit me, and even invited him to breakfast next morning; so that you may imagine (I speak to those that feel) I did not that night enjoy much repose. Such was the hurry and flutter of my spirits, that I rose at six to receive him at ten. I dressed myself in a new pink sattin gown, and my best laced night-cloaths, and was so animated by the occasion, that if ever I deserved a compliment upon my looks, it was my due at this meeting.

'The wished-for moment came that brought my lover to my view: I was overwhelmed with joy, modesty, and fear of I knew not what. We sat down to breakfast, but did not eat. He renewed his addresses with irresistible eloquence, and pressed me to accept of his hand without farther hesitation: but to such a precipitate step I objected, as a measure repugnant to decency, as well as to that duty which I owed my father, whom I tenderly loved.

'Though I withstood this premature proposal, I did not attempt to disguise the situation of my thoughts; and thus commenced a tender correspondence, which was maintained by letters while I remained in the country, and carried on, when I was in town, by private interviews, twice or thrice a week, at the house of my milliner, where such endearments passed as refined and happy lovers know, and others can only guess. Truth and innocence prevailed on my side, while his heart was fraught with sincerity and love. Such frequent intercourse created an intimacy which I began to think dangerous, and therefore yielded to his repeated desire that we might be united for ever: nay, I resolved to avoid him, until the day should be fixed, and very innocently (though not very wisely) told him my reason for this determination, which was no

'other than a conſciouſneſs of my incapacity to refuſe him any thing he 'ſhould demand as a teſtimony of my 'love.

'The time was accordingly appointed, at the diſtance of a few days, during which I intended to have implored 'my father's conſent, though I had but 'faint hopes of obtaining it: but he 'was by ſome means or other apprized 'of our deſign, before I could prevail 'upon myſelf to make him acquainted 'with our purpoſe. I had danced with 'my lover at the Ridotto on the preceding evening, and there, perhaps, 'our eyes betrayed us. Certain it is, 'ſeveral of Lord W——m's relations, 'who diſapproved of the match, came 'up and rallied him on his paſſion; 'Lord S——k in particular uſed this 'remarkable expreſſion; "Nephew, as "much love as you pleaſe, but no ma"trimony."

'Next day, the prieſt being prepared, 'and the bridegroom waiting for me at 'the appointed place, in all the tranſports of impatient expectation, I was, 'without any previous warning, carried into the country by my father, 'who took no notice of the intelligence 'he had received, but decoyed me into 'the coach on pretence of taking the 'air: and when we had proceeded as 'far as Turnham Green, gave me to 'underſtand that he would dine in that 'place.

'There was no remedy: I was obliged to bear my diſappointment, though 'with an aching heart, and followed 'him up ſtairs into an apartment, where 'he told me he was minutely informed 'of my matrimonial ſcheme. I did 'not attempt to diſguiſe the truth, but 'aſſured him, while the tears guſhed 'from my eyes, that my want of courage alone had hindered me from 'making him privy to my paſſion; 'though I owned, I ſhould have married Lord W——m, even though he 'had diſapproved of my choice. I reminded him of the uneaſy life I led at 'home, and frankly acknowledged, that 'I loved my admirer too well to live 'without him; though if he would favour me with his conſent, I would defer my intention, and punctually obſerve any day he would fix for our 'nuptials. Meanwhile, I begged he 'would permit me to ſend a meſſage to 'Lord W——m, who was waiting in 'expectation of my coming, and might '(without ſuch notice) imagine I was 'playing the jilt. He granted this laſt 'requeſt; in conſequence of which I 'ſent a letter to my lover, who, when 'he received it, had almoſt fainted away, believing I ſhould be locked up 'in the country, and ſnatched for ever 'from his arms. Tortured with theſe 'apprehenſions, he changed cloaths immediately, and taking horſe, reſolved 'to follow me whitherſoever we ſhould 'go.

'After dinner, we proceeded as far 'as Brentford, where we lay, intending to be at my father's country-houſe 'next night; and my admirer putting 'up at the ſame inn, practiſed every 'expedient his invention could ſuggeſt 'to procure an interview; but all his 'endeavours were unſucceſsful, becauſe 'I, who little dreamed of his being ſo 'near, had gone to bed upon our firſt 'arrival, overwhelmed with affliction 'and tears.

'In the morning I threw myſelf at 'my father's feet, and conjured him by 'all the ties of paternal affection, to indulge me with an opportunity of ſeeing my admirer once more, before I 'ſhould be conveyed from his wiſhes. 'The melancholy condition in which I 'preferred this ſupplication, melted the 'tender heart of my parent, who yielded 'to my ſolicitations, and carried me 'back to town for that purpoſe.

'Lord W——m, who had watched 'our motions, and arrived at his own 'lodgings before we arrived at my father's houſe, obeyed my ſummons on 'the inſtant, and appeared before me like 'an angel. Our faculties were, for 'ſome minutes, ſuſpended by a conflict 'of grief and joy. At length, I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and gave him 'to underſtand, that I was come to 'town in order to take my leave of him, 'by the permiſſion of my father, whom 'I had promiſed to attend into the country next day, before he would conſent 'to my return; the chief cauſe and 'pretence of which, was my earneſt deſire to convince him, that I was not 'to blame for the diſappointment he had 'ſuffered, and that I ſhould ſee him 'again in a month, when the nuptial 'knot ſhould be tied in ſpite of all oppoſition.

'My lover, who was better acquainted with the world, had well night run

'diſtracted

'distracted with this information. He 'swore he would not leave me, until I 'should promise to meet and marry him 'next day; or, if I refused to grant 'that request, he would immediately 'leave the kingdom, to which he would 'never more return; and before his de-'parture, sacrifice Lord H— B—, son 'to the Duke of S. A——, who was 'the only person upon earth who could 'have betrayed us to my father, because 'he alone was trusted with the secret of 'our intended marriage, and had actual-'ly undertaken to give me away; an 'office which he afterwards declined. 'Lord W——m also affirmed, that my 'father decoyed me into the country, 'with a view of cooping me up, and 'sequestering me entirely from his view 'and correspondence.

'In vain I pleaded my father's well-'known tenderness, and used all the 'arguments I could recollect to divert 'him from his revenge upon Lord 'H——. He was deaf to all my re-'presentations, and nothing, I found, 'would prevail upon him to suppress 'his resentment, but a positive promise 'to comply with his former desire. I 'told him, I would hazard every thing 'to make him happy; but could not, 'with any regard to my duty, take such 'a step without the knowledge of my 'parent; or, if I were so inclined, it 'would be impracticable to elude his 'vigilance and suspicion. However, he 'employed such pathetick remonstrances, 'and retained such a powerful advocate 'within my own breast, that before we 'parted I assured him, my whole pow-'er should be exerted for his satisfac-'tion; and he signified his resolution of 'sitting up all night, in expectation of 'seeing me at his lodgings.

'He had no sooner retired, than I 'went into the next room, and desired 'my father to fix a day for the mar-'riage; in which case, I would chear-'fully wait upon him into the country; 'whereas, should he deny my request, 'on pretence of staying for the consent 'of my mother's relations, which was 'very uncertain, I would seize the 'first opportunity of marrying Lord 'W——m, cost what it could. He 'consented to the match, but would not 'appoint a day for the ceremony, which 'he proposed to defer until all parties 'should be agreed; and such a favour-'able crisis, I feared, would never hap-'pen.

'I therefore resolved within myself to 'gratify my lover's expectation, by 'eloping, if possible, that very night; 'though the execution of this plan was 'extremely difficult, because my father 'was upon the alarm, and my own 'maid, who was my bedfellow, alto-'gether in his interest. Notwithstand-'ing these considerations, I found means 'to engage one of the house-maids in 'my behalf, who bespoke an hackney-'coach, to be kept in waiting all night; 'and to bed I went with my Abigail, 'whom, as I had not closed an eye, I 'waked about five in the morning, and 'sent to pack up some things for our 'intended journey.

'While she was thus employed, I got 'up, and huddled on my cloaths, stand-'ing upon my pillow, lest my father, 'who lay in the chamber below, should 'hear me a-foot, and suspect my de-'sign.

'Having dressed myself with great 'dispatch and disorder, I flounced down 'stairs, stalking as heavily as I could 'tread, that he might mistake me for 'one of the servants; and my confe-'derate opening the door, I sallied out 'into the street, though I knew not 'which way to turn; and, to my un-'speakable mortification, neither coach 'nor chair appeared.

'Having travelled on foot a good 'way, in hope of finding a convenience, 'and being not only disappointed in 'that particular, but also bewildered in 'my peregrination, I began to be ex-'ceedingly alarmed with the apprehen-'sion of being met by some person who 'might know me; because, in that 'case, my design would undoubtedly 'have been discovered, from every cir-'cumstance of my appearance at that 'time of day; for I had put on the very 'cloaths which I had pulled off over 'night, so that my dress was altoge-'their odd and peculiar: my shoes were 'very fine, and over a large hoop I wore 'a pink sattin quilted petticoat trimmed 'with silver, which was partly covered 'by a white dimity night-gown, a full 'quarter of a yard too short; my hand-'kerchief and apron were hurried on 'without pinning; my night-cap could 'not contain my hair, which hung a-'bout my ears in great disorder; and

'my countenance denoted a mixture of 'hope and fear, joy and ſhame.

'In this dilemma, I made my ad-'dreſſes to that honourable member of 'ſociety, a ſhoe-black, whom I ear-'neſtly intreated to provide me with a 'coach or chair, promiſing to reward 'him liberally for his trouble: but he 'having the misfortune to be lame, 'was unable to keep up with my pace; 'ſo that, by his advice and direction, 'I went into the firſt publick-houſe I 'found open, where I ſtayed ſome time, 'in the utmoſt conſternation, among a 'crew of wretches whom I thought 'proper to bribe for their civility, not 'without the terror of being ſtripped. 'At length, however, my meſſenger 'returned with a chair, of which I took 'immediate poſſeſſion; and fearing that, 'by this time, my family would be 'alarmed, and ſend directly to Lord 'W——m's lodgings, I ordered my-'ſelf to be carried thither backwards, 'that ſo I might paſs undiſcovered.

'This ſtratagem ſucceeded according 'to my wiſh; I ran up ſtairs, in a ſtate 'of trepidation, to my faithful lover, 'who waited for me with the moſt im-'patient and fearful ſuſpenſe. At ſight 'of me, his eyes lightened with tran-'ſport; he caught me in his arms, as 'the richeſt preſent Heaven could be-'ſtow; gave me to underſtand that my 'father had already ſent to his lodg-'ings in queſt of me; then applauding 'my love and reſolution in the moſt 'rapturous terms, he ordered a hack-'ney-coach to be called, and that we 'might run no riſk of ſeparation, at-'tended me to church, where we were 'lawfully joined in the ſight of Heaven.

'His fears were then all over, but mine 'recurred with double aggravation. I 'dreaded the ſight of my father, and 'ſhared all the ſorrow he ſuffered on 'account of my undutiful behaviour; 'for I loved him with ſuch piety of 'affection, that I would have endured 'every other ſpecies of diſtreſs, rather 'than have given him the leaſt uneaſi-'neſs: but love (where he reigns in 'full empire) is altogether irreſiſtible, 'ſurmounts every difficulty, and ſwal-'lows up all other conſiderations. This 'was the caſe with me; and now the 'irrevocable ſtep was taken, my firſt 'care was to avoid his ſight. With 'this view, I begged that Lord W—m 'would think of ſome remote place in 'the country, to which we might retire 'for the preſent; and he forthwith con-'ducted me to a houſe on Blackheath, 'where we were very civilly received 'by a laughter-loving dame, who ſeem-'ed to miſtake me for one of her own 'ſiſterhood.

'I no ſooner perceived her opinion, 'than I deſired Lord W——m to un-'deceive her; upon which ſhe was 'made acquainted with the nature of 'my ſituation, and ſhewed us into a pri-'vate room, where I called for pen and 'paper, and wrote an apology to my 'father, for having acted contrary to 'his will in ſo important a concern.

'This taſk being performed, the 'bridegroom gave me to underſtand, 'that there was a neceſſity for our being 'bedded immediately, in order to ren-'der the marriage binding, leſt my fa-'ther ſhould diſcover and part us before 'conſummation. I pleaded hard for a 'reſpite till the evening, objecting to 'the indecency of going to bed before 'noon: but he found means to inva-'lidate all my arguments, and to con-'vince me that it was now my duty to 'obey. Rather than hazard the impu-'tation of being obſtinate and refrac-'tory on the firſt day of my probation, 'I ſuffered myſelf to be led into a 'chamber, which was darkened by my 'expreſs ſtipulation, that my ſhame 'and confuſion might be the better con-'cealed, and yielded to the privilege 'of a dear huſband, who loved me to 'adoration.

'About five o'clock in the afternoon 'we were called to dinner, which we 'had ordered to be ready at four; but 'ſuch a paltry care had been forgot, 'amidſt the tranſports of our mutual 'bliſs. We got up, however; and when 'we came down ſtairs, I was aſhamed 'to ſee the light of day, or meet the 'eyes of my beloved lord. I ate little, 'ſaid leſs, was happy, though over-'whelmed with confuſion; underwent 'a thouſand agitations, ſome of which 'were painful, but by far the greater 'part belonged to rapture and delight; 'we were emparadiſed in the gratifica-'tion of our mutual wiſhes, and felt 'all that love can beſtow, and ſenſibi-'lity enjoy.

'In the twilight we returned to Lord 'W——m's lodgings in town, where 'I received a letter from my father, 'importing, that he would never ſee

'me

'me again. But there was one circumſtance in his manner of writing, 'from which I conceived a happy preſage of his future indulgence. He 'had begun with his uſual appellation 'of *Dear Fanny*, which, though it was 'expunged to make way for the word '*Madam*, encouraged me to hope that 'his paternal fondneſs was not yet extinguiſhed.

'At ſupper we were viſited by Lord 'W——m's younger ſiſter, who laughed 'at us for our inconſiderate match, 'though ſhe owned, ſhe envied our happineſs, and offered me the uſe of her 'cloaths, until I could retrieve my own. 'She was a woman of a great deal of humour, plain but genteel, civil, friendly, and perfectly well-bred. She favoured us with her company till the 'night was pretty far advanced, and 'did not take her leave till we retired 'to our apartment.

'As our lodgings were not ſpacious 'or magnificent, we reſolved to ſee little company; but this reſolution was 'fruſtrated by the numerous acquaintance of Lord W——m, who let in 'half the town; ſo that I ran the gaunlet for a whole week among a ſet of 'wits, who always delight in teazing a 'young creature of any note, when ſhe 'happens to make ſuch a ſtolen match. 'Among thoſe that viſited us upon this 'occaſion, was my lord's younger brother, who was at that time in keeping 'with a rich heireſs of maſculine memory, and took that opportunity of 'making a parade with his equipage, 'which was indeed very magnificent, 'but altogether diſregarded by us, whoſe 'happineſs conſiſted in the opulence of 'mutual love.

'This ceremony of receiving viſits 'being performed, we went to wait on 'his mother the Ducheſs of H——, 'who hearing I was an heireſs, readily 'forgave her ſon for marrying without 'her knowledge and conſent, and favoured us with a very cordial re'ception; inſomuch that, for ſeveral 'months, we dined almoſt conſtantly 'at her table; and I muſt own, I always found her unaltered in her civi'lity and affection, contrary to her 'general character, which was haughty 'and capricious. She was undoubtedly 'a woman of great ſpirit and under'ſtanding, but ſubject to an infirmity 'which very much impairs and diſ'guiſes every other qualification.

'In about three weeks after our mar'riage, I was ſo happy as to obtain 'the forgiveneſs of my father, to whoſe 'houſe we repaired, in order to pay 'our reſpects and ſubmiſſion. At ſight 'of me he wept; nor did I behold his 'tears unmoved: my heart was over'charged with tenderneſs and ſorrow, 'for having offended ſuch an indulgent 'parent; ſo that I mingled my tears 'with his; while my dear huſband, 'whoſe ſoul was of the ſofteſt and gen'tleſt mould, melted with ſympathy at 'the affecting ſcene.

'Being thus reconciled to my father, 'we attended him into the country, 'where we were received by my mo'ther, who was a ſenſible good woman, 'though not ſuſceptible to love, and 'therefore leſs apt to excuſe a weakneſs to which ſhe was an utter ſtran'ger. This was likewiſe the caſe with 'an uncle, from whom I had great 'expectations. He was a plain good'natured man, and treated us with 'great courteſy; though his notions, 'in point of love, were not exactly 'conformable to ours. Nevertheleſs, I 'was, and ſeemed to be ſo happy in 'my choice, that my family not only 'became ſatisfied with the match, but 'exceedingly fond of Lord W——m.

'After a ſhort ſtay with them in the 'country, we returned to London, in 'order to be introduced at court, and 'then ſet out for the North, on a viſit 'to my brother-in-law the Duke of 'H——, who had, by a letter to Lord 'W——m, invited us to his habita'tion. My father accordingly equip'ped us with horſes and money; for 'our own finances were extremely ſlen'der, conſiſting only of a ſmall penſion 'allowed by his grace, upon whom the 'brothers were entirely dependent, the 'father having died ſuddenly, before 'ſuitable proviſion could be made for 'his younger children.

'When I took my leave of my rela'tions, bidding adieu to my paternal 'home, and found myſelf launching 'into a world of care and trouble, 'though the voyage on which I had 'embarked was altogether voluntary, 'and my companion the perſon on 'whom I doated to diſtraction, I could 'not help feeling ſome melancholy ſen'ſations,

'sations; which, however, in a little 'time, gave way to a train of more 'agreeable ideas. I was visited in town 'by almost all the women of fashion, 'many of whom, I perceived, envied 'me the possession of a man who had 'made strange havock among their 'hearts, and some of them knew the 'value of his favour. One in particu-'lar endeavoured to cultivate my friend-'ship with singular marks of regard; 'but I thought proper to discourage 'her advances, by keeping within the 'bounds of bare civility; and, indeed, 'to none of them was I lavish of my 'complaisance, for I dedicated my whole 'time to the object of my affection, who 'engrossed my wishes to such a degree, 'that although I was never jealous, '(because I had no reason to be so) I 'envied the happiness of every woman 'whom he chanced at any time to hand 'into a coach.

'The Duchess of ——, who was 'newly married to the Earl of P——, a 'particular friend of Lord W——m's, 'carried me to court, and presented me 'to the queen, who expressed her ap-'probation of my person in very par-'ticular terms, and observed the satis-'faction that appeared in my counte-'nance, with marks of admiration; 'desired her ladies to take notice, how 'little happiness depended upon wealth, 'since there was more joy in my face 'than in all her court besides.

'Such a declaration could not fail to 'overwhelm me with blushes, which 'her majesty seemed to behold with 'pleasure; for she frequently repeated 'the remark, and shewed me to all the 'foreigners of distinction, with many 'gracious expressions of favour. She 'wished Lord W——m happiness in-'stead of joy; and was pleased to pro-'mise, that she would provide for her 'pretty beggars: and poor enough we 'certainly were in every article but love. 'Nevertheless, we felt no necessities, 'but passed the summer in a variety of 'pleasures and parties; the greatest 'part of which were planned by Lord 'W——'s sister and another lady, who 'was at that time mistress to the prime 'minister. The first was a wit, but 'homely in her person; the other, a 'woman of great beauty and masculine 'understanding; and a particular 'friendship subsisted between them, 'though they were both lovers of power 'and admiration.

'This lady, who sat at the helm, 'was extremely elegant as well as ex-'pensive in her diversions, in many of 'which we bore a share; particularly 'her parties upon the water, which 'were contrived in all the magnificence 'of taste. In the course of these amuse-'ments, a trifling circumstance oc-'curred, which I shall relate as an in-'stance of that jealous sensibility which 'characterized Lord W——'s disposi-'tion. A large company of ladies and 'gentlemen having agreed to dine at 'Vauxhall, and sup at Marble Hall, 'where we proposed to conclude the 'evening with a dance, one barge be-'ing insufficient to contain the whole 'company, we were divided by lots; in 'consequence of which, my husband 'and I were parted. This separation 'was equally mortifying to us both, 'who, though married, were still lovers; 'and my chagrin was increased, when 'I perceived that I was doomed to sit 'by Sir W—— Y——, a man of pro-'fessed gallantry; for, although Lord 'W——m had, before his marriage, 'made his addresses to every woman he 'saw, I knew very well he did not de-'sire that any person should make love 'to his wife.

'That I might not therefore give 'umbrage, by talking to this gallant, 'I conversed with a Scots nobleman, 'who, according to common report, 'had formerly sighed among my ad-'mirers: by these means, in seeking 'to avoid one error, I unwittingly 'plunged myself into a greater; and 'disobliged Lord W——m so much, 'that he could not conceal his displea-'sure; nay, so deeply was he offended 'at my conduct, that in the evening, 'when the ball began, he would scarce 'deign to take me by the hand in the 'course of dancing, and darted such 'unkind looks as pierced me to the 'very soul. What augmented my con-'cern, was my ignorance of the tres-'pass I had committed. I was tor-'tured with a thousand uneasy reflec-'tions; I began to fear that I had mis-'taken his temper, and given my heart 'to a man who was tired of possession; 'though I resolved to bear without 'complaining the misfortune I had en-'tailed upon myself.

'I seized

'I seized the first opportunity of 'speaking to him, and thereby discovered the cause of his chagrin; but, 'as there was no time for expostulation, the misunderstanding continued 'on his side, with such evident marks 'of uneasiness, that every individual of 'the company made up to me, and 'enquired about the cause of his disorder; so that I was fain to amuse 'their concern, by saying that he had 'been ill the day before, and dancing 'did not agree with his constitution. 'So much was he incensed by this unhappy circumstance of my conduct, 'which was void of all intention to 'offend him, that he determined to be 'revenged of me for my indiscretion; 'and, at supper, chancing to sit between two very handsome ladies (one 'of whom is lately dead, and the other, 'at present, my neighbour in the country) he affected an air of gaiety, and 'openly coquetted with them both.

'This was not the only punishment 'he inflicted on his innocent wife. In 'the course of our entertainment, we 'engaged in some simple diversion, in 'consequence of which, the gentlemen 'were ordered to salute the ladies; 'when Lord W——, in performing 'this command, unkindly neglected 'me in my turn; and I had occasion 'for all my discretion and pride, to 'conceal from the company the agonies I felt at this mark of indifference 'and disrespect. However, I obtained 'the victory over myself, and pretended to laugh at his husband-like behaviour, while the tears stood in my 'eyes, and my heart swelled even to 'bursting.

'We broke up about five, after having spent the most tedious evening I 'had ever known; and this offended 'lover went to bed in a state of sullen 'silence and disgust. Whatever desire 'I had to come to an explanation, I 'thought myself so much aggrieved by 'his unreasonable prejudice, that I 'could not prevail upon myself to demand a conference, till after his first 'nap, when my pride giving way to my 'tenderness, I clasped him in my arms, 'though he pretended to discourage 'these advances of my love: I asked 'how he could be so unjust as to take 'umbrage at my civility to a man 'whom he knew I had refused for his 'sake. I chid him for his barbarous 'endeavours to awake my jealousy, and 'used such irresistible arguments in my 'own vindication, that he was convinced of my innocence, sealed my acquittal with a kind embrace, and we 'mutually enjoyed the soft transports 'of a fond reconciliation.

'Never was passion more eager, delicate, or unreserved, than that which 'glowed within our breasts. Far from 'being cloyed with the possession of 'each other, our raptures seemed to increase with the term of our union. 'When we were parted, though but 'for a few hours, by the necessary avocations of life, we were unhappy during that brief separation, and met 'again, like lovers who knew no joy 'but in one another's presence. How 'many delicious evenings did we spend 'together, in our little apartment, after 'we had ordered the candles to be taken 'away, that we might enjoy the agreeable reflection of the moon in a fine 'summer's evening. Such a mild and 'solemn scene naturally disposes the 'mind to peace and benevolence; but 'when improved with the conversation 'of the man one loves, it fills the imagination with ideas of ineffable delight! 'For my own part, I can safely say, 'my heart was so wholly engrossed by 'my husband, that I never took pleasure in any diversion where he was 'not personally concerned; nor was I 'ever guilty of one thought repugnant 'to my duty and my love.

'In the autumn we set out for the 'North, and were met on the road by 'the duke and twenty gentlemen, who 'conducted us to H——n, where we 'lived in all imaginable splendor. His 'grace, at that time, maintained above 'an hundred servants, with a band of 'musick, which always performed at 'dinner; kept open table, and was visited by a great deal of company. The 'œconomy of his house was superintended by his eldest sister, a beautiful 'young lady of an amiable temper, 'with whom I soon contracted an intimate friendship. She and the duke 'used to rally me upon my fondness for 'Lord W——m, who was a sort of an 'humourist, and apt to be in a pet, in 'which case he would leave the company, and go to bed by seven o'clock 'in the evening. On these occasions, 'I always disappeared, giving up every 'consideration to that of pleasing my

'husband,

'husband, notwithstanding the ridicule 'of his relations, who taxed me with 'having spoiled him with too much in-'dulgence. But how could I express 'too much tenderness and condescen-'sion, for a man who doated upon me 'to such excess, that when business 'obliged him to leave me, he always 'snatched the first opportunity to re-'turn, and often rode through dark-'ness, storms, and tempests, to my 'arms!

'Having stayed about seven months 'in this place, I found myself in a fair 'way of being a mother; and that I 'might be near my own relations, in 'such an interesting situation, I and 'my dear companion departed from 'H——n, not without great reluctance; 'for I was fond of the Scots in general, 'who treated me with great hospitality 'and respect; and to this day, they pay 'me the compliment of saying, I was 'one of the best wives in that country, 'which is so justly celebrated for good 'women.

'Lord W——m having attended me 'to my father's house, was obliged to 'return to Scotland to support his in-'terest in being elected member of par-'liament; so that he took his leave of 'me, with a full resolution of seeing 'me again, before the time of my ly-'ing-in; and all the comfort I enjoyed 'in his absence, was the perusal of his 'letters, which I punctually received, 'together with those of his sister, who 'from time to time favoured me with 'assurances of his constancy and devo-'tion. Indeed these testimonials were 'necessary to one of my disposition; for 'I was none of those who could be con-'tented with half an heart. I could 'not even spare one complacent look to 'any other woman, but expected the 'undivided homage of his love. Had 'I been disappointed in this expecta-'tion, I should (though a wife) have 'rebelled or died.

'Meanwhile, my parents treated me 'with great tenderness, intending that 'Lord W——m should be settled in a 'house of his own, and accommodated 'with my fortune, and his expectations 'from the queen were very sanguine, 'when I was taken ill, and delivered of a 'dead child; an event which affected 'me extremely. When I understood 'the extent of my misfortune, my heart 'throbbed with such violence, that my 'breast could scarce contain it; and my 'anxiety being aggravated by the ab-'sence of my lord, produced a dan-'gerous fever, of which he was no 'sooner apprized by letter, than he came 'post from Scotland; but before his 'arrival, I was supposed to be in a fair 'way.

'During this journey, he was tor-'tured with all that terrible suspense, 'which prevails in the minds of those 'who are in danger of losing that 'which is most dear to them; and 'when he entered the house, was so 'much overwhelmed with apprehension, 'that he durst not enquire about the 'state of my health.

'As for my part, I never closed an 'eye from the time on which I expected 'his return; and when I heard his 'voice, I threw open my curtains, and 'sat up in the bed to receive him, 'though at the hazard of my life. He 'run towards me with all the eagerness 'of passion, and clasped me in his arms; 'he kneeled by the bed-side, kissed my 'hand a thousand times, and wept with 'transports of tenderness and joy. In 'short, this meeting was so pathetick, 'as to overcome my enfeebled constitu-'tion; and we were parted by those 'who were wiser than ourselves, and 'saw that nothing was so proper for us 'as a little repose.

'But how shall I relate the deplorable 'transition from envied happiness to 'excess of misery, which I now sustain-'ed! My month was hardly up, when 'my dear husband was taken ill; per-'haps the fatigue of body as well as 'mind, which he had undergone on my 'account, occasioned a fatal ferment in 'his blood, and his health fell a sacri-'fice to his love. Physicians were call-'ed from London; but, alas! they 'brought no hopes of his recovery. 'By their advice, he was removed to 'town, for the convenience of being 'punctually attended. Every mo-'ment was too precious to be thrown 'away; he was therefore immediately 'put into the coach, though the day 'was far spent; and I, though exceed-'ingly weak, accompanied him in the 'journey, which was performed by the 'light of flambeaus, and rendered un-'speakably shocking, by the dismal 'apprehension of losing him every mo-'ment.

'At length, however, we arrived at

'our

'our lodgings in Pall Mall, where I 'lay by him on the floor, and attended 'the iſſue of his diſtemper, in all the 'agonies of horror and deſpair. In a 'little time his malady ſettled upon his 'brain, and in his delirium, he uttered 'ſuch dreadful exclamations, as were 'ſufficient to pierce the moſt ſavage 'heart. What effect then muſt they 'have had on mine, which was fraught 'with every ſentiment of the moſt melt-'ing affection! It was not a common 'grief that took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; 'I felt all the aggravation of the moſt 'acute diſtreſs. I ſometimes ran down 'to the ſtreet in a fit of diſtraction; I 'ſent for the doctors every minute; I 'wearied Heaven with my prayers: 'even now my heart akes at the remem-'brance of what I ſuffered, and I can-'not without trembling proceed with 'the woeful ſtory.

'After having lain inſenſible ſome 'days, he recovered the uſe of ſpeech, 'and called upon my name, which he 'had a thouſand times repeated while 'he was bereft of reaſon. All hope 'of his life was now relinquiſhed, and 'I was led to his bed-ſide to receive 'his laſt adieu, being directed to ſum-'mon all my fortitude, and ſuppreſs 'my ſorrow, that he might not be diſ-'turbed by my agitation. I collected 'all my reſolution to ſupport me in this 'affecting ſcene. I ſaw my dear lord 'in extremity. The beauties of his 'youth were all decayed; yet his eyes, 'though languid, retained unſpeakable 'ſweetneſs and expreſſion. He felt his 'end approaching, put forth his hand, 'and with a look full of complacency 'and benevolence, uttered ſuch a ten-'der tale——Good Heaven! how had 'I deſerved ſuch accumulated affliction! 'the bare remembrance of which now 'melts me into tears! Human nature 'could not undergo my ſituation, with-'out ſuffering an extaſy of grief! I 'claſped him in my arms, and kiſſed 'him a thouſand times, with the moſt 'violent emotions of woe; but I was 'torn from his embrace, and in a little 'time he was raviſhed for ever from my 'view.

'On that fatal morning, which put a 'period to his life, I ſaw the Ducheſs 'of L—— approach my bed, and, 'from her appearance, concluded that 'he was no more; yet I begged ſhe 'would not confirm the unhappy pre-'ſage, by announcing his death; and 'ſhe accordingly preſerved the moſt 'emphatick ſilence. I got up, and trod 'ſoftly over his head, as if I had been 'afraid of interrupting his repoſe. Alas! 'he was no longer ſenſible of ſuch diſ-'turbance. I was ſeized with a ſtupe-'faction of ſorrow: I threw up the 'window, and looking around, thought 'the ſun ſhone with the moſt diſmal 'aſpect; every thing was ſolitary, 'chearleſs, and replete with horror.

'In this condition I was, by the di-'rection of my friend, conveyed to her 'houſe, where my faculties were ſo 'overpowered by the load of anguiſh 'which oppreſſed me, that I know not 'what paſſed during the firſt days of 'my unhappy widowhood; this only I 'know, the kind ducheſs treated me 'with all imaginable care and com-'paſſion, and carried me to her country-'houſe, where I ſtayed ſome months; 'during which, ſhe endeavoured to com-'fort me with all the amuſements ſhe 'could invent, and laid me under ſuch 'obligations, as ſhall never be eraſed 'from my remembrance: yet, notwith-'ſtanding all her care and concern, I 'was, by my exceſs of grief, plunged 'into a languiſhing diſtemper, for which 'my phyſicians adviſed me to drink the 'Bath waters.

'In compliance with this preſcrip-'tion, I went thither towards the end 'of ſummer, and found ſome benefit 'by adhering to their directions; though 'I ſeldom went abroad, except when I 'viſited my ſiſter-in-law, who was 'there with the princeſs; and upon 'theſe occaſions, I never failed to at-'tract the notice of the company, who 'were ſtruck with the appearance of 'ſuch a young creature in weeds. Nor 'was I free from the perſecution of 'profeſſed admirers; but being dead to 'all joy, I was deaf to the voice of 'adulation.

'About Chriſtmas, I repaired to my 'father's houſe, where my ſorrows were 'revived by every object that recalled 'the idea of my dear lamented lord. 'But theſe melancholy reflections I was 'obliged to bear, becauſe I had no 'other home or habitation, being left 'an unprovided widow, altogether de-'pendent on the affection of my own 'family.

'During this winter, divers over-'tures were made to my father, by

'people who demanded me in marriage; 'but my heart was not yet sufficiently 'weaned from my former passion, to 'admit the thoughts of another master. 'Among those that presented their pro-'posals, was a certain young noble-'man, who, upon the first news of 'Lord W——m's death, came post 'from Paris, in order to declare his 'passion. He made his first appearance 'in a hired chariot and six, accompanied 'by a big fat fellow, whom (as I after-'wards learned) he had engaged to 'sound his praises, with the promise of 'a thousand pounds, in lieu of which 'he paid him with forty. Whether it 'was with a view of screening himself 'from the cold, or of making a com-'fortable medium in case of being over-'turned, and falling under his weighty 'companion, I know not; but certain 'it is, the carriage was stuffed with 'hay, in such a manner, that when he 'arrived, the servants were at some 'pains in rummaging and removing it, 'before they could come at their master, 'or help him to alight. When he was 'lifted out of the chariot, he exhibited 'a very ludicrous figure to the view; 'he was a thin, meagre, shivering crea-'ture, of a low stature, with little black 'eyes, a long nose, sallow complexion, 'and pitted with the small-pox; dressed 'in a coat of light brown frieze lined 'with pink-coloured shag, a monstrous 'solitaire and bag, and (if I remember 'aright) a pair of huge jack-boots. In 'a word, his whole appearance was so 'little calculated for inspiring love, 'that I had (on the strength of seeing 'him once before at Oxford) set him 'down as the last man on earth whom 'I would chuse to wed; and I will 'venture to affirm, that he was in every 'particular the very reverse of my late 'husband.

'As my father was not at home, he 'stayed but one evening, and left his 'errand with my mother, to whom 'he was as disagreeable as to myself; 'so that his proposal was absolutely 'rejected; and I heard no more of 'him during the space of three whole 'months; at the expiration of which I 'went to town, where this mortifying 'figure presented itself again, and re-'newed his suit, offering such advan-'tageous terms of settlement, that my 'father began to relish the match, and 'warmly recommended it to my con-'sideration.

'Lord W——m's relations advised 'me to embrace the opportunity of 'making myself independent; all my 'acquaintance plied me with arguments 'to the same purpose: I was uneasy at 'home, and indifferent to all mankind. 'I weighed the motives with the ob-'jections, and with reluctance yielded 'to the importunity of my friends.

'In consequence of this determina-'tion, the little gentleman was per-'mitted to visit me; and the manner 'of his address did not at all alter the 'opinion I had conceived of his cha-'racter and understanding. I was even 'shocked at the prospect of marrying 'a man whom I could not love; and, 'in order to disburden my own con-'science, took an opportunity of telling 'him one evening, as we sat opposite 'to each other, that it was not in my 'power to command my affection, and 'therefore he could not expect the pos-'session of my heart, Lord W——m's 'indulgence having spoiled me for a 'wife; nevertheless, I would endea-'vour to contract a friendship for him, 'which would entirely depend upon his 'own behaviour.

'To this declaration he replied (to 'my great surprize) that he did not 'desire me to love him, my friendship 'was sufficient; and next day repeated 'this strange instance of moderation in 'a letter, which I communicated to 'my sister, who laughed heartily at the 'contents, and persuaded me, that since 'I could love no man, he was the pro-'perest person to be my husband.

'Accordingly, the wedding-cloaths 'and equipage being prepared, the 'day—*the fatal day was fixed!* on 'the morning of which I went to the 'house of my brother-in-law, Duke 'H——, who loved me tenderly, and 'took my leave of the family; a family 'which I shall always remember with 'love, honour, and esteem. His grace 'received me in the most affectionate 'manner, saying, at parting, "Lady "W——, if he does not use you well, "I will take you back again."

'The bridegroom and I met at 'Ox—— Chapel, where the ceremony 'was performed by the Bishop of 'W——, in presence of his lordship's 'mother, my father, and another lady.

'The

'The nuptial knot being tied, we ſet 'out for my father's houſe in the coun- 'try, and proceeded full twenty miles 'on our journey, before my lord open- 'ed his mouth; my thoughts having 'been all that time employed on ſome- 'thing quite foreign to my preſent ſitu- 'ation; for I was then but a giddy 'girl of eighteen. At length my father 'broke ſilence, and clapping his lord- 'ſhip on the ſhoulder, told him he was 'but a dull bridegroom; upon which, 'my lord gave him to underſtand, that 'he was out of ſpirits. This dejection 'continued all the day, notwithſtand- 'ing the refreſhment of a plentiful din- 'ner, which he ate upon the road; and 'in the evening we arrived at the place 'of our deſtination, where we were 'kindly received by my mother, though 'ſhe had no liking to the match; and 'after ſupper, we retired to our apart- 'ment.

'It was here that I had occaſion to 'perceive the moſt diſagreeable contraſt 'between my preſent help-mate and 'my former lord. Inſtead of flying to 'my arms with all the eagerneſs of 'love and rapture, this manly repre- 'ſentative ſat moping in a corner, like 'a criminal on execution-day, and 'owned he was aſhamed to bed a wo- 'man, whoſe hand he had ſcarce ever 'touched.

'I could not help being affected with 'this puſillanimous behaviour; I re- 'membered Lord W——m, while I 'ſurveyed the object before me, and 'made ſuch a compariſon as filled me 'with horror and diſguſt: nay, to ſuch 'a degree did my averſion to this phan- 'tom prevail, that I began to ſweat 'with anguiſh at the thought of being 'ſubjected to his pleaſure: and when, 'after a long heſitation, he ventured to 'approach me, I trembled as if I had 'been expoſed to the embraces of a 'rattle-ſnake. Nor did the efforts of 'his love diminiſh this antipathy. His 'attempts were like the pawings of an 'imp, ſent from hell to ſeize and tor- 'ment ſome guilty wretch, ſuch as are 'exhibited in ſome dramatick perfor- 'mance, which I never ſee acted with- 'out remembering my wedding-night. 'By ſuch ſhadowy, unſubſtantial vexa- 'tious behaviour, was I tantalized and 'robbed of my repoſe; and early next 'morning I got up, with a moſt ſo- 'vereign contempt for my bed-fellow, 'who indulged himſelf in bed till ele- 'ven.

'Having paſſed a few days in this 'place, I went home with him to his 'houſe at Twickenham; and ſoon after 'we were preſented at court, when the 'queen was pleaſed to ſay to my lord's 'mother, ſhe did not doubt but we 'ſhould be an happy couple, for I had 'been a good wife to my former huſ- 'band.

'Whatever deficiencies I had to com- 'plain of in my new ſpouſe, he was not 'wanting in point of liberality: I was 'preſented with a very fine chariot ſtud- 'ded with ſilver nails, and ſuch a pro- 'fuſion of jewels as furniſhed a joke 'to ſome of my acquaintance, who ob- 'ſerved that I was formerly Queen of 'Hearts, but now metamorphoſed into 'the Queen of Diamonds. I now alſo 'had an opportunity (which I did not 'let ſlip) of paying Lord W——m's 'debts from my privy purſe: and on 'that ſcore received the thanks of his 'elder brother, who (though he had 'undertaken to diſcharge them) de- 'layed the execution of his purpoſe 'longer than I thought they ſhould re- 'main unpaid. This uncommon ſplen- 'dor attracted the eyes and envy of my 'competitors, who were the more im- 'placable in their reſentments, becauſe, 'notwithſtanding my marriage, I was 'as much as ever followed by the men 'of gallantry and pleaſure, among 'whom it is a conſtant maxim, that a 'woman never witholds her affections 'from her huſband without an inten- 'tion to beſtow them ſomewhere elſe. 'I never appeared without a train of 'admirers, and my houſe in the country 'was always crouded with gay young 'men of quality.

'Among thoſe who cultivated my 'good graces with the greateſt ſkill and 'aſſiduity, were the Earl C——, and 'Mr. S——, brother to Lord F——. 'The former of whom, in the courſe 'of his addreſſes, treated me with an 'entertainment of ſurprizing magnifi- 'cence, diſpoſed into a dinner, ſupper, 'and ball; to which I, at his deſire, 'invited eleven ladies, whom he paired 'with the like number of his own ſex; 'ſo that the whole company amounted 'to twenty-four. We were regaled 'with a moſt elegant dinner, in an a- 'partment which was altogether ſuperb, 'and ſerved by gentlemen only, no li-

'very servant being permitted to come 'within the door. In the afternoon we 'embarked in two splendid barges, be- 'ing attended by a band of musick in 'a third; and enjoyed a delightful even- 'ing upon the river, till the twilight, 'when we returned and began the ball, 'which was conducted with such order 'and taste, that mirth and good-hu- 'mour prevailed. No dissatisfaction ap- 'peared, except in the countenance of 'one old maid, since married to a son 'of the Duke of ——, who though she 'would not refuse to partake of such 'an agreeable entertainment, was dis- 'pleased that I should have the honour 'of inviting her. O baleful Envy! 'thou self-tormenting fiend! How dost 'thou predominate in all assemblies, 'from the grand gala of a court to the 'meeting of simple peasants at their 'harvest-home! Nor is the prevalence 'of this sordid passion to be wondered 'at, if we consider the weakness, pride, 'and vanity of our sex. The presence 'of one favourite man shall poison the 'enjoyment of a whole company, and 'produce the most rancorous enmity 'betwixt the closest friends.

'I danced with the master of the ball, 'who employed all the artillery of his 'eloquence in making love; yet I did 'not listen to his addresses, for he was 'not to my taste, though he possessed 'an agreeable person, and a good ac- 'quired understanding; but he was 'utterly ignorant of that gentle pre- 'vailing art which I afterwards expe- 'rienced in Mr. S—, and which was 'the only method he could have success- 'fully practised, in seducing a young 'woman like me, born with sentiments 'of honour, and trained up in the paths 'of religion and virtue. This young 'gentleman was, indeed, absolutely 'master of those insinuating qualifica- 'tions which few women of passion and 'sensibility can resist; and had a per- 'son every way adapted for profiting by 'these insidious talents. He was well 'acquainted with the human heart, con- 'scious of his own power and capacity, 'and exercised these endowments with 'unwearied perseverance. He was tall 'and thin, of a shape and size perfectly 'agreeable to my taste, with large blue 'eloquent eyes, good teeth, and a long 'head turned to gallantry. His beha- 'viour was the standard of politeness, 'and all his advances were conducted 'with the most profound respect; which 'is the most effectual expedient a man 'can use against us, if he can find means 'to persuade us that it proceeds from 'the excess and delicacy of his passion. 'It is no other than a silent compli- 'ment, by which our accomplishments 'are continually flattered, and pleases 'in proportion to the supposed under- 'standing of him who pays it.

'By these arts and advantages this 'consummate politician in love began 'by degrees to sap the foundations of 'my conjugal faith; he stole imper- 'ceptibly into my affection, and by 'dint of opportunity, which he well 'knew how to improve, triumphed, at 'last, over all his rivals.

'Nor was he the only person that 'disputed my heart with Earl C——. 'That nobleman was also rivalled by 'Lord C— H—, a Scotchman, who 'had been an intimate and relation of 'my former husband. Him I would 'have preferred to most of his compe- 'titors, and actually coquetted with 'him for some time: but the amour 'was interrupted by his going to Ire- 'land; upon which occasion, under- 'standing that he was but indifferently 'provided with money, I made him a 'present of a gold snuff-box, in which 'was inclosed a bank-note; a trifling 'mark of my esteem, which he after- 'wards justified by the most grateful, 'friendly, and genteel behaviour; and 'as we corresponded by letters, I frank- 'ly told him, that Mr. S— had stepped 'in, and won the palm from all the 'rest of my admirers.

'This new favourite's mother and 'sisters, who lived in the neighbour- 'hood, were my constant companions; 'and, in consequence of this intimacy, 'he never let a day pass without pay- 'ing his respects to me in person; nay, 'so ingenious was he in contriving the 'means of promoting his suit, that whe- 'ther I rode or walked, went abroad 'or stayed at home, he was always of 'course one of the party: so that his 'design seemed to engross his whole 'vigilance and attention. Thus he stu- 'died my disposition, and established 'himself in my good opinion at the 'same time. He found my heart was 'susceptible of every tender impression, 'and saw that I was not free from the 'vanity of youth; he had already ac- 'quired my friendship and esteem, from

'which

'which he knew there was a ſhort and 'eaſy tranſition to love. By his pene-'tration chuſing proper ſeaſons for the 'theme, he urged it with ſuch pathetick 'vows and artful adulation, as well 'might captivate a young woman of 'my complexion and inexperience, and 'circumſtanced as I was, with a huſ-'band whom I had ſuch reaſon to de-'ſpiſe.

'Though he thus made an inſenſible 'progreſs in my heart, he did not find 'my virtue any eaſy conqueſt; and I 'myſelf was ignorant of the advantage 'he had gained, with regard to my 'inclinations, until I was convinced 'of his ſucceſs by an alarm of jea-'louſy which I one day felt, at ſee-'ing him engaged in converſation with 'another lady. I forthwith recognized 'this ſymptom of love, with which I 'had been formerly acquainted, and 'trembled at the diſcovery of my own 'weakneſs. I underwent a ſtrange agi-'tation and mixture of contrary ſenſa-'tions: I was pleaſed with the paſſion, 'yet aſhamed of avowing it even to my 'own mind. The rights of a huſband '(though mine was but a nominal one) 'occurred to my reflection, and virtue, 'modeſty, and honour, forbade me to 'cheriſh the guilty flame.

'When I encouraged theſe laudable 'ſcruples, and reſolved to ſacrifice my 'love to duty and reputation, my lord 'was almoſt every day employed in 'riding poſt to my father, with com-'plaints of my conduct, which was 'hitherto irreproachable; though the 'greateſt grievance which he pretended 'to have ſuffered, was my refuſing to 'comply with his deſire, when he en-'treated me to lie a whole hour every 'morning with my neck uncovered, 'that by gazing he might quiet the 'perturbation of his ſpirits. From this 'requeſt you may judge of the man, 'as well as of the regard I muſt enter-'tain for his character and diſpoſition.

'During the whole ſummer I was 'beſieged by my artful undoer, and in 'the autumn ſet out with my lord for 'Bath; where, by reaſon of the inti-'macy that ſubſiſted between our fami-'lies, we lived in the ſame houſe with 'my lover and his ſiſter, who, with 'another agreeable young lady, ac-'companied us in this expedition. By 'this time Mr. S— had extorted from 'me a confeſſion of a mutual flame; 'though I aſſured him that it ſhould 'never induce me to give up the valua-'ble poſſeſſions of an unſpotted cha-'racter, and a conſcience void of of-'fence. I offered him all the enjoy-'ment he could reap from an unreſerved 'intercourſe of ſouls, abſtracted from 'any ſenſual conſideration. He eagerly 'embraced the Platonick propoſal, be-'cauſe he had ſagacity enough to fore-'ſee the iſſue of ſuch chimerical con-'tracts, and knew me too well to think 'he could accompliſh his purpoſe with-'out ſeeming to acquieſce in my own 'terms, and cultivating my tenderneſs 'under the ſpecious pretext.

'In conſequence of this agreement, 'we took all opportunities of ſeeing 'each other in private; and theſe in-'terviews were ſpent in mutual pro-'teſtations of diſintereſted love. This 'correſpondence, though dangerous, 'was (on my ſide) equally innocent 'and endearing; and many happy hours 'we paſſed, before my ſentiments were 'diſcovered. At length my lover was 'taken ill, and then my paſſion burſt 'out beyond the power of concealment; 'my grief and anxiety became ſo con-'ſpicuous in my countenance, and my 'behaviour was ſo indiſcreet, that every 'body in the houſe perceived the ſitua-'tion of my thoughts, and blamed my 'conduct accordingly.

'Certain it is, I was extremely im-'prudent, though intentionally inno-'cent. I have lain whole nights by 'my lord, who teized and tormented 'me for that which neither I could give 'nor he could take, and ruminated on 'the fatal conſequence of this unhap-'py flame, until I was worked into a 'fever of diſquiet. I ſaw there was 'ſafety but in flight, and often deter-'mined to baniſh myſelf for ever from 'the ſight of this dangerous intruder. 'But my reſolution always failed at 'the approach of day, and my de-'ſire of ſeeing him as conſtantly re-'curred. So far was I from perſiſting 'in ſuch commendable determinations, 'that, on the eve of our departure from 'Bath, I felt the keeneſt pangs of ſor-'row at our approaching ſeparation; 'and as we could not enjoy our private 'interviews at my houſe in town, I 'promiſed to viſit him at his own a-'partments, after he had ſworn by all 'that's ſacred, that he would take no 'ſiniſter advantage of my condeſcen-

'ſion,

'sion, by presuming upon the opportunities I should give.

'He kept his word; for he saw I trusted to it with fear and trembling, and perceived that my apprehension was not affected, but the natural concern of a young creature, distracted between love and duty, whom, had he alarmed, he never would have seen within his doors again. Instead of pressing me with solicitations in favour of his passion, he was more than ever respectful and complaisant; so that I found myself disengaged of all restraint, conducted the conversation, shortened and repeated my visits at my own pleasure, till at last I became so accustomed to this communication, that his house was as familiar to me as my own.

'Having in this manner secured himself in my confidence, he resumed the favourite topick of love, and warming my imagination by gradual advances on the subject, my heart began to pant; when he saw me thus moved, he snatched the favourable occasion to practise all his eloquence and art. I could not resist his energy, nor even fly from the temptation that assailed me, until he had obtained a promise that he should, at our next meeting, reap the fruits of his tedious expectation. Upon this condition I was permitted to retire; and blessed Heaven for my escape, fully determined to continue in the path of virtue I had hitherto trod, and stifle the criminal flame, by which my peace and reputation were endangered. But his idea, which reigned in my heart without controul, soon baffled all these prudent suggestions.

'I saw him again; and he reminded me of my promise, which I endeavoured to evade with affected pleasantry; upon which he manifested the utmost displeasure and chagrin, shedding some crocodile tears, and upbraiding me with levity and indifference. He observed, that he had solicited my favour for ten long months, without intermission, and imagined I had held out so long on virtuous motives only; but now he could plainly perceive that his want of success had been owing to my want of affection, and that all my professions were insincere; in a word, he persuaded me, that his remonstrances were just and reasonable. I could not see the affliction of a man I loved, when I knew it was in my power to remove it; and rather than forfeit his opinion of my sincerity and love, I consented to his wish. My heart now flutters at the remembrance of the dear, though fatal indiscretion; yet I reflect without remorse, and even remember it with pleasure.

'If I could not avoid the censure of the world, I was resolved to bear it without repining; and sure the guilt (if there was any in my conduct) was but venial; for I considered myself as a person absolved of all matrimonial ties, by the insignificance of Lord ——, who, though a nominal husband, was in fact a mere non-entity. I therefore contracted a new engagement with my lover, to which I resolved to adhere with the most scrupulous fidelity, without the least intention of injuring my lord or his relations; for had our mutual passion produced any visible effects, I would immediately have renounced and abandoned my husband for ever, that the fruit of my love for Mr. S—— might not have inherited to the detriment of the right heir. This was my determination, which I thought just, if not prudent; and for which I have incurred the imputation of folly, in the opinion of this wise and honest generation, by whose example and advice I have, since that time, been a little reformed in point of prudentials, though I still retain a strong tendency to return to my primitive way of thinking.

'When I quitted Mr. S——, after the sacrifice I had made, and returned to my own bed, it may perhaps be supposed that I slept but little. True; I was kept awake by the joyful impatience of revisiting my lover. Indeed, I neglected no opportunity of flying to his arms: when Lord —— was in the country, we enjoyed each other's company without interruption; but when he resided in town our correspondence was limited to stolen interviews, which were unspeakably delicious, as genuine love presided at the entertainment.

'Such was my happiness, in the course of this tender communication, that to this day I remember it with pleasure, though it has cost me dear in the se-

'quel,

'quel, and was at that time enjoyed at 'a conſiderable expence; for I devoted 'myſelf ſo entirely to my lover, who 'was deſirous of engroſſing my time and 'thoughts, that my acquaintance, which 'was very numerous, juſtly accuſed me 'of neglect, and of conſequence cooled 'in their friendſhips: but I was *all for 'love, or the world well loſt*. And 'were the ſame opportunity to offer, 'I would act the ſame conduct over 'again.

'Some there are who poſſibly may 'wonder how I could love twice with 'ſuch violence of affection: but all ſuch 'obſervers muſt be unacquainted with 'the human heart. Mine was natu-'rally adapted for the tender paſſions, 'and had been ſo fortunate, ſo cheriſh-'ed in it's firſt impreſſions, that it felt 'with joy the ſame ſenſations revive, 'when influenced by the ſame engaging 'qualifications. Certain it is, I loved 'the ſecond time as well as the firſt, and 'better was impoſſible. I gave up my 'all for both: fortune and my father's 'favour for the one; reputation, friends, 'and fortune, for the other. Yet, not-'withſtanding this intimate connection, 'I did not relinquiſh the world all at 'once; on the contrary, I ſtill appear-'ed at court, and attracted the notice 'and approbation of my royal patroneſs; 'I danced with the P—— of W——, 'a circumſtance which ſo nearly affect-'ed Mr. S——, who was preſent, that, 'in order to manifeſt his reſentment, he 'choſe the ugliеſt woman in the ball for 'his partner; and I no ſooner perceived 'his uneaſineſs than I gave over, with 'a view of appeaſing his diſpleaſure.

'Without repeating particular cir-'cumſtances, let it ſuffice to ſay, our 'mutual paſſion was a perfect copy of 'that which had ſubſiſted between me 'and my dear Lord W——m. It was 'jealous, melting, and delicate, and 'chequered with little accidents, which 'ſerve to animate and maintain the 'flame in it's firſt ardency of rapture. 'When my lover was ſick, I attended 'and nurſed him with indefatigable ten-'derneſs and care; and during an in-'diſpoſition which I caught in the per-'formance of this agreeable office, he 'diſcharged the obligation with all the 'warmth of ſympathy and love.

'It was, however, judged neceſſary 'by the phyſicians, that I ſhould uſe 'the Bath waters for the recovery of 'my health; and I ſet out for that 'place, glad of a pretence to be abſent 'from Lord ——, with whom I lived 'on very unhappy terms. He had, 'about nine months after our marriage, 'deſired that we might ſleep in ſeparate 'beds, and gave a very whimſical rea-'ſon for this propoſal. He ſaid, the 'immenſity of his love deprived him of 'the power of gratification, and that 'ſome commerce with an object, to 'which his heart was not attached, 'might, by diminiſhing the tranſports 'of his ſpirits, recompoſe his nerves, 'and enable him to enjoy the fruits of 'his good fortune.

'You may be ſure I made no objec-'tions to this plan, which was imme-'diately put in execution. He made 'his addreſſes to a nymph of Drury 'Lane, whoſe name (as he told me) 'was Mrs. Rock. She made ſhift to 'extract ſome money from her patient; 'but his infirmity was beyond the 'power of her art, though ſhe made 'ſome miſchief between us; and I com-'municated my ſuſpicion to Duke 'H——, who intended to have expoſ-'tulated with her upon the ſubject; 'but ſhe got intimation of his deſign, 'and ſaved him the trouble, by a pre-'cipitate retreat.

'After my return from the Bath, 'where Mr. S—— and I had lived 'happily, until we were interrupted by 'the arrival of my huſband, his lord-'ſhip expreſſed an inclination to be my 'bedfellow again. In this particular I 'deſired to be excuſed. I would not 'be the firſt to propoſe the ſeparation, 'which, though uſual in other coun-'tries, is contrary to the cuſtom of 'England, being unwilling to furniſh 'the leaſt handle for cenſure, as my 'character was ſtill unblemiſhed; yet, 'when the propoſal came from him, I 'thought myſelf intitled to refuſe a 're-union, to which I accordingly ob-'jected.

'This oppoſition produced a quarrel, 'which roſe to a ſtate of perpetual ani-'moſity; ſo that we began to talk of 'parting. My lord reliſhed the expedi-'ent, agreeing to add three hundred 'pounds a year to my pin-money, which '(by the bye) was never paid; and I 'renounced all ſtate and grandeur, to 'live in a ſmall houſe that I hired at 'Caſe Horton, where I paſſed my time 'for two months, in the moſt agreeable

'retire-

'retirement, with my dear lover. At 'length I was disturbed by the intru-'sion of my lord, who molested me 'with visits and solicitations to return, 'pretending that he had changed his 'mind, and insisting upon my compli-'ance with his desire.

'I exhausted my invention in endea-'vours to evade his request; but he 'persecuted me without ceasing: so that 'I was fain to capitulate, on condition 'that he should immediately set out for 'France; and that he should not pre-'sume to approach my bed till our ar-'rival at Calais. We accordingly de-'parted for that kingdom; and, far 'from infringing the least article of our 'treaty, his lordship did not insist upon 'his privilege before we reached the 'capital of France.

'Meanwhile, I began to feel the ef-'fect of my passion in a very interest-'ing manner, and communicated my 'discovery to the dear author of it, who 'would not leave me in such an affect-'ing situation, but took the first oppor-'tunity of following us to France.

'In our road to Paris, we stopped 'to visit Chantilly, a magnificent cha-'teau belonging to the Prince of Condé, 'and there met by accident with some 'English noblemen, to whom I was 'known. The prince and his sisters 'invited me very politely into the gal-'lery where they sat. They compli-'mented me on my person, and seemed 'to admire my dress, which was alto-'gether new to them, being a blue 'English riding-habit trimmed with 'gold, and an hat with a feather. They 'were particularly well pleased with my 'hair, which hung down to my waist, 'and pressed me to stay a fortnight at 'their house; an invitation which I 'was very much mortified at being 'obliged to refuse, because my lord did 'not understand the French language. 'I was inchanted with the place and the 'company, the women being amiable 'and the men polite; nor were they 'strangers to my name and story; for 'Mr. S—— calling at the same place 'a few days after, they rallied him on 'my account.

'When we arrived at Paris, the first 'thing I did was to metamorphose my-'self into a Frenchwoman. I cut off 'my hair; hid a very good complexion 'of my own with *rouge*; reconciled 'myself to powder, which I had never 'used before; put on a robe with a 'large hoop; and went to the Thuille-'ries full of spirits and joy; for at 'that time every thing conspired to make 'me happy. I had health, youth, and 'beauty, love, vanity, and affluence, 'and found myself surrounded with 'diversions, which were gay, new, and 'agreeable. My appearance drew upon 'me the eyes of the whole company, 'who considered me as a stranger, but 'not a foreigner, so compleatly was I 'equipped in the fashion of the French; 'and when they understood who I was, 'they applauded my person with the 'most lavish encomiums, according to 'their known politeness.

'After having made a circuit round 'all the publick places of entertainment 'in Paris, I was introduced into com-'pany by an English family residing 'in that city; and, among others, be-'came acquainted with a French lady, 'whose charms were remarkably at-'tractive. The Duke of K—— was 'her admirer; but she lived in reputa-'tion with her mother and an agreea-'ble sister, whose lover was the Prince 'of C—— (for almost every lady in 'France has her *aimant*.)

'With this charming woman, whose 'name was Madam De la T——, I 'often made parties of pleasure. The 'duke, Mr. S——, she and I, used to 'meet in the Bois de Boulogne, which 'is a pleasant wood at a small distance 'from Paris, whither the company re-'pairs, in the summer-season, for the 'benefit of the air; and after having 'amused ourselves among the groves, 'embarked in his grace's equipage, 'which was extremely elegant, being a 'calash drawn by six fine long-tailed 'greys, adorned with ribbands in the 'French taste; and thus we were con-'ducted to a little enchanted, or at least 'enchanting palace, possessed by the 'duke, at one end of the town: the lower 'apartment, appropriated to me, was 'furnished with yellow and silver; the 'bed surrounded with looking-glasses, 'and the door opened into the garden, 'laid out in a cradle-walk, and inter-'vening parterres of roses and other 'flowers. Above stairs my female com-'panion lodged, in a chamber furnished 'with chintz. We supped all together in 'the saloon, which, though small, was 'perfectly elegant. The company was 'always good-humoured, the conver-

'sation

'fation 'sprightly and joyous, and the 'scene, though often repeated, still de-'lightful and entertaining.

'At other times, Mr. S—— and I 'used to pass our evenings at the palace 'of the Prince of C——, which his 'highness lent us for our accommoda-'tion. The apartments opened into 'the gardens of the Luxembourg, and 'were, in point of magnificence, suit-'able to the owner. Thither I used 'to repair in a flaming equipage, on 'pretence of visiting, and spent the best 'part of the night with him, who was 'dearer to me than all the princes in the 'world.

'While I was happily engaged in 'these ravishing parties, my little lord 'was employed in efforts to recover his 'health by restoratives, and I know not 'what; for he still lamented the enfee-'bling effects of his passion, and com-'plained that he loved me more like an 'angel than a woman, though he strove 'to govern his affection according to 'the doctrines of the Christian religion, 'as he regulated his life by the maxims 'of Charles the Twelfth of Sweden. 'The meaning of this declaration I 'could never learn; and, indeed, I have 'been often tempted to believe he had 'no meaning at all.

'Be that as it will, I found my size 'visibly increasing, and my situation 'extremly uneasy, on account of the 'perpetual wrangling which prevailed 'betwixt us, in consequence of his de-'siring to sleep with me again, after we 'had parted beds for the second time: 'and, that I might be no longer exposed 'to such disagreable persecution, I re-'solved to leave him, though at the ha-'zard of my life.

'Thus determined, I went to the 'British ambassador in a hackney-coach; 'and, in order to disguise my youth, 'which might have prepossessed him 'against my judgment, muffled myself 'up in a black hood, which (as he said) 'instead of lending an air of gravity to 'my countenance, added a wildness to 'my looks, which was far from being 'disagreeable. He had been a gallant 'man in his youth, and even then, 'though well stricken in years, was not 'insensible to the power of beauty. 'This disposition, perhaps, rendered 'him more favourable to my cause, 'though he at first advised me to return 'to my husband; but finding me obsti-'nate, he undertook to serve me in my 'own way, and procure a protection 'from the French king, by virtue of 'which, I could live at Paris unmo-'lested by my lord. Nevertheless, he 'advised me (if I was determined to 'leave him) to make the best of my way 'to England, and sue for a divorce.

'I relished his opinion, and conceal-'ed myself about three days in Paris, 'during which I borrowed some linen; 'for, as it was impossible to convey any 'thing out of my own house without 'suspicion, I had neither cloaths for 'my accommodation, nor a servant to 'wait on me.

'In this solitary condition I took 'the road to Flanders, after I had put 'my lord upon a wrong scent, by writ-'ing a letter to him, dated at Calais, 'and travelled through an unknown 'country, without any other attendant 'than the postilion, being subjected 'to this convenience by the laws of 'France, which are so severe in some 'particulars, that if any person had 'been apprehended with me, he would 'have suffered death, for going off with 'a man's wife; though any man might 'go to bed with the same woman, with-'out fear of incurring any legal punish-'ment.

'I proceeded night and day without 'intermission, that I might the sooner 'reach Flanders, where I knew I should 'be safe: and as the nights were exces-'sively cold, I was fain to wrap myself 'up in flannel, which I bought for the 'purpose, as I had no cloaths to keep 'me warm, and travelled in an open 'chaise. While we passed through 'dreary woods, quite remote from the 'habitations of men, I was not without 'apprehension of being stripped and 'murdered by the postilion; and in all 'probability, owed my safety to the 'indigence of my appearance, which 'might also protect me in two miserable 'places where I was obliged to lie, be-'fore I got out of the territories of 'France; for, as I could not reach the 'great towns where I intended to lodge, 'I was under the necessity of putting 'up at little wretched hovels, where no 'provision was to be had, but sour 'brown bread, and sourer cheese; and 'every thing seemed to denote the dens 'of despair and assassination.

'I made shift, however, to subsist on 'this fare, uncomfortable as it was;

'confided in the meanness of my equipage for the security of my person; 'and at length arriving at Brussels, fixed my quarters in in the Hotel de 'Flandre (so well known to the English since) where I thought myself extremely happy in the accomplishment 'of my flight.

'I had not been full two days in this 'place, when I was blessed with the 'sight of my lover, who followed me 'on the wings of love, in pursuance of 'the plan we had projected before my 'departure from Paris. Here we concerted measures for proceeding to England. I hired a tall, fine Liegeoise 'for a maid; and setting out for Oitend, 'we embarked in a vessel, in which Mr. 'S—— had bespoke our passage. Our 'voyage was short and prosperous, and 'the time most agreeably spent in the 'company of my dear partner, who was 'a most engaging man in all respects, 'as I dare say my Lady O—— has 'since found him.

'I assumed a fictitious name, took 'private lodgings in Poland Street, retained lawyers, and commenced a suit 'for separation against my lord. I 'communicated the reasons of my elopement to my father, who was shocked 'and surprized at my conduct, which 'he condemned with expressions of sorrow and resentment. But the step 'was taken; nor did I repent of what 'I had done, except on his account.

'In the morning after my arrival at 'London, I waited upon the lord chief 'justice, to whom I complained of the 'usage I had received from my lord, 'whose temper was teazing, tiresome, 'and intolerably capricious. Indeed, 'his behaviour was a strange compound 'of madness and folly, seasoned with a 'small proportion of sense: no wonder, 'then, that I, who am hot and hasty, 'should be wretched, under the persecution of such a perverse humourist, 'who used to terrify me, and scold at 'me the whole night without intermission, and shake my pillow from time 'to time, that I might not sleep, while 'he tormented me with his disagreeable 'expostulations. I have been often 'frightened almost out of my senses, at 'seeing him convulsed with the most 'unreasonable passion; and chagrined 'to the highest degree of disgust, to 'find, (by repeated observation) his 'disposition so preposterous, that his 'satisfaction and displeasure never depended upon the cause he had to be 'satisfied or disobliged; but, on the 'contrary, when he had most reason to 'be pleased, he was always most discontented, and very often in good-'humour, when he had reason enough 'for vexation.

'While I lived in Poland Street, I 'was engaged with lawyers, and so 'often visited by my father, that I could 'not dedicate my whole time, as usual, 'to my lover; nor was it convenient 'that he should be seen in my company; he therefore took a small house 'at Camberwell, whither I went as 'often as I had an opportunity; and 'maintained the correspondence with 'such eagerness and industry, that although I was six months gone with 'child, I have often, by myself, set out 'for his habitation in a hackney-coach 'at eleven o'clock at night, and returned by six in the morning, that I might 'be in my own bed, when my father came to see me; for I concealed 'my amour, as well as the effects of it, 'from his knowledge, and frequently 'took water from the Bridge, that my 'motions might not be discovered. 'Nothing but the most passionate love 'could have supported my spirits under 'such vicissitudes of fatigue, or enabled 'my admirer to spend whole days by 'himself in such a solitary retirement.

'By this time, my lord was arrived 'in England, and employed in discovering the place of my retreat; so that 'I lived in continual alarm, and provided myself with a speaking-trumpet, 'which stood by my bed-side, to be 'used in calling for assistance, in case 'my pursuer should make an attack 'upon my lodgings.

'This situation being extremely uncomfortable, I had no sooner began 'my process against him, than I put 'myself entirely under the protection of 'Mr. S——, who conducted me to the 'house of a friend of his who lived in 'the country, where I was secure from 'the attempts of my husband.

'The world had now given me up, 'and I renounced the world with the 'most perfect resignation. I weighed 'in my own breast what I should lose 'in point of character, with what I suffered in my peace at home, and found, 'that my reputation was not to be preserved, except at the expence of my

'quiet,

'quiet, (for his lordſhip was not diſpoſed to make me eaſy, had I been ever ſo diſcreet.) I therefore determined to give up a few ceremonial viſits, and empty profeſſions, for the more ſubſtantial enjoyments of life.

'We paſſed our time very agreeably, in various amuſements, with this friend of Mr. S——, until the term of my reckoning was almoſt expired, then returned to London, and took lodgings in Southampton Street, where I began to make preparations for the approaching occaſion. Here I propoſed to live with the utmoſt circumſpection. I diſguiſed my name, ſaw nobody but my lawyer and lover, and never approached the window, leſt I ſhould be diſcovered by accident.

'Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, my French maid, whom I had ſent for ſome of my cloaths, was dogged in her return, and next morning my lord took my lodgings by ſtorm. Had he given the aſſault in his own perſon only, I make no doubt but he would have ſuffered a repulſe, from the oppoſition of the Liegeoiſe, who made all the reſiſtance in her power, but was obliged to give way to ſuperior number.

'I was at that time a-bed, and hearing an unuſual noiſe below, rung my bell, in order to know the cauſe of ſuch diſturbance. I drew my curtain at the ſame time, and who ſhould I ſee entering my chamber but his lordſhip, attended by a conſtable, and the footman who had diſcovered my retreat!

'Such an unexpected viſit could not fail to affect me with ſurprize and conſternation: however, I ſummoned all my fortitude to my aid, and perceiving the fellows were about to open my window-ſhutters, deſired their principal to order them down ſtairs. He readily complied with my requeſt, and ſitting down by my bed-ſide, told me with an air of triumph, that he had found me at laſt; and I frankly owned, that I was heartily ſorry for his ſucceſs. Inſtead of upbraiding me with my eſcape, he proceeded to entertain me with all the news in town, and gave me a minute detail of every thing which had happened to him ſince our parting; among other articles of intelligence, giving me to underſtand, that he had challenged Mr. S——, who refuſed to fight him, and was in diſgrace with the Prince of W—— on that account.

'But here his lordſhip did not ſtrictly adhere to the naked truth: he had, indeed, before our departure from the country, gone to my lover, and inſiſted upon having ſatisfaction in Hyde Park, two days from the date of his demand, and at three o'clock in the afternoon. S——, believing him in earneſt, accepted the invitation; though he obſerved, that theſe affairs could not be diſcuſſed too ſoon, and wiſhed the time of meeting might be at an earlier hour. But his lordſhip did not chuſe to alter the circumſtances of his firſt propoſal; and when he went away, ſaid he ſhould expect him at the appointed time and place, if it did not rain.

'His antagoniſt gave me an account of the converſation, when I aſſured him the whole buſineſs would end in ſmoke. Accordingly, my lord ſent him a letter on Monday, deſiring that the aſſignation might be deferred till Thurſday, that he might have time to ſettle his affairs, and pay S—— an hundred pounds, which he had formerly borrowed of him. When Thurſday came, he was favoured with another epiſtle, importing, that the challenger had changed his mind, and would ſeek ſatisfaction at law. Thus ended that heroick exploit, which his lordſhip now boaſted of with ſuch arrogant miſrepreſentation.

'Whilſt he regaled me with theſe intereſting particulars, I was contriving a ſcheme to fruſtrate the diſcovery he had made: ſo that I did not contradict his aſſertions, but told him, that if he would go down ſtairs, I would riſe and come to breakfaſt. He conſented to this propoſal with great chearfulneſs; and I own, I was not a little ſurprized to find him, at this firſt interview, in as good a humour, as if nothing had happened to interrupt the felicity of our matrimonial union.

'It coſt me ſome invention to conceal my condition from his notice, being now within a week of the expected criſis: but I knew I had to do with a man of no great penetration, and ſucceeded in my attempt accordingly. We breakfaſted with great harmony, and I invited him to dinner, after having prevailed upon him to

'send away his myrmidons, whom, 'nevertheleſs, he ordered to return at 'eleven o'clock at night. We con-'verſed together with great gaiety and 'mirth. When I rallied him for viſit-'ing me in ſuch a diſhabille, he ſtood 'a-tiptoe to view himſelf in the glaſs; 'and owning I was in the right, ſaid 'he would go and dreſs himſelf before 'dinner.

'He accordingly went away, charg-'ing my maid to give him entrance at 'his return; and he was no ſooner 'gone than I wrote to Mr. S——, giv-'ing him an account of what had hap-'pened. Then, without having deter-'mined upon any certain plan, I hud-'dled on my cloaths, muffled myſelf 'up, and calling a chair, went to the 'next tavern, where I ſtayed no longer 'than was ſufficient to change my ve-'hicle; and, to the aſtoniſhment of the 'drawers, who could not conceive the 'meaning of my perturbation, pro-'ceeded to a ſhop in the neighbourhood, 'where I diſmiſſed my ſecond chair, 'and procured a hackney-coach, in 'which I repaired to the lodgings of my 'lawyer, whom I could truſt. Having 'made him acquainted with the cir-'cumſtances of my diſtreſs, and con-'ſulted him about a proper place of 'retreat, after ſome recollection he di-'rected me to a little houſe in a court, 'to which, by the aſſiſtance of my lover, 'my woman and cloaths were ſafely 'conveyed that ſame evening.

'My lord, however, came to dinner, 'according to invitation, and did not 'ſeem at all alarmed when my maid 'told him I was gone; but ſtepped to 'my lawyer, to know if he thought I 'ſhould return. Upon his anſwering in 'the affirmative, and adviſing his lord-'ſhip to go back in the mean time, 'and eat the dinner I had provided, he 'very deliberately took his advice, made 'a very hearty meal, drank his bottle 'of wine, and as I did not return ac-'cording to his expectation, withdrew, 'in order to conſult his aſſociates.

'This motion of his furniſhed my 'woman with an opportunity of mak-'ing her retreat; and when he returned 'at night, the coaſt was clear, and he 'found nobody in the houſe but a por-'ter, who had been left to take care of 'the furniture. He was ſo enraged at 'this diſappointment, that he made a 'furious noiſe, which raiſed the whole 'neighbourhood, reinforced his crew 'with the authority of a juſtice of the 'peace, tarried in the ſtreet till three 'o'clock in the morning, diſcharged 'a lodging he had hired at a barber's 'ſhop oppoſite to the houſe from which 'I had eſcaped, and retired with the 'comfortable reflection of having done 'every thing which man could do to 'retrieve me.

'The hurry of ſpirits and ſurprize I 'had undergone in effecting this retreat, 'produced ſuch a diſorder in my con-'ſtitution, that I began to fear I ſhould 'be delivered before I could be pro-'vided with neceſſaries for the occa-'ſion. I ſignified my apprehenſion to 'Mr. S——, who, with infinite care 'and concern, endeavoured to find a 'more convenient place; and, after all 'his enquiries, was obliged to fix upon 'a paltry apartment in the city, though 'his tenderneſs was extremely ſhocked 'at the neceſſity of chuſing it. How-'ever, there was no remedy, nor time 'to be loſt: to this miſerable habitation 'I was carried in a hackney-coach; 'and though extremely ill, bore my 'fate with ſpirit and reſignation, in 'teſtimony of my ſincere and indelible 'attachment to my lover, for whoſe 'eaſe and pleaſure I could have ſuffered 'every inconvenience, and even ſacri-'ficed my life.

'Immediately after I had taken poſ-'ſeſſion of my wretched apartment, I 'was conſtrained by my indiſpoſition 'to go to bed, and ſend for the neceſ-'ſary help; and in a few hours a liv-'ing pledge of my love and indiſcretion 'ſaw the light; though the terrors and 'fatigue I had undergone had affected 'this little innocent ſo ſeverely, that it 'ſcarce diſcovered any viſible ſigns of 'life.

'My grief at this misfortune was 'inexpreſſible: I forthwith diſpatched 'a meſſage to the dear, the anxious fa-'ther, who flew to my arms, and ſhared 'my ſorrow, with all the gentleneſs of 'love and parental fondneſs; yet our 'fears were (for that time) happily diſ-'appointed by the recovery of our in-'fant daughter, who was committed to 'the charge of a nurſe in the neigh-'bourhood; ſo that I could every day 'be ſatisfied in my enquiries about her 'health. Thus I continued a whole 'fortnight in a ſtate of happineſs and 'tranquillity, being bleſſed with the

'converſation

'conversation and tender offices of my 'admirer, whose love and attention I 'wholly engrossed. In a word, he gave 'up all business and amusement, and 'concentered all his care and assiduity 'in ministring to my ease and satis-'faction. And sure I had no cause to 'regret what I had suffered on his ac-'count!

'But this my agreeable situation was 'one day disturbed by a most alarming 'accident, by which my life was drawn 'into imminent danger. The room 'under my bed-chamber took fire; I 'immediately smelled it, and saw the 'people about me in the utmost per-'plexity and consternation, though they 'would not own the true cause of their 'confusion, lest my health should suffer 'in the fright. Nevertheless, I was so 'calm in my enquiries, that they ven-'tured to tell me my suspicion was but 'too just: upon which I gave such 'directions as I thought would secure 'me from catching cold, in case there 'should be a necessity for removing me; 'but the fire bring happily extinguish-'ed, I escaped that ceremony, which 'might have cost me my life. Indeed 'it was surprizing, that the agitation 'of my spirits did not produce some 'fatal effect upon my constitution; and 'I looked upon my deliverance as the 'protection of a particular Providence.

'Though I escaped the hazard of a 'sudden removal, I found it was high 'time to change my lodgings, because 'then eighbours rushing into the house, 'upon the alarm of fire, had discovered 'my situation, though they were igno-'rant of my name; and I did not think 'myself safe in being the subject of 'their conjectures. Mr. S—— therefore 'procured another apartment, with bet-'ter accommodation, to which I was 'carried, as soon as my health would 'admit of my removal; and soon after 'my lord wrote to me by the hands of 'my lawyer, earnestly intreating me to 'drop my prosecution, and come home. 'But I would not comply with his 'request; and nothing was farther from 'my intention than the desire of receiv-'ing any favours at his hands.

'Thus repulsed, he set on foot a most 'accurate search for my person; in the 'course of which he is said to have de-'tected several ladies and young girls, 'who had reasons for keeping them-'selves concealed; and had like to have 'been very severely handled for his im-'pertinent curiosity. Being unsuccess-'ful in all his attempts, he entered into 'a treaty with one Sir R—— H——, a 'person of a very indifferent character, 'who undertook to furnish him with an 'infallible expedient to discover the 'place of my abode, if he would gra-'tify him with a bond for a thousand 'pounds; which being executed ac-'cordingly, this worthy knight adver-'tised me and my maid in the publick 'papers, offering one hundred pounds 'as a reward to any person who should 'disclose the place of our retirement.

'As soon as the paper fell into my 'hands, I was again involved in per-'plexity; and being afraid of staying 'in town, resolved, with the concur-'rence of my lover, to accept of an in-'vitation I had received from the Duke 'of K——, who had by this time 'arrived in England, with that lady 'whom I have already mentioned, as 'one of our parties at Paris. Having 'visited my little infant, I next day 'set out for the duke's country-seat, 'which is a most elegant *chateau*, and 'stands in a charming situation: Mr. 'S—— followed in a few days; we met 'with a cordial reception; his grace 'was civil and good-natured, lived no-'bly, and loved pleasure; Madam La 'T—— was formed to please: there was 'always a great deal of good company 'in the house; so that we passed our 'time agreeably in playing at billiards 'and cards, hunting, walking, read-'ing, and conversation.

'But my terms of happiness were 'generally of short duration. In the 'midst of this felicity I was overtaken 'by a most severe affliction, in the death 'of my dear hapless infant, who had 'ingrossed a greater share of my ten-'derness, than perhaps I even should 'have paid to the offspring of a legitimate 'contract, because the circumstance of 'her birth would have been an insur-'mountable misfortune to her through 'the whole course of her life, and ren-'dered her absolutely dependent on my 'love and protection.

'Whilst I still lamented the untime-'ly fate of this fair blossom, Lord —— 'came down, and demanded me as his 'wife; but the suit which I then main-'tained against him deprived him, for

'the

'the preſent, of a huſband's right; and 'therefore the duke would not deliver 'me into his hands.

'In ſix months he repeated his viſit 'and demand; and an agreement was 'patched up, in conſequence of which 'I conſented to live in the ſame houſe 'with him, on condition that he ſhould 'never deſire to ſleep with me, or take 'any other meaſure to diſturb my peace; 'otherwiſe I ſhould be at liberty to 'leave him again, and intitled to the 'proviſion of a ſeparate maintenance. 'To theſe articles I aſſented, by the 'advice of my lawyers, with a view of 'obtaining the payment of my pin-'money, which I had never received 'ſince our parting, but ſubſiſted on the 'ſale of my jewels, which were very 'conſiderable, and had been preſented 'to me with full power of alienation. 'As to my lover, he had no fortune to 'ſupport me; and for that reaſon I 'was ſcrupulouſly cautious of aug-'menting his expence.

'We had now enjoyed each other's 'company for three years, during which 'our mutual paſſion had ſuffered no 'abatement, nor had my happineſs been 'mixed with any conſiderable allay, 'except that late ſtroke of Providence 'which I have already mentioned, and 'the reflection of the ſorrow that my 'conduct had entailed upon my dear 'father, whom I loved beyond ex-'preſſion, and whom nothing could 'have compelled me to diſoblige, but a 'more powerful flame, that prevailed 'over every other conſideration. As 'I was now forced to break off this in-'chanting correſpondence, it is not to be 'doubted that our parting coſt us the 'moſt acute ſenſations of grief and diſ-'appointment. However, there was no 'remedy: I tore myſelf from his arms, 'took my leave of the family, after 'having acknowledged my obligations 'to the duke, and ſet out for the place 'of rendezvous; where I was met by 'my lord, attended by a ſteward whom 'he had lately engaged, and who was 'one chief cauſe of our future ſepara-'tions. My lord having quitted his 'houſe in town, conducted me to his 'lodgings in Pall Mall, and inſiſted 'upon ſleeping with me the firſt night; 'but I refuſed to gratify his deſire, on 'the authority of our agreement.

'This diſpute produced a quarrel, in 'conſequence of which I attempted to 'leave the houſe. He endeavouring to 'prevent my retreat, I fairly locked 'him in, ran down ſtairs, and calling 'a hackney-coach, made the beſt of my 'way into the city, to my father's lodg-'ings, where I lay, the family being in 'town, though he himſelf was in the 'country. I wrote to him immediately, 'and when he came to London, de-'clared my intention of ſeparating from 'my lord; in which, ſeeing me obſti-'nate and determined, he at length 'acquieſced, and a formal ſeparation 'accordingly enſued, which at that time 'I thought binding and immutable.

'I was now ſheltered under the wings 'of an indulgent father, who had taken 'me into favour again, on the ſuppo-'ſition that my commerce with Mr. 'S—— was abſolutely at an end. Ne-'verthleſs, though we had ſeparated 'in all appearance, for ever, we had 'previouſly agreed to maintain our 'correſpondence in private interviews, 'which ſhould eſcape the notice of the 'world, with which I was again oblig-'ed to keep ſome meaſures.

'Our parting at the Duke of K—'s 'houſe in the country was attended 'with all the genuine marks of ſincere 'and reciprocal affection, and I lived 'in the ſweet hope of ſeeing him again, 'in all the tranſport of his former paſ-'ſion; when my lawyer, who received 'my letters, brought me a billet one 'night, juſt as I had gone to bed. See-'ing the ſuperſcription of S——'s hand-'writing, I opened it with all the im-'patience of an abſent lover: but how 'ſhall I deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and 'conſternation with which I was ſeized, 'when I peruſed the contents! Inſtead 'of the moſt tender vows and proteſta-'tions, this fatal epiſtle began with, '*Madam, the beſt thing you can do is* 'to return to your father; or ſome 'cold and killing expreſſion, to that 'effect.

'Heaven and earth! what did I feel 'at this dire conjuncture! The light 'forſook my eyes; a cold ſweat be-'dewed my limbs; and I was over-'whelmed with ſuch a torrent of ſorrow 'and ſurprize, that every body preſent 'believed I would have died under the 'violent agitation. They endeavoured 'to ſupport my ſpirits with repeated 'draughts of ſtrong liquor, which had 'no ſenſible effect upon my conſtitution, 'though for eight whole years I had

'drank

'drank nothing ſtronger than water; 'and I muſt have infallibly periſhed in 'the firſt extaſy of my grief, had it not 'made it's way in a fit of tears and ex- 'clamation, in which I continued all 'night, to the amazement of the fami- 'ly, whom my condition had alarmed, 'and raiſed from their repoſe. My fa- 'ther was the only perſon who gueſſed 'the cauſe of my affliction: he ſaid he 'was ſure I had received ſome ill-uſage 'in a letter or meſſage from that raſcal 'S——, (ſo he termed him, in the bit- 'terneſs of paſſion.)

'At mention of that name my agony 'redoubled to ſuch a degree, that all 'who were preſent wept at ſight of my 'deplorable condition. My poor fa- 'ther ſhed a flood of tears, and conjur- 'ed me to tell him the cauſe of my diſ- 'quiet: upon which, rather than con- 'feſs the truth, I amuſed his concern, 'by pretending that my lover was ill. 'The whole family having ſtayed by 'me till I was a little more compoſed, 'left me to the care of my maid, who 'put me into bed about ſix in the morn- 'ing; but I enjoyed no reſt: I revolv- 'ed every circumſtance of my conduct, 'endeavouring to find out the cauſe of 'this fatal change in S——'s diſpoſi- 'tion; and as I could recollect nothing 'which could juſtly give offence, con- 'cluded that ſome malicious perſons 'had abuſed his ears with ſtories to my 'prejudice.

'With this conjecture I got up, and 'ſent my lawyer to him with a letter, 'wherein I inſiſted upon ſeeing him, 'that I might have an opportunity of 'juſtifying myſelf in perſon; a talk 'which would be eaſily performed, as I 'had never offended, but in loving too 'well. I waited with the moſt anxious 'impatience for the return of my meſ- 'ſenger, who brought me an anſwer 'couched in the coldeſt terms of civi- 'lity which indifference could dictate; 'acknowledging, however, that he had 'nothing to lay to my charge, but that 'it was for the good of us both we 'ſhould part. He ought to have re- 'flected on that before, not after I had 'ſacrificed my all for his love. I was 'well nigh diſtracted by this confirma- 'tion of his inconſtancy; and I wonder 'to this day how I retained the uſe of 'reaſon, under ſuch circumſtances of 'horror and deſpair. My grief laid 'aſide all decorum and reſtraint; I told 'my father that S—— was dying, and 'that I would viſit him with all expe- 'dition.

'Startled at the propoſal, this care- 'ful parent demonſtrated the fatal conſe- 'quence of ſuch an unguarded ſtep, re- 'minded me of the difficulty with which 'he had prevailed upon my mother and 'uncle to forgive my former imprudence, 'obſerved that his intention was to car- 'ry me into the country next day, in 'order to effect a perfect reconciliation; 'but now I was on the brink of for- 'feiting all pretenſions to their regard, 'by committing another fatal error, 'which could not poſſibly be retrieved; 'and that for his part, whatever pangs 'it might coſt him, he was reſolved 'to baniſh me from his ſight for ever.

'While he uttered this declaration, 'the tears trickled down his cheeks, and 'he ſeemed overwhelmed with the keen- 'eſt ſorrow and mortification; ſo it may 'be eaſily conceived what were the im- 'preſſions of my grief, reinforced with 'the affliction of a father whom I dear- 'ly loved, and the conſciouſneſs of be- 'ing the cauſe of all his diſquiet! I was 'ſtruck dumb with remorſe and woe; 'and when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, 'I told him how ſenſible I was of his 'great goodneſs and humanity, and 'owned how little I deſerved his favour 'and affection; that the ſenſe of my 'own unworthineſs was one cauſe of 'my preſent diſtraction; for ſuch was 'the condition of my fate, that I muſt 'either ſee S—— or die. I ſaid, though 'I could no expect his forgiveneſs, I 'was ſurely worthy of his compaſſion; 'that nothing but the moſt irreſiſtible 'paſſion could have miſled me at firſt 'from my duty, or tempted me to in- 'cur the leaſt degree of his diſpleaſure; 'that the ſame fatal influence ſtill pre- 'vailed, and would, in all probability, 'continue to the grave, which was the 'only abode in which I hoped for 'peace.

'While I expreſſed myſelf in this 'manner, my dear good father wept 'with the moſt tender ſympathy; and 'ſaying I might do as I pleaſed, for 'he had done with me, quitted the 'room, leaving me to the cruel ſenſa- 'tions of my own heart, which almoſt 'burſted with anguiſh, upbraiding me 'with a fault which I could not help 'committing.

'I immediately hired a chariot and

'ſix,

'fix, and would have set out by myself, 'had not my father's affection, which 'all my errors could not efface, provided an attendant. He saw me quite delirious and desperate; and therefore 'engaged a relation of my own to accompany and take care of me in this 'rash expedition.

'During this journey, which lasted two days, I felt no remission of 'grief and anxiety, but underwent 'the most intolerable sorrow and suspense: at last we arrived at a little 'house, called the Hut, on Salisbury Plain, where, in the most frantick 'agitation, I wrote a letter to S——, describing the miserable condition to 'which I was reduced by his unkindness, and desiring to see him, with the 'most earnest solicitations.

'This billet I committed to the care 'of my attendant, and laid strong injunctions upon him to tell Mr. S——, 'my injuries were so great, and my despair so violent, that if he did not 'favour me with a visit, I would go to 'him, though at his sister's house, where 'he then was.

'He received my message with great coldness, and told my friend, that if 'I would return to London without insisting upon the interview I demanded, 'he would in a little time follow me to 'town, and every thing should be amicably adjusted; but when the messenger assured him, that I was too much transported with grief to hear of such 'a proposal, he consented to meet me 'in the middle of Salisbury Plain, that 'we might avoid all observation: and 'though I was little able to walk, I set 'out on foot for the place of assignation, 'my companion following at a small 'distance.

'When I saw him leading his horse 'down the hill, I collected all my fortitude, and advanced to him with all 'the speed I could exert; but when I 'made an effort to speak, my tongue 'denied it s office; and so lively was the 'expression of unutterable sorrow in my 'countenance, that his heart (hard as 'it was) melted at sight of my sufferings, which he well knew proceeded 'from the sincerity of my love. At 'length I recovered the use of speech, 'enough to tell him, that I was come 'to take my leave; and when I would 'have proceeded, my voice failed me 'again: but, after a considerable pause, 'I found means, with great difficulty, 'to let him know how sensible I was 'of my own incapacity to retrieve his 'lost affections; but that I was willing '(if possible) to retain his esteem, of 'which, could I be assured, I would 'endeavour to compose myself; that I 'was determined to leave the kingdom, 'because I could not bear the sight of 'those places where we had been so 'happy in our mutual love; and that, 'till my departure, I hoped he would 'visit me sometimes, that I might, by 'degrees, wean myself from his company; for I should not be able to survive the shock of being deprived of 'him all at once.

'This address may seem very humble to an unconcerned observer; but 'love will tame the proudest disposition, 'as plainly appeared in my case; for 'I had naturally as much spirit, or 'more, than the generality of people 'have. Mr. S—— was so much confounded at the manner of my behaviour, that he scarce knew what 'answer to make; for (as he afterwards 'owned) he expected to hear himself 'upbraided; but he was not proof 'against my tenderness. After some 'hesitation, he said he never meant to 'forsake me entirely, that his affection 'was still unimpaired, and that he 'would follow me directly to London. 'I imposed upon myself, and believed 'what he said, because I could not bear 'to think of parting with him for ever, 'and returned to town in a more tranquil state of mind than that in which 'I had left my father, though my heart 'was far from being at ease; my fears 'being ingenious enough to foresee, that 'I should never be able to overcome his 'indifference.

'I took lodgings in Mount Street; 'and my maid having disposed of herself in marriage, hired another, who 'supplied her place very much to my satisfaction: she was a good girl, had 'a particular attachment to me, and 'for many years, during which she 'lived in my service, was indefatigably 'assiduous in contributing to my ease, 'or rather, in alleviating my affliction: 'for, though S—— came up to town 'according to promise, and renewed a 'sort of correspondence with me for the 'space of five months, his complaisance 'would extend no farther; and he gave 'me to understand, that he had deter-

'mined

'mined to go abroad with Mr. V——, 'whom he accordingly accompanied in 'his envoying to D——n.

'I underſtood the real cauſe of this 'expedition, which, notwithſtanding his 'oaths and proteſtations of unabated 'love and regard, I conſtrued into a 'palpable mark of diſlike and diſreſpect; 'nor could the repeated aſſurances I re'ceived from him in letters, mitigate 'the anguiſh and mortification that 'preyed upon my heart. I therefore 'gave up all hopes of recovering the 'happineſs I had loſt: I told him on the 'eve of his departure, that he might 'exerciſe his gallantry a great while, 'before he would meet with my fellow, 'in point of ſincerity and love; for I 'would rather have been a ſervant in 'his houſe, with the privilege of ſeeing 'him, than the Queen of England de'barred of that pleaſure.

'When he took his leave, and went 'down ſtairs, I ſhrunk at every ſtep he 'made, as if a new wound had been in'flicted upon me; and when I heard 'the door ſhut behind him, my heart 'died within me. (I had the ſatisfac'tion to hear afterwards, he lamented 'the loſs of me prodigiouſly, and that 'he had never been ſo happy ſince.) I 'ſat down to write a letter, in which I 'forgave his indifference, becauſe I 'knew the affections are altogether in'voluntary, and wiſhed him all the 'happineſs he deſerved. I then walked 'up and down the room in the moſt 'reſtleſs anxiety, was put to bed by my 'maid, roſe at ſix, mounted my horſe, 'and rode forty miles, in order to fa'tigue myſelf, that I might next night 'enjoy ſome repoſe. This exerciſe I 'daily underwent for months together; 'and when it did not anſwer my pur'poſe, I uſed to walk round Hyde Park 'in the evening, when the place was 'quite ſolitary, and unviſited by any 'other human creature.

'In the courſe of this melancholy per'ambulation, I was one day accoſted 'by a very great man, who, after the 'firſt ſalutation, aſked whether or not 'my intercourſe with S—— was at an 'end; and if I had any allowance from 'my huſband. To the firſt of theſe 'queſtions, I replied in the affirmative; 'and to the laſt anſwered, that my lord 'did not allow me a great deal; indeed 'I might have truly ſaid nothing at all, 'but I was too proud to own my indi'gence. He then expreſſed his wonder, 'how one like me, who had been uſed 'to ſplendour and affluence from my 'cradle, could make ſhift to live in my 'preſent narrow circumſtances; and 'when I told him that I could make a 'very good ſhift, ſo I had peace, he 'ſeemed to lament my ſituation, and 'very kindly invited me to ſup with his 'wife at his houſe. I accepted the in'vitation, without any apprehenſion of 'the conſequence; and when I went to 'the place, was introduced into an 'apartment, magnificently lighted up, 'I ſuppoſe, for my reception.

'After I had ſtayed alone for ſome 'time in this myſterious ſituation, with'out ſeeing a living ſoul, my inviter 'appeared, and ſaid, he hoped I would 'not take it amiſs, that he and I were 'to ſup by ourſelves, as he had ſome'thing to ſay, which could not be ſo 'properly communicated before com'pany or ſervants. I then, for the firſt 'time, perceived his drift, to my no 'ſmall ſurprize and indignation; and 'with evident marks of diſpleaſure told 'him, I was ſure he had nothing to 'propoſe that would be agreeable to 'my inclination, and that I would im'mediately leave the houſe. Upon which 'he gave me to underſtand, that I could 'not poſſibly retire, becauſe he had ſent 'away my chair, and all his ſervants 'were diſpoſed to obey his orders.

'Incenſed at this declaration, which 'I conſidered as an inſult, I anſwered 'with an air of reſolution, it was very 'well; I deſpiſed his contrivance, and 'was afraid of nobody. Seeing me thus 'alarmed, he aſſured me I had no rea'ſon to be afraid; that he had loved me 'long, and could find no other opportu'nity of declaring his paſſion. He ſaid, 'the queen had told him, that Lord '—— had renewed his addreſſes to me; 'and as he underſtood from my own 'mouth, my correſpondence with S—— 'was abſolutely broke off, he thought 'himſelf as well intitled as another to 'my regard. In concluſion, he told 'me, that I might command his purſe, 'and that he had power enough to bring 'me into the world again with *éclat*. 'To theſe advances I replied, that he 'was very much miſtaken in his opi'nion of my character, if he imagined 'I was to be won by any temptations 'of fortune; and very frankly declar'ed, that I would rather give myſelf

'to a footman, than sell myself to a 'prince.

'Supper being served, we sat down 'together; but I would neither eat nor 'drink any thing, except a little bread 'and water; for I was an odd whimsi-'cal girl; and it came into my head, 'that he might, perhaps, have mixed 'something in the victuals or wine, 'which would alter my way of think-'ing. In short, finding himself baffled 'in all his endeavours, he permitted me 'about twelve o'clock to depart in peace, 'and gave up his suit, as a desperate 'cause.

'This uncomfortable life did I lead 'for a whole twelvemonth, without 'feeling the least abatement of my me-'lancholy. Finding myself worn to a 'skeleton, I resumed my former reso-'lution of trying to profit by change of 'place, and actually went abroad with 'no other attendant but my woman, 'and the utmost indifference for life. 'My intention was to have gone to the 'South of France, where I thought I 'could have subsisted on the little I had 'left, which amounted to five hundred 'pounds, until the issue of my law-suit, 'by which I hoped to obtain some pro-'vision from my lord; and, without all 'doubt, my expectation would have 'been answered, had I put this my plan 'in execution: but being at Paris, 'from whence I purposed to set for-'ward in a few days, I sent to M. 'K——, who had been formerly in-'timate with my father, and shewn me 'many civilities during my first resi-'dence in France.

'This gentleman favoured me with 'a visit, and when I made him ac-'quainted with my scheme, dissuaded 'me from it, as an uncomfortable de-'termination. He advised me to stay 'at Paris, where with good œconomy, 'I could live as cheap as in any other 'place, and enjoy the conversation and 'countenance of my friends, among 'which number he declared himself 'one of the most faithful. He assured 'me, that I should be always welcome 'to his table, and want for nothing. 'He promised to recommend me as a 'lodger to a friend of his, with whom 'I would live in a frugal and decent 'manner; and observed that, as the 'woman was well known and esteemed 'by all the English company in Paris, 'it would be the most reputable step I 'could take, considering my youth and 'situation, to lodge with a creditable 'person, who could answer for my con-'duct. Thus persuaded, I very simply 'followed his advice; I say, simply, 'because, notwithstanding his repre-'sentations, I soon found my money 'melt away, without any prospect of a 'fresh supply. In lieu of this, however, 'I passed my time very agreeably in se-'veral English, and some French fami-'lies; where, in a little time, I became 'quite intimate, saw a great deal of 'company, and was treated with the 'utmost politeness and regard: yet, in 'the midst of these pleasures, many a 'melancholy sigh would rise at the re-'membrance of my beloved S——, 'whom, for several years, I could not 'recollect without emotion; but time, 'company, amusements, and change of 'place, in a great measure dissipated 'these ideas, and enabled me to bear 'my fate with patience and resignation.

'On my last arrival at Paris, I was 'surrounded by a crowd of professed ad-'mirers, who sighed and flattered in the 'usual forms; but, besides that my 'heart was not yet in a condition to 'contract new engagements, I was pre-'possessed against them all, by supposing 'that they presumed upon the know-'ledge of my indiscretion with S——; 'and therefore rejected their addresses 'with detestation and disdain: for, as 'I have already observed, I was not to 'be won, but by the appearance of esteem 'and the most respectful carriage; and 'though, by a false step, I had, in my 'own opinion, forfeited my title to the 'one, I was resolved to discourage the 'advances of any man who seemed de-'ficient in the other.

'In this manner my lovers were, one 'by one, repulsed, almost as soon as 'they presented themselves, and I pre-'served the independence of my heart, 'until I became acquainted with a cer-'tain peer, whom I often saw at the 'house of Mrs. P——, an English lady 'then resident at Paris. This young 'nobleman professed himself deeply 'enamoured of me, in a style so diffe-'rent from that of my other admirers, 'that I heard his protestations without 'disgust; and though my inclinations 'were still free, could not find in my 'heart to discountenance his addresses,

'which

'which were preferred with the moſt 'engaging modeſty, diſintereſtedneſs, 'and reſpect.

'By theſe never-failing arts, he gra- 'dually conquered my indifference, and 'gained the preference in my eſteem 'from Lord C——y and the Prince of 'C——, who were at that time his 'rivals. But what contributed (more 'than any conſideration) to his ſuc- 'ceſs, was his declaring openly, that he 'would marry me without heſitation, 'as ſoon as I could obtain a divorce 'from my preſent huſband, which, in 'all probability, might have been eaſily 'procured; for before I left England, 'Lord —— had offered me five thou- 'ſand pounds, if I would conſent to 'ſuch a mutual releaſe, that he might 'be at liberty to eſpouſe one Miſs 'W—— of Kent, to whom he then 'made love upon honourable terms: but 'I was fool enough to refuſe his propo- 'ſal, by the advice of S——; and whe- 'ther or not his lordſhip finding it im- 'practicable to wed his new miſtreſs, 'began to make love upon another foot- 'ing, I know not; but certain it is, 'the mother forbade him the houſe, a 'circumſtance which he took ſo hein- 'ouſly ill, that he appealed to the 'world in a publick advertiſement, be- 'ginning with, "Whereas, for ſome "time, I have paſſionately loved Miſs "W——, and upon my not complying "with the mother's propoſals, they have "turned me out of doors; this is to "juſtify," &c.

'This declaration, ſigned with his 'name, was actually printed in a number 'of detached advertiſements, which he 'ordered to be diſtributed to the pub- 'lick; and afterwards, being convinced 'by ſome of his friends, that he had 'done a very ſilly thing, he recalled 'them at half a guinea a-piece. A 'copy of one of them was ſent to me at 'Paris; and I believe my father has 'now one of the originals in his poſ- 'ſeſſion. After this wiſe vindication 'of his conduct, he made an attempt to 'carry off the lady from church by 'force of arms; but ſhe was reſcued 'by the neighbours, headed by her bro- 'ther, who being an attorney, had like 'to have made his lordſhip ſmart ſevere- 'ly for this exploit.

'Meanwhile my new admirer had 'made ſome progreſs in my heart; and 'my finances being exhauſted, I was 'reduced to the alternative of return- 'ing to Lord —— again, or accepting 'Earl B——'s love. When my affairs 'were brought to that iſſue, I made no 'heſitation in my choice, putting my- 'ſelf under the protection of a man of 'honour, whom I eſteemed, rather than 'ſuffer every ſort of mortification from 'a perſon who was the object of my 'abhorrence and contempt. From a 'miſtaken pride, I choſe to live in Lord 'B——y's houſe, rather than be main- 'tained at his expence in any other 'place. We ſpent ſeveral months agree- 'ably in balls and other diverſions, 'viſited Lord B——k, who lived at the 'diſtance of a few leagues from Paris, 'and ſtayed ſome days at his houſe, 'where the entertainment was, in all 'reſpects, delightful, elegant, and re- 'fined. Their habitation was the 'rendezvous of the beſt company in 'France; and Lady B——k maintain- 'ed the ſame ſuperiority in her own 'ſex, for which her lord is ſo juſtly 'diſtinguiſhed among the men.

'About Chriſtmas we ſet out for 'England, accompanied by a little 'North Briton, who lived with Lord 'B—— as his companion, and did not 'at all approve of our correſpondence; 'whether out of real friendſhip for his 'patron, or apprehenſion that in time I 'might ſupercede his own influence 'with my lord, I ſhall not pretend to 'determine. Be that as it will, the 'froſt was ſo ſevere, that we were de- 'tained ten days at Calais, before we 'could get out of the harbour; and 'during that time, I reflected ſeriouſly 'on what my new lover had propoſed: 'as he was very young, and unacquaint- 'ed with the world, I thought my ſtory 'might have eſcaped him; and there- 'fore determined to give him a faith- 'ful detail of the whole, that he might 'not have any thing to reproach me 'with in the ſequel: beſides, I did not 'think it honeſt to engage him to do 'more for me than he might afterwards, 'perhaps, think I was worth. Ac- 'cordingly, I communicated to him 'every particular of my life; and the 'narration, far from altering his ſenti- 'ments, rather confirmed his good opi- 'nion, by exhibiting an undoubted 'proof of my frankneſs and ſincerity. 'In ſhort, he behaved with ſuch gene- 'roſity, as made an abſolute conqueſt 'of my heart: but my love was of a

'different kind from that which had 'formerly reigned within my breaſt, 'being founded upon the warmeſt gra- 'titude and eſteem, excluſive of any 'other conſideration, though his perſon 'was very agreeable, and his addreſs 'engaging.

'When we arrived in England, I 'went directly to his country ſeat, 'about twelve miles from London, 'where he ſoon joined me, and we lived 'ſome time in perfect retirement, his 'relations being greatly alarmed with 'the apprehenſion that Lord —— would 'bring an action againſt him; though 'he himſelf deſired nothing more, and 'lived ſo eaſy under that expectation, 'that they ſoon laid aſide their fears on 'his account.

'We were viſited by Mr. H—— 'B——, a relation of my lord, and 'one Mr. R—— of the guards; who, 'with the little Scotchman and my 'lover, made an agreeable ſet, among 'whom I enjoyed hunting, and all 'manner of country diverſions. As to 'Mr. H—— B——, if ever there was 'a perfection in one man, it centered 'in him; or at leaſt, he, of all the men 'I ever knew, approached neareſt to 'that idea which I had conceived of a 'perfect character. He was both good 'and great, poſſeſſed an uncommon 'genius, and the beſt of hearts. Mr. 'R—— was a very ſociable man, had 'a good perſon and cultivated under- 'ſtanding; and my lord was exceſſively 'good-humoured; ſo that, with ſuch 'companions, no place could be dull 'or inſipid: for my own part, I con- 'ducted the family; and as I endea- 'voured to pleaſe and make every body 'happy, I had the good fortune to ſuc- 'ceed. Mr. B—— told me, that be- 'fore he ſaw me, he heard I was a fool; 'but finding (as he was pleaſed to ſay) 'that I had been egregiouſly miſrepre- 'ſented, he courted my friendſhip, and 'a correſpondence commenced between 'us: indeed, it was impoſſible for any 'perſon to know him, without enter- 'taining the utmoſt eſteem and venera- 'tion for his virtue.

'After I had lived ſome time in this 'agreeable retreat, my huſband began 'to make a buſtle; he ſent a meſſage, 'demanding me from Lord B——; 'then came in perſon, with his night- 'cap in his pocket, intending to have 'ſtayed all night, had he been aſked, 'and attended by a relation, whom 'he aſſured that I was very fond of 'him, and detained by force from his 'arms.

'Finding himſelf diſappointed in his 'expectations, he commenced a law- 'ſuit againſt Lord B——, though not 'for a divorce, as we deſired, but with 'a view to reclaim me as his law- 'ful wife. His lawyers, however, at- 'tempted to prove criminal converſa- 'tion, in hopes of extorting money 'from my lover; but their endeavours 'were altogether fruitleſs; for no ſer- 'vant of Lord B——'s or mine could 'with juſtice ſay, we were ever ſeen to 'treſpaſs againſt modeſty and decorum; 'ſo that the plaintiff was nonſuited.

'While this cauſe was depending, 'all my lover's friends expreſſed fear 'and concern for the iſſue, while he 'himſelf behaved with the utmoſt reſo- 'lution, and gave me ſuch convincing 'proofs of a ſtrong and ſteady affection, 'as augmented my gratitude, and rivet- 'ted the ties of my love, which was 'unblemiſhed, faithful, and ſincere.

'Soon after this event, I was ſeized 'with a violent fit of illneſs, in which 'I was viſited by my father, and at- 'tended by two phyſicians, one of 'whom deſpaired of my life, and took 'his leave accordingly; but Dr. S——, 'who was the other, perſiſted in his 'attendance, and in all human appear- 'ance ſaved my life; a circumſtance 'by which he acquired a great ſhare of 'reputation: yet, notwithſtanding all 'his aſſiſtance, I was confined to my 'bed for ten weeks; during which, 'Lord B——'s grief was immoderate, 'his care and generoſity unlimited. 'While I lay in this extremity, Mr. 'S——, penetrated by my melancholy 'condition, which revived his tender- 'neſs, begged leave to be admitted to 'my preſence; and Lord B—— would 'have complied with his requeſt, had 'I not been judged too weak to bear 'the ſhock of ſuch an interview. My 'conſtitution, however, agreeably diſ- 'appointed their fears; and the fever 'had no ſooner left me, than I was 'removed to a hunting-ſeat belong- 'ing to my lover, from whence, af- 'ter I had recovered my ſtrength, we 'went to B—— Caſtle, where we kept 'open houſe: and while we remained 'at this place, Lord B—— received a 'letter from Lord ——, dated Novem-

'ber,

'ber, challenging him to single combat 'in May, upon the frontiers of France 'and Flanders. This defiance was 'sent in consequence of what had passed 'betwixt them long before my indispo-'sition, at a meeting in a certain tavern, 'where they quarrelled, and in the fray 'my lover threw his antagonist under 'the table. I counselled him to take 'no notice of this rhodomontade, which 'I knew was void of all intention of 'performance; and he was wise enough 'to follow my advice; resolved, how-'ever, should the message be repeated, 'to take the challenger at his word.

'Having resided some time in this 'place, we returned to the other coun-'try-house which he had left, where 'Lord B—— addicted himself so much 'to hunting, and other male diversions, 'that I began to think he neglected me, 'and apprized him of my suspicion; 'assuring him, at the same time, that I 'would leave him as soon as my opi-'nion should be confirmed.

'This declaration had no effect upon 'his behaviour, which became so re-'markably cold, that even Mr. R——, 'who lived with us, imagined that his 'affection was palpably diminished. 'When I went to town, I was usually 'attended by his cousin, or this gentle-'man, or both, but seldom favoured 'with his company; nay, when I re-'paired to Bath, for the re-establish-'ment of my health, he permitted me 'to go alone, so that I was quite per-'suaded of his indifference; and yet I 'was mistaken in my opinion: but I 'had been spoiled by the behaviour of 'my first husband, and Mr. S——, who 'never quitted me for the sake of any 'amusement, and often resisted the calls 'of the most urgent business rather than 'part from me, though but for a few 'hours. I thought every man who 'loved me truly, would act in the same 'manner; and whether I am right or 'wrong in my conjectures, I leave 'wiser casuists to judge. Certain it 'is, such sacrifice and devotion is the 'most pleasing proof of an admirer's 'passion; and *Voyez moi plus souvent, & ne me donnez rien*, is one of my fa-'vourite maxims. A man may give 'money, because he is profuse; he may 'be violently fond, because he is of a 'sanguine constitution; but if he gives 'me his time, he gives me an unques-'tionable proof of my being in full 'possession of his heart.

'My appearance at Bath, without 'the company of Lord B——, occasion-'ed a general surprize, and encouraged 'the men to pelter me with addresses; 'every new admirer endeavouring to 'advance his suit, by demonstrating the 'unkind and disrespectful behaviour of 'his lordship. Indeed, this was the 'most effectual string they could touch: 'my pride and resentment were alarm-'ed, and I was weak enough to listen 'to one man, who had like to have in-'sinuated himself into my inclinations. 'He was tall and large boned, with 'white hair, inclining to what is called 'sandy, and had the reputation of being 'handsome, though I think he scarce 'deserved that epithet. He possessed a 'large fortune, loved mischief, and 'stuck at nothing for the accomplish-'ment of his designs; one of his chief 'pleasures being that of setting any 'two lovers at variance. He employ-'ed his address upon me with great 'assiduity, and knew so well how to 'manage my resentment, that I was 'pleased with his manner; heard his 'vows without disgust; and, in a word, 'promised to deliberate with myself up-'on his proposals, and give him an ac-'count of my determination in writing.

'Thus resolved, I went to Lord 'B——, in Wiltshire, whither I was 'followed by this pretender to my 'heart, who visited us on the footing 'of an acquaintance; but when I re-'flected on what I had done, I con-'demned my own conduct as indis-'creet, though nothing decisive had 'passed between us, and began to hate 'him in proportion to the self-convic-'tion I felt; perceiving that I had in-'volved myself in a difficulty from 'which I should not be easily disen-'gaged. For the present, however, 'I found means to postpone my decla-'ration; he admitted my excuse, and I 'returned to London with Lord B——, 'who was again summoned to the field 'by his former challenger.

'H—d—n, governor, counsellor, and 'steward to this little hero, came to 'Lord B—— with a verbal message, 'importing, that his lordship had 'changed his mind about going to Flan-'ders, but expected to meet him on 'such a day and hour, in the burying-

'ground

'ground near Red Lion Square. Lord 'B—— accepted the challenge, and 'gave me an account of what had paſſ-'ed; but he had been anticipated by 'the meſſenger, who had already tried 'to alarm my fears, from the conſi-'deration of the conſequence, that I 'might take ſome meaſures to prevent 'their meeting. I perceived his drift, 'and told him plainly that Lord —— 'had no intention to riſk his perſon, 'though he endeavoured with all his 'might to perſuade me, that his princi-'pal was deſperate and determined. I 'knew my little huſband too well, to 'think he would bring matters to any 'dangerous iſſue, and was apprehenſive 'of nothing but foul play, from the vil-'lainy of H—n, with which I was 'equally well acquainted. Indeed, I 'ſignified my doubts on that ſcore to 'Mr. B——, who would have attend-'ed his kinſman to the field, had he 'not thought he might be liable to 'cenſure, if any thing ſhould happen 'to Lord B——, becauſe he himſelf 'was heir at law: for that reaſon he 'judiciouſly declined being perſonally 'concerned; and we pitched upon the 'Earl of A——, his lordſhip's uncle, 'who willingly undertook the office.

'At the appointed time they went to 'the place of rendezvous, where they 'had not waited long when the challen-'ger appeared, in a new pink ſattin 'waiſtcoat, which he had put on for the 'occaſion, with his ſword under his 'arm, and his ſteward by him, leaving, 'in an hackney-coach, at ſome diſtance, 'a ſurgeon whom he had provided for 'the care of his perſon. Thus equip-'ped, he advanced to his antagoniſt, 'and deſired him to chuſe his ground; 'upon which Lord B—— told him, 'that if he muſt fall, it was not material 'which grave he ſhould tumble over.

'Our little hero finding him ſo jo-'coſe and determined, turned to Lord 'A——, and deſired to ſpeak with 'him, that he might diſburden his con-'ſcience before they ſhould begin the 'work of death. They accordingly 'went aſide; and he gave him to un-'derſtand, that his motive for fighting, 'was Lord B——'s detaining his wife 'from him by compulſion. The Earl of 'A—— aſſured him, he was egregi-'ouſly miſtaken in his conjecture; that 'his nephew uſed no force or undue 'influence to keep me in his houſe; but 'it could not be expected that he would 'turn me out of doors.

'This explanation was altogether ſa-'tisfactory to Lord ——, who ſaid he 'was far from being ſo unreaſonable as 'to expect Lord B—— would commit 'ſuch a breach of hoſpitality; and all 'he deſired was, that his wife ſhould be 'left to her own inclinations. Upon 'theſe articles, peace was concluded, 'and they parted without bloodſhed. 'At leaſt, theſe are the particulars of 'the ſtory, as they were related by Lord 'A——, with whom I laughed heartil-'ly at the adventure, for I never doubt-'ed that the challenger would find ſome 'expedient to prevent the duel, though 'I wondered how he muſtered up reſo-'lution enough to carry it ſo far.

'That he might not, however, give 'us any more trouble, we reſolved to 'go and enjoy ourſelves in France; 'whither I went by myſelf, in hopes of 'being ſoon joined by my lover, who 'was obliged to ſtay ſome time longer 'in England, to ſettle his affairs. He 'was ſo much affected at our parting '(though but for a few weeks) that he 'was almoſt diſtracted: and this af-'fliction renewed my tenderneſs for 'him, becauſe it was an undoubted 'proof of his love. I wrote to him 'every poſt from France; and, as I 'had no ſecrets, deſired him to take 'care of all the letters that ſhould come 'to his houſe, directed to me, after my 'departure from England.

'This was an unfortunate office for 'him, in the execution of which he 'chanced to open a letter from Sir 'T—— A——, with whom (as I 'have already obſerved) I had ſome 'correſpondence at Bath. I had, ac-'cording to my promiſe, given this 'gentleman a deciſive anſwer, import-'ing, that I was determined to remain 'in my preſent ſituation; but as Lord 'B—— was ignorant of my ſentiments 'in that particular, and perceived from 'the letter that ſomething extraordinary 'had paſſed between us, and that I 'was earneſtly ſolicited to leave him, 'he was ſeized with the utmoſt conſter-'nation and concern; and having pre-'viouſly obtained the king's leave to go 'abroad, ſet out that very night for 'France, leaving his affairs in the great-'eſt confuſion.

'Sir T—— A—— hearing I was 'gone, without underſtanding the cauſe

'of

'of my departure, took the same route, 'and both arrived at Dover next day.

'They heard of each other's motions: 'each bribed the master of a packet-'boat to transport him with expedition; 'but that depending upon the wind, 'both reached Calais at the same time, 'though in different vessels. Sir T—— 'sent his valet de chambre, post, with 'a letter, intreating me to accompany 'him into Italy, where he would make 'me mistress of his whole fortune, and 'to set out directly for that country, 'that he might not lose me by the ar-'rival of Lord B——, promising to 'join me on the road, if I would con-'sent to make him happy. I sent his 'messenger back with an answer, where-'in I expressed surprize at his propo-'sals, after having signified my resolu-'tion to him before I left England. He 'was scarce dismissed, when I received 'another letter from Lord B——, be-'seeching me to meet him at Clermont, 'upon the road from Calais; and con-'juring me to avoid the sight of his 'rival, should he get the start of him in 'travelling. This, however, was not 'likely to be the case, as Lord B—— 'rode post, and the other was, by his 'corpulence, obliged to travel in a 'chaise; yet, that I might not increase 'his anxiety, I left Paris immediately 'on the receipt of his message, and met 'him at the appointed place; where he 'received me with all the agitation of 'joy and fear, and asked if I had ever 'encouraged Sir T—— A—— in his 'addresses. I very candidly told him 'the whole transaction, at which he was 'incensed; but his imdignation was 'soon appeased, when I professed my 'penitence, and assured him that I had 'totally rejected his rival. Not that I 'approve of my behaviour to Sir T——, 'who (I own) was ill used in this af-'fair, but surely it was more excusa-'ble to halt here, than proceed farther 'in my indiscretion.

'My lover being satisfied with my 'declaration, we went together to Pa-'ris, being attended by the Scotchman 'whom I have already mentioned; 'though I believe he was not over and 'above well pleased to see matters thus 'amicably compromised. The furious 'knight followed us to the capital; 'insisted on seeing me in person; told 'this North Briton, that I was actual-'ly engaged to him; wrote every hour, 'and railed at my perfidious conduct. 'I took no notice of these delirious 'transports, which were also disregard-'ed by Lord B——, till one night he 'was exasperated by the insinuations of 'Mr. C——, who, I believe, inflamed 'his jealousy, by hinting a suspicion 'that I was really in love with his 'rival. What passed betwixt them I 'know not, but he sent for me from 'the opera, by a physician of Paris, 'who was a sort of go-between among 'us all, and who told me, that if I 'did not come home on the instant, a 'duel would be fought on my account.

'I was very much shocked at this 'information; but by being used to 'alarms from the behaviour of Lord '——, I had acquired a pretty good 'share of resolution, and with great 'composure entered the room where 'Lord B—— was, with his compa-'nion, whom I immediately ordered to 'withdraw. I then gave his lordship 'to understand, that I was informed 'of what had passed, and thought my-'self so much injured by the person who 'had just quitted the apartment, that I 'would no longer live under the same 'roof with him.

'Lord B—— raved like a bedlamite, 'taxing me with want of candour and 'affection; but I easily justified my own 'integrity, and gave him such assurances 'of my love, that his jealousy subsided, 'and his spirits were recomposed. Ne-'vertheless, I insisted upon his dismiss-'ing Mr. C——, on pain of my leav-'ing the house, as I could not help 'thinking he had used his endeavours 'to prejudice me in the opinion of my 'lord. If his conduct was the result 'of friendship for his patron, he cer-'tainly acted the part of an honest and 'trusty adherent. But I could not easi-'ly forgive him, because a few weeks 'before, he had, by my interest, ob-'tained a considerable addition to his 'allowance; and even after the steps 'he had taken to disoblige me, I was 'not so much his enemy but that I pre-'vailed upon Lord B—— to double his 'salary, that his leaving the family 'might be no detriment to his for-'tune.

'His lordship having complied with 'my demand, this gentleman, after hav-'ing stayed three days in the house to 'prepare for his departure, during which 'I would not suffer him to be admitted

'into

'into my presence, made his retreat 'with a fine young girl who was my 'companion, and I have never seen 'him since that time.

'Sir T—— still continued furious, 'and would not take a denial, except 'from my own mouth; upon which, 'with the approbation of Lord B——, 'I indulged him with an interview. 'He entered the apartment with a stern 'countenance, and told me I had used 'him ill. I pleaded guilty to the charge, 'and begged his pardon accordingly. 'I attempted to reason the case with 'him, but he would hear no arguments 'except his own, and even tried to in-'timidate me with threats; which pro-'voked me to such a degree, that I de-'fied his vengeance. I told him that 'I feared nothing but the report of my 'own conscience; that though I had 'acted a simple part, he durst not say 'there was any thing criminal in my 'conduct; and that from his present fran-'tick and unjust behaviour, I thought 'myself happy in having escaped him. 'He swore I was the most inflexible of 'all creatures, asked if nothing would 'move me; and when I answered, "No-"thing," took his leave, and never 'afterwards persecuted me with his ad-'dresses: though I have heard he was 'vain and false enough to boast of fa-'vours, which, upon my honour, he 'never received; as he himself, at one 'time, owned to Doctor Cantwell at 'Paris.

'While he underwent all this frenzy 'and distraction upon my account, he 'was loved with the same violence of 'passion by a certain Scotch lady of 'quality; who, when he followed me 'to France, pursued him thither with 'the same eagerness and expedition. 'Far from being jealous of me as a ri-'val, she used to come to my house, 'implore my good offices with the ob-'ject of her love, and laying herself on 'the floor at full length before the fire, 'weep and cry like a person bereft of 'her senses. She bitterly complained, 'that he had never obliged her but 'once; and begged, with the most 'earnest supplications, that I would 'give her an opportunity of seeing him 'at my house. But I thought proper 'to avoid her company, as soon as I 'perceived her intention.

'We continued at Paris for some 'time, during which I contracted an 'acquaintance with the sister of Madam 'la T——. She was the supposed mis-'tress of the Prince of C——, endowed 'with a great share of understanding, and 'loved pleasure to excess, though she 'maintained her reputation on a respect-'able footing, by living with her hus-'band and mother. This lady perceiving 'that I had inspired her lover with a pas-'sion, which gave me uneasiness on her 'account, actually practised all her elo-'quence and art, in persuading me to 'listen to his love; for it was a maxim 'with her, to please him at any rate. 'I was shocked at her indelicate com-'plaisance, and rejected the proposal, as 'repugnant to my present engagement, 'which I held as sacred as any nuptial 'tie, and much more binding than a 'forced or unnatural marriage.

'Upon our return to England, we 'lived in great harmony and peace; 'and nothing was wanting to my hap-'piness, but the one thing to me the 'most needful; I mean the enchanting 'tenderness and delightful enthusiasm 'of love. Lord B——'s heart (I be-'lieve) felt the soft impressions; and, 'for my own part, I loved him with 'the most faithful affection. It is not 'enough to say I wished him well; I 'had the most delicate, the most ge-'nuine esteem for his virtue; I had an 'intimate regard and anxiety for his 'interest; and felt for him as if he had 'been my own son: but still there was 'a vacancy in my heart; there was not 'that fervour, that transport, that ex-'tasy of passion which I had formerly 'known; my bosom was not filled with 'the little deity; I could not help re-'calling to my remembrance the fond, 'the ravishing moments, I had passed 'with S——. Had I understood the 'conditions of life, those pleasures were 'happily exchanged for my present si-'tuation; because, if I was now de-'prived of those rapturous enjoyments, 'I was also exempted from the cares 'and anxiety that attended them; but 'I was generally extravagant in my no-'tions of happiness, and therefore con-'strued my present tranquillity into an 'insipid languor and stagnation of life.

'While I remained in this inactivity 'of sentiment, Lord ——, having re-'ceived a very considerable addition to 'his fortune, sent a message to me, 'promising, that if I would leave Lord 'B——, he would make me a present

'of

'of a houſe and furniture, where I 'ſhould live at my eaſe, without being 'expoſed to his viſits, except when I 'ſhould be diſpoſed to receive them. 'This propoſal he made, in conſequence 'of what I had always declared, name-'ly, that if he had not reduced me to 'the neceſſity of putting myſelf under 'the protection of ſome perſon or other, 'by depriving me of any other means 'of ſubſiſtence, I ſhould never have 'given the world the leaſt cauſe to ſcan-'dalize my reputation; and that I 'would withdraw myſelf from my pre-'ſent dependance, as ſoon as he ſhould 'enable me to live by myſelf. I was 'therefore reſolved to be as good as my 'word, and accepted his offer, on con-'dition that I ſhould be wholly at my 'own diſpoſal, and that he ſhould ne-'ver enter my door but as a viſitant or 'common friend.

'Theſe articles being ratified by his 'word and honour (the value of which 'I did not then know) an houſe was 'furniſhed according to my directions; 'and I ſignified my intention to Lord 'B——, who conſented to my removal, 'with this proviſo, that I ſhould con-'tinue to ſee him. I wrote alſo to his 'relation Mr. B——; who, in his an-'ſwer, obſerved, that it was too late 'to adviſe when I was actually deter-'miſed. All my friends and acquain-'tance approved of the ſcheme, though 'it was one of the moſt unjuſtifiable 'ſteps I had ever taken, being a real 'act of ingratitude to my benefactor; 'which I ſoon did, and always ſhall, 'regret and condemn. So little is the 'world qualified to judge of private 'affairs!

'When the time of our parting drew 'near, Lord B—— became gloomy and 'diſcontented, and even intreated me 'to poſtpone my reſolution; but I told 'him, that now every thing was pre-'pared for my reception, I could not 'retract without incurring the imputa-'tion of folly and extravagance. On 'the very day of my departure, Mr. 'B—— endeavoured, with all the ar-'guments he could ſuggeſt, to diſſuade 'me from my purpoſe; and I made uſe 'of the ſame anſwer which had ſatis-'fied his friend. Finding me deter-'mined upon removing, he burſt out 'into a flood of tears, exclaiming, "By "G—d, if Lord B—— can bear it, I "can't!" I was thunderſtruck at this 'expreſſion; for though I had been told 'that Mr. B—— was in love with me, 'I gave no credit to the report, becauſe 'he had never declared his paſſion, and 'this was the firſt hint of it that ever 'eſcaped him in my hearing. I was 'therefore ſo much amazed at the cir-'cumſtance of this abrupt explanation, 'that I could make no anſwer; but 'having taken my leave, went away, 'ruminating on the unexpected decla-'ration.

'Lord B—— (as I was informed) 'ſpoke not a word that whole night, 'and took my leaving him ſo much to 'heart, that two years elapſed before 'he got the better of his grief. This 'intelligence I afterwards received from 'his own mouth, and aſked his for-'giveneſs for my unkind retreat, though 'I ſhall never be able to obtain my 'own. As for Mr. B——, he was 'overwhelmed with ſorrow, and made 'ſuch efforts to ſuppreſs his concern, 'as had well nigh coſt him his life. 'Dr. S—— was called to him in the 'middle of the night, and found him 'almoſt ſuffocated. He ſoon gueſſed 'the cauſe, when he underſtood that I 'had left the houſe: ſo that I myſelf 'was the only perſon concerned who 'was utterly ignorant of his affection; 'for I ſolemnly declare, he never gave 'me the leaſt reaſon to ſuſpect it while 'I lived with his relation, becauſe he 'had too much honour to entertain a 'thought of ſupplanting his friend, and 'too good an opinion of me to believe 'he ſhould have ſucceeded in the at-'tempt. Though my love for Lord 'B—— was not ſo tender and intereſt-'ing as the paſſion I had felt for S——, 'my fidelity was inviolable, and I ne-'ver harboured the moſt diſtant thought 'of any other perſon, till after I had 'reſolved to leave him, when (I own) 'I afforded ſome ſmall encouragement 'to the addreſſes of a new admirer, by 'telling him, that I ſhould, in a little 'time, be my own miſtreſs, though I 'was not now at my own diſpoſal.

'I enjoyed my new houſe as a little 'paradiſe: it was accommodated with 'all ſorts of conveniences; every thing 'was new, and therefore pleaſing, and 'the whole abſolutely at my command. 'I had the company of a relation, a 'very good woman, with whom I lived 'in the moſt amicable manner; was 'viſited by the beſt people in town, (I

'mean those of the male sex, the ladies 'having long ago forsaken me;) I 'frequented all reputable places of pub-'lick entertainment, and had a concert 'at home once a week; so that my days 'rolled on in happiness and quiet, till 'all my sweets were imbittered by the 'vexatious behaviour of my husband, 'who began to importune me again to 'live with him; and by the increasing 'anxiety of Lord B——, who (though 'I still admitted his visits) plainly per-'ceived that I wanted to relinquish his 'correspondence. This discovery raised 'such tempests of jealousy and despair 'within his breast, that he kept me in 'continual alarms: he sent messages to 'me every hour, signed his letters with 'his own blood, raved like a man in 'an extasy of madness, railed at my 'ingratitude, and praised my conduct 'by turns. He offered to sacrifice every 'thing for my love, to leave the king-'dom forthwith, and live with me for 'ever in any part of the world where I 'should chuse to reside.

'These were generous and tempting 'proposals; but I was beset with coun-'sellors who were not totally disintereft-'ed, and who dissuaded me from em-'bracing the proffers of my lover, on 'pretence that Lord —— would be 'highly injured by my compliance. I 'listened to their advice, and hardened 'my heart against Lord B——'s sor-'row and solicitations. My behaviour 'on this occasion is altogether unac-'countable; this was the only time 'that ever I was a slave to admonition. 'The condition of Lord B—— would 'have melted any heart but mine, and 'yet mine was one of the most sensible: 'he employed his cousin as an advocate 'with me, till that gentleman actually 'refused the office, telling him candid-'ly, that his own inclinations were too 'much engaged to permit him to per-'form the task with fidelity and truth. 'He accordingly resolved to avoid my 'presence, until my lord and I should 'come to some final determination, 'which was greatly retarded by the per-'severance of his lordship, who would 'not resign his hopes, even when I pre-'tended that another man had engaged 'my heart, but said, that in time my 'affection might return.

'Our correspondence, however, gra-'dually wore off; upon which Mr. 'B—— renewed his visits, and many 'agreeable and happy hours we passed 'together. Not that he, or any other 'person whom I now saw, succeeded 'to the privilege of a fortunate lover: 'I knew he loved me to madness; but 'I would not gratify his passion any 'other way than by the most profound 'esteem and veneration for his virtues, 'which were altogether amiable and 'sublime; and I would here draw his 'character minutely, but it would take 'up too much time to set forth his me-'rits; the only man living of my ac-'quaintance who resembles him is Lord 'F——, of whom I shall speak in the 'sequel.

'About this time, I underwent a 'very interesting change in the situation 'of my heart. I had sent a message to 'my old lover S——, desiring he would 'allow my picture, which was in his 'possession, to be copied; and he now 'transmitted it to me by my lawyer, 'whom he directed to ask, if I intend-'ed to be at the next masquerade. 'This curiosity had a strange effect up-'on my spirits; my heart fluttered at the 'question, and my imagination glowed 'with a thousand fond presages. I an-'swered in the affirmative, and we met 'by accident at the ball. I could not 'behold him without emotion; when 'he accosted me, his well-known voice 'made my heart vibrate, like a musical 'chord, when it's unison is struck. All 'the ideas of our past love, which the 'lapse of time and absence had en-'feebled and lulled to sleep, now awoke, 'and were re-inspired by his appearance; 'so that his artful excuses were easily 'admitted: I forgave him all that I 'had suffered on his account, because 'he was the natural lord of my affec-'tion; and our former correspondence 'was renewed.

'I thought myself in a new world of 'bliss, in consequence of this recon-'ciliation, the raptures of which con-'tinued unimpaired for the space of 'four months; during which time he 'was fonder of me, if possible, than 'before; repeated his promise of mar-'riage, if we should ever have it in our 'power; assured me he had never been 'happy since he left me; that he be-'lieved no woman had ever loved like 'me; and, indeed, to have a notion of 'my passion for that man, you must 'first have loved as I did: but through 'a strange caprice, I broke off the cor-

'respondence,

'respondence, out of apprehenſion that 'he would forſake me again. From 'his paſt conduct, I dreaded what might 'happen; and the remembrance of 'what I had undergone by his incon-'ſtancy, filled my imagination with 'ſuch horror, that I could not endure 'the ſhocking proſpect, and prema-'turely plunged myſelf into the danger, 'rather than endure the terrors of ex-'pectation. I remembered that his 'former attachment began in the ſeaſon 'of my proſperity, when my fortune was 'in the zenith, and my youth in it's 'prime; and that he had forſaken me 'in the day of trouble, when my life 'became embarraſſed, and my circum-'ſtances were on the decline: I foreſaw 'nothing but continual perſecution from 'my huſband, and feared, that if once 'the keener tranſports of our reconcilia-'tion ſhould be over, his affection would 'ſink under the ſeverity of it's trial. 'In conſequence of this deſertion, I re-'ceived a letter from him, acknowledg-'ing that he was rightly ſerved, but 'that my retreat gave him inexpreſſible 'concern.

'Meanwhile, Lord —— continued to 'act in the character of a fiend, tor-'menting me with his nauſeous impor-'tunities: he prevailed upon the Duke 'of L—— to employ his influence in 'perſuading me to live with him; aſ-'ſuring his grace, that I had actually 'promiſed to give him that proof of my 'obedience, and that I would come 'home the ſooner for being preſſed to 'compliance by a perſon of his rank 'and character. Induced by theſe re-'preſentations, the duke honoured me 'with a viſit; and in the courſe of his 'exhortations I underſtood how he had 'been thus miſinformed: upon which 'I ſent for Lord ——, and in his pre-'ſence convicted him of the falſhood, 'by communicating to his grace the ar-'ticle of our laſt agreement, which he 'did not think proper to deny; and the 'duke being undeceived, declared that 'he would not have given me the trou-'ble of vindicating myſelf, had he not 'been miſled by the inſincerity of my 'lord.

'Baffled in this attempt, he engaged 'Mr. H—— V——, and afterwards 'my own father, in the ſame talk; and 'though I ſtill adhered to my firſt reſolu-'tion, perſiſted with ſuch obſtinacy in his 'endeavours to make me unhappy, that 'I determined to leave the kingdom. 'Accordingly, after I had ſpent the 'evening with him at Ranelagh, I went 'away about two o'clock in the morn-'ing, leaving my companion, with di-'rections to reſtore to my lord his houſe, 'furniture, plate, and every thing he 'had given me ſince our laſt accommo-'dation; ſo far was I, upon this occa-'ſion, or at any other time of my life, 'from embezzling any part of his for-'tune. My friend followed my in-'ſtructions moſt punctually; and his 'lordſhip knows and will acknowledge 'the truth of this aſſertion.

'Thus have I explained the true 'cauſe of my firſt expedition to Flan-'ders, whither the world was good-'natured enough to ſay I followed Mr. 'B—— and the whole army, which 'happened to be ſent abroad that ſum-'mer. Before my departure, I like-'wiſe tranſmitted to Lord B—— the 'dreſſing-plate, china, and a very con-'ſiderable ſettlement, of which he had 'been generous enough to make me a 'preſent. This was an inſtance of my 'integrity, which I thought due to a 'man who had laid me under great 'obligations; and though I have lived 'to be refuſed a ſmall ſum both by 'him and S——, I do not repent of my 'diſintereſted behaviour; all the re-'venge I harbour againſt the laſt of theſe 'lovers, is the deſire of having it in my 'power to do him good.

'I now found myſelf adrift in the 'world again, and very richly deſerved 'the hardſhips of my condition, for my 'indiſcretion in leaving Lord B——, 'and in truſting to the word of Lord '——, without ſome farther ſecurity; 'but I have dearly paid for my impru-'dence. The more I ſaw into the cha-'racter of this man, whom deſtiny hath 'appointed my ſcourge, the more was I 'determined to avoid his fellowſhip and 'communication; for he and I are, in 'point of diſpoſition, as oppoſite as any 'two principles in nature. In the firſt 'place, he is one of the moſt unſocial 'beings that ever exiſted: when I was 'pleaſed and happy, he was always out 'of temper; but if he could find means 'to overcaſt and cloud my mirth, though 'never ſo innocent, he then diſcovered 'ſigns of uncommon ſatisfaction and 'content; becauſe, by this diſagreeable 'temper, he baniſhed all company from 'his houſe. He is extremely weak of

'understanding, though he poſſeſſes a 'good ſhare of low cunning, which has 'ſo egregiouſly impoſed upon ſome peo- 'ple, that they have actually believed 'him a good-natured eaſy creature, and 'blamed me becauſe I did not manage 'him to better purpoſe; but, upon far- 'ther acquaintance, they have always 'found him obſtinate as a mule, and 'capricious as a monkey. Not that he 'is utterly void of all commendable 'qualities: he is punctual in paying his 'debts, liberal when in good-humour, 'and would be well bred, were he not 'ſubject to fits of abſence, during which 'he is altogether unconverſable; but he 'is proud, naturally ſuſpicious, jealous, 'equally with and without cauſe, ne- 'ver made a friend, and is an utter 'ſtranger to the joys of intimacy; in 'ſhort, he hangs like a damp upon ſo- 'ciety, and may be properly called '*kill-joy*, an epithet which he has juſt- 'ly acquired. He honours me with 'conſtant profeſſions of love, but his 'conduct is ſo oppoſite to my ſenti- 'ments of that paſſion, as to have been 'the prime ſource of all my misfortunes 'and affliction; and I have often wiſhed 'myſelf the object of his hate, in hopes 'of profiting by a change in his beha- 'viour.

'Indeed, he has not been able to 'make me more unhappy than, I be- 'lieve, he is in his own mind; for he 'is literally a ſelf-tormentor, who ne- 'ver enjoyed one gleam of ſatisfaction, 'except at the expence of another's 'quiet; and yet with this (I had almoſt 'called it diabolical) quality, he expects 'that I ſhould cheriſh him with all the 'tenderneſs of affection. After he has 'been at pains to incur my averſion, he 'puniſhes my diſguſt, by contriving 'ſchemes to mortify and perplex me, 'which have often ſucceeded ſo effectu- 'ally, as to endanger my life and con- 'ſtitution; for I have been fretted and 'frighted into ſundry fits of illneſs, and 'then I own I have experienced his care 'and concern.

'Over and above the oddities I have 'mentioned, he is ſo unſteady in his 'œconomy, that he is always new 'modelling his affairs, and exhauſt- 'ing his fortune, by laying out ten 'pounds in order to ſave a ſhilling. 'He enquires into the character of a 'ſervant after he has lived two years 'in his family; and is ſo ridicu- 'louſly ſtocked with vanity and ſelf- 'conceit, that notwithſtanding my aſ- 'ſurance before, and the whole ſeries of 'my conduct ſince our marriage, which 'ought to have convinced him of my 'diſlike, he is ſtill perſuaded, that at 'bottom I muſt admire and be ena- 'moured of his agreeable perſon and 'accompliſhments, and that I would 'not fail to manifeſt my love, were I 'not ſpirited up againſt him by his 'own relations. Perhaps it might be 'their intereſt to foment the miſunder- 'ſtanding betwixt us; but really they 'give themſelves no trouble about our 'affairs; and, ſo far as I know them, 'are a very good ſort of people. On 'the whole, I think I may with juſtice 'pronounce my precious yoke-fellow a 'trifling, teazing, inſufferable, incon- 'ſiſtent creature.

'With the little money which re- 'mained of what I had received from 'his lordſhip for houſekeeping, I tranſ- 'ported myſelf to Flanders, and arrived 'in Ghent a few days after our troops 'were quartered in that city, which was 'ſo much crouded with theſe new viſi- 'tants, that I ſhould have found it im- 'practicable to procure a lodging, had I 'not been accommodated by Lord R——, 'B——, the Duke of A——'s youngeſt 'brother, who very politely gave me up 'his own. Here I ſaw my friend Mr. 'B——, who was overjoyed at my ar- 'rival, though jealous of every man of 'his acquaintance; for he loved me with 'all the ardour of paſſion, and I regard- 'ed him with all the perfection of 'friendſhip, which, had he lived, in time 'might have produced love; though 'that was a fruit which it never 'brought forth. Notwithſtanding his 'earneſt ſolicitations to the contrary, I 'ſtayed but a week in Ghent, from 'whence I proceeded to Bruſſels, and 'fixed my abode in the Hotel de Flan- 'dre, among an agreeable ſet of gentle- 'men and ladies, with whom I ſpent 'my time very chearfully. There was 'a ſort of court in this city, frequented 'by all the officers who could obtain 'permiſſion to go thither; and the place 'in general was gay and agreeable. I 'was introduced to the beſt families, 'and very happy in my acquaintance; 'for the ladies were polite, good-tem- 'pered, and obliging, and treated me 'with the utmoſt hoſpitality and reſpect. 'Among others, I contracted a friend-

'ſhip

'ſhip with Madam la Comteſſe de 'C——, and her two daughters, who 'were very amiable young ladies; and 'became intimate with the Princeſs 'C——, and Counteſs W——, lady 'of the bed-chamber to the Queen of 'Hungary, and a great favourite of the 'Governor Monſieur D'H——, in 'whoſe houſe ſhe lived with his wife, 'who was alſo a lady of a very engag-'ing diſpoſition.

'Soon after I had fixed my habitation 'in Bruſſels, the company at our hotel 'was increaſed by three officers, who 'profeſſed themſelves my admirers, and 'came from Ghent with a view of ſo-'liciting my love. This triumvirate 'conſiſted of the Scotch Earl of ——, 'Lord R—— M——, and another 'young officer: the firſt was a man of 'a very genteel figure and amorous 'complexion, danced well, and had a 'great deal of good-humour, with a 'mixture of vanity and ſelf-conceit; 'the ſecond had a good face, though 'a clumſy perſon, and a very ſweet diſ-'poſition, very much adapted for the 'ſentimental paſſion of love, and the 'third (Mr. W—— by name) was 'tall, thin, and well bred, with a great 'ſtock of good-nature and vivacity. 'Theſe adventurers began their ad-'dreſſes in general acts of gallantry, 'that comprehended ſeveral of my fe-'male friends, with whom we uſed to 'engage in parties of pleaſure, both in 'the city and the environs, which are 'extremely agreeable. When they 'thought they had taken the preliminary 'ſteps of ſecuring themſelves in my 'good opinion and eſteem, they agreed 'to go on without farther delay, and 'that Lord —— ſhould make the firſt 'attack upon my heart.

'He accordingly laid ſiege to me 'with ſuch warmth and aſſiduity, that 'I believed he deceived himſelf, and 'began to think he was actually in love; 'though at bottom he left no impulſe 'that deſerved the ſacred name. Though 'I diſcouraged him in the beginning, he 'perſecuted me with his addreſſes; he 'always ſat by me at dinner, and im-'parted a thouſand trifles in continual 'whiſpers, which attracted the notice 'of the company ſo much, that I began 'to fear his behaviour would give riſe to 'ſome report to my prejudice; and 'therefore avoided him with the utmoſt 'caution. Notwithſtanding all my care, 'however, he found means one night, 'while my maid, who lay in my room, 'went down ſtairs, to get into my cham-'ber after I was a-bed: upon which 'I ſtarted up, and told him, that if he 'ſhould approach me, I would alarm 'the houſe: for I never wanted courage 'and reſolution. Perceiving my diſ-'pleaſure, he kneeled by the bed-ſide, 'begged I would have pity on his ſuf-'ferings, and ſwore I ſhould have *carte 'blanche* to the utmoſt extent of his 'fortune. To theſe propoſals I made 'no other reply, but that of proteſting 'I would never ſpeak to him again, if 'he did not quit my apartment that 'moment; upon which he thought pro-'per to withdraw; and I never after-'wards gave him an opportunity of 'ſpeaking to me on the ſame ſubject: 'ſo that, in a few weeks, he ſeparated 'himſelf from our ſociety; though the 'ladies of Bruſſels conſidered him as 'my lover, becauſe, of all the other of-'ficers, he was their greateſt favourite.

'His lordſhip being thus repulſed, 'Mr. W—— took the field, and aſſailed 'my heart in a very different manner. 'He ſaid he knew not how to make 'love, but was a man of honour, would 'keep the ſecret, and ſo forth. To this 'cavalier addreſs I anſwered, that I 'was not angry, as I otherwiſe ſhould 'have been at his blunt declaration, 'becauſe I found by his own confeſſion, 'he did not know what was due to the 'ſex; and my unhappy ſituation in ſome 'ſhape excuſed him for a liberty which 'he would not have dreamed of taking, 'had not my misfortunes encouraged 'his preſumption. But I would deal 'with him in his own way; and, far from 'aſſuming the prude, frankly aſſured 'him, that he was not at all to my 'taſte, hoping he would conſider my 'diſlike as a ſufficient reaſon to reject his 'love.

'Lord R—— began to feel the ſymp-'toms of a genuine paſſion, which he 'carefully cheriſhed in ſilence, being 'naturally diffident and baſhful; but 'by the very means he uſed to conceal 'it from my obſervation, I plainly diſ-'cerned the ſituation of his heart, and 'was not at all diſpleaſed at the pro-'greſs I had made in his inclinations. 'Meanwhile, he cultivated my acquain-'tance with great aſſiduity and reſpect, 'attended me in all my excurſions, and 'particularly in an expedition to Ant-

'werp,

'werp, with two other gentlemen, where 'in downright *gaieté de cœur*, we ſat 'for our pictures, which were drawn in 'one piece; one of the party being re-'preſented in the dreſs of an huſſar, and 'another in that of a running footman. 'This incident I mention, becauſe the 'performance, which is now in my 'poſſeſſion, gave birth to a thouſand 'groundleſs reports, that circulated in 'England at our expence.

'It was immediately after this jaunt, 'that Lord R—— began to diſcloſe his 'paſſion; though he, at the ſame time, 'ſtarted ſuch objections as ſeemed well-'nigh to extinguiſh his hopes, lament-'ing, that even if he ſhould have the 'happineſs to engage my affections, his 'fortune was too inconſiderable to ſup-'port us againſt the efforts of Lord '——, ſhould he attempt to interrupt 'our felicity; and that he himſelf was 'obliged to follow the motions of the 'army. In ſhort, he ſeemed to con-'ſider my felicity more than his own, 'and behaved with ſuch delicacy, as 'gradually made an impreſſion on my 'heart; ſo that when we parted, we 'agreed to renew our correſpondence in 'England.

'In the midſt of theſe agreeable 'amuſements, which I enjoyed in al-'moſt all the different towns of Flan-'ders, I happened to be at Ghent one 'day, ſitting among a good deal of com-'pany, in one of their hotels, when a 'poſt-chaiſe ſtopped at the gate; upon 'which we went to the windows to ſa-'tisfy our curioſity, when who ſhould 'ſtep out of the convenience, but my 'little inſignificant lord. I no ſooner 'announced him to the company, than 'all the gentlemen aſked whether they 'ſhould ſtay and protect me, or with-'draw; and when I aſſured them, that 'their protection was not neceſſary, one 'and all of them retired; though Lord 'R—— M—— went no farther than 'the parlour below, being determined 'to ſcreen me againſt all violence and 'compulſion. I ſent a meſſage to my 'lord, deſiring him to walk up into my 'apartment; but although his ſole er-'rand was to ſee and carry me off, he 'would not venture to accept of my in-'vitation, till he had demanded me in 'form from the governor of the place.

'That gentleman being altogether a 'ſtranger to his perſon and character, 'referred him to the commanding of-'ficer of the Engliſh troops, who was 'a man of humour, and upon his lord-'ſhip's application, pretended to doubt 'his identity; obſerving, that he had 'always heard Lord —— repreſented 'as a jolly corpulent man. He gave 'him to underſtand, however, that even 'granting him to be the perſon, I was 'by no means ſubject to military law, 'unleſs he could prove that I had ever 'liſted in his majeſty's ſervice.

'Thus diſappointed in his endea-'vours, he returned to the inn, and with 'much perſuaſion, truſted himſelf in my 'dining-room, after having ſtationed 'his attendant at the door, in caſe of 'accidents. When I aſked, what had 'procured me the honour of this viſit; 'he told me, his buſineſs and intention 'were to carry me home. This decla-'ration produced a conference, in which 'I argued the caſe with him; and mat-'ters were accommodated for the pre-'ſent, by my promiſing to be in Eng-'land ſome time in September, on con-'dition that he would permit me to live 'by myſelf, as before, and immediately 'order the arrears of my pin-money to 'be paid. He aſſented to every thing 'I propoſed, returned in peace to his 'own country, and the deficiencies of 'my allowance were made good; while 'I returned to Bruſſels, where I ſtayed 'until my departure for England, which 'I regulated in ſuch a manner as was 'conſiſtent with my engagement.

'I took lodgings in Pall Mall, and 'ſending for my lord, convinced him 'of my punctuality, and put him in 'mind of his promiſe; when, to my 'utter aſtoniſhment and confuſion, he 'owned, that his promiſe was no more 'than a decoy to bring me over, and 'that I muſt lay my account with living 'in his houſe like a dutiful and obe-'dient wife. I heard him with the in-'dignation ſuch treatment deſerved, 'upbraiding him with his perfidious 'dealing, which I told him would have 'determined me againſt cohabitation 'with him, had I not been already re-'ſolved: and being deſtitute of all re-'ſource, repaired to Bath, where I after-'wards met with Mr. D—— and Mr. 'R——, two gentlemen who had been 'my fellow-paſſengers in the yacht 'from Flanders, and treated me with 'great great friendſhip and politeneſs, 'without either talking or thinking of 'love.

'With

'With these gentlemen, who were as 'idle as myself, I went to the jubilee at 'Preston, which was no other than a 'great number of people assembled in a 'small town, extremely ill accommo- 'dated, to partake of diversions that 'were bad imitations of plays, con- 'certs, and masquerades. If the world 'should place to the account of my in- 'discretion my travelling in this man- 'ner, with gentlemen to whom I had 'no particular attachment, let it also 'be considered, as an alleviation, that 'I always lived in terror of my lord, 'and consequently was often obliged to 'shift my quarters; so that my finances 'being extremely slender, I stood the 'more in need of assistance and protec- 'tion. I was, besides, young, incon- 'siderate, and so simple, as to suppose 'the figure of an ugly man would al- 'ways secure me from censure on his 'account: neither did I ever dream of 'any man's addresses, until he made an 'actual declaration of his love.

'Upon my return to Bath, I was 'again harrassed by Lord ——, who 'came thither accompanied by my fa- 'ther, whom I was very glad to see, 'though he importuned me to comply 'with my husband's desire, and for the 'future keep measures with the world. 'This remonstrance about living with 'my lord, which he constantly repeat- 'ed, was the only instance of his un- 'kindness which I ever felt. But all 'his admonitions were not of force suf- 'ficient to shake my resolution in that 'particular; though the debate conti- 'nued so late, that I told his lordship, 'it was high time to retire, for I could 'not accommodate him with a bed. 'He then gave me to understand, that he 'would stay where he was; upon which 'my father took his leave, on pretence 'of looking out for a lodging for him- 'self.

'The little gentleman being now left '*tête à tête* with me, began to discover 'some signs of apprehension in his 'looks; but mustering up all his reso- 'lution, he went to the door, called up 'three of his servants, whom he placed 'as centinels upon the stair, and flounced 'into my elbow-chair, where he resigned 'himself to rest. Intending to go to 'bed, I thought it was but just and 'decent that I should screen myself 'from the intrusion of his footmen, 'and with that view bolted the door. 'Lord —— hearing himself locked in, 'started up in the utmost terror and 'consternation, kicked the door with 'his heel, and screamed aloud, as if he 'had been in the hands of an assassin. 'My father, who had not yet quitted 'the house, hearing these outcries, ran 'up stairs again, and coming through 'my bed-chamber into the dining- 'room, where we were, found me al- 'most suffocated with laughter, and 'his heroick son-in-law staring like one 'who had lost his wits, with his hair 'standing on end.

'When my father asked the mean- 'ing of his exclamations, he told him 'with all the symptoms of dismay, that 'I had locked him in, and he did not un- 'derstand such usage: but I explained 'the whole mystery, by saying, I had 'bolted the door, because I did not like 'the company of his servants, and could 'not imagine the cause of his panick, 'unless he thought I designed to ravish 'him; an insult, than which nothing 'was farther from my intention. My 'father himself could scarce refrain from 'laughing at his ridiculous fear; but 'seeing him in great confusion, took pity 'on his condition, and carried him off 'to his own lodgings, after I had given 'my word, that I would not attempt 'to escape, but give him audience next 'morning. I accordingly kept my 'promise, and found means to persuade 'them to leave me at my own discre- 'tion. Next day I was rallied upon the 'stratagem I had contrived to frighten 'Lord ——; and a thousand idle sto- 'ries were told about this adventure, 'which happened literally as I have re- 'lated it.

'From Bath I betook myself to a 'small house near Lincoln, which I had 'hired of the D— of A——, because 'a country life suited best with my in- 'come, which was no more than four 'hundred pounds a year, and that not 'well paid. I continued some months 'in this retirement, and saw no com- 'pany, except Lord R—— M——, 'who lived in the neighbourhood, and 'visited me twice; till finding myself 'indisposed, I was obliged to remove to 'London, and took lodgings in Mad- 'dox Street, where my garrison was 'taken by storm, by my lord and his 'steward, reinforced by Mr. L—— 'V—— (who, as my lord told me, 'had a subsidy of five and twenty 'pounds,

'pounds, before he would take the 'field) and a couple of hardy footmen. 'This formidable band rushed into my 'apartment, laid violent hands upon 'me, dragged me down stairs without 'gloves or a cloak, and thrusting me 'into a coach that stood at the door, 'conveyed me to my lord's lodgings in 'Glouceſter Street.

'Upon this occaſion, his lordſhip 'courageouſly drew his ſword upon my 'woman, who attempted to defend me 'from his inſults, and in all probabi-'lity would have intimidated him from 'proceeding, for he looked pale and 'aghaſt, his knees knocked together, 'and he breathed thick and hard, with 'his noſtrils dilated, as if he had ſeen 'a ghoſt. But he was encouraged by 'his mercenary aſſociate; who, for the 'five and twenty pounds, ſtood by him 'in the day of trouble, and ſpirited him 'on to this gallant enterprize.

'In conſequence of this exploit, I 'was cooped up in a paltry apartment 'in Glouceſter Street, where I was cloſe 'beſet by his lordſhip, and his worthy 'ſteward Mr. H——, with a ſet of ſer-'vants that were the creatures of this 'fellow, of whom Lord —— himſelf 'ſtood in awe; ſo that I could not 'help thinking myſelf in Newgate, 'among thieves and ruffians. To ſuch 'a degree did my terror avail, that I 'actually believed I was in danger of 'being poiſoned, and would not receive 'any ſuſtenance, except from the hands 'of one harmleſs looking fellow, a 'foreigner, who was my lord's valet de 'chambre. I will not pretend to ſay 'my fears were juſt; but ſuch was my 'opinion of H——n, that I never 'doubted he would put me out of the 'way, if he thought my life interfered 'with his intereſt.

'On the ſecond day of my impriſon-'ment, I was viſited by the Duke of 'L——, a friend of my lord; who 'found me ſitting upon a trunk, in a 'poor little dinning-room filled with 'lumber, and lighted with two bits of 'tallow candle, which had been left 'over-night. He perceived in my coun-'tenance a mixture of rage, indigna-'tion, terror, and deſpair: he compaſ-'ſionated my ſufferings, though he could 'not alleviate my diſtreſs, any other 'way than by interceding with my ty-'rant to mitigate my oppreſſion. Never-'theleſs, I remained eleven days in this 'comfortable ſituation: I was watched 'like a criminal all day, and one of the 'ſervants walked from one room to 'another all night, in the nature of a 'patrole; while my lord, who lay in 'the chamber above me, got out of bed, 'and tripped to the window, at the 'ſound of every coach that chanced to 'paſs through the ſtreet. H——n, who 'was conſummate in the arts of a ſyco-'phant, began to court my favour, by 'condoling my affliction, and aſſuring 'me, that the only method by which I 'could regain my liberty, was a chear-'ful compliance with the humour of my 'lord. I was fully convinced of the truth 'of this obſervation; and though my 'temper is altogether averſe to diſſimu-'lation, attempted to affect an air of ſe-'renity and reſignation. But this diſ-'guiſe, I found, would not anſwer my 'purpoſe; and therefore I had recourſe 'to the aſſiſtance of my maid, who was 'permitted to attend me in my con-'finement. With her I frequently con-'ſulted about the means of accompliſh-'ing my eſcape. In conſequence of 'our deliberations, ſhe directed a coach 'and ſix to be ready at a certain part of 'the town, and to wait for me three 'days in the ſame place, in caſe I could 'not come before the expiration of that 'term.

'This previous meaſure being taken 'according to my inſtructions, the next 'neceſſary ſtep was to elude the vigi-'lance of my guard: and in this man-'ner did I effectuate my purpoſe. Be-'ing, by this time, indulged in the li-'berty of going out in the coach, for 'the benefit of the air, attended by two 'footmen, who had orders to watch all 'my motions, I made uſe of this privi-'lege one forenoon, when Lord —— 'expected ſome company to dinner, and 'bade the coachman drive to the lodg-'ings of a man who wrote with his 'mouth, intending to give my ſpies the 'ſlip, on pretence of ſeeing this curio-'ſity: but they were too alert in their 'duty to be thus outwitted, and fol-'lowed me up ſtairs into the very apart-'ment.

'Diſappointed in this hope, I re-'volved another ſcheme, which was at-'tended with ſucceſs: I bought ſome 'olives at an oil-ſhop; and telling the 'ſervants I would proceed to St. James's 'gate, and take a turn in the park, 'broke one of the bottles by the way,

'complained

'complained of the misfortune when I 'was ſet down, and deſired that my 'coach might be cleaned before my re-'turn. While my attendants were em-'ployed in this office, I tripped acroſs 'the parade to the Horſe Guards, and 'chanced to meet with an acquaintance 'in the Park, who ſaid, he ſaw by my 'countenance that I was upon ſome ex-'pedition. I owned his ſuſpicion was 'juſt; but, as I had not time to relate 'particulars, I quickened my pace, and 'took poſſeſſion of a hackney-coach, 'in which I proceeded to the vehicle 'which I had appointed to be in wait-'ing.

'While I thus compaſſed my eſcape, 'there was nothing but perplexity and 'confuſion at home; dinner was de-'layed till ſix o'clock; my lord ran 'half the town over in queſt of his 'equipage, which at laſt returned with 'an account of my elopement. My 'maid was brought to the queſtion, and 'grievouſly threatened; but (like all 'the women I ever had) remained un-'ſhaken in her fidelity. In the mean 'time, I travelled night and day to-'wards my retreat in Lincolnſhire, of 'which his lordſhip had not, as yet, 'got the leaſt intelligence; and as my 'coachman was but an unexperienced 'driver, I was obliged to make uſe of 'my own ſkill in that exerciſe, and di-'rect his endeavours the whole way, 'without venturing to go to bed, or 'take the leaſt repoſe, until I reached 'my own habitation. There I lived in 'peace and tranquillity for the ſpace of 'ſix weeks, when I was alarmed by one 'of my lord's myrmidons, who came 'into the neighbourhood, bluſtering and 'ſwearing, that he would carry me off, 'either dead or alive.

'It is not to be ſuppoſed that I was 'perfectly eaſy when I was made ac-'quainted with his purpoſe and decla-'ration, as my whole family conſiſted 'of no more than a couple of women 'and one footman. However, I ſum-'moned up my courage, which had 'been often tried, and never forſook me 'in the day of danger, and ſent him 'word, that if ever he ſhould preſume 'to approach my houſe, I would order 'him to be ſhot without ceremony. The 'fellow did not chuſe to put me to the 'trial, and returned to town without 'his errand. But as the place of my 'abode was now diſcovered, I laid my 'account with having a viſit from his 'employer: I therefore planted ſpies 'upon the road, with a promiſe of re-'ward to him who ſhould bring me the 'firſt intelligence of his lordſhip's ap-'proach.

'Accordingly, I was one morning 'apprized of his coming; and mount-'ing horſe immediately, with my wo-'man and valet, away we rode, in de-'fiance of winter. In two days I tra-'verſed the wilds of Lincolnſhire and 'hundreds of Eſſex; croſſed the river at 'Tilbury; breakfaſted at Chatham; by 'the help of a guide and moon-light 'arrived at Dover the ſame evening; 'embarked for Calais, in which place I 'found myſelf next day at two o'clock 'in the afternoon; and being heartily 'tired of my journey, betook myſelf to 'reſt. My maid, who was not able to 'travel with ſuch expedition, followed 'me at an eaſier pace; and the footman 'was ſo aſtoniſhed at my perſeverance, 'that he could not help aſking upon the 'road, if ever I was weary in my life. 'Certain it is, my ſpirits and reſolution 'have enabled me to undergo fatigues 'that are almoſt incredible. From Ca-'lais I went to Bruſſels, where I again 'ſet up my reſt in private lodgings; 'was again perfectly well received by 'the faſhionable people of that place; 'and, by the intereſt of my friends, 'obtained the Queen of Hungary's pro-'tection againſt the perſecution of my 'huſband, while I ſhould reſide in the 'Auſtrian Netherlands.

'Thus ſecured, I lived uncenſured, 'converſing with the Engliſh company, 'with which this city was crouded, 'but ſpent the moſt agreeable part of 'my time with the Counteſs of Calem-'berg, in whoſe houſe I generally dined 'and ſupped; and I alſo contracted an 'intimacy with the Princeſs of Chemay, 'who was a great favourite with Ma-'dam D'Harrach, the governor's lady.

'I had not been long in this happy 'ſituation, when I was diſturbed by 'the arrival of Lord ——, who demand-'ed me of the governor; but finding 'me ſheltered from his power, he ſet 'out for Vienna; and, in conſequence 'of his repreſentations, ſtrengthened 'with the Duke of N——'s name, my 'protection was withdrawn. But, be-'fore this application, he had gone to 'the camp, and addreſſed himſelf to my 'Lord Stair, who was my particular

'friend and ally by my first marriage, 'desiring he would compel me to re- 'turn to his house. His lordship told 'him, that I was in no shape subject to 'his command; but invited him to 'dinner, with a view of diverting him- 'self and company at the expence of 'his guest. In the evening, he was 'plied with so many bumpers to my 'health, that he became intoxicated, 'and extremely obstreperous; insisted 'upon seeing Lord Stair after he was 'retired to rest, and quarrelled with 'Lord D———, who being a tall, 'large, raw-boned Scotchman, could 'have swallowed him at one mouthful; 'but he thought he might venture to 'challenge him, in hopes of being put 'under arrest by the general: though 'he reckoned without his host; Lord 'Stair knew his disposition, and, in or- 'der to punish his presumption, winked 'at the affair. The challenger, finding 'himself mistaken in his conjecture, 'got up early in the morning, and went 'off post to Vienna: and Lord Stair 'desired a certain man of quality to 'make me a visit, and give me an ac- 'count of his behaviour.

'Being now deprived of my protec- 'tion and pin-money, which my gene- 'rous husband would no longer pay, I 'was reduced to great difficulty and 'distress. The Duchess D'Aremberg, 'Lord G—, and many other persons of 'distinction, interceded in my behalf 'with his majesty, who was then abroad; 'but he refused to interpose between 'man and wife. The Countess of Ca- 'lemberg wrote a letter to my father, in 'which she represented my uncomfort- 'able situation, and undertook to an- 'swer for my conduct, in case he would 'allow me a small annuity, on which 'I could live independent of Lord '——, who, by all accounts, was a 'wretch with whom I could never en- 'joy the least happiness or quiet; other- 'wise she would be the first to advise 'me to an accommodation. She gave 'him to understand, that her character 'was neither doubtful nor obscure; 'and that if my conduct there had not 'been irreproachable, she should not 'have taken me under her protection: 'that as I proposed to board in a con- 'vent, a small sum would answer my 'occasions; but, if that should be de- 'nied, I would actually go to service, 'or take some other desperate step, to 'avoid the man who was my bane and 'aversion.

'To this kind remonstrance my fa- 'ther answered, that his fortune would 'not allow him to assist me; he had 'now a young family; and that I 'ought, at all events, to return to my 'husband. By this time, such was the 'extremity of my circumstances, that I 'was forced to pawn my cloaths, and 'every trifling trinket in my possession, 'and even to descend so far as to solicit 'Mr. S—— for a loan of fifty pounds, 'which he refused.

'Thus was I deserted, in my distress, 'by two persons, to whom, in the sea- 'son of my affluence, my purse had been 'always open. Nothing so effectually 'subdues a spirit unused to supplicate, 'as want! Repulsed in this manner, I 'had recourse to Lord B——, who was 'also (it seems) unable to relieve my 'necessities. This mortification I de- 'served at his hands, though he had 'once put it in my power to be above all 'such paltry applications; and I should 'not have been compelled to the dis- 'agreeable task of troubling my friends, 'had not I voluntarily resigned what he 'formerly gave me. As to the other 'gentleman to whom I addressed myself 'on this occasion, I think he might have 'shewn more regard to my situation, 'not only for the reasons already men- 'tioned, but because he knew me too 'well, to be ignorant of what I must 'have suffered, in condescending to 'make such a request.

'Several officers, who guessed my 'adversity, generously offered to supply 'me with money; but I could not bring 'myself to make use of their friend- 'ship, or even to own my distress, ex- 'cept to one person, of whom I bor- 'rowed a small sum. To crown my 'misfortunes, I was taken very ill, at 'a time when there was no other way 'of avoiding the clutches of my perse- 'cutor, but by a precipitate flight. In 'this emergency, I applied to a worthy 'gentleman at Brussels, a very good 'friend of mine, but no lover. I say, 'no lover, because every man is sup- 'posed to act in that capacity who be- 'friends a young woman in distress. 'This generous Fleming set out with 'me in the night from Brussels, and 'conducted me to the frontiers of 'France. Being very much indisposed 'both in mind and body when I was

'obliged

'obliged to undertake this expedition, 'I ſhould, in all probability, have ſunk 'under the fatigue of travelling, had 'not my ſpirits been kept up by the 'converſation of my companion, who 'was a man of buſineſs and conſe- 'quence, and undertook to manage my 'affairs in ſuch a manner as would en- 'able me to re-eſtabliſh my reſidence in 'the place I had left. He was young 'and active, attended me with the ut- 'moſt care and aſſiduity, and left no- 'thing undone which he thought would 'contribute to my eaſe and ſatisfaction. 'I believe his friendſhip for me was a 'little tinctured with another paſſion; 'but he was married, and lived very 'well with his wife, who was alſo my 'friend; ſo that he knew I would never 'think of him in the light of a lover.

'Upon our arrival at Valenciennes, 'he accommodated me with a little mo- 'ney (for a little was all I would take) 'and returned to his own city, after we 'had ſettled a correſpondence by letters. 'I was detained a day or two in this 'place by my indiſpoſition, which in- 'creaſed; but nevertheleſs proceeded 'to Paris, to make intereſt for a pro- 'tection from the King of France, 'which that monarch graciouſly ac- 'corded me, in three days after my 'firſt application; and his miniſter ſent 'orders to all the governors and inten- 'dants of the province towns, to pro- 'tect me againſt the efforts of Lord '——, in whatever place I ſhould chuſe 'to reſide.

'Having returned my thanks at Ver- 'ſailles for this favour, and tarried a 'few days at Paris, which was a place 'altogether unſuitable to the low ebb 'of my fortune, I repaired to Liſle, 'where I intended to fix my habitation; 'and there my diſorder recurred with 'ſuch violence, that I was obliged to 'ſend for a phyſician, who ſeemed to 'have been a diſciple of Sangrado; for 'he ſcarce left a drop of blood in my 'body, and yet I found myſelf never a 'a whit the better. Indeed, I was ſo 'much exhauſted by theſe evacuations, 'and my conſtitution ſo much impaired 'by fatigue and perturbation of mind, 'that I had no other hope of recovering 'but that of reaching England, and 'putting myſelf under the direction of 'a phyſician on whoſe ability I could 'depend.

'With this doubtful proſpect, there- 'fore, I determined to attempt a return 'to my native air, and actually depart- 'ed from Liſle, in ſuch a melancholy 'and feeble condition that I had almoſt 'fainted when I was put into the coach. 'But before I reſolved upon this jour- 'ney I was reduced to the utmoſt exi- 'gence of fortune; ſo that I could 'ſcarce afford to buy proviſions, had it 'been in my power to eat, and ſhould 'not have been able to defray my tra- 'velling expences, had I not been ge- 'nerouſly befriended by Lord R—— 'M——, who (I am ſure) would have 'done any thing for my eaſe and accom- 'modation, though he has unjuſtly in- 'curred the imputation of being par- 'ſimonious, and I had no reaſon to ex- 'pect any ſuch favour at his hands.

'In this deplorable ſtate of health I 'was conveyed to Calais, being all the 'way (as it were) in the arms of death, 'without having ſwallowed the leaſt 'ſuſtenance on the road. So much was 'my indiſpoſition augmented by the 'fatigue of the journey, that I ſwooned 'when I was brought into the inn, and 'had almoſt expired before I could re- 'ceive the leaſt aſſiſtance or advice: 'however, my ſpirits were a little re- 'vived by ſome bread and wine, which 'I took at the perſuaſion of a French 'ſurgeon, who chancing to paſs by the 'door, was called up to my relief. 'Having ſent my ſervant to Bruſſels, to 'take care of my cloaths, I embarked 'in the packet-boat and by that time 'we arrived at Dover, was almoſt in 'extremity.

'Here I found a return coach, in 'which I was carried to London, and 'was put to bed in the houſe where we 'put up, more dead than alive. The 'people of the inn ſent for an apothe- 'cary, who adminiſtered ſome cordial 'that recalled me to life; and when I 'recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told 'him who I was, and deſired him to 'wait upon Dr. S—— and inform him 'of my ſituation. A young girl, who 'was niece to the landlord's wife, ſeeing 'me unattended, made a tender of her 'ſervice to me, and I accepted the of- 'fer, as well as of a lodging in the apo- 'thecary's houſe, to which I was con- 'veyed as ſoon as my ſtrength would 'admit of my removal. There I was 'viſited by my phyſician, who was 'ſhocked to find me in ſuch a dange- 'rous condition: however, having con-

'sidered my case, he perceived that my 'indisposition proceeded from the calamities I had undergone, and encouraged me with the hope of a speedy 'cure, provided I could be kept easy 'and undisturbed.

'I was accordingly attended with all 'imaginable care; my lord's name being never mentioned in my hearing, 'because I considered him as the fatal 'source of all my misfortunes; and in 'a month I recovered my health, by the 'great skill and tenderness of my doctor, who now finding me strong enough 'to encounter fresh troubles, endeavoured to persuade me, that it would 'be my wisest step to return to my husband, whom, at that time, he had 'often occasion to see. But I rejected 'his proposal, commenced a new law-'suit for separation, and took a small 'house in St. James's Square.

'About this time, my woman returned from Brussels, but without my 'cloaths, which were detained on account of the money I owed in that 'place; and asking her dismission from 'my service, set up shop for herself. 'I had not lived many weeks in my 'new habitation, when my persecutor 'renewed his attempts to make himself 'master of my person; but I had learned from experience to redouble my 'vigilance, and he was frustrated in 'all his endeavours. I was again happy in the conversation of my former 'acquaintance, and visited by a great 'number of gentlemen, mostly persons 'of probity and sense, who cultivated 'my friendship, without any other motive of attachment. Not that I was 'unsolicited on the article of love: that 'was a theme on which I never wanted 'orators; and could I have prevailed 'upon myself to profit by the advances 'that were made, I might have managed my opportunities, so as to have 'set fortune at defiance for the future. 'But I was none of those œconomists, 'who can sacrifice their hearts to interested considerations.

'One evening, while I was conversing 'with three or four of my friends, my 'lawyer came in, and told me he had 'something of consequence to impart: 'upon which all the gentlemen but one 'went away. Then he gave me to 'understand, that my suit would immediately come to trial; and though 'he hoped the best, the issue was uncertain; that if it should be given 'against me, the decision would inspire 'my lord with fresh spirits to disturb 'my peace; and therefore it would be 'convenient for me to retire, until the 'affair should be brought to a determination.

'I was very much disconcerted at 'this intelligence; and the gentleman 'who stayed perceiving my concern, 'asked what I intended to do, or if he 'could serve me in any shape, and desired to know whither I proposed to 'retreat. I affected to laugh, and answered, "To a garret, I believe!" 'To this over-strained raillery he replied, that if I should, his friendship 'and regard would find the way to my 'apartment: and I had no reason to 'doubt the sincerity of his declaration. 'We consulted about the measures I 'should take, and I determined to remove into the country, where I was 'soon favoured with a letter from him, 'wherein he expressed the infinite pleasure he had in being able to assure me, 'that my suit had been successful, and 'that I might appear again with great 'safety.

'Accordingly, I returned to town in 'his coach and six, which he had sent 'for my convenience, and the same 'evening went with him to the masquerade, where we passed the night 'very agreeably, his spirits, as well as 'mine, being elevated to a joyous pitch 'by the happy event of my process. 'This gentleman was a person of great 'honour, worth, and good-nature; he 'loved me extremely, but did not care 'that I should know the extent of his 'passion: on the contrary, he endeavoured to persuade me, he had laid 'it down as a maxim, that no woman should ever have power enough 'over his heart, to give him the least 'pain or disquiet. In short, he had 'made a progress in my affection, and 'to his generosity was I indebted for 'my subsistence two whole years; during which, he was continually professing this philosophick indifference, 'while, at the same time, he was giving 'me daily assurances of his friendship 'and esteem, and treating me with incessant marks of the most passionate 'love: so that I concluded his intention was cold, though his temper was 'warm. Considering myself as an 'incumbrance upon his fortune, I re-

'doubled

'doubled my endeavours to obtain a 'separate maintenance from my lord, 'and removed from St. James's Square 'to lodgings at Kenſington, where I 'had not long enjoyed myſelf in tran-'quillity, before it was interrupted by 'a very unexpected viſit.

'While I was buſy one day dreſſing 'in my dining-room, I found his lord-'ſhip at my elbow, before I was aware 'of his approach, although his coach 'was at the door, and the houſe already 'in the poſſeſſion of his ſervants. He 'accoſted me in the uſual ſtyle, as if 'we had parted the night before; and 'I anſwered him with an appearance 'of the ſame careleſs familiarity, deſir-'ing him to ſit down, while I retreated 'to my chamber, locked the door, 'and fairly went to bed; being, per-'haps, the firſt woman who went thi-'ther for protection from the inſults of 'a man. Here, then, I immured myſelf 'with my faithful Abigail. My lord 'finding me ſecured, knocked at the 'door, and through the key-hole beg-'ged to be admitted; aſſuring me, that 'all he wanted was a conference. I 'deſired to be excuſed, though I believ-'ed his aſſurance; but I had no incli-'nation to converſe with him, becauſe 'I knew from experience the nature of 'his converſation, which was ſo diſa-'greeable and tormenting, that I would 'have exchanged it at any time for a 'good beating, and thought myſelf a 'gainer by the bargain. However, he 'perſiſted in his importunities to ſuch a 'degree, that I aſſented to his propoſal, 'on condition that the Duke of L—— 'ſhould be preſent at the interview; and 'he immediately ſent a meſſage to his 'grace, while I in peace ate my break-'faſt, conveyed in a baſket, which was 'hoiſted up to the window of my bed-'chamber.

'The duke was ſo kind as to come 'at my lord's requeſt, and before I 'would open the door, gave me his 'word, that I ſhould be protected from 'all violence and compulſion. Thus 'aſſured, they were permitted to enter. 'My little gentleman ſitting down by 'my bed-ſide began to repeat the old 'hackneyed arguments he had formerly 'uſed, with the view of inducing me to 'live with him; and I, on my ſide, 'repeated my former objections, or pre-'tended to liſten to his repreſentations, 'while my imagination was employed 'in contriving the means of effecting 'an eſcape, as the duke eaſily perceived 'by my countenance.

'Finding all his remonſtrances ineff-'fectual, he quitted the chamber, and 'left his cauſe to the eloquence of his 'grace, who ſat with me a whole half 'hour, without exerting himſelf much 'in behalf of his client, becauſe he knew 'I was altogether obſtinate, and deter-'mined on that ſcore; but joked upon 'the behaviour of his lordſhip, who, 'though jealous of moſt people, had 'left him alone with me in my bed-'chamber, obſerving, that he muſt either 'have great confidence in his virtue, or 'a very bad opinion of him otherwiſe. 'In ſhort, I found means to defer the 'categorical anſwer till next day, and 'invited the duke and his lordſhip to 'dine with me to-morrow. My wife 'yoke-fellow ſeemed to doubt the ſin-'cerity of this invitation, and was very 'much diſpoſed to keep poſſeſſion of 'my houſe: but, by the perſuaſions of 'his grace, and the advice of H——n, 'who was his chief counſellor and 'back, he was prevailed upon to take 'my word, and for the preſent left me.

'They were no ſooner retired, than 'I roſe with great expedition, packed 'up my cloaths, and took ſhelter in 'Eſſex, for the firſt time. Next day, 'my lord and his noble friend came 'to dinner, according to appointment; 'and being informed of my eſcape by 'my woman, whom I had left in the 'houſe, his lordſhip diſcovered ſome 'ſigns of diſcontent, and inſiſted upon 'ſeeing my papers; upon which my 'maid produced a parcel of bills which 'I owed to different people. Notwith-'ſtanding this diſappointment, he ſat 'down to what was provided for din-'ner, and with great deliberation eat 'up a leg of lamb, the beſt part of a 'fowl, and ſomething elſe, which I do 'not now remember; and then very 'peaceably went away, giving my maid 'an opportunity of following me to the 'place of my retreat.

'My intention was to have ſought 'refuge, as formerly, in another coun-'try; but I was prevented from putting 'my deſign in execution by a fit of ill-'neſs, during which I was viſited by 'my phyſician and ſome of my own 'relations, particularly a diſtant couſin 'of mine, whom my lord had engaged 'in his intereſts, by promiſing to recom-

'penſe

'penſe her amply, if ſhe could perſuade 'me to comply with his deſire. In this 'office ſhe was aſſiſted by the doctor, 'who was my friend, and a man of 'ſenſe, for whom I have the moſt per-'fect eſteem, though he and I have of-'ten differed in point of opinion. In 'a word, I was expoſed to the inceſſant 'importunities of all my acquaintance, 'which added to the deſperate circum-'ſtances of my fortune, compelled me 'to embrace the terms that were offered, 'and I again returned to the domeſtick 'duties of a wife.

'I was conducted to my lord's houſe 'by an old friend of mine, a gentleman 'turned of fifty, of admirable parts 'and underſtanding; he was a pleaſing 'companion, chearful and humane, and 'had acquired a great ſhare of my eſteem 'and reſpect. In a word, his advice 'had great weight in my deliberations, 'becauſe it ſeemed to be the reſult of 'experience and diſintereſted friendſhip. 'Without all doubt, he had an un-'feigned concern for my welfare; but 'being an admirable politician, his 'ſcheme was to make my intereſt co-'incide with his own inclinations; for 'I had unwittingly made an innovation 'upon his heart; and as he thought I 'ſhould hardly favour his paſſion while 'I was at liberty to converſe with the 'reſt of my admirers, he counſelled me 'to ſurrender that freedom, well know-'ing that my lord would be eaſily per-'ſuaded to baniſh all his rivals from the 'houſe; in which caſe he did not doubt 'of his being able to inſinuate himſelf 'into my affections; becauſe he laid it 'down as an eternal truth, that if any 'two perſons of different ſexes were 'obliged to live together in a deſart, 'where they would be excluded from 'all other human intercourſe, they would 'naturally and inevitably contract an 'inclination for each other.

'How juſt this hypotheſis may be, 'I leave to the determination of the 'curious; though, if I may be allowed 'to judge from my own diſpoſition, a 'couple ſo ſituated would be apt to im-'bibe mutual diſguſts, from the nature 'and neceſſity of their union; unleſs 'their aſſociation was at firſt the effect 'of reciprocal affection and eſteem. Be 'this as it will, I honour the gentleman 'for his plan, which was ingeniouſly 'contrived, and artfully conducted; 'but I happened to have too much ad-'dreſs for him in the ſequel, cunning as 'he was, though at firſt I did not per-'ceive his drift; and his lordſhip was 'much leſs likely to comprehend his 'meaning.

'Immediately after this new accom-'modation, I was carried to a country-'houſe belonging to my lord, and was 'ſimple enough to venture myſelf (un-'attended by any ſervant on whoſe in-'tegrity I could depend) in the hands 'of his lordſhip and H——n, whoſe 'villainy I always dreaded; though at 'this time my apprehenſions were con-'ſiderably increaſed, by recollecting, 'that it was not his intereſt to let me 'live in the houſe, leſt his conduct 'ſhould be enquired into; and by re-'membering, that the very houſe to 'which we were going, had been twice 'burned down in a very ſhort ſpace of 'time, not without ſuſpicion of his 'having been the incendiary, on ac-'count of ſome box of writings which 'was loſt in the conflagration. True 'it is, this imputation was never made 'good; and perhaps he was altogether 'innocent of the charge, which never-'theleſs affected my ſpirits in ſuch a 'manner, as rendered me the moſt mi-'ſerable of all mortals. In this terror 'did I remain, till my conſternation 'was weakened by the arrival of Mr. 'Bal——, a good-natured, worthy man, 'whom my lord had invited to his 'houſe, and I thought would not ſee 'me ill uſed. In a few weeks we were 'joined by Dr. S—— and his lady, 'who viſited us according to their pro-'miſe; and it was reſolved that we 'ſhould ſet out for Tunbridge on a 'party of pleaſure, and at our return 'examine H——n's accounts.

'This laſt part of our ſcheme was not 'at all reliſhed by our worthy ſteward, 'who therefore determined to overturn 'our whole plan, and ſucceeded accord-'ingly. My lord all of a ſudden de-'clared himſelf againſt the jaunt we had 'projected, and inſiſted upon my ſtay-'ing at home, without aſſigning any 'reaſon for this peremptory behaviour; 'his countenance being cloudy, and for 'the ſpace of three days he did not open 'his mouth.

'At laſt, he one night entered my 'bed chamber, to which he now had 'free acceſs, with his ſword under his 'arm, and if I remember aright it was 'ready drawn; I could not help taking

'notice

'notice of this alarming circumstance, 'which shocked me the more, as it hap-'pened immediately after a gloomy fit 'of discontent. However, I seemed 'to overlook the incident, and dismis-'sing my maid, went to bed; because 'I was ashamed to acknowledge, even 'to my own heart, any dread of a per-'son whom I despised so much. How-'ever, the strength of my constitution 'was not equal to the fortitude of my 'mind: I was taken ill, and the servants 'were obliged to be called up; while 'my lord himself, terrified at my situa-'tion, ran up stairs to Mrs. S——, 'who was in bed; told her, with evident 'perturbation of spirits, that I was very 'much indisposed, and said, he believed 'I was frighted by his entering my 'chamber with his sword in hand.

'This lady was so startled at his in-'formation, that she ran into my apart-'ment half naked, and as she went 'down stairs, asked what reason could 'induce him to have carried his sword 'with him. Upon which he gave her 'to understand, that his intention was 'to kill the bats. I believe and hope he 'had no other design than that of in-'timidating me, but when the affair 'happened I was of a different opinion. 'Mrs. S—— having put on her cloaths, 'sat up all night by my bed-side, and 'was so good as to assure me, that she 'would not leave me until I should be 'safely delivered from the apprehen-'sions that surrounded me in this house, 'to which she and the doctor had been 'the principal cause of my coming; for 'my lord had haunted and importuned 'them incessantly on this subject, pro-'testing that he loved me with the most 'inviolable affection; and all he desired 'was, that I would sit at his table, ma-'nage his family, and share his fortune. 'By these professions, uttered with an 'air of honesty and good-nature, he had 'imposed himself upon them for the best 'tempered creature upon earth; and 'then used all their influence with me 'to take him into favour. This hath 'been the case with a great many 'people, who had but a superficial 'knowledge of his disposition; but in 'the course of their acquaintance they 'have never failed to discern and ac-'knowledge their mistake.

'The doctor on his return from Tun-'bridge, to which place he had made a 'trip by himself, found me ill a-bed, 'and the whole family in confusion: 'surprized and concerned at this disor-'der, he entered into expostulation with 'my lord, who owned, that the cause 'of his displeasure and disquiet was no 'other than jealousy: H—— had in-'formed him, that I had been seen to 'walk out with Mr. Bal— in a morn-'ing; and that our correspondence had 'been observed with many additional 'circumstances, which were absolutely 'false and groundless. This imputa-'tion was no sooner understood, than 'it was resolved that the accuser should 'be examined in presence of us all. 'He accordingly appeared, exceedingly 'drunk, though it was morning, and re-'peated the articles of the charge as an 'information he had received from a 'man who came from town to hang 'the bells, and was long ago returned 'to London.

'This was an instance of his cunning 'and address, which did not forsake 'him even in his hours of intoxication. 'Had he fixed the calumny on any one 'of the servants, he would have been 'confronted and detected in his false-'hood. Nevertheless, though he could 'not be legally convicted, it plainly 'appeared that he was the author of 'this defamation, which incensed Mr. 'Bal— to such a degree, that he could 'scarce be witheld from punishing him 'on the spot by manual chastisement. 'However, he was prevailed upon to 'abstain from such immediate ven-'geance, as a step unworthy of his 'character; and the affair was brought 'to this issue, that his lordship should 'either part with me or Mr. H——; 'for I was fully determined against 'living under the same roof with such 'an incendiary.

'This alternative being proposed, 'my lord dismissed his steward, and 'we returned to town with the doctor 'and Mrs. S——; for I had imbibed 'such horror and aversion for this coun-'try-seat (though one of the pleasantest 'in England) that I could not bear to 'live in it. We therefore removed to 'a house in Bond Street, where; accord-'ing to the advice of my friends, I ex-'erted my whole power and complai-'sance, in endeavours to keep my 'husband in good-humour; but was 'so unsuccessful in my attempts, that 'if ever he was worse-tempered, more 'capricious, or intolerable, at one time

'than

'than at another, this was the season in 'which his ill humour predominated to 'the most rancorous degree. I was 'scarce ever permitted to stir abroad, 'saw nobody at home but my old male 'friend whom I have mentioned above, 'and the doctor with his lady, from 'whose conversation also I was at last 'excluded.

'Nevertheless, I contrived to steal a 'meeting now and then with my late 'benefactor, for whom I entertained a 'great share of affection, exclusive of 'that gratitude which was due to his 'generosity. It was not his fault that 'I compromised matters with my lord; 'for he was as free of his purse as I 'was unwilling to use it. It would, 'therefore, have been unfriendly, un-'kind, and ungrateful in me, (now that 'I was in affluence) to avoid all inter-'course with a man who had supported 'me in adversity. I think people can-'not be too shy and scrupulous in receiv-'ing favours; but when once they are 'conferred, they ought never to forget 'the obligation: and I was never more 'concerned at any incident of my life, 'than at hearing that this gentleman did 'not receive a letter, in which I acknow-'ledged the last proof of his friendship 'and liberality which I had occasion to 'use, because I have since learned that 'he suspected me of neglect.

'But to return to my situation in 'Bond Street. I bore it as well as I 'could for the space of three months, 'during which I lived in the midst of 'spies, who were employed to watch my 'conduct, and underwent every mor-'tification that malice, power, and fol-'ly, could inflict. Nay, so ridiculous, 'so unreasonable, was my tyrant in his 'spleen, that he declared he would even 'be jealous of Heydigger, if there was 'no other man to incur his suspicion. 'He expected that I should spend my 'whole time with him, *tête à tête*: 'when I sacrificed my enjoyment to 'these comfortable parties, he never 'failed to lay hold on some innocent 'expression of mine, which he made the 'foundation of a quarrel; and when I 'strove to avoid these disagreeable mis-'interpretations, by reading or writing, 'he incessantly teazed and tormented me 'with the imputation of being peevish, 'sullen, and reserved.

'Harrassed by this insufferable beha-'haviour, I communicated my case to 'Dr. S—— and his lady, intimating 'that I neither could nor would ex-'pose myself any longer to such usage. 'The doctor exhorted me to bear my 'fate with patience, and Mrs. S—— 'was silent on the subject; so that I 'still hesitated between staying and go-'ing; when the doctor, being one night 'at supper, happened to have some 'words with my lord, who was so vio-'lently transported with passion, that I 'was actually afraid of going to bed 'with him; and next morning when 'he awaked, there was such an expres-'sion of frantick wildness in his coun-'tenance, that I imagined he was ac-'tually distracted.

'This alarming circumstance con-'firmed me in my resolution of decamp-'ing; and I accordingly moved my 'quarters to a house in Sackville Street, 'where I had lodged when I was a 'widow. From thence I sent a message 'to the Duke of L——, desiring he 'would make my lord acquainted with 'the place of my abode, my reasons 'for removing, and my intention to 'defend myself against all his attempts. 'The first night of this separation I 'went to bed by myself, with as much 'pleasure as a man would feel in going 'to bed to his mistress, whom he had 'long solicited in vain; so rejoiced was 'I to be delivered from my obnoxious 'bedfellow!

'From these lodgings I soon moved 'to Brook Street, where I had not long 'enjoyed the sweets of my escape, when 'I was importuned to return, by a new 'steward whom my lord had engaged 'in the room of H——n. This gen-'tleman, who bore a very fair character, 'made such judicious representations, 'and behaved so candidly in the dis-'charge of his function, that I agreed 'he should act as umpire in the diffe-'rence betwixt us; and once more a 'reconciliation was effected, though his 'lordship began to be dissatisfied even 'before the execution of our agreement, 'in consequence of which he attended 'me to Bath, whither I went for the 'benefit of my health, which was not 'a little impaired.

'This accommodation had a sur-'prizing effect upon my lover; who, 'notwithstanding his repeated decla-'rations, that no woman should ever 'gain such an ascendency over his heart 'as to be able to give him pain, suffer-

'ed

'ed all the agonies of diſappointed 'love, when he now found himſelf de- 'prived of the opportunities of ſeeing 'me, and behaved very differently from 'what he had imagined he ſhould: his 'words and actions were deſperate; one 'of his expreſſions to me was, "It is "like twiſting my heart-ſtrings, and "tearing it out of my body." Indeed 'I ſhould never have acted this part, 'had I foreſeen what he would have 'ſuffered; but I proteſt I believed him 'when he ſaid otherwiſe, ſo much, that 'his declaration on that ſubject was the 'occaſion of my giving him up; and 'it was now too late to retract.

'In our expedition to the Bath, I 'was accompanied by a very agreeable 'young lady, with whom I paſſed my 'time very happily, amid the diver- 'ſions of the place, which ſcreened me, 'in a good meaſure, from the vexatious 'ſociety of my hopeful partner. From 'this place we repaired to his ſeat in 'the country, where we ſpent a few 'months, and thence returned again to 'our houſe in Bond Street. Here, while 'I was confined to my bed by illneſs, 'it was ſuppoſed my indiſpoſition was 'no other than a private lying-in, 'though I was under the roof with my 'lord, and attended by his ſervants.

'While the diſtemper continued, my 'lord (to do him juſtice) behaved with 'all imaginable tenderneſs and care; 'and his concern on theſe occaſions 'I have already mentioned, as a ſtrange 'inconſiſtency in his diſpoſition. If 'his actions were at all accountable, I 'ſhould think he took pains to fret me 'into a fever firſt, in order to manifeſt 'his love and humanity afterwards. 'When I recovered my ſtrength and 'ſpirits, I went abroad, ſaw company, 'and ſhould have been eaſy, had he 'been contented; but as my ſatisfac- 'tion increaſed, his good-humour de- 'cayed, and he baniſhed from his houſe, 'one by one, all the people whoſe con- 'verſation could have made my life 'agreeable.

'I often expoſtulated with him upon 'his malignant behaviour, proteſting 'my deſire of living peaceably with 'him, and begging he would not lay 'me under the neceſſity of changing my 'meaſures. He was deaf to all my re- 'monſtrances, (though I warned him 'more than once of the event;) perſiſted 'in his maxims of perſecution; and, 'after repeated quarrels, I again left 'his houſe, fully determined to ſuffer 'all ſorts of extremity, rather than ſub- 'ject myſelf to the tyranny of his diſ- 'poſition.

'This year was productive of one 'fatal event, which I felt with the ut- 'moſt ſenſibility of ſorrow, and I ſhall 'always remember with regret: I mean, 'the death of Mr. B——, with whom 'I had conſtantly maintained an inti- 'mate correſpondence ſince the firſt 'commencement of our acquaintance. 'He was one of the moſt valuable men, 'and promiſed to be one of the brighteſt 'ornaments that this or any other age 'had produced. I enjoyed his friend- 'ſhip without reſerve; and ſuch was 'the confidence he repoſed in my inte- 'grity, from long experience of my 'truth, that he often ſaid he would 'believe my bare aſſertion, even though 'it ſhould contradict the evidence of 'his own ſenſes. Theſe being the terms 'upon which we lived, it is not to be 'ſuppoſed that I bore the loſs of him 'without repining: indeed my grief was 'unſpeakable; and though the edge of 'it be now ſmoothed by the lenient 'hand of Time, I ſhall never ceaſe to 'cheriſh his memory with the moſt ten- 'der remembrance.

'During the laſt period of my living 'with my lord, I had agreed to the 'expediency of obtaining an act of par- 'liament, which would enable him to 'pay his debts; on which occaſion there 'was a neceſſity for cancelling a deed 'that ſubſiſted between us, relating to 'a ſeparate maintenance; to which, on 'certain proviſions, I was intitled: and 'this was to be ſet aſide, ſo far as it 'interfered with the abovementioned 'ſcheme, while the reſt of it ſhould re- 'main in force. When this affair was 'about to be tranſacted, my lord very 'generouſly inſiſted upon my concur- 'rence, in annulling the whole ſettle- 'ment; and when I refuſed to comply 'with this demand, becauſe this was 'the ſole reſource I had againſt his ill- 'uſage, he would not proceed in the 'execution of his plan, though by drop- 'ping it he hurt nobody but himſelf; 'and he accuſed me of having receded 'from my word, after I had drawn 'him into a conſiderable expence.

'This imputation of breaking my 'word, which I defy the whole world 'to prove I ever did, incenſed me the

'more, as I myſelf had propoſed the 'ſcheme for his ſervice, although I 'knew the accompliſhment of it would 'endanger the validity of my own ſet-'tlement; and my indignation was ſtill 'more augmented by the behaviour of 'Mr. G——, who had always pro-'feſſed a regard for my intereſt, and 'upon my laſt accommodation with my 'lord, undertaken to effect a reconci-'liation between my father and me: 'but when he was queſtioned about the 'particulars of this difference, and de-'ſired to declare whether his lordſhip 'or I was to blame, he declined the 'office of arbitrator, refuſed to be ex-'plicit upon the ſubject, and by cer-'tain ſhrewd hum's and ha's ſignified 'his diſapprobation of my conduct. 'Yet this very man, when I imparted 'to him, in confidence, my intention 'of making another retreat, and frank-'ly aſked his opinion of my deſign, 'ſeemed to acquieſce in the juſtice of 'it in theſe remarkable words. "Ma-"dam, if I thought, or had hopes of "my lord's growing better, I would "down on my knees to deſire you to "ſtay; but as I have not, I ſay no-"thing."

'If he connived at my conduct in 'this particular, why ſhould he diſap-'prove of it, when all I aſked was but 'common juſtice? But he was a de-'pendant; and therefore I excuſe his 'phlegmatick (not to call it unfriend-'ly) behaviour. Indeed he could not 'be too cautious of giving offence to his 'lordſhip, who ſometimes made him 'feel the effects of that wrath which 'other people had kindled; particu-'larly, in conſequence of a ſmall ad-'venture which happened about this 'very period of time.

'A very agreeable, ſprightly, good-'natured young man, a near relation 'of my lord, happened to be at our 'houſe one evening, when there was a 'fire in the neighbourhood; we agreed 'to go and ſup at a tavern, *en famille*; 'and having ſpent the evening with 'great mirth and good-humour, this 'young gentleman, who was naturally 'facetious, in taking his leave, ſaluted 'us all round. My lord, who had be-'fore entertained ſome jealouſy of his 'kinſman, was very much provoked 'by this trifling incident, but very pru-'dently ſuppreſſed his diſpleaſure till 'he returned to his own houſe, where 'his rage co-operating with the Cham-'pagne he had drank, inflamed him to 'ſuch a degree of reſolution, that he 'ſprung upon the innocent G——n, and 'collared him with great fury, though 'he was altogether unconcerned in the 'cauſe of his indignation.

'This extravagant and frantick be-'haviour, added to the other grievances 'under which I laboured, haſtened my 'reſolution of leaving him; and he to 'this day blames his relation, as the 'immediate cauſe of my eſcape, where-'as he ought to place it to the account 'of his own madneſs and indiſcretion. 'When I retired to Park Street, he 'cautioned all my tradeſmen (not even 'excepting my baker) againſt giving 'me credit, aſſuring them that he would 'not pay any debts I ſhould contract; 'and the difficulties to which I was 'reduced, in conſequence of this cha-'ritable declaration, together with the 'reflection of what I had ſuffered, and 'might undergo, from the caprice and 'barbarity of his diſpoſition, affected 'my health ſo much, that I was taken 'again ill, and my life thought in 'danger.

'My conſtitution, however, got the 'better of my diſtemper, and I was or-'dered into the country by my phyſi-'cians, for the benefit of the air; ſo 'that I found myſelf under the neceſ-'ſity of keeping two houſes, when I 'was little able to ſupport one, and ſet 'up my chariot, becauſe I could not 'defray the expence of a hackney-'coach; for I had as much credit giv-'en me as I aſked for, notwithſtanding 'my lord's orders to the contrary.

'Having recruited my ſpirits in the 'country, I returned to town, and was 'viſited by my friends, who never for-'ſook me in adverſity; and in the ſum-'mer removed to a houſe in Eſſex, 'where I lived a few months in great 'tranquillity, unmoleſted by my ty-'rant, who ſometimes gave me a whole 'year's reſpite. Here I uſed to ride 'and drive by turns (as my humour 'dictated) with horſes which were lent 'me; and I had the company of my 'lover, and another gentleman, who 'was a very agreeable companion, and 'of ſingular ſervice to me in the ſe-'quel.

'At laſt, my lord having received 'intelligence of the place of my abode, 'and his tormenting humour recurring,

'he

'he ſet out for my habitation, and in 'the morning appeared in his coach and 'ſix, attended by Mr. G——n, and 'another perſon, whom he had engaged 'for the purpoſe, with ſeveral domeſ-'ticks armed. I immediately ſhut up 'my doors at his approach, and refuſed 'him admittance, which he endeavour-'ed to obtain by a ſucceſſion of prayers 'and threats; but I was deaf to both, 'and reſolved to hold out to the laſt. 'Seeing me determined, he began his 'attack, and his ſervants actually forc-'ed their way into the houſe; upon 'which I retreated up ſtairs, and for-'tified myſelf in my apartment, which 'the aſſailants ſtormed with ſuch fury, 'that the door began to give way, and 'I retired into another room.

'Whilſt I remained in this poſt, Mr. 'G——n demanded a parley, in which 'he begged I would favour my lord 'with an interview, otherwiſe he knew 'not what might be the conſequence. 'To this remonſtrance I replied, that I 'was not diſpoſed to comply with his 'requeſt; and that though their deſign 'ſhould be murder, I was not at all 'afraid of death. Upon this declara-'tion they renewed their attacks, which 'they carried on with indifferent ſuc-'ceſs till the afternoon, when my lord '(as if he had been at play) ſent a 'formal meſſage to me, deſiring that 'all hoſtilities ſhould ceaſe, till after 'both parties ſhould have dined. At 'the ſame time, my own ſervants came 'for inſtructions; and I ordered them 'to let him have every thing which he 'ſhould call for, as far as the houſe 'would afford.

'He did not fail to make uſe of this 'permiſſion; but, ſitting down with his 'companions, eat up my dinner with-'out heſitation, after he had paid me 'the compliment, of deſiring to know 'what he ſhould ſend up to my apart-'ment. Far from having any ſtomach 'to partake of his meal, I ſat ſolitary 'upon my bed, in a ſtate of melancho-'ly expectation, having faſtened the 'door of the outward room for my ſe-'curity, while I kept my chamber open 'for the convenience of air, the wea-'ther being exceſſively hot.

'His lordſhip having indulged his 'appetite, reſumed his attempt, and all 'of a ſudden I heard a noiſe in the 'next room; upon which I ſtarted up, 'and perceiving that he had got into 'my anti-chamber, by the help of a 'bench that ſtood under the window, 'I flung-to the door of my room, which 'I locked with great expedition, and 'opening another that communicated 'with the ſtair-caſe, ran out of the 'houſe, through a crowd of more than 'a hundred people, whom this fray had 'gathered together.

'Being univerſally beloved in the 'neighbourhood, and reſpected by my 'lord's ſervants, I paſſed among them 'untouched, and took refuge in a neigh-'bouring cottage; while his lordſhip 'bawled and roared for aſſiſtance, be-'ing afraid to come out as he had gone 'in. Without waiting for his de-'liberations, I changed cloaths with 'the poor woman who had given me 'ſhelter, and in her blue apron and 'ſtraw-hat ſallied out into the fields, 'intending to ſeek protection at the 'houſe of a gentleman not far off, 'though I was utterly ignorant of the 'road that lead to it. However, it 'was my good fortune to meet with a 'farmer, who undertook to conduct me 'to the place; otherwiſe I ſhould have 'miſſed my way, and in all probabi-'lity lain in the fields; for, by this 'time, it was eight o'clock at night.

'Under the direction of this guide, I 'traverſed hedges and ditches, (for I 'would not venture to travel in the 'highway, leſt I ſhould fall into the 'hands of my purſuer) and after I 'had actually tumbled in the mire, and 'walked ſix or ſeven long miles by the 'help of a good ſpirit, which never 'failed me on ſuch occaſions, I arrived 'at the place, and rung the bell at the 'garden-gate for admittance. Seeing 'my figure, which was very uncouth, 'together with my draggled condition, 'they denied me entrance; but when 'they underſtood who I was, imme-'diately opened the door, and I was 'hoſpitably entertained, after having 'been the ſubject of mirth, on account 'of my dreſs and adventure.

'Next day I returned and took poſ-'ſeſſion of my houſe again, where I re-'ſumed my former amuſements, which 'I enjoyed in quiet for the ſpace of a 'whole month, waiting with reſigna-'tion for the iſſue of my law-ſuit; when 'one afternoon I was apprized of his 'lordſhip's approach by one of my 'ſpies, whom I always employed to 'reconnoitre the road; and ſo fortunate

'was I in the choice of these scouts, that 'I never was betrayed by one of them, 'though they were often bribed for that 'purpose.

'I no sooner received this intelli- 'gence, than I ordered my horse to be 'saddled, and mounting, rode out of 'sight immediately, directing my course 'a different way from the London road. 'I had not long proceeded in this track, 'when my career was all of a sudden 'stopped by a five-bar gate, which, af- 'ter some hesitation, I resolved to leap, '(my horse being an old hunter) if I 'should find myself pursued. How- 'ever, with much difficulty I made a 'shift to open it, and arrived in safety 'at the house of my very good friend 'Mr. G——, who being a justice of 'the peace, had promised me his pro- 'tection, if it should be wanted.

'Thus secured for the present, I 'sent out spies to bring information of 'his lordship's proceedings, and under- 'stood that he had taken possession of 'my house, turned my servants adrift, 'and made himself master of all my 'moveables, cloaths, and papers. As 'for the papers, they were of no conse- 'quence, but of cloaths I had a good 'stock; and when I had reason to be- 'lieve that he did not intend to relin- 'quish his conquest, I thought it was 'high time for me to remove to a greater 'distance from his quarters. Accord- 'ingly, two days after my escape, I set 'out at eleven o'clock at night, in a 'chariot and four, which I borrowed 'of my friend, attended by a footman, 'who was a stout fellow and well arm- 'ed, I myself being provided with a 'brace of good pistols, which I was 'fully determined to use against any 'person who should presume to lay vio- 'lent hands upon me, except my lord, 'for whom a less mortal weapon would 'have sufficed, such as a bodkin or a 'tinder-box. Nothing could be farther 'from my intention, than the desire of 'hurting any living creature, much less 'my husband; my design was only to 'defend myself from cruelty and op- 'pression, which I knew, by fatal ex- 'perience, would infallibly be my lot, 'should he get me into his power; and 'I thought I had as good a right to pre- 'serve my happiness, as that which 'every individual has to preserve his 'life, especially against a set of ruffians, 'who were engaged to rob me of it 'for a little dirty lucre.'

'In the midst of our journey, the 'footman came up, and told me I was 'dogged; upon which I looked out, 'and seeing a man riding by the cha- 'riot-side, presented one of my pistols 'out at the window, and preserved that 'posture of defence until he thought 'proper to retreat, and rid me of the 'fears that attended his company. I 'arrived in town, and changing my 'equipage, hired an open chaise, in 'which (though I was almost starved 'with cold) I travelled to Reading, 'which I reached by ten next morning; 'and from thence proceeded farther in 'the country, with a view of taking re- 'fuge with Mrs. C——, who was my 'particular friend. Here I should have 'found shelter, though my lord had 'been before-hand with me, and en- 'deavoured to prepossess her against my 'conduct, had not the house been crowd- 'ed with company, among whom I 'could not possibly have been concealed, 'especially from her brother, who was 'an intimate friend of my persecutor.

'Things being thus situated, I en- 'joyed but a very short interview with 'her, in which her sorrow and perplex- 'ity on my account appeared with great 'expression in her countenance; and 'though it was not in her power to af- 'ford me the relief I expected, she in 'the most gentleel manner sent after 'me a small sum of money, thinking 'that, considering the hurry in which 'I left my house, I might have occasion 'for it on the road. I was by this time 'benumbed with cold, fatigued with 'travelling, and almost fretted to death 'by my disappointment. However, 'this was no time to indulge despon- 'dence; since nobody could or would 'assist me, I stood the more in need of 'my own resolution and presence of 'mind. After some deliberation, I 'steered my course back to London; 'and being unwilling to return by the 'same road in which I came, as well as 'impatient to be at the end of my jour- 'ney, I chose the Bagshot way, and 'ventured to cross the heath by moon- 'light.

'Here I was attacked by a footpad 'armed with a broad-sword, who came 'up and demanded my money. My 'stock amounted to twelve guineas; 'and

Plate VI.

Publishd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Sept. 9 1781.

'and I foreſaw, that ſhould I be ſtripped 'of the whole ſum, I could not travel 'without diſcovering who I was, and 'conſequently running the riſk of be-'ing detected by my purſuer. On 'theſe conſiderations I gave the fellow 'three guineas and ſome ſilver; with 'which he was ſo far from being ſatiſ-'fied, that he threatened to ſearch me 'for more: but I ordered the coach-'man to proceed, and by good fortune 'eſcaped that ceremony; though I was 'under ſome apprehenſion of being 'overtaken with a piſtol-bullet in my 'flight, and therefore held down my 'head in the chaiſe, in imitation of ſome 'great men, who are ſaid to have duck-'ed in the ſame manner in the day of 'battle.

'My fears happened to be diſap-'pointed. I lay at an inn upon the 'road, and next day arrived in town, 'in the utmoſt difficulty and diſtreſs; 'for I knew not where to fix my habi-'tation, and was deſtitute of all means 'of ſupport. In this dilemma, I ap-'plied to my lawyer, who recommend-'ed me to the houſe of a tradeſman in 'Weſtminſter, where I lodged and 'boarded upon credit with my faithful 'Abigail, (whom I ſhall diſtinguiſh by 'the name of Mrs. S——r) for the 'ſpace of ten weeks, during which I 'ſaw nobody, and never once ſtirred 'abroad.

'While I was thus harraſſed out of 'all enjoyment of life, and reduced to 'the utmoſt indigence, by the cruelty 'of my perſecutor, who had even ſtrip-'ped me of my wearing-apparel, I made 'a conqueſt of Lord D——, a noble-'man who is now dead, and therefore 'I ſhall ſay little of his character, 'which is perfectly well known: this 'only will I obſerve, that next to my 'own tyrant, he was the perſon of 'whom I had the greateſt abhorrence. 'Nevertheleſs, when theſe two came in 'competition, I preferred the offers of 'this new lover, which were very con-'ſiderable; and as an aſylum was the 'chief thing I wanted, agreed to fol-'low him to his country-ſeat, whither 'I actually ſent my cloaths, which I 'had purchaſed upon credit.

'However, upon mature deliberation, 'I changed my mind, and ſignified my 'reſolution in a letter, deſiring, at the 'ſame time, that my baggage might be 'ſent back. In conſequence of this 'meſſage, I expected a viſit from him, 'in all the rage of indignation and diſ-'appointment, and gave orders, that 'he ſhould not be admitted into my 'houſe: yet, notwithſtanding this pre-'caution, he found means to procure 'entrance; and one of the firſt objects 'that I ſaw next morning in my bed-'chamber, was my lover, armed with 'his horſe-whip, againſt which (from 'the knowledge of the man) I did not 'think myſelf altogether ſecure; though 'I was not much alarmed, becauſe I 'believed myſelf ſuperior to him in point 'of bravery, ſhould the worſt come to 'the worſt; but, contrary to my expec-'tation, and his uſual behaviour to our 'ſex, he accoſted me very politely, and 'began to expoſtulate upon the con-'tents of my letter. I freely told him, 'that I had raſhly aſſented to his pro-'poſal, for my own convenience only; 'that when I reflected on what I had 'done, I thought it ungenerous in me 'to live with him upon theſe terms; 'and that, as I did not like him, and 'could not diſſemble, ſuch a correſ-'pondence could never tend to the ſa-'tisfaction of either. He allowed the 'inference was juſt, though he was very 'much chagrined at my previous pro-'ceeding: he relinquiſhed his claim, 'reſtored my cloaths, and never after-'wards upbraided me with my conduct 'in this affair; though he at one time 'owned, that he ſtill loved me, and 'ever ſhould, becauſe I had uſed him 'ill; a declaration that ſtrongly marks 'the peculiarity of his character. As 'for my own part, I own that my be-'haviour on this occaſion is no other 'way excuſable, than on account of the 'miſerable perplexity of my circum-'ſtances, which were often ſo calami-'tous, that I wonder I have not been 'compelled to take ſuch ſteps as would 'have rendered my conduct much more 'exceptionable than it really is.

'At laſt all my hopes were blaſted 'by the iſſue of my ſuit, which was de-'termined in favour of my lord. Even 'then I refuſed to yield; on the con-'trary, coming out of retirement, I 'took lodgings in Suffolk Street, and 'ſet my tyrant at defiance. But, being 'unwilling to truſt my doors to the care 'of other people, I hired an houſe in 'Conduit Street; and no ſooner ap-'peared in the world again, than I was 'ſurrounded by divers and ſundry ſorts

'of

'of admirers. I believe I received the 'incenſe and addreſſes of all kinds un- 'der the ſun, except that ſort which 'was moſt to my liking, a man capable 'of contracting and inſpiring a mutual 'attachment; but ſuch a one is equally 'rare and ineſtimable: not but that I 'own myſelf greatly obliged to all thoſe 'who cultivated my good graces, though 'they were very little beholden to me; 'for where I did not really love, I could 'never profeſs that paſſion; that ſort of 'diſſimulation is a ſlavery that no ho- 'neſt nature will undergo. Except one 'worthy young man whom I ſometimes 'ſaw, they were a ſtrange medley of 'inſignificant beings; one was inſipid, 'another ridiculouſly affected; a third 'void of all education; a fourth alto- 'gether inconſiſtent; and, in ſhort, I 'found as many trifling characters a- 'mong the men, as ever I obſerved in 'my own ſex. Some of them I endea- 'voured to bring over to my maxims, 'while they attempted to make a pro- 'ſelyte of me; but finding the taſk im- 'practicable on both ſides, we very 'wiſely dropped each other.

'At length, however, I was bleſſed 'with the acquaintance of one noble- 'man, who is, perhaps, the firſt cha- 'racter in England, in point of honour, 'integrity, wit, ſenſe, and benevolence: 'when I have thus diſtinguiſhed him, 'I need ſcarce mention Lord ——. 'This great, this good man, poſſeſſes 'every accompliſhment requiſite to in- 'ſpire admiration, love, and eſteem. 'With infinitely more merit than al- 'moſt ever fell to one man's ſhare, he 'manifeſts ſuch diffidence of his own 'qualifications, as cannot fail to pre- 'poſſeſs every company in his favour. 'He ſeems to obſerve nothing, yet ſees 'every thing; his manner of telling a 'ſtory, and making trifles elegant, is 'peculiar to himſelf; and though he 'has a thouſand oddities, they ſerve 'only to make him more agreeable. 'After what I have ſaid, it may be 'ſuppoſed that I was enamoured of his 'perſon: but this was not the caſe; 'love is altogether capricious and fan- 'ciful; yet I admire, honour, and 'eſteem him to the higheſt degree, and 'when I obſerve, that his character re- 'ſembled that of my dear departed 'friend Mr. B——, or rather, that 'Mr. B——, had he lived, would have 'reſembled Lord ——, I pay the higheſt 'compliment I can conceive both to the 'living and the dead.

'In this nobleman's friendſhip and 'converſation I thought myſelf happy; 'though I was, as uſual, expoſed to the 'indefatigable efforts of my lord, who, 'one day, while I was favoured with 'the company of this generous friend, 'appeared at my door in his coach, at- 'tended by another gentleman, who 'demanded entrance with an air of 'authority. A very honeſt footman, 'who had been long in my ſervice, ran 'up ſtairs in the utmoſt conſternation, 'and gave me an account of what had 'happened below. Upon which, I told 'him he had nothing to anſwer for, 'and ordered him to keep the door faſt 'ſhut againſt all oppoſition: though I 'was ſo much affected with this unex- 'pected aſſault, that Lord —— ſaid, 'he was never more ſurprized and ſhock- 'ed in his life, than at the horror which 'appeared in my countenance, when I 'ſaw the coach ſtop at my door.

'My little hero being refuſed admit- 'tance, went away, threatened to return 'ſpeedily with a reinforcement; and 'during this interval, I provided myſelf 'with a ſoldier, whom I placed centi- 'nel at the door, within ſide, to guard 'me from the danger of ſuch aſſaults 'for the future. My lord, true to his 'promiſe, marched back with his auxi- 'liaries, reinforced with a conſtable, 'and repeated his demand of being ad- 'mitted; and my ſoldier opening the 'ſaſh, in order to anſwer him, accord- 'ing to my directions, he no ſooner per- 'ceived the red coat, than he was ſeized 'with ſuch a pannick, that he inſtant- 'ly fled with great precipitation; and 'when he recounted the adventure, like 'Falſtaff in the play, multiplied my 'guard into a whole file of muſque- 'teers. He alſo made a ſhift to diſ- 'cover the gentleman, who had been 'ſo kind as to lend me one of his com- 'pany, and complained of him to the 'Duke of N——, in hopes of ſeeing 'him broke for his miſdemeanor; but 'in that expectation he was luckily diſ- 'appointed.

'Perceiving that in England I ſhould 'never enjoy peace, but be continually 'ſubject to thoſe alarms and diſquiets 'which had already impaired my health 'and ſpirits, I reſolved to repair again 'to France, my beſt refuge and ſure re- 'treat from the perſecution of my ty- 'rant,

'rant. Yet, before I took this ſtep, I 'endeavoured, by the advice of my 'friends, to conceal myſelf near Windſor; but was in a little time diſcovered by my lord, and hunted out of my 'lurking-place accordingly. I then 'removed to Chelſea, where I ſuffered 'inconceivable uneaſineſs and agitation 'of mind, from the nature of my ſituation, my tranquillity being thus inceſſantly invaded by a man who could 'not be ſatisfied with me, and yet could 'not live without me: ſo that, though 'I was very much indiſpoſed, I ſet out 'for France, by the way of the Hague, 'as the war had ſhut up all other communication, having no other attendant 'but my woman S——r; who, though 'ſhe dreaded the ſea, and was upon the 'brink of matrimony, would not quit 'me in ſuch a calamitous condition, 'until I was joined by my footman and 'other maid, whom I ordered to follow me with the baggage. But, before my departure, I ſent a meſſage to 'Lord ——, demanding my cloaths, 'which he had ſeized in Eſſex; and he 'refuſing to deliver them, I was obliged 'to equip myſelf anew upon credit.

'I was ſupplied with money for my 'journey by my good friend L——; 'and after a ſhort and pleaſant paſſage, 'arrived at the Hague, where I ſtayed two 'months, and parted with S——r, on 'whom I ſettled an annuity of five and 'twenty pounds, payable out of the 'proviſion which I had or might obtain 'from my huſband. The ſame allowance had I prevailed upon Lord B—— 'to grant to another maid, who attended me while I lived in his houſe.

'I did not much reliſh the people in 'Holland, becauſe they ſeemed entirely 'devoted to ſelf-intereſt, without any 'taſte for pleaſure or politeneſs; a ſpecies of diſpoſition that could not be 'very agreeable to me, who always deſpiſed money, had an unbounded benevolence of heart, and loved pleaſure 'bevond every other conſideration.—'When I ſay pleaſure, I would not be 'underſtood to mean ſenſuality, which 'conſtitutes the ſupreme happineſs of 'thoſe only who are void of ſentiment 'and imagination. Nevertheleſs, I received ſome civilities in this place; 'and among the reſt, the reputation of 'having for my lover the King of 'P——'s miniſter, who was young and 'airy, and viſited me often; circumſtances that were ſufficient to lay me 'under the imputation of an amour, 'which I frequently incurred without 'having given the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion.

'Having taken leave of my Dutch 'friends, I departed from the Hague, in 'company with an Engliſh woman, 'whom I had choſe for that purpoſe, 'and arrived at Antwerp, with much 'difficulty and danger, the highway being infeſted with robbers. After having repoſed myſelf a few days in this 'city, I hired a coach for myſelf, and 'ſet out, with my companion, for Bruſſels; but before we reached Mechlin, 'our vehicle was attacked by two huſſars, who, with their ſabres drawn, 'obliged the coachman to drive into a 'wood near the road. I at firſt imagined they wanted to examine our paſſports, but was ſoon too well convinced 'of their deſign; and though very much 'ſhocked at the diſcovery, found reſolution enough to ſuppreſs my concern, 'ſo that it ſhould not aggravate the 'terrors of the young woman, who had 'almoſt died with apprehenſion. I even 'encouraged her to hope for the beſt; 'and addreſſing myſelf to the robbers 'in French, begged in the moſt ſupplicant manner, that they would ſpare 'our lives; upon which one of them, 'who was a little fellow, aſſured me in 'the ſame language, that we had nothing to fear for our perſons.

'When we were conveyed in a ſtate 'of dreadful ſuſpence above three quarters of a mile into the wood, the ruffians came into the coach, and taking 'my keys, which I kept ready in my 'hand for them, opened three large 'trunks that contained my baggage, 'and emptying them of every thing 'but my hoops and a few books, packed up their booty in a cloth; then 'robbed me of my money and jewels, 'even to my ſhoe-buckles and ſleeve-buttons, took my footman's laced hat, 'and gave it, by way of gratification, 'to a peaſant, who came from behind 'the buſhes, and aſſiſted them in packing.

'This affair being diſpatched, they 'ordered us to return to the road by a 'different way from that in which we 'were carried into the wood; and 'mounting their horſes, rode off with 'the plunder, though not before the 'little fellow, who was the leaſt ferocious

'cious of the two, had come and ſhaken 'me by the hand, wiſhing us a good 'journey; a compliment which I heartily returned, being extremely well 'pleaſed with the retreat of two ſuch 'companions, who had detained us a 'whole half hour; during which, notwithſtanding the aſſurance I had received, I was in continual apprehenſion of ſeeing their operation concluded 'with the murder of us all; for I ſuppoſe 'they were of that gang, who had ſome 'time before murdered a French officer, 'and uſed a lady extremely ill, after 'having rifled her of all ſhe had.

'Having thus undergone pillage, and 'being reduced to the extremity of indigence in a foreign land, it is not to 'be ſuppoſed that my reflections were 'very comfortable; and yet, though I 'ſuſtained the whole damage, I was the 'only perſon in the company who bore 'the accident with any reſolution and 'preſence of mind. My coachman and 'valet ſeemed quite petrified with fear; 'and it was not till I had repeated my 'directions, that the former drove farther into the wood, and took the firſt 'turning to the right, in order to regain the road, according to the command of the robbers, which I did not 'chuſe to diſobey.

'This misfortune I ſuffered by the 'miſinformation I received at Antwerp, 'where I would have provided myſelf 'with an eſcort, had not I been aſſured, 'that there was not the leaſt occaſion 'to put myſelf to ſuch extraordinary 'expence: and indeed the robbers took 'the only half hour in which they could 'have had an oportunity of plundering 'us; for we no ſooner returned into the 'highway, than we met with the French 'artillery coming from Bruſſels, which 'was a ſecurity to us during the reſt of 'our journey. We were afterwards informed, at a ſmall village, that there 'was actually a large gang of deſerters, 'who harboured in that wood, from 'which they made excurſions in the 'neighbourhood, and kept the peaſants 'in continual alarms.

'Having proceeded a little way, we 'were ſtopped by the artillery croſſing 'a bridge; and as the train was very 'long, muſt have been detained till 'night, had not a ſoldier informed me, 'that if I would take the trouble to 'come out of my coach, and apply to 'the commandant, he would order them 'to halt, and allow me to paſs. I took 'the man's advice, and was by him 'conducted, with much difficulty, 'through the crowd to ſome officers, 'who ſeemed ſcarce to deſerve the name; 'for when I ſignified my requeſt, they 'neither roſe up, nor deſired me to ſit 'down; but lolling in their chairs, with 'one leg ſtretched out, aſked, with an 'air of diſreſpectful raillery, where I 'was going; and when I anſwered, "To Paris;" deſired to know what I 'would do there.

'I, who am naturally civil where I 'am civilly uſed, and ſaucy enough 'where I think myſelf treated with 'diſregard, was very much piqued at 'their inſolent and unmannerly behaviour, and began to reply to their impertinent queſtions very abruptly; ſo 'that a very tart dialogue would have 'enſued, had not the converſation been 'interrupted by a tall, thin, genteel, 'young French nobleman, an officer in 'the army, who chancing to come in, 'aſked with great politeneſs, what I 'would pleaſe to have. I then repeated 'my deſire, and produced my paſſports, 'by which he learned who I was. He 'immediately gave orders that my coach 'ſhould paſs; and afterwards viſited 'me at Paris, having obtained my permiſſion, and taken my addreſs at parting; while the others, underſtanding 'my name and quality, aſked pardon 'for their impolite carriage, which they 'told me was owing to the repreſentation of the ſoldier, who gave them to 'underſtand, that I was a ſtrolling actreſs.

'I could not help laughing heartily 'at this miſtake, which might have proceeded from the circumſtances of my 'appearance, my footman having been 'obliged to change hats with the peaſant, and myſelf being without buckles 'in my ſhoes, and buttons in my riding 'ſhirt, while my countenance ſtill retained marks of the fear and confuſion 'I had undergone. After all, perhaps 'the fellow was a droll, and wanted 'to entertain himſelf at my expence.

'The day was ſo far conſumed in 'theſe adventures, that I was obliged 'to take up my lodgings at Mechlin, 'where I addreſſed myſelf to the intendant, giving him an account of the 'diſaſter I had met with, and deſiring I 'might have credit at the inn, as our 'whole company could not raiſe the

'value

'value of a six-pence. This gentleman, though a provincial, was polite 'in his way, and not only granted my 'request, but invited me to lodge at his 'own house. I accordingly gave him 'my company at supper, but did not 'chuse to sleep in his quarters, because 'he appeared to be what the French call '*un vieux debauché*.

'Next day he sent a trumpet to the 'general, with a detail of my misfortune, in hopes of retrieving what I 'had lost; but, notwithstanding all 'possible search, I was fain to put up 'with my damage, which, in linen, 'laces, cloaths, and baubles, amounted 'to upwards of seven hundred pounds: 'a loss which never deprived me of one 'moment's rest; for though I lodged at 'a miserable inn, and lay in a paltry 'bed, I slept as sound as if nothing 'extraordinary had happened, after I 'had written to London and Paris, directing that the payment of my bills 'of credit might be stopped. Indeed, 'I know but of two misfortunes in life 'capable of depressing my spirits; namely, the loss of health and friends; all 'others may be prevented or endured. 'The articles of that calamity which I 'chiefly regretted, were a picture of 'Lord W——m, and some inimitable 'letters from Mr. B——.

'From Mechlin I proceeded to Brussels, where being known, I got credit 'for some necessaries, and borrowed 'twenty guineas, to defray the expence 'of my journey to Paris. Having consulted with my friends about the safest 'method of travelling through Flanders, 'I was persuaded to take places in the 'publick voiture; and accordingly departed, not without fears of finding one 'part of the country as much infested 'with robbers as another. Nor were these 'apprehensions assuaged by the conversation of my fellow-travellers, who 'being of the lower sort of people, that 'delight in exaggerating dangers, entertained me all the way with an account of all the robberies and murders 'which had been committed on that 'road, with many additional circumstances of their own invention.

'After having been two days exposed to this comfortable conversation, 'among very disagreeable company, 'which is certainly one of the most 'disagreeable situations in life, I arrived at Lisle; where, thinking the 'dangerous part of the journey was 'now passed, I hired a post-chaise, and 'in two days more reached Paris, without any farther molestation.

'Upon my arrival in this capital, I 'was immediately visited by my old acquaintances, who hearing my disaster, 'offered me their cloaths, and insisted 'upon my wearing them, until I could 'be otherwise provided. They likewise 'engaged me in parties, with a view of 'amusing my imagination, that I might 'not grow melancholy in reflecting 'upon my loss; and desired me to repeat the particulars of my story forty 'times over, expressing great surprize 'at our not being murdered, or ravished at least. As for this last species of 'outrage, the fear of it never once entered my head, otherwise I should have 'been more shocked and alarmed than 'I really was: but it seems this was 'the chief circumstance of my companion's apprehension; and I cannot 'help observing, that an homely woman 'is always more apt to entertain those 'fears, than one whose person exposes 'her to much more imminent danger. 'However, I now learned, that the risk 'I ran was much greater than I imagined it to be, those ruffians being familiarized to rape as well as murder.

'Soon after my appearance in Paris, 'I was favoured with the addresses of 'several French lovers; but I never had 'any taste for foreigners, or indeed for 'any amusements of that kind, except 'such as were likely to be lasting, and 'settled upon a more agreeable footing 'than that of common gallantry. When 'I deviated from this principle, my 'conduct was the effect of compulsion, and therefore I was never easy 'under it, having been reduced to the 'alternative of two evils, the least of 'which I was obliged to chuse, as a 'man leaps into the sea, in order to 'escape from a ship that is on fire.

'Though I rejected their love, I did 'not refuse their company and conversation; and though my health was 'considerably impaired by the shock I 'received in my last adventure, which 'was considerably greater than I at first 'imagined, and affected my companion 'so much, that she did not recover her 'spirits till she returned to England: I 'say, though I was for some time a valetudinarian, I enjoyed myself in great 'tranquillity for the space of ten months,

'during which I was visited by English, Scotch, and French, of all parties and persuasions; for pleasure is of no faction, and that was the chief object of my pursuit; neither was I so ambitious of being a politician, as to employ my time and thoughts upon subjects which I did not understand. I had admirers of all sides, and should have spent my time very much to my liking, had not I felt my funds sensibly diminish, without any prospect of their being repaired; for I had been obliged to lay out a great part of the sum allotted for my subsistence, in supplying my companion, my servant, and myself, with necessaries, in lieu of those which we had lost.

'Having before my eyes the uncomfortable prospect of wanting money in a strang place, I found myself under the necessity of returning to England, where I had more resources than I could possibly have among foreigners; and with that view wrote to Lord ——'s agents, desiring that I might be enabled to discharge my obligations at Paris, by the payment of my pin-money. Thus a negociation commenced, and his lordship promised to remit money for the clearance of my Paris debts, which amounted to four hundred pounds: but he would not advance one farthing more, though I gave him to understand, that while he protracted the agreement, I must inevitably be adding to my incumbrances, and that I should be as effectually detained by a debt of twenty pounds as if I owed a thousand. Notwithstanding all my representations, he would not part with one shilling over the neat sum which I had at first stipulated; so that all my measures were rendered abortive, and I found it altogether impracticable to execute those resolutions I had formed in his favour.

'Thus did he, for a mere trifle, embarrass the woman for whom he professes the most unlimited love, and whose principles he pretends to hold in the utmost veneration. Indeed, his confidence in my integrity is not without foundation; for many wives, with one half of my provocation, would have ruined him to all intents and purposes; whereas, notwithstanding all the extraordinary expences to which I have been exposed by his continual persecution, he never paid a shilling on my account, except one thousand pounds, exclusive of the small allowance which was my due. In a word, so much time elapsed before my lord could prevail upon himself to advance the bare four hundred, that I was involved in fresh difficulties, from which I found it impossible to extricate myself: and though I had occasion to write a letter to my benefactor Lord ——, in which I expressed my acknowledgment for past favours, I could not venture to solicit more; even when I was encouraged by a very obliging answer, wherein he declared that the good qualities of my mind and heart would bind him to me in friendship for ever.

'While I ruminated on my uncomfortable situation, which would neither permit me to return to England, nor to stay much longer where I was, a young Englishman of immense fortune took Paris in his way from Italy; accompanied by a most agreeable Scotchman, of very good sense and great vivacity. It was my good or ill fortune to become acquainted with these gentlemen, who having seen me at the opera, expressed a desire of being known to me, and accordingly favoured me with a visit one afternoon, when the brisk North Briton ingrossed the whole conversation; while the other seemed fearful and diffident even to a degree of bashfulness, through which, however, I could discern a delicate sensibility and uncommon understanding. There was in his person, (which was very agreeable) as well as in his behaviour, a certain *naiveté* that was very pleasing; and at this first interview we relished each other's company so well, that a sort of intimacy immediately commenced, and was carried on in a succession of parties of pleasure, in the course of which I found him fraught with all the tenderness and sentiment that render the heart susceptible of the most refined love; a disposition that immediately made me partial to him, while it subjected his own heart to all the violent impressions of a passion, which I little imagined our correspondence would have produced.

'Nevertheless, I was far from being displeased with my conquest, because his person and qualifications, as well

'as

'as his manner of addreſs, were very 'much to my liking, and recommend-'ed him in a particular manner to my 'affection. Indeed, he made a greater 'progreſs in my heart than I myſelf 'ſuſpected; for there was ſomething 'congenial in our ſouls, which from 'our firſt meeting I believe had attract-'ed us (unknown to ourſelves) under 'the notions of friendſhip and regard, 'and now diſcloſed itſelf in the moſt 'paſſionate love.

'I liſtened to his addreſſes, and we 'were truly happy. His attachment 'was the quinteſſence of tenderneſs and 'ſincerity, while his generoſity knew 'no bounds. Not contented with hav-'ing paid twelve hundred pounds on 'my account, in the ſpace of one fort-'night, he would have loaded me with 'preſent after preſent, had not I abſo-'lutely refuſed to accept ſuch expenſive 'marks of his munificence. I was even 'mortified at thoſe inſtances of his li-'berality, which my ſituation compel-'led me to receive; leſt, being but little 'acquainted with my diſpoſition, he 'ſhould ſuſpect me of being intereſted 'in my love, and judge my conduct by 'the malicious reports of common fame, 'which he afterwards owned had at firſt 'obtained ſuch credit with him, that he 'believed our mutual attachment would 'not be of long duration. But in this 'particular he was ſoon undeceived: 'his heart, though naturally adapted 'for the melting paſſion, had hitherto 'eſcaped untouched by all the ladies of 'Italy and France; and therefore the 'firſt impreſſions were the more deeply 'fixed. As he was unpractiſed in the 'ways of common gallantry and deceit, 'the ſtriking ſimplicity in his character 'was the more likely to engage the 'heart of one who knew the perfidy of 'the world, and deſpiſed all the farce 'and bombaſt of faſhionable profeſſion, 'which I had always conſidered as the 'phraſe of vanity and oſtentation, ra-'ther than the genuine language of 'love. Beſides, gratitude had a con-'ſiderable ſhare in augmenting my af-'fection, which manifeſted itſelf in ſuch 'a warm, cordial, artleſs manner, as 'increaſed his eſteem, and rivetted his 'attachment; for he could eaſily per-'ceive from the whole tenour of my 'conduct, that my breaſt was an utter 'ſtranger to craft and diſſimulation: 'yet I was at firſt fearful of contract-'ing any engagement with him, be-'cauſe being younger than me, he might 'be more apt to change, and the world 'might be malicious enough to ſuppoſe 'I had practiſed upon his inexperience; 'but, conſcious of my own integrity, 'I ſet ſlander at defiance, truſting to 'my own behaviour, and his natural 'probity, for the continuance of his 'love. Though we did not live toge-'ther in the ſame houſe, the greateſt part 'of our time was ſpent in each other's 'company; we dined and ſupped at 'the ſame table, frequented publick 'places, went upon parties to the coun-'try, and never parted, but for a few 'hours in the night, which we paſſed 'in the utmoſt impatience to meet 'again.

'In this agreeable manner did the 'days roll on, when my felicity was 'interrupted by a fit of jealouſy with 'which I happened to be ſeized. I had 'contracted an acquaintance with a 'young married lady; who, though her 'perſonal attractions were but ſlender, 'was, upon the whole, an agreeable, 'chearful, good-natured companion, 'with a little daſh of the coquette in 'her compoſition. This woman be-'ing in very indigent circumſtances, 'occaſioned by ſome loſſes her huſband 'had ſuſtained, no ſooner had an op-'portunity of ſeeing and converſing 'with my lover, than ſhe formed a de-'ſign of making a conqueſt of him. I 'ſhould have forgiven her for this 'ſcheme, whatever pangs it might have 'coſt me, had I believed it the effect 'of real paſſion; but I knew her too 'well to ſuppoſe her heart was ſuſcep-'tible of love, and accordingly reſent-'ed it. In the execution of her plan, ſhe 'neglected nothing which ſhe thought 'capable of engaging his attention. 'She took all opportunities of ſitting 'near him at table, ogled him in the 'moſt palpable manner, directed her 'whole diſcourſe to him, trod upon his 'toes; nay, I believe, ſqueezed his 'hand. My blood boiled at her, 'though my pride, for ſome time, en-'abled me to conceal my uneaſineſs; 'till at length her behaviour became ſo 'arrogant and groſs, that I could no 'longer ſuppreſs my indignation, and 'one day told my lover, that I would 'immediately renounce his correſpon-'dence.

'He was greatly alarmed at this un-

expected declaration; and when he understood the cause of it, assured me, that for the future he would never exchange one word with her. Satisfied with this mark of his sincerity and regard, I released him from this promise, which he could not possibly keep, while she and I lived upon any terms; and we continued to visit each other as usual, though she still persisted in her endeavours to rival me in his affection, and contracted an intimacy with his companion, who seemed to entertain a passion for her, that she might have the more frequent opportunities of being among us; for she had no objection against favouring the addresses of both. One evening, I remember, we set out in my coach for the opera; and in the way, this inamorata was so busy with her feet, that I was incensed at her behaviour, and when we arrived at the place, refused to alight, but setting them down, declared my intention of returning home immediately. She was so much pleased with this intimation, that she could not conceal the joy she felt at the thoughts of conversing with him, uninterrupted by my presence; an opportunity with which I had never favoured her before. This open exultation increased my anger and anxiety. I went home; but, being still tortured with the reflection of having left them together, adjusted myself in the glass, though I was too angry to take notice of my own figure, and without farther delay returned to the opera.

'Having enquired for the box in which they sat, I took possession of one that fronted them, and reconnoitering them, without being perceived, had the satisfaction of seeing him removed to as great a distance from her as the place would permit, and his head turned another way. Composed by this examination, I joined them without farther scruple, when my young gentleman expressed great joy at my appearance, and told me he was determined to have left the entertainment, and come in quest of me, had I not returned at that instant.

'In our way homewards, my rival repeated her usual hints, and with her large hoop almost overshadowed my lover from my view: upon which my jealousy and wrath recurred with such violence, that I pulled the string, as a signal for the coachman to stop, with a view of getting out, and going home afoot; a step which would have afforded a new spectacle to the people of Paris. But I reflected, in a moment, upon the folly of such a resolution, and soon recollected myself, by calling my pride to my assistance. I determined, however, that she should act no more scenes of this kind in my presence, and that same night insisted upon my lover's dropping all intercourse and connection with this tormentor. He very chearfully complied with my desire, and was even glad of an occasion to break off his acquaintance with a person about whom I had plagued him so much.

'Thus was I freed from the persecution of one of those creatures, who, though of little consequence in themselves, are yet the pests of society, and find means to destroy that harmony which reigns between two lovers, by the intrusion of a loose appetite, void of all sensibility and discretion: having no feeling themselves, they cannot sympathize with that of other people, and do mischief out of mere wantonness.

'My lover being obliged to go to England, had settled me in a genteel house in Paris, with a view of returning when his affairs should be adjusted; but when the time of his departure approached, he began to be uneasy at the prospect of separation, and in order to alleviate his anxiety, desired me to accompany him to Calais, where we stayed together three or four days, during which the dread of parting became more and more intense: so that we determined upon my following him into England, by the first opportunity, where I should live altogether incog. that I might be concealed from the enquiries and attempts of my lord. Even after this resolution was fixed, we parted with all the agonies of lovers who despair of ever meeting again; and the wind blowing very high after he had embarked, increased my fears. But by the return of the packet-boat, I was blessed with the report of his being safe arrived in England, and had the satisfaction of perusing his letters by every post.

'My admirer being thus detached from me, my thoughts were entirely employed in concerting some private

'method

'method of conveying myself to him. 'As I would not trust myself in the 'common packet, for fear of being dis-'covered, after having revolved divers 'schemes, I determined to transport my-'self in one of the Dutch fishing-boats, 'though I knew the passage would be 'hazardous; but, in a case of such 'interesting concern, I overlooked all 'danger and inconvenience. Before I 'put this resolution in practice, I was 'so fortunate as to hear of a small Eng-'lish vessel that arrived at Calais with 'a prisoner of war, in which I embark-'ed, with my companion and another 'lady, who lived with me for some 'time afterwards; and when we came 'on board, discovered that the ship was 'no other than a light collier, and that 'her whole company amounted to no 'more than three men. Nevertheless, 'though the sea was so rough, and the 'weather so unpromising, that no other 'boat would venture to put to sea, we 'set sail, and, between two storms, in 'about three hours arrived in safety in 'Dover.

'From hence my first companion 'went to her friends, in the stage-'coach, while the other lady and I hired 'an open post-chaise, (though it snowed 'very hard) and without any accident 'performed our journey to London, 'where I met with my lover, who flew 'to my arms in all the transports of 'impatient joy; and, doubtless, I de-'served his affection, for the hardships, 'perils, and difficulties, I had under-'gone to be with him; for I never 'scrupled to undertake any thing prac-'ticable, in order to demonstrate the 'sincerity of what I professed.

'In consequence of our plan, I as-'sumed a fictitious name, and never 'appeared in publick, being fully satis-'fied and happy in the company and 'coversation of the man I loved; and 'when he went into the country, con-'tented myself with his correspondence, 'which he punctually maintained, in 'a series of letters equally sensible, sin-'cere, and affectionate.

'Upon his return to town for the re-'mainder of the season, he devoted the 'greatest part of his time to our mu-'tual enjoyment; left me with reluc-'tance, when he was called away by in-'dispensible business, and the civility 'which was due to his acquaintance, 'and very seldom went to any place of 'publick entertainment, because I could 'not accompany and share with him in 'the diversion: nay, so much did I in-'gross his attention, that one evening, 'after he had been teazed into an agree-'ment of meeting some friends at a play, 'he went thither precisely at the ap-'pointed hour, and as they did not ar-'rive punctually at the very minute, he 'returned to me immediately, as much 'rejoiced at his escape as if he had met 'with some signal deliverance. Nor 'was his constancy inferior to the ar-'dour of his love: we went once toge-'ther to a ball in the Hay Market, 'where, in the midst of a thousand fine 'women, whose charms were enhanced 'by the peculiarity of the dresses they 'wore, he remained unshaken, unse-'duced, preserving his attachment for 'me, in spite of all temptation.

'In the summer he provided me with 'a house in the neighbourhood of his 'own; but the accommodations being 'bad, and that country affording no 'other place fit for my residence, he 'brought me home to his own seat, and 'by that step raised an universal cla-'mour, though I saw no company, and 'led such a solitary life, that nothing 'but excessive love could have support-'ed my spirits: not but that he gave 'me as much of his time as he could 'possibly spare from the necessary duties 'of paying and receiving visits, toge-'ther with the avocations of hunting, 'and other country amusements, which 'I could not partake. Formerly, in-'deed, I used to hunt and shoot, but I 'had left off both; so that I was now 'reduced to the alternative of reading, 'and walking by myself; but, *Love 'made up for all deficiencies to me, who 'think nothing else worth the living 'for!—Had I been blessed with a part-'ner for life, who could have loved sin-'cerely, and inspired me with a mutual 'flame, I would have asked no more of 'Fate. Interest and ambition have no 'share in my composition; love, which 'is pleasure, or pleasure, which is love, 'makes up the whole. A heart so dis-'posed cannot be devoid of other good 'qualities; it must be subject to the im-'pressions of humanity and benevolence, 'and enemy to nothing but itself.* This 'you will give me leave to affirm, in 'justice to myself; as I have frankly 'owned my failings and misconduct.

'Towards the end of summer my 'heart

'heart was a little alarmed by a report 'that prevailed, of my lover's being 'actually engaged in a treaty of mar- 'riage: however, I gave little credit 'to this rumour, till I was obliged to 'go to town about buſineſs, and there 'I heard the ſame information confi- 'dently affirmed. Though I ſtill con- 'ſidered it as a vague ſurmiſe, I wrote 'to him an account of what I had heard; 'and in his anſwer, which is ſtill in my 'poſſeſſion, he aſſured me with repeat- 'ed vows and proteſtations, that the 'report was altogether falſe. Satisfied 'with this declaration, I returned to 'his houſe; and though the tale was 'inceſſantly thundered in my ears, ſtill 'believed it void of all foundation, till 'my ſuſpicion was awaked by a very 'inconſiderable circumſtance.

'One day, on his return from hunt- 'ing, I perceived he had a very fine 'pair of Dreſden ruffles on his ſhirt, 'which I could not ſuppoſe he would 'wear at ſuch a ruſtick exerciſe; and 'therefore my fears immediately took 'the alarm. When I queſtioned him 'about this particular of his dreſs, his 'colour changed; and though he at- 'tempted to elude my ſuſpicion, by 'imputing it to a miſtake of his ſer- 'vant, I could not reſt ſatisfied with 'this account of the matter, but en- 'quired into the truth with ſuch eager- 'neſs and penetration, that he could not 'deny he had been to make a viſit. By 'degrees, I even extorted from him a 'confeſſion, that he had engaged him- 'ſelf farther than he ought to have pro- 'ceeded, without making me acquaint- 'ed with his deſign, though he endea- 'voured to excuſe his conduct, and 'pacify my diſpleaſure, by ſaying that 'the affair would not be brought to 'bear for a great while, and perhaps 'might never come to a determination: 'but he was in great confuſion, and 'indeed hardly knew what he ſaid.

'I would have quitted his houſe that 'moment, had not he, before-hand, 'obtained a promiſe that I would take 'no raſh reſolution of that kind, and 'put it out of my power to procure any 'method of conveyance by which I 'could make my retreat. I gave no 'vent to reproaches, and only upbraid- 'ed him with his having permitted me 'to return in ignorance to the country, 'after I was once fairly gone; upon 'which he ſwore, that he could not 'bear the thoughts of parting with me. 'This declaration was a myſtery at that 'time, but I have been ſince ſo fully 'ſatisfied of his reaſons for his con- 'duct, that I heartily acquit him of all 'injuſtice to me. And, indeed, it is 'my ſincere opinion, that if ever young 'man deſerved to be happy, he is cer- 'tainly entitled to that privilege; and 'if I may be allowed to judge, has an 'heart ſuſceptible of the moſt refined 'enjoyment.

'The violence of the grief and con- 'ſternation which I ſuffered from this 'ſtroke, having a little ſubſided, I deli- 'berated with myſelf about the meaſures 'I ſhould take, and determined to leave 'his houſe ſome day when he ſhould 'be abroad. I was encouraged in this 'reſolution by the advice of our Scotch 'friend, who came about this time 'from London, on a viſit to his fellow- 'traveller: we thought ſuch an abrupt 'departure would be leſs ſhocking than 'to ſtay and take a formal leave of my 'lover, whoſe heart was of ſuch a de- 'licate frame, that after I told him I 'ſhould one day withdraw myſelf in 'his abſence, he never came home from 'the chace, or any other avocation, 'without trembling with apprehenſion 'that I had eſcaped.

'After he had been ſome time ac- 'cuſtomed to theſe fears by my previ- 'ous intimation, I at length decamped 'in good earneſt, though my heart ached 'upon the occaſion, becauſe I left him 'loving and beloved; for his affection 'was evident, notwithſtanding the ſtep 'he had taken, by the advice and im- 'portunity of all his relations, who 'laid a diſagreeable reſtraint upon his 'inclinations, while they conſulted his 'intereſt in every other particular.

'While I halted in the next great 'town, until I could be ſupplied with 'freſh horſes, I was viſited by a gentle- 'man who had been formerly intimate 'with my lover; but a breach had hap- 'pened in their friendſhip, and he now 'came to complain of the treatment he 'had received. Perceiving that I was 'not in a humour to liſten to his ſtory, 'he ſhifted the converſation to my own, 'and obſerved, that I had been ex- 'tremely ill-uſed. I told him that I 'was of a different opinion: that it was 'not only juſt, but expedient, that a 'young man of Mr. ———'s fortune 'ſhould think of making ſome alliance,

'to

'to ſtrengthen and ſupport the intereſt 'of his family; and that I had nothing 'to accuſe him of but his letting me 'remain ſo long in ignorance of his 'intention. He then gave me to un-'derſtand, that I was ſtill ignorant of 'a great part of the ill-uſage I had re-'ceived; affirming, that while I lived 'in his houſe, he had amuſed himſelf 'with all the common women in that 'town, to ſome of whom this gentle-'man had perſonally introduced him.

'At firſt, I could not believe this 'imputation; but he ſupported his aſ-'ſertions with ſo many convincing cir-'cumſtances, that I could no longer 'doubt the truth of them; and I felt 'ſo much reſentment, that my love va-'niſhed immediately into air. Inſtead 'of proceeding in my journey to Lon-'don, I went back a conſiderable way, 'and ſent a meſſage, deſiring to ſee him 'in a little houſe, about mid-way be-'tween his own habitation and the town 'from whence I came. He obeyed my 'ſummons, and appeared at the place 'appointed, where I reproached him 'with great bitterneſs. He pleaded 'guilty to the charge, ſo far as acknow-'ledging that he had correſponded with 'other women lately, in order to get 'the better of his affection for me, but 'the experiment had failed, and he 'found that he ſhould be for ever mi-'ſerable.

'I did not look upon this candid 'confeſſion as a ſufficient atonement 'for his paſt diſſimulation; and, in the 'ſharpneſs of my revenge, demanded a 'ſettlement, which he peremptorily re-'fuſed; ſo that for the preſent, we held 'each other in the utmoſt contempt. 'Indeed, I afterwards deſpiſed myſelf 'for my condeſcenſion, which was ow-'ing to the advice of my companion, 'ſupported and inflamed by the ſpirit 'of reſentment. Nevertheleſs, he beg-'ged that I would return to his houſe, 'or ſtay all night where I was; but I 'was deaf to his intreaties, and after 'a great deal of ironical civility on my 'ſide, I took my leave, and went away; 'yet, before I ſet out, I looked back, 'and ſaw him on horſeback, with ſuch 'an air of ſimplicity and truth, as call-'ed up a profound ſigh, notwithſtand-'ing all that had paſſed in our conver-'ſation.

'Upon my arrival in London, I took 'lodgings in Leiceſter Fields, and an-'ſwered a letter which I had ſome 'months before received from my lord, 'telling him that I would go home to 'him, without ſtipulating for any terms, 'to try what effect my confidence would 'have upon his generoſity. He readily 'embraced the offer, and took a houſe 'in St. James's Street, where I propoſed 'to comply with his humour in every 'thing that was conſiſtent with my own 'peace and tranquillity.

'Meanwhile, my lover paſſed his 'time very diſagreeably in the coun-'try, with his friend, of whom (it 'ſeems) he had conceived ſome jea-'louſy, which was increaſed by a letter 'I wrote to that gentleman, till he was 'made acquainted with the contents, 'which he read over forty times; and 'then his paſſion breaking out with 'more violence than ever, he not only 'expreſſed his feeling, in an epiſtle 'which I immediately received, but 'when he came to town, ſuffered ſuch 'agonies of deſpair as I had never ſeen 'before, except in Lord B——. It was 'then in my power to have taken am-'ple revenge upon him, as well as up-'on my inſolent rival, who had inſiſted 'upon my leaving his houſe, in a very 'abrupt manner, though he abſolutely 'refuſed to gratify her malice; for he 'was now diſpoſed to do any thing for 'my ſatisfaction: but I knew his 'worth, and had too much regard for 'his reputation to adviſe him to act in-'conſiſtent with his honour.

'About this time, many tender meet-'ings and ſorrowful partings happened 'between us, till the marriage-knot was 'tied, when he ſent me a bank-note for 'a thouſand pounds, by way of ſpeci-'men (as he called it) of his friend-'ſhip, and of what he would do for 'me, ſhould I ever want his aſſiſtance. 'This mark of his generoſity I receiv-'ed in a moſt tender billet, which I 'ſhall never part with, together with 'his picture ſet in diamonds.

'I now employed my thoughts in 'keeping meaſures with my lord; we 'lay in the ſame apartment, and for the 'firſt four or five months I neither 'dined or ſupped abroad above twice, 'and then he knew where I was, and 'approved of my company. But all 'this complacency and circumſpection 'had no effect upon his temper, which 'remained as capricious and diſſatis-'fied as ever. Nay, to ſuch a provok-

'ing

'ing degree did this unhappy humour 'prevail, that one day, in the preſence 'of his lawyer, he harangued upon my 'miſconduct ſince our laſt re-union; 'and very freely affirmed, that every 'ſtep I had taken was diametrically 'oppoſite to his will.

'Conſcious of the pains I had been 'at to pleaſe him, I was ſo incenſed at 'theſe unjuſt invectives, that ſtarting 'up, I told him he was a little dirty 'fellow; and would have left the houſe 'immediately, had not his lawyer and 'others, who were in the next room, 'interpoſed, and by dint of argument 'and importunity diverted me from my 'purpoſe. By the bye, I have been 'informed by a perſon of rank, that 'my lord diſcovered exactly the ſame 'diſpoſition in his father's life-time, 'and only changes the ſubject of his 'complaint from the word *father* to 'that of *wife*. Indeed, he takes all op-'portunities of plaguing my dear pa-'rent, as he has juſt ſagacity enough 'to know, that this is the moſt effec-'tual way he can take to diſtreſs me.

'After repeated trials, I have given 'up all hopes of making him happy, 'or of finding myſelf eaſy in my ſitua-'tion; and live with him at preſent 'to avoid a greater inconvenience. Not 'that his ill-nature is all the grievance 'of which I complain: excluſive of the 'perſonal diſguſt I entertain for him, 'his folly is of that ſpecies which diſ-'obliges rather than diverts, and his 'vanity and affectation altogether into-'lerable; for he actually believes him-'ſelf, or at leaſt would impoſe himſelf 'upon mankind, as a pattern in gal-'lantry and taſte; and, in point of bu-'ſineſs, a perſon of infinite ſagacity 'and penetration: but the moſt ridi-'culous part of his character is his pre-'tended talent for politicks, in which 'he ſo deeply concerns himſelf, that 'he has diſmiſſed many a good ſervant 'becauſe he ſuſpected him of having 'wrong connections; a theme upon 'which he has often quarrelled with 'me, even almoſt to parting, accuſing 'me with holding correſpondence with 'the Earls of B—— and C——, and 'Mr. H. V——, though I never had 'the leaſt acquaintance with any of 'theſe gentlemen, except the Earl of 'C——, to whom I have not ſpoke for 'theſe ten years paſt.

'In ſhort, I have often been at a loſs 'to know, whether he was more mad 'or malicious in thoſe fits of enthuſi-'aſm, wherein he ſeemed tranſported 'with zeal for the commonwealth, and 'tormented me with his admonitions, 'out of all temper and patience. At 'length, however, I contrived an expe-'dient which freed me from theſe trou-'bleſome expoſtulations, and ſilenced 'him effectually on the ſcore of poli-'ticks. This was no other than an 'open avowal of being connected with 'all thoſe people whom I have named. 'Indeed, I knew him too well to be-'lieve there was any thing ſolid in his 'intention or profeſſions, even when he 'carried himſelf ſo far as to demand a 'private audience with the king, in 'order to communicate a ſcheme for 'ſuppreſſing the rebellion; and that 'being denied, ſolicited the Duke of 'D——'s intereſt for permiſſion to raiſe 'and head a regiment of Kentiſh ſmug-'glers: nay, to ſuch a pitch did his 'loyalty ſoar, that he purchaſed a fire-'lock of particular mechaniſm, calcu-'lated for the ſafety of the bearer, in 'caſe he had been placed centinel at his 'majeſty's door; and kept his horſes 'ready capariſoned, with a view of at-'tending his ſovereign to the field. 'Notwithſtanding all theſe pompous 'preparations, had he been put to the 'proof, he would have infallibly crept 'out of his engagements, through ſome 'ſneaking evaſion, his imagination be-'ing very fertile in ſuch ſaving pre-'tences. Yet he will talk ſometimes 'ſo fervently, and even ſenſibly, on the 'ſubject, that a ſtranger would miſtake 'him for a man of underſtanding, and 'determined zeal for the good of his 'country.

'Since my laſt return to his houſe, 'that act of parliament paſſed, by which 'he was enabled to pay his debts, and 'among the reſt, a thouſand pounds of 'my contracting, the only burden of 'that kind I ever intailed upon him, 'excluſive of my pin-money, which 'was never regularly paid; nor would 'he have been ſubject to this, had he 'not, by his perſecution and purſuit, 'expoſed me to an extraordinary ex-'pence. I have alſo had it in my power 'to reward ſome of my faithful Abi-'gails; in particular, to relieve from 'extreme diſtreſs that maid to whom '(as I have already obſerved) Lord 'B—— granted an annuity, which

'ſhe

'she had sold: so that she was reduced 'to the most abject poverty, and I 'found her in a dismal hole, with two 'infants perishing for want; a spectacle 'which drew tears from my eyes, 'and indeed could not but make deep 'impression upon a heart like mine, 'which the misery of my fellow-creatures never failed to melt.

'Nor did I upon this occasion forget 'the attachment and fidelity of my 'other woman Mrs. S——, who hearing I was robbed in my passage 'through Flanders, had generously relinquished the allowance I had settled 'upon her at parting. The exercise 'of such acts of humanity and benevolence, and the pleasure of seeing 'my dear and tender parent often, 'in some measure alleviate the chagrin to which I am subject, from the 'disagreeable disposition of my lord, 'who, consistent with his former inconsistency, upon our last reconciliation chearfully agreed to a proposal I 'made of having concerts in the house, 'and even approved of the scheme with 'marks of particular satisfaction: but 'before one half of the winter was expired, he found means to banish all 'the company, beginning with lord 'R—— B——; who, as he walked 'up stairs one evening, was stopped by 'a footman, who plainly told him he 'had orders to say to him in particular, 'that his lordship was not at home; 'yet, the very next day, perceiving that 'nobleman and me walking together 'in the Park, he joined us with an air 'of alacrity, as if no such thing had 'happened; and even behaved to Lord 'R—— with the most fawning complaisance. His deportment was equally absurd and impertinent to the rest 'of his friends, who forsook us gradually, being tired of maintaining 'any friendly communication with such 'a disagreeable composition of ignorance 'and arrogance. For my own part, I 'look upon him as utterly incorrigible; 'and as fate hath subjected me to his 'power, endeavour to make the bitter 'draught go down, by detaching myself, as much as possible, from the 'supposition that there is any such existence upon earth. Indeed, if I had 'not fatal experience of the contrary, 'I should be apt to believe that such a 'character is not to be found among 'the sons of men; because his conduct 'is altogether unaccountable by the 'known rules and maxims of life, and 'falls entirely under the poet's observation, when he says,

'"'Tis true, no meaning puzzles more than 'wit.'

Her ladyship having thus concluded her story, to the entertainment of the company, and the admiration of Peregrine, who expressed his astonishment at the variety of adventures she had undergone, which was such as he thought sufficient to destroy the most hardy and robust constitution, and therefore infinitely more than enough to overwhelm one of her delicate frame; one of the gentlemen present roundly taxed her with want of candour, in suppressing some circumstances of her life, which he thought essential in the consideration of her character.

She reddened at this peremptory charge, which had an evident effect upon the countenances of the whole audience, when the accuser proceeded to explain his imputation, by observing, that, in the course of her narration, she had omitted to mention a thousand acts of uncommon charity, of which he himself knew her to be guilty; and that she had concealed a great many advantageous proposals of marriage, which she might have accepted before she was engaged.

The company were agreeably undeceived by this explanation; which her ladyship acknowledged in very polite terms, as a compliment equally genteel and unexpected: and our hero, after having testified the sense he had of her complaisance and condescension, in regaling him with a mark of her confidence and esteem, took his leave, and went home in a state of confusion and perplexity; for, from the circumstances of the tale he had heard, he plainly perceived, that her ladyship's heart was too delicate to receive such incense, as he, in the capacity of an admirer, could at present pay; because, though he had in some measure abridged the empire of Emilia in his own breast, it was not in his power to restrain it so effectually, but that it would interfere with any other sovereign whom his thoughts should adopt; and, unless Lady —— could engross his whole love, time, and attention, he foresaw that it would be

impoſſible for him to ſupport the paſſion which he might have the good fortune to inſpire. He was, moreover, deterred from declaring his love, by the fate of her former admirers, who ſeemed to have been wound up to a degree of enthuſiaſm, that looked more like the effect of inchantment, than the inſpiration of human attractions; an extaſy of paſſion which he durſt not venture to undergo. He therefore reſolved to combat with the impreſſions he had already received, and, if poſſible, cultivate her friendſhip without ſoliciting her affection: but, before he could fix upon this determination, he deſired to know the footing on which he ſtood in her opinion; and by the intelligence of Crabtree, obtained in the uſual manner, underſtood that her ſentiments of him were very favourable, though without the leaſt tincture of love. He would have been tranſported with joy, had her thoughts of him been of a more tender texture; though his reaſon was better pleaſed with the information he received: in conſequence of which he muſtered up the ideas of his firſt paſſion, and ſet them in oppoſition to thoſe of this new and dangerous attachment; by which means he kept the balance in equilibrio, and his boſom tolerably quiet.

CHAP. X.

HE PERSUADES CADWALLADER TO ASSUME THE CHARACTER OF A MAGICIAN, IN WHICH HE ACQUIRES A GREAT SHARE OF REPUTATION, BY HIS RESPONSES TO THREE FEMALES OF DISTINCTION, WHO SEVERALLY CONSULT THE RESEARCHES OF HIS ART.

HIS heart being thus, as it were, ſuſpended between two objects, that leſſened the force of each other's attraction, he took this opportunity of enjoying ſome reſpite, and for the preſent detached his ſentiments from both; reſolving to indulge himſelf in the exerciſe of that practical ſatire, which was ſo agreeable and peculiar to his diſpoſition. In this laudable determination he was confirmed by the repeated ſuggeſtions of his friend Cadwallader, who taxed him with letting his talents ruſt in indolence, and ſtimulated his natural vivacity, with a ſucceſſion of freſh diſcoveries in the world of ſcandal.

Peregrine was now ſeized with a ſtrange whim, and when he communicated the conceit to Cadwallader, it in a moment acquired his approbation. This notion he imparted in a propoſal, to ſubject the town to their ridicule, by giving reſponſes in the character of a profeſſed conjuror, to be perſonated by the old miſanthrope, whoſe aſpect was extremely well calculated for the purpoſe. The plan was immediately adjuſted in all it's parts; an apartment hired in a houſe accommodated with a publick ſtair, ſo that people might have free ingreſs and egreſs, without being expoſed to obſervation; and this tenement being furniſhed with the apparatus of a magician, ſuch as globes, teleſcopes, a magick-lanthorn, a ſkeleton, a dried monkey, together with the ſkins of an alligator, otter, and ſnake, the conjuror himſelf took poſſeſſion of his caſtle, after having diſtributed printed advertiſements, containing the particulars of his undertaking.

Theſe bills ſoon operated according to the wiſh of the projectors. As the price of the oracle was fixed at half a guinea, the publick naturally concluded that the author was no common fortune-teller; and the very next day, Peregrine found ſome ladies of his quality acquaintance, infected with the deſire of making an experiment upon the ſkill of this new conjuror, who pretended to be juſt arrived from the Mogul's empire, where he had learned the art from a Brachman philoſopher. Our young gentleman affected to talk of the pretenſions of this ſage with ridicule and contempt, and with ſeeming reluctance undertook to attend them to his apartment, obſerving that it would be a very eaſy matter to detect the fellow's ignorance, and no more than common juſtice to chaſtiſe him for his preſumption. Though he could eaſily perceive a great fund of credulity in the company, they affected to eſpouſe his opinion, and under the notion of a frolick, agreed, that one particular lady ſhould endeavour to baffle his art, by appearing before him in the dreſs of her woman, who ſhould at the ſame time perſonate her miſtreſs, and be treated as ſuch by our adventurer, who promiſed to ſquire them to the place. Theſe meaſures being concerted, and the appointment fixed for the

the next audience-day, Peregrine furniſhed his friend with the neceſſary information; and when the hour of aſſignation arrived, conducted his charge to this oraculous ſeer.

They were admitted by our hero's valet de chambre, whoſe viſage being naturally meagre and ſwarthy, was adorned with artificial whiſkers; ſo that he became the Perſian dreſs which he wore, and ſeemed a very proper maſter of the ceremonies to an oriental necromancer. Having croſſed his arms upon his breaſt, with an inclination of the head, he ſtalked in ſolemn ſilence before them into the penetralia of the temple, where they found the conjuror ſitting at a table, provided with pen, ink, and paper, divers books, and mathematical inſtruments, and a long white wand lying acroſs the whole. He was habited in a black gown and fur-cap: his countenance, over and above a double proportion of philoſophick gravity, which he had aſſumed for the occaſion, was improved by a thick beard, white as ſnow, that reached to his middle; upon each ſhoulder ſat a prodigious large black cat, which had been tutored for the purpoſe.

Such a figure, which would have ſtartled Peregrine himſelf, had not he been concerned in the myſtery, could not fail to make an impreſſion upon thoſe whom he accompanied. The fictitious chambermaid, in ſpite of all her natural pertneſs and vivacity, changed colour when ſhe entered the room, while the pretended lady, whoſe intellects were not quite ſo enlightened, began to tremble in every joint, and ejaculate petitions to Heaven for her ſafety. Their conductor advancing to the table, preſented his offering, and pointing to the maid, told him that lady deſired to know what would be her deſtiny in point of marriage. The philoſopher, without lifting up his eyes to view the perſon in whoſe behalf he was conſulted, turned his ear to one of the ſable familiars that purred upon his ſhoulder, and taking up the pen, wrote upon a detached ſlip of paper theſe words, which Peregrine, at the deſire of the ladies, repeated aloud. 'Her deſtiny will, in a great meaſure, 'depend upon what happened to her 'about nine o'clock in the morning, 'on the third day of laſt December.'

This ſentence was no ſooner pronounced, than the counterfeit lady ſcreamed, and ran out into the antichamber, exclaiming, 'Chriſt have mercy 'upon us! Sure he is the devil incarnate!' Her miſtreſs, who followed her with great conſternation, inſiſted upon knowing the tranſaction to which the reſponſe alluded; and Mrs. Abigail, after ſome recollection, gave her to underſtand that ſhe had an admirer, who, on that very hour and day mentioned by the cunning man, had addreſſed himſelf to her in a ſerious propoſal of marriage. This explanation, however, was more ingenious than candid; for the admirer was no other than the identical Mr. Pickle himſelf, who was a mere dragon among the chambermaids, and in his previous information communicated to his aſſociate, had given an account of this aſſignation, with which he had been favoured by the damſel in queſtion.

Our hero ſeeing his company very much affected with this circumſtance of the wizard's art, which had almoſt frighted both miſtreſs and maid into hyſterick fits, pretended to laugh them out of their fears, by obſerving that there was nothing extraordinary in this inſtance of his knowledge, which might have been acquired by ſome of thoſe ſecret emiſſaries whom ſuch impoſtors are obliged to employ for intelligence, or imparted by the lover himſelf, who had perhaps come to conſult him about the ſucceſs of his amour. Encouraged by this obſervation, or rather prompted by an inſatiable curioſity, which was proof againſt all ſorts of apprehenſion, the diſguiſed lady returned to the magician's own apartment, and aſſuming the air of a pert chambermaid, 'Mr. Con-'juror,' ſaid ſhe, 'now you have ſatiſ-'fied my miſtreſs, will you be ſo good 'as to tell me, if ever I ſhall be mar-'ried?' The ſage, without the leaſt heſitation, favoured her with an anſwer in the following words. 'You cannot 'be married before you are a widow; 'and whether or not that will ever be 'the caſe, is a queſtion which my art 'cannot reſolve, becauſe my foreknow-'ledge exceeds not the term of thirty 'years.'

This reply, which at once cut her off from the pleaſing proſpect of ſeeing herſelf independent in the enjoyment of youth and fortune, in a moment clouded her aſpect; all her good-humour was overcaſt, and ſhe went away, without farther enquiry, muttering, in the ran-

cour of her chagrin, that he was a silly impertinent fellow, and a mere quack in his profession. Notwithstanding the prejudice of this resentment, her conviction soon recurred; and when the report of his answers was made to those confederates by whom she had been deputed to make trial of his skill, they were universally persuaded that his art was altogether supernatural, though each affected to treat it with contempt, resolving, in her own breast, to have recourse to him in private.

In the mean time, the maid, though laid under the most peremptory injunctions of secresy, was so full of the circumstance which related to her own conduct, that she extolled his prescience, in whispers to all her acquaintance, assuring them, that he had told her all the particulars of her life; so that his fame was almost instantaneously conveyed through a thousand different channels, to all parts of the town; and the very next time he assumed the chair, his doors were besieged by curious people of all sects and denominations.

Being an old practitioner in this art, Cadwallader knew it would be impossible for him to support his reputation in the promiscuous exercise of fortune-telling, because every person that should come to consult him would expect a sample of his skill, relating to things past; and it could not be supposed that he was acquainted with the private concerns of every individual who might apply to him for that purpose: he therefore ordered his minister, whom he distinguished by the name of Hadgi Rourk, to signify to all those who demanded entrance, that his price was half a guinea; and that all such as were not disposed to gratify him with that consideration, would do well to leave the passage free for the rest.

This declaration succeeded to his wish; for this congregation consisted chiefly of footmen, chambermaids, apprentices, and the lower class of tradesmen, who could not afford to purchase prescience at such a price; so that, after fruitless offers of shillings and half crowns, they dropped off one by one, and left the field open for customers of an higher rank.

The first person of this species who appeared was dressed like the wife of a substantial tradesman; but this disguise could not screen her from the penetration of the conjuror, who at first sight knew her to be one of the ladies of whose coming he had been apprized by Peregrine, on the supposition that their curiosity was rather inflamed than allayed by the intelligence they had received from his first client. This lady approached the philosopher with that intrepidity of countenance so conspicuous in matrons of her dignified sphere, and in a soft voice, asked with a simper, of what complexion her next child would be? The necromancer, who was perfectly well acquainted with her private history, forthwith delivered his response in the following question, written in the usual form, 'How long has Pompey 'the black been dismissed from your 'ladyship's service?'

Endued as she was with a great share of that fortitude which is distinguished by the appellation of effrontery, her face exhibited some signs of shame and confusion at the receipt of this oracular interrogation, by which she was convinced of his extraordinary intelligence; and accosting him in a very serious tone; 'Doctor,' said she, 'I perceive you are 'a person of great abilities in the art 'you profess; and therefore, without 'pretending to dissemble, I will own 'you have touched the true string of 'my apprehensions. I am persuaded 'I need not be more particular in my 'enquiries. Here is a purse of money; 'take it, and deliver me from a most 'alarming and uneasy suspense.' So saying, she deposited her offering upon the table, and waited for his answer with a face of fearful expectation, while he was employed in writing this sentence for her perusal: 'Though I see into 'the womb of time, the prospect is not 'perfectly distinct; the seeds of future 'events lie mingled and confused: so 'that I am under the necessity of assisting my divination in some cases, by 'analogy and human intelligence; and 'cannot possibly satisfy your present 'doubts, unless you will condescend to 'make me privy to all those occurrences 'which you think might have interfered with the cause of your apprehension.'

The lady having read the declaration, affected a small emotion of shyness and repugnance, and seating herself upon a settee, after having cautiously informed herself of the privacy of the apartment, gave such a detail of the succession of her

her lovers, as amazed while it entertained the necromancer, as well as his friend Pickle, who from a closet, in which he had concealed himself, overheard every syllable of her confession. Cadwallader listened to her story with a look of infinite importance and sagacity, and after a short pause told her, that he would not pretend to give a catagorical answer, until he should have deliberated maturely upon the various circumstances of the affair; but if she would take the trouble of honouring him with another visit on his next publick day, he hoped he should be able to give her full satisfaction. Conscious of the importance of her doubts, she could not help commending his caution, and took her leave, with a promise of returning at the appointed time: then the conjuror being joined by his associate, they gave a loose to their mirth, which having indulged, they began to concert measures for inflicting some disgraceful punishment on the shameless and insatiate termigant who had so impudently avowed her own prostitution.

They were interrupted, however, in their conferrence, by the arrival of a new guest, who being announced by Hadgi, our hero retreated to his lurking-place, and Cadwallader resumed his mysterious appearance. This new client, though she hid her face in a mask, could not conceal herself from the knowledge of the conjuror, who by her voice recognized her to be an unmarried lady of his own acquaintance. She had, within a small compass of time, made herself remarkable for two adventures, which had not at all succeeded to her expectation: being very much addicted to play, she had, at a certain rout, indulged that passion to such excess, as not only got the better of her justice, but also of her circumspection; so that she was unfortunately detected in her endeavours to appropriate to herself what was not lawfully her due. This small slip was attended with another indiscretion, which had likewise an unlucky effect upon her reputation. She had been favoured with the addresses of one of those hopeful heirs, who swarm and swagger about town under the denomination of Bucks; and in the confidence of his honour consented to be one of a *partie* that made an excursion as far as Windsor, thinking herself secured from scandal by the company of another young lady, who had also condescended to trust her person to the protection of her admirer. The two gallants, in the course of this expedition, were said to use the most perfidious means to intoxicate the passions of their mistresses, by mixing drugs with their wine, which inflamed their constitutions to such a degree, that they fell an easy sacrifice to the appetites of their conductors, who, upon their return to town, were so base and inhuman as to boast among their companions of the exploit they had atchieved. Thus the story was circulated, with a thousand additional circumstances to the prejudice of the sufferers, one of whom had thought proper to withdraw into the country, until the scandal raised at her expence should subside; while the other, who was not so easily put out of countenance, resolved to out-face the report, as a treacherous aspersion, invented by her lover as an excuse for his own inconstancy; and actually appeared in publick, as usual, till she found herself neglected by the greatest part of her acquaintance.

In consequence of this disgrace, which she knew not whether to impute to the card affair, or to the last *faux pas* she had committed, she now came to consult the conjuror, and signified her errand, by asking whether the cause of her present disquiet was of the town or the country. Cadwallader at once perceiving her allusion, answered her question in these terms: 'This honest world 'will forgive a young gamester for in-'discretion at play, but a favour granted to a babbling coxcomb is an un-'pardonable offence.' This response she received with equal astonishment and chagrin; and, fully convinced of the necromancer's omniscience, implored his advice touching the retrieval of her reputation: upon which he counselled her to wed with the first opportunity. She seemed so well pleased with his admonition, that she gratified him with a double fee, and dropping a low curtsey, retired.

Our undertakers now thought it high time to silence the oracle for the day, and Hadgi was accordingly ordered to exclude all comers, while Peregrine and his friend renewed the deliberations which had been interrupted, and settled a plan of operations for the next occasion: meanwhile it was resolved, that Hadgi should not only exercise his own talents, but also employ inferior agents, in procuring

curing general intelligence for the ſupport of their ſcheme; that the expence of this miniſtry ſhould be defrayed from the profits of their profeſſions, and the remainder be diſtributed to poor families in diſtreſs.

CHAP. XI.

PEREGRINE AND HIS FRIEND CADWALLADER PROCEED IN THE EXERCISE OF THE MYSTERY OF FORTUNE-TELLING, IN THE COURSE OF WHICH THEY ATCHIEVE VARIOUS ADVENTURES.

THESE preliminaries being adjuſted, our hero forthwith repaired to a card aſſembly, which was frequented by ſome of the moſt notable goſſips in town, and having artfully turned the converſation upon the ſubject of the fortune-teller, whoſe talents he pretended to ridicule, incenſed their itch of knowing ſecrets to ſuch a degree of impatience, that their curioſity became flagrant, and he took it for granted, that all or ſome of them would viſit Albumazar on his very firſt viſiting-day. While Peregrine was thus engaged, this aſſociate made his appearance in another convocation of faſhionable people, where he ſoon had the pleaſure of hearing the conjuror brought upon the carpet by an elderly gentlewoman, remarkable for her inquiſitive diſpoſition, who addreſſing herſelf to Cadwallader, aſked, by the help of the finger-alphabet, if he knew any thing of the magician that made ſuch a noiſe in town. The miſanthrope anſwered as uſual, in a ſurly tone, 'By 'your queſtion, you muſt either take me 'for a pimp or an idiot. What, in the 'name of nonſenſe, ſhould I know of 'ſuch a raſcal, unleſs I were to court 'his acquaintance with a view to feaſt 'my own ſpleen, in ſeeing him fool the 'whole nation out of their money! 'Though, I ſuppoſe, his chief profits 'ariſe from his practice, in quality of 'pander. All fortune-tellers are bawds, 'and for that reaſon are ſo much followed by people of faſhion. This fellow, I warrant, has got ſundry convenient apartments for the benefit of 'procreation; for it is not to be ſuppoſed that thoſe who viſit him on the 'pretence of conſulting his ſupernatural 'art, can be ſuch fools, ſuch drivellers, 'as to believe that he can actually prog-'noſticate future events.'

The company, according to his expectation, imputed his remarks to the rancour of his diſpoſition, which could not bear to think that any perſon upon earth was wiſer than himſelf; and his ears were regaled with a thouſand inſtances of the conjuror's wonderful preſcience, for which he was altogether indebted to fiction. Some of theſe ſpecimens being communicated to him by way of appeal to his opinion, 'They 'are,' ſaid he, 'mere phantoms of ig-'norance and credulity, ſwelled up in 'the repetition, like thoſe unſubſtantial 'bubbles which the boys blow up in 'ſoap-ſuds with a tobacco-pipe. And 'this will ever be the caſe in the propa-'gation of all extraordinary intelli-'gence: the imagination naturally mag-'nifies every object that falls under it's 'cognizance, eſpecially thoſe that con-'cern the paſſions of fear and admira-'tion; and when the occurrence comes 'to be rehearſed, the vanity of the re-'later exaggerates every circumſtance, 'in order to enhance the importance of 'the communication. Thus an inci-'dent which is but barely uncommon, 'often gains ſuch acceſſion in it's pro-'greſs through the fancies and mouths 'of thoſe who repreſent it, that the ori-'ginal fact cannot poſſibly be diſtin-'guiſhed. This obſervation might be 'proved and illuſtrated by a thouſand 'undeniable examples, out of which I 'ſhall only ſelect one inſtance, for the 'entertainment and edification of the 'company. A very honeſt gentleman, 'remarkable for the gravity of his de-'portment, was one day in a certain 'coffee-houſe accoſted by one of his 'particular friends; who, taking him 'by the hand, expreſſed uncommon ſa-'tisfaction in ſeeing him abroad, and 'in good health, after the dangerous 'and portentous malady he had under-'gone. Surprized at this ſalutation, 'the gentleman replied, it was true he 'had been a little out of order over 'night, but there was nothing at all 'extraordinary in his indiſpoſition.—"Jeſu, not extraordinary!" cried the 'other, "when you vomited three "black crows!" This ſtrange excla-'mation the grave gentleman at firſt 'miſtook for raillery, though his friend 'was no joker; but perceiving in him 'all the marks of ſincerity and aſtoniſh-'ment,

'ment, he ſuddenly changed his opi-
'nion, and after a ſhort reverie, taking
'him aſide, expreſſed himſelf in theſe
'words: "Sir, it is not unknown to
"you that I am at preſent engaged in
"a treaty of marriage, which would
"have been ſettled long ago, had it not
"been retarded by the repeated machi-
"nations of a certain perſon who pro-
"feſſed himſelf my rival. Now I am
"fully perſuaded that this affair of the
"three crows is a ſtory of his invention,
"calculated to prejudice me in the opi-
"nion of the lady, who, to be ſure,
"would not chuſe to marry a man who
"has a rookery in his bowels; and
"therefore I muſt inſiſt upon knowing
"your author of this ſcandalous report,
"that I may be able to vindicate my
"character from the malicious aſper-
"ſion." His friend, who thought the
'demand was very reaſonable, told him
'without heſitation, that he was made
'acquainted with the circumſtance of
'his diſtemper by Mr. Such-a-one,
'their common acquaintance: upon
'which the perſon who conceived him-
'ſelf injured, went immediately in queſt
'of his ſuppoſed defamer, and having
'found him, "Pray, Sir," ſaid he,
'with a peremptory tone, "who told
"you that I vomited three black
"crows?"—"Three!" anſwered the
'gentleman, "I mentioned two only."
—"Zounds, Sir!" cried the other, in-
'cenſed at his indifference, "you will
"find the two too many, if you refuſe
"to diſcover the villainous ſource of
"ſuch calumny." The gentleman,
'ſurprized at his heat, ſaid he was ſor-
'ry to find he had been the accidental
'inſtrument of giving him offence, but
'tranſlated the blame (if any there
'was) from himſelf to a third perſon,
'to whoſe information he owed his
'knowledge of the report. The plain-
'tiff, according to the direction he re-
'ceived, repaired to the houſe of the
'accuſed; and his indignation being
'inflamed at finding the ſtory had al-
'ready circulated among his acquain-
'tance, he told him, with evident marks
'of diſpleaſure, that he was come to
'pluck that ſame brace of crows which
'he ſaid he had diſgorged. The de-
'fendant ſeeing him very much irritat-
'ed, poſitively denied that he had men-
'tioned a brace: "One, indeed," ſaid
'he, "I own I took notice of, upon
"the authority of your own phyſician,
"who gave me an account of it this
"morning."—"By the Lord!" cried
'the ſufferer in a rage, which he could
'no longer contain, "that raſcal has
"been ſuborned by my rival to ſlander
"my character in this manner; but
"I'll be revenged, if there be either
"law or equity in England!" He had
'ſcarce pronounced theſe words, when
'the doctor happened to enter the room;
'when his exaſperated patient lifting
'up his cane, "Sirrah," ſaid he, "if
"I live, I'll make that black crow the
"blackeſt circumſtance of thy whole
"life and converſation!" The phyſi-
'cian, confounded at this addreſs, aſ-
'ſured him that he was utterly igno-
'rant of his meaning; and when the
'other gentleman explained it, abſo-
'lutely denied the charge, affirming he
'had ſaid no more than that he had
'vomited a quantity of ſomething as
'black as a crow. The landlord of the
'houſe acknowledged that he might
'have been miſtaken; and thus the
'whole myſtery was explained.'

The company ſeemed to reliſh the ſtory of the three black crows, which they conſidered as an impromptu of Cadwallader's own invention; but, granting it to be true, they unanimouſly declared that it could have no weight in invalidating the teſtimony of divers perſons of honour, who had been witneſſes of the magician's ſupernatural ſkill. On the next day of conſultation, the necromancer being in the chair, and his friend behind the curtain, the outward door was ſcarce open, when a female viſitant flounced in, and diſcovered to the magician the features of one of thoſe inquiſitive ladies, whoſe curioſity he knew his confederate had arouzed in the manner above deſcribed. She addreſſed herſelf to him with a familiar air, obſerving, that ſhe had heard much of his great knowledge, and was come to be a witneſs of his art, which ſhe deſired him to diſplay, in declaring what he knew to be her ruling paſſion.

Cadwallader, who was no ſtranger to her diſpoſition, aſſumed the pen without heſitation, and furniſhed her with an anſwer, importing, that the love of money predominated, and ſcandal poſſeſſed the next place in her heart. Far from being offended at his freedom, ſhe commended his frankneſs with a ſmile; and, ſatisfied of his uncommon talents, expreſſed a deſire of being better acquaint-

ed

ed with his perſon: nay, ſhe began to catechiſe him upon the private hiſtory of divers great families, in which he happened to be well verſed; and he, in a myſterious manner, dropped ſuch artful hints of his knowledge, that ſhe was amazed at his capacity, and actually aſked if his art was communicable. The conjuror replied in the affirmative; but, at the ſame time, gave her to underſtand, that it was attainable by thoſe only who were pure and undefiled in point of chaſtity and honour; or ſuch as, by a long courſe of penitence, had weaned themſelves from all attachments to the fleſh. She not only diſapproved, but ſeemed to doubt the truth of this aſſertion; telling him, with a look of diſdain, that his art was not worth having, if one could not uſe it for the benefit of one's pleaſure: ſhe had even penetration enough to take notice of an inconſiſtency in what he had advanced; and aſked, why he himſelf exerciſed his knowledge for hire, if he was ſo much detached from all worldly concerns. 'Come, come, doctor,' added ſhe, 'you 'are in the right to be cautious againſt 'impertinent curioſity; but, perhaps, 'I may make it worth your while to be 'communicative.'

Theſe overtures were interrupted by a rap at the door, ſignifying the approach of another client; upon which the lady enquired for his private paſſage, through which ſhe might retire, without the riſk of being ſeen; when ſhe underſtood he was deficient in that convenience, ſhe withdrew into an empty room, adjoining to the audience-chamber, in order to conceal herſelf from the obſervation of the new-comer. This was no other than the inamorata, who came by appointment to receive the ſolution of her doubts; and the miſanthrope, glad of an opportunity to expoſe her to the cenſure of ſuch an indefatigable miniſter of fame as the perſon, who (he knew) would liſten from the next apartment, laid her under the neceſſity of refreſhing his remembrance with a recapitulation of her former confeſſion, which was almoſt finiſhed, when ſhe was alarmed by a noiſe at the door, occaſioned by two gentlemen, who attempted to enter by force.

Terrified at this uproar, which diſconcerted the magician himſelf, ſhe ran for ſhelter into the place which was preoccupied by the other lady; who, hearing this diſturbance, had cloſed the window-ſhutters, that ſhe might have the better chance of remaining unknown. Here they enſconced themſelves, in the utmoſt conſternation, while the necromancer, after ſome recollection, ordered Hadgi to open the door, and admit the rioters, who (he hoped) would be over-awed by the authority of his appearance. The janitor had no ſooner obeyed his inſtructions, than in ruſhed a young libertine, who had been for ſome time upon the town, together with his tutor, who was a worn-out debauchee, well known to the magician. They were both in that degree of intoxication neceſſary to prepare ſuch diſpoſitions for what they commonly call frolicks, and the ſober part of mankind feel to be extravagant outrages againſt the laws of their country, and the peace of their fellow-ſubjects. Having ſtaggered up to the table, the ſenior, who undertook to be ſpokeſman, ſaluted Cadwallader with, 'How do'ſt do, old Ca-'pricorn? Thou ſeem'ſt to be a moſt 'venerable pimp, and, I doubt not, 'haſt abundance of diſcretion. Here is 'this young whore-maſter (a true chip 'of the old venereal block his father) 'and myſelf, come for a comfortable 'caſt of thy function. I don't mean 'that ſtale pretence of conjuring: damn 'futurity! let us live for the preſent, 'old Haly. Conjure me up a couple 'of hale wenches, and, I warrant, we 'ſhall get into the magick circle in a 'twinkling. What ſays Galileo? What 'ſays the reverend Brahe? Here is a 'purſe, you pimp: hark, how it chinks! 'This is ſweeter than the muſick of the 'ſpheres.'

Our necromancer, perplexed at this rencounter, made no reply; but taking up his wand, waved it around his head in a very myſterious motion, with a view of intimidating theſe forward viſitants, who, far from being awed by this ſort of evolution, became more and more obſtreperous, and even threatened to pull him by the beard if he would not immediately comply with their deſire. Had he called his aſſociate, or even Hadgi, to his aid, he knew he could have ſoon calmed their turbulence; but, being unwilling to run the riſk of a diſcovery, or even of a riot, he bethought himſelf of chaſtiſing their inſolence in another manner, that would be leſs hazardous, and rather more effectual. In conſe-

consequence of this suggestion, he pointed his wand towards the door of the apartment in which the ladies had taken sanctuary; and the two rakes, understanding the hint, rushed in without hesitation.

The females finding their place of retreat taken by assault, ran about the room in great consternation, and were immediately taken prisoners by the assailants, who pulling them towards the windows, opened the shutters at the same instant of time, when (strange to tell!) one of the heroes discovered in the prize he had made, the very wife of his bosom; and his companion perceived that he had stumbled in the dark upon his own mother. Their mutual astonishment was unspeakable at this eclaircissement, which produced an universal silence for the space of several minutes. During this pause the ladies having recollected themselves, an expostulation was begun by the elder of the two, who roundly took her son to task for his disorderly life, which laid her under the disagreeable necessity of watching his motions, and detecting him in such an infamous place.

While the careful mother thus exercised her talent for reprehension, the hopeful young gentleman, with an hand in each fob, stood whistling an operatune, without seeming to pay the most profound regard to his parent's reproof: and the other lady, in imitation of such a consummate pattern, began to open upon her husband, whom she bitterly reproached with his looseness and intemperance, demanding to know what he had to alledge in alleviation of his present misconduct. The surprize occasioned by such an unexpected meeting had already in a great measure destroyed the effects of the wine he had so plentifully drank, and the first use he made of his recovered sobriety, was to revolve within himself the motives that could possibly induce his wife to give him the rendezvous in this manner. As he had good reason to believe she was utterly void of jealousy, he naturally placed this rencountre to the account of another passion; and his chagrin was not at all impaired, by the effrontery with which she now presumed to reprimand him. He listened to her, therefore, with a grave or rather grim aspect; and to the question with which she concluded her rebuke, answered with great composure, 'All that I have to alledge, Ma'dam, is, that the bawd has committ'ed a mistake, in consequence of which 'we are both disappointed: and so, la'dies, your humble servant.' So saying, he retired with manifest confusion in his looks; and as he passed through the audience-chamber, eying the conjuror askance, pronounced the epithet of *precious rascal!* with great emphasis. Meanwhile the junior, like a dutiful child, handed his mamma to her chair; and the other client, after having reviled the necromancer, because he could not foresee this event, went away in a state of mortification.

The coast being clear, Peregrine came forth from his den, and congratulated his friend upon the peaceable issue of the adventure which he had overheard: but, that he might not be exposed to such inconvenience for the future, they resolved, that a grate should be fixed in the middle of the outward door, through which the conjuror himself might reconnoitre all the visitants before their admission; so that, to those whose appearance he might not like, Hadgi should, without opening, give notice that his master was engaged. By this expedient, too, they provided against those difficulties which Cadwallader must have encountered, in giving satisfaction to strangers whom he did not know; for the original intention of the founders was to confine the practice of their art to people of fashion only, most of whom were personally known to the counterfeit magician and his coadjutors.

Indeed, these associates, Cadwallader in particular, notwithstanding his boasted insight into the characters of life, never imagined that his pretended skill would be consulted by any but the weaker minded of the female sex, incited by that spirit of curiosity which he knew was implanted in their nature: but, in the course of his practice, he found himself cultivated in his preternatural capacity by people of all sexes, complexions, and degrees of reputation, and had occasion to observe, that when the passions are concerned, howsoever cool, cautious, and deliberate, the disposition may otherwise be, there is nothing so idle, frivolous, or absurd, to which they will not apply for encouragement and gratification. The last occurrence, according to the hopes and expectation of the confederates, was whispered about by

the ladies concerned, in such a manner, that the whole affair was, in a few days, the universal topick of discourse, in which it was retailed with numberless embellishments, invented by the parties themselves, who had long indulged a pique at each other, and took this opportunity of enjoying their revenge.

These incidents, while they regaled the spleen, at the same time augmented the renown of the conjuror, who was described on both sides as a very extraordinary person in his way; and the alteration in his door was no sooner performed, than he had occasion to avail himself of it, against the intrusion of a great many, with whom he would have found it very difficult to support the fame he had acquired.

Among those who appeared at his grate, he perceived a certain clergyman, whom he had long known an humble attendant on the great, and with some the reputed minister of their pleasures: this Levite had disguised himself in a great coat, boots, and dress quite foreign to the habit worn by those of his function; and being admitted, attempted to impose himself as a country squire upon the conjuror, who calling him by his name, desired him to sit down. This reception corresponding with the report he had heard, touching our magician's art, the doctor said he would lay aside all dissimulation. After having professed an implicit belief, that his supernatural knowledge did not proceed from any communication with evil spirits, but was the immediate gift of Heaven, he declared the intention of his coming was to enquire into the health of a good friend and brother of his, who possessed a certain living in the country, which he named; and, as he was old and infirm, to know what space of time was allotted to him in this frail state of mortality, that he might have the melancholy satisfaction of attending him in his last moments, and assisting him in his preparations for eternity.

The conjuror, who at once perceived the purport of this question, after a solemn pause, during which he seemed absorbed in contemplation, delivered this response to his consulter: 'Though I foresee some occurrences, 'I do not pretend to be omniscient. I 'know not to what age that clergy-'man's life will extend; but so far I 'can penetrate into the womb of time, 'as to discern, that the incumbent will 'survive his intended successor.' This dreadful sentence in a moment banished the blood from the face of the appalled consulter, who hearing his own doom pronounced, began to tremble in every joint; he lifted up his eyes in the agony of fear, and saying, 'The 'will of God be done!' withdrew in silent despondence, his teeth chattering with terror and dismay.

This client was succeeded by an old man about the age of seventy-five, who being resolved to purchase a lease, desired to be determined in the term of years by the necromancer's advice; observing, that as he had no children of his own body, and had no regard for his heirs at law, the purchase would be made with a view to his own convenience only; and therefore, considering his age, he himself hesitated in the period of the lease, between thirty and threescore years.

The conjuror, upon due deliberation, advised him to double the last specified term, because he distinguished in his features something portending extreme old age and second childhood, and he ought to provide for that state of incapacity, which otherwise would be attended with infinite misery and affliction. The superannuated wretch, thunderstruck with this prediction, held up his hands, and in the first transports of his apprehension, exclaimed, 'Lord have mercy upon me! I have 'not wherewithal to purchase such a 'long lease, and I have long outlived 'all my friends; what then must be-'come of me, sinner that I am, one 'hundred and twenty years hence!' Cadwallader (who enjoyed his terror) under pretence of alleviating his concern, told him that what he had prognosticated did not deprive him of the means which he and every person had in their power, to curtail a life of misfortune; and the old gentleman went away, seemingly comforted with the assurance, that it would always be in his power to employ an halter for his own deliverance.

Soon after the retreat of this elder, the magician was visited by one of those worthies, known among the Romans by the appellation of *Heredipetes*, who had

had amaſſed a large fortune by a cloſe attention to the immediate wants and weakneſs of raw unexperienced heirs. This honourable uſurer had ſold an annuity upon the life of a young ſpendthrift, being thereto induced by the affirmation of his phyſician, who had aſſured him his patient's conſtitution was ſo rotten, that he could not live one year to an end: he had, nevertheleſs, made ſhift to weather eighteen months, and now ſeemed more vigorous and healthy than he had ever been known; for he was ſuppoſed to have nouriſhed an hereditary pox from his cradle. Alarmed at this alteration, the ſeller came to conſult Cadwallader not only about the life of the annuitant, but alſo concerning the ſtate of his health at the time of his purchaſing the annuity, purpoſing to ſue the phyſician for falſe intelligence, ſhould the conjuror declare that the young man was ſound, when the doctor pronounced him diſeaſed. But this was a piece of ſatisfaction he did not obtain from the miſanthrope; who, in order to puniſh his ſordid diſpoſition, gave him to underſtand, that the phyſician had told him the truth, and nothing but the truth; and that the young gentleman was in a fair way of attaining a comfortable old age. 'That 'is to ſay,' cried the client, in the impatience of his mortification at this anſwer, 'bating accidents; for, thank 'God, the annuitant does not lead the 'moſt regular life; beſides, I am credibly informed he is cholerick and 'raſh; ſo that he may be concerned in 'a duel: then there are ſuch things as 'riots in the ſtreet, in which a rake's 'ſkull may be caſually cracked; he 'may be overturned in a coach, overſet 'in the river, thrown from a vicious 'horſe, overtaken with a cold, endan'gered by a ſurfeit; but what I place 'my chief confidence in, is an hearty 'pox, a diſtemper which hath been fa'tal to his whole family. Not but that 'the iſſue of all theſe things is uncer'tain; and expedients might be found 'which would more effectually anſwer 'the purpoſe. I know they have arts 'in India, by which a man can ſecure 'his own intereſt, in the ſalutation of 'a friendly ſhake by the hand; and I 'do not doubt that you who have lived 'in that country are maſter of the ſe'cret. To be ſure, if you was inclined 'to communicate ſuch a noſtrum, there 'are abundance of people who would 'purchaſe it at a very high price.'

Cadwallader underſtood this inſinuation, and was tempted to amuſe him in ſuch a manner as would tend to his diſgrace and confuſion; but, conſidering that the caſe was of too criminal a nature to be tampered with, he withſtood his deſire of puniſhing this rapacious cormorant any other way than by telling him, he would not impart the ſecret for his whole fortune ten times doubled; ſo that the uſurer retired, very much diſſatisfied with the iſſue of his conſultation.

The next perſon who preſented himſelf at this altar of intelligence, was an author, who recommended himſelf to a gratis advice, by obſerving that a prophet and poet were known by the ſame appellation among the ancients; and that, at this day, both the one and the other ſpoke by inſpiration. The conjuror refuſed to own this affinity, which, he ſaid, formerly ſubſiſted, becauſe both ſpecies of the *Vates* were the children of fiction; but as he himſelf did not fall under that predicament, he begged leave to diſown all connection with the family of the poets; and the poor author would have been diſmiſſed without his errand, though he offered to leave an ode as ſecurity for the magician's fee, to be paid from the profits of his firſt third night, had not Cadwallader's curioſity prompted him to know the ſubject of this gentleman's enquiry. He therefore told him, that in conſideration of his genius, he would for once ſatisfy him without a fee; and deſired him to ſpecify the doubts in which he wiſhed to be reſolved.

The ſon of Parnaſſus, glad of this condeſcenſion, for which he thanked the necromancer, gave him to underſtand, that he had ſome time before preſented a play in manuſcript to a certain great man, at the head of taſte, who had not only read and approved the performance, but alſo undertaken to introduce and ſupport it on the ſtage; that he (the author) was aſſured by this patron, that the play was already (in conſequence of his recommendation) accepted by one of the managers, who had faithfully promiſed to bring it to light; but that when he waited on this ſame manager, to know when he intended to put his production in rehearſal, the man declared he had never ſeen or heard of the

piece. 'Now, Mr. Conjuror,' said he, 'I want to know whether or not my 'play has been presented, and if I have 'any sort of chance of seeing it acted 'this winter.'

Cadwallader, who had, in his younger days, sported among the theatrical muses, began to lose his temper at this question, which recalled the remembrance of his own disappointments; and dispatched the author with an abrupt answer, importing, that the affairs of the stage were altogether without the sphere of his divination, being entirely regulated by the demons of dissimulation, ignorance, and caprice.

It would be an endless task to recount every individual response which our magician delivered in the course of his conjuration. He was consulted in all cases of law, physick, and trade, over and above the ordinary subjects of marriage and fornication; his advice and assistance were solicited by sharpers, who desired to possess an infallible method of cheating unperceived; by fortune-hunters, who wanted to make prize of widows and heiresses; by debauchees, who were disposed to lie with other men's wives; by coxcombs, who longed for the death of their fathers; by wenches with child, who wished themselves rid of their burdens; by merchants, who had insured above value, and thirsted after the news of a wreck; by under-writers, who prayed for the gift of prescience, that they might venture money upon such ships only as should perform the voyage in safety; by Jews, who wanted to foresee the fluctuations of stock; by usurers, who advance money upon undecided causes; by clients, who were dubious of the honesty of their council: in short, all matters of uncertain issue were appealed to this tribunal; and, in point of calculation, De Moivre was utterly neglected.

CHAP. XII.

THE CONJUROR AND HIS ASSOCIATE EXECUTE A PLAN OF VENGEANCE AGAINST CERTAIN INFIDELS WHO PRETEND TO DESPISE THEIR ART; AND PEREGRINE ATCHIEVES AN ADVENTURE WITH A YOUNG NOBLEMAN.

BY these means, the whole variety of characters undisguised, passed as it were in review before the confederates, who, by divers ingenious contrivances, punished the most flagrant offenders with as much severity as the nature of their plan would allow. At length, they projected a scheme for chastising a number of their own acquaintance, who had all along professed the utmost contempt for the talent of this conjuror, which they endeavoured to ridicule in all companies, where his surprizing art was the subject of discourse; not that they had sense and discernment enough to perceive the absurdity of his pretensions, but affected a singularity of opinion, with a view of insulting the inferior understandings of those who were deceived by such an idle impostor.

Peregrine, indeed, for obvious reasons, had always espoused their judgment in this case, and joined them in reviling the publick character of his friend: but he knew how far the capacities of those virtuosi extended, and had frequently caught them in the fact of recounting their exploits against the conjuror, which were the productions of their own invention only. On these considerations, his wrath was kindled against them, and he accordingly concerted measures with his coadjutor for overwhelming them with confusion and dismay.

In the first place, a report was spread by his emissaries, that the magician had undertaken to entertain their view with the appearance of any person whom his customers should desire to see, whether dead, or at the distance of a thousand leagues. This extraordinary proposal chancing to be the subject of conversation, in a place where most of those infidels were assembled, they talked of it in the usual style, and some of them swore the fellow ought to be pilloried for his presumption.

Our hero, seizing this favourable opportunity, acquiesced in their remarks, and observed with great vehemence, that it would be a meritorous action to put the rascal to the proof, and then toss him in a blanket for non-performance. They were wonderfully pleased with this suggestion, and forthwith determined to try the experiment: though, as they understood the apparition would be produced to one only at a time, they could not immediately agree in the choice of the person who should stand the first brunt of the magician's skill. While each of them severally excused himself from this preference on various pretences, Peregrine readily undertook the post,

poſt, expreſſing great confidence of the conjuror's incapacity to give him the leaſt cauſe of apprehenſion.

This point being ſettled, they detached one of their number to Crabtree, in order to beſpeak and adjuſt the hour and terms of the operation, which he inſiſted upon performing at his own apartment, where every thing was prepared for the occaſion. At the appointed time, they went thither in a body, to the number of ſeven, in full expectation of detecting the impoſtor; and were received with ſuch gloomy formality, as ſeemed to have an effect upon the countenances of ſome among them; though they were encouraged by the vivacity of Pickle, who affected a double ſhare of petulance, for the more effectual accompliſhment of his purpoſe.

Cadwallader made no reply to the interrogations they uttered, in the levity of their inſolence, at the firſt entrance, but ordered Hadgi to conduct them through the next room, that they might ſee there was no previous apparatus to affright their deputy with objects foreign to his undertaking. They found nothing but a couple of wax-tapers burning on a table that ſtood with a chair by it, in the middle of the apartment, and returned to the audience-chamber, leaving Peregrine by himſelf, to encounter the phantom of that perſon, whom they ſhould (without his knowledge) deſire the magician to conjure up to his view.

All the doors being ſhut, and the company ſeated, a profound ſilence enſued, together with a face of dreadful expectation, encouraged by the blue flame of the candles, which were tipped with ſulphur for that purpoſe, and heightened by the diſmal ſound of a large bell, which Hadgi tolled in the antichamber. Cadwallader having thus practiſed upon their ignorance and fear, deſired them to name the perſon to be produced. After ſome whiſpers among themſelves, one of them took the pen, and writing the name of Commodore Trunnion upon a ſlip of paper, put it into the hands of the magician, who roſe from his ſeat, and opening the door of his cloſet, diſplayed to their view a ſkull, with thigh bones croſſed upon a table covered with black cloth.

This melancholy ſpectacle made a remarkable impreſſion upon the imaginations of the company, already prepoſſeſſed by the previous ceremony; and they began to ſurvey one another with looks of conſternation, while Cadwallader, ſhutting himſelf in the cloſet, that was contiguous to the chamber in which his friend Peregrine was ſtationed, thruſt the label with his uncle's name, through a ſmall chink in the partition, according to agreement, muttering all the time a ſort of gibberiſh, that increaſed the panick of his audience; then returning to his chair, the knell was knolled again, and Pickle called aloud, 'Damn your mummery! why don't you diſpatch?'

This was a ſignal to Crabtree, who thus certified of his having received the paper, ſtood up and waved his wand in the figure of an S. The motion being thrice performed, their ears were all of a ſudden invaded by a terrible noiſe in the next room, accompanied with the voice of Peregrine, who exclaimed in a tone of horror and amazement, 'Guard me, Heaven! my uncle Trunnion!' This ejaculation had ſuch an effect upon the hearers, that two of them ſwooned with fear, a third fell upon his knees and prayed aloud, while the other three, in a tranſport of diſmay and diſtraction, burſt open the door, and ruſhed into the haunted chamber, where they found the table and chair overturned, and Peregrine extended, (in all appearance) without ſenſe or motion, upon the floor.

They immediately began to chafe his temples; and the firſt ſymptom of his recovery, which they perceived, was an hollow groan; after which he pronounced theſe words: 'Merciful 'powers! if I live, I ſaw the commodore with his black patch, in the very 'cloaths he wore at my ſiſter's wedding.' This declaration compleated their aſtoniſhment and terror; they obſerved a wildneſs in his looks, which he ſeemed to bend on ſomething concealed from their view; and were infected by his appearance to ſuch a pitch of ſuperſtition, that it would have been an eaſy matter to perſuade them that the chair and table were apparitions of their forefathers. However, they conducted Peregrine into the council-chamber, where the conjuror and Hadgi were employed in miniſtring to thoſe who had fainted. The patients having retrieved the uſe of their faculties, Cadwallader aſſuming a double portion of ſeverity in his aſpect, aſked if they were

were not ashamed of their former incredulity; declaring, that he was ready to give them more convincing proofs of his art upon the spot, and would immediately recal three generations of their progenitors from the dead, if they were disposed to relish such company. Then turning to one of them, whose great-grandfather had been hanged, 'Are you,' said he, 'ambitious of 'seeing the first remarkable personage 'of your family? Say the word, and 'he shall appear.'

This youth, who had been the most insolent and obstreperous of the whole society, and was now depressed with the same proportion of fear, alarmed at the proposal, assured the magician, he had no curiosity of that sort remaining; and that what he had already seen, would (he hoped) have a good effect upon his future life and conversation. Every one of these heroes made an acknowledgment and profession of the same kind, some of which were attended with tears; and Hadgi having provided chairs for the whole company, they departed exceedingly crest-fallen. Two of the number actually sickened with the agitation they had undergone, while our hero and his associate made themselves merry with the success of their enterprize.

But this scheme of fortune-telling did not engross his whole attention; he still continued to maintain his appearance in the beau-monde; and as his expence far exceeded his income, strove to contract intimacies with people of interest and power; he shewed himself regularly at court, paid his respects to them in all places of publick diversion, and frequently entered into their parties, either of pleasure or cards. In the course of this cultivation, he happened one evening, at a certain chocolate-house, to overlook a match at piquet, in which he perceived a couple of sharpers making prey of a young nobleman, who had neither temper nor skill sufficient to cope with such antagonists.

Our hero being a professed enemy to all knights of industry, could not bear to see them cheat in publick with such insolent audacity. Under pretence of communicating some business of importance, he begged the favour of speaking to the young gentleman in another corner of the room, and in a friendly manner cautioned him against the arts of his opponents. This hot-headed representative, far from thinking or owning himself obliged to Pickle for his good counsel, looked upon his advice as an insult upon his understanding; and replied with an air of ferocious displeasure, that he knew how to take care of his own concerns, and would not suffer either him or them to bubble him out of one shilling.

Peregrine, offended at the association, as well as at the ingratitude and folly of this conceited coxcomb, expressed his resentment, by telling him, that he expected at least an acknowledgement for his candid intention; but he found his intellects too much warped by his vanity, to perceive his own want of capacity and experience. Inflamed by this reproof, the young nobleman challenged him to play for five hundred pounds, with many opprobrious, or at least contemptuous terms of defiance, which provoked our hero to accept the proposal. After the other had disengaged himself from the old rooks, who were extremely mortified at the interruption, the two young champions sat down, and Fortune acting with uncommon impartiality, Pickle, by the superiority of his talents, in two hours won to the amount of as many thousand pounds, for which he was obliged to take his antagonist's note, the sharpers having previously secured his ready-money.

Frantick with his loss, the rash young man would have continued the game, and doubled stakes every time; so that Peregrine might have increased his acquisition to ten times the sum he had gained; but he thought he had already sufficiently chastised the presumption of the challenger, and was unwilling to empower Fortune to ravish from him the fruits of his success; he therefore declined my lord's proposal, unless he would play for ready-money; and his lordship having in vain tried his credit among the company, our adventurer withdrew, leaving him in an extasy of rage and disappointment.

As the insolence of his behaviour had increased with his ill-luck, and he had given vent to divers expressions, which Peregrine took amiss, our young gentleman resolved to augment his punishment, by teazing him with demands

which

which could not, he knew, be immediately satisfied; and next day sent Pipes to his father's house with the note, which was drawn payable upon demand. The debtor, who had gone to bed half distracted with his misfortune, finding himself waked with such a disagreeable dunn, lost all patience, cursed Pickle, threatened his messenger, blasphemed with horrible execrations, and made such a noise as reached the ears of his father; who ordering his son to be called into his presence, examined him about the cause of that uproar, which had disturbed the whole family. The young gentleman, after having essayed to amuse him with sundry equivocations, which served only to increase his suspicion, and desire of knowing the truth, acknowledged that he had lost some money over night at cards, to a gamester who had been so impertinent as to send a message, demanding it that morning, though he had told the fellow, that it would not suit him to pay it immediately. The father, who was a man of honour, reproached him with great severity for his profligate behaviour in general, and this scandalous debt in particular, which he believed to be some trifle; then giving him a bank note for five hundred pounds, commanded him to go and discharge it without loss of time. This well-principled heir took the money, but instead of waiting upon his creditor, he forthwith repaired to the gaming-house in hopes of retrieving his loss; and before he rose from the table, saw his note mortgaged for seven-eights of it's value.

Meanwhile, Pickle, incensed at the treatment which his servant had received, and informed of his lordship's second loss, which aggravated his resentment, determined to preserve no medium; and taking out a writ the same day, put it immediately in execution upon the body of his debtor, just as he stepped into his chair at the door of White's Chocolate-house. The prisoner being naturally fierce and haughty, attempted to draw upon the bailiffs, who disarmed him in a twinkling; and this effort served only to heighten his disgrace, which was witnessed by a thousand people, most of whom laughed very heartily at the adventure of a lord's being arrested.

Such a publick transaction could not long escape the knowledge of his father, who, that very day, had the satisfaction to hear that his son was in a spunging-house. In consequence of this information, he sent his steward to learn the particulars of the arrest, and was equally offended, surprized, and concerned, when he understood the nature of the debt, which he imagined his son had already discharged. Unwilling to pay such a considerable sum for a spendthrift, whom he had but too much indulged, and who in less than one week might involve himself in such another difficulty, the old gentleman wrote a letter to Peregrine, representing what a hardship it would be upon him to forfeit such sums by the indiscretion of a son, whose engagements he was not bound to fulfil, and desiring some mitigation in his demand, as it was not a debt contracted for value received, but incurred without subjecting him to the least damage or inconvenience.

Our adventurer no sooner received this letter, than he went in person to wait upon the author, to whom he, in a candid manner, related the particular circumstances of the match, together with the ingratitude and audacity of his son, which he owned had stimulated him to such measures as he otherwise would have scorned to take. The nobleman acknowledged, that the revenge was hardly adequate to the provocation, and condemned the conduct of his son with such justice and integrity, as disarmed Peregrine of his resentment, and disposed him to give an undoubted proof of his own disinterestedness, which he immediately exhibited, by producing the note, and tearing it to pieces, after having assured his lordship, that the writ should be withdrawn, and the prisoner discharged before night.

The earl, who perfectly well understood the value of money, and was no stranger to the characters of mankind, stood amazed at this sacrifice, which Pickle protested was offered by his esteem for his lordship: and after having complimented him upon his generosity, in a very uncommon strain of encomium, begged the favour of his acquaintance, and insisted upon his dining with him next day. The youth, proud of having met with such an opportunity to distinguish himself, in less than an hour performed every article of his promise; and in the morning was visited by the debtor, who came by the express order

of

of his father, to thank him for the obligation under which he was laid, and to aſk pardon for the offence he had given.

This condeſcenſion was very glorious for our hero, who graciouſly received his ſubmiſſion, and accompanied him to dinner, where he was careſſed by the old earl with marks of particular affection and eſteem. Nor was his gratitude confined to exterior civility; he offered him the uſe of his intereſt at court, which was very powerful, and repeated his deſire of ſerving him ſo preſſingly, that Peregrine thought he could not diſpenſe with the opportunity of aſſiſting his abſent friend Godfrey, in whoſe behalf he begged the influence of his lordſhip.

The earl, pleaſed with this requeſt, which was another proof of the young gentleman's benevolence, ſaid, he would not fail to pay the utmoſt regard to his recommendation; and in ſix weeks a captain's commiſſion was actually ſigned for the brother of Emilia, who was very agreeably ſurprized at the intimation he received from the war-office, though he was utterly ignorant of the canal through which he obtained that promotion.

CHAP. XIII.

PEREGRINE IS CELEBRATED AS A WIT AND PATRON, AND PROCEEDS TO ENTERTAIN HIMSELF AT THE EXPENCE OF WHOM IT DID CONCERN.

IN the mean time, Peregrine flouriſhed in the gay ſcenes of life, and (as I have already obſerved) had divers opportunities of profiting in the way of marriage, had not his ambition been a little too inordinate, and his heart ſtill biaſſed by a paſſion, which all the levity of youth could not balance, nor all the pride of vanity overcome. Nor was our hero unmarked in the world of letters and taſte: he had ſignalized himſelf in ſeveral poetical productions, by which he had acquired a good ſhare of reputation; not that the pieces were ſuch as ought to have done much honour to his genius; but any tolerable performance from a perſon of his figure, and ſuppoſed fortune, will always be conſidered by the bulk of readers as an inſtance of aſtoniſhing capacity; though the very ſame production, uſhered into the world with the name of an author in leſs affluent circumſtances, would be juſtly diſregarded and deſpiſed: ſo much is the opinion of moſt people influenced and over-awed by ridiculous conſiderations.

Be this as it will, our young gentleman was no ſooner diſtinguiſhed as an author, than he was marked out as a patron by all the ſtarving retainers to poetry; he was ſolemnized in odes, celebrated in epigrams, and fed with the milk of ſoft dedication. His vanity even reliſhed this incenſe; and though his reaſon could not help deſpiſing thoſe that offered it, not one of them was ſent away unowned by his munificence. He began to think himſelf, in good earneſt, that ſuperior genius which their flattery had deſcribed; he cultivated acquaintance with the wits of faſhion, and even compoſed in ſecret a number of bons mots, which he uttered in company as the impromptus of his imagination. In this practice, indeed, he imitated ſome of the moſt renowned geniuſes of the age, who (if the truth were known) have laboured in ſecret, with the ſweat of their brows, for many a repartee which they have vended as the immediate production of fancy and expreſſion. He was ſo ſucceſsful in this exerciſe of his talents, that his fame actually came in competition with that great man, who had long ſat at the helm of wit: and in a dialogue that once happened between them, on the ſubject of a cork-ſcrew, wherein the altercation was diſcharged (according to Bayes) ſlap for ſlap, daſh for daſh, our hero was judged to have the better of his lordſhip, by ſome of the minor ſatellites that commonly ſurround and reflect the rays of ſuch mighty luminaries.

In a word, he dipped himſelf ſo far in theſe literary amuſements, that he took the management of the pit into his direction, putting himſelf at the head of thoſe criticks who call themſelves the town; and in that capacity chaſtiſed ſeveral players, who had been rendered inſolent and refractory by unmerited ſucceſs. As for the new productions of the ſtage, though generally unſpirited and inſipid, they always enjoyed the benefit of his influence and protection; becauſe he never diſliked the performance ſo much as he ſympathized with the poor author, who ſtood behind the ſcenes in the moſt dreadful ſuſpenſe, trembling, as it were, on the very brink

of

of damnation: yet, though he extended his generosity and compassion to the humble and needy, he never let slip one opportunity of mortifying villainy and arrogance. Had the executive power of the legislature been vested in him, he would have doubtless devised strange species of punishment for all offenders against humanity and decorum; but, restricted as he was, he employed his invention in subjecting them to the ridicule and contempt of their fellow-subjects.

It was with this view he set on foot the scheme of conjuration, which was still happily carried on, and made use of the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader; though he sometimes converted this advantage to the purposes of gallantry, being (as the reader may have perceived) of a very amorous complexion. He not only acted the reformer, or rather the castigator, in the fashionable world, but also exercised his talents among the inferior class of people, who chanced to incur his displeasure.

One mischievous plan that entered our hero's imagination, was suggested by two advertisements published in the same paper, by persons who wanted to borrow certain sums of money, for which they promised to give undeniable security. Peregrine, from the style and manner of both, concluded they were written by attornies, a species of people for whom he entertained his uncle's aversion. In order to amuse himself, and some of his friends, with their disappointment, he wrote a letter signed A. B. to each advertiser, according to the address specified in the newspaper, importing, that if he would come with his writings to a certain coffee-house near the Temple, precisely at six o'clock in the evening, he would find a person sitting in the right-hand box next to the window, who would be glad to treat with him about the subject of his advertisement, and, should his security be liked, would accommodate him with the sum which he wanted to raise. Before the hour of this double appointment, Pickle, with his friend Cadwallader, and a few more gentlemen, to whom he had thought proper to communicate the plan, went to the coffee-house, and seated themselves near the place that was destined for their meeting.

The hope of getting money had such an evident effect upon their punctuality, that one of them arrived a considerable time before the hour; and having reconnoitred the room, took his station according to the direction he had received, fixing his eyes upon a clock that stood before him, and asking of the bar-keeper if it was not too slow. He had not remained in this posture many minutes, when he was joined by a strange figure, that waddled into the room with a bundle of papers in his bosom, and the sweat running over his nose. Seeing a man in the box to which he had been directed, he took it for granted he was the lender; and as soon as he could recover his breath, which was almost exhausted by the dispatch he had made, 'Sir,' said he, 'I presume you are the 'gentleman I was to meet about that 'loan.' Here he was interrupted by the other, who eagerly replied, 'A. B. 'Sir, I suppose.'—'The same,' cried the last comer; 'I was afraid I should 'be too late; for I was detained beyond 'my expectation, by a nobleman in the 'other end of the town that wants to 'mortgage a small trifle of his estate, 'about a thousand a year; and my watch 'happens to be in the hands of the 'maker, having met with an accident 'a few nights ago, which set it asleep. 'But howsomever, there's no time lost, 'and I hope this affair will be transacted 'to the satisfaction of us both. For 'my own part, I love to do good offices myself, and therefore I expect 'nothing but what is fair and honest of 'other people.'

His new friend was exceedingly comforted by this declaration, which he considered as a happy omen of his success; and the hope of fingering the cash operated visibly in his countenance, while he expressed his satisfaction at meeting with a person of such candour and humanity. 'The pleasure,' said he, 'of dealing with an easy conscientious 'man, is, in my opinion, superior to 'that of touching all the money upon 'earth; for what joy can be compared 'with what a generous mind feels in 'befriending it's fellow-creatures? I 'was never so happy in my life, as at 'one time in lending five hundred 'pounds to a worthy gentleman in distress, without insisting upon rigid security. Sir, one may easily distinguish 'an upright man by his countenance: 'for example now, I think I could take 'your word for ten thousand pounds.' The other with great joy protested, that

he was right in his conjecture, and returned the compliment a thousand fold: by which means the expectation of both was wound up to a very interesting pitch; and both at the same instant began to produce their papers, in the untying of which their hands shook with transports of eagerness and impatience, while their eyes were so intent upon their work, that they did not perceive the occupation of each other.

At length, one of them, having got the start of the other, and unrolled several skins of musty parchment, directed his view to the employment of his friend; and seeing him fumbling at his bundle, asked if that was a blank bond and conveyance which he had brought along with him. The other, without lifting up his eyes, or desisting from his endeavours to loose the knot, which by this time he had applied to his teeth, answered his question in the negative, observing, that the papers in his hand were the security which he proposed to give for the money.

This reply converted the looks of the enquirer into a stare of infinite stolidity, accompanied with the word, 'Anan!' which he pronounced in a tone of fear and astonishment. The other, alarmed at this note, cast his eyes towards the supposed lender, and was in a moment infected by his aspect. All the exultation of hope that sparkled in their eyes was now succeeded by disappointment and dismay; and while they gazed ruefully at each other, their features were gradually elongated, like the transient curls of a middle-row periwig.

This emphatick silence was, however, broke by the last comer, who, in a faultering accent, desired the other to recollect the contents of his letter. 'Of 'your letter!' cried the first, putting into his hand the advertisement he had received from Pickle; which he had no sooner perused, than he produced his own for the satisfaction of the other party: so that another gloomy pause ensued, at the end of which each uttered a profound sigh, or rather groan, and rising up, sneaked off without farther communication; he who seemed to be the most afflicted of the two, taking his departure with an exclamation of, 'Hum-'bugged, egad!'

Such were the amusements of our hero, though they did not engross his whole time, some part of which was dedicated to nocturnal riots and revels, among a set of young noblemen, who had denounced war against temperance, œconomy, and common sense, and were, indeed, the devoted sons of tumult, waste, and prodigality. Not that Peregrine relished those scenes, which were a succession of absurd extravagance, devoid of all true spirit, taste, or enjoyment: but his vanity prompted him to mingle with those who were intitled the choice spirits of the age; and his disposition was so pliable, as to adapt itself easily to the measures of his company, where he had not influence enough to act in the capacity of director. Their rendezvous was at a certain tavern, which might be properly styled the temple of excess, where they left the choice of their fare to the discretion of the landlord, that they might save themselves the pains of exercising their own reason; and in order to avoid the trouble of adjusting the bill, ordered the waiter to declare how much every individual must pay, without specifying the articles of the charge. This proportion generally amounted to two guineas per head for each dinner and supper, and frequently exceeded that sum; of which the landlord durst not abate, without running the risk of having his nose slit for his moderation.

But this was a puny expence, compared with that which they often incurred by the damage done to the furniture and servants, in the madness of their intoxication, as well as the loss they sustained at hazard, an amusement to which all of them had recourse in the progress of their debauches. This elegant diversion was introduced, encouraged, and promoted, by a crew of rapacious sharpers, who had made themselves necessary companions to this hopeful generation, by the talent of pimping and buffoonery. Though they were universally known, even by those they preyed upon, to have no other means of earning their livelihood, than the most infamous and fraudulent practices, they were caressed and courted by these infatuated dupes, when a man of honour, who would not join in their excesses, would have been treated with the utmost indignity and contempt.

Though Peregrine, in his heart, detested those abandoned courses, and was a professed enemy to the whole society of gamesters, whom he considered and always treated as the foes of human kind, he

he was insensibly accustomed to licentious riot, and even led imperceptibly into play by those cormorants, who are no less dangerous in the art of cheating, than by their consummate skill in working upon the passions of unwary youth. They are, for the most part, naturally cool, phlegmatick, and crafty, and by a long habit of dissimulation, have gained an absolute dominion over the hasty passions of the heart; so that they engage with manifest advantage over the impatience and impetuosity of a warm, undesigning temper, like that of our young gentleman, who, when he was heated with wine, misled by example, invited on one hand, and defied on the other, forgot all his maxims of caution and sobriety, and plunging into the reigning folly of the place, had frequent occasions to moralize in the morning upon the loss of the preceding night.

These penitential reflections were attended with many laudable resolutions of profiting by the experience which he had so dearly purchased; but he was one of those philosophers, who always put off, till another day, the commencement of their reformation.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

VOLUME THE FOURTH.

CHAP. I.

PEREGRINE RECEIVES A LETTER FROM HATCHWAY, IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH HE REPAIRS TO THE GARRISON, AND PERFORMS THE LAST OFFICES TO HIS AUNT. HE IS VISITED BY MR. GAUNTLET, WHO INVITES HIM TO HIS MARRIAGE.

IN this circle of amuſements our hero's time was parcelled out, and few young gentlemen of the age enjoyed life with greater reliſh, notwithſtanding thoſe intervening checks of Reaſon, which ſerved only to whet his appetite for a repetition of the pleaſures ſhe ſo pruduently condemned; when he received the following letter, by which he was determined to viſit his eſtate in the country.

'COUSIN PICKLE,

'I Hope you are in a better trim than 'your aunt, who has been faſt 'moored to her bed theſe ſeven weeks 'by ſeveral feet of under-water logging 'in her hold and hollop, whereby I 'doubt her planks are rotted, ſo as ſhe 'cannot chuſe but fall to pieces in a 'ſhort time. I have done all in my 'power to keep her tight and eaſy, and 'free from ſudden ſqualls that might 'overſtrain her. And here have been 'the doctors, who have ſkuttled her lower 'deck, and let out ſix gallons of water. 'For my own part, I wonder how the 'devil it came there; for you know as 'how it was a liquor ſhe never took in. 'But as for thoſe fellows the doctors, 'they are like unſkilful carpenters, that 'in mending one leak make a couple; 'and ſo ſhe fills again apace. But the 'worſt ſign of all is this here, ſhe won't 'let a drop of Nantz go betwixt the 'combings of her teeth, and has quite 'loſt the rudder of her underſtanding, 'whereby ſhe yaws woundily in her 'ſpeech, palavering about ſome foreign 'part called the New Geereuſalem, and 'wiſhing herſelf in a ſafe birth in the 'river Geordun. The parſon, I muſt 'ſay, ſtrives to keep her ſteady concern-'ing the navigation of her ſoul, and 'talks very ſenſibly of charity and the 'poor, whereof ſhe hath left a legacy 'of two hundred pounds in her will. 'And here has been Mr. Gamaliel, and 'your brother, my lord, demanding en-'trance at the gate, in order to ſee her; 'but I would not ſuffer them to come 'aboard, and pointed my patereroes, 'which made them ſheer off. Your 'ſiſter, Mrs. Clover, keeps cloſe watch 'upon her kinſwoman, without ever 'turning in; and a kind-hearted young 'woman it is. I ſhould be glad to ſee 'you at the garriſon, if the wind of

'your

'your inclination ſits that way; and 'mayhap it may be a comfort to your 'aunt, to behold you along-ſide of her, 'when her anchor is apeak. So no 'more at preſent, but reſts your friend 'and humble ſervant to command,

'JOHN HATCHWAY.'

Next morning, after the receipt of this epiſtle, Peregrine, in order to manifeſt his regard to his aunt, as well as his friendſhip for honeſt Jack, ſet out on horſeback for their habitation, attended by Pipes, who longed to ſee his old meſſmate; but before he reached the garriſon, Mrs. Hatchway had given up the ghoſt, in the threeſcore and fifth year of her age. The widower ſeemed to bear his loſs with reſignation, and behaved very decently upon the occaſion, though he did not undergo thoſe dangerous tranſports of ſorrow which ſome tender-hearted huſbands have felt at the departure of their wives. The lieutenant was naturally a philoſopher, and ſo well diſpoſed to acquieſce in the diſpenſations of Providence, that in this, as well as in every other emergency of his life, he firmly believed, that every thing which happened was for the beſt.

Peregrine's taſk, therefore, was not ſo great in comforting him, as in conſoling his own ſiſter, who with great poignancy and ſincerity of grief lamented the death of the only relation with whom ſhe had maintained any intimacy of correſpondence; for her mother was as implacable as ever in her enmity againſt her and Peregrine, and rather more determined in her rancour, that which was originally a ſudden tranſport of indignation being by this time ſettled into a confirmed inveteracy of hate. As for Gam, who was now dignified by the country people with the appellation of the young ſquire, he ſtill acted in the capacity of miniſter to the caprice and vengeance of his mother, taking all opportunities of diſturbing Julia's peace, ſlandering her reputation, and commiting outrages againſt the tenants and domeſticks of her huſband, who was a man of a quiet and timorous diſpoſition.

But the chief amuſement of young Pickle, in his later years, was the chace, in which he acquired ſome renown by his intrepidity and remarkable figure, which improved every day in deformity; inſomuch, as to ſuggeſt a ludicrous ſcheme of revenge to a gentleman in the neighbourhood. Having been affronted by the inſolence of Crookback, he cloathed a large baboon that was in his poſſeſſion in a dreſs that reſembled the hunting equipage of Gam, and ordering the animal to be ſet aſtride, and tied upon the back of his keeneſt hunter, turned them out one day after the hounds. The horſe in a little time out-ſtripping all the reſt in the field; the rider was miſtaken for Gam by the whole company, who ſaluted him as he paſſed with an halloo, obſerving, that the ſquire had his uſual good luck, in being better mounted than his neighbours. Pickle afterwards appearing in his own perſon, created great aſtoniſhment in the ſpectators, one of whom aſked if he had ſplit himſelf in twain, and pointed out his repreſentative, who was by this time almoſt up with the hounds: upon which, the identical Gam went in purſuit of the impoſtor. When he overtook him, he was ſo much enraged at the counterfeit, that he attacked the baboon whip in hand, and in all probability would have ſacrificed him to his reſentment, had not he been prevented by the other fox-hunters. They interpoſed, in order to make up the difference betwixt two brothers of the ſport, and were equally ſurprized and diverted, when they diſtinguiſhed the quality of Crookback's antagoniſt, which they reſcued from his rage, and re-conveyed to it's maſter.

Peregrine, at the requeſt of his friend Jack, took charge of his aunt's funeral, to which his parents were invited, though they did not think proper to appear, or pay the leaſt regard to his ſolicitations, when he deſired permiſſion to wait upon them in perſon. Nevertheleſs, old Gamaliel, at the inſtigation of his wife, afterwards obtained an order from Doctor's Commons, obliging Hatchway to produce the will of his wife, on the ſuppoſition that ſhe had bequeathed to him ſome part of the money which (he knew) was at her own diſpoſal. But from this ſtep he reaped no other ſatisfaction than that of finding himſelf altogether neglected by the teſtatrix, who had left all her effects to her huſband, except one thouſand pounds, with her jewels, to Julia's daughter, the benefaction mentioned in the lieutenant's letter, and ſome inconſiderable legacies to her favourite domeſticks.

A few

A few days after the interment of this good lady, our hero was agreeably surprized with a visit from his friend Godfrey, who had come to England in consequence of that promotion which he owed to his interest, though the soldier himself placed it to the credit of a certain courtier who had formerly promised to befriend him, and now finding his advancement unowned, very modestly arrogated the merit of it to himself. He communicated his good fortune to Pickle, who complimented him upon it as an event of which he had no precognition; and at the same time told him, that, in consequence of his preferment, his cousin at Windsor had consented to his being immediately united in the bands of wedlock with his lovely Sophy; that the wedding-day was already fixed; and that nothing would be wanting to his happiness, if Peregrine would honour the nuptials with his presence.

Our hero accepted the invitation with great eagerness, when he learned that Emilia would be there in quality of bride's maid; and now repeated what he had formerly written to his friend, namely, that he was not only willing, but extremely impatient, to atone for his mad behaviour to that young lady, by laying himself and his whole fortune at her feet. Godfrey thanked him for his honourable intention, and promised to use his influence, and that of Sophy, in his behalf, though he seemed dubious of their success, on account of his sister's delicacy, which could not pardon the least shadow of disrespect. He owned, indeed, he was not certain that she would appear in the same company with Pickle; but as she had made no stipulations on that score, he would interpret her silence in the most favourable manner, and keep her in ignorance of his design, until she should find it too late to retract with any decency. The hope of seeing and conversing with Emilia, and perhaps of being reconciled to her, after having suffered so much and so long from her displeasure, raised a tumult of ideas in his breast, and produced a strange inquietude of joy and perturbation. Gauntlet having staid with him a few days, and signified the time appointed for his spousals, took his leave, in order to prepare for the occasion; while Peregrine, with his friend Hatchway, made a tour among his acquaintance in the country, with a view of sounding their inclinations touching a project which he had lately conceived, of offering himself as a candidate for a certain borough in the neighbourhood, at the ensuing election for members of parliament.

This scheme, which was suggested to him by one of his quality patrons, would have succeeded according to his wish, had the election taken place immediately; but before that happened, his interest was overbalanced by some small accidents that will be recorded in the sequel. In the mean time he repaired to Windsor, on the eve of his friend's marriage, and understood from Godfrey that it was with the utmost difficulty he and Sophy could prevail upon his sister to be present at the wedding, when she was informed that her lover was invited; and that her consent had not been obtained, until they had promised, on the part of Peregrine, that he should not renew the old topick, nor even speak to her in the style of a former acquaintance.

Our young gentleman was nettled at this preliminary, to which, however, he said he would adhere; and so well did he think himself fortified with pride and resentment, that he resolved to behave towards her with such indifference, as would, he hoped, mortify her vanity, and thereby punish her for the implacability of her disposition. Armed with these sentiments, he was next day introduced by Godfrey to the bride, who received him with her usual sweetness of temper and affability; and Emilia being present, he saluted her with a distant bow, which she acknowledged with a cold curtsey, and an aspect of ice. Though this deportment confirmed his displeasure, her beauty undermined his resolution; he thought her charms were infinitely improved since their last parting; and a thousand fond images recurring to his imagination, he felt his whole soul dissolving into tenderness and love.

In order to banish those dangerous ideas, he endeavoured to enter into a gay conversation with Sophy, on the subject of the approaching ceremony; but his tongue performed it's office awkwardly; his eyes were attracted towards Emilia, as if they had been subject to the power of fascination; in spite of all his

his efforts, a deep ſigh eſcaped from his boſom; and his whole appearance indicated anxiety and confuſion.

The bridegroom perceiving his condition, abridged the viſit, and having conducted his companion to his own lodgings, expreſſed his concern at having been the innocent occaſion of his uneaſineſs, by expoſing him to the ſight of Emilia, which he perceived had given him pain. Peregrine, who had by this time recollected the dictates of his pride, aſſured him, that he was very much miſtaken in the cauſe of his diſorder, which was no other than a ſudden qualm, to which he had been for ſome time ſubject; and to ſhew him how philoſophically he could bear the diſdain of Emilia, which, with all deference to her conduct, he could not help thinking a little too ſevere, he deſired, as the bridegroom had made preparation for a private ball in the evening, that he would provide him with an agreeable partner; in which caſe he would exhibit undoubted proofs of the tranquillity of his heart. 'I was in hopes,' anſwered Godfrey, 'of being able, with 'the aſſiſtance of Sophy, to make up 'matters between you and my ſiſter, 'and for that reaſon kept her unengaged to any other gentleman for the 'night; but ſince ſhe was ſo peeviſhly 'obſtinate, I ſhall take care to accommodate you with a very handſome 'young lady, whoſe partner will not 'be ſorry to exchange her for Emilia.'

The thoughts of having an opportunity to coquet with another woman, under the eye of this implacable miſtreſs, ſupported his ſpirits during the ceremony, which put Gauntlet in poſſeſſion of his heart's deſire; and, by means of this cordial, he found himſelf ſo undiſturbed at dinner, though he ſat oppoſite to his fair enemy, that he was able to paſs ſome occaſional jokes upon the new-married couple, with ſome appearance of mirth and good-humour. Nor did Emily any otherwiſe ſeem affected by his preſence, than by excepting him from the participation of thoſe genial regards which ſhe diſtributed to the reſt of the company. This eaſineſs of behaviour on her ſide, reinforced his reſolution, by giving him pretence to call her ſenſibility in queſtion; for he could not conceive how any woman of acute feelings could ſit unmoved, in preſence of a man with whom ſhe had ſuch recent and intimate connection: not conſidering that ſhe had much more reaſon to condemn his affectation of unconcern, and that her external deportment might, like his own, be an effort of pride and reſentment.

This conteſt, in point of diſſimulation, continued till night, when the company was paired for dancing, and Peregrine began the ball by walking a minuet with the bride; then he took out the young lady to whom he was recommended by Gauntlet, being very well pleaſed to ſee that her perſon was ſuch as might have inſpired even Emily herſelf with jealouſy, though, at the ſame time, he perceived his miſtreſs coupled with a gay young officer, whom (with all due deference to his own qualifications) he conſidered as no deſpicable rival. However, he himſelf firſt began hoſtilities, by becoming all of a ſudden particular with his partner, whom he forthwith aſſailed with flattering compliments, that ſoon introduced the ſubject of love, upon which he expatiated with great art and elocution, uſing not only the faculty of ſpeech, but alſo the language of the eyes, in which he was a perfect connoiſſeur.

This behaviour ſoon manifeſted itſelf to the whole aſſembly, the greateſt part of whom believed that he was in good earneſt captivated by the charms of his partner, while Emilia penetrating into his deſign, turned her own artillery upon himſelf, by ſeeming to liſten with pleaſure to the addreſſes of his rival, who was no novice in the art of making love: ſhe even affected uncommon vivacity, and giggled aloud at every whiſper which he conveyed into her ear, inſomuch that ſhe, in her turn, afforded ſpeculation to the company, who imagined the young ſoldier had made a conqueſt of the bridegroom's ſiſter.

Pickle himſelf began to cheriſh the ſame opinion, which gradually invaded his good-humour, and at length filled his boſom with rage. He ſtrove to ſuppreſs his indignation, and called every conſideration of vanity and revenge to his aid; he endeavoured to wean his eyes from the fatal object that diſturbed him, but they would not obey his direction and command; he wiſhed himſelf deprived of all ſenſation, when he heard her laugh and ſaw her ſmile upon the officer; and, in the courſe of country-dancing, when he was obliged to join

join hands with her, the touch thrilled through all his nerves, and kindled a flame within him which he could not contain. In a word, his endeavours to conceal the situation of his thoughts were so violent, that his constitution could not endure the shock; the sweat ran down his forehead in a stream, the colour vanished from his cheeks, his knees began to totter, and his eye-sight to fail: so that he must have fallen at his full length upon the floor, had not he retired very abruptly into another room, where he threw himself upon a couch and fainted.

In this condition he was found by his friend, who seeing him withdraw with such symptoms of disorder, followed him thither; and when he recovered the use of his faculties, pressed him to make use of a bed in that house, rather than expose himself in the night air, by going home to his own lodgings; but not being able to prevail upon him to accept the offer, he wrapped him up in a cloak, and conducting him to the inn where he lodged, helped him to undress and go to bed, where he was immediately seized with a violent fit of the ague. Godfrey behaved with great tenderness, and would have actually bore him company all night, notwithstanding the circumstances of his own situation, had not his friend insisted upon his returning to the company, and making his apology to his partner for his sudden departure.

This was a step absolutely necessary towards maintaining the quiet of the assembly, which he found in great consternation, occasioned by his absence; for some of the ladies seeing the bridegroom follow the stranger in his retreat, the meaning of which they did not comprehend, began to be afraid of a quarrel. Emilia, upon pretence of that supposition, was so much alarmed, that she could not stand, and was fain to have recourse to a smelling-bottle.

The bride, who understood the whole mystery, was the only person that acted with deliberation and composure; she imputed Emilia's disorder to the right cause, which was no other than concern for the condition of her lover, and assured the ladies there was nothing extraordinary in Mr. Pickle's going off, he being subject to fainting fits, by which he was often overtaken without any previous notice. The arrival of Gauntlet confirmed the truth of this declaration; he made an apology to the company in the name of his friend, who, he told them, was suddenly taken ill, and they returned to their diversion of dancing: with this variation, Emilia was so disordered and fatigued, that she begged to be excused from continuing the exercise; and Peregrine's partner being disengaged, was paired with the young officer, for whom she was originally designed.

Meanwhile, the bride withdrew into another apartment, with her sister, and expostulated with her upon her cruelty to Mr. Pickle; assuring her, from Godfrey's information, that he had undergone a severe fit on her account, which, in all likelihood, would have a dangerous effect upon his constitution. Though Emily was inflexible in her answers to the kind remonstrances of the gentle Sophy, her heart was melting with the impressions of pity and love; and finding herself unable to perform the duty of her function, in putting the bride to bed, she retired to her own chamber, and, in secret, sympathized with the distemper of her lover.

In the morning, as early as decency would permit him to leave the arms of his dear wife, Captain Gauntlet made a visit to Peregrine, who had passed a very tedious and uneasy night, having been subject to short intervals of delirium, during which Pipes had found it very difficult to keep him fast belayed. He owned indeed to Godfrey, that his imagination had been haunted by the ideas of Emilia and her officer, which tormented him to an unspeakable degree of anguish and distraction; and that he would rather suffer death than a repetition of such excruciating reflections. He was, however, comforted by his friend; who assured him, that his sister's inclinations would in time prevail over all the endeavours of resentment and pride, illustrating this asseveration by an account of the manner in which she was affected by the knowledge of his disorder, and advising him to implore the mediation of Sophy, in a letter which she should communicate to Emilia.

This was an opportunity which our hero thought too favourable to be neglected; calling for paper, he sat up in his bed, and in the first transports of his emotion, wrote the following petition to Godfrey's amiable wife.

'DEAR MADAM,

'THE affliction of a contrite heart 'can never appeal to your benevolence in vain, and therefore I presume to approach you, in this season 'of delight, with the language of sorrow, requesting that you will espouse 'the cause of an unhappy lover, who 'mourns with unutterable anguish over 'his ruined hope, and intercede for 'my pardon with that divine creature, 'whom, in the intemperance and excess of passion, I have so mortally offended. Good Heaven! is my guilt 'inexpiable? Am I excluded from all 'hope of remission? Am I devoted to 'misery and despair? I have offered all 'the atonement which the most perfect 'and sincere penitence could suggest, 'and she rejects my humility and repentance. If her resentment would 'pursue me to the grave, let her signify 'her pleasure; and may I be branded 'with the name of villain, and remembered with infamy and detestation to 'all posterity, if I hesitate one moment 'in sacrificing a life which is odious to 'Emilia. Ah! Madam, while I thus 'pour forth the effusions of my grief 'and distraction, I look around the 'apartment in which I lie, and every 'well-known object that salutes my 'view, recals to my remembrance that 'fond, that happy day, on which the 'fair, the good, the tender-hearted 'Sophy, became my advocate, though 'I was a stranger to her acquaintance, 'and effected a transporting reconciliation between me and that same inchanting beauty, that is now so implacably incensed. If she is not satisfied with the pangs of remorse and 'disappointment, the transports of 'madness I have undergone, let her 'prescribe what farther penance she 'thinks I ought to endure; and when 'I decline her sentence, let me be the 'object of her eternal disdain.

'I commit myself, dear Madam! 'dear Sophy! dear partner of my 'friend! to your kind interposition. I 'know you will manage my cause, as 'a concern on which my happiness entirely depends; and I hope every thing 'from your compassion and beneficence, 'while I fear every thing from her 'rigour and barbarity. Yes! I call it 'barbarity; a savageness of delicacy, 'altogether inconsistent with the tenderness of human nature: and may the 'most abject contempt be my portion, 'if I live under it's scourge!—But I begin to rave. I conjure you by your 'own humanity and sweetness of disposition, I conjure you by your love 'for the man whom Heaven hath decreed your protector, to employ your 'influence with that angel of wrath, in 'behalf of your obliged and obedient 'servant,

'P. PICKLE.'

This epistle was immediately transmitted by Godfrey to his wife, who perused it with marks of the most humane sympathy; and carrying it into her sister's chamber, 'here is some-'thing,' said she, presenting the paper, 'which I must recommend to your seri-'ous attention.' Emilia, who immediately guessed the meaning of this address, absolutely refused to look upon it, or even to hear it read, till her brother entering her apartment, reprimanded her sharply for her obstinacy and pride, accused her of folly and dissimulation, and entered so warmly into the interests of his friend, that she thought him unkind in his remonstrances, and bursting into a flood of tears, reproached him with partiality and want of affection. Godfrey, who entertained the most perfect love and veneration for his sister, asked pardon for having given offence, and kissing the drops from her fair eyes, begged she would for his sake listen to the declaration of his friend.

Thus solicited, she could not refuse to hear the letter; which when he had repeated, she lamented her own fate in being the occasion of so much uneasiness; desired her brother to assure Mr. Pickle that she was not a voluntary enemy to his peace; on the contrary, she wished him all happiness, though she hoped he would not blame her for consulting her own, in avoiding any future explanation or connection with a person whose correspondence she found herself under a necessity to renounce.

In vain did the new-married couple exhaust their eloquence in attempting to prove, that the reparation which our hero had offered was adequate to the injury she had sustained; that in reconciling herself to a penitent lover, who subscribed to her own terms of submission,

-ſion, her honour would be acquitted by the moſt ſcrupulous and ſevere judges of decorum; and that her inflexibility would be juſtly aſcribed to the pride and inſenſibility of her heart. She turned a deaf ear to all their arguments, exhortations, and intreaties, and threatened to leave the houſe immediately, if they would not promiſe to drop that ſubject of diſcourſe.

Godfrey, very much chagrined at the bad ſucceſs of his endeavours, returned to his friend, and made as favourable a report of the affair as the nature of his converſation with Emilia would permit: but as he could not avoid mentioning her reſolution in the cloſe, Peregrine was obliged to drink again the bitter draught of diſappointment, which put his paſſions into ſuch a ſtate of agitation, as produced a ſhort extaſy of deſpair, in which he acted a thouſand extravagancies. This paroxyſm, however, ſoon ſubſided into a ſettled reſerve of gloomy reſentment, which he in ſecret indulged, detaching himſelf as ſoon as poſſible from the company of the ſoldier, on pretence of retiring to reſt.

While he lay ruminating upon the circumſtances of his preſent ſituation, his friend Pipes, who knew the cauſe of his anxiety, and firmly believed that Emilia loved his maſter in her heart, howſoever ſhe might attempt to diſguiſe her ſentiments; I ſay, Thomas was taken with a conceit which he thought would ſet every thing to rights, and therefore put it in execution without farther delay. Laying aſide his hat, he ran directly to the houſe of Sophy's father, and affecting an air of ſurprize and conſternation, to which he had never before been ſubject, thundered at the door with ſuch an alarming knock, as in a moment brought the whole family into the hall. When he was admitted, he began to gape, ſtare, and pant, at the ſame time, and made no reply, when Godfrey aſked what was the matter, till Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her apprehenſions about his maſter. When Pickle's name was mentioned, he ſeemed to make an effort to ſpeak, and in a bellowing tone pronounced, 'Brought him-'ſelf up, ſplit my top-ſails!' So ſaying, he pointed to his own neck, and roſe upon his tiptoes, by way of explaining the meaning of his words.

Godfrey, without ſtaying to aſk another queſtion, ruſhed out, and flew towards the inn, with the utmoſt horror and concern; while Sophy, who did not rightly underſtand the language of the meſſenger, addreſſing herſelf to him a ſecond time, ſaid with great earneſtneſs, 'I hope no accident has happened to 'Mr. Pickle!'—'No accident at all,' replied Tom; 'he has only hanged 'himſelf for love.' Theſe words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when Emilia, who ſtood liſtening at the parlour door, ſhrieked aloud, and dropped down ſenſeleſs upon the floor; while her ſiſter, who was almoſt equally ſhocked at the intelligence, had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of her maid, by whom ſhe was ſupported from falling.

Pipes hearing Emily's voice, congratulated himſelf upon the ſucceſs of his ſtratagem. He ſprung to her aſſiſtance, and lifting her up into an eaſy-chair, ſtood by her, until he ſaw her recover from her ſwoon, and heard her call upon his maſter's name with all the frenzy of deſpairing love. Then he bent his courſe back to the inn, overjoyed at the opportunity of telling Peregrine what a confeſſion he had extorted from his miſtreſs, and extremely vain of this proof of his own ſagacity.

In the mean time, Godfrey arriving at the houſe in which he ſuppoſed this fatal cataſtrophe had happened, ran up ſtairs to Peregrine's chamber, without ſtaying to make any enquiry below; and finding the door locked, burſt it open with one ſtroke of his foot. But what was his amazement, when, upon entrance, our hero ſtarting up from the bed, ſaluted him with a boiſterous exclamation of 'Z——ds! who's there?' He was ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment, which alſo rivetted him to the place where he ſtood, ſcarce crediting the teſtimony of his own ſenſes; till Peregrine, with an air of diſcontent, which denoted him diſpleaſed with his intruſion, diſpelled his apprehenſion by a ſecond addreſs, ſaying, 'I ſee you conſider me as a friend, by 'your uſing me without ceremony'

The ſoldier, thus convinced of the falſhood of the information he had received, began to imagine that Pickle had projected the plan which was executed by his ſervant; and looking upon it as a piece of unjuſtifiable fineſſe, which might be attended with very melancholy conſequences to his ſiſter or wife, he anſwered, in a ſupercilious tone, that Mr. Pickle muſt blame himſelf for the

interruption of his repoſe, which was entirely owing to the ſorry jeſt he had ſet on foot.

Pickle, who was the child of paſſion, and more than half mad with impatience before this viſit, hearing himſelf treated in ſuch a cavalier manner, advanced cloſe up to Godfrey's breaſt, and aſſuming a ſtern, or rather frantick countenance, 'Hark ye, Sir!' ſaid he; 'you 'are miſtaken if you think I jeſt; I am 'in downright earneſt, I aſſure you.' Gauntlet, who was not a man to be brow-beaten, ſeeing himſelf thus bearded by a perſon of whoſe conduct he had, he thought, reaſon to complain, put on his military look of defiance, and erecting his cheſt, replied with an exalted voice, 'Mr. Pickle, whether you was in 'jeſt or earneſt, you muſt give me leave 'to tell you, that the ſcheme was child-'iſh, unſeaſonable, and unkind, not to 'give it an harſher term.'—'Death, Sir!' cried our adventurer, 'you triſle with 'my diſquiet: if there is any meaning 'in your inſinuation, explain yourſelf, 'and then I ſhall know what anſwer it 'will befit me to give.'—'I came with 'very different ſentiments,' reſumed the ſoldier; 'but ſince you urge me to ex-'poſtulation, and behave with ſuch un-'provoked loftineſs of diſpleaſure, I 'will, without circumlocution, tax you 'with having committed an outrage 'upon the peace of my family, in ſend-'ing your fellow to alarm us with ſuch 'an abrupt account of your having done 'violence upon yourſelf.' Peregrine, confounded at this imputation, ſtood ſilent, with a moſt ſavage aſpect of ſurprize, eager to know the circumſtance to which his accuſer alluded, and incenſed to find it beyond the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While theſe two irritated friends ſtood fronting each other with mutual indignation in their eyes and attitudes, they were joined by Pipes; who, without taking the leaſt notice of the ſituation in which he found them, told his maſter, that he might up with the top-gallant maſts of his heart, and out with his rejoicing pendants; for as to Miſtreſs Emily, he had clapped her helm a-weather, the veſſel wore, and now ſhe was upon the other tack, ſtanding right into the harbour of his good-will.

Peregrine, who was not yet a connoiſſeur in the terms of his lacquey, commanded him upon pain of his diſpleaſure to be more explicit in his intelligence; and by dint of divers queſtions, obtained a perfect knowledge of the ſcheme which he had put in execution for his ſervice. This information perplexed him not a little; he would have chaſtiſed his ſervant upon the ſpot for his temerity, had he not plainly perceived that the fellow's intention was to promote his eaſe and ſatisfaction: and on the other hand he knew not how to acquit himſelf of the ſuſpicion which he ſaw Godfrey entertain of his being the projector of the plan, without condeſcending to an explanation, which his preſent diſpoſition could not brook. After ſome pauſe, however, turning to Pipes with a ſevere frown, 'Raſcal!' ſaid he, 'this is the ſecond time I have 'ſuffered in the opinion of that lady 'by your ignorance and preſumption; 'if ever you intermiddle in my affairs 'for the future, without expreſs order 'and direction, by all that's ſacred, I 'will put you to death without mercy! 'Away! and let my horſe be ſaddled 'this inſtant.'

Pipes having withdrawn, in order to perform this piece of duty, our young gentleman, addreſſing himſelf again to the ſoldier, and laying his hand upon his breaſt, ſaid, with a ſolemnity of regard, 'Captain Gauntlet, upon my ho-'nour, I am altogether innocent of that 'ſhallow device which you impute to 'my invention; and I don't think you do 'juſtice either to my intellects or honour, 'in ſuppoſing me capable of ſuch inſo-'lent abſurdity. As for your ſiſter, I 'have once in my life affronted her in 'the madneſs and impetuoſity of deſire; 'but I have made ſuch acknowledg-'ments, and offered ſuch atonement, 'as few women of her ſphere would 'have refuſed; and, before God! I am 'determined to endure every torment of 'diſappointment and deſpair, rather than 'proſtrate myſelf again to the cruelty 'of her unjuſtifiable pride.' So ſaying, he ſtalked ſuddenly down ſtairs, and took horſe immediately, his ſpirits being ſupported by reſentment, which prompted him to vow within himſelf, that he would ſeek conſolation for the diſdain of Emilia, in the poſſeſſion of the firſt willing wench he ſhould meet upon the road.

While he ſet out for the garriſon with theſe ſentiments, Gauntlet in a ſuſpenſe, between anger, ſhame, and concern, returned

turned to the house of his father-in-law, where he found his sister still violently agitated from the news of Peregrine's death, the mystery of which he forthwith unravelled, recounting at the same time the particulars of the conversation which happened at the inn, and describing the demeanour of Pickle with some expressions of asperity, which were neither agreeable to Emilia, nor approved by the gentle Sophy, who tenderly chid him, for allowing Peregrine to depart in terms of misunderstanding.

CHAP. II.

PEREGRINE SETS OUT FOR THE GARRISON, AND MEETS WITH A NYMPH ON THE ROAD, WHOM HE TAKES INTO KEEPING, AND METAMORPHOSES INTO A FINE LADY.

IN the mean time, our hero jogged along in a profound reverie, which was disturbed by a beggar-woman and her daughter, who solicited him for alms, as he passed them on the road. The girl was about the age of sixteen, and notwithstanding the wretched equipage in which she appeared, exhibited to his view a set of agreeable features, enlivened with the complexion of health and chearfulness. The resolution I have already mentioned was still warm in his imagination; and he looked upon this young mendicant as a very proper object for the performance of his vow. He therefore entered into a conference with the mother, and for a small sum of money purchased her property in the wench, who did not require much courtship and entreaty, before she consented to accompany him to any place that he should appoint for her habitation.

This contract being settled to his satisfaction, he ordered Pipes to seat his acquisition behind him upon the crupper, and alighting at the first publick-house which they found upon the road, he wrote a letter to Hatchway, desiring him to receive this hedge-inamorata, and direct her to be cleaned and cloathed in a decent manner with all expedition, so that she should be touchable upon his arrival, which (on that account) he would defer for the space of one day. This billet, together with the girl, he committed to the charge of Pipes, after having laid strong injunctions upon him to abstain from all attempts upon her chastity, and ordered him to make the best of his way to the garrison, while he himself crossed the country to a market-town, where he proposed to spend the night.

Tom thus cautioned, proceeded with his charge, and being naturally taciturn, opened not his lips until he had performed the best half of his journey. But Thomas, notwithstanding his irony appearance, was in reality composed of flesh and blood. His desire being titillated by the contact of a buxom wench, whose right-arm embraced his middle as he rode, his thoughts began to mutiny against his master, and he found it almost impossible to withstand the temptation of making love.

Nevertheless, he wrestled with these rebellious suggestions with all the reason that Heaven had enabled him to exert; and that being totally overcome, his victorious passion suddenly broke out in this address. 'Sblood! a believe master think I have no more stuff in my body than a dried haddock, to turn me adrift in the dark with such a spanker. D'ye think he don't, my dear?' To this question his fellow-traveller replied, 'Swanker anan!' And the lover resumed his suit, saying, 'Oons! how you tickle my timber! Something shoots from your arm through my stowage, to the very keel-stone. Han't you got quicksilver in your hand?'—'Quicksilver!' said the lady, D—n the silver that has crossed my hand this month. D'ye think if I had silver, I shouldn't buy me a smock?'—'Adsooks! you baggage,' cried the lover, 'you shouldn't want a smock, nor a petticoat neither, if you could have a kindness for a true-hearted sailor, as sound and strong as a nine-inch cable, that would keep all clear above-board, and every thing snug under the hatches.'—'Curse your gum,' said the charmer, 'what's your gay balls and your hatchets to me?'—'Do but let us bring to a little,' answered the woer, whose appetite was by this time whetted to a most ravenous degree, 'and I'll teach you to box the compass, my dear. Ah! you strapper, what a jolly bitch you are!'—'Bitch!' exclaimed this modern dulcinea, incensed at the opprobrious term; 'such a bitch as your mother, you dog!

'D—n you, I've a good mind to box 'your jaws instead of your come-piss. 'I'll let you know as how I am meat 'for your master, you saucy black-'guard. You are worse than a dog, 'you old flinty faced, flea-bitten scrub: 'a dog wears his own coat, but you 'wear your master's.'

Such a torrent of disgraceful epithets from a person who had no cloaths at all, converted the gallant's love into choler, and he threatened to dismount and seize her to a tree, when she should have a taste of his cat and nine tails athwart her quarters; but, instead of being intimidated by his menaces, she set him at defiance, and held forth with such a flow of eloquence, as would have intitled her to a considerable share of reputation, even among the nymphs of Billingsgate; for this young lady, over and above a natural genius for altercation, had her talents cultivated among the venerable society of weeders, podders, and hoppers, with whom she had associated from her tender years. No wonder then, that she soon obtained a compleat victory over Pipes, who (as the reader may have observed) was very little addicted to the exercise of speech: indeed he was utterly disconcerted by her volubility of tongue; and being altogether unfurnished with answers to the distinct periods of her discourse, very wisely chose to save himself the expence of breath and argument, by giving her a full swing of cable, so that she might bring herself up; while he rode onwards, in silent composure, without taking any more notice of his fair fellow-traveller than if she had been his master's cloak-bag.

In spite of all the dispatch he could make, it was late before he arrived at the garrison, where he delivered the letter and the lady to the lieutenant, who no sooner understood the intention of his friend, than he ordered all the tubs in the house to be carried into the hall and filled with water. Tom having provided himself with swabs and brushes, divested the fair stranger of her variegated drapery, which was immediately committed to the flames, and performed upon her soft and sleek person the ceremony of scrubbing, as it is practised on board of the king's ships of war. Yet the nymph herself did not submit to this purification without repining; she cursed the director, who was upon the spot, with many abusive allusions to his wooden leg; and as for Pipes, the operator, she employed her talons so effectually upon his face, that the blood ran over his nose in sundry streams; and next morning, when those rivulets were dry, his countenance resembled the rough bark of a plum-tree, plastered with gum. Nevertheless, he did his duty with great perseverance; cut off her hair close to the scalp; handled his brushes with dexterity; applied his swabs of different magnitude and texture, as the case required; and lastly, rinsed the whole body with a dozen pails of cold water, discharged upon her head.

These ablutions being executed, he dried her with towels, accommodated her with a clean shift, and acting the part of a valet de chambre, cloathed her from head to foot in clean and decent apparel, which had belonged to Mrs. Hatchway; by which means her appearance was altered so much for the better, that when Peregrine arrived next day, he could scarce believe his own eyes. He was, for that reason, extremely well pleased with his purchase, and now resolved to indulge a whim which seized him at the very instant of his arrival.

He had (as I believe the reader will readily allow) made considerable progress in the study of character, from the highest rank to the most humble station of life, and found it diversified in the same manner, through every degree of subordination and precedency: nay, he moreover observed, that the conversation of those who are dignified with the appellation of polite company, is neither more edifying nor entertaining than that which is met with among the lower classes of mankind; and that the only essential difference in point of demeanour is the form of an education, which the meanest capacity can acquire without much study or application. Possessed of this notion, he determined to take the young mendicant under his own tutorage and instruction; in consequence of which he hoped he should, in a few weeks, be able to produce her in company, as an accomplished young lady of uncommon wit, and an excellent understanding.

This extravagant plan he forthwith began to execute with great eagerness and industry; and his endeavours succeeded even beyond his expectation.

The

The obſtacle, in ſurmounting of which he found the greateſt difficulty, was an inveterate habit of ſwearing, which had been indulged from her infancy, and confirmed by the example of thoſe among whom ſhe had lived. However, ſhe had the rudiments of good-ſenſe from nature, which taught her to liſten to wholeſome advice, and was ſo docile as to comprehend and retain the leſſons which her governor recommended to her attention; inſomuch, that he ventured in a few days to preſent her at table, among a ſet of country ſquires, to whom ſhe was introduced as niece to the lieutenant. In that capacity, ſhe ſat with becoming eaſineſs of mien, (for ſhe was as void of the *mauvaiſe honte* as any ducheſs in the land) bowed very graciouſly to the compliments of the gentlemen; and though ſhe ſaid little or nothing, becauſe ſhe was previouſly cautioned on that ſcore, ſhe more than once gave way to laughter, and her mirth happened to be pretty well timed. In a word, ſhe attracted the applauſe and admiration of the gueſts; who, after ſhe was withdrawn, complimented Mr. Hatchway upon the beauty, breeding, and good-humour of his kinſwoman.

But what contributed more than any other circumſtance to her ſpeedy improvement, was ſome ſmall inſight into the Primer, which ſhe had acquired at a day-ſchool, during the life of her father, who was a day-labourer in the country. Upon this foundation did Peregrine build a moſt elegant ſuperſtructure; he culled out choice ſentences from Shakeſpeare, Otway, and Pope, and taught her to repeat them with an emphaſis and theatrical cadence: he then inſtructed her in the names and epithets of the moſt celebrated players, which he directed her to pronounce occaſionally, with an air of careleſs familiarity; and perceiving that her voice was naturally clear, he enriched it with remnants of opera-tunes, to be hummed during a pauſe in converſation, which is generally ſupplied with the circulation of a pinch of ſnuff. By means of this cultivation, ſhe became a wonderful proficient in the polite graces of the age; ſhe, with great facility, comprehended the ſcheme of whiſt, though cribbage was her favourite game, with which ſhe had amuſed herſelf in her vacant hours, from her firſt entrance into the profeſſion of hopping; and brag ſoon grew familiar to her practice and conception.

Thus prepared, ſhe was expoſed to the company of her own ſex, being firſt of all viſited by the parſon's daughter, who could not avoid ſhewing that civility to Mr. Hatchway's niece, after ſhe had made her publick appearance at church. Mrs. Clover, who had a great ſhare of penetration, could not help entertaining ſome doubts about this ſame relation, whoſe name ſhe had never heard the uncle mention, during the whole term of her reſidence at the garriſon: but as the young lady was treated in that character, ſhe would not refuſe her acquaintance, and after having ſeen her at the caſtle, actually invited Miſs Hatchway to her houſe. In ſhort, ſhe made a progreſs through almoſt all the families in the neighbourhood, and, by dint of her quotations, (which, by the bye, were not always judiciouſly uſed) ſhe paſſed for a ſprightly young lady, of uncommon learning and taſte.

Peregrine having, in this manner, initiated her in the beau monde of the country, conducted her to London, where ſhe was provided with private lodgings and a female attendant; and put her immediately under the tuition of his valet de chambre, who had orders to inſtruct her in dancing and the French language. He attended her to plays and concerts three or four times a week; and when our hero thought her ſufficiently accuſtomed to the ſight of great company, he ſquired her in perſon to a publick aſſembly, and danced with her among all the gay ladies of faſhion: not but that there was ſtill an evident air of ruſticity and aukwardneſs in her demeanour, which was interpreted into an agreeable wildneſs of ſpirit, ſuperior to the forms of common breeding. He afterwards found means to make her acquainted with ſome diſtinguiſhed patterns of her own ſex, by whom ſhe was admitted into the moſt elegant parties, and continued to make good her pretenſions to gentility with great circumſpection. But, one evening, being at cards with a certain lady, whom ſhe detected in the very fact of unfair conveyance, ſhe taxed her roundly with the fraud, and brought upon herſelf ſuch a torrent of ſarcaſtick reproof, as overbore all her maxims of caution, and burſt open the flood-gates of her own natural repartee,

repartee, twanged off with the appellation of b—— and w——, which she repeated with great vehemence, in an attitude of manual defiance, to the terror of her antagonist, and the astonishment of all present: nay, to such an unguarded pitch was she provoked, that starting up, she snapped her fingers, in testimony of disdain; and, as she quitted the room, applied her hand to that part which was the last of her that disappeared, inviting the company to kiss it, by one of it's coarsest denominations.

Peregrine was a little disconcerted at this oversight in her behaviour; which, by the demon of intelligence, was in a moment conveyed to all the private companies in town: so that she was absolutely excluded from all polite communication; and Peregrine, for the present, disgraced among the modest part of his female acquaintance. many of whom not only forbade him their houses, on account of the impudent insult he had committed upon their honour as well as understanding, in palming a common trull upon them, as a young lady of birth and education; but also aspersed his family, by affirming that she was actually his own cousin-german, whom he had precipitately raised from the most abject state of humility and contempt. In revenge for this calumny, our young gentleman explained the whole mystery of her promotion, together with the motives that induced him to bring her into the fashionable world; and repeated among his companions the extravagant encomiums which had been bestowed upon her by the most discerning matrons of the age.

Meanwhile, the infanta herself being rebuked by her benefactor for this instance of misbehaviour, promised faithfully to keep a stricter guard for the future over her conduct, and applied herself with great assiduity to the studies, in which she was assisted by the Swiss, who gradually lost the freedom of his heart, while she was profiting by his instruction. In other words, she made a conquest of her preceptor, who yielding to the instigations of the flesh, chose a proper opportunity to declare his passion, which was powerfully recommended by his personal qualifications; and his intention being honourable, she listened to his proposals of espousing her in private. In consequence of this agreement, they made an elopement together; and being buckled at the Fleet, consummated their nuptials in private lodgings by the Seven Dials, from which the husband next morning sent a letter to our hero, begging forgiveness for the clandestine step he had taken, which he solemnly protested was not owing to any abatement in his inviolable regard for his master, whom he should always honour and esteem to his latest breath, but entirely to the irresistible charms of the young lady, to whom he was now so happy as to be joined in the silken bonds of marriage.

Peregrine, though at first offended at his valet's presumption, was, upon second thoughts, reconciled to the event, by which he was delivered from an incumbrance; for by this time he had performed his frolick, and begun to be tired of his acquisition. He reflected on the former fidelity of the Swiss, which had been manifested in a long course of service and attachment; and thinking it would be cruelly severe to abandon him to poverty and distress for one venial trespass, he resolved to pardon what he had done, and enable him in some shape to provide for the family which he had entailed upon himself.

With these sentiments, he sent a favourable answer to the delinquent, desiring to see him as soon as his passion should permit him to leave the arms of his spouse for an hour or two; and Hadgi, in obedience to this intimation, repaired immediately to the lodgings of his master, before whom he appeared with a most penitential aspect. Peregrine, though he could scarce help laughing at his rueful length of face, reprimanded him sharply for his disrespect and ingratitude, in taking that by stealth which he might have had for asking. The culprit assured him, that next to the vengeance of God, his master's displeasure was that which, of all evils, he dreaded to incur; but that love had distracted his brain in such a manner, as to banish every other consideration but that of gratifying his desire; and he owned, that he should not have been able to preserve his fidelity and duty to his own father, had they interfered with the interest of his passion. He then appealed to his master's own heart for the remission of his guilt, alluding to certain circumstances of our hero's conduct, which evinced the desperate effects of love. In short, he made such an

Stothard del. Heath sculp.

Plate IX.

Publish'd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Sept.r 30. 1781.

an apology, as extorted a smile from his offended judge, who not only forgave his transgression, but also promised to put him in some fair way of earning a comfortable subsistence.

The Swiss was so much affected with this instance of generosity, that he fell upon his knees, and kissed his hand, praying to Heaven with great fervour to make him worthy of such goodness and condescension. His scheme, he said, was to open a coffee-house and tavern in some creditable part of the town, in hopes of being favoured with the custom of a numerous acquaintance he had made among upper servants and reputable tradesmen, not doubting that his wife would be an ornament to his bar, and a careful manager of his affairs. Peregrine approved of the plan, towards the execution of which he made him and his wife a present of five hundred pounds, together with the promise of erecting a weekly club among his friends, for the reputation and advantage of the house.

Hadgi was so transported with his good fortune, that he ran to Pipes, who was in the room, and having hugged him with great cordiality, and made his obedience to his master, hied him home to his bride, to communicate his happiness, cutting capers, and talking to himself all the way.

CHAP. III.

HE IS VISITED BY PALLET; CONTRACTS AN INTIMACY WITH A NEWMARKET NOBLEMAN; AND IS BY THE KNOWING ONES TAKEN IN.

THIS affair being settled, and our adventurer, for the present, free of all female connections, he returned to his former course of fast living among the bucks of the town, and performed innumerable exploits among whores, bullies, rooks, constables, and justices of the peace.

In the midst of these occupations, he was one morning visited by his old fellow-traveller Pallet, whose appearance gave him equal surprize and concern. Though the weather was severe, he was cloathed in the thin summer-dress which he had wore at Paris, and was now not only thread-bare, but in some parts actually patched; his stockings, by a repetition of that practice known among œconomists by the terms of *coaxing*, hung like pudding-bags about his ankles; his shirt, though new washed, was of the saffron hue, and in divers places appeared through the crannies of his breeches; he had exchanged his own hair for a smoke-dried tye-periwig, which all the flour in his dredging-box had not been able to whiten; his eyes were sunk; his jaws lengthened beyond their usual extension; and he seemed twenty years older than he looked when he and our hero parted at Rotterdam.

In spite of all these evidences of decay, he accosted him with a meagre affectation of content and good-humour; struggled piteously to appear gay and unconcerned; professed his joy at seeing him in England; excused himself for having delayed so long to come and present his respects; alledging, that since his return he had been a mere slave to the satisfaction of some persons of quality and taste, who had insisted upon his finishing some pieces with the utmost expedition.

Peregrine received him with that compassion and complaisance which was natural to his disposition; enquired about the health of Mrs. Pallet and his family, and asked if his friend the doctor was in town. The painter seemed to have resumed his resentment against that gentleman, of whom he spoke in contemptuous terms. 'The doctor,' said he, 'is so much overshadowed with 'presumption and self-conceit, that his 'merit has no relief. It does not rise. 'There is no keeping in the picture, 'my dear Sir. All the same as if I 'were to represent the moon under a 'cloud; there will be nothing but a 'deep mass of shade, with a little tiny 'speck of light in the middle, which 'would only serve to make, as it were, 'the darkness visible: you understand 'me. Had he taken my advice, it 'might have been better for him; but 'he is bigotted to his own opinion. You 'must know, Mr. Pickle, upon our 'return to England, I counselled him to 'compose a little, smart, clever ode, 'upon my Cleopatra. As Gad shall 'judge me, I thought it would have 'been of some service in helping him 'out of obscurity; for you know, as 'Sir Richard observes,

'Soon will that die, which adds thy fame
'to mine:
'Let me then live, join'd to a work of
'thine.

'By the bye, there is a moſt picturesque contraſt in theſe lines, of *thy* 'and *me*, *living* and *dying*, and *thine* 'and *mine*. Ah! a pize upon it! Dick, 'after all, was the man. Ecod! he 'rounded it off. But, to return to this 'unhappy young man, would you believe it, he toſſed up his noſe at my 'friendly propoſal, and gabbled ſome'thing in Greek, which is not worth 'repeating. The caſe was this, my 'dear Sir; he was out of humour at 'the neglect of the world. He thought 'the poets of the age were jealous of 'his genius, and ſtrove to cruſh it ac'cordingly, while the reſt of mankind 'wanted taſte ſufficient to diſcern it. 'For my own part, I profeſs myſelf 'one of theſe; and as the Clown in 'Billy Shakeſpeare ſays of the cour'tier's oath, had I ſworn by the doc'tor's genius, that the pancakes were 'nought, they might have been for all 'that very good, yet ſhouldn't I have 'been forſworn? Let that be as it will, 'he retired from town in great dud'geon, and ſet up his reſt near a hill in 'Derbyſhire, with two tops, reſem'bling Parnaſſus, and a well at the 'bottom, which he had chriſtened Hyp'o-the-Green. Egad! if he ſtays in 'that habitation, 'tis my opinion he'll 'ſoon grow green with the hip indeed. 'He'll be glad of an opportunity to 'return to the fleſh-pots of Egypt, and 'pay his court to the ſlighted Queen 'Cleopatra. Ha! well remembered! 'by this light you ſhall know, my 'good Sir, that this ſame Egyptian 'princeſs has been courted by ſo many 'gallants of taſte, that, as I hope to live, 'I found myſelf in ſome ſort of dilem'ma, becauſe in parting with her to 'one, I ſhould have diſobliged all his 'rivals. Now, a man would not chuſe 'to give offence to his friends; at leaſt, 'I lay it down as a maxim, to avoid 'the ſmalleſt appearance of ingratitude. 'Perhaps I may be in the wrong: but 'every man has his way. For this rea'ſon, I propoſed to all the candidates, 'that a lottery or raffle ſhould be ſet 'on foot, by which every individual 'would have an equal chance for her 'good graces, and the prize be left to 'the deciſion of Fortune. The ſcheme 'was mightily reliſhed; and the terms 'being ſuch a trifle as half a guinea, 'the whole town crouded into my 'houſe, in order to ſubſcribe. But 'there I was their humble ſervant. "Gentlemen, you muſt have a little "patience till my own particular friends "are ſerved." Among that number, 'I do myſelf the honour to conſider 'Mr. Pickle. Here is a copy of the 'propoſals; and if the liſt ſhould be 'adorned with his name, I hope, not'withſtanding his merited ſucceſs a'mong the young ladies, he will for 'once be ſhunned by that little vixen 'called Miſs Fortune. He! he! he!'

So ſaying, he bowed with a thouſand apiſh congees, and preſented his paper to Peregrine; who ſeeing the number of ſubſcribers was limited to one hundred, ſaid he thought him too moderate in his expectations, as he did not doubt that his picture would be a cheap purchaſe at five hundred, inſtead of fifty pounds, at which the price was fixed. To this unexpected remark Pallet anſwered, that among the connoiſſeurs he would not pretend to appraiſe his picture; but that, in valuing his works, he was obliged to have an eye to the Gothick ignorance of the age in which he lived.

Our adventurer ſaw at once into the nature of this raffle, which was no other than a begging ſhift to diſpoſe of a paltry piece, that he could not otherwiſe have ſold for twenty ſhillings. However, far from ſhocking the poor man in diſtreſs, by dropping the leaſt hint of his conjecture, he deſired to be favoured with ſix chances, if the circumſtances of his plan would indulge him ſo far; and the painter, after ſome heſitation, condeſcended to comply with his requeſt, out of pure friendſhip and veneration; though he obſerved, that in ſo doing he muſt exclude ſome of his moſt intimate companions. Having received the money, he gave Pickle his addreſs, deſiring he would, with his convenience, viſit the princeſs, who, he was ſure, would diſplay her moſt engaging attractions, in order to captivate his fancy; and took his leave, extremely well pleaſed with the ſucceſs of his application.

Though Peregrine was tempted with the curioſity of ſeeing this portrait, which he imagined muſt contain ſome analogy to the ridiculous oddity of the painter,

he

he would not expoſe himſelf to the diſagreeable alternative of applauding the performance, contrary to the dictates of conſcience and common ſenſe, or of condemning it, to the unſpeakable mortification of the miſerable author; and therefore never dreamed of returning the painter's viſit; nor did he ever hear of the lottery's being drawn.

About this time he was invited to ſpend a few weeks at the country-ſeat of a certain nobleman, with whom he had contracted an acquaintance, in the courſe of his debauches, which we have already deſcribed. His lordſhip being remarkable for his ſkill and ſucceſs in horſe-racing, his houſe was continually filled with the connoiſſeurs and admirers of that ſport, upon which the whole converſation turned, inſomuch that Peregrine gradually imbibed ſome knowledge in horſe-fleſh, and the diverſions of the courſe; for the whole occupation of the day, excluſive of eating and drinking, conſiſted in viewing, managing, and exerciſing his lordſhip's ſtud.

Our hero looked upon theſe amuſements with an eye of taſte, as well as curioſity; he contemplated the animal as a beautiful and elegant part of the creation, and reliſhed the ſurpriſing exertion of it's ſpeed with a refined and claſſical delight. In a little time he became perſonally acquainted with every horſe in the ſtable, and intereſted himſelf in the reputation of each; while he alſo gratified his appetite for knowledge, in obſerving the methods of preparing their bodies, and training them to the race. His landlord ſaw and encouraged his eagerneſs, from which he promiſed himſelf ſome advantage; he formed ſeveral private matches for his entertainment, and flattered his diſcernment, by permitting him to be ſucceſsful in the firſt betts he made. Thus was he artfully decoyed into a ſpirit of keenneſs and adventure, and diſpoſed to depend upon his own judgment, in oppoſition to that of people who had made horſe-racing the ſole ſtudy of their lives. He accompanied my lord to Newmarket; and entering at once into the genius of the place, was marked as fair game by all the knowing-ones there aſſembled, many of whom found means to *take him in*, in ſpite of all the cautions and admonitions of his lordſhip, who wanted to reſerve him for his own uſe.

It is almoſt impoſſible for any man, let him be never ſo fearful or phlegmatick, to be an unconcerned ſpectator in this buſy ſcene. The demon of play hovers in the air, like a peſtilential vapour, tainting the minds of all preſent with infallible infection, which communicates from one perſon to another like the circulation of a general panick. Peregrine was ſeized with this epidemick diſtemper to a violent degree; and, after having loſt a few looſe hundreds, in his progreſs through the various rookeries of the place, entered into partnerſhip with his noble friend in a grand match, upon the iſſue of which he ventured no leſs than three thouſand pounds. Indeed he would not have riſked ſuch a conſiderable ſum, had not his own confidence been reinforced by the opinion and concurrence of his lordſhip, who hazarded an equal bett upon the ſame event. Theſe two aſſociates engaged themſelves in the penalty of ſix thouſand pounds, to run one chaiſe and four againſt another, three times round the courſe; and our adventurer had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing his antagoniſt diſtanced in the firſt and ſecond heat; but all of a ſudden, one of the horſes of his machine was knocked up, by which accident the victory was raviſhed almoſt from his very graſp, and he was obliged to endure the damage and the ſcorn.

He was deeply affected with this misfortune, which he imputed to his own extravagance and temerity, but diſcovered no external ſigns of affliction, becauſe his illuſtrious partner bore his loſs with the moſt philoſophick reſignation, conſoling himſelf, as well as Pickle, with the hope of making it up on ſome other occaſion. Nevertheleſs, our young gentleman could not help admiring and even envying his equanimity, not knowing that his lordſhip had managed matters ſo as to be gainer by the misfortune; which to retrieve, Peregrine purchaſed ſeveral horſes, at the recommendation of his friend, and inſtead of returning to London, made a tour with him to all the celebrated races in England; at which, after ſeveral viciſſitudes of fortune, he made ſhift, before the end of the ſeaſon, to treble his loſs.

But his hopes ſeemed to increaſe with his ill luck. In the beginning of winter he came to town, fully perſuaded that fortune muſt neceſſarily change, and that the next ſeaſon he ſhould reap the happy fruits of his experience. In

this confidence he seemed to drown all ideas of prudence and œconomy. His former expence was mere parsimony, compared with that which he now incurred: he subscribed to the opera, and half a dozen concerts at different parts of the town; was a benefactor to several hospitals; purchased a collection of valuable pictures; took an house, and furnished it in a most magnificent taste; laid in a large stock of French wines, and gave extravagant entertainments to his quality-friends; who, in return, loaded him with compliments, and insisted upon his making use of their interest and good-will.

CHAP. IV.

HE IS TAKEN INTO THE PROTECTION OF A GREAT MAN; SETS UP FOR MEMBER OF PARLIAMENT; IS DISAPPOINTED IN HIS EXPECTATION, AND FINDS HIMSELF EGREGIOUSLY OUTWITTED.

AMONG these professed patrons, the greatest part of whom Peregrine saw through, there was one great personage who seemed to support with dignity the sphere in which fortune had placed him. His behaviour to Pickle was not a series of grinning complaisance in a flat repetition of general expressions of friendship and regard. He demeaned himself with a seemingly honest reserve, in point of profession; his advances to Peregrine appeared to be the result of deliberation and experiment; he chid the young gentleman for his extravagance with the authority of a parent, and the sincerity of a fast friend; and having by gradual enquiries made himself acquainted with the state of his private affairs, condemned his conduct with an air of candour and concern. He represented to him the folly and dangerous consequences of the profligate life in which he had plunged himself; counselled him with great warmth to sell off his race-horses, which would otherwise insensibly eat him up; to retrench all superfluous expence, which would only serve to expose him to the ridicule and ingratitude of those who were benefited by it; to lay out his money upon secure mortgages, at good interest; and carry into execution his former design of standing candidate for a borough, at the ensuing election for a new parliament; in which case this nobleman promised to assist him with his influence and advice; assuring him, that if he could once procure a seat in the house, he might look upon his fortune as already made.

Our adventurer perceived the wisdom and sanity of this advice, for which he made his acknowledgments to his generous monitor, protesting that he would adhere to it in every particular, and immediately set about a reformation. He accordingly took cognizance of his most minute affairs; and after an exact scrutiny, gave his patron to understand, that, exclusive of his furniture, his fortune was reduced to fourteen thousand three hundred and thirty pounds, in Bank and South-Sea annuities, over and above the garrison and it's appendages, which he reckoned at sixty pounds a year. He therefore desired, that as his lordship had been so kind as to favour him with his friendship and advice, he would extend his generosity still farther, by putting him in the way of making the most advantage of his money. My lord said, that for his own part he did not chuse to meddle in money matters; that Mr. Pickle would find abundance of people ready to borrow it upon landed security; but that he ought to be extremely cautious in a transaction of such consequence; promising, at the same time to employ his own steward in seeking out a mortgager to whom it might be safely lent.

This agent was accordingly set at work, and for a few days made a fruitless enquiry; so that the young gentleman was obliged to have recourse to his own intelligence, by which he got notice of several people of reputed credit, who offered him mortgages for the whole sum; but when he made a report of the particulars to his noble friend, his lordship started such doubts and objections relating to each, that he was deterred from entering into any engagements with the proposers; congratulating himself, in the mean time, on his good fortune, in being favoured with the advice and direction of such a sage counsellor. Nevertheless, he began to be impatient, after having unsuccessfully consulted all the money-brokers and conveyancers about town, and resolved to try the expedient of a publick advertisement. But

he

he was perſuaded by my lord to poſtpone that experiment, until every other method ſhould have failed, becauſe it would attract the attention of all the pettifoggers in London, who (though they might not be able to over-reach) would infallibly harraſs and teaze him out of all tranquillity.

It was on the back of this converſation that Peregrine, chancing to meet the ſteward near his lord's houſe, ſtopped him in the ſtreet, to give him an account of his bad luck; at which the other expreſſed ſome concern, and rubbing his chin with his hand, in a muſing poſture told Pickle, there was a thought juſt come into his head, pointing out one way of doing his buſineſs effectually. The youth, upon this intimation, begged he would accompany him to the next coffee-houſe, in which having choſen a private ſituation, this grave manager gave him to underſtand, that a part of my lord's eſtate was mortgaged, in conſequence of a debt contracted by his grandfather, for proviſion to the younger children of the family; and that the equity of redemption would be foreclоſed in a few months, unleſs the burden could be diſcharged. 'My lord,' ſaid he, 'has always lived 'in a ſplendid manner, and notwithſtanding his ample fortune, together 'with the profits accruing from the 'poſts he enjoys, he ſaves ſo little money, that, upon this occaſion, I know 'he will be obliged to borrow ten thouſand pounds, to make up the ſum that 'is requiſite to redeem the mortgage. 'Now, certain I am, that when his 'deſign comes to be known, he will be 'ſolicited on all hands by people deſirous of lending money upon ſuch undoubted ſecurity; and it is odds but 'he has already promiſed the preference 'to ſome particular acquaintance. However, as I know he has your intereſt 'very much at heart, I will (if you 'pleaſe) ſound his lordſhip upon the 'ſubject, and in a day or two give you 'notice of my ſucceſs.'

Peregrine, raviſhed with the proſpect of ſettling this affair ſo much to his ſatisfaction, thanked the ſteward for his friendly hint and undertaking, which he aſſured him ſhould be acknowledged by a more ſolid proof of his gratitude, provided the buſineſs could be brought to bear; and next day he was viſited by this kind manager, with the happy news of his lordſhip's having conſented to borrow ten thouſand pounds of his ſtock, upon mortgage, at the intereſt of five per cent. This information he received as an inſtance of the ſingular eſteem of his noble patron; and the papers being immediately drawn and executed, the money was depoſited in the hands of the mortgager, who, in the hearing of the lender, laid ſtrong injunctions on the ſteward to pay the intereſt punctually at quarter-day.

The beſt part of our hero's fortune being thus happily depoſited, and the agent gratified with a preſent of fifty pieces, he began to put his retrenching ſcheme in execution; all his ſervants (Pipes excepted) were diſcharged, his chariot and running-horſes diſpoſed of, his houſe-keeping broke up, and his furniture ſold by auction: nay, the heat of his diſpoſition was as remarkable in this, as any other tranſaction of his life; for every ſtep of his ſaving project was taken with ſuch eagerneſs, and even precipitation, that moſt of his companions thought he was either ruined or mad. But he anſwered all their expoſtulations with a ſtring of prudent apopthegms, ſuch as, *The ſhorteſt follies are the beſt*; *—Better to retrench upon conviction than compulſion*; and divers other wiſe maxims, ſeemingly the reſult of experience and philoſophick reflection. To ſuch a degree of enthuſiaſm did his preſent œconomy prevail, that he was actually ſeized with the deſire of amaſſing; and as he every day received propoſals, from thoſe brokers whom he had employed, about the diſpoſal of his caſh, he at length ventured fifteen hundred pounds upon bottomry, being tempted by the exceſſive premium.

But it muſt be obſerved, for the honour of our adventurer, that this reformation did not at all interfere with the good qualities of his heart. He was ſtill as friendly and benevolent as ever, though his liberality was more ſubject to the reſtraint of reaſon; and he might have juſtly pleaded, in vindication of his generoſity, that he retrenched the ſuperfluities in his own way of living, in order to preſerve the power of aſſiſting his fellow-creatures in diſtreſs. Numberleſs were the objects to which he extended his charity in private. Indeed, he exerted this virtue in ſecret, not only on account of avoiding the charge of oſtentation, but alſo becauſe he

he was ashamed of being detected in such an awkward unfashionable practice, by the censorious observers of this humane generation. In this particular, he seemed to confound the ideas of virtue and vice; for he did good as other people do evil, by stealth; and was so capricious in point of behaviour, that frequently, in publick, he wagged his tongue in satirical animadversions upon that poverty, which his hand had in private relieved. Yet, far from shunning the acquaintance, or discouraging the solicitation, of those who he thought wanted his assistance, he was always accessible, open, and complacent to them, even when the haughtiness of his temper kept his superiors at a distance; and often saved a modest man the anguish and confusion of declaring himself, by penetrating into his necessity, and anticipating his request, in a frank offer of his purse and friendship.

Not that he practised this beneficence to all the needy of his acquaintance, without distinction; there is always a set of idle, profligate fellows who having squandered away their own fortunes, and conquered all sense of honour and shame, maintain themselves by borrowing from those who have not yet finished the same career, and want resolution to resist their importunate demands. To these he was always inflexible; though he could not absolutely detach himself from their company, because, by dint of effrontery, and such of their original connections as they have been able to retain, they find admission to all places of fashionable resort.

Several unsuccessful attacks had been made upon his pocket by beggars of this class. One of the most artful of them, having one day joined him in the Mall, and made the usual observation on the weather, damned all the fogs of London, and began a dissertation on the difference of air, preferring that of the country in which he was born to any climate under the sun. 'Was you ever 'in Gloucestershire?' (said he to Peregrine.) Who replying in the negative, he thus went on: 'I have got a house 'there, where I should be glad to see 'you. Let us go down together, dur-'ing the Easter holidays; I can pro-'mise you good country fare and whole-'some exercise; for I have every thing 'within myself, and as good a pack of 'fox-hounds as any in the three king-'doms. I sha'n't pretend to expatiate 'upon the elegance of the house, which 'to be sure is an old building; and 'these, you know, are generally cold, 'and not very convenient. But, curse 'the house! the dirty acres about it are 'the thing; and a damn'd fine parcel 'they are, to be sure—If my old grand-'mother was dead—she can't live an-'other season, for she's turned of four-'score, and quite wore out: nay, as 'for that matter, I believe I have got a 'letter in my pocket, giving an account 'of her being despaired of by the doc-'tors. Let me see!—No, d—n it! I 'left it at home, in the pocket of an-'other coat.'

Pickle, who from the beginning of this harangue, saw it's tendency, seemed to yield the most serious attention to what he said; breaking in upon it, every now and then, with the interjections, *Hum! Ha! The deuce!* and several civil questions, from which the other conceived happy omens of success; till perceiving they had advanced as far as the passage into St. James's, the mischievous youth interrupted him all at once, saying, 'I see you are for the 'end of the walk; this is my way.' With these words he took his leave of the saunterer, who would have delayed his retreat, by calling to him aloud, that he had not yet described the situation of his castle. But Peregrine, without stopping, answered in the same tone, 'An-'other time will do as well!' and in a moment disappeared, leaving the projector very much mortified with his disappointment; for his intention was to close the description, with a demand of twenty pieces, to be repaid out of the first remittance he should receive from his estate.

It would have been well for our hero, had he always acted with the same circumspection: but he had his unguarded moments, in which he fell a prey to the unsuspecting integrity of his own heart. There was a person among the number of his acquaintances, whose conversation he particularly relished, because it was frank, agreeable, and fraught with many sensible observations upon the craft and treachery of mankind. This gentleman had made a shift to discuss a very genteel fortune, though it was spent with taste and reputation, and now he was reduced to his shifts for the maintenance of his family, which consisted of a wife and

and child. Not that he was deſtitute of the neceſſaries of life, being comfortably ſupplied by the bounty of his friends; but this was a proviſion not at all ſuited to his inclination; and he had endeavoured, by divers unſucceſsful ſchemes, to retrieve his former independency.

Peregrine happened one evening to be ſitting alone in a coffee-houſe, where he overheard a converſation between this ſchemer and another gentleman, touching an affair that engaged his attention. The ſtranger had been left truſtee for fifteen hundred pounds bequeathed to the other's daughter by an aunt, and was ſtrongly ſolicited to pay the money to the child's father, who aſſured him, he had then an opportunity to lay it out in ſuch a manner as would greatly conduce to the advantage of his family. The truſtee reminded him of the nature of his charge, which made him accountable for the money, until the child ſhould have attained the age of eighteen; but at the ſame time gave him to underſtand, that if he could procure ſuch ſecurity as would indemnify him from the conſequences, he would forthwith pay the legacy into his hands. To this propoſal the father replied, that it was not to be ſuppoſed he would riſk the fortune of his only child, upon any idle ſcheme or precarious iſſue: and therefore he thought it reaſonable, that he ſhould have the uſe of it in the mean time; and that, as to ſecurity, he was loth to trouble any of his friends about an affair which might be compromiſed without their interpoſition; obſerving, that he would not look upon his condeſcenſion as a favour, if obtained by a ſecurity, on which he could borrow the ſame ſum from any uſurer in town.

After much importunity on one ſide, and evaſion on the other, the monied gentleman told him, that though he would not ſurrender the ſum depoſited in his hands for the uſe of his daughter, he would lend him what he ſhould have occaſion for in the mean time; and if, upon her being of age, he ſhould be able to obtain her concurrence, the money ſhould be placed to her account, provided he could find any perſon of credit, who would join with him in a bond for the aſſurance of the lender. This proviſo was an obſtruction which the other would not have been able to ſurmount, without great difficulty, had not his cauſe been eſpouſed by our hero, who thought it was a pity a man of honour and underſtanding ſhould ſuffer in his principal concerns on ſuch a paltry conſideration. He therefore, preſuming on his acquaintance, interpoſed in the converſation as a friend, who intereſted himſelf in the affair; and being fully informed of the particulars, offered himſelf as a ſecurity for the lender.

This gentleman being a ſtranger to Peregrine, he was next day made acquainted with his funds; and, without farther ſcruple, accommodated his friend with one thouſand pounds, for which he took their bond, payable in ſix months, though he proteſted that the money ſhould never be demanded, until the infant ſhould be of age, unleſs ſome accident ſhould happen which he could not then foreſee. Pickle believed this declaration ſincere, becauſe he could have no intereſt in diſſembling: but what he chiefly depended upon, for his own ſecurity, was the integrity and confidence of the borrower, who aſſured him, that happen what would, he ſhould be able to ſtand between him and all danger; the nature of his plan being ſuch, as would infallibly treble the ſum in a very few months.

In a little time after this tranſaction, writs being iſſued out for electing a new parliament, our adventurer, by the advice of his patron, went into the country, in order to canvaſs for a borough, and lined his pockets with a competent ſhare of bank-notes for the occaſion. But, in this project, he unfortunately happened to interfere with the intereſt of a great family in the oppoſition, who, for a long ſeries of years had made members for that place; and were now ſo much offended at the intruſion of our young gentleman, that they threatened to ſpend ten thouſand pounds in fruſtrating his deſign. This menace was no other than an incitement to Peregrine, who confided ſo much in his own influence and addreſs, that he verily believed he ſhould be able to baffle his grace, even in his own territories. By that victory he hoped to eſtabliſh his reputation and intereſt with the miniſter, who, through the recommendation of his noble friend, countenanced his cauſe, and would have been very well pleaſed to ſee one of his greateſt enemies ſuffer ſuch a diſgraceful overthrow, which would

would have, moreover, in a great measure ſhaken his credit with his faction.

Our hero, intoxicated with the ideas of pride and ambition, put all his talents to the teſt in the execution of this project. He ſpared no expence in treating the electors; but finding himſelf rivalled, in this reſpect, by his competitor, who was powerfully ſupported, he had recourſe to thoſe qualifications in which he thought himſelf ſuperior. He made balls for the ladies, viſited the matrons of the corporation, adapted himſelf to their various humours with ſurprizing facility, drank with thoſe who loved a cheriſhing cup in private, made love to the amorous, prayed with the religious, goſſipped with thoſe who delighted in ſcandal, and with great ſagacity contrived agreeable preſents to them all. This was the moſt effectual method of engaging ſuch electors as were under the influence of their wives. As for the reſt, he aſſailed them in their own way, ſetting whole hogſheads of beer and wine abroach for the benefit of all comers; and into thoſe ſordid hearts that liquor would not open, he found means to convey himſelf by the help of a golden key.

While he thus exerted himſelf, his antagoniſt was not idle; his age and infirmities would not permit him to enter perſonally into their parties; but his ſtewards and adherents beſtirred themſelves with great induſtry and perſeverance. The market for votes ran ſo high, that Pickle's ready-money was exhauſted before the day of election; and he was obliged to write to his patron an account of the dilemma to which he was reduced; intreating him to take ſuch ſpeedy meaſures, as would enable him to finiſh the buſineſs which he had ſo happily begun.

This nobleman communicated the circumſtances of the caſe to the miniſter, and in a day or two our canditate found credit with the receiver-general of the county, who lent him twelve hundred pounds on his perſonal note, payable on demand. By means of this new ſupply, he managed matters ſo ſucceſsfully, that an evident majority of votes was ſecured in his intereſt, and nothing could have obſtructed his election, had not the noble peer who ſet up his competitor, in order to avoid the ſhame and mortification of being foiled in his own borough, offered to compromiſe the affair with his honour, by giving up two members in another place, provided the oppoſition ſhould ceaſe in his own corporation. This propoſal was greedily embraced. On the eve of election, Peregrine received an intimation from his patron, deſiring him to quit his pretenſions, on pain of his and the miniſter's diſpleaſure; and promiſing that he ſhould be elected for another place.

No other diſappointment in life could have given him ſuch chagrin as he felt at the receipt of this tantalizing order, by which the cup of ſucceſs was ſnatched from his lip, and all the vanity of his ambitious hope humbled in the duſt. He curſed the whole chain of his court connections; inveighed with great animoſity againſt the raſcally ſcheme of politicks, to which he was ſacrificed; and in concluſion ſwore, he would not give up the fruits of his own addreſs for the pleaſure of any miniſter upon earth. This laudable reſolution, however, was rendered ineffectual by his friend the receiver-general, who was bearer of the meſſage, and (after having, in vain, endeavoured to perſuade him to ſubmiſſion) fairly arreſted him upon the ſpot for the money he had advanced; this expedient being performed by virtue of a writ which he had been adviſed to take out, in caſe the young man ſhould prove refractory.

The reader, who by this time muſt be pretty well acquainted with the diſpoſition of our adventurer, may eaſily conceive how he reliſhed this adventure. At firſt, all the faculties of his ſoul were ſwallowed up in aſtoniſhment and indignation; and ſome minutes elapſed before his nerves would obey the impulſe of his rage, which manifeſted itſelf in ſuch an application to the temples of the plaintiff, as laid him ſprawling on the floor. This aſſault, which was committed in a tavern whither he had been purpoſely decoyed, attracted the regard of the bailiff and his followers, who, to the number of four, ruſhed upon him at once, in order to overpower him; but his wrath inſpired him with ſuch additional ſtrength and agility, that he diſengaged himſelf from them in a trice, and ſeizing a pocker, which was the firſt weapon that preſented itſelf to his hand, exerciſed it upon their ſkulls with incredible dexterity and execution. The officer himſelf, who had been the firſt that preſumed to lay violent hands upon him, felt the firſt effects of

of his fury, in a blow upon his jaws, in conſequence of which he loſt three of his teeth, and fell athwart the body of the receiver, with which he formed the figure of a St. Andrew's croſs: one of the myrmidons ſeeing the fate of his chief, would not venture to attack the victor in front, but wheeling to one ſide, made an attempt upon him in flank, and was received obliquely by our hero's left-hand and foot, ſo maſterly diſpoſed to the right-ſide of his leg, and the left ſide of his neck, that he bolted head-foremoſt into the chimney, where his chin was encountered by the grate, which in a moment ſeared him to the bone. The reſt of the detachment did not think proper to maintain the diſpute, but evacuating the room with great expedition, locked the door on the outſide, and bellowed aloud to the receiver's ſervants, beſeeching them to come to the aſſiſtance of their maſter, who was in danger of his life.

Meanwhile, this gentleman having recollected himſelf, demanded a parley; which having with difficulty obtained of our incenſed candidate, in conſequence of the moſt ſubmiſſive application, he complained grievouſly of the young gentleman's intemperance and heat of diſpoſition, and very calmly repreſented the danger of his raſhneſs and indiſcretion. He told him, that nothing could be more outrageous or idle, than the reſiſtance he had made againſt the laws of his country, becauſe he would find it impracticable to withſtand the whole executive power of the county, which he could eaſily raiſe to apprehend and ſecure him; that over and above the diſgrace that would accrue to him from this imprudent conduct, he would knock his own intereſt on the head, by diſobliging his friends in the adminiſtration, who were, to his knowledge, at preſent very well diſpoſed to do him ſervice; that, for his own part, what he had done was by the expreſs order of his ſuperiors, and not out of any deſire of diſtreſſing him; and that, far from being his enemy, notwithſtanding the ſhocking inſult he had ſuſtained, he was ready to withdraw the writ, provided he would liſten to any reaſonable terms of accommodation.

Peregrine, who was not more prone to anger than open to conviction, being appeaſed by his condeſcenſion, moved by his arguments, and chid by his own reflection, for what he had done in the precipitation of his wrath, began to give ear to his remonſtrances; and the bailiffs being ordered to withdraw, they entered into a conference, the reſult of which was, our adventurer's immediate departure for London: ſo that next day his competitor was unanimouſly choſen, becauſe nobody appeared to oppoſe his election.

The diſcontented Pickle, on his arrival in town, went directly to the houſe of his patron; to whom, in the anguiſh of his diſappointment, he bitterly complained of the treatment he had received, by which, beſides the diſgrace of his overthrow, he was no leſs than two thouſand pounds out of pocket, excluſive of the debt for which he ſtood engaged to the receiver. His lordſhip, who was prepared for this expoſtulation, on his knowledge of the young man's impetuous temper, anſwered all the articles of his charge with great deliberation; giving him to underſtand the motives that induced the miniſter to quit his intereſt in that borough, and ſoothing him with aſſurances that his loſs would be amply rewarded by his honour, to whom he was next day introduced by this nobleman, in the warmeſt ſtyle of recommendation. The miniſter, who was a pattern of complaiſance, received him with the moſt engaging affability; thanked him very kindly for his endeavours to ſupport and ſtrengthen the intereſt of the adminiſtration; and faithfully promiſed to lay hold on the firſt opportunity to expreſs the ſenſe he had of his zeal and attachment; deſiring to ſee him often at his levee, that in the multiplicity of buſineſs he might not be in danger of forgetting his ſervices and deſert.

CHAP. V.

PEREGRINE COMMENCES MINISTER'S DEPENDENT; MEETS BY ACCIDENT WITH MRS. GAUNTLET; AND DESCENDS GRADUALLY IN THE CONDITION OF LIFE.

THIS reception, favourable as it was, did not pleaſe Peregrine; who had too much diſcernment to be cajoled with general promiſes, at a time when he thought himſelf intitled to the moſt particular aſſurance. He accordingly

ingly signified his disgust to his introductor; giving him to understand, that he had laid his account with being chosen representative of one of those boroughs for which he had been sacrificed. His lordship agreed to the reasonableness of his expectation; observing, however, that he could not suppose the minister would enter upon business with him on his first visit; and that it would be time enough at his next audience to communicate his demand.

Notwithstanding this remonstrance, our hero continued to indulge his suspicion and chagrin, and even made a point of it with his patron, that his lordship should next day make application in his behalf, lest the two seats should be filled up, on pretence of his inclinations being unknown. Thus importuned, my lord went to his principal, and returned with an answer, importing that his honour was extremely sorry that Mr. Pickle had not signified his request before the boroughs in question were promised to two gentlemen, whom he could not now disappoint with any regard to his own credit or interest; but as several persons who would be chosen were, to his certain knowledge, very aged and infirm, he did not doubt that there would be plenty of vacant seats in a very short time, and then the young gentleman might depend upon his friendship.

Peregrine was so much irritated at this intimation, that in the first transports of his anger he forgot the respect he owed to his friend, and in his presence inveighed against the minister, as a person devoid of gratitude and candour; protesting, that if ever an opportunity should offer itself, he would spend the whole remains of his fortune in opposing his measures. The nobleman having given him time to exhaust the impetuosity of his passion, rebuked him very calmly for his disrespectful expressions, which were equally injurious and indiscreet; assured him, that this project of revenge, if ever put in execution, would redound to his own prejudice and confusion; and advised him to cultivate and improve, with patience and assiduity, the footing he had already obtained in the minister's good graces.

Our hero, convinced of the truth, though not satisfied with the occasion of his admonitions, took his leave in a fit of sullen discontent, and began to ruminate upon the shattered posture of his affairs. All that now remained of the ample fortune he had inherited, was the sum he had deposited in his lordship's hands, together with fifteen hundred pounds he had ventured on bottomry, and the garrison, which he had left for the use and accommodation of the lieutenant; and on the *per contra* side of his account, he was debtor for the supply he had received from the receiver-general, and the money for which he was bound in behalf of his friend: so that he found himself, for the first time of his life, very much embarrassed in his circumstances; for, of the first half year's interest of his ten thousand, which was punctually paid, he had but fourscore pounds in bank, without any prospect of a farther supply till the other term, which was at the distance of four long months. He seriously reflected upon the uncertainty of human affairs; the ship with his fifteen hundred pounds might be lost; the gentleman for whom he was security, might miscarry in this, as well as in his former projects; and the minister might one day, through policy or displeasure, expose him to the mercy of his dependent, who was in possession of his notes.

These suggestions did not at all contribute to the ease of our adventurer's mind, already ruffled by his disappointment. He cursed his own folly and extravagance, by which he was reduced to such an uncomfortable situation. He compared his own conduct with that of some young gentlemen of his acquaintance, who while he was squandering away the best part of his inheritance, had improved their fortunes, strengthened their interest, and increased their reputation. He was abandoned by his gaiety and good-humour; his countenance gradually contracted itself into a representation of severity and care; he dropped all his amusements and the companions of his pleasure, and turned his whole attention to the minister, at whose levee he never failed to appear.

While he thus laboured in the wheel of dependence, with all that mortification which a youth of his pride and sensibility may be supposed to feel from such a disagreeable necessity, he one day heard himself called by name as he crossed the Park; and turning, perceived the wife of Captain Gauntlet, with another lady. He no sooner recognized the kind Sophy, than he accosted her with

with his wonted civility of friendſhip; but his former ſprightly air was metamorphoſed into ſuch auſterity, or rather dejection of feature, that ſhe could ſcarce believe her own eyes; and in her aſtoniſhment, 'Is it poſſible,' ſaid ſhe, 'that the gay Mr. Pickle ſhould be ſo 'much altered in ſuch a ſhort ſpace of 'time!' He made no other reply to this exclamation but by a languid ſmile; and aſked how long ſhe had been in town: obſerving, that he would have paid his compliments to her at her own lodgings, had he been favoured with the leaſt intimation of her arrival. After having thanked him for his politeneſs, ſhe told him, it was not owing to any abatement of her friendſhip and eſteem for him that ſhe had omitted to give him that notice; but his abrupt departure from Windſor, and the manner in which he quitted Mr. Gauntlet, had given her juſt grounds to believe, that they had incurred his diſpleaſure; which ſuſpicion was reinforced by his long ſilence and neglect from that period to the preſent time. She obſerved it was ſtill farther confirmed, by his forbearing to enquire for Emilia and her brother. 'Judge, then,' ſaid ſhe, 'if I had any reaſon to believe that you 'would be pleaſed to hear that I was 'in town. However, I will not detain 'you at preſent, becauſe you ſeem to 'be engaged about ſome particular buſineſs; but if you will favour me with 'your company at breakfaſt to-morrow, I ſhall be much pleaſed, and honoured to boot, by the viſit.' So ſaying, ſhe gave him a direction to her lodgings; and he took his leave, with a faithful promiſe of ſeeing her at the appointed time.

He was very much affected with this advance of Sophy, which he conſidered as an inſtance of her uncommon ſweetneſs of temper; he felt ſtrange longings of returning friendſhip towards Godfrey; and the remembrance of Emilia melted his heart, already ſoftened with grief and mortification. Next day, he did not neglect his engagement, and had the pleaſure of enjoying a long converſation with this ſenſible young lady, who gave him to underſtand, that her huſband was with his regiment; and preſented to him a fine boy, the firſt fruits of their love, whom they had chriſtened by the name of Peregrine, in memory of the friendſhip which had ſubſiſted between Godfrey and our youth.

This proof of their regard, notwithſtanding the interruption in their correſpondence, made a deep impreſſion upon the mind of our adventurer, who having made the warmeſt acknowledgments for this undeſerved mark of reſpect, took the child in his arms, and almoſt devoured him with kiſſes, proteſting before God, that he ſhould always conſider him with the tenderneſs of a parent. This was the higheſt compliment he could pay to the gentle Sophy, who again kindly chid him for his diſdainful and precipitate retreat immediately after her marriage; and expreſſed an earneſt deſire of ſeeing him and the captain reconciled. He aſſured her, nothing could give him greater ſatisfaction than ſuch an event, to which he would contribute all that lay in his power, though he could not help looking upon himſelf as injured by Captain Gauntlet's behaviour, which denoted a ſuſpicion of his honour, as well as contempt for his underſtanding. The lady undertook for the conceſſion of her huſband, who (ſhe told him) had been extremely ſorry for his own heat, after Mr. Pickle's departure, and would have followed him to the garriſon, in order to ſolicit his forgiveneſs, had he not been reſtrained by certain punctilios, occaſioned by ſome acrimonious expreſſions that dropped from Peregrine at the inn.

After having cleared up this miſunderſtanding, ſhe proceeded to give an account of Emilia, whoſe behaviour, at that juncture, plainly indicated a continuance of affection for her firſt lover; and deſired, that he would give her full powers to bring that matter alſo to an accommodation: 'For I am not more 'certain of my own exiſtence,' ſaid ſhe, 'than that you are ſtill in poſſeſſion of 'my ſiſter's heart.' At this declaration the tear ſtarted in his eye: but he ſhook his head, and declined her good offices, wiſhing that the young lady might be much more happy than ever he ſhould be able to make her.

Mrs. Gauntlet, confounded at theſe expreſſions, and moved by the deſponding manner in which they were delivered, begged to know if any new obſtacle was raiſed by ſome late change in his ſentiments or ſituation: and he, in order to avoid a painful explanation, told her,

that he had long despaired of being able to vanquish Emilia's resentment, and for that reason quitted the pursuit, which he would never renew, howsoever his heart might suffer by that resolution; though he took Heaven to witness, that his love, esteem, and admiration of her, were not in the least impaired: but the true motive of his laying aside his design, was the consciousness of his decayed fortune; which, by adding to the sensibility of his pride, increased the horror of another repulse. She expressed her concern for this determination, both on his own account, and in behalf of Emilia, whose happiness (in her opinion) depended upon his constancy and affection; and she would have questioned him more minutely about the state of his affairs, had not he discouraged the enquiry, by seeking to introduce another subject of conversation.

After mutual protestations of friendship and regard, he promised to visit her often during her residence in town; and took his leave in a strange perplexity of mind, occasioned by the images of love intruding upon the remonstrances of carking care. He had some time ago forsaken those extravagant companions with whom he had rioted in the hey-day of his fortune, and began to consort with a graver and more sober species of acquaintance: but he now found himself disabled from cultivating the society of these also, who were men of ample estates, and liberal dispositions; in consequence of which, their parties were too expensive for the consumptive state of his finances; so that he was obliged to descend to another degree, and mingle with a set of old batchelors and younger brothers, who subsisted on slender annuities, or what is called a bare competency in the publick funds. This association was composed of second-hand politicians and minor criticks, who in the forenoon saunter in the Mall, or lounge at shows of pictures, appear in the drawing-room once or twice a week, dine at an ordinary, decide disputes in a coffee-house with an air of superior intelligence, frequent the pit of the play-house, and once in a month spend an evening with some noted actor, whose remarkable sayings they repeat for the entertainment of their ordinary friends.

After all, he found something comfortable enough in the company of these gentlemen, who never interested his passions to any violence of transport, nor teazed him with impertinent curiosity about his private affairs: for though many of them had maintained a very long, close, and friendly correspondence with each other, they never dreamed of enquiring into particular concerns; and if one of the two who were most intimately connected, had been asked how the other made a shift to live, he would have answered, with great truth, 'Really, that is more than I know.' Notwithstanding this phlegmatick indifference, which is of the true English production, they were all inoffensive, good-natured people, who loved a joke and a song, delighted in telling a merry story, and prided themselves in the art of catering, especially in the articles of fish, venison, and wild-fowl.

Our young gentleman was not received among them on the footing of a common member, who makes interest for his admission; he was courted as a person of superior genius and importance, and his compliance looked upon as an honour to their society. This their idea of his pre-eminence was supported by his conversation, which, while it was more liberal and learned than that to which they had been accustomed, was tinctured with an assuming air, so agreeably diffused, that, instead of producing aversion, it commanded respect. They not only appealed to him in all doubts relating to foreign parts, to which one and all of them were strangers, but also consulted his knowledge in history and divinity, which were frequently the topicks of their debates; and in poetry of all kinds, he decided with such magisterial authority, as even weighed against the opinions of the players themselves. The variety of characters he had seen and observed, and the high spheres of life in which he had so lately moved, furnished him with a thousand entertaining anecdotes. When he became a little familiarized to his disappointments, so that his natural vivacity began to revive, he flashed among them in such a number of bright sallies, as struck them with admiration, and constituted himself a classick in wit: insomuch, that they began to retail his remnants, and even invited some particular friends to come and hear him hold forth. One of the players, who had for many years strutted about the taverns in the neighbourhood of Covent

vent Garden as the Grand Turk of wit and humour, began to find his admirers melt away; and a certain petulant phyſician, who had ſhone at almoſt all the Port-clubs in that end of the town, was actually obliged to import his talents into the city, where he has now happily taken root.

Nor was this acceſs to be wondered at, if we conſider that, over and above his natural genius and education, our adventurer ſtill had the opportunity of knowing every thing which happened among the great, by means of his friend Cadwallader, with whom he ſtill maintained his former intimacy, though it was now chequered with many occaſional tifts, owing to the ſarcaſtick remonſtrances of the miſanthrope, who diſapproved of thoſe ſchemes which miſcarried with Peregrine, and now took unſeaſonable methods of valuing himſelf upon his own foreſight: nay, he was between whiles like a raven croaking preſages of more ill-luck from the deceit of the miniſter, the diſſimulation of his patron, the folly of the projector for whom he was bound, the uncertainty of the ſeas, and the villainy of thoſe with whom he had entruſted his caſh; for Crabtree ſaw and conſidered every thing through a perſpective of ſpleen, that always reflected the worſt ſide of human nature.

For theſe reaſons our young gentleman began to be diſguſted, at certain intervals, with the character of this old man, whom he now thought a moroſe cynic, not ſo much incenſed againſt the follies and vices of mankind, as delighted with the diſtreſs of his fellow-creatures. Thus he put the moſt unfavourable conſtruction on the principles of his friend, becauſe he found himſelf juſtly fallen under the laſh of his animadverſion. This ſelf-accuſation very often diſſolves the cloſeſt friendſhip: a man, conſcious of his own indiſcretion, is implacably offended at the rectitude of his companion's conduct, which he conſiders as an inſult upon his failings, never to be forgiven, even though he has not taſted the bitterneſs of reproof, which no ſinner can commodiouſly digeſt. The friendſhip, therefore, ſubſiſting between Crabtree and Pickle, had of late ſuffered ſeveral ſymptomatick ſhocks that ſeemed to prognoſticate a total diſſolution; a great deal of ſmart dialogue had paſſed in their private converſations, and the ſenior began to repent of having placed his confidence in ſuch an imprudent, headſtrong, ungovernable youth.

It was in ſuch paroxyſms of diſpleaſure that he propheſied misfortune to Peregrine; and even told him one morning, that he had dreamed of the ſhipwreck of the two Eaſt-Indiamen, on board of which he had hazarded his money. But this was no other than a falſe viſion; for in a few weeks one of them arrived at her moorings in the river, and he received a thouſand in lieu of eight hundred pounds, which he had lent upon bond to one of the mates. At the ſame time he was informed, that the other ſhip in which he was concerned had, in all probability, loſt her paſſage for the ſeaſon, by being unable to weather the Cape. He was not at all concerned at that piece of news, knowing, that the longer he ſhould lie out of his money, he would have the more intereſt to receive; and finding his preſent difficulties removed by this ſupply, his heart began to dilate, and his countenance to reſume it's former alacrity.

This ſtate of exultation, however, was ſoon interrupted by a ſmall accident, which he could not foreſee: he was viſited one morning by the perſon who had lent his friend a thouſand pounds on his ſecurity, and given to underſtand, that the borrower had abſconded, in conſequence of a diſappointment, by which he had loſt the whole ſum, and all hopes of retrieving it; ſo that our hero was now liable for the debt, which he beſought him to diſcharge according to the bond, that he (the lender) might not ſuffer by his humanity. It may be eaſily conceived that Peregrine did not receive this intelligence in cold blood. He curſed his own imprudence in contracting ſuch engagements with an adventurer whom he did not ſufficiently know. They exclaimed againſt the treachery of the projector; and having for ſome time indulged his reſentment in threats and imprecations, enquired into the nature of the ſcheme which had miſcarried.

The lender, who had informed himſelf of the whole affair, gratified his curioſity in this particular, by telling him that the fugitive had been cajoled by a certain knight of the poſt, who undertook to manage the thouſand pounds in ſuch

such a manner as would, in a very little time, make him perfectly independent; and thus he delineated the plan: 'One half of the sum,' said he, 'shall be laid out in jewels, which I 'will pawn to certain persons of credit 'and fortune, who lend money upon 'such pledges at an exorbitant interest. 'The other shall be kept for relieving 'them, so that they may be again de'posited with a second set of those 'honourable usurers; and when they 'shall have been circulated in this man'ner through a variety of hands, we 'will extort money from each of the 'pawn-brokers, by threatening them 'with a publick prosecution, for ex'acting illegal interest; and I know 'that they will bleed freely, rather 'than be exposed to the infamy attend'ing such an accusation.' The scheme was feasible, and though not very honourable, made such an impression upon the needy borrower that he assented to the proposal; and, by our hero's credit, the money was raised. The jewels were accordingly purchased, pawned, relieved, and re-pledged by the agent, who undertook to manage the whole affair; and so judiciously was the project executed, that he could have easily proved each lender guilty of the charge. Having thus far successfully transacted the business, this faithful agent visited them severally on his own account, to give them intimation, that his employer intended to sue them on the statute of usury; upon which, every one for himself bribed the informer to withdraw his evidence, by which alone he could be convicted; and having received these gratifications, he had thought proper to retreat into France with the whole booty, including the original thousand that put them in motion. In consequence of this decampment, the borrower had withdrawn himself; so that the lender was obliged to have recourse to his security.

This was a very mortifying account to our young gentleman, who in vain reminded the narrator of his promise, importing, that he would not demand the money, until he should be called to an account by his ward; and observed, that long before that period, the fugitive might appear and discharge the debt. But the other was deaf to these remonstrances; alledging, that his promise was provisional, on the supposition that the borrower would deal candidly and fairly; that he had forfeited all title to his friendship and trust, by the scandalous scheme in which he had embarked; and that his treacherous flight from his security was no proof of his honesty and intended return; but on the contrary, a warning, by which he (the lender) was taught to take care of himself. He therefore insisted upon his being indemnified immediately, on pain of letting the law take it's course; and Peregrine was actually obliged to part with the whole sum he had so lately received. But this payment was not made without extreme reluctance, indignation, and denunciation of eternal war against the absconder and the rigid creditor, betwixt whom he suspected some collusion.

CHAP. VI.

CADWALLADER ACTS THE PART OF A COMFORTER TO HIS FRIEND; AND IN HIS TURN IS CONSOLED BY PEREGRINE, WHO BEGINS TO FIND HIMSELF A MOST EGREGIOUS DUPE.

THIS new misfortune, which he justly charged to the account of his own folly, recalled his chagrin; and though he endeavoured with all his might to conceal the affair from the knowledge of Cadwallader, that prying observer perceived his countenance overcast. The projector's sudden disappearance alarming his suspicion, he managed his enquiries with so much art, that in a few days he made himself acquainted with every particular of the transaction, and resolved to gratify his spleen at the expence of the impatient dupe. With this view, he took an opportunity to accost him with a very serious air, saying, a friend of his had immediate occasion for a thousand pounds, and as Peregrine had the exact sum lying by him, he would take it as a great favour, if he would part with it for a few months on undoubted security. Had Pickle known the true motive of this demand, he would in all likelihood have made a very disagreeable answer; but Crabtree had wrapt himself up so securely in the dissimulation of his features, that the youth could not possibly penetrate into his intention; and in the most galling suspense replied, that the money

money was otherwise engaged. The misanthrope, not contented with this irritation, assumed the prerogative of a friend, and questioned him so minutely about the disposal of the cash, that after numberless evasions, which cost him a world of torture to invent, he could contain his vexation no longer, but exclaimed in a rage, 'Damn your impertinence! 'tis 'gone to the devil, and that's enough!' —'Thereafter as it may be,' said the tormentor, with a most provoking indifference of aspect, 'I should be glad to 'know upon what footing; for I suppose 'you have some expectation of advan-'tage from that quarter.'—'Sdeath, 'Sir!' cried the impatient youth, 'if I 'had any expectation from hell, I would 'make interest with you, for I believe 'from my soul, you are one of it's most 'favoured ministers upon earth.' With these words, he flung out of the room, leaving Cadwallader very well satisfied with the chastisement he had bestowed.

Peregrine having cooled himself with a solitary walk in the Park, during which the violence of his choler gradually evaporated, and his reflection was called to a serious deliberation upon the posture of his affairs, he resolved to redouble his diligence and importunity with his patron and the minister, in order to obtain some sinecure, which would indemnify him for the damage he had sustained on their account. He accordingly went to his lordship, and signified his demand, after having told him, that he had suffered several fresh losses, which rendered an immediate provision of that sort necessary to his credit and subsistence.

His noble friend commended him for the regard he manifested for his own interest, which he considered as a proof of his being at last detached from the careless inadvertency of youth; he approved of his demand, which he assured him should be faithfully transmitted to the minister, and backed with all his influence; and encouraged his hope, by observing, that some profitable places were at that time vacant, and, so far as he knew, unengaged.

This conversation helped to restore the tranquillity of Pickle's breast, though he still harboured resentment against Cadwallader, on account of the last insult; and on the instant he formed a plan of revenge. He knew the misanthrope's remittances from his estate in the country had been of late very scanty, in consequence of repairs and bankruptcies among his tenants: so that, in spite of all his frugality, he had been but barely able to maintain his credit, and even that was engaged on the strength of his running-rent. Being therefore intimately acquainted with the particulars of his fortune, he wrote a letter to Crabtree, subscribed with the name of his principal farmer's wife, importing, that her husband being lately dead, and the greatest part of her cattle destroyed by the infectious distemper, she found herself utterly incapable of paying the rent which was due, or even of keeping the farm, unless he would, out of his great goodness, be pleased to give her some assistance, and allow her to sit free for a twelvemonth to come. This intimation he found means to convey by post from a market-town adjoining to the farm, directed in the usual style to the cynick, who seeing it stamped with the known marks, could not possibly suspect any imposition.

Hacknied as he was in the ways of life, and steeled with his boasted stoicism, this epistle threw him into such an agony of vexation, that a double proportion of souring was visible in his aspect, when he was visited by the author, who having observed and followed the postman at a proper distance, introduced a conversation upon his own disappointments, in which, among other circumstances of his own ill-luck, he told him, that his patron's steward had desired to be excused from paying the last quarter of his interest precisely at the appointed term; for which reason, he should be utterly void of cash; and therefore requested that Crabtree would accommodate him with an hundred pieces out of his next remittance from the country.

This demand galled and perplexed the old man to such a degree, that the muscles of his face assumed a contraction peculiarly virulent, and exhibited the character of Diogenes with a most lively expression; he knew that a confession of his true situation would furnish Pickle with an opportunity to make reprisals upon him, with intolerable triumph; and that, by a downright refusal to supply his wants, he would for ever forfeit his friendship and esteem, and might provoke him to take ample vengeance for his sordid behaviour, by exposing him, in his native colours, to the

the reſentment of thoſe whom he had ſo long deceived. Theſe conſiderations kept him ſome time in a moſt rancorous ſtate of ſuſpenſe; which Peregrine affected to miſinterpret, by bidding him freely declare his ſuſpicion, if he did not think it ſafe to comply with his requeſt, and he would make ſhift elſewhere.

This ſeeming miſconſtruction increaſed the torture of the miſanthrope, who with the utmoſt irritation of feature, 'Oons!' cried he, 'what villainy have you noted in my conduct, 'that you treat me like a raſcally 'uſurer?' Peregrine very gravely replied, that the queſtion needed no anſwer; 'for,' ſaid he, 'had I conſidered you as an uſurer, I would have 'come with a ſecurity under my arm; 'but, all evaſion apart, will you ſtead 'me? will you pleaſure me? ſhall I 'have the money?'—'Would it were 'in your belly, with a barrel of gunpowder!' exclaimed the enraged cynick; 'ſince I muſt be excruciated, read 'that plaguy paper!—'Sblood! why 'didn't nature clap a pair of long ears 'and a tail upon me, that I might be 'a real aſs, and champ thiſtles on ſome 'common independent of my fellow-creatures? Would I were a worm, 'that I might creep into the earth, and 'thatch my habitation with a ſingle 'ſtraw; or rather a waſp or a viper, 'that I might make the raſcally world 'feel my reſentment. But why do I talk 'of raſcality? folly, folly, is the ſcourge 'of life! Give me a ſcoundrel, (ſo he be a ſenſible one) and I will put him 'in my heart of hearts! but a fool is more miſchievous than famine, peſtilence, and war. The idiotical hag 'that writes, or cauſes to be writ, this 'ſame letter, has ruined her family, and 'broke her huſband's heart, by ignorance and miſmanagement; and ſhe 'imputes her calamity to Providence 'with a vengeance; and ſo I am defrauded of three hundred pounds, the 'greateſt part of which I owe to tradeſmen whom I have promiſed to pay 'this very quarter. Pox upon her! I 'would ſhe were an horned beaſt, that 'the diſtemper might lay hold on her. 'The beldame has the impudence, too, '(after ſhe has brought me into this 'dilemma) to ſolicit my aſſiſtance to 'ſtock the farm anew! Before God, I 'have a good mind to ſend her an halter; and perhaps I might purchaſe 'another for myſelf, but that I would 'not furniſh food for laughter to knaves 'and coxcombs!'

Peregrine having peruſed the billet, and liſtened to this ejaculation, replied with great compoſure, that he was aſhamed to ſee a man of his years and pretenſions to philoſophy ſo ruffled by a trifle. 'What ſignify all the boaſted 'hardſhips you have overcome,' ſaid he, 'and the ſhrewd obſervations you 'pretend to have made on human nature? Where is that ſtoical indifference you affirm you have attained, 'if ſuch a paltry diſappointment can 'diſturb you in this manner? What 'is the loſs of three hundred pounds, 'compared with the misfortunes which 'I myſelf have undergone within theſe 'two years? Yet you will take upon 'you to act the cenſor, and inveigh 'againſt the impatience and impetuoſity 'of youth, as if you yourſelf had gained an abſolute conqueſt over all the 'paſſions of the heart. You was ſo 'kind as to inſult me t'other day in my 'affliction, by reproaching me with indiſcretion and miſconduct; ſuppoſe I 'were now to retort the imputation, 'and aſk how a man of your profound 'ſagacity could leave your fortune at 'the diſcretion of ignorant peaſants? 'How could you be ſo blind as not to 'foreſee the neceſſity of repairs, together with the danger of bankruptcy, 'murrain, or thin crop? Why did not 'you convert your land into ready-money, and (as you have no connections in life) purchaſe an annuity, on 'which you might have lived at your 'eaſe, without any fear of the conſequence? Can't you, from the whole 'budget of your philoſophy, cull one 'apophthegm to conſole you for this 'trivial miſchance?'

'Rot your rapidity!' ſaid the cynick, half choaked with gall; 'if the cancer 'or the pox were in your throat, I 'ſhould not be thus tormented with 'your tongue: and yet a magpye ſhall 'ſpeak infinitely more to the purpoſe! 'Don't you know, Mr. Wiſeacre, that 'my caſe does not fall within the province of philoſophy? Had I been curtailed of all my members, racked by 'the gout and gravel, deprived of liberty, robbed of an only child, or 'viſited with the death of a dear friend 'like you, philoſophy might have contributed

'tributed to my conſolation; but will 'philoſophy pay my debts, or free me 'from the burden of obligation to a 'ſet of fellows whom I deſpiſe? Speak! '—pronounce—demonſtrate—or may 'Heaven cloſe your mouth for ever!'

'These are the comfortable fruits 'of your miſanthropy,' anſwered the youth; 'your laudable ſcheme of de 'taching yourſelf from the bonds of 'ſociety, and of moving in a ſuperior 'ſphere of your own. Had not you 'been ſo peculiarly ſage, and intent 'upon laughing at mankind, you could 'never have been diſconcerted by ſuch 'a pitiful inconvenience: any friend 'would have accommodated you with 'the ſum in queſtion. But now the 'world may retort the laugh; for you 'ſtand upon ſuch an agreeable footing 'with your acquaintance, that nothing 'could pleaſe them better than an ac-'count of your having given diſappoint-'ment the ſlip, by the help of a nooſe 'properly applied. This I mention by 'way of hint, upon which I would 'have you chew the cud of reflection; 'and ſhould it come to that iſſue, I 'will uſe my whole intereſt with the 'coroner to bring in his verdict *Lu-'nacy*, that your carcaſe may have 'Chriſtian burial.'

So ſaying, he withdrew, very well ſatisfied with the revenge he had taken; which operated ſo violently upon Crabtree, that if it had not been for the ſole conſideration mentioned above, he would, in all probability, have had recourſe to the remedy propoſed. But his unwillingneſs to oblige and entertain his fellow-creatures, hindered him from practiſing that expedient, till, by courſe of poſt, he was happily undeceived with regard to the ſituation of his affairs; and that information had ſuch an effect upon him, that he not only forgave our hero for the ſtratagem, which he immediately aſcribed to the right author, but alſo made him a tender of his purſe; ſo that matters, for the preſent, were brought to an amicable accommodation.

Meanwhile, Peregrine never ſlacked in his attendance upon the great; he never omitted to appear upon every levee day, employed his induſtry and penetration in getting intelligence of poſts that were unfilled, and every day recommended himſelf to the good offices of his patron, who ſeemed to eſpouſe his intereſt with great cordiality: nevertheleſs, he was always too late in his application, or the place he demanded chanced to be out of the miniſter's gift.

Theſe intimations, though communicated in the moſt warm profeſſions of friendſhip and regard, gave great umbrage to the young gentleman, who conſidered them as the evaſions of an inſincere courtier, and loudly complained of them as ſuch to his lordſhip, ſignifying, at the ſame time, an intention to ſell his mortgage for ready-money, which he would expend to the laſt farthing in thwarting his honour in the very firſt election he ſhould patronize. His lordſhip never wanted a proper exhortation upon theſe occaſions: he did not now endeavour to pacify him with aſſurances of the miniſter's favour, becauſe he perceived that theſe medicines had, by repeated uſe, loſt their effect upon our adventurer, whoſe menaces he now combated, by repreſenting that the miniſter's purſe was heavier than that of Mr. Pickle; that therefore, ſhould he make a point of oppoſing his intereſt, the youth muſt infallibly fail in the conteſt; in which caſe he would find himſelf utterly deſtitute of the means of ſubſiſtence, and conſequently precluded from all hope of proviſion.

This was an obſervation, the truth of which our young gentleman could not pretend to doubt, though it did not at all tend to the vindication of his honour's conduct. Indeed, Pickle began to ſuſpect the ſincerity of his own patron, who, in his opinion, had trifled with his impatience, and even eluded, by ſorry excuſes, his deſire of having another private audience of the firſt mover. His lordſhip alſo began to be leſs acceſſible than uſual; and Peregrine had been obliged to dun the ſteward with repeated demands, before he could finger the laſt quarter of his intereſt.

Alarmed by theſe conſiderations, he went and conſulted the nobleman whom he had obliged in the affair of his ſon; and had the mortification to hear but a very indifferent character of the perſon in whom he had ſo long confided. This new adviſer, who (though a courtier) was a rival of the other, gave our adventurer to underſtand, that he had been leaning upon a broken reed; that his profeſſed patron was a man of a ſhattered fortune and decayed intereſt, which extended no farther than a ſmile and a whiſper; that, for his own part, he

should have been proud of an opportunity to use his influence with the minister in behalf of Mr. Pickle: 'But, 'since you have put yourself under the 'protection of another peer,' said he, 'whose connections interfere with mine, 'I cannot now espouse your cause, 'without incurring the imputation of 'seducing that nobleman's adherents; 'a charge which, of all others, I would 'most carefully avoid. However, I 'shall always be ready to assist you with 'my private advice; as a specimen of 'which, I now counsel you to insist upon having another interview with Sir 'Steady Steerwell himself, that you may 'in person explain your pretensions, 'without any risk of being misrepresented; and endeavour, if possible, to 'draw him into some particular promise, 'from which he cannot retract with 'any regard to his reputation: for general profession is a necessary armour 'worn by all ministers in their own defence, against the importunity of those 'whom they will not befriend, and 'would not disoblige.'

This advice was so conformable to his own sentiments, that our adventurer seized the first opportunity to demand an hearing; and plainly told his patron, that if he could not be indulged with that favour, he should look upon his lordship's influence to be very small, and his own hopes to be altogether desperate; in which case, he was resolved to dispose of the mortgage, purchase an annuity, and live independent.

CHAP. VII.

HE IS INDULGED WITH A SECOND AUDIENCE BY THE MINISTER, OF WHOSE SINCERITY HE IS CONVINCED. HIS PRIDE AND AMBITION REVIVE, AND AGAIN ARE MORTIFIED.

IF the young gentleman's money had been in other hands, perhaps the peer would have been at very little pains, either in gratifying his demand, or opposing his revenge; but he knew that the sale of the mortgage could not be effected without an enquiry, to which he did not wish to be exposed. He therefore employed all his interest in procuring the solicited audience. This being granted, Peregrine, with great warmth and elocution, expatiated upon the injury his fortune had suffered in the affair of the borough for which he had stood candidate; he took notice of the disappointment he had sustained in the other election, reminded him of the promises with which he had been amused, and in conclusion, desired to know what he had to expect from his favour.

The minister having patiently heard him to an end, replied with a most gracious aspect, that he was very well informed of his merit and attachment, and very much disposed to convince him of the regard which he paid to both; that, till of late, he did not know the nature of his expectations, neither had he the power of creating posts for those whom he was inclined to serve; but if Mr. Pickle would chalk out any feasible method, by which he could manifest his sentiments of friendship, he should not be backward in executing the plan.

Peregrine laying hold on this declaration, mentioned several places which he knew to be vacant; but the old evasion was still used: one of them was not in his department of business; another had been promised to the third son of a certain earl, before the death of the last possessor; and a third was incumbered with a pension that ate up a good half of the appointments. In short, such obstructions were started to all his proposals, as he could not possibly surmount; though he plainly perceived, they were no other than specious pretexts to cover the mortifying side of a refusal. Exasperated, therefore, at this lack of sincerity and gratitude, 'I can 'easily foresee,' said he, 'that such 'difficulties will never be wanting, when 'I have any thing to ask; and for that 'reason will save myself the trouble of 'any farther application.' So saying, he withdrew in a very abrupt manner, breathing defiance and revenge. But his patron, who did not think proper to drive him to extremities, found means to persuade his honour to do something for the pacification of the young man's choler: and that same evening our adventurer received a message from his lordship, desiring to see him immediately.

In consequence of this intimation, Pickle went to his house, and appeared before him with a very cloudy aspect, which signified to whom it might concern, that his temper was at present too much galled to endure reproof; and therefore

therefore the ſagacious peer forbore taking him to taſk for his behaviour during the audience he had obtained; but gave him to underſtand, that the miniſter, in conſideration of his ſervices, had ſent him a bank-note of three hundred pounds, with a promiſe of the like ſum yearly, until he could be otherwiſe provided for. This declaration in ſome meaſure appeaſed the youth, who condeſcended to accept the preſent; and next levee-day made his acknowledgment to the donor, who favoured him with a ſmile of infinite complacency, which entirely diſſipated all the remains of his reſentment; for, as he could not poſſibly divine the true cauſe of his being temporized with, he looked upon this condeſcenſion as an undoubted proof of Sir Steady's ſincerity, and firmly believed that he would ſettle him in ſome place with the firſt opportunity, rather than continue to pay this penſion out of his own pocket. In all probability, his prediction would have been verified, had not an unforeſeen accident in a moment overwhelmed the bark of his intereſt at court.

Meanwhile, this ſhort gleam of good fortune recalled the ideas of pride and ambition, which he had formerly cheriſhed. His countenance was again lifted up, his good-humour retrieved, and his mien re-exalted. Indeed, he began to be conſidered as a riſing man by his fellow-dependents, who ſaw the particular notice with which he was favoured at the publick levee; and ſome of them, for that reaſon, were at pains to court his good graces. He no longer ſhunned his former intimates, with whom a good part of his fortune had been ſpent, but made up to them in all places of publick reſort, with the ſame eaſe and familiarity as he had been uſed to expreſs, and even re-embarked in ſome of their exceſſes, upon the ſtrength of his ſanguine expectation. Cadwallader and he renewed their conſultations in the court of ridicule; and divers exploits were atchieved, to the confuſion of thoſe who had *failed into the North of their diſpleaſure*.

But theſe enjoyments were ſoon interrupted by a misfortune equally fatal and unexpected: his noble patron was ſeized with an apoplectick fit, from which he was recovered by the phyſicians, that they might diſpatch him according to rule; and, in two months after they were called, he went the way of all fleſh. Peregrine was very much afflicted at this event, not only on account of his friendſhip for the deceaſed, to whom he thought himſelf under many and great obligations, but alſo, becauſe he feared that his own intereſt would ſuffer a ſevere ſhock, by the removal of this nobleman, whom he conſidered as it's chief ſupport. He put himſelf therefore in mourning, out of regard to the memory of his departed friend, and exhibited genuine marks of ſorrow and concern; though he had, in reality, more cauſe to grieve than he as yet imagined.

When quarter-day came about, he applied to the ſteward of his lordſhip's heir for the intereſt of his money as uſual; and the reader will readily own he had ſome reaſon to be ſurprized, when he was told he had no claim either to principal or intereſt. True it is, the manager talked very civilly as well as ſenſibly upon the ſubject. 'Your appear-'ance, Sir,' ſaid he to Pickle, 'ſcreens 'you from all ſuſpicion of an intended 'fraud; but the mortgage upon thoſe 'lands you mention, was granted to 'another perſon many years before you 'pretend to have lent that ſum; and I 'have this very morning paid one 'quarter's intereſt, as appears from this 'receipt, which you may peruſe for 'you ſatisfaction.'

Peregrine was ſo thunder-ſtruck at this information, which ſtripped him of his all, that he could not utter one word; a circumſtance that did no great honour to his character, in the opinion of the ſteward; who, in good earneſt, began to entertain ſome doubts of his integrity: for, among the papers of the deceaſed, which he had examined, there was no writing, memorandum, or receipt, relating to this incumbrance. After a long pauſe of ſtupefaction, Peregrine recollected himſelf ſo far as to obſerve, that either he was egregiouſly miſtaken, or the predeceſſor of his lord the greateſt villain upon earth. 'But, Mr. What-'d'ye-call-um,' ſaid he, 'you muſt give 'me leave to tell you, that your bare 'aſſertion, in this affair, will by no 'means induce me to put up quietly 'with the loſs of ten thouſand pounds.'

Having thus expreſſed himſelf, he retired from the houſe ſo diſcontented at this demur, that he ſcarce knew whether he moved upon his head or heels; and

the Park chancing to lie in his way, he ſauntered about, giving vent to a ſoliloquy in praiſe of his departed friend, the burden of which was a ſtring of incoherent curſes imprecated upon himſelf; till his tranſports, by degrees giving way to his reflection, he deliberated ſeriouſly and ſorrowfully upon his misfortune, and reſolved to conſult lawyers without loſs of time. But, firſt of all, he propoſed to make perſonal application to the heir; who, by a candid repreſentation of the caſe, might be inclined to do him juſtice.

In conſequence of this determination, he next morning put his writings in his pocket, and went in a chair to the houſe of the young nobleman, to whom being admitted by virtue of his appearance, and a ſmall gratification to the porter, he explained the whole affair, corroborating his aſſertions with the papers which he produced, and deſcribing the diſgrace that would be entailed upon the memory of the deceaſed, ſhould he be obliged to ſeek redreſs in a publick court of juſtice.

The executor, who was a perſon of good-breeding, condoled him upon his loſs with great good-nature, though he did not ſeem much ſurprized at his account of the matter; but wiſhed that, ſince the fraud muſt have been committed, the damage had fallen upon the firſt mortgager, who (he ſaid) was a thieviſh uſurer, grown rich by the diſtreſſes of his fellow-creatures. In anſwer to our hero's remonſtrances, he obſerved, that he did not look upon himſelf as obliged to pay the leaſt regard to the character of his predeceſſor, who had uſed him with great barbarity and injuſtice, not only in excluding him from his countenance and aſſiſtance, but alſo in prejudicing his inheritance as much as lay in his power; ſo that it could not be reaſonably expected that he would pay ten thouſand pounds of his debt, for which he had received no value. Peregrine, in ſpite of his chagrin, could not help owning within himſelf, that there was a good deal of reaſon in this refuſal. After having given looſe to his indignation, in the moſt violent invectives againſt the defunct, he took his leave of the complaiſant heir, and had immediate recourſe to the advice of counſel, who aſſured him, that he had an excellent plea, and was accordingly retained in the cauſe.

All theſe meaſures were taken in the firſt vigour of his exertion, during which his ſpirits were ſo fluttered with the diverſity of paſſions produced by his miſchance, that he miſtook for equanimity that which was no other than intoxication; and two whole days elapſed before he attained a due ſenſe of his misfortune. Then, indeed, he underwent a woeful ſelf-examination; every circumſtance of the enquiry added freſh pangs to his reflection; and the reſult of the whole was a diſcovery, that his fortune was totally conſumed, and himſelf reduced to a ſtate of the moſt deplorable dependence. This ſuggeſtion alone might (in the anguiſh of his deſpondency) have driven him to ſome deſperate courſe, had not it been in ſome meaſure qualified by the confidence of his lawyers, and the aſſurance of the miniſter, which (ſlender as the world hath generally found them) were the only bulwarks between miſery and him.

The mind is naturally pliable, and, provided it has the leaſt hope to lean upon, adapts itſelf wonderfully to the emergencies of fortune, eſpecially when the imagination is gay and luxuriant. This was the caſe with our adventurer; inſtead of indulging the melancholy ideas which his loſs inſpired, he had recourſe to the flattering deluſions of hope, ſoothing himſelf with unſubſtantial plans of future greatneſs, and endeavouring to cover what was paſſed with the veil of oblivion.

After ſome heſitation, he reſolved to make Crabtree acquainted with his misfortune, that once for all he might paſs the ordeal of his ſatire, without ſubjecting himſelf to a long ſeries of ſarcaſtick hints and doubtful alluſions, which he could not endure. He accordingly took the firſt opportunity of telling him, that he was abſolutely ruined by the perfidy of his patron, and deſired that he would not aggravate his affliction, by thoſe cynical remarks which were peculiar to men of his miſanthropical diſpoſition. Cadwallader liſtened to this declaration with internal ſurprize; which, however, produced no alteration in his countenance; and after ſome pauſe, obſerved, that our hero had no reaſon to look for any new obſervation from him upon this event, which he had long foreſeen, and daily expected; and exhorted him, with an ironical ſneer, to conſole himſelf with the promiſe of the miniſter, who would doubt-

doubtleſs diſcharge the debts of his deceaſed boſom-friend.

CHAP. VIII.

PEREGRINE COMMITS HIMSELF TO THE PUBLICK, AND IS ADMITTED MEMBER OF A COLLEGE OF AUTHORS.

THE bitterneſs of this explanation being paſſed, our young gentleman began to revolve within himſelf ſchemes for making up the deficiencies of his yearly income, which was now ſo grievouſly reduced, and detemined to profit, in ſome ſhape or other, by thoſe talents which he owed to nature and education. He had, in his affluence, heard of ſeveral authors who, without any pretenſions to genius or human literature, earned a very genteel ſubſiſtence, by undertaking work for bookſellers, in which reputation was not at all concerned. One (for example) profeſſed all manner of tranſlation, at ſo much per ſheet, and actually kept five or ſix amanuenſes continually employed, like ſo many clerks in a compting-houſe; by which means he was enabled to live at his eaſe, and enjoy his friend and his bottle, ambitious of no other character than that of an honeſt man and a good neighbour. Another projected a variety of plans for new dictionaries, which were executed under his eye by day-labourers; and the province of a third was hiſtory and voyages, collected or abridged by underſtrappers of the ſame claſs.

Mr. Pickle, in his compariſons, paid ſuch deference to his own capacity, as baniſhed all doubts of his being able to excel any of thoſe undertakers in their different branches of profeſſion, if ever he ſhould be driven to that experiment: but his ambition prompted him to make his intereſt and glory coincide, by attempting ſome performance which ſhould do him honour with the publick, and at the ſame time eſtabliſh his importance among the copy-purchaſers in town. With this view he worſhipped the muſe; and, conſcious of the little regard which is, in this age, paid to every ſpecies of poetick compoſition, in which neither ſatire nor obſcenity occurs, he produced an imitation of Juvenal, and laſhed ſome conſpicuous characters, with equal truth, ſpirit, and ſeverity. Though his name did not appear in the title-page of this production, he managed matters ſo, as that the work was univerſally imputed to the true author, who was not altogether diſappointed in his expectations of ſucceſs; for the impreſſion was immediately ſold off, and the piece became the ſubject of converſation in all aſſemblies of taſte.

This happy exordium not only attracted the addreſſes of the bookſellers, who made intereſt for his acquaintance, but alſo rouzed the notice of a ſociety of authors, who ſtyled themſelves *the college*, from which he was honoured with a deputation, offering to enrol him a member, by unanimous conſent. The perſon employed for this purpoſe being a bard who had formerly taſted of our hero's bounty, uſed all his eloquence to perſuade him to comply with the advances of their fraternity, which he deſcribed in ſuch a manner, as inflamed the curioſity of Pickle, who diſmiſſed the ambaſſador, with an acknowledgment of the great honour they conferred upon him, and a faithful promiſe of endeavouring to merit the continuance of their approbation.

He was afterwards, by the ſame miniſter, inſtructed in the ceremonies of the college; and, in conſequence of his information, compoſed an Ode, to be publickly recited on the evening of his introduction. He underſtood, that this conſtitution was no other than a body of authors, incorporated by mutual conſent, for their joint advantage and ſatisfaction, oppoſed to another aſſembly of the ſame kind, their avowed enemies and detractors. No wonder, then, that they ſought to ſtrengthen themſelves with ſuch a valuable acquiſition as our hero was like to prove. The college conſiſted of authors only, and theſe of all degrees in point of reputation, from the fabricator of a ſong ſet to muſick and ſung at Marybone, to the dramatick bard who had appeared in buſkins upon the ſtage: nay, one of the members had actually finiſhed eight books of an epick poem, for the publication of which he was at that time ſoliciting ſubſcriptions.

It cannot be ſuppoſed that ſuch a congregation of the ſons of Apollo would ſit a whole evening with order and decorum unleſs they were under the check of ſome eſtabliſhed authority: and this inconvenience having been foreſeen, they had

had elected a president, vested with full power to silence any member or members, that should attempt to disturb the harmony and subordination of the whole. The sage who at this time possessed the chair, was a person in years, whose countenance was a lively portrait of that rancorous discontent which follows repeated damnation. He had been extremely unfortunate in his theatrical productions, and was (to use the words of a profane wag, who assisted at the condemnation of his last play) by this time *damned beyond redemption*. Nevertheless, he still tarried about the skirts of Parnassus, translating some of the classicks, and writing miscellanies; and, by dint of an invincible assurance, supercilious insolence, the most undaunted virulence of tongue, and some knowledge of life, he made shift to acquire and maintain the character of a man of learning and wit, in the opinion of people who had neither; that is, thirty-nine in forty of those with whom he associated himself. He was even looked upon in this light by some few of the college; though the major part of those who favoured his election were such as dreaded his malice, respected his experience and seniority, or hated his competitor, who was the epick poet.

The chief end of this society (as I have already hinted) was to assist and support each other in their productions, which they mutually recommended to sale, with all their art and influence, not only in private conversation, but also in occasional epigrams, criticisms, and advertisements, inserted in the publick papers. This science, which is known by the vulgar appellation of *puffing*, they carried to such a pitch of finesse, that an author very often wrote an abusive answer to his own performance, in order to inflame the curiosity of the town, by which it had been overlooked. Notwithstanding this general unanimity in the college, a private animosity had long subsisted between the two rivals I have mentioned, on account of precedence, to which both laid claim, though by a majority of votes it had been decided in favour of the present chairman. The grudge, indeed, never proceeded to any degree of outrage or defiance, but manifested itself at every meeting, in attempts to eclipse each other in smart sayings and pregnant repartee; so that there was always a delicate mass of this kind of wit served up in the front of the evening, for the entertainment and example of the junior members, who never failed to divide upon this occasion, declaring themselves for one or other of the combatants, whom they encouraged by their looks, gestures, and applause, according to the circumstances of the dispute.

This honourable consistory was held in the best room of an ale-house, which afforded wine, punch, or beer, suitable to the purse or inclination of every individual, who separately paid for his own choice: and here was our hero introduced, in the midst of twenty strangers, who, by their looks and equipage, formed a very picturesque variety. He was received with a most gracious solemnity, and placed upon the right-hand of the president, who having commanded silence, recited aloud his introductory Ode, which met with universal approbation. Then was tendered to him the customary oath, obliging him to consult the honour and advantage of the society as far as it should lie in his power, in every station of life; and this being taken, his temples were bound with a wreath of laurel, which was kept sacred for such inauguration.

When these rites were performed with all due ceremony, the new member cast his eyes around the place, and took a more accurate survey of his brethren; among whom he observed a strange collection of periwigs, with regard to the colour, fashions, and dimensions, which were such as he had never seen before. Those who sat on each side, nearest the president, were generally distinguished by venerable tyes, the foretops of which exhibited a surprizing diversity; some of them rose slanting backwards, like the glacis of a fortification; some were elevated in two distinct eminences, like the hills Helicon and Parnassus; and others were curled and reflected, as the horns of Jupiter Ammon. Next to these, the majors took place, many of which were mere *succedanea*, made by the application of an occasional rose to the tail of a lank bob; and in the lower form appeared masses of hair which would admit of no description.

Their cloaths were tolerably well suited to the furniture of their heads, the apparel of the upper-bench being decent and clean, while that of the second class was threadbare and soiled; and

and at the lower end of the room, he perceived divers efforts made to conceal their rent breeches and dirty linen: nay, he could diſtinguiſh by their countenances, the different kinds of poetry in which they exerciſed the muſe; he ſaw Tragedy conſpicuous in a grave ſolemnity of regard; Satire louring in a frown of envy and diſcontent; Elegy whining in a funeral aſpect; Paſtoral dozing in a moſt inſipid languor of face; Ode-writing delineated in a diſtracted ſtare; and Epigram ſquinting with a pert ſneer. Perhaps our hero refined too much in his penetration, when he affirmed, that over and above theſe diſcoveries, he could plainly perceive the ſtate of every one's finances, and would have undertaken to have gueſſed each particular ſum, without varying three farthings from the truth.

The converſation, inſtead of becoming general, began to fall into parties; and the epic poet had actually attracted the attention of a private committee, when the chairman interpoſed, calling aloud, 'No cabals! no conſpiracies, 'gentlemen!' His rival thinking it incumbent upon him to make ſome reply to this rebuke, anſwered, 'We have 'no ſecrets; he that hath ears, let him 'hear.' This was ſpoke as an intimation to the company, whoſe looks were inſtantly whetted with the expectation of their ordinary meal: but the preſident ſeemed to decline the conteſt; for, without putting on his fighting face, he calmly replied, that he had ſeen Mr. Metaphor tip the wink, and whiſper to one of his confederates, and thence judged that there was ſomething myſterious on the carpet.

The epick poet, believing his antagoniſt creſt-fallen, reſolved to take the advantage of his dejection, that he might enhance his own character in the opinion of the ſtranger; and with that view aſked, with an air of exultation, if a man might not be allowed to have a convulſion in his eye, without being ſuſpected of a conſpiracy. The preſident perceiving his drift, and piqued at his preſumption, 'To be ſure,' ſaid he, 'a man of a weak head may be very 'well ſuppoſed to have convulſions in 'his eyes.' This repartee produced a laugh of triumph among the chairman's adherents; one of whom obſerved, that his rival had got a ſmart rap on the pate. 'Yes,' replied the bard, 'in that 'reſpect Mr. Chairman has the advan-'tage of me. Had my head been for-'tified with a horn-work, I ſhould not 'have been ſo ſenſible of the ſtroke.' This retort, which carried a ſevere alluſion to the preſident's wife, lighted up the countenances of the aggreſſor's friends, which had begun to be a little obumbrated; and had a contrary effect upon the other faction, till their chief, collecting all his capacity, returned the ſalute, by obſerving, that there was no occaſion for an horn-work, when the covered-way was not worth defending.

Such a repriſal upon Mr. Metaphor's yoke fellow, who was by no means remarkable for her beauty, could not fail to operate upon the hearers; and as for the bard himſelf, he was evidently ruffled by the reflection; to which however he, without heſitation, replied, 'Egad! 'tis my opinion, that if your 'covered-way was laid open, few peo-'ple would venture to give the aſſault.' —'Not unleſs their batteries were more 'effectual than the fire of your wit,' ſaid the preſident. 'As for that mat-'ter,' cried the other with precipitation, 'they would have no occaſion to batter 'in breach; they would find the angle 'of the *lapucelle* baſtion demoliſhed to 'their hands: He! he!'—'But I be-'lieve it would ſurpaſs your under-'ſtanding,' reſumed the chairman, 'to 'fill up the *foſſé*.'—'That, I own, is 'impracticable,' replied the bard, 'there 'I ſhould meet with an *hiatus maxime* '*deflendus*!'

The preſident, exaſperated at this inſinuation, in preſence of the new member, exclaimed with indignation in his looks, 'And yet, if a body of pioneers 'were ſet at work upon your ſkull, they 'would find rubbiſh enough to choak 'up all the common-ſewers in town.' Here a groan was uttered by the admirers of the epick poet; who, taking a pinch of ſnuff with great compoſure, 'When a man grows ſcurrilous,' ſaid he, 'I take it for an undoubted proof 'of his overthrow.'—'If that be the 'caſe,' cried the other, 'you yourſelf 'muſt be the vanquiſhed party; for you 'was the firſt that was driven to per-'ſonal abuſe.'—'I appeal,' anſwered the bard, 'to thoſe who can diſtinguiſh. 'Gentlemen, your judgment?'

This reference produced an univerſal clamour, and the whole college was involved

volved in confuſion. Every man entered into diſpute with his neighbour on the merits of this cauſe. The chairman interpoſed his authority in vain; the noiſe grew louder and louder; the diſputants waxed warm; the epithets of *blockhead*, *fool*, and *ſcoundrel*, were bandied about. Peregrine enjoyed the uproar, and leaping upon the table, ſounded the charge to battle, which was immediately commenced in ten different duels. The lights were extinguiſhed; the combatants threſhed one another without diſtinction; the miſchievous Pickle diſtributed ſundry random blows in the dark; and the people below, being alarmed with the ſound of application, the overturning of chairs, and the outcries of thoſe who were engaged, came up ſtairs in a body with lights, to reconnoitre, and, if poſſible, quell this hideous tumult.

Objects were no ſooner rendered viſible, than the field of battle exhibited ſtrange groupes of the ſtanding and the fallen. Each of Mr. Metaphor's eyes were ſurrounded with a circle of a lived hue; and the preſident's noſe diſtilled a quantity of clotted blood. One of the tragick authors, finding himſelf aſſaulted in the dark, had, by way of a poniard, employed upon his adverſary's throat a knife which lay upon the table, for the convenience of cutting cheeſe; but, by the bleſſing of God, the edge of it was not keen enough to enter the ſkin, which it had only ſcratched in divers places. A ſatiriſt had almoſt bit off the ear of a lyrick bard. Shirts and neckcloths were torn to rags; and there was ſuch a woeful wreck of periwigs on the floor, that no examination could adjuſt the property of the owners, the greateſt part of whom were obliged to uſe handkerchiefs by way of night-cap.

The fray, however, ceaſed at the approach of thoſe who interpoſed; part of the combatants being tired of an exerciſe in which they had received nothing but hard blows; part of them being intimidated by the remonſtrances of the landlord and his company, who threatened to call the watch; and a very few being aſhamed of the ſcandalous diſpute in which they were detected. But though the battle was ended, it was impoſſible, for that evening, to reſtore harmony and good order to the ſociety, which broke up, after the preſident had pronounced a ſhort and confuſed apology to our adventurer, for the indecent uproar which had unfortunately happened on the firſt night of his admiſſion.

Indeed, Peregrine deliberated with himſelf, whether or not his reputation would allow him to appear again among this venerable fraternity: but, as he knew ſome of them to be men of real genius, how ridiculous ſoever their carriage might be modified, and was of that laughing diſpoſition, which is always ſeeking food for mirth, as Horace obſerves of Philippus,

Riſus undique quærit;

he reſolved to frequent the college, notwithſtanding this accident which happened at his inauguration; being thereto, moreover, induced by his deſire of knowing the private hiſtory of the ſtage, with which he ſuppoſed ſome of the members perfectly well acquainted. He was alſo viſited, before the next meeting, by his introductor, who aſſured him, that ſuch a tumult had never happened ſince the firſt inſtitution of the aſſembly till that very night; and promiſed, that for the future he ſhould have no cauſe to be ſcandalized at their behaviour.

Perſuaded by theſe motives and aſſurances, he truſted himſelf once more in the midſt of their community, and every thing proceeded with great decorum; all diſpute and altercation was avoided; and the college applied itſelf ſeriouſly to the purpoſes of it's meeting, namely, to hear the grievances of individuals, and aſſiſt them with ſalutary advice. The firſt perſon that craved redreſs, was a noiſy North Briton, who complained (in a ſtrange dialect) that he had, in the beginning of the ſeaſon, preſented a comedy to the manager of a certain theatre; who, after it had lain ſix weeks in his hands, returned it to the author, affirming there was neither ſenſe nor Engliſh in the performance.

The preſident (who, by the bye, had reviſed the piece) thinking his own reputation concerned, declared, in preſence of the whole ſociety, that with regard to ſenſe, he would not undertake to vindicate the production; but, in point of language, no fault could be juſtly laid to it's charge: 'The caſe, 'however, is very plain,' ſaid he, 'the 'manager never gave himſelf the trou-'ble to peruſe the play, but formed a

'judg-

'judgment of it from the converſation 'of the author, never dreaming that it 'had undergone the reviſal of an Eng- 'liſh writer; be that as it will, you are 'infinitely obliged to him for having 'diſpatched you ſo ſoon, and I ſhall 'have the better opinion of him for it as 'long as I live; for I have known 'otherguiſe authors than you (that is, 'in point of intereſt and fame) kept in 'continual attendance and dependance 'the beſt part of their lives, and after 'all, diſappointed in the expectation 'of ſeeing their performances exhibited 'on the ſtage.'

CHAP. IX.

FARTHER PROCEEDINGS OF THE COLLEGE.

THIS affair was no ſooner diſcuſſed, than another gentleman exhibited a complaint, ſignifying, that he had undertaken to tranſlate into Engliſh a certain celebrated author, who had been cruelly mangled by former attempts; and that, as ſoon as his deſign took air, the proprietors of theſe miſerable tranſlations had endeavoured to prejudice his work, by induſtrious inſinuations, contrary to truth and fair-dealing, importing, that he did not underſtand one word of the language which he pretended to tranſlate. This being a caſe that nearly concerned the greateſt part of the audience, it was taken into ſerious deliberation: ſome obſerved, that it was not only a malicious effort againſt the plaintiff, but alſo a ſpiteful advertiſement to the publick, tending to promote an enquiry into the abilities of all other tranſlators, few of whom (it was well known) were ſo qualified as to ſtand the teſt of ſuch examination. Others ſaid, that over and above this conſideration, which ought to have it's due weight with the college, there was a neceſſity for concerting meaſures to humble the preſumption of bookſellers; who had, from time immemorial, taken all opportunities to oppreſs and enſlave their authors; not only by limiting men of genius to the wages of journeymen taylors, without even allowing them one ſabbath in the week, but alſo in taking ſuch advantages of their neceſſities, as were inconſiſtent with juſtice and humanity. 'For example,' ſaid one of the members, 'after I myſelf had acquired 'a little reputation with the town, I 'was careſſed by one of thoſe tyrants, 'who profeſſed a friendſhip for me, and 'even ſupplied me with money, accord- 'ing to the exigencies of my ſituation; 'ſo that I looked upon him as the mir- 'rour of diſintereſted benevolence; and 'had he known my diſpoſition, and 'treated me accordingly, I ſhould have 'writ for him upon his own terms. 'After I had uſed his friendſhip in this 'manner for ſome time, I happened to 'have occaſion for a ſmall ſum of mo- 'ney, and with great confidence made 'another application to my good friend; 'when all of a ſudden he put a ſtop to 'his generoſity, refuſed to accommodate 'me in the moſt abrupt and mortify- 'ing ſtyle, and though I was at that 'time pretty far advanced in a work 'for his benefit, which was a ſuffi- 'cient ſecurity for what I owed him, 'he roundly aſked, how I propoſed to 'pay the money which I had already 'borrowed. Thus was I uſed like a 'young whore juſt come upon the town, 'whom the bawd allows to run into 'her debt, that ſhe may have it in her 'power to oppreſs her at pleaſure; and 'if the ſufferer complains, ſhe is treat- 'ed like the moſt ungrateful wretch 'upon earth; and that too with ſuch 'appearance of reaſon, as may eaſily 'miſlead an unconcerned ſpectator. "You unthankful drab!" ſhe will ſay, "did'n't I take you into my houſe "when you had'n't a ſhift to your "back, a petticoat to your tail, nor a "morſel of bread to put into your bel- "ly? Ha'n't I cloathed you from head "to foot like a gentlewoman; ſupport- "ed you with board, lodging, and all "neceſſaries, till your own extrava- "gance hath brought you into diſtreſs; "and now you have the impudence, "you naſty, ſtinking, brimſtone bung- "away! to ſay you are hardly dealt "with, when I demand no more than "my own." Thus the whore and the 'author are equally oppreſſed, and even 'left without the melancholy privilege 'of complaining; ſo that they are fain 'to ſubſcribe to ſuch terms as their cre- 'ditors ſhall pleaſe to impoſe.'

This illuſtration operated ſo powerfully upon the conviction and reſentment of the whole college, that revenge was univerſally denounced againſt thoſe who had aggrieved the plaintiff; and

after some debate it was agreed, that he should make a new translation of some other saleable book, in opposition to a former version belonging to the delinquents, and print it in such a small size, as would enable him to undersell their property; and that this new translation should be recommended and introduced into the world with the whole art and influence of the society.

This affair being settled to the satisfaction of all present, an author of some character stood up, and craved the advice and assistance of his fellows, in punishing a certain nobleman of great pretensions to taste, who, in consequence of a production which this gentleman had ushered into the world with universal applause, not only desired, but even eagerly courted his acquaintance. 'He 'invited me to his house,' said he, 'where I was overwhelmed with civi- 'lity and professions of friendship. He 'insisted upon my treating him as an 'intimate, and calling upon him at all 'hours, without ceremony; he made 'me promise to breakfast with him at 'least three times a week: in short, I 'looked upon myself as very fortunate, 'in meeting with such advances from a 'man of his interest and reputation, 'who had it in his power to befriend 'me effectually in my passage through 'life; and, that I might not give him 'any cause to think I neglected his 'friendship, I went to his house in two 'days, with a view of drinking choco- 'late, according to appointment; but 'he had been so much fatigued with 'dancing at an assembly over night, 'that his valet de chambre would not 'venture to wake him so early; and I 'left my compliments to his lordship, 'with a performance in manuscript, 'which he had expressed a most eager 'desire to peruse. I repeated my visit 'next morning, that his impatience to 'see me might not have some violent 'effect upon his constitution; and re- 'ceived a message from his minister, 'signifying, that he had been highly 'entertained with the manuscript I had 'left, a great part of which he had read, 'but was at present so busy in contriv- 'ing a proper dress for a private masque- 'rade, which would be given that same 'evening, that he could not have the 'pleasure of my company at breakfast. 'This was a feasible excuse, which I ad- 'mitted accordingly, and in a day or 'two appeared again, when his lord- 'ship was particularly engaged. This 'might possibly be the case; and there- 'fore I returned the fourth time, in 'hopes of finding him more at leisure; 'but he had gone out about half an 'hour before my arrival, and left my 'performance with his valet de cham- 'bre, who assured me that his lord 'had perused it with infinite plea- 'sure. Perhaps I might have retired 'very well satisfied with this declara- 'tion, had not I, in my passage through 'the hall, heard one of the footmen, 'upon the top of the stair-case, pro- 'nounce with an audible voice, "Will "your lordship please to be at home "when he calls?" It is not to be sup- 'posed that I was pleased at this disco- 'very; which I no sooner made, than 'turning to my conductor, "I find,' 'said I, "his lordship is disposed to be "abroad to more people than me this "morning." The fellow (though a 'valet de chambre) blushed at this ob- 'servation; and I withdrew, not a lit- 'tle irritated at the peer's disingenuity, 'and fully resolved to spare him my 'visits for the future. It was not long 'after this occasion, that I happened 'to meet him in the Park, and being 'naturally civil, I could not pass him 'without a salutation of the hat, which 'he returned in the most distant man- 'ner, though we were both solitary, 'and not a soul within view; and when 'that very performance, which he had 'applauded so warmly, was lately pub- 'lished by subscription, he did not be- 'speak so much as one copy. I have 'often reflected with wonder upon this 'inconsistency in his conduct. I never 'courted his patronage, nor indeed 'thought of his name, until he made 'interest for my acquaintance; and if 'he was disappointed in my conversa- 'tion, why did he press me so much 'to farther connection?'

'The case is very clear,' cried the chairman, interrupting him: 'he is one 'of those connoisseurs who set up for 'taste, and value themselves upon know- 'ing all men of genius, whom they 'would be thought to assist in their 'productions. I will lay an even bet 'with any man, that his lordship, on 'the strength of that slender inter- 'view, together with the opportunity 'of having seen your performance in 'manuscript, has already hinted to

'every

'every company in which he is conver-
'sant, that you solicited his assistance
'in retouching the piece, which you
'have now offered to the publick, and
'that he was pleased to favour you
'with his advice, but found you obsti-
'nately bigotted to your own opinion,
'in some points relating to those very
'passages which have not met with the
'approbation of the town. As for his
'carelessness, there was nothing at all ex-
'traordinary in his behaviour. By that
'time you have lived to my age, you
'will not be surprized to see a courtier's
'promise and performance of a diffe-
'rent complexion; not but that I would
'willingly act as an auxiliary in your
'resentment.'

The opinion of the president was strengthened by the concurrence of all the members; and all other complaints and memorials being deferred till another sitting, the college proceeded to an exercise of wit, which was generally performed once every fortnight, with a view to promote the expectoration of genius. The subject was occasionally chosen by the chairman, who opened the game with some shrewd remark naturally arising from the conversation; and then the ball was tossed about from one corner of the room to the other, according to the motions of the spirit.

That the reader may have a just idea of this sport, and of the abilities of those who carried it on, I shall repeat the sallies of this evening, according to the order and succession in which they escaped. One of the members observing that Mr. Metaphor was absent, was told by the person who sat next to him, that the poet had foul weather at home, and could not stir abroad. 'What!' said the president interposing, with the signal upon his countenance, 'is he 'wind-bound in port?'—'Wine-'bound, I suppose,' cried another.—'Hooped with wine! a strange meta-'phor!' said the third.—'Not if he 'has got into a hogshead,' answered the fourth.—'The hogshead will sooner get 'into him,' replied a fifth; 'it must 'be a tun or an ocean.'—'No won-'der, then, if he should be overwhelmed,' said a sixth.—'If he should,' cried a seventh, 'he will cast up when his gall 'breaks.'—'That must be very soon,' roared an eighth, 'for it has been long 'ready to burst.'—'No, no,' observed a ninth, 'he'll stick fast at the bottom, 'take my word for it; he has a *natural* '*alacrity in sinking*.'—'And yet,' remarked a tenth, 'I have seen him in the 'clouds.'—'Then was he cloudy, I 'suppose,' cried the eleventh.—'So 'dark,' replied the other, 'that his 'meaning could not be perceived.'—'For all that,' said the twelfth, 'he 'is easily seen through.'—'You talk,' answered the thirteenth, 'as if his 'head was made of glass.'—'No, no,' cried a fourteenth, 'his head is made 'of more durable stuff; it will bend 'before it breaks.'—'Yet I have seen 'it broken,' resumed the president.—'Did you perceive any wit come out at 'the hole?' said another.—'His wit,' replied the chairman, 'is too subtle to 'be perceived.'

A third mouth was just opened, when the exercise was suddenly interrupted by the dreadful cry of 'Fire!' which issued from the kitchen, and involved the whole college in confusion. Every man endeavouring to be the first in making his exit, the door and passage were blocked up: each individual was pummelled by the person that happened to be behind him. This communication produced noise and exclamation; clouds of smoke rolled upwards into the apartment, and terror sat on every brow; when Peregrine, seeing no prospect of retreating by the door, opened one of the windows, and fairly leaped into the street, where he found a crowd of people assembled to contribute their assistance in extinguishing the flames. Several members of the college followed his example, and happily accomplished their escape: the chairman himself being unwilling to use the same expedient, stood trembling on the brink of descent, dubious of his own agility, and dreading the consequence of such a leap, when a chair happening to pass, he laid hold on the opportunity, and by an exertion of his muscles pitched upon the top of the carriage, which was immediately overturned in the kennel, to the grievous annoyance of the fare, which happened to be a certain effeminate beau, in full dress, on his way to a private assembly.

This phantom hearing the noise over head, and feeling the shock of being overthrown at the same time, thought that some whole tenement had fallen upon the chair, and, in the terror of being crushed to pieces, uttered

a ſcream which the populace ſuppoſed to proceed from the mouth of a woman, and therefore went to his aſſiſtance; while the chairmen, inſtead of miniſtering to his occaſions, no ſooner recollected themſelves, than they ran in purſuit of their overthrower, who being accuſtomed to eſcape from bailiffs, dived into a dark alley, and vaniſhing in a trice, was not viſible to any living ſoul, until he appeared next day on Tower Hill.

The humane part of the mob, who beſtirred themſelves for the relief of the ſuppoſed lady, no ſooner perceived their miſtake in the appearance of the beau, who ſtared around him with horror and affright, than their compaſſion was changed into mirth, and they began to paſs a great many unſavoury jokes upon his misfortune, which they now diſcovered no inclination to alleviate; and he found himſelf very uncomfortably beſet, when Pickle, pitying his ſituation, interpoſed in his behalf, and prevailed upon the chairmen to carry him into the houſe of an apothecary in the neighbourhood, to whom his miſchance proved a very advantageous accident; for the fright operated ſo violently upon his nerves, that he was ſeized with a delirium, and lay a whole fortnight deprived of his ſenſes; during which period he was not neglected in point of medicines, food, and attendance, but royally regaled, as appeared by the contents of his landlord's bill.

Our adventurer having ſeen this unfortunate beau ſafely houſed, returned to the ſcene of the other calamity; which, as it was no other than a foul chimney, ſoon yielded to the endeavours of the family, and was happily overcome, without any other bad conſequence than that of alarming the neighbours, diſturbing the college, and diſordering the brain of a beau.

Eager to be acquainted with the particular conſtitutions of a ſociety which ſeemed to open upon him by degrees, Mr. Pickle did not fail to appear at the next meeing, when ſeveral petitions were laid before the board, in behalf of thoſe members who were confined in the priſons of the Fleet, Marſhalſea, and King's Bench. As thoſe unhappy authors expected nothing from their brethren but advice and good offices, which did not concern the purſe, the memorials were conſidered with great care and humanity; and, upon this occaſion, Peregrine had it in his power to manifeſt his importance to the community; for he happened to be acquainted with the creditor of one of the priſoners, and knew that gentleman's ſeverity was owing to his reſentment at the behaviour of the debtor, who had lampooned him in print, becauſe he refuſed to comply with a freſh demand, after he had lent him money to the amount of a conſiderable ſum. Our young gentleman therefore underſtanding that the author was penitent, and diſpoſed to make a reaſonable ſubmiſſion, promiſed to employ his influence with the creditor towards an accommodation; and in a few days actually obtained his releaſe.

The ſocial duties being diſcharged, the converſation took a general turn, and ſeveral new productions were freely criticiſed; thoſe eſpecially which belonged to authors who were either unconnected with, or unknown to the college. Nor did the profeſſion of ſtage-playing eſcape the cognizance of the aſſembly: a deputation of the moſt judicious members being ſent weekly to each theatre, with a view of making remarks upon the performance of the actors. The cenſors for the preceding week were according called upon to give in their report; and the play which they had reviewed was the Revenge.

'Mr. Q—,' ſaid the ſecond cenſor, 'take him all in all, is certainly the 'moſt compleat and unblemiſhed per-'former that ever appeared on our 'ſtage, notwithſtanding the blind ado-'ration which is paid to his rival. I 'went two nights ago, with an expreſs 'deſign to criticiſe his action: I could 'find no room for cenſure, but infinite 'ſubject for admiration and applauſe. 'In Pierre he is great, in Othello ex-'cellent, but in Zanga beyond all imi-'tation. Over and above the diſtinct-'neſs of pronunciation, the dignity of 'attitude, and expreſſion of face, his 'geſtures are ſo juſt and ſignificant, 'that a man, though utterly bereft of 'the ſenſe of hearing, might, by ſee-'ing him only, underſtand the mean-'ing of every word he ſpeaks. Sure 'nothing can be more exquiſite than 'his manner of telling Iſabella how 'Alonzo behaved when he found the 'incendiary letter which ſhe had drop-

'ped

'ped by the Moor's direction; and 'when, to crown his vengeance, he 'discovers himself to be the contriver 'of all the mischief that had happened, 'he manifests a perfect master-piece of 'action, in pronouncing these four 'little monosyllables, *Know then, 'twas——I.*'

Peregrine having eyed the critick some minutes; 'I fancy,' said he, 'your praise must be ironical, because, 'in the very two situations you men'tion, I think I have seen that player 'out-herod Herod; or, in other words, 'exceed all his other extravagancies. 'The intention of the author is, that 'the Moor should communicate to his 'confidante a piece of information 'contained in a few lines; which, 'doubtless, ought to be repeated with 'an air of eagerness and satisfaction, 'not with the ridiculous grimace of 'a monkey, to which, methought, his 'action bore an intimate resemblance 'in uttering this plain sentence:

'——he took it up;
'But scarce was it unfolded to his sight,
'When he, as if an arrow pierc'd his eye,
'Started, and trembling dropp'd it on the ground.'

'In pronouncing the first two words, 'this egregious actor stoops down, 'and seems to take up something from 'the stage, then proceeding to repeat 'what follows, mimicks the manner 'of unfolding a letter; when he men'tions the simile of an arrow piercing 'the eye, he darts his fore-finger to'wards that organ, then recoils with 'great violence when the word *started* 'is expressed; and when he comes to '*trembling dropp'd it on the ground*, he 'throws all his limbs into a tremulous 'motion, and shakes the imaginary 'paper from his hand. The latter 'part of the description is carried on 'with the same minute gesticulation 'while he says,

'Pale and aghast awhile my victim stood,
'Disguis'd a sigh or two, and puff'd them from him;
'Then rubb'd his brow, and took it up again.

'The player's countenance assumes a 'wild stare, he sighs twice most pite'ously, as if he were on the point of 'suffocation, scrubs his forehead, and 'bending his body, apes the action of 'snatching an object from the floor. 'Nor is this dexterity of dumb-shew 'omitted, when he concludes his inti'mation in these three lines:

'At first, he look'd as if he meant to read it;
'But, check'd by rising fears, he crush'd it thus,
'And thrust it, like an adder, in his bosom.

'Here the judicious performer imi'tates the confusion and concern of 'Alonzo; seems to cast his eyes upon 'something, from which they are im'mediately withdrawn with horror 'and precipitation; then shutting his 'fist with a violent squeeze, as if he 'intended to make immediate applica'to Isabella's nose, he rams it in his 'own bosom, with all the horror and 'agitation of a thief taken in the 'manner. Were the player debarred 'the use of speech, and obliged to act 'to the eyes only of the audience, this 'mimickry might be a necessary con'veyance of his meaning; but when 'he is at liberty to signify his ideas 'by language, nothing can be more 'trivial, forced, unnatural, and an'tick, than this superfluous mum'mery. Not that I would exclude 'from the representation the graces of 'action, without which the choicest 'sentiments, cloathed in the most ex'quisite expression, would appear un'animated and insipid; but these are 'as different from this ridiculous bur'lesque, as is the demeanor of a Tully 'in the rostrum, from the tricks of a 'Jack-pudding on a mountebank's 'stage: and for the truth of what I al'ledge, I appeal to the observation of 'any person who has considered the 'elegance of attitude and propriety 'of gesture, as they are universally 'acknowledged in the real characters 'of life. Indeed, I have known a 'Gascon, whose limbs were as elo'quent as his tongue: he never men'tioned the word *sleep* without reclin'ing his head upon his hand; when 'he had occasion to talk of an horse, 'he always started up and trotted 'across the room, except when he was 'so situated that he could not stir 'without incommoding the company, 'and in that case he contented himself 'with neighing aloud: if a dog hap'pened to be the subject of his con'versation,

'verſation, he wagged his tail, and 'grinned in a moſt ſignificant manner; 'and one day he expreſſed his deſire 'of going backwards with ſuch na'tural imitation of his purpoſe, that 'every body in the room firmly be'lieved he had actually overſhot him'ſelf, and fortified their noſtrils ac'cordingly. Yet no man ever looked 'upon this virtuoſo to be the ſtandard 'of propriety in point of ſpeaking and 'deportment. For my own part, I 'confeſs the player in queſtion would, 'by dint of theſe qualifications, make 'a very good figure in the character of 'Pantaloon's lacquey, in the enter'tainment of Perſeus and Andromeda, 'and perhaps might acquire ſome re'putation, by turning the Revenge in'to a pantomime; in which caſe, I 'would adviſe him to come upon the 'ſtage, provided with an handful of 'flour, in order to beſinear his face, 'when he pronounces *pale and aghaſt*, '&c. and methinks he ought to il'luſtrate the adder with an hideous 'hiſs. But let us now come to the 'other ſituation, in which this modern 'Æſopus is ſuppoſed to diſtinguiſh 'himſelf ſo much; I mean that ſame *e-claircijſement* comprehended in, *Know 'then, 'twas——I.* His manner, I 'own, may be altered ſince I was pre'ſent at the repreſentation of that per'formance: but certain I am, when 'I beheld him in that critical con'juncture, his behaviour appeared to 'me ſo uncouth, that I really ima'gined he was viſited by ſome epilep'tick diſtemper; for he ſtood totter'ing and gaſping for the ſpace of two 'minutes, like a man ſuddenly ſtruck 'with the palſy; and after various 'diſtortions and ſide ſhakings, as if 'he had got fleas in his doublet, heav'ed up from his lungs the letter *I*, like 'a huge anchor from foul ground.'

This criticiſm was acceptable to the majority of the college, who had no great veneration for the player in queſtion; and his admirer, without making any reply, aſked in a whiſper, of the gentleman who ſat next to him, if Pickle had not offered ſome production to the ſtage, and met with a repulſe.

CHAP. X.

THE YOUNG GENTLEMAN IS INTRODUCED TO A VIRTUOSO OF THE FIRST ORDER, AND COMMENCES YELPER.

HITHERTO Peregrine had profeſſed himſelf an author, without reaping the fruits of that occupation, except the little fame he had acquired by his late ſatire; but now he thought it high time to weigh *ſolid pudding againſt empty praiſe*; and therefore engaged with ſome booksellers in a certain tranſlation, which he obliged himſelf to perform for the conſideration of two hundred pounds. The articles of agreement being drawn, he began his taſk with great eagerneſs; roſe early in the morning to his work, at which he laboured all day long; went abroad with the bats in the evening, and appeared in the coffee-houſe, where he amuſed himſelf with the newſpapers and converſation till nine o'clock; then he retired to his own apartment, and after a ſlight repaſt, betook himſelf to reſt, that he might be able to unrooſt with the cock. This ſudden change from his former way of life agreed ſo ill with his diſpoſition, that, for the firſt time, he was troubled with flatulencies and indigeſtion, which produced anxiety and dejection of ſpirits; and the nature of his ſituation began in ſome meaſure to diſcompoſe his brain; a diſcovery which he no ſooner made, than he had recourſe to the advice of a young phyſician, who was a member of the college of authors, at this time one of our hero's moſt intimate acquaintance.

The ſon of Æſculapius having conſidered his caſe, imputed his diſorder to the right cauſe, namely, want of exerciſe; diſſuaded him from ſuch cloſe application to ſtudy, until he ſhould be gradually familiarized to a ſedentary life; adviſed him to enjoy his friend and his bottle in moderation, and wean himſelf from his former cuſtoms by degrees; and, above all things, to riſe immediately after his firſt ſleep, and exerciſe himſelf in a morning's walk. In order to render this laſt part of the preſcription the more palatable, the doctor promiſed to attend him in theſe early excurſions, and even to introduce him to a certain perſonage of note, who gave a ſort of publick breakfaſting to the minor virtuoſi of the age, and often employed his intereſt in behalf of thoſe

thoſe who properly cultivated his countenance and approbation.

This propoſal was extremely acceptable to our young gentleman; who, beſides the advantage which might accrue to him from ſuch a valuable connection, foreſaw much entertainment and ſatisfaction in the diſcourſe of ſo many learned gueſts. The occaſions of his health and intereſt, moreover, coincided in another circumſtance; the miniſter's levee being kept betimes in the morning; ſo that he could perform his walk, yield his attendance, and breakfaſt at this philoſophical board, without encroaching a great deal upon his other avocations.

Meaſures being thus preconcerted, the phyſician conducted our adventurer to the houſe of this celebrated ſage, to whom he recommended him as a gentleman of genius and taſte, who craved the honour of his acquaintance: but he had previouſly ſmoothed the way to his introduction, by repreſenting Peregrine as a young fellow of great ambition, ſpirit, and addreſs, who could not fail to make a figure in the world; that therefore he would be a creditable addition to the ſubordinates of ſuch a patron; and by his qualifications, intrepidity, and warmth of temper, turn out a conſummate herald of his fame.

Upon theſe conſiderations, he met with a moſt engaging reception from the entertainer, who was a well-bred man, of ſome learning, generoſity, and taſte; but his foible was, the deſire of being thought the inimitable pattern of all three.

It was with a view to acquire and ſupport this character, that his houſe was open to all thoſe who had any pretenſions to literature; conſequently he was ſurrounded by a ſtrange variety of pretenders; but none were diſcouraged, becauſe he knew that even the moſt inſignificant might, in ſome ſhape, conduce to the propagation of his praiſe. A babbler, though he cannot run upon the ſcent, may ſpring the game, and by his yelping help to fill up the cry: no wonder, then, that a youth of Pickle's accompliſhments was admitted, and even invited into the pack. After having enjoyed a very ſhort private audience in the cloſet, our young gentleman was ſhewn into another room, where half a dozen of his fellow-adherents waited for their Mæcenas; who in a few minutes appeared, with a moſt gracious aſpect received the compliments of the morning, and ſat down to breakfaſt in the midſt of them without any farther ceremony.

The converſation at firſt turned upon the weather, which was inveſtigated in a very philoſophical manner by one of the company, who ſeemed to have conſulted all the barometers and thermometers that ever were invented, before he would venture to affirm that it was a chill morning. This ſubject being accurately diſcuſſed, the chief enquired about the news of the learned world; and his inclination was no ſooner expreſſed, than every gueſt opened his mouth, in order to gratify his curioſity: but he that firſt captivated his attention was a meagre, ſhrivelled antiquary, who looked like an animated mummy, which had been ſcorched among the ſands of the deſart. He told the patron, that he had by accident met with a medal, which, though it was defaced by time, he would venture to pronounce a genuine antique, from the ringing and taſte of the metal, as well as from the colour and compoſition of the ruſt: ſo ſaying, he produced a piece of copper coin, ſo conſumed and diſguiſed by age, that ſcarce a veſtige of the impreſſion was to be perceived. Nevertheleſs, this connoiſſeur pretended to diſtinguiſh a face in profile, from which he concluded that the piece was of the Upper Empire, and on the reverſe he endeavoured to point out the bulb of the ſpear, and part of the parazonium, which were the inſignia of the Roman Virtus, together with the fragment of one fold of the multicium in which ſhe was cloathed. He likewiſe had diſcovered an angle of the letter N; and at ſome diſtance an entire I: from theſe circumſtances conjecturing, and indeed concluding, that the medal was ſtruck by Severus, in honour of the victory he obtained over his rival Niger, after he had forced the paſſes of Mount Taurus. This criticiſm ſeemed very ſatisfactory to the entertainer, who having examined the coin by the help of his ſpectacles, plainly diſcerned the particulars which the owner had mentioned, and was pleaſed to term his account of the matter a very ingenious explanation.

The curioſity was circulated through the hands of all preſent; and every virtuoſo,

virtuoſo, in his turn, licked the copper, and rung it upon the hearth, declaring his aſſent to the judgment which had been pronounced. At length it fell under the inſpection of our young gentleman; who, though no antiquarian, was very well acquainted with the current coin of his own country, and no ſooner caſt his eyes upon the valuable antique, than he affirmed, without heſitation, that it was no other than the ruins of an Engliſh farthing, and that ſame ſpear, parazonium, and multicium, the remains of the emblems and drapery with which the figure of Britannia is delineated on our copper money.

This hardy aſſeveration ſeemed to diſconcert the patron, while it incenſed the medaliſt, who grinning like an enraged baboon, 'What d'ye tell me of 'a braſs farthing?' ſaid he. 'Did 'you ever know modern braſs of ſuch 'a reliſh? Do but taſte it, young gen'tleman; and ſure I am, if you have 'ever been converſant with ſubjects of 'this kind, you will find as wide a 'difference in the ſavour between this 'and an Engliſh farthing, as can poſ'ſibly be perceived betwixt an onion 'and a turnip: beſides, this medal has 'the true Corinthian ring; then the 'attitude is upright, whereas that of 'Britannia is reclining; and how is it 'poſſible to miſtake a branch of palm 'for a parazonium?'

All the reſt of the company eſpouſed the virtuoſo's ſide of the queſtion, becauſe the reputation of each was concerned. The patron finding himſelf in the ſame circumſtance, aſſumed a ſolemnity of feature, daſhed with a ſmall mixture of diſpleaſure, and told Peregrine, that as he had not made that branch of literature his particular ſtudy, he was not ſurprized to ſee him miſtaken in his opinion. Pickle immediately underſtood the reproof. Though he was ſhocked at the vanity or infatuation of his entertainer and fellow-gueſts, aſked pardon for his preſumption, which was accordingly excuſed, in conſideration of his inexperience; and the Engliſh farthing dignified with the title of a true antique.

The next perſon that addreſſed himſelf to the chief was a gentleman of a very mathematical turn, who valued himſelf upon the improvements he had made in ſeveral domeſtick machines, and now preſented the plan of a new contrivance for cutting cabbages, in ſuch a manner as would ſecure the ſtock againſt the rotting rain, and enable it to produce a plenteous after-crop of delicious ſprouts. In this important machine he had united the whole mechanick powers, with ſuch maſſy complication of iron and wood, that it could not have been moved without the aſſiſtance of an horſe, and a road made for the convenience of the draught. Theſe objections were ſo obvious, that they occurred at firſt ſight to the inſpector-general, who greatly commended the invention, which, he obſerved, might be applied to ſeveral other uſeful purpoſes, could it once be rendered a little more portable and commodious.

The inventor, who had not foreſeen theſe difficulties, was not prepared to ſurmount them; but he took the hint in good part, and promiſed to taſk his abilities anew, in altering the conſtitution of his deſign. Not but that he underwent ſome ſevere irony from the reſt of the virtuoſi, who complimented him upon the momentous improvement he had made, by which a family might ſave a diſh of greens in a quarter, for ſo trifling an expence as that of purchaſing, working, and maintaining, ſuch a ſtupendous machine: but no man was ever more ſarcaſtick in his remarks upon this piece of mechaniſm than the naturaliſt, who next appealed to the patron's approbation for a curious diſquiſition he had made touching the procreation of muck flies, in which he had laid down a curious method of collecting, preſerving, and hatching, the eggs of theſe inſects, even in the winter, by certain modifications of artificial heat. The nature of this diſcovery was no ſooner communicated, than Peregrine, unable to contain himſelf, was ſeized with a fit of laughter, which infected every perſon at the table, the landlord himſelf not excepted, who found it impoſſible to preſerve his wonted gravity of face.

Such unmannerly mirth did not fail to mortify the philoſopher; who, after ſome pauſe, during which, indignation and diſdain were painted in his countenance, reprehended our young gentleman for his unphiloſophical behaviour, and undertook to prove, that the ſubject of his enquiry was of infinite conſequence to the progreſs and increaſe of natural knowledge: but he found

found no quarter from the vengeful engineer, who now retorted his ironical compliments with great emphasis, upon this hot-bed for the generation of vermin, and advised him to lay the whole process before the Royal Society, which would, doubtless, present him with a medal, and give him a place among their memoirs, as a distinguished promoter of the useful arts. 'If,' said he, 'you had employed your studies in 'finding out some effectual method to 'destroy those insects which prejudice 'and annoy mankind, in all probabi-'lity you must have been contented 'with the contemplation of the good 'you had done; but this curious ex-'pedient for multiplying maggots, will 'surely intitle you to an honourable rank 'in the list of learned philosophers.'—'I don't wonder,' replied the naturalist, 'that you should be so much averse to 'the propagation of insects, because, in 'all likelihood, you are afraid that they 'will not leave you a cabbage to cut 'down with the same miraculous ma-'chine.'—'Sir,' answered the mechanick, with great bitterness of voice and aspect, 'if the cabbage be as light-'headed as some muck-worm philo-'sophers, it will not be worth cutting 'down.'—'I never dispute upon cab-'bage with the son of a cucumber,' said the fly-breeder, alluding to the pedigree of his antagonist; who, impatient of the affront, started up with fury in his looks, exclaiming, 'Sdeath! 'meaning me, Sir?'

Here the patron, perceiving things drawing towards a rupture, interposed his authority, rebuking them for their intemperance, and recommending to them amity and concord against the Goths and Vandals of the age, who took all opportunities of ridiculing and discouraging the adherents of knowledge and philosophy. After this exhortation, they had no pretence for carrying on the dispute, which was dropped in all appearance, though the mechanick still retained his resentment; and after breakfast, when the company broke up, accosted his adversary in the street, desiring to know how he durst be so insolent as to make that scurrilous reflection upon his family. The fly-fancier, thus questioned, accused the mathematician of having been the aggressor, in likening his head to a light cabbage; and here the altercation being renewed, the engineer proceeded to the illustration of his mechanicks, tilting up his hand like a balance, thrusting it forward by way of lever, embracing the naturalist's nose like a wedge betwixt two of his fingers, and turning it round with the momentum of a screw or peritrochium. Had they been obliged to decide the dispute with equal arms, the assailant would have had great advantage over the other, who was very much his inferior in muscular strength; but the philosopher being luckily provided with a cane, no sooner disengaged himself from this opprobrious application, than he handled his weapon with great dexterity about the head and shoulders of his antagonist; who finding this shower of blows very disagreeable, was fain to betake himself to his heels for shelter. and was pursued by the angry victor, who chased him from one end of the street to the other, affording unspeakable satisfaction to the multitude, as well as to our hero and to his introductor, who were spectators of the whole scene.

Thus was our adventurer initiated in the society of Yelpers, though he did not as yet fully understand the nature of his office, which was explained by the young physician, who chid him for his blunt behaviour in the case of the medal; and gave him to understand, that their patron's favour was neither to be gained nor preserved by any man that would pretend to convict him of a mistake: he therefore counselled him to respect this foible, and cultivate the old gentleman with all the zeal and veneration which a regard to his own character would permit him to pay. This task was the easier to one of our young gentleman's pliant disposition, because the virtuoso's behaviour was absolutely free from that insolent self-conceit, which he could not bear without disgust: the senior was, on the contrary, mild and beneficent; and Pickle was rather pleased than shocked at his weakness, because it flattered his vanity with the supposition of his own superior sense.

Cautioned in this manner, Peregrine profited so much by his insinuating qualifications, that, in a very little time, he was looked upon as one of the chief favourites of the patron, to whom he dedicated a small occasional poem; and every body believed he

would reap the fruits of his attachment among the first of the old gentleman's dependants.

CHAP. XI.

PEREGRINE FINDING HIMSELF NEGLECTED BY SIR STEADY STEERWELL, EXPOSTULATES WITH HIM IN A LETTER; IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH, HE IS FORBID HIS HOUSE, LOSES HIS PENSION, AND INCURS THE CHARGE OF LUNACY.

THIS prospect of success, together with his expectations from the minister, whom he did not neglect, helped to comfort him under the reverse of fortune which he had undergone, and the uncertainty of the lawsuit, which he still maintained for the recovery of his ten thousand pounds. The lawyers, indeed, continued to drain his pocket of money, while they filled his brain with unsubstantial hope; and he was actually obliged to borrow money from his bookseller, on the strength of the translation, in order to satisfy the demands of those ravenous harpies, rather than lay the misanthrope under any difficulties, or have recourse to his friend Hatchway, who lived at the garrison, entirely ignorant of his distress. This was not at all alleviated by the arrival of the Indiaman in which he had adventured seven hundred pounds, as we have already observed; for he was given to understand, that the borrower was left dangerously ill at Bombay when the ship sailed, and that his chance for retrieving his money was extremely slender.

So situated, it is not to be supposed that he led a life of tranquillity, though he made a shift to struggle with the remonstrances of misfortune: yet such a gush of affliction would sometimes rush upon his thought, as overwhelmed all the ideas of his hope, and sunk him to the very bottom of despondence. Every equipage that passed him in the street, every person of rank and fortune that occurred to his view, recalled the gay images of his former life, with such mortifying reflection as stabbed him to the very soul. He lived, therefore, incessantly exposed to all the pangs of envy and disquiet. When I say envy, I do not mean that sordid passion, in consequence of which a man repines at his neighbour's success, howsoever deserved; but that self-tormenting indignation which is inspired by the prosperity of folly, ignorance, and vice. Without the intervening gleams of enjoyment, which he felt in the conversation of a few friends, he could not have supported his existence; or, at least, he must have suffered some violent discomposure of the brain: but one is still finding some circumstance of alleviation, even in the worst of conjectures; and Pickle was so ingenious in these researches, that he maintained a good battle with disappointment, till the revolution of the term at which he had received his pension of three hundred pounds.

However, seeing the day elapse, without touching his allowance, notwithstanding his significant method of presenting himself at the minister's levee, when the year was expired he wrote a letter to Sir Steady, reminding him of his situation and promise, and giving him to understand, that his occasions were such as compelled him to demand his salary for the ensuing year.

In the morning after this letter was conveyed, the author went to his honour's house, in expectation of being admitted by particular order; but was mistaken in his hope, the minister not being visible. He then made his appearance at the levee, in hopes of being closetted; but though he took all opportunities of watching Sir Steady's eyes, he could not obtain one glance, and had the pleasure of seeing him retire, without being favoured with the least notice. These circumstances of wilful neglect were not over and above agreeable to our young hero, who, in the agonies of vexation and resentment, went home, and composed a most acrimonious remonstrance to his honour; in consequence of which he was not only deprived of all pretensions to a private audience, but expressly denied admittance on a public day, by Sir Steady's own order.

This prohibition, which announced his total ruin, filled him with rage, horror, and despair: he insulted the porter who signified the minister's command, threatening to chastise him upon the spot for his presumption, and vented the most virulent imprecations upon

upon his master, to the astonishment of those who chanced to enter during this conference. Having exhausted himself in these vain exclamations, he returned to his lodgings in a most frantick condition, biting his lips so that the blood ran from his mouth, dashing his head and fists against the sides of his chimney, and weeping with the most bitter expressions of woe.

Pipes, whose perception had been just sufficient to let him see that there was some difference between the present and former situation of his master, overhearing his transports, essayed to enter his apartment, with a view of administering consolation; and finding the door locked on the inside, desired admittance, protesting that otherwise he would down with the bulk-head in the turning of an handspike. Peregrine ordered him to retire, on pain of his displeasure, and swore that if he should offer to break open the door, he would instantly shoot him through the head. Tom, without paying the least regard to this injunction, set himself at work immediately. His master, exasperated at his want of reverence and respect, which in his present paroxism appeared with the most provoking aggravation, flew into his closet, and snatching up one of his pistols already loaded, no sooner saw his valet enter the apartment, in consequence of having forced the lock, than he presented full at his face, and drew the trigger. Happily the priming flashed in the pan, without communicating with the charge; so that his furious purpose did not take effect upon the countenance of honest Pipes; who, disregardful of the attempt, though he knew the contents of the piece, asked, without the least alteration of feature, if it must be foul weather through the whole voyage.

Peregrine, mad as he was, repented of his mischievous intent against such a faithful adherent, in the very moment of execution; and had it proved fatal, according to the design, in all probability he would have applied another to his own head. There are certain considerations that strike upon the mind with irresistible force, even in the midst of it's distraction; the momentary recollection of some particular scene, occasioned by the features of the devoted victim, hath often struck the dagger from the assassin's hand. By such an impulse was Pipes protected from any repeated effort of his master's rage; the friendly cause of his present disobedience flashed upon the conviction of Peregrine, when he beheld the rugged front of his valet, in which also stood disclosed his long and faithful service, together with the recommendation of the deceased commodore.

Though his wrath was immediately suppressed, and his heart torn with remorse for what he had done, his brows remained still contracted; and darting a most ferocious regard at the intruder, 'Villain!' said he, 'how dare you treat 'me with such disrespect?'—'Why 'shouldn't I lend a hand for the pre-'servation of the ship,' answered the unruffled Pipes, 'when there is more 'sail than ballast aboard, and the pi-'lot quits the helm in despair? What 'signifies one or two broken voyages, 'so long as our timbers are strong, 'and our vessel in good trim; if she 'loses upon one tack, mayhap she 'may gain upon t'other; and I'll be 'damn'd if one day or other we don't 'fetch up our lee-way: as for the 'matter of provision, you have started 'a pretty good stock of money into 'my hold, and you are welcome to 'hoist it up again when you wool?'

Here Tom was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Crabtree, who seeing Peregrine with a pistol in his hand, and such wild disorder in his looks; his head, hands, and mouth, besmeared with blood; and moreover, smelling the gunpowder which had been burnt; actually believed he had either committed, or was bent upon murder, and accordingly retreated down stairs with infinite dispatch. All his speed could not convey him without the reach of Pipes, who overtaking him in his passage, carried him back into his master's apartment, observing by the way, that this was no time to sheer off, when his consort stood in need of his assistance.

There was something so ruefully severe in the countenance of Cadwallader, thus compelled, that at any other time our hero would have laughed at his concern; but at present there was nothing risible in his disposition: he had, however, laid aside his pistol, and endeavoured, though in vain, to compose his internal disturbance; for he could not utter one syllable to the mi-

ſanthrope, but ſtood ſtaring at him in ſilence, with a moſt delirious aſpect. This did not tend to diſpel the diſmay of his friend; who, after ſome recollection, 'I wonder,' ſaid he, 'that you 'have never killed your man before. 'Pray how may you have diſpoſed of 'the body?' Pickle having recovered the faculty of ſpeech, ordered his lacquey out of the room, and in a moſt incoherent detail, made Crabtree acquainted with the perfidious conduct of the miniſter.

The confidante was very glad to find his fears diſappointed; for he had really concluded, that ſome life was loſt. Perceiving the youth too much agitated to be treated by him in his uſual ſtyle, he owned that Sir Steady was a raſcal; encouraged Pickle with the hope of being one day able to make repriſals upon him; in the mean time offered him money for his immediate occaſions; exhorted him to exert his own qualifications in rendering himſelf independent of ſuch miſcreants; and finally counſelled him to repreſent his wrongs to the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged, with a view of intereſting that peer in his behalf, or at leaſt of obtaining a ſatisfactory explanation from the miniſter, that he might take no premature meaſures of revenge.

Theſe admonitions were ſo much milder and more agreeable than our hero expected from the miſanthrope, that they had a very favourable effect upon his tranſports, which gradually ſubſided, until he became ſo tractable as to promiſe that he would conform to his advice; in conſequence of which he next morning waited upon his lordſhip, who received him very politely, as uſual, and with great patience heard his complaint, which, by the bye, he could not repeat without ſome haſty ebullitions of paſſionate reſentment. This peer, after having gently diſapproved of the letter of expoſtulation, which had produced ſuch unfortunate effects, kindly undertook to recommend his caſe to the miniſter, and actually performed his promiſe that ſame day, when Sir Steady informed him, to his utter aſtoniſhment, that the poor young gentleman was diſordered in his brain, ſo that he could not poſſibly be provided for in a place of importance with any regard to the ſervice; and it could not be expected that he (Sir Steady) would ſupport his extravagance from his own private purſe: that he had, indeed, at the ſolicitation of a nobleman deceaſed, made him a preſent of three hundred pounds, in conſideration of ſome loſs that he pretended to have ſuſtained in an election; but ſince that time had perceived in him ſuch indiſputable marks of lunacy, both by his diſtracted letters and perſonal behaviour, as obliged him to give order, that he ſhould not be admitted into the houſe. To corroborate this aſſertion, the miniſter actually called in the evidence of his own porter, and one of the gentlemen of his houſhold, who had heard the execrations that eſcaped our youth when he firſt found himſelf excluded. In ſhort, the nobleman was convinced, that Peregrine was certainly and *bona fide* mad as a March hare; and, by the help of this intimation, began to recollect ſome ſymptoms of diſtraction which appeared in his laſt viſit; he remembered a certain incoherence in his ſpeech, a violence of geſture and wildneſs of look, that now evidently denoted a diſturbed underſtanding; and he determined, for his own credit and ſecurity, to diſentangle himſelf from ſuch a dangerous acquaintance.

With this view, he, in imitation of Sir Steady, commanded his gate to be ſhut againſt our adventurer; ſo that when he went to know the reſult of his lordſhip's conference with the miniſter, the door was flung in his face, and the janitor told him, through an iron grate, that he needed not to give himſelf the trouble of calling again, for his lord deſired to be excuſed from ſeeing him. He ſpoke not a word in anſwer to this declaration, which he immediately imputed to the ill offices of the miniſter, againſt whom he breathed defiance and revenge, in his way to the lodgings of Cadwallader; who being made acquainted with the manner of his reception, begged he would deſiſt from all ſchemes of vengeance, until he (Crabtree) ſhould be able to unriddle the myſtery of the whole, which he did not doubt of unveiling by means of his acquaintance with a family in which his lordſhip often ſpent the evening at whiſt.

It was not long before he had the deſired opportunity; the nobleman being

ing under no injunctions or obligation to keep the affair ſecret, diſcovered the young gentleman's misfortune, by way of news, to the firſt company in which he happened to be; and Peregrine's name was not ſo obſcure in the faſhionable world, but that his diſorder became the general topick of converſation for a day; ſo that his friend ſoon partook of the intelligence, and found means to learn the particulars of the miniſter's information, as above related. Nay, he was in danger of becoming a proſelyte to Sir Steady's opinion, when he recalled and compared every circumſtance which he knew of Pickle's impatience and impetuoſity.

Indeed, nothing more eaſily gains credit than an imputation of madneſs fixed upon any perſon whatſoever: for when the ſuſpicion of the world is rouzed, and it's obſervation once ſet at work, the wiſeſt, the cooleſt man upon earth, will, by ſome particulars in his behaviour, convict himſelf of the charge: every ſingularity in his dreſs and manner (and ſuch are obſervable in every perſon) that before paſſed unheeded, now riſes up in judgment againſt him, with all the exaggeration of the obſerver's fancy; and the ſagacious examiner perceives diſtraction in every glance of the eye, turn of the finger, and motion of the head: when he ſpeaks, there is a ſtrange peculiarity in his argument and expreſſion; when he holds his tongue, his imagination teems with ſome extravagant reverie; his ſobriety of demeanor is no other than a lucid interval, and his paſſion mere delirium.

If people of the moſt ſedate and inſipid life and converſation are ſubject to ſuch criticiſms, no wonder, then, they ſhould take place upon a youth of Peregrine's fiery diſpoſition, which, on ſome occaſions, would have actually juſtified any remarks of this kind which his greateſt enemies could make. He was accordingly preſented as one of thoſe enterprizing bucks, who, after having ſpent their fortunes in riot and exceſs, are happily bereft of their underſtanding, and conſequently inſenſible of the want and diſgrace which they have entailed upon themſelves.

Cadwallader himſelf was ſo much affected with the report, that for ſome time he heſitated in his deliberations upon our hero, before he could prevail upon himſelf to communicate to him the information he had received, or to treat him in other reſpects as a man of ſound intellects. At length, however, he ventured to make Pickle acquainted with the particulars he had learned, imparting them with ſuch caution and circumlocution, as he thought neceſſary to prevent the young gentleman from tranſgreſſing all bounds of temper and moderation: but, for once, he was agreeably deceived in his prognoſtick. Incenſed as our hero was at the conduct of the miniſter, he could not help laughing at the ridiculous aſperſion, which he told his friend he would ſoon refute in a manner that ſhould not be very agreeable to his calumniator; obſerving, that it was a common practice with the ſtate pilot thus to ſlander thoſe people to whom he lay under obligations which he had no mind to diſcharge. 'True it is,' ſaid Peregrine, 'he has ſucceeded more than 'once in contrivances of this kind, 'having actually reduced divers peo- 'ple of weak heads to ſuch extremity 'of deſpair, as hath iſſued in down- 'right diſtraction, whereby he was 'rid of their importunities, and his 'judgment confirmed at the ſame 'time: but I have now (thank Hea- 'ven!) attained to ſuch a pitch of 'philoſophical reſolution, as will ſup- 'port me againſt all his machinations; 'and I will forthwith exhibit the mon- 'ſter to the publick, in his true linea- 'ments of craft, perfidy, and ingra- 'titude.'

This indeed was the plan with which Mr. Pickle had amuſed himſelf during the reſearches of Crabtree; and by this time it ſo effectually flattered his imagination, that he believed he ſhould be able to bring his adverſary (in ſpite of all his power) to his own terms of ſubmiſſion, by diſtinguiſhing himſelf in the liſt of thoſe who, at that period, wrote againſt the adminiſtration. Nor was this ſcheme ſo extravagant as it may ſeem to be, had not he overlooked one material circumſtance, which Cadwallader himſelf did not recollect when he approved of this project.

While he thus meditated vengeance, the fame of his diſorder, in due courſe of circulation, reached the ears of that lady of quality, whoſe memoirs have appeared in the third volume of theſe adventures.

adventures. The correſpondence with which ſhe had honoured our hero had been long broke off, for the reaſon already advanced, namely, his dread of being expoſed to her infatuating charms. He had been candid enough to make her acquainted with the cauſe of exiling himſelf from her preſence; and ſhe admitted the prudence of ſelf-reſtraint, although ſhe would have been very well ſatisfied with the continuance of his intimacy and converſation, which were not at all beneath the deſire of any lady in the kingdom. Notwithſtanding this interruption, ſhe ſtill retained a friendſhip and regard for his character, and felt all the affliction of a humane heart, at the news of his misfortunes and deplorable diſtemper. She had ſeen him courted and cultivated in the ſun-ſhine of his proſperity; but ſhe knew, from ſad experience, how all thoſe inſect followers ſhrink away in the winter of diſtreſs. Her compaſſion repreſented him as a poor unhappy lunatick, deſtitute of all the neceſſaries of life, dragging about the ruins of human nature, and exhibiting the ſpectacle of blaſted youth, to the ſcorn and abhorrence of his fellow-creatures. Aching with theſe charitable conſiderations, ſhe found means to learn in what part of the town he lodged; and laying aſide all ſuperfluous ceremony, went in a hackney-chair to his door, which was opened by the ever faithful Pipes.

Her ladyſhip immediately recollected the features of his truſty follower, whom ſhe could not help loving in her heart, for his attachment and fidelity; which, after ſhe had applauded with a moſt gracious commendation, ſhe kindly enquired after the ſtate of his maſter's health, and aſked if he was in a condition to be ſeen.

Tom, who could not ſuppoſe that the viſit of a fine lady would be unacceptable to a youth of Peregrine's complexion, made no verbal reply to the queſtion; but beckoning her ladyſhip with an arch ſignificance of feature, at which ſhe could not forbear ſmiling, walked ſoftly up ſtairs; and ſhe, in obedience to the ſignal, followed her guide into the apartment of our hero, whom ſhe found at a writing-table, in the very act of compoſing an eulogium upon his good friend Sir Steady. The nature of his work had animated his countenance with an uncommon degree of vivacity; and being dreſſed in a neat diſhabille, his figure could not have appeared to more advantage in the eye of a perſon who deſpiſed the tinſel of unneceſſary ornament. She was extremely well pleaſed to ſee her expectations ſo agreeably diſappointed; for, inſtead of the ſqualid circumſtances and wretched looks attending indigence and diſtraction, every thing was decent and genteel, and the patient's aſpect ſuch as betokened internal ſatisfaction. Hearing the ruſtling of ſilk in his room, he lifted up his eyes from the paper, and ſeeing her ladyſhip, was ſtruck with aſtoniſhment and awe, as at the unexpected apparition of ſome ſupernatural being.

Before he could recollect himſelf from his confuſion, which called the blood into his cheeks, ſhe told him, that, on the ſtrength of old acquaintance, ſhe was come to viſit him, though it was a long time ſince he had given her good reaſon to believe he had abſolutely forgot that there was ſuch a perſon as ſhe in being. After having made the moſt warm acknowledgments for this unforeſeen honour, he aſſured her ladyſhip, that the ſubject of her reproach was not his fault, but rather his very great misfortune; and that if it had been in his power to forget her ſo eaſily as ſhe ſeemed to imagine, he ſhould never have given her cauſe to tax him with want of duty and reſpect.

Still dubious of his ſituation, ſhe began to converſe with him on different ſubjects; and he acquitted himſelf ſo well in every particular, that ſhe no longer doubted his having been miſrepreſented by the malice of his enemies; and candidly told him the cauſe and intent of her coming. He was not deficient in expreſſions of gratitude for this inſtance of her generoſity and friendſhip, which even drew tears from his eyes. As to the imputation of madneſs, he explained it ſo much to her ladyſhip's ſatisfaction, that ſhe evidently perceived he had been barbarouſly dealt with, and that the charge was no other than a moſt villainous aſperſion.

Notwithſtanding all his endeavours to conceal the true ſtate of his finances, it was impoſſible for him to give thi s

detail without diſcloſing ſome of the difficulties under which he laboured; and her ladyſhip's ſagacity divining the reſt, ſhe not only made him a tender of aſſiſtance, but preſenting a bank-note for a conſiderable ſum, inſiſted upon his acceptance of it, as a trifling mark of her eſteem, and a ſpecimen of what ſhe was inclined to do in his behalf. But this mark of her benevolence he would by no means receive; aſſuring her that though his affairs were at preſent a little perplexed, he had never felt the leaſt circumſtance of diſtreſs, and begging that ſhe would not ſubject him to the burden of ſuch an unneceſſary obligation.

Being obliged to put up with this refuſal, ſhe proteſted ſhe would never forgive him, ſhould ſhe ever hear that he had rejected her offer when he ſtood in need of her aid; or if in time to come, he ſhould not apply to her friendſhip, if ever he ſhould find himſelf incommoded in point of fortune: 'An over-'delicacy in this reſpect,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall look upon as a diſapprobation 'of my own conduct; becauſe I my-'ſelf have been obliged to have recourſe 'to my friends in ſuch emergencies.'

Theſe generous remonſtrances and marks of particular friendſhip, could not fail to make a deep impreſſion upon the heart of our hero, which ſtill ſmarted from the former impulſe of her charms: he not only felt all thoſe tranſports which a man of honour and ſenſibility may be ſuppoſed to feel upon ſuch an occaſion, but the ſentiments of a more tender paſſion awaking in his breaſt, he could not help expreſſing himſelf in terms adapted to the emotions of his ſoul; and at length plainly told her, that were he diſpoſed to be a beggar, he would aſk ſomething of infinitely more importance to his peace, than the charitable aſſiſtance ſhe had proffered.

Her ladyſhip had too much penetration to miſtake his meaning; but as ſhe did not chuſe to encourage his advances, pretended to interpret his intimation into a general compliment of gallantry, and in a jocoſe manner, deſired he would not give her any reaſon to believe his lucid interval was paſt. 'In faith, my lady,' ſaid he, 'I per-'ceive the fit coming on; and I don't 'ſee why I may not uſe the privilege of 'my diſtemper, ſo far as to declare my-'ſelf one of your moſt paſſionate ad-'mirers.'—'If you do,' replied her ladyſhip, 'I ſhall not be fool enough 'to believe a madman, unleſs I were 'aſſured that your diſorder proceeded 'from your love: and that this was 'the caſe, I ſuppoſe you will find it 'difficult to prove.'—'Nay, Madam,' cried the youth, 'I have in this drawer 'what will convince you of my hav-'ing been mad on that ſtrain; and 'ſince you doubt my pretenſion, you 'muſt give me leave to produce my 'teſtimonials.' So ſaying, he opened a ſcrutore, and taking out a paper, preſented her with the following Song, which he had written in her praiſe, immediately after he was made acquainted with the particulars of her ſtory.

I.

WHILE with fond rapture and amaze,
On thy tranſcendent charms I gaze,
My cautious ſoul eſſays in vain
Her peace and freedom to maintain:
Yet let that blooming form divine,
Where grace and harmony combine;
Thoſe eyes, like genial orbs that move,
Diſpenſing gladneſs, joy, and love;
In all their pomp aſſail my view,
Intent my boſom to ſubdue;
My breaſt, by wary maxims ſteel'd,
Not all thoſe charms ſhall force to yield.

II.

But when, invok'd to beauty's aid,
I ſee th' enlighten'd ſoul diſplay'd;
That ſoul, ſo ſenſibly ſedate
Amid the ſtorms of froward fate!
Thy genius active, ſtrong, and clear,
Thy wit ſublime, tho' not ſevere;
The ſocial ardour, void of art,
That glows within thy candid heart;
My ſpirits, ſenſe, and ſtrength, decay,
My reſolution dies away;
And, ev'ry faculty oppreſs'd,
Almighty Love invades my breaſt!

Her ladyſhip having peruſed this production; 'Were I inclined to be 'ſuſpicious,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhould be-'lieve that I had no ſhare in pro-'ducing this compoſition, which ſeems 'to have been inſpired by a much 'more amiable object. However, I 'will take your word for your inten-'tion, and thank you for the unmerit-'ed compliment, though I have met 'with it in ſuch an accidental man-'ner. Nevertheleſs, I muſt be ſo free 'as to tell you, it is now high time 'for you to contract that unbounded 'ſpirit of gallantry, which you have 'indulged

'indulged so long, into a sincere attachment for the fair Emilia, who, 'by all accounts, deserves the whole 'of your attention and regard.' His nerves thrilled at mention of that name, which he never heard pronounced without agitation. Rather than undergo the consequence of a conversation upon this subject, he chose to drop the theme of love altogether, and industriously introduced some other topick of discourse.

CHAP. XII.

HE WRITES AGAINST THE MINISTER, BY WHOSE INSTIGATION HE IS ARRESTED, AND MOVES HIMSELF BY HABEAS CORPUS INTO THE FLEET.

MY lady having prolonged her stay beyond the period of a common visit, and repeated her protestations in the most frank and obliging manner, took her leave of our adventurer, who promised to pay his respects to her in a few days at her own house. Meanwhile, he resumed his task; and having finished a most severe remonstrance against Sir Steady, not only with regard to his private ingratitude, but also to his mal-administration of publick affairs, he sent to the author of a weekly paper, who had been long a professed reformer in politicks; and it appeared in a very few days, with a note of the publisher, desiring the favour of farther correspondence with the author.

The animadversions contained in this small essay were so spirited and judicious, and a great many new lights thrown upon the subject with such perspicuity, as attracted the notice of the publick in an extraordinary manner, and helped to raise the character of the paper in which it was inserted. The minister was not the last who examined the performance, which, in spite of all his boasted temper, provoked him to such a degree, that he set his emissaries at work, and by dint of corruption procured a sight of the manuscript in Peregrine's own hand-writing; which he immediately recognized; but for farther confirmation of his opinion, he compared it with the two letters which he had received from our adventurer. Had he known the young gentleman's talents for declamation were so acute, perhaps he would never have given him cause to complain, but employed him in the vindication of his own measures; nay, he might still have treated him like some other authors whom he had brought over from the opposition, had not the keenness of this first assault incensed him to a desire of revenge. He, therefore, no sooner made this discovery, than he conveyed his directions to his dependant the receiver-general, who was possessed of Pickle's notes. Next day, while our author stood within a circle of his acquaintance, at a certain coffee-house, holding forth with great eloquence upon the diseases of the state, he was accosted by a bailiff, who entering the room with five or six followers, told him aloud, that he had a writ against him for twelve hundred pounds, at the suit of Mr. Ravage Gleanum.

The whole company were astonished at this address, which did not fail to discompose the defendant himself, who (as it were instinctively) in the midst of his confusion, saluted the officer across the head with his cane; in consequence of which application he was surrounded and disarmed in an instant by the gang, who carried him off to the next tavern in the most opprobrious manner. Nor did one of the spectators interpose in his behalf, or visit him in his confinement with the least tender of advice or assistance; such is the zeal of a coffee-house friendship.

This stroke was the more severe upon our hero, as it was altogether unexpected: for he had utterly forgot the debt for which he was arrested. His present indignation was, however, chiefly kindled against the bailiff, who had done his office in such a disrespectful manner: and the first use he made of his recollection in the house to which they conducted him, was to chastise him for the insolence and indecency of his behaviour. This task he performed with his bare fists, every other weapon being previously conveyed out of his reach; and the delinquent underwent his discipline with surprizing patience and resignation, asking pardon with great humility, and protesting before God, that he had never willingly and wittingly used any gentleman with ill-manners, but had been com-

commanded to arreſt our adventurer according to the expreſs direction of the creditor, on pain of forfeiting his place.

By this declaration Peregrine was appeaſed, and out of a delirium of paſſion waked to all the horrors of reflection. All the glory of his youth was now eclipſed, all the bloſſoms of his hope were blaſted, and he ſaw himſelf doomed to the miſeries of a gaol, without the leaſt proſpect of enlargement, except in the iſſue of his law-ſuit, of which he had, for ſome time paſt, grown leſs and leſs confident every day. What would become of the unfortunate, if the conſtitution of the mind did not permit them to bring one paſſion into the field againſt another! paſſions that operate on the human breaſt, like poiſons of a different nature, extinguiſhing each other's effect. Our hero's grief reigned in full deſpotiſm, until it was depoſed by revenge; during the predominancy of which, he conſidered every thing which had happened as a circumſtance conducive to it's gratification: 'If I muſt 'be priſoner for life,' ſaid he to himſelf, 'if I muſt relinquiſh all my gay 'expectations, let me at leaſt have the 'ſatisfaction of clanking my chains ſo as 'to interrupt the repoſe of my adverſary; 'and let me ſearch in my own breaſt 'for that peace and contentment, which 'I have not been able to find in all the 'ſcenes of my ſucceſs. In being detached from the world, I ſhall be delivered from folly and ingratitude, as 'well as exempted from an expence, 'which I ſhould have found it very difficult, if not impracticable, to ſupport; I ſhall have little or no temptation to miſpend my time, and more 'undiſturbed opportunity to earn my 'ſubſiſtence, and proſecute my revenge. 'After all, a gaol is the beſt tub to 'which a cynick philoſopher can retire.'

In conſequence of theſe comfortable reflections, he ſent a letter to Mr. Crabtree, with an account of his misfortune, ſignifying his reſolution to move himſelf immediately into the Fleet, and deſiring that he would ſend him ſome underſtanding attorney of his acquaintance, who would direct him into the ſteps neceſſary to be taken for that purpoſe. The miſanthrope, upon the receipt of this intimation, went in perſon to a lawyer, whom he accompanied to the ſpunging-houſe, whither the priſoner had by this time retired. Peregrine was, under the auſpices of this director, conducted to the judges chamber, where he was left in the cuſtody of a tipſtaff; and after having paid for a warrant of Habeas Corpus, by him conveyed to the Fleet, and delivered to the care of the warden.

Here he was introduced to the lodge, in which he was obliged to expoſe himſelf a full half hour to the eyes of all the turnkeys and door-keepers, who took an accurate ſurvey of his perſon, that they might know him again at firſt ſight: and then he was turned looſe into the place called the Maſter's Side, having given a valuable conſideration for that privilege. This is a large range of building, containing ſome hundreds of lodging rooms for the convenience of the priſoners, who pay ſo much per week for that accommodation. In ſhort, this community is like a city detached from all communication with the neighbouring parts, regulated by it's own laws, and furniſhed with peculiar conveniencies for the uſe of the inhabitants. There is a coffee-houſe for the reſort of gentlemen, in which all ſorts of liquors are kept, and a publick kitchen where any quantity of meat is ſold at a very reaſonable rate, or any kind of proviſion boiled and roaſted gratis for the poor priſoners: nay, there are certain ſervants of the publick, who are obliged to go to market, at the pleaſure of individuals, without fee or reward from thoſe who employ them; nor are they cooped up, ſo as to be excluded from the benefit of freſh air, there being an open area of a conſiderable extent, adjacent to the building, on which they may exerciſe themſelves in walking, ſkittles, bowls, and variety of other diverſions, according to the inclination of each.

Our adventurer being admitted a denizen of this community, found himſelf bewildered in the midſt of ſtrangers, who, by their appearance, did not at all prepoſſeſs him in their favour; and after having ſtrolled about the place with his friend Cadwallader, repaired to the coffee-houſe, in order to be farther informed of the peculiar cuſtoms which it was neceſſary for him to know.

There, while he endeavoured to pick up intelligence from the bar-keeper, he was accoſted by a perſon in canonicals, who very civilly aſked if he was a new-

comer. Being answered in the affirmative, he gave him the salutation of welcome to the society, and, with great hospitality, undertook to initiate him in the constitutions of the brotherhood. This humane clergyman gave him to understand, that his first care ought to be that of securing a lodging; telling him, there was a certain number of apartments in the prison let at the same price, though some were more commodious than others; and that when the better sort became vacant, by the removal of their possessors, those who succeeded in point of seniority had the privilege of occupying the empty tenements preferable to the rest of the inhabitants, howsoever respectable they might otherwise be; that when the gaol was very much crouded, there was but one chamber allotted for two lodgers; but this was not considered as any great hardship on the prisoners, because, in that case, there was always a sufficient number of males who willingly admitted the females to a share in their apartments and beds: not but that the time had been, when this expedient would not answer the occasion, because after a couple had been quartered in every room, there was a considerable residue still unprovided with lodging; so that for the time being, the last comers were obliged to take up their habitation in Mount Scoundrel, an apartment most miserably furnished, in which they lay promiscuously amidst filth and vermin, until they could be better accommodated in due course of rotation.

Peregrine hearing the description of this place, began to be very impatient about his night's lodging; and the parson perceiving his anxiety, conducted him, without loss of time, to the warden, who forthwith put him in possession of a paltry chamber, for which he agreed to pay half a crown a week. This point being settled, his director gave him an account of the different methods of eating, either singly, in a mess, or at an ordinary; and advised him to chuse the last, as the most reputable, offering to introduce him next day to the best company in the Fleet, who always dined together in publick.

Pickle having thanked this gentleman for his civilities, and promised to be governed by his advice, invited him to pass the evening at his apartment; and in the mean time shut himself up with Crabtree, in order to deliberate upon the wreck of his affairs. Of all his ample fortune, nothing now remained but his wardrobe, which was not very sumptuous, about thirty guineas in cash, and the garrison, which the misanthrope counselled him to convert into ready money for his present subsistence. This advice, however, he absolutely rejected, not only on account of his having already bestowed it upon Hatchway, during the term of his natural life, but also with a view of retaining some memorial of the commodore's generosity. He proposed, therefore, to finish in this retreat the translation which he had undertaken, and earn his future subsistence by labour of the same kind. He desired Cadwallader to take charge of his moveables, and send to him such linen and cloaths as he should have occasion for in his confinement. But, among all his difficulties, nothing embarrassed him so much as his faithful Pipes, whom he could no longer entertain in his service. He knew Tom had made shift to pick up a competency in the course of his ministration; but that reflection, though it in some measure alleviated, could not wholly prevent the mortification he should suffer in parting with an affectionate adherent, who was by this time become as necessary to him as one of his own members, and who was so accustomed to live under his command and protection, that he did not believe the fellow could reconcile himself to any other way of life.

Crabtree, in order to make him easy on that score, offered to adopt him in the room of his own valet, whom he would dismiss; though he observed, that Pipes had been quite spoiled in our hero's service. But Peregrine did not chuse to lay his friend under that inconvenience, knowing that his present lacquey understood and complied with all the peculiarities of his humour, which Pipes would never be able to study or regard; he therefore determined to send him back to his ship-mate Hatchway, with whom he had spent the fore part of his life.

These points being adjusted, the two friends adjourned to the coffee-house, with a view of enquiring into the character of the clergyman, to whose beneficence our adventurer was so much indebted. They learned he was a person who had incurred the displeasure of the

the bishop in whose diocese he was settled, and, being unequal in power to his antagonist, had been driven to the Fleet, in consequence of his obstinate opposition; though he still found means to enjoy a pretty considerable income, by certain irregular practices in the way of his function, which income was chiefly consumed in acts of humanity to his fellow-creatures in distress.

His eulogium was scarce finished, when he entered the room, according to appointment with Peregrine, who ordering wine and something for supper to be carried to his apartment, the triumvirate went thither; and Cadwallader taking his leave for the night, the two fellow-prisoners passed the evening very sociably, our hero being entertained by his new companion with the private history of the place, some particulars of which were extremely curious. He told him, that the person who attended them at supper, bowing with the most abject servility, and worshipping them every time he opened his mouth, with the epithets of *your lordship* and *your honour*, had, a few years before, been actually a captain in the guards; who, after having run his career in the great world, had threaded every station in their community, from that of a buck of the first order, who swaggers about the Fleet in a laced coat with a footman and whore, to the degree of a tapster, in which he was now happily settled. 'If you will 'take the trouble of going into the 'cook's kitchen,' said he, 'you will 'perceive a beau metamorphosed into 'a turn-spit; and there are some hewers 'of wood and drawers of water in this 'microcosm, who have had forests and 'fish-ponds of their own: yet notwithstanding such a miserable reverse of 'fortune, they are neither objects of regard or compassion, because their misfortunes are the fruits of the most 'vicious extravagance, and they are 'absolutely insensible of the misery 'which is their lot. Those of our fellow-sufferers who have been reduced 'by undeserved losses, or the precipitation of unexperienced youth, never 'fail to meet with the most brotherly 'assistance, provided they behave with 'decorum, and a due sense of their unhappy circumstances. Nor are we destitute of power to chastise the licentious, who refuse to comply with the 'regulations of the place, and disturb 'the peace of the community with riot 'and disorder. Justice is here impartially administered by a court of equity, consisting of a select number of 'the most respectable inhabitants, who 'punish all offenders with equal judgment and resolution, after they have 'been fairly convicted of the crimes 'laid to their charge.'

The clergyman having thus explained the œconomy of the place, as well as the cause of his own confinement, began to discover signs of curiosity touching our hero's situation; and Pickle, thinking he could do no less for the satisfaction of a man who had treated him in such an hospitable manner, favoured him with a detail of the circumstances which produced his imprisonment: at the same time gratifying his resentment against the minister, which delighted in recapitulating the injuries he had received. The parson, who had been prepossessed in favour of our youth at first sight, understanding what a considerable part he had acted on the stage of life, felt his veneration increase; and, pleased with the opportunity of introducing a stranger of his consequence to the club, left him to his repose, or rather to ruminate on an event which he had not as yet seriously considered.

I might here, in imitation of some celebrated writers, furnish out a page or two, with the reflections he made upon the instability of human affairs, the treachery of the world, and the temerity of youth; and endeavour to decoy the reader into a smile, by some quaint observation of my own, touching the sagacious moralizer: but, besides that I look upon this practice as an impertinent anticipation of the peruser's thoughts, I have too much matter of importance upon my hands, to give the reader the least reason to believe that I am driven to such paltry shifts in order to eke out the volume. Suffice it then to say, our adventurer passed a very uneasy night, not only from the thorny suggestions of his mind, but likewise from the anguish of his body, which suffered from the hardness of his couch, as well as from the natural inhabitants thereof, that did not tamely suffer his intrusion.

In the morning he was waked by Pipes, who brought upon his shoulder a portmanteau filled with necessaries, according to the direction of Cadwalla-

der; and tossing it down upon the floor, regaled himself with a quid, without the least manifestation of concern. After some pause, 'You see, Pipes,' said his master, 'to what I have brought 'myself.' — 'Ey, ey,' answered the valet, 'once the vessel is ashore, what 'signifies talking? We must bear a 'hand to tow her off, if we can: if she 'won't budge for all the anchors and 'capstans aboard, after we have lightened her, by cutting away her masts, 'and heaving our guns and cargo overboard, why, then, mayhap a brisk gale 'of wind, a tide, or current setting 'from shore, may float her again in the 'blast of a whistle. Here is two hundred and ten guineas by the tale, in 'this here canvas bag; and upon this 'scrap of paper—no, avast—that's my 'discharge from the parish for Moll 'Trundle—ey, here it is—an order for 'thirty pounds upon the what-d'ye-call-'em in the city; and two tickets for 'twenty-five and eighteen, which I lent, 'd'ye see, to Sam Studding, to buy a 'cargo of rum, when he hoisted the 'sign of the Commodore at St. Catha-'rine's.' So saying, he spread his whole stock upon the table, for the acceptance of Peregrine; who, being very much affected with this fresh instance of his attachment, expressed his satisfaction at seeing he had been such a good œconomist, and paid his wages up to that very day. He thanked him for his faithful services; and, observing that he himself was no longer in a condition to maintain a domestick, advised him to retire to the garrison, where he would be kindly received by his friend Hatchway, to whom he would recommend him in the strongest terms.

Pipes looked blank at this unexpected intimation, to which he replied, that he wanted neither pay nor provision, but only to be employed as a tender; and that he would not steer his course for the garrison, unless his master would first take his lumber aboard. Pickle, however, peremptorily refused to touch a farthing of the money, which he commanded him to put up; and Pipes was so mortified at his refusal, that twisting the notes together, he threw them into the fire without hesitation, crying, 'Damn the money!' The canvas bag, with it's contents, would have shared the same fate, had not Peregrine started up, and snatching the paper from the flames, ordered his valet to forbear, on pain of being banished for ever from his sight. He told him, that, for the present, there was a necessity for his being dismissed, and he discharged him accordingly; but if he would go and live quietly with the lieutenant, he promised, on the first favourable turn of his fortune, to take him again into his service. In the mean time he gave him to understand, that he neither wanted, nor would make any use of his money, which he insisted upon his pocketing immediately, on pain of forfeiting all title to his favour.

Pipes was very much chagrined at these injunctions, to which he made no reply; but sweeping the money into his bag, stalked off, in silence, with a look of grief and mortification, which his countenance had never exhibited before. Nor was the proud heart of Pickle unmoved upon this occasion; he could scarce suppress his sorrow in the presence of Pipes, and, as soon as he was gone, it vented itself in tears.

Having no great pleasure in conversing with his own thoughts, he dressed himself with all convenient dispatch, being attended by one of the occasional valets of the place, who had formerly been a rich mercer in the city; and this operation being performed, he went to breakfast at the coffee-house, where he happened to meet with his friend the clergyman, and several persons of genteel appearance, to whom the doctor introduced him as a new mess-mate. By these gentlemen he was conducted to a place where they spent the forenoon in playing at fives, an exercise in which our hero took singular delight: and about one o'clock a court was held, for the trial of two delinquents, who had transgressed the laws of honesty and good order.

The first who appeared at the bar was an attorney, accused of having picked a gentleman's pocket of his handkerchief; and the fact being proved by incontestible evidence, he received sentence: in consequence of which he was immediately carried to the publick pump, and subjected to a severe cascade of cold water. This cause being discussed, they proceeded to the trial of the other offender, who was a lieutenant of a man of war, indicted for a riot, which he had committed in company with a female, not yet taken, against the

the laws of the place, and the peace of his fellow-prisoners. The culprit had been very obstreperous, and absolutely refused to obey the summons, with many expressions of contempt and defiance against the authority of the court; upon which the constables were ordered to bring him to the bar, *vi & armis*; and he was accordingly brought before the judge, after having made a most desperate resistance with a hanger, by which one of the officers was dangerously wounded. This outrage was such an aggravation of his crime, that the court would not venture to decide upon it, but remitted him to the sentence of the warden; who, by virtue of his dictatorial power, ordered the rioter to be loaded with irons, and confined in the strong room, which is a dismal dungeon, situated upon the side of the ditch, infested with toads and vermin, surcharged with noisome damps, and impervious to the least ray of light.

Justice being done upon these criminals, our adventurer and his company adjourned to the ordinary, which was kept at the coffee-house; and he found, upon enquiry, that his mess-mates consisted of one officer, two under-writers, three projectors, an alchymist, an attorney, a parson, a brace of poets, a baronet, and a knight of the bath. The dinner, though not sumptuous, nor very elegantly served up, was nevertheless substantial, and pretty well dressed; the wine was tolerable, and all the guests as chearful as if they had been utter strangers to calamity; so that our adventurer began to relish the company, and mix in the conversation, with that sprightliness and ease which were peculiar to his disposition. The repast being ended, the reckoning paid, and part of the gentlemen withdrawn to cards, or other avocations, those who remained, among whom Peregrine made one, agreed to spend the afternoon in conversation over a bowl of punch; and the liquor being produced, they passed the time very socially in various topicks of discourse, including many curious anecdotes relating to their own affairs. No man scrupled to own the nature of the debt for which he was confined, unless it happened to be some piddling affair; but on the contrary, boasted of the importance of the sum, as a circumstance that implied his having been a person of consequence in life; and he who had made the most remarkable escapes from bailiffs, was looked upon as a man of superior genius and address.

Among other extraordinary adventures of this kind, none was more romantick than the last elopement atchieved by the officer; who told them he had been arrested for a debt of two hundred pounds, at a time when he could not command as many pence, and conveyed to the bailiff's house, in which he continued a whole fortnight, moving his lodgings higher and higher, from time to time, in proportion to the decay of his credit; until, from the parlour, he had made a regular ascent to the garret. There, while he ruminated on his next step, which would have been to the Marshalsea, and saw the night come on, attended with hunger and cold, the wind began to blow, and the tiles of the house rattled with the storm: his imagination was immediately struck with the idea of escaping unperceived, amidst the darkness and noise of the tempest, by creeping out of the window of his apartment, and making his way over the tops of the adjoining houses. Glowing with this prospect, he examined the passage, which, to his infinite mortification, he found grated with iron bars on the outside; but even this difficulty did not divert him from his purpose. Conscious of his own strength, he believed himself able to make an hole through the roof, which seemed to be slender and crazy; and on this supposition, he barricadoed the door with the whole furniture of the room; then, setting himself to work with a poker, he in a few minutes effected a passage for his hand, with which he gradually stripped off the boards and tiling, so as to open a sally-port for his whole body, through which he fairly set himself free, groping his way towards the next tenement. Here, however, he met with an unlucky accident: his hat being blown off his head, chanced to fall into the court just as one of the bailiff's followers was knocking at the door; and this myrmidon recognizing it immediately, gave the alarm to his chief, who running up stairs to the garret, forced open the door in a twinkling, notwithstanding the precautions which the prisoner had taken, and, with his attendant, pursued the fugitive through his own track. 'After this chace had continued some 'time,' said the office, 'to the imminent 'danger

'danger of all three, I found my progress suddenly stopped by a sky-light, through which I perceived seven taylors sitting at work upon a board. Without the least hesitation or previous notice, I plunged among them with my backside foremost. Before they could recollect themselves from the consternation occasioned by such a strange visit, I told them my situation, and gave them to understand that there was no time to be lost. One of the number, taking the hint, led me instantly down stairs, and dismissed me at the street-door; while the bailiff and his follower, arriving at the breach, were deterred from entering by the brethren of my deliverer, who presenting their shears, like a range of *chevaux de frise*, commanded them to retire, on pain of immediate death: and the catchpole, rather than risk his carcase, consented to discharge the debt, comforting himself with the hope of making me prisoner again. There, however, he was disappointed: I kept snug, and laughed at his escape-warrant, until I was ordered abroad with the regiment, when I conveyed myself in a hearse to Gravesend, where I embarked for Flanders; but, being obliged to come over again on the recruiting service, I was nabbed on another score: and all the satisfaction my first captor has been able to obtain, is a writ of detainer; which, I believe, will fix me in this place, until the Parliament, in it's great goodness, shall think proper to discharge my debts by a new act of insolvency.'

Every body owned, that the captain's success was equal to the hardiness of his enterprize, which was altogether in the style of a soldier: but one of the merchants observed, that he must have been a bailiff of small experience, who would trust a prisoner of that consequence in such an unguarded place. 'If the captain,' said he, 'had fallen into the hands of such a cunning rascal as the fellow that arrested me, he would not have found it such an easy matter to escape; for the manner in which I was caught, is, perhaps, the most extraordinary that ever was practised in these realms. You must know, gentlemen, I suffered such losses by insuring vessels during the war, that I was obliged to stop payment, though my expectations were such as encouraged me to manage one branch of business, without coming to any immediate composition with my creditors. In short, I received consignments from abroad as usual; and that I might not be subject to the visits of those catchpoles, I never stirred abroad, but turning my first-floor into a warehouse, ordered all my goods to be hoisted up by a crane, fixed to the upper story of my house. Divers were the stratagems practised by those ingenious ferrets, with a view of decoying me from the walls of my fortification. I received innumerable messages from people who wanted to see me at certain taverns upon particular business: I was summoned into the country, to see my own mother, who was said to be at the point of death. A gentlewoman, one night, was taken in labour on my threshold: at another time, I was disturbed with the cry of murder in the street; and once I was alarmed by a false fire. But, being still upon my guard, I baffled all their attempts, and thought myself quite secure from their invention, when one of those blood-hounds, inspired, I believe, by the devil himself, contrived a snare by which I was at last entrapped. He made it his business to enquire into the particulars of my traffick; and understanding that, among other things, there were several chests of Florence entered at the custom house on my behalf, he ordered himself to be enclosed in a box of the same dimensions, with air-holes in the bottom, for the benefit of breathing, and No. III, marked upon the cover; and being conveyed to my door in a cart, among other goods, was, in his turn, hoisted up to my warehouse, where I stood with a hammer, in order to open the chests, that I might compare the contents with the invoice. You may guess my surprize and consternation, when, upon uncovering the box, I saw a bailiff rearing up his head, like Lazarus from the grave, and heard him declare that he had a writ against me for a thousand pounds. Indeed, I aimed the hammer at his head, but in the hurry of my confusion missed my mark: before I could repeat the blow, he started up with great agility, and executed his office in sight of several

'veral evidences, whom he had aſſembled in the ſtreet for that purpoſe; ſo that I could not poſſibly diſentangle myſelf from the toil, without incurring an eſcape-warrant, from which I had no protection. But, had I known the contents of the cheſt, by all that's good! I would have ordered my porter to raiſe it up as high as the crane would permit, and then have cut the rope by accident.'

'That expedient,' ſaid the knight with the red ribbon, 'would have diſcouraged him from ſuch hazardous attempts for the future, and would have been an example *in terrorem* of all his brethren. The ſtory puts me in mind of a deliverance atchieved by Tom Hackabout, a very ſtout, honeſt fellow, an old acquaintance of mine, who had been ſo famous for maiming bailiffs, that another gentleman having been ill-uſed at a ſpunging-houſe, no ſooner obtained his liberty, than, with a view of being revenged upon the landlord, he, for five ſhilling, bought one of Tom's notes, which ſold at a very large diſcount, and taking out a writ upon it, put it into the hands of the bailiff who had uſed him ill. The catchpole, after a diligent ſearch, had an opportunity of executing the writ upon the defendant, who, without ceremony, broke one of his arms, fractured his ſkull, and belaboured him in ſuch a manner, that he lay without ſenſe or motion on the ſpot. By ſuch exploits, this hero became ſo formidable, that no ſingle bailiff would undertake to arreſt him; ſo that he appeared in all publick places untouched. At length, however, ſeveral officers of the Marſhalſea court entered into a confederacy againſt him; and two of the number, attended by three deſperate followers, ventured to arreſt him one day in the Strand, near Hungerford Market: he found it impoſſible to make reſiſtance, becauſe the whole gang ſprung upon him at once, like ſo many tigers, and pinioned his arms ſo faſt that he could not wag a finger. Perceiving himſelf fairly overpowered, he deſired to be conducted forthwith to gaol, and was ſtowed in a boat accordingly: by that time they had reached the middle of the river, he found means to overſet the wherry by accident, and every man diſregarding the priſoner, conſulted his own ſafety. As for Hackabout, to whom that element was quite familiar, he mounted aſtride upon the keel of the boat, which was uppermoſt, and exhorted the bailiffs to ſwim for their lives; proteſting, before God, that they had no other chance to be ſaved.

'The watermen were immediately taken up by ſome of their own friends, who, far from yielding any aſſiſtance to the catchpoles, kept aloof, and exulted in their calamity. In ſhort, two of the five went to the bottom, and never ſaw the light of God's ſun; and the other three, with great difficulty, ſaved themſelves by laying hold on the rudder of a dung-barge, to which they were carried by the ſtream, while Tom, with great deliberation, ſwam acroſs to the Surry ſhore. After this atchievement, he was ſo much dreaded by the whole fraternity, that they ſhivered at the very mention of his name; and this character, which ſome people would think an advantage to a man in debt, was the greateſt misfortune that could poſſibly happen to him; becauſe no tradeſman would give him credit for the leaſt trifle, on the ſuppoſition that he could not indemnify himſelf in the common courſe of law.'

The parſon did not approve of Mr. Hackabout's method of eſcaping, which he conſidered as a very unchriſtian attempt upon the lives of his fellow-ſubjects. 'It is enough,' ſaid he, 'that we elude the laws of our country, without murdering the officers of juſtice: for my own part, I can lay my hand upon my heart, and ſafely ſay, that I forgive from my ſoul the fellow by whom I was made a priſoner, although the circumſtances of his behaviour were treacherous, wicked, and profane. You muſt know, Mr. Pickle, I was one day called into my chapel, in order to join a couple in the holy bands of matrimony; and my affairs being at that time ſo ſituated, as to lay me under apprehenſions of an arreſt, I cautiouſly ſurveyed the man through a lattice which was made for that purpoſe, before I would venture to come within his reach. He was cloathed in a ſeaman's jacket and trowzers, and had ſuch an air of ſimplicity in his countenance, as diveſted

'me

'me of all ſuſpicion: I therefore, with-
'out farther ſcruple, truſted myſelf in
'his preſence, began to exerciſe the duty
'of my function, and had actually per-
'formed one half of the ceremony, when
'the ſuppoſed woman, pulling out a
'paper from her boſom, exclaimed with
'a maſculine voice, "Sir, you are my
"priſoner, I have got a writ againſt you
"for five hundred pounds." I was thun-
'derſtruck at this declaration, not ſo
'much on account of my own misfor-
'tune, which (thank Heaven!) I can
'bear with patience and reſignation, as
'at the impiety of the wretch; firſt, in
'diſguiſing ſuch a worldly aim under
'the cloak of religion; and, ſecondly,
'in proſtituting the ſervice, when there
'was no occaſion for ſo doing, his de-
'ſign having previouſly taken effect.
'Yet I forgive him, poor ſoul! becauſe
'he knew not what he did; and I hope
'you, Sir Sipple, will exert the ſame
'Chriſtian virtue towards the man by
'whom you was likewiſe over-reached.'

'Oh, damn the raſcal!' cried the knight, 'were I his judge, he ſhould 'be condemned to flames everlaſting. 'A villain! to diſgrace me in ſuch a 'manner, before almoſt all the faſhion-'able company in town.' Our hero expreſſing a curioſity to know the particulars of this adventure, the knight gratified his deſire by telling him, 'that one evening, while he was engaged in a *partie* of cards, at a drum in the houſe of a certain lady of quality, he was given to underſtand by one of the ſervants, that a ſtranger, very richly dreſſed, was juſt arrived in a chair, preceded by five footmen with flambeaus, and that he refuſed to come up ſtairs, until he ſhould be introduced by Sir Sipple. 'Upon 'this notice,' continued the knight, 'I judged it was ſome of my quality 'friends; and having obtained her lady-'ſhip's permiſſion to bring him up, 'went down to the hall, and perceived 'a perſon, whom, to the beſt of my re-'collection, I had never ſeen before. 'However, his appearance was ſo mag-'nificent, that I could not harbour the 'leaſt ſuſpicion of his true quality; and 'ſeeing me advance, he ſaluted me with 'a very genteel bow, obſerving, that 'though he had not the honour of my 'acquaintance, he could not diſpenſe 'with waiting upon me, even on that 'occaſion, in conſequence of a letter 'which he had received from a particu-'lar friend. So ſaying, he put a paper 'into my hand, intimating, that he had 'got a writ againſt me for ten thouſand 'pounds, and that it would be my in-'tereſt to ſubmit without reſiſtance, for 'he was provided with a guard of twen-'ty men, who ſurrounded the door in 'different diſguiſes, determined to ſe-'cure me againſt all oppoſition. En-'raged at the ſcoundrel's fineſſe, and 'truſting to the aſſiſtance of the real 'footmen aſſembled in the hall, "So, "you are a raſcally bailiff," ſaid I, "who have aſſumed the garb of a gen-"tleman, in order to diſturb her lady-"ſhip's company. Take this fellow, "my lads, and roll him in the kennel: "here are ten guineas for your trouble." 'Theſe words were no ſooner pronoun-'ced, than I was ſeized, lifted up, placed 'in a chair, and carried off in the 'twinkling of an eye: not but that the 'ſervants of the houſe, and ſome other 'footmen, made a motion towards my 'reſcue, and alarmed all the company 'above; but the bailiff affirming with 'undaunted effrontery, that I was taken 'up upon an affair of ſtate, and ſo many 'people appearing in his behalf, the 'counteſs would not ſuffer the ſuppoſed 'meſſenger to be inſulted, and he car-'ried me to the county-gaol without 'farther lett or moleſtation.'

CHAP. XIII.

PICKLE SEEMS TOLERABLY WELL RECONCILED TO HIS CAGE; AND IS BY THE CLERGYMAN ENTERTAINED WITH THE MEMOIRS OF A NOTED PERSONAGE, WHOM HE SEES BY ACCIDENT IN THE FLEET.

THE knight had ſcarce finiſhed his narrative, when our hero was told, that a gentleman in the coffee-room wanted to ſee him; and when he went thither, he found his friend Crabtree, who had tranſacted all his affairs according to the determination of the preceding day; and now gave him an account of the remarks he had overheard on the ſubject of his misfortune: for the manner of the arreſt was ſo publick and extraordinary, that thoſe who were preſent, immediately propagated it among their acquaintance, and it was that ſame evening diſcourſed upon at

ſeveral

several tea and card-tables, with this variation from the truth, that the debt amounted to twelve thousand, instead of twelve hundred pounds: from which circumstance it was conjectured, that Peregrine was a bite from the beginning, who had found credit on account of his effrontery and appearance, and imposed himself upon the town as a young gentleman of fortune. They rejoiced, therefore, at his calamity, which they considered as a just punishment for his fraud and presumption, and began to review certain particulars of his conduct, that plainly demonstrated him to be a rank adventurer, long before he had arrived at this end of his career.

Pickle, who now believed his glory was set for ever, received this intelligence with that disdain which enables a man to detach himself effectually from the world, and, with great tranquillity, gave the misanthrope an entertaining detail of what he had seen and heard since their last parting. While they amused themselves in this manner over a dish of coffee, they were joined by the parson, who congratulated our hero upon his bearing mischance with such philosophick quiet, and began to regale the two friends with some curious circumstances relating to the private history of the several prisoners, as they happened to come in.

At length a gentleman entered; at sight of whom the clergyman rose up, and saluted him with a most reverential bow, which was graciously returned by the stranger; who, with a young man that attended him, retired to the other end of the room. They were no sooner out of hearing, than the communicative priest desired his company to take particular notice of this person to whom he had paid his respects: 'That man,' said he, 'is this day one of the most 'flagrant instances of neglected virtue 'which the world can produce. Over 'and above a cool discerning head, 'fraught with uncommon learning and 'experience, he is possessed of such fortitude and resolution, as no difficulties can discourage, and no danger 'impair; and so indefatigable in his 'humanity, that even now, while he is 'surrounded with such embarrassments 'as would distract the brain of any 'ordinary mortal, he has added considerably to his incumbrances, by taking under his protection that young 'gentleman; who, induced by his character, appealed to his benevolence for 'redress of the grievances under which 'he labours from the villainy of his 'guardian.'

Peregrine's curiosity being excited by this encomium, he asked the name of this generous patron, of which when he was informed, 'I am no stranger,' said he, 'to the fame of that gentleman, 'who has made a considerable noise in 'the world, on account of that great 'cause he undertook in defence of an 'unhappy orphan; and since he is a 'person of such an amiable disposition, 'I am heartily sorry to find that his 'endeavours have not met with that successful issue which their good fortune 'in the beginning seemed to promise. 'Indeed, the circumstance of his espousing that cause was so uncommon and 'romantick, and the depravity of the 'human heart so universal, that some 'people, unacquainted with his real 'character, imagined his views were 'altogether selfish; and some were not 'wanting, who affirmed he was a mere 'adventurer. Nevertheless, I must do 'him the justice to own, I have heard 'some of the most virulent of those who 'were concerned on the other side of 'the question bear testimony in his 'favour; observing, that he was deceived into the expence of the whole, 'by the plausible story which at first 'engaged his compassion. Your description of his character confirms me 'in the same opinion, though I am 'quite ignorant of the affair; the particulars of which I should be glad to 'learn, as well as a genuine account 'of his own life, many circumstances 'of which are by his enemies, I believe, egregiously misrepresented.'

'Sir,' answered the priest, 'that is 'a piece of satisfaction which I am 'glad to find myself capable of giving 'you: I have had the pleasure of being 'acquainted with Mr. M—— from his 'youth, and every thing which I shall 'relate concerning him, you may depend upon as a fact which hath fallen 'under my own cognizance, or been 'vouched upon the credit of undoubted evidence.

'Mr. M——'s father was a minister 'of the established church of Scotland, 'descended from a very ancient clan, 'and his mother nearly related to a 'noble family in the northern part of

'that kingdom. While the ſon was 'boarded at a publick ſchool, where 'he made good progreſs in the Latin 'tongue, his father died, and he was 'left an orphan to the care of an uncle, 'who finding him determined againſt 'any ſervile employment, kept him at 'ſchool, that he might prepare himſelf 'for the univerſity, with a view of be-'ing qualified for his father's profeſ-'ſion.

'Here his imagination was ſo heated 'by the warlike atchievements he found 'recorded in the Latin authors, ſuch as 'Cæſar, Curtius, and Buchanan, that 'he was ſeized with an irreſiſtible thirſt 'of military glory, and deſire of trying 'his fortune in the army. His ma-'jeſty's troops taking the field, in con-'ſequence of the rebellion which hap-'pened in the year ſeventeen hundred 'and fifteen, this young adventurer, 'thinking no life equal to that of a ſol-'dier, found means to furniſh himſelf 'with a fuſil and bayonet, and leaving 'the ſchool, repaired to the camp near 'Stirling, with a view of ſignalizing 'himſelf in the field, though he was 'at that time but juſt turned of thir-'teen. He offered his ſervice to ſeveral 'officers, in hope of being inliſted in 'their companies; but they would not 'receive him, becauſe they rightly con-'cluded that he was ſome ſchool-boy, 'broke looſe without the knowledge 'or conſent of his relations. Notwith-'ſtanding this diſcouragement, he con-'tinued in camp, curiouſly prying into 'every part of the ſervice; and ſuch was 'the reſolution conſpicuous in him, even 'at ſuch a tender age, that after his 'ſmall finances were exhauſted, he per-'ſiſted in his deſign; and becauſe he 'would not make his wants known, 'actually ſubſiſted for ſeveral days on 'hips, haws, and ſloes, and other ſpon-'taneous fruits which he gathered in 'the woods and fields. Meanwhile, 'he never failed to be preſent when 'any regiment or corps of men were 'drawn out to be exerciſed and re-'viewed, and accompanied them in all 'their evolutions, which he had learn-'ed to great perfection, by obſerving 'the companies which were quartered 'in the place where he was at ſchool. 'This eagerneſs and perſeverance at-'tracted the notice of many officers; 'who, after having commended his 'ſpirit and zeal, preſſed him to return 'to his parents, and even threatened to 'expel him from the camp, if he would 'not comply with their advice.

'Theſe remonſtrances having no other 'effect than that of warning him to 'avoid his monitors, they thought pro-'per to alter their behaviour towards 'him, took him into their protection, 'and even into their meſs; and what, 'above all other marks of favour, 'pleaſed the young ſoldier moſt, per-'mitted him to incorporate in the bat-'talion, and take his turn of duty with 'the other men. In this happy ſitua-'tion he was diſcovered by a relation of 'his mother, who was a captain in 'the army, and who uſed all his au-'thority and influence in perſuading 'M—— to return to ſchool; but find-'ing him deaf to his admonitions and 'threats, he took him under his own 'care; and when the army marched to 'Dumblane, left him at Stirling, with 'expreſs injunction to keep himſelf 'within the walls.

'He temporiſed with his kinſman, 'fearing that ſhould he ſeem refractory, 'the captain would have ordered him 'to be ſhut up in the caſtle. Inflamed 'with the deſire of ſeeing a battle, his 'relation no ſooner marched off the 'ground, than he mixed in with an-'other regiment, to which his former 'patrons belonged, and proceeded to 'the field, where he diſtinguiſhed him-'ſelf, even at that early time of life, 'by his gallantry, in helping to retrieve 'a pair of colours belonging to M—n's 'regiment; ſo that after the affair he 'was preſented to the Duke of Argyle, 'and recommended ſtrongly to Briga-'dier Grant, who invited him into his 'regiment, and promiſed to provide for 'him with the firſt opportunity: but 'that gentleman in a little time loſt his 'command upon the duke's diſgrace, 'and the regiment was ordered for Ire-'land, being given to Colonel Naſſau, 'whoſe favour the young volunteer ac-'quired to ſuch a degree, that he was 'recommended to the king for an en-'ſigncy, which in all probability he 'would have obtained, had not the regi-'ment been unluckily reduced.

'In conſequence of this reduction, 'which happened in the moſt ſevere 'ſeaſon of the year, he was obliged to 'return to his own country, through 'infinite hardſhips to which he was ex-'poſed from the narrowneſs of his cir-'cumſtances;

'cumſtances; and continuing ſtill enamoured of a military life, he entered 'into the regiment of Scotch Greys, 'at that time commanded by the late 'Sir James Campbell, who being acquainted with his family and character, encouraged him with the promiſe 'of ſpeedy preferment. In this corps 'he remained three years, during which 'he had no opportunity of ſeeing actual 'ſervice, except at the affair of Glenſheel; and this life of inſipid quiet 'muſt have hung heavy upon a youth 'of M——'s active diſpoſition, had not 'he found exerciſe for the mind, in 'reading books of amuſement, hiſtory, 'voyages, and geography, together with 'thoſe that treated of the art of war 'ancient and modern, for which he 'contracted ſuch an eager appetite, that 'he uſed to ſpend ſixteen hours a day 'in this employment. About that time 'he became acquainted with a gentleman of learning and taſte, who obſerving his indefatigable application, 'and inſatiable thirſt after knowledge, 'took upon himſelf the charge of ſuperintending his ſtudies; and by the direction of ſuch an able guide, the 'young ſoldier converted his attention 'to a more ſolid and profitable courſe 'of reading. So inordinate was his 'deſire of making ſpeedy advances in 'the paths of learning, that within the 'compaſs of three months, he diligently peruſed the writings of Locke 'and Malbranche, and made himſelf 'maſter of the firſt ſix, and of the eleventh and twelfth book of Euclid's 'Elements. He conſidered Pufendorf 'and Grotius with uncommon care, 'acquired a tolerable degree of knowledge in the French language, and his 'imagination was ſo captivated with 'the deſire of learning, that ſeeing no 'proſpect of a war, or views of being 'provided for in the ſervice, he quitted 'the army, and went through a regular 'courſe of univerſity education. Having made ſuch progreſs in his ſtudies, 'he reſolved to qualify himſelf for the 'church; and acquired ſuch a ſtock of 'ſchool divinity under the inſtructions 'of a learned profeſſor at Edinburgh, 'that he more than once mounted the 'roſtrum in the publick hall, and held 'forth with uncommon applauſe: but 'being diſcouraged from a proſecution 'of his plan, by the unreaſonable auſterity of ſome of the Scotch clergy, 'by whom the moſt indifferent and innocent words and actions were often 'miſconſtrued into levity and miſconduct, he reſolved to embrace the firſt 'favourable opportunity of going abroad, being inflamed with the deſire 'of ſeeing foreign countries, and actually ſet out for Holland, where for 'the ſpace of two years he ſtudied the 'Roman law, with the law of nature 'and nations, under the famous profeſſors Tolieu and Barbeyrac.

'Having thus finiſhed his ſchool education, he ſet out for Paris, with a view 'to make himſelf perfect in the French 'language, and learn ſuch uſeful exerciſes as might be acquired with the 'wretched remnant of his ſlender eſtate, 'which was by that time reduced very 'low. In his journey through the Netherlands, he went to Namur, and 'paid his reſpects to Biſhop Strickland 'and General Collier, by whom he was 'received with great civility, in conſequence of letters of recommendation, 'with which he was provided from the 'Hague, and the old general aſſured 'him of his protection and intereſt for 'a pair of colours, if he was diſpoſed 'to enter into the Dutch ſervice.

'Though he was by that time pretty 'well cured of his military Quixotiſm, 'he would not totally decline the generous proffer, for which he thanked 'him in the moſt grateful terms, telling 'the general that he would pay his duty 'to him on his return from France, 'and then, if he could determine upon 're-engaging in the army, ſhould think 'himſelf highly honoured in being under his command.

'After a ſtay of two months in 'Flanders, he proceeded to Paris; and, 'far from taking up his habitation in 'the ſuburbs of St. Germain, according to the cuſtom of Engliſh travellers, 'he hired a private lodging on the other 'ſide of the river, and aſſociated chiefly 'with French officers, who (their youthful ſallies being over) are allowed to 'be the politeſt gentlemen of that kingdom. In this ſcheme he found his 'account ſo much, that he could not 'but wonder at the folly of his countrymen, who loſe the main ſcope of their 'going abroad, by ſpending their time 'and fortune idly with one another.

'During his reſidence in Holland he 'had made himſelf acquainted with the 'beſt authors in the French language,

'so that he was able to share in their 'conversation; a circumstance from 'which he found great benefit; for it 'not only improved him in his know-'ledge of that tongue, but also tended 'to the enlargement of his acquaintance, 'in the course of which he contracted 'intimacies in some families of good 'fashion, especially those of the long 'robe, which would have enabled him 'to pass his time very agreeably, had 'he been a little easier in point of for-'tune: but his finances, notwithstand-'ing the most rigid œconomy, being in 'a few months reduced to a very low 'ebb, the prospect of indigence threw a 'damp upon all his pleasures, though 'he never suffered himself to be thereby 'in any degree dispirited; being in that 'respect of so happy a disposition, that 'conscious poverty or abundance made 'very slight impressions upon his mind.

'This consumption of his cash, how-'ever, involved him in some perplexity; 'and he deliberated with himself, whe-'ther he should return to General Col-'lier, or repair to London, where he 'might possibly fall into some business 'not unbecoming a gentleman; though 'he was very much mortified to find 'himself incapable of gratifying an in-'ordinate desire which possessed him of 'making the grand tour, or at least of 'visiting the southern parts of France.

'While he thus hesitated between dif-'ferent suggestions, he was one morning 'visited by a gentleman who had sought 'and cultivated his friendship, and for 'whom he had done a good office, in 'supporting him with spirit against a 'brutal German, with whom he had an 'affair of honour. This gentleman came 'to propose a party for a fortnight to 'Fontainbleau, where the court then 'was; and the proposal being declined 'by M—— with more than usual stiff-'ness, his friend was very urgent to know 'the reason of his refusal, and at length, 'with some confusion, said, "perhaps "your finances are low." M—— re-'plied, that he had wherewithal to de-'fray the expence of his journey to 'London, where he could be furnished 'with a fresh supply; and this answer 'was no sooner made, than the other 'taking him by the hand, "My dear "friend," said he, "I am not unac-"quainted with your affairs, and would "have offered you my credit long ago, "if I had thought it would be accept-"able; even now, I do not pretend to "give you money, but desire and in-"sist upon it, that you will accept of "the loan of these two pieces of paper, "to be repaid when you marry a wo-"man with a fortune of twenty thou-"sand pounds, or obtain an employ-"ment of a thousand a year." So say-'ing, he presented him with two actions 'of above two thousand livres each.

'M—— was astonished at this un-'expected instance of generosity in a 'stranger, and with suitable acknow-'ledgment peremptorily refused to in-'cur such an obligation; but at length 'he was, by dint of importunity and 'warm expostulation, prevailed upon 'to accept one of the actions, on con-'dition that the gentleman would take 'his note for the sum; and this he 'absolutely rejected, until M—— pro-'mised to draw upon him for double the 'value or more, in case he should at 'any time want a farther supply. This 'uncommon act of friendship and ge-'nerosity M—— afterwards had an 'opportunity to repay tenfold; though 'he could not help regretting the oc-'casion on his friend's account. That 'worthy man having, by placing too 'much confidence in a villainous law-'yer, and a chain of other misfortunes, 'involved himself and his amiable lady 'in a labyrinth of difficulties, which 'threatened the total ruin of his fami-'ly; M—— felt the inexpressible sa-'tisfaction of delivering his benefactor 'from the snare.

'Being thus reinforced by the gene-'rosity of his friend, M—— resolved 'to execute his former plan of seeing 'the south of France, together with 'the sea-ports of Spain as far as Cadiz, 'from whence he proposed to take a 'passage for London by sea; and with 'this view, sent forwards his trunks 'by the diligence to Lyons, determined 'to ride post, in order to enjoy a bet-'ter view of the country, and for the 'conveniency of stopping at those places 'where there was any thing remarkable 'to be seen or enquired into. While 'he was employed in taking leave of 'his Parisian friends, who furnished 'him with abundant recommendation, 'a gentleman of his own country, who 'spoke little or no French, hearing of 'his intention, begged the favour of 'accompanying him in his expedition.

'With this new companion, there-'fore, he set out for Lyons, where he 'was perfectly well received by the in-

'tendant

'tendant and ſome of the beſt families 'of the place, in conſequence of his 'letters of recommendation; and after 'a ſhort ſtay in that city, proceeded 'down the Rhone to Avignon, in what 'is called the *coche d'eau*; then viſit-'ing the principal towns of Dauphiné, 'Languedoc, and Provence, he returned 'to the delightful city of Marſeilles, 'where he and his fellow-traveller were 'ſo much captivated by the ſerenity of 'the air, and the good-nature and hoſpi-'tality of the ſprightly inhabitants, that 'they never dreamed of changing their 'quarters, during the whole winter and 'part of the ſpring: here he acquired the 'acquaintance of the Marquis D'Ar-'gens, attorney-general in the parlia-'ment of Aix, and of his eldeſt ſon, 'who now makes ſo great a figure in 'the literary world; and when the 'affair of Father Girard and Mada-'moiſelle Cadiere began to make a 'noiſe, he accompanied theſe two gen-'tlemen to Toulon, where the mar-'quis was ordered to take precognition 'of the facts.

'On his return to Marſeilles, he 'found a certain noble lord of great 'fortune under the direction of a Swiſs 'governor, who had accommodated him 'with two of his own relations, of the 'ſame country, by way of companions, 'together with five ſervants in his train. 'They being abſolute ſtrangers in the 'place, M—— introduced them to the 'intendant, and ſeveral other good fa-'milies; and had the good fortune to 'be ſo agreeable to his lordſhip, that 'he propoſed and even preſſed him to 'live with him in England, as a friend 'and companion, and to take upon 'him the ſuperintendance of his affairs, 'in which caſe he would ſettle upon 'him four hundred a year for life.

'This propoſal was too advantage-'ous to be ſlighted by a perſon of no 'fortune or fixed eſtabliſhment; he 'therefore made no difficulty of cloſing 'with it: but as his lordſhip's depar-'ture was fixed to a ſhort day, and he 'urged him to accompany him to Pa-'ris, and from thence to England, 'M—— thought it would be improper 'and indecent to interfere with the of-'fice of his governor, who might take 'umbrage at his favour, and therefore 'excuſed himſelf from a compliance 'with his lordſhip's requeſt, until his 'minority ſhould be expired, as he was 'within a few months of being of age.

'However, he repeated his importuni-'ties ſo earneſtly, and the governor 'joined in the requeſt with ſuch appear-'ance of cordiality, that he was pre-'vailed upon to comply with their joint 'deſire; and in a few days ſet out with 'them for Paris, by the way of Lyons. 'But before they had been three days 'in the city, M—— perceived a total 'change in the behaviour of the Swiſs 'and his two relations, who, in all 'probability, became jealous of his in-'fluence with his lordſhip; and he no 'ſooner made this diſcovery, than he 'reſolved to withdraw himſelf from 'ſuch a diſagreeable participation of 'that young nobleman's favour. He 'therefore, in ſpite of all his lord-'ſhip's intreaties and remonſtrances, 'quitted him for the preſent; alledg-'ing, as a pretext, that he had a long-'ing deſire to ſee Switzerland and the 'banks of the Rhine, and promiſing to 'meet him again in England.

'This his intention being made 'known to the governor and his friends, 'their countenances immediately clear-'ed up, their courteſy and complai-'ſance returned, and they even fur-'niſhed him with letters for Geneva, 'Lauſanne, Bern, and Soleures; in 'conſequence of which, he met with 'unuſual civilities at theſe places. Hav-'ing made this tour with his Scotch 'friend, (who came up to him be-'fore he left Lyons) and viſited the 'moſt conſiderable towns on both ſides 'of the Rhine, and the courts of the 'Electors Palatine, Mentz, and Co-'logn, he arrived in Holland; and 'from thence through the Netherlands 'repaired to London, where he found 'my lord juſt returned from Paris.

'His lordſhip received him with ex-'preſſions of uncommon joy, would 'not ſuffer him to ſtir from him for 'ſeveral days, and introduced him to 'his relations.

'M—— accompanied his lordſhip 'from London to his country-ſeat, 'where he was indeed treated with 'great friendſhip and confidence, and 'conſulted in every thing; but the no-'ble peer never once made mention of 'the annuity which he had promiſed 'to ſettle upon him; nor did M—— 'remind him of it, becauſe he con-'ceived it was his affair to fulfil his 'engagements of his own accord. 'M—— being tired of the manner of 'living at this place, made an excur-

'ſion

'sion to Bath, where he ſtaid about a 'fortnight, to partake of the diverſions; 'and, upon his return, found his lord- 'ſhip making diſpoſitions for another 'journey to Paris.

'Surprized at this ſudden reſolution, 'he endeavoured to diſſuade him from 'it: but his remonſtrances were ren- 'dered ineffectual by the inſinuations 'of a foreigner who had come over with 'him, and filled his imagination with 'extravagant notions of pleaſure, infi- 'nitely ſuperior to any which he could 'enjoy while he was in the trammels, 'and under the reſtraints of a governor. 'He therefore turned a deaf ear to all 'M——'s arguments, and intreated him 'to accompany him in the journey; but 'this gentleman foreſeeing that a young 'man like my lord, of ſtrong paſſions 'and eaſy to be miſled, would in all 'probability ſquander away great ſums 'of money, in a way that would neither 'do credit to himſelf or to thoſe who 'were concerned with him, reſiſted all 'his ſolicitations, on pretence of having 'buſineſs of conſequence at London; 'and afterwards had reaſon to be ex- 'tremely well pleaſed with his own 'conduct in this particular.

'Before he ſet out on this expedition, 'M——, in juſtice to himſelf, remind- 'ed him of the propoſal which he had 'made to him at Marſeilles, deſiring to 'know if he had altered his deſign in 'that particular; in which caſe he would 'turn his thoughts ſome other way, as 'he would not in the leaſt be thought 'to intrude or pin himſelf upon any 'man. My lord proteſted, in the moſt 'ſolemn manner, that he ſtill continued 'in his former reſolution; and again 'beſeeching him to bear him company 'into France, promiſed that every thing 'ſhould be ſettled to his ſatisfaction 'upon their return to England. M——, 'however, ſtill perſiſted in his refuſal, 'for the abovementioned reaſons: and 'though he never heard more of the 'annuity, he nevertheleſs continued to 'ſerve his lordſhip with his advice and 'good offices ever after; particularly 'in directing his choice to an alliance 'with a lady of eminent virtue, the 'daughter of a noble lord, more con- 'ſpicuous for his ſhining parts than the 'ſplendor of his titles, (a circumſtance 'upon which he always reflected with 'particular ſatisfaction, as well on ac- 'count of the extraordinary merit of 'the lady, as becauſe it veſted in her 'children a conſiderable part of that 'great eſtate, which, of right, belong- 'ed to her grandmother;) and after- 'wards put him in a way to retrieve his 'eſtate from a heavy load of debt he 'had contracted. When my lord ſet 'out on his Paris expedition, the mo- 'ney M—— had received from his 'generous friend at Paris was al- 'moſt reduced to the laſt guinea. He 'had not yet reaped the leaſt benefit 'from his engagements with his lord- 'ſhip; and diſdaining to aſk for a ſup- 'ply from him, he knew not how to 'ſubſiſt, with any degree of credit, 'till his return.

'This uncomfortable proſpect was 'the more diſagreeable to him, as, at 'that time of life, he was much in- 'clined to appear in the gay world, 'had contracted a taſte for plays, ope- 'ras, and other publick diverſions, and 'and acquired an acquaintance with 'many people of good faſhion, which 'could not be maintained without a 'conſiderable expence. In this emer- 'gency, he thought he could not em- 'ploy his idle time more profitably 'than in tranſlating from foreign lan- 'guages ſuch books as were then chief- 'ly in vogue; and upon application to 'a friend, who was a man of letters, he 'was furniſhed with as much buſineſs 'of that kind as he could poſſibly ma- 'nage, and wrote ſome pamphlets on 'the reigning controverſies of that time 'that had the good fortune to pleaſe. 'He was alſo concerned in a monthly 'journal of literature, and the work 'was carried on by the two friends 'jointly, though M—— did not at all 'appear in the partnerſhip. By theſe 'means he not only ſpent his morn- 'ings in uſeful exerciſe, but ſupplied 'himſelf with money for what the 'French call the *menus plaiſirs* during 'the whole ſummer. He frequented 'all the aſſemblies in and about Lon- 'don, and conſiderably enlarged his 'acquaintance among the fair ſex.

'He had, upon his firſt arrival in 'England, become acquainted with a 'lady at an aſſembly not far from Lon- 'don; and though, at that time, he 'had no thoughts of extending his 'views farther than the uſual gallantry 'of the place, he met with ſuch diſtin- 'guiſhing marks of her regard in the 'ſequel, and was ſo particularly en- 'couraged by the advice of another lady, 'with whom he had been intimate in

'France,

'France, and who was now of their 'parties, that he could not help entertaining hopes of making an impreſſion 'upon the heart of his agreeable partner, who was a young lady of an 'ample fortune and great expectations. 'He, therefore, cultivated her good 'graces with all the aſſiduity and addreſs of which he was maſter; and 'ſucceeded ſo well in his endeavours, 'that, after a due courſe of attendance, 'and the death of an aunt, by which 'ſhe received an acceſſion of fortune 'to the amount of three and twenty 'thouſand pounds, he ventured to declare his paſſion; and ſhe not only 'heard him with patience and approbation, but alſo replied in terms adequate to his warmeſt wiſhes.

'Finding himſelf ſo favourably received, he preſſed her to ſecure his 'happineſs by marriage; but, to this 'propoſal, ſhe objected the recency of 'her kinſwoman's death, which would 'have rendered ſuch a ſtep highly indecent, and the diſpleaſure of her other 'relations, from whom ſhe had ſtill 'greater expectations, and who at that 'time importuned her to marry a couſin of her own, whom ſhe could not 'like. However, that M—— might 'have no cauſe to repine at her delay, 'ſhe freely entered with him into an 'intimacy of correſpondence; during 'which, nothing could have added to 'their mutual felicity, which was the 'more poignant and refined, from the 'myſterious and romantick manner of 'their enjoying it; for though he publickly viſited her as an acquaintance, 'his behaviour on theſe occaſions was 'always ſo diſtant, reſpectful, and reſerved, that the reſt of the company 'could not poſſibly ſuſpect the nature 'of their reciprocal attachment; in conſequence of which, they uſed to have 'private interviews, unknown to every 'ſoul upon earth except her maid, who 'was neceſſarily intruſted with the ſecret.

'In this manner they enjoyed the converſation of each other for above 'twelve months, without the leaſt interruption; and though the ſtability 'of Mr. M——'s fortune entirely depended upon their marriage, yet as 'he perceived his miſtreſs ſo averſe to 'it, he never urged it with vehemence, 'nor was at all anxious on that ſcore; 'being eaſily induced to defer a ceremony, which, as he then thought, 'could in no ſhape have added to their 'ſatisfaction, though he hath ſince altered his ſentiments.

'Be that as it will, his indulgent 'miſtreſs, in order to ſet his mind at 'eaſe in that particular, and in full 'confidence of his honour, inſiſted on 'his accepting a deed of gift of her 'whole fortune, in conſideration of their 'intended marriage; and after ſome 'difficulty he was prevailed upon to receive this proof of her eſteem, well 'knowing that it would ſtill be in his 'power to return the obligation. Though 'ſhe often intreated him to take upon 'himſelf the entire adminiſtration of 'her finances, and upon divers occaſions preſſed him to accept of large 'ſums, he never once abuſed her generous diſpoſition, or ſolicited her for 'money, except for ſome humane purpoſe, which ſhe was always more ready to fulfil than he to propoſe.

'In the courſe of this correſpondence, 'he became acquainted with ſome of 'her female relations; and, among 'the reſt, with a young lady, ſo eminently adorned with all the qualifications of mind and perſon, that, notwithſtanding all his philoſophy and 'caution, he could not behold and converſe with her without being deeply 'ſmitten with her charms. He did all 'in his power to diſcourage this dangerous invaſion in the beginning, and to 'conceal the leaſt ſymptom of it from 'her relation; he ſummoned all his 'reflection to his aid; and thinking it 'would be baſe and diſhoneſt to cheriſh 'any ſentiment repugnant to the affection which he owed to a miſtreſs, who 'had placed ſuch unlimited confidence 'in him, he attempted to ſtifle the infant flame, by avoiding the amiable 'inſpirer of it. But the paſſion had 'taken too deep a root in his heart to 'be ſo eaſily extirpated; his abſence 'from the dear object increaſed the impatience of his love. The inteſtine 'conflict between that and gratitude, 'deprived him of his reſt and appetite. 'He was in a ſhort time emaciated 'by continual watching, anxiety, and 'want of nouriſhment; and ſo much 'altered from his uſual chearfulneſs, 'that his miſtreſs being ſurprized and 'alarmed at the change, which from 'the ſymptoms ſhe judged was owing 'to ſome uneaſineſs of mind, took all 'imaginable pains to diſcover the cauſe.

'In all probability, it did not eſcape 'her penetration; for ſhe more than

'once

'once asked if he was in love with her 'cousin, protesting, that far from being an obstacle to his happiness, she 'would in that case be an advocate for 'his passion. However, this declaration was never made without manifest 'signs of anxiety and uneasiness, which 'made such an impression upon the 'heart of M——, that he resolved to 'sacrifice his happiness, and even his 'life, rather than take any step which 'might be construed into an injury or 'insult to a person who had treated 'him with such generosity and goodness.

'In consequence of this resolution, 'he formed another, which was to go 'abroad, under pretence of recovering 'his health, but in reality to avoid the 'temptation, as well as the suspicion, 'of being inconstant; and in this design he was confirmed by his physician, who actually thought him in the 'first stage of a consumption, and therefore advised him to repair to the south 'of France. He communicated his design, with the doctor's opinion, to the 'lady, who agreed to it with much less 'difficulty than he found in conquering his own reluctance at parting 'with the dear object of his love. The 'consent of his generous mistress being 'obtained, he waited upon her with the 'instrument whereby she had made the 'conveyance of her fortune to him; and 'all his remonstrances being insufficient 'to persuade her to take it back, he 'cancelled it in her presence, and placed 'it in that state upon her toilet while 'she was dressing; whereupon she shed 'a torrent of tears, saying, she now 'plainly perceived that he wanted to tear 'himself from her, and that his affections were settled upon another. He 'was sensibly affected by this proof of 'her concern; and endeavoured to calm 'the perturbation of her mind, by vowing eternal fidelity, and pressing her to 'accept of his hand in due form before his departure. By these means 'her transports were quieted for the present, and the marriage deferred, for 'the same prudential reasons which had 'hitherto prevented it.

'Matters being thus compromised, 'and the day fixed for his departure, 'she, together with her faithful maid, 'one morning visited him for the first 'time at his own lodgings; and after 'breakfast, desiring to speak with him 'in private, he conducted her into another room, where assuming an 'unusual gravity of aspect, "My dear "M——," said she, "you are now going to leave me, and God alone knows "if ever we shall meet again; therefore, "if you really love me with that tenderness which you profess, you will accept of this mark of my friendship "and unalterable affection; it will at "least be a provision for your journey; "and if any accident should befal me "before I have the happiness of receiving "you again into my arms, I shall have "the satisfaction of knowing that you "are not altogether without resource." 'So saying, she put an embroidered 'pocket-book into his hand. He expressed the high sense he had of her 'generosity and affection in the most 'pathetick terms, and begged leave to 'suspend his acceptance, until he should 'know the contents of her present, 'which was so extraordinary, that he 'absolutely refused to receive it: he 'was, however, by her repeated intreaties, in a manner compelled to receive 'about one half, and she afterwards 'insisted upon his taking a reinforcement of a considerable sum for the expence of his journey.

'Having staid with her ten days beyond the time he had fixed for his departure, and settled the method of 'their correspondence, he took his leave 'with an heart full of sorrow, anxiety, 'and distraction, produced from the 'different suggestions of his duty and 'love. He then set out for France, and 'after a short stay at Paris proceeded 'to Aix in Provence, and from thence 'to Marseilles, at which two places he 'continued for some months; but nothing he met with being able to dissipate those melancholy ideas which 'still preyed upon his imagination and 'affected his spirits, he endeavoured to 'elude them with a succession of new 'objects; and with that view, persuaded 'a counsellor of the parliament of Aix, 'a man of great worth, learning, and 'good-humour, to accompany him in 'making a tour of those parts of France 'which he had not yet seen. On their 'return from this excursion, they found 'at Aix an Italian Abbé, a person of 'character, and great knowledge of men 'and books; who having travelled all 'over Germany and France, was so far 'on his return to his own country.

'M—— having, by means of his 'friend the counsellor, contracted an

'acquaintance

'acquaintance with this gentleman, 'and being desirous of seeing some 'parts of Italy, particularly the carni- 'val at Venice, they set out together 'from Marseilles, in a tartan, for Ge- 'noa, coasting it all the way, and ly- 'ing on shore every night. Having 'shewn him what was most remarkable 'in this city, his friend the abbé was so 'obliging as to conduct him through 'Tuscany, and the most remarkable 'cities in Lombardy, to Venice, where 'M—— insisted upon defraying the ex- 'pence of the whole tour, in considera- 'tion of the abbé's complaisance, which 'had been of infinite service to him in 'the course of this expedition. Hav- 'ing remained five weeks at Venice, he 'was preparing to set out for Rome 'with some English gentlemen whom 'he had met by accident, when he was 'all of a sudden obliged to change his 'resolution by some disagreeable letters 'which he received from London. He 'had, from his first departure, corre- 'sponded with his generous, though 'inconstant mistress, with a religious 'exactness and punctuality; nor was 'she, for some time, less observant of 'the agreement they had made. Ne- 'vertheless, she by degrees became so 'negligent and cold in her expression, 'and so slack in her correspondence, 'that he could not help observing and 'upbraiding her with such indifference; 'and her endeavours to palliate it were 'supported by pretexts so frivolous, as 'to be easily seen through by a lover of 'very little discernment.

'While he tortured himself with 'conjectures about the cause of this 'unexpected change, he received such 'intelligence from England, as when 'joined with what he himself had per- 'ceived by her manner of writing, left 'him little or no room to doubt of her 'fickleness and inconstancy. Never- 'theless, as he knew by experience 'that informations of that kind are not 'to be entirely relied upon, he resolved 'to be more certainly apprized; and 'for that end departed immediately for 'London, by the way of Tirol, Bava- 'ria, Alsace, and Paris.

'On his arrival in England, he learn- 'ed with infinite concern, that his in- 'telligence had not been at all exagge- 'rated; and his sorow was inexpressible, 'to find a person, endowed with so 'many other noble and amiable qua- 'lities, seduced into an indiscretion, 'that of necessity ruined the whole plan 'which had been concerted between 'them for their mutual happiness. She 'made several attempts, by letters and 'interviews, to palliate her conduct, 'and soften him into a reconciliation; 'but his honour being concerned, he 'remained deaf to all her intreaties and 'proposals. Nevertheless, I have often 'heard him say, that he could not help 'loving her, and revering the memory 'of a person to whose generosity and 'goodness he owed his fortune, and 'one whose foibles were overbalanced 'by a thousand good qualities. He often 'insisted on making restitution; but far 'from complying with that proposal, 'she afterwards often endeavoured to 'lay him under yet greater obligations 'of the same kind, and importuned 'him, with the warmest solicitations, 'to renew their former correspondence, 'which he as often declined.

'M—— took this instance of the 'inconstancy of the sex so much to 'heart, that he had almost resolved for 'the future to keep clear of all engage- 'ments for life, and returned to Paris 'in order to dissipate his anxiety, where 'he hired an apartment in one of the 'academies, in the exercises whereof 'he took singular delight. During his 'residence at this place, he had the 'good fortune to ingratiate himself 'with a great general, a descendant of 'one of the most ancient and illustrious 'families in France; having attracted 'his notice by some remarks he had 'written on Folard's Polibius, which 'were accidentally shewn to that great 'man by one of his aids du camp, who 'was a particular friend of M——. 'The favour he had thus acquired, 'was strengthened by his assiduities and 'attention. Upon his return to Lon- 'don, he sent some of Handel's new- 'est compositions to the prince, who 'was particularly fond of that gentle- 'man's productions; together with 'Clark's edition of Cæsar; and in 'the spring of the same year, before 'the French army took the field, he 'was honoured with a most oblig- 'ing letter from the prince, inviting 'him to come over, if he wanted to 'see the operations of the campaign, 'and desiring he would give himself no 'trouble about his equipage.

'M—— having still some remains of

'a military disposition, and conceiving 'this to be a more favourable opportu- 'nity than any he should ever meet with 'again, readily embraced the offer, and 'sacrificed the soft delights of love, which 'at that time he enjoyed without con- 'troul, to an eager, laborious, and dan- 'gerous curiosity. In that and the fol- 'lowing campaign, during which he 'was present at the siege of Philipsburg, 'and several other actions, he enlarged 'his acquaintance among the French 'officers, especially those of the graver 'sort, who had a taste for books and 'literature; and the friendship and in- 'terest of those gentlemen were after- 'wards of singular service to him, 'though in an affair altogether foreign 'from their profession.

'He had all along made diligent enqui- 'ry into the trade and manufactures of 'the countries through which he had oc- 'casion to travel, more particularly those 'of Holland, England, and France; 'and as he was well acquainted with 'the revenue and farms of this last 'kingdom, he saw with concern the 'great disadvantages under which our 'tobacco trade (the most considerable 'branch of our commerce with that 'people) was carried on; what incon- 'siderable returns were made to the 'planters, out of the low price given 'by the French company; and how 'much it was in the power of that 'company to reduce it still lower. 'M—— had formed a scheme to re- 'medy this evil, so far as it related to 'the national loss or gain, by not per- 'mitting the duty of one penny in the 'pound, old subsidy, to be drawn back 'on tobacco re-exported. He demon- 'strated to the ministry of that time, 'that so inconsiderable a duty could 'not in the least diminish the demand 'from abroad, which was the only cir- 'cumstance to be apprehended, and 'that the yearly produce of that reve- 'nue would amount to one hundred 'and twenty thousand pounds, with- 'out one shilling additional expence to 'the publick; but the ministry having 'the excise scheme then in contempla- 'tion, could think of no other till that 'should be tried; and that project hav- 'ing miscarried, he renewed his appli- 'cation, when they approved of his 'scheme in every particular, but disco- 'vered a surprizing backwardness to car- 'ry it into execution.

'His expectations in this quarter be- 'ing disappointed, he, by the interpo- 'sition of his friends, presented a plan 'to the French company, in which he 'set forth the advantages that would 'accrue to themselves from fixing the 'price, and securing that sort of tobac- 'co which best suited the taste of the 'publick and their manufacture: and 'finally proposed to furnish them with 'any quantity, at the price which they 'paid in the port of London.

'After some dispute, they agreed to 'his proposal, and contracted with him 'for fifteen thousand hogsheads a year, 'for which they obliged themselves to 'pay ready money, on it's arrival in any 'one or more convenient ports in the 'south or western coasts of Great Bri- 'tain that he should please to fix upon 'for that purpose. M—— no sooner 'obtained this contract, than he imme- 'diately set out for America, in order 'to put it in execution; and, by way 'of companion, carried with him a 'little French abbé, a man of hu- 'mour, wit, and learning, with whom 'he had been long acquainted, and 'for whom he had done many good 'offices.

'On his arrival in Virginia, which 'opportunely happened at a time when 'all the gentlemen were assembled in 'the capital of that province, he pub- 'lished a memorial, representing the dis- 'advantages under which their trade 'was carried on; the true method of 'redressing their own grievances in that 'respect; and proposing to contract with 'them for the yearly quantity of fifteen 'thousand hogsheads of such tobacco as 'was fit for the French market, at the 'price which he demonstrated to be con- 'siderably greater than that which they 'had formerly received.

'This remonstrance met with all the 'success and encouragement he could 'expect: the principal planters, seeing 'their own interest concerned, readily 'assented to the proposal, which, through 'their influence, was also relished by the 'rest; and the only difficulty that re- 'mained related to the security for pay- 'ment of the bills on the arrival of the 'tobacco in England, and to the time 'stipulated for the continuance of the 'contract.

'In order to remove these objections, 'Mr. M—— returned to Europe, and 'found the French company of farmers

'disposed

'disposed to agree to every thing he desired for facilitating the execution of the contract, and perfectly well pleased with the sample which he had already sent; but his good friend the abbé, (whom he had left behind him in America) by an unparalleled piece of treachery, found means to overturn the whole project. He secretly wrote a memorial to the company, importing, that he found by experience M—— could afford to furnish them at a much lower price than that which they had agreed to give; and that, by being in possession of the contract for five years, as was intended according to the proposal, he would have the company so much in his power, that they must afterwards submit to any price he should please to impose; and that if they thought him worthy of such a trust, he would undertake to furnish them at an easier rate, in conjunction with some of the leading men in Virginia and Maryland, with whom he said he had already concerted measures for that purpose.

'The company were so much alarmed at these insinuations, that they declined complying with Mr. M——'s demands until the abbé's return; and though they afterwards used all their endeavours to persuade him to be concerned with that little traitor in his undertaking (by which he might still have been a very considerable gainer) he resisted all their solicitations, and plainly told them in the abbé's presence, that he would never prostitute his own principles so far, as to enter into engagements of any kind with a person of his character, much less in a scheme that had a manifest tendency to lower the market-price of tobacco in England.

'Thus ended a project the most extensive, simple, and easy, and (as appeared by the trial made) the best calculated to raise an immense fortune, of any that was ever undertaken or planned by a private person; a project, in the execution of which M—— had the good of the publick, and the glory of putting in a flourishing condition that valuable branch of our trade, (which gives employment to two great provinces, and above two hundred sail of ships) much more at heart than his own private interest. It was reasonable to expect, that a man whose debts 'M—— had paid more than once, whom he had obliged in many other respects, and whom he had carried with him at a very considerable expence on this expedition, merely with a view of bettering his fortune, would have acted with common honesty, if not with gratitude; but such was the depravity of this little monster's heart, that on his death-bed he left a considerable fortune to mere strangers, with whom he had little or no connection, without the least thought of refunding the money advanced for him by M——, in order to prevent his rotting in a gaol.

'When M—— had once obtained a command of money, he, by his knowledge in several branches of trade, as well as by the assistance of some intelligent friends at Paris and London, found means to employ it to very good purpose; and had he been a man of that selfish disposition, which too much prevails in the world, he might have been at this day master of a very ample fortune: but his ear was never deaf to the voice of distress, nor his beneficent heart shut against the calamities of his fellow-creatures. He was even ingenious in contriving the most delicate methods of relieving modest indigence, and, by his industrious benevolence, often anticipated the requests of misery.

'I could relate a number of examples to illustrate my assertions, in some of which you would perceive the most disinterested generosity; but such a detail would trespass too much upon your time, and I do not pretend to dwell upon every minute circumstance of his conduct. Let it suffice to say, that upon the declaration of war with Spain, he gave up all his commercial schemes, and called in his money from all quarters, with a view of sitting down for the rest of his life contented with what he had got, and restraining his liberalities to what he could spare from his yearly income. This was a very prudential resolution, could he have kept it; but, upon the breaking out of the war, he could not without concern see many gentlemen of merit, who had been recommended to him, disappointed of commissions, merely for want of money to satisfy the expectations of the commission-brokers of that time; and therefore

'launched out considerable sums for 'them on their bare notes, great part 'whereof was lost by the death of some 'in the unfortunate expedition to the 'West Indies.

'He at length, after many other actions of the like nature, from motives 'of pure humanity, love of justice, and 'abhorrence of oppression, embarked in 'a cause, every way the most important that ever came under the discussion of the courts of law in these kingdoms; whether it be considered in relation to the extraordinary nature of 'the case, or the immense property of 'no less than fifty thousand pounds a 'year, and three peerages, that depended 'upon it.

'In the year 1740, the brave admiral who at that time commanded his 'majesty's fleet in the West Indies, 'among the other transactions of his 'squadron transmitted to the Duke of 'Newcastle, mentioned a young man, 'who though in the capacity of a common sailor on board one of the ships 'under his command, laid claim to the 'estate and titles of the Earl of A——. 'These pretensions were no sooner communicated in the publick papers, than 'they became the subject of conversation in all companies; and the person whom they chiefly affected, being 'alarmed at the appearance of a competitor, though at such distance, began to put himself in motion, and take 'all the precautions which he thought 'necessary to defeat the endeavour of 'the young upstart. Indeed the early 'intelligence he received of Mr. A—y's 'making himself known in the West 'Indies, furnished him with numberless advantages over that unhappy 'young gentleman; for being in possession of a plentiful fortune, and lord 'of many manors in the neighbourhood 'of the very place where the claimant 'was born, he knew all the witnesses 'who could give the most material evidence of his legitimacy; and, if his 'probity did not restrain him, had, by 'his power and influence, sufficient 'opportunity and means of applying 'to the passions and interests of the 'witnesses, to silence many, and gain 'over others to his side; while his competitor, by an absence of fifteen or sixteen years from his native country, 'the want of education and friends, 'together with his present helpless situation, was rendered absolutely incapable of taking any step for his own 'advantage. And although his worthy 'uncle's conspicuous virtue and religious regard for justice and truth 'might possibly be an unconquerable restraint to his taking any undue advantages; yet the consciences of that 'huge army of emissaries he kept in pay, 'were not altogether so very tender and 'scrupulous. This much, however, 'may be said, without derogation from, 'or impeachment of the noble earl's 'nice virtue and honour, that he took 'care to compromise all differences 'with the other branches of the family, 'whose interests were, in this affair, 'connected with his own, by sharing 'the estate with them, and also retained 'most of the eminent council within 'the bar of both kingdoms against this 'formidable bastard, before any suit 'was instituted by him.

'While he was thus entrenching 'himself against the attack of a poor 'forlorn youth, at the distance of fifteen 'hundred leagues, continually exposed 'to the dangers of the sea, the war, and 'an unhealthy climate, Mr. M——, 'in the common course of conversation, 'chanced to ask some questions relating 'to this romantick pretender of one 'H——, who was at that time the present Lord A——y's chief agent. This 'man, when pressed, could not help 'owning the late Lord A——m actually left a son, who had been spirited 'away into America soon after his father's death; but said he did not 'know whether this was the same person.

'This information could not fail to 'make an impression on the humanity 'of Mr. M——, who being acquainted with the genius of the wicked party 'who had possessed themselves of this 'unhappy young man's estate and honours, expressed no small anxiety and 'apprehension lest they should take him 'off by some means or other; and, even 'then, seemed disposed to contribute 'towards the support of the friendless 'orphan, and to enquire more circumstantially into the nature of his claim. 'In the mean time, his occasions called 'him to France; and during his absence, Mr. A——y arrived in London, in the month of October 1741.'

Here the clergyman was interrupted by Peregrine, who said there was some-

thing

thing ſo extraordinary, not to call it improbable, in the account he had heard of the young gentleman's being ſent into exile, that he would look upon himſelf as infinitely obliged to the doctor, if he would favour him with a true repreſentation of that tranſaction, as well as of the manner in which he arrived and was known at the iſland of Jamaica.

The parſon, in compliance with our hero's requeſt, taking up the ſtory from the beginning, 'Mr. A——y,' ſaid he, 'is ſon of Arthur late Lord Baron 'of A——m, by his wife Mary Sh—d, 'natural daughter to John Duke of 'B—— and N——by, whom he pub'lickly married on the 21ſt day of July '1706, contrary to the inclination of 'his mother and all his other relations, 'particularly of Arthur late Earl of 'A——y, who bore an implacable en'mity to the duke her father, and for 'that reaſon did all that lay in his 'power to traverſe the marriage: but 'finding his endeavours ineffectual, he 'was ſo much offended, that he would 'never be perfectly reconciled to Lord 'A——m, though he was his preſumptive heir. After their nuptials, they 'cohabited together in England for the 'ſpace of two or three years; during 'which ſhe miſcarried more than once; 'and he being a man of levity, and 'an extravagant diſpoſition, not only 'ſquandered away all that he had re'ceived of his wife's fortune, but alſo 'contracted many conſiderable debts, 'which obliged him to make a precipitate retreat into Ireland, leaving his 'lady behind him in the houſe with his 'mother and ſiſter; who, having alſo 'been averſe to the match, had always 'looked upon her with eyes of diſguſt.

'It was not likely that harmony 'ſhould long ſubſiſt in this family, 'eſpecially as Lady A——m was a wo'man of a lofty ſpirit, who could not 'tamely bear inſults and ill-uſage from 'perſons who, ſhe had reaſon to be'lieve, were her enemies at heart. Ac'cordingly a miſunderſtanding ſoon 'happened among them, which was fo'mented by the malice of one of her 'ſiſters-in-law: divers ſcandalous re'ports of her miſconduct, to which the 'empty pretenſions of a vain, wretched 'coxcomb, (who was made uſe of as an 'infamous tool for that purpoſe) gave 'a colourable pretext, were trumped up, 'and tranſmitted, with many falſe and 'aggravating circumſtances, to her huſ'band in Ireland, who being a giddy, 'unthinking man, was ſo much in'cenſed at theſe inſinuations, that, in 'the firſt tranſports of his paſſion, he 'ſent to his mother a power of attorney, 'that ſhe might ſue for a divorce in his 'behalf. A libel was thereupon exhi'bited, containing many ſcandalous al'legations, void of any real founda'tion in truth; but being unſupported 'by any manner of proof, it was at 'length diſmiſſed with coſts, after it 'had depended upwards of two years.

'Lord A——m finding himſelf abuſed 'by the miſrepreſentations of his mother 'and ſiſter, diſcovered an inclination 'to be reconciled to his lady: in con'ſequence of which, ſhe was ſent over 'to Dublin by her father, to the care 'of a gentleman in that city; in whoſe 'houſe ſhe was received by her huſband, 'with all the demonſtrations of love 'and eſteem. From thence he conduct'ed her to his lodgings, and then to his 'country-houſe, where ſhe had the miſ'fortune to ſuffer a miſcarriage, through 'fear and reſentment of my lord's be'haviour, which was often brutal and 'indecent. From the country they re'moved to Dublin about the latter end 'of July, or beginning of Auguſt '1714, where they had not long con'tinued, when her ladyſhip was known 'to be again with child.

'Lord A——m and his iſſue being 'next in remainder to the honours and 'eſtate of Arthur Earl of A——a, was 'extremely ſolicitous to have a ſon; 'and, warned by the frequent miſcar'riages of his lady, reſolved to curb the 'natural impatience and ruſticity of his 'diſpoſition, that ſhe might not, as 'formerly, ſuffer by his outrageous 'conduct. He accordingly cheriſhed 'her with uncommon tenderneſs and 'care; and her pregnancy being pretty 'far advanced, conducted her to his 'country-ſeat, where ſhe was delivered 'of Mr. A——y, about the latter end 'of April or beginning of May; for 'none of the witneſſes have been able, 'at this diſtance, with abſolute certain'ty to fix the preciſe time of his birth; 'and there was no regiſter kept in the 'pariſh: as an additional misfortune, 'no gentleman of faſhion lived in that 'pariſh; nor did thoſe who lived at any

'con-

'considerable distance care to cultivate 'an acquaintance with a man of Lord 'A——m's strange conduct.

'Be that as it will, the occasion was 'celebrated by his lordship's tenants 'and dependants upon the spot, and in 'the neighbouring town of New R—s, 'by bonfires, illuminations, and other 'rejoicings; which have made such an 'impression upon the minds of the peo-'ple, that in the place where they hap-'pened, and the contiguous parishes, 'several hundred persons have already 'declared their knowledge and remem-'brance of this event, in spite of the 'great power of the claimant's adversary 'in that quarter, and the great pains 'and indirect methods taken by his 'numberless agents and emissaries, as 'well as by those who are interested with 'him in the event of the suit, to cor-'rupt and suppress the evidence.

'Lord A——m, after the birth of 'his son, who was sent to nurse in the 'neighbourhood, according to the cus-'tom of the country, (where people of 'the highest distinction put their chil-'dren out to nurse into farm-houses and 'cabbins) lived in harmony with his 'lady for the space of two years: but 'having by his folly and extravagance 'reduced himself to great difficulties, 'he demanded the remainder of her 'fortune from her father the Duke of 'B——, who absolutely refused to part 'with a shilling until a proper settle-'ment should be made on his daughter, 'which by that time he had put out of 'his own power to make by his folly 'and extravagance.

'As her ladyship, by her endeavours 'to reform the œconomy of her house, 'had incurred the displeasure of some 'idle, profligate fellows, who had fas-'tened themselves upon her husband, 'and helped to consume his substance, 'they seized this opportunity of the 'duke's refusal; and in order to be re-'venged upon the innocent lady, per-'suaded Lord A——m, that the only 'means of extracting money from his 'grace would be to turn her away, 'on pretence of infidelity to his bed, 'for which, they hinted, there was but 'too much foundation. At their sug-'gestions, a most infamous plan was 'projected; in the execution of which 'one P——, a poor, unbred, simple, 'country booby, whom they had de-'coyed into a snare, lost one of his 'ears, and the injured lady retired that 'same day to New R—s, where she 'continued several years. She did not, 'however, leave the house, without 'struggling hard to carry her child 'along with her; but far from enjoy-'ing such indulgence, strict orders were 'given, that the boy should not for the 'future be brought within her sight. 'This base, inhuman treatment, instead 'of answering the end proposed, pro-'duced such a contrary effect, that the 'Duke of B——, by a codicil to his 'will, in which he reflects upon Lord 'A——m's evil temper, directed his 'executors to pay to his daughter an 'annuity of one hundred pounds, while 'her lord and she should continue to 'live separate; and this allowance was 'to cease on Lord A——m's death.

'While she remained in this solitary 'situation, the child was universally 'known and received as the legitimate 'son and heir of her lord, whose af-'fection for the boy was so conspi-'cuous, that in the midst of his own 'necessities, he never failed to maintain 'him in the dress and equipage of a 'young nobleman. In the course of 'his infancy, his father having often 'changed his place of residence, the 'child was put under the instructions of 'a great many different schoolmasters, 'so that he was perfectly well known 'in a great many different parts of the 'kingdom; and his mother seized all 'opportunities (which were but rare, on 'account of his father's orders to the 'contrary) of seeing and giving him 'proofs of her maternal tenderness, un-'til she set out for England, after hav-'ing been long in a declining state of 'health, by a paralytical disorder; upon 'the consequence of which, such de-'pendence was placed by her incon-'siderate husband, who was by this 'time reduced to extreme poverty, that 'he actually married a woman whom he 'had long kept as a mistress. This 'creature no sooner understood that 'Lady A——m was departed from 'Ireland, than she openly avowed her 'marriage, and went about publickly 'with Lord A——m, visiting his ac-'quaintances in the character of his 'wife.

'From this æra may be dated the 'beginning of Mr. A——y's misfor-'tunes: this artful woman, who had 'formerly treated the child with an ap-

'pearance

'pearance of fondneſs, in order to ingra-
'tiate herſelf with the father, now look-
'ing upon herſelf as ſufficiently eſta-
'bliſhed in the family, thought it was
'high time to alter her behaviour with
'regard to the unfortunate boy; and
'accordingly, for obvious reaſons, em-
'ployed a thouſand artifices to alienate
'the heart of the weak father from his
'unhappy offspring: yet, notwithſtand-
'ing all her inſinuations, nature ſtill
'maintained her influence in his heart;
'and though ſhe often found means to
'irritate him by artful and malicious
'accuſations, his reſentment never ex-
'tended farther than fatherly correc-
'tion. She would have found it im-
'poſſible to accompliſh his ruin, had
'not her efforts been reinforced by a
'new auxiliary, who was no other than
'his uncle, the preſent uſurper of his
'title and eſtate; yet even this confe-
'deracy was over-awed, in ſome mea-
'ſure, by the fear of alarming the un-
'fortunate mother, until her diſtemper
'increaſed to a moſt deplorable degree
'of the dead palſy, and the death of
'her father had reduced her to a moſt
'forlorn and abject ſtate of diſtreſs.
'Then they ventured upon the execu-
'tion of their projects; and (though
'their aims were widely different) con-
'curred in their endeavours to remove
'the hapleſs boy, as the common ob-
'ſtacle to both.

'Lord A——m, who (as I have al-
'ready obſerved) was a man of weak
'intellects, and utterly void of any fix-
'ed principle of action, being by this
'time reduced to ſuch a pitch of miſery,
'that he was often obliged to pawn his
'wearing-apparel in order to procure
'the common neceſſaries of life; and
'having no other fund remaining, with
'which he could relieve his preſent ne-
'ceſſities, except a ſale of the reverſion
'of the A——a eſtate, to which the
'nonage of his ſon was an effectual
'bar, he was adviſed by his virtuous
'brother, and the reſt of his counſel-
'lors, to ſurmount this difficulty, by
'ſecreting his ſon, and ſpreading a re-
'port of his death. This honeſt pro-
'ject he the more readily embraced, be-
'cauſe he knew that no act of his could
'fruſtrate the child's ſucceſſion. Ac-
'cordingly, the boy was removed from
'the ſchool at which he was then board-
'ed, to the houſe of one K—gh, an
'agent and accomplice of the preſent
'Earl of A——a, where he was kept
'for ſeveral months cloſely confined;
'and in the mean time it was induſ-
'triouſly reported that he was dead.

'This previous meaſure being taken,
'Lord A——m publiſhed advertiſe-
'ments in the Gazettes, offering rever-
'ſions of the A——a eſtate to ſale; and
'emiſſaries of various kinds were em-
'ployed, to inveigle ſuch as were inno-
'cent of the nature of the ſettlement of
'theſe eſtates, or ſtrangers to the affairs
'of his family. Some people, impoſed
'upon by the report of the child's death,
'were drawn in to purchaſe, thinking
'themſelves ſafe in the concurrence of
'his lordſhip's brother, upon preſump-
'tion that he was next in remainder to
'the ſucceſſion; others, tempted by the
'ſmallneſs of the price, (which rarely
'exceeded half a year's purchaſe, as
'appears by many deeds) though they
'doubted the truth of the boy's be-
'ing dead, ran ſmall riſks on the
'contingency of his dying before he
'ſhould be of age, or in hope of his
'being prevailed upon to confirm the
'grants of his father; and many more
'were treating with him on the ſame
'notions, when their tranſactions were
'ſuddenly interrupted, and the ſcheme
'of raiſing more money for the pre-
'ſent defeated by the unexpected ap-
'pearance of the boy, who being na-
'turally ſprightly and impatient of re-
'ſtraint, had found means to break
'from his confinement, and wandered
'up and down the ſtreets of Dublin,
'avoiding his father's houſe, and chuſ-
'ing to encounter all ſorts of diſtreſs,
'rather than ſubject himſelf again to
'the cruelty and malice of the woman
'who ſupplied his mother's place. Thus
'debarred his father's protection, and
'deſtitute of any fixed habitation, he
'herded with all the looſe, idle, and
'diſorderly youths in Dublin, ſkulking
'chiefly about the college, ſeveral mem-
'bers and ſtudents of which taking
'pity on his misfortunes, ſupplied him
'at different times with cloaths and
'money. In this unſettled and un-
'comfortable way of life did he re-
'main from the year 1725 to the latter
'end of November 1727, at which
'time his father died ſo miſerably poor,
'that he was actually buried at the
'publick expence.

'This unfortunate nobleman was no
'ſooner dead, than his brother Richard,

'now

'now Earl of A——a, taking advantage of the nonage and helpleſs ſituation of his nephew, ſeized upon all the papers of the defunct, and afterwards uſurped the title of Lord A——m, to the ſurprize of the ſervants, and others who were acquainted with the affairs of the family. This uſurpation, bold as it was, produced no other effect than that of his being inſulted by the populace as he went through the ſtreets, and the refuſal of the king at arms to enrol the certificate of his brother's having died without iſſue. The firſt of theſe inconveniencies he bore without any ſenſe of ſhame, though not without repining, conſcious that it would gradually vaniſh with the novelty of his invaſion; and as to the laſt, he conquered it by means well known and obvious.

'Nor will it ſeem ſtrange, that he ſhould thus invade the rights of an orphan with impunity, if people will conſider, that the late Lord A——m had not only ſquandered away his fortune with the moſt ridiculous extravagance, but alſo aſſociated himſelf with low company, ſo that he was little known, and leſs regarded, by perſons of any rank and figure in life; and his child, of conſequence, debarred of the advantages which might have accrued from valuable connections. And though it was univerſally known, that Lady A——m had a ſon in Ireland, ſuch was the obſcurity in which the father had lived during the laſt years of his life, that few of the nobility could be ſuppoſed to be acquainted with the particular circumſtances of a tranſaction in which they had no concern, and which had happened at the diſtance of twelve years before the date of this uſurpation. Moreover, as their firſt information was no other than common fame, the publick clamour occaſioned by the ſeparation might inſpire ſuch as were ſtrangers to the family affairs with a miſtaken notion of the child's having been born about or after the time of that event. The hurry and buſtle occaſioned by the arrival of the lord lieutenant about this period, the reports induſtriouſly propagated of the claimant's death, the obſcurity and concealment in which the boy was obliged to live in order to elude the wicked attempts of his uncle, might alſo contribute to his peaceable enjoyment of an empty title: and, laſtly, Lord Chancellor W——m, whoſe immediate province it was to iſſue writs for parliament, was an utter ſtranger in Ireland, unacquainted with the deſcents of families, and conſequently did not examine farther than the certificate enrolled in the books of the king at arms. Over and above theſe circumſtances, which naturally account for the ſucceſs of the impoſture, it may be obſerved, that the hapleſs youth had not one relation alive, on the ſide of his father, whoſe intereſt it was not to forward or connive at his deſtruction; that his grandfather the Duke of B—— was dead; and that his mother was then in England, in a forlorn, deſtitute, dying condition, ſecreted from the world, and even from her own relations, by her woman Mary H——, who had a particular intereſt to ſecrete her, and altogether dependant upon a miſerable and precarious allowance from the Ducheſs of B——, to whoſe caprice ſhe was moreover a moſt wretched ſlave.

'Notwithſtanding theſe concurring circumſtances in favour of the uſurper, he did not think himſelf ſecure while the orphan had any chance of finding a friend who would undertake his cauſe; and therefore laid a plan for his being kidnapped, and ſent to America as a ſlave. His coadjutor in this humane ſcheme, was a perſon who carried on the trade of tranſporting ſervants to our plantations, and was deeply intereſted on this occaſion, having for a mere trifle purchaſed of the late Lord A——m the reverſion of a conſiderable part of the A——a eſtate; which ſhameful bargain was confirmed by the brother, but could never take place unleſs the boy could be effectually removed.

'Every thing being ſettled with this auxiliary, ſeveral ruffians were employed in ſearch of the unhappy victim; and the firſt attempt that was made upon him, in which his uncle perſonally aſſiſted, happening near one of the great markets of the city of Dublin, an honeſt butcher, with the aſſiſtance of his neighbours, reſcued him by force from their cruel hands. This, however, was but a ſhort reſpite; for

'(though

'(though warned by this adventure, the 'boy ſeldom crept out of his lurking-'places without the moſt cautious cir-'cumſpection) he was, in March 1728, 'diſcovered by the diligence of his per-'ſecutors, and forcibly dragged on 'board of a ſhip bound for Newcaſtle 'on Delaware river in America, where 'he was ſold as a ſlave, and kept to 'hard labour, much above his age or 'ſtrength, for the ſpace of thirteen years, 'during which he was transferred from 'one perſon to another.

'While he remained in this ſervile 'ſituation, he often mentioned, to thoſe 'in whom he thought ſuch confidence 'might be placed, the circumſtances of 'his birth and title, together with the 'manner of his being exiled from his 'native country; although in this par-'ticular he neglected a caution which 'he had received in his paſſage, im-'porting that ſuch a diſcovery would 'coſt him his life. Meanwhile the 'uſurper quietly enjoyed his right: and 'to thoſe who queſtioned him about his 'brother's ſon, conſtantly replied, that 'the boy had been dead for ſeveral years. 'And Arthur Earl of A——a dying 'in April 1737, he, upon pretence of 'being next heir, ſucceeded to the ho-'nours and eſtate of that nobleman.

'The term of the nephew's bondage, 'which had been lengthened out be-'yond the uſual time, on account of 'his repeated attempts to eſcape, being 'expired in the year 1740, he hired 'himſelf as a common ſailor in a trad-'ing veſſel bound to Jamaica; and 'there, being entered on board of one 'of his majeſty's ſhips under the com-'mand of Admiral Vernon, openly de-'clared his parentage and pretenſions. 'This extraordinary claim, which made 'a great noiſe in the fleet, reaching the 'ears of one Lieutenant S——n, near-'ly related to the uſurper's Iriſh wife, 'he believed the young gentleman to be 'an impoſtor; and thinking it was in-'cumbent on him to diſcover the cheat, 'he went on board the ſhip to which 'the claimant belonged, and having 'heard the account which he gave of 'himſelf, was, notwithſtanding his pre-'poſſeſſions, convinced of the truth of 'what he alledged. On his return to 'his own ſhip, he chanced to mention 'this extraordinary affair upon the quar-'ter-deck, in the hearing of Mr. B—n, 'one of the midſhipmen, who had for-'merly been at ſchool with Mr. A——y. 'This young gentleman not only told 'the lieutenant that he had been ſchool-'fellow with Lord A——m's ſon, but 'alſo declared that he ſhould know him 'again, if not greatly altered, as he ſtill 'retained a perfect idea of his counte-'nance.

'Upon this intimation, the lieutenant 'propoſed that the experiment ſhould be 'tried; and went with the midſhip-'man on board the ſhip that the claim-'ant was in, for that purpoſe. After 'all the ſailors had aſſembled upon 'deck, Mr. B——n, caſting his eyes 'around, immediately diſtinguiſhed Mr. 'A——y in the crowd, and laying his 'hand on his ſhoulder, "This is the "man!" ſaid he; affirming at the ſame 'time, that while he continued at ſchool 'with him, the claimant was reputed 'and reſpected as Lord A——m's ſon 'and heir, and maintained in all re-'ſpects ſuitable to the dignity of his 'rank. Nay, he was, in like manner, 'recognized by ſeveral other perſons 'in the fleet, who had known him in 'his infancy.

'Theſe things being reported to the 'admiral, he generouſly ordered him 'to be ſupplied with neceſſaries, and 'treated like a gentleman; and, in his 'next diſpatches, tranſmitted an ac-'count of the affair to the Duke of 'Newcaſtle, among the other tranſ-'actions of the fleet.

'In September or October 1741, Mr. 'A——y arrived in London; and the 'firſt perſon to whom he applied for 'advice and aſſiſtance was a man of the 'law, nearly related to the families of 'A——a and A——m, and well ac-'quainted with the particular affairs of 'each; who, far from treating him as 'a baſtard and impoſtor, received him 'with civility and ſeeming kindneſs, 'aſked him to eat, preſented him with 'a piece of money, and excuſing him-'ſelf from meddling in the affair, ad-'viſed him to go to Ireland, as the moſt 'proper place for commencing a ſuit 'for the recovery of his right.

'Before the young gentleman had an 'opportunity, or indeed any inclina-'tion to comply with this advice, he 'was accidentally met in the ſtreet by 'that ſame H——n, who, as I have 'mentioned, gave Mr. M——r the firſt 'inſight into the affair; this man im-'mediately knew the claimant, having

'been formerly an agent for his father, 'and afterwards a creature of his uncle's, with whom he was, not without reason, suspected to be concerned 'in kidnapping and transporting his 'nephew. Be that as it will, his connections with the usurper were now 'broke off by a quarrel, in consequence 'of which he had thrown up his agency; and he invited the hapless stranger to his house, with a view of making all possible advantage of such a 'guest.

'There he had not long remained, 'when his treacherous landlord, tampering with his inexperience, effected a 'marriage between him and the daughter of one of his own friends, who 'lodged in his house at the same time: 'but afterwards, seeing no person of 'consequence willing to espouse his 'cause, he looked upon him as an incumbrance, and wanted to rid his 'hands of him accordingly. He remembered that Mr. M——r had expressed himself with all the humanity 'of apprehension in favour of the unfortunate young nobleman, before his 'arrival in England; and being well 'acquainted with the generosity of his disposition, he no sooner understood 'that he was returned from France, 'than he waited upon him with an account of Mr. A——y's being safely 'arrived. Mr. M——r was sincerely 'rejoiced to find that a person who had 'been so cruelly injured, and undergone so long and continued a scene of 'distress, was restored to a country 'where he was sure of obtaining justice, 'and where every good man (as he 'imagined) would make the cause his 'own: and, being informed that the 'youth was in want of necessaries, he 'gave twenty guineas to H——n for 'his use, and promised to do him all 'the service in his power; but had no 'intention to take upon himself the 'whole weight of such an important 'affair, or indeed to appear in the cause, 'until he should be fully and thoroughly satisfied that the claimant's pretensions were well founded.

'In the mean time, H——n insinuating that the young gentleman was 'not safe in his present lodging from the 'machinations of his enemies, M——r 'accommodated him with an apartment 'in his own house; where he was at 'great pains to remedy the defect in his 'education, by rendering him fit to 'appear as a gentleman in the world. 'Having received from him all the intelligence he could give, relating to 'his own affair, he laid the case before 'counsel, and dispatched a person to 'Ireland, to make farther enquiries 'upon the same subject; who, on his 'first arrival in that kingdom, found 'the claimant's birth was as publickly known as any circumstance of 'that kind could possibly be at so great 'a distance of time.

'The usurper and his friends gave 'all the interruption in their power to 'any researches concerning that affair; 'and had recourse to every art and expedient that could be invented, to prevent it's being brought to a legal discussion: privilege bills in chancery, 'orders of court surreptitiously and illegally obtained, and every other invention was made use of to bar and 'prevent a fair and honest trial by a 'jury. The usurper himself and his 'agents, at the same time that they 'formed divers conspiracies against his 'life, in vain endeavoured to detach 'Mr. M——r from the orphan's cause 'by innumerable artifices, insinuating, 'cajoling, and misrepresenting, with surprizing dexterity and perseverance.

'His protector, far from being satisfied with their reasons, was not 'only deaf to their remonstrances, but, believing him in danger from their 'repeated efforts, had him privately 'conveyed into the country; where an 'unhappy accident (which he hath ever 'since sincerely regretted) furnished his 'adversary with a colourable pretext to 'cut him off in the beginning of his 'career.

'A man happening to lose his life 'by the accidental discharge of a piece 'that chanced to be in the young gentleman's hands, the account of this 'misfortune no sooner reached the ears 'of his uncle, than he expressed the 'most immoderate joy at having found 'so good a handle for destroying him 'under colour of law. He immediately 'constituted himself prosecutor; set his 'emissaries at work to secure a coroner's inquest suited to his cruel purposes; set out for the place in person, 'to take care that the prisoner should 'not escape; insulted him in gaol in the 'most inhuman manner; employed a 'whole army of attornies and agents

'to

'to ſpirit up and carry on a moſt virulent proſecution; practiſed all the unfair methods that could be invented, in order that the unhappy gentleman ſhould be tranſported to Newgate, from the healthy priſon to which he was at firſt committed; endeavoured to inveigle him into deſtructive confeſſions; and not to mention other more infamous arts employed in the affair of evidence, attempted to ſurprize him upon his trial in the abſence of his witneſſes and counſel, contrary to a previous agreement with the proſecutor's own attorney: nay, he even appeared in perſon upon the bench at the trial, in order to intimidate the evidence, and brow-beat the unfortunate priſoner at the bar; and expended above a thouſand pounds in that proſecution. In ſpite of all his wicked efforts, however, which were defeated by the ſpirit and indefatigable induſtry of Mr. M——r, the young gentleman was honourably acquitted, to the evident ſatisfaction of all the impartial; the misfortune that gave a handle for that unnatural proſecution appearing to a demonſtration to have been a mere accident.

'In a few months his protector, who had now openly eſpouſed his cauſe, (taking with him two gentlemen to witneſs his tranſactions) conducted him to his native country, with a view to be better informed of the ſtrength of his pretenſions, than he could be by the intelligences he had hitherto received, or by the claimant's own dark and almoſt obliterated remembrance of the facts which were eſſential to be known. Upon their arrival in Dublin, application was made to thoſe perſons whom Mr. A——y had named as his ſchoolmaſters and companions, together with the ſervants and neighbours of his father. Theſe, though examined ſeparately, without having the leaſt previous intimation of what the claimant had reported, agreed in their accounts with him, as well as with one another, and mentioned many other people as acquainted with the ſame facts, to whom Mr. M——r had recourſe, and ſtill met with the ſame unvaried information. By theſe means he made ſuch progreſs in his enquiries, that in leſs than two months no fewer than one hundred perſons from different quarters of the kingdom, either perſonally or by letters, communicated their knowledge of the claimant, in declarations conſonant with one another, as well as with the accounts he gave of himſelf. Several ſervants who had lived with his father, and been deceived with the ſtory of his death, ſo induſtriouſly propagated by his uncle, no ſooner heard of his being in Dublin, than they came from different parts of the country to ſee him; and though great pains were taken to deceive them, they nevertheleſs knew him at firſt ſight; ſome of them fell upon their knees to thank Heaven for his preſervation, embraced his legs, and ſhed tears of joy for his return.

'Although the conduct of his adverſary, particularly in the abovementioned proſecution, together with the evidence that already appeared, were ſufficient to convince all mankind of the truth of the claimant's pretenſions, Mr. M——r, in order to be farther ſatisfied, reſolved to ſee how he would be received upon the ſpot where he was born; juſtly concluding, that if he was really an impoſtor, the baſtard of a kitchen-wench, produced in a country entirely poſſeſſed by his enemy and his allies, he muſt be looked upon in that place with the utmoſt deteſtation and contempt.

'This his intention was no ſooner known to the adverſe party, than their agents and friends, from all quarters, repaired to that place with all poſſible diſpatch, and uſed all their influence with the people, in remonſtrances, threats, and all the other arts they could deviſe, not only to diſcountenance the claimant upon his arrival, but even to ſpirit up a mob to inſult him. Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, and the ſervile awe and ſubjection in which tenants are kept by their landlords in that part of the country, as ſoon as it was known that Mr. A——y approached the town, the inhabitants crouded out in great multitudes to receive and welcome him, and accompanied him into town with acclamations and other expreſſions of joy, inſomuch that the agents of his adverſary durſt not ſhew their faces. The ſovereign of the corporation, who was a particular creature and favourite of the uſurper, and whoſe all depended upon the iſſue of the cauſe, was

'so conscious of the stranger's right, 'and so much awed by the behaviour 'of the people, who knew that con- 'sciousness, that he did not think it 'safe, even to preserve the appearance 'of neutrality upon this occasion, but 'actually held the stirrup while Mr. 'A——y dismounted from his horse.

'This sense of conviction in the peo- 'ple manifested itself still more power- 'fully, when he returned to the same 'place in the year 1744, about which 'time Lord A——a being informed of 'his resolution, determined again to be 'before-hand with him, and set out in 'person with his agents and friends, 'some of whom were detached before 'him, to prepare for his reception, and 'induced the people to meet him in a 'body, and accompany him to town, 'with such expressions of welcome as 'they had before bestowed on his ne- 'phew; but in spite of all their art and 'interest, he was suffered to pass through 'the street in a mournful silence; and 'though several barrels of beer were 'produced, to court the favour of the 'populace, they had no other effect than 'that of drawing their ridicule upon the 'donor; whereas, when Mr. A——y, 'two days afterwards appeared, all the 'inhabitants, with garlands, streamers, 'musick, and other ensigns of joy, croud- 'ed out to meet him, and ushered him 'into town with such demonstrations of 'pleasure and good-will, that the noble 'peer found it convenient to hide him- 'self from the resentment of his own 'tenants, the effects of which he must 'have severely felt, had not he been 'screened by the timely remonstrances 'of Mr. M——r, and the other gentle- 'man who accompanied his competi- 'tor.

'Nor did his apprehension vanish 'with the transaction of this day; the 'town was again in uproar on the Sun- 'day following, when it was known 'that Mr. A——y intended to come 'thither from Dunmain to church: 'they went out to meet him as before, 'and conducted him to the church door 'with acclamations, which terrified his 'uncle to such a degree, that he fled 'with precipitation in a boat, and soon 'after entirely quitted the place.

'It would be almost an endless task 'to enumerate the particular steps that 'were taken by one side to promote, 'and by the other to delay the trial; 'the young gentleman's adversaries 'finding that they could not, by all the 'subterfuges and arts they had used, 'evade it, repeated attempts were made 'to assassinate him and his protector, 'and every obstruction thrown in the 'way of his cause which craft could in- 'vent, villainy execute, and undue in- 'fluence confirm. But all these difficulties were surmounted by the vigi- 'lance, constancy, courage, and saga- 'city of M——r; and at last the affair 'was brought to a very solemn trial at 'bar, which being continued, by several 'adjournments, from the eleventh to the 'twenty-fifth day of November, a ver- 'dict was found for the claimant by a 'jury of gentlemen, which, in point of 'reputation and property, cannot be 'easily paralleled in the annals of that 'or any other country; a jury that 'could by no means be suspected of pre- 'possessions in favour of Mr. A—y, '(to whose person they were absolute 'strangers) especially if we consider that 'a gentleman in their neighbourhood, 'who was nephew to the foreman, and 'nearly related to some of the rest of 'their number, forfeited a considerable 'estate by their decision.

'This verdict,' said the parson, 'gave 'the highest satisfaction to all impartial 'persons that were within reach of being 'duly informed of their proceedings, 'and of the different genius and con- 'duct of the parties engaged in the con- 'test; but more especially to such as 'were in court (as I was) at the trial, 'and had an opportunity of observing 'the characters and behaviour of the 'persons who appeared there to give 'evidence. To such it was very ap- 'parent, that all the witnesses produced 'there on the part of the uncle, were 'either his tenants, dependents, pot- 'companions, or persons some way or 'other interested in the issue of the suit, 'and remarkable for a low kind of cun- 'ning; that many of them were per- 'sons of profligate lives, who deserved 'no credit; that (independent of the 'levity of their characters) those of 'them who went under the denomina- 'tion of colonels (Colonel L——fts 'alone excepted, who had nothing to 'say, and was only brought there in 'order to give credit to that party) 'made so ridiculous a figure, and gave 'so absurd, contradictory, and incon- 'sistent an evidence, as no court or jury

'could

'could give the leaſt degree of credit 'to. On the other hand it was ob- 'ſerved, that the nephew and Mr. 'M——r, his chief manager, (being 'abſolute ſtrangers in that country, 'and unacquainted with the characters 'of the perſons they had to deal with) 'were obliged to lay before the court 'and jury ſuch evidence as came to their 'hand, ſome of whom plainly appeared 'to have been put upon them by their 'adverſaries, with a deſign to hurt. 'It was alſo manifeſt, that the witneſſes 'produced for Mr. A——y were ſuch 'as could have no manner of connec- 'tion with him, nor any dependance 'whatſoever upon him, to influence 'their evidence; for the far greateſt part 'of them had never ſeen him from his 'infancy till the trial began; and many 'of them (though poor and undignified 'with the title of colonels) were peo- 'ple of unblemiſhed character, of great 'ſimplicity, and ſuch as no man in his 'ſenſes would pitch upon to ſupport a 'bad cauſe. It is plain that the jury '(whoſe well-known honour, impar- 'tiality, and penetration, muſt be re- 'vered by all who are acquainted with 'them) were not under the leaſt dif- 'ficulty about their verdict; for they 'were not incloſed above half an hour 'when they returned with it. Theſe 'gentlemen could not help obſerving 'the great inequality of the parties en- 'gaged, the great advantages that the 'uncle had in every other reſpect (ex- 'cept the truth and juſtice of his caſe) 'over the nephew, by means of his vaſt 'poſſeſſions, and of his power and in- 'fluence all round the place of his birth; 'nor could the contraſt between the dif- 'ferent geniuſes of the two parties eſcape 'their obſervation. They could not but 'ſee and conclude, that a perſon who 'had confeſſedly tranſported and ſold 'his orphan nephew into ſlavery; who, 'on his return, had carried on ſo un- 'warrantable and cruel a proſecution to 'take away his life, under colour of 'law; and who had alſo given ſuch 'glaring proofs of his ſkill and dexte- 'rity in the management of witneſſes 'for that cruel purpoſe; was in like 'manner capable of exerting the ſame 'happy talent on this occaſion, when 'his all was at ſtake; more eſpecially, 'as he had ſo many others who were 'equally intereſted with himſelf, and 'whoſe abilities in that reſpect fell 'nothing ſhort of his own, to ſecond 'him in it. The gentlemen of the jury 'had alſo a near view of the manner in 'which the witneſſes delivered their teſ- 'timonies, and had from thence an op- 'portunity of obſerving many circum- 'ſtances and diſtinguiſhing characte- 'riſticks of truth and falſhood, from 'which a great deal could be gathered 'that could not be adequately conveyed 'by any printed account, how exact 'ſoever; conſequently they muſt have 'been much better judges of the evi- 'dence on which they founded their 'verdict, than any perſon who had not 'the ſame opportunity can poſſibly be.

'Theſe, Mr. Pickle, were my re- 'flections on what I had occaſion to ob- 'ſerve concerning that famous trial; 'and on my return to England two 'years after, I could not help pitying 'the ſelf ſufficiency of ſome people, 'who, at this diſtance, pretended to 'paſs their judgment on that verdict, 'with as great poſitiveneſs as if they 'had been in the ſecrets of the cauſe, 'or upon the jury who tried it; and that 'from no better authority than the de- 'clamations of Lord A——a's emiſſa- 'ries, and ſome falſified printed ac- 'counts, artfully cooked up on pur- 'poſe to miſlead and deceive.

'But to return from this digreſſion: 'Lord A——a, the defendant in that 'cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtrength 'and merits of his injured nephew's 'caſe, and that a verdict would go a- 'gainſt him, that he ordered a writ of 'error to be made out before the trial 'was ended; and the verdict was no 'ſooner given, than he immediately 'lodged it, though he well knew he 'had no manner of error to aſſign. 'This expedient was practiſed merely 'for vexation and delay, in order to 'keep Mr. A——y from the poſſeſ- 'ſion of the ſmall eſtate he had recover- 'ed by the verdict; that his ſlender 'funds being exhauſted, he might be 'deprived of other means to proſecute 'his right; and, by the moſt oppreſſive 'contrivances and ſcandalous chicanery, 'it has been kept up to this day, with- 'out his being able to aſſign the leaſt 'ſhadow of any error.

'Lord A——a was not the only an- 'tagoniſt that Mr. A——y had to deal 'with; all the different branches of the 'A——a family, who had been wor- 'rying one another at law ever ſince the

'death

'death of the late Earl of A——a, 'about the partition of his great eſtate, 'were now firmly united in an aſſociation againſt this unfortunate gentleman; mutual deeds were executed among them, by which many great 'lordſhips and eſtates were given up by 'the uncle to perſons who had no right 'to poſſeſs them, in order to engage them 'to ſide with him againſt his nephew, 'in withholding the unjuſt poſſeſſion of 'the remainder.

'Theſe confederates having held ſeveral conſultations againſt their common enemy, and finding that his cauſe 'gathered daily ſtrength ſince the trial, 'by the acceſſion of many witneſſes of 'figure and reputation who had not 'been head of before; and that the only 'chance they had to prevent the ſpeedy 'eſtabliſhment of his right, and their 'own deſtruction, was by ſtripping Mr. 'M——r of the little money that yet 'remained, and ſtopping all farther reſources whereby he might be enabled 'to proceed; they therefore came to a 'determined reſolution to carry that 'hopeful ſcheme into execution; and 'in purſuance thereof they have left no 'expedient or ſtratagem, how extraordinary or ſcandalous ſoever, unpractiſed, to diſtreſs Mr. A——y and that 'gentleman. For that end, all the oppreſſive arts, and dilatory, expenſive 'contrivances that the fertile inventſion of the loweſt pettifoggers of the 'law could poſſibly deviſe, have with 'great dexterity been played off againſt them in fruitleſs quibbling and 'malicious ſuits, entirely foreign to the 'merits of the cauſe. Not to mention 'numberleſs other acts of oppreſſion, 'the moſt extraordinary and unprecedented proceedings, by means whereof this ſham writ of error hath been 'kept on foot ever ſince November 1743, 'is to me,' ſaid the doctor, 'a moſt 'flagrant inſtance, not only of the prevalency of power and money, (when 'employed, as in the preſent caſe, againſt an unfortunate, helpleſs man, 'diſabled, as he is, of the means of 'aſcertaining his right) but of the badneſs of a cauſe, that hath recourſe to 'ſo many iniquitous expedients to ſupport it.

'In a word, the whole conduct of 'Lord A——a and his party, from the 'beginning to this time, hath been ſuch, 'as ſufficiently manifeſts that it could 'proceed from no other motives than a 'conſciouſneſs of Mr. A——y's right, 'and of their own illegal uſurpations, 'and from a terror of truſting the merits of their caſe to a fair diſcuſſion 'by the laws of their country; and that 'the intention and main drift of all their 'proceedings plainly tends to ſtifle and 'ſmother the merits of the caſe from the 'knowledge of the world, by oppreſſive arts and ingenious delays, rather 'than truſt it to the candid determination of an honeſt jury. What elſe 'could be the motives of kidnapping 'the claimant, and tranſporting him 'when an infant; of the various attempts made upon his life ſince his return; of the attempts to diveſt him of 'all aſſiſtance to aſcertain his right, by 'endeavouring ſo ſolicitouſly to prevail 'on Mr. M——r to abandon him in 'the beginning; of retaining an army 'of counſel, before any ſuit had been 'commenced; of the many ſiniſter attempts to prevent the trial at bar; of 'the various arts made uſe of to terrify 'any one from appearing as witneſs for 'the claimant, and to ſeduce thoſe who 'had appeared; of the ſhameleſs, unprecedented, low tricks, now practiſed 'to keep him out of the poſſeſſion of 'that eſtate for which he had obtained 'the verdict, thereby to diſable him 'from bringing his cauſe to a farther 'hearing; and of the attempts made to buy up Mr. M——r's debts, and to 'ſpirit up ſuits againſt him. Is it not 'obvious, from all theſe circumſtances, 'as well as from the obſtruction they 'have given to the attorney-general's 'proceeding, to make a report to his 'majeſty on the claimant's petition to 'the king for the peerage, which was 'referred by his majeſty to that gentleman ſo far back as 1743; that all 'their efforts are bent to that one point 'of ſtifling, rather than ſuffering the 'merits of this cauſe to come to a fair 'and candid hearing; and that the ſole conſideration at preſent between them 'and this unfortunate man, is not whether he is right or wrong, but whether 'he ſhall or ſhall not find money to 'bring this cauſe to a final determination.

'Lord A——a and his confederates 'not thinking themſelves ſafe with all 'theſe expedients, while there was a 'poſſibility of their antagoniſt's obtaining any aſſiſtance from ſuch as humanity,

'nity, compaſſion, generoſity, or a love 'of juſtice, might induce to lay open 'their purſes to his aſſiſtance in aſcer- 'taining his right, have, by themſelves 'and their numerous emiſſaries, em- 'ployed all the arts of calumny, ſlan- 'der, and detraction, againſt him, by 'traducing his cauſe, vilifying his per- 'ſon, and moſt baſely and cruelly tear- 'ing his character to pieces by a thou- 'ſand miſrepreſentations, purpoſely in- 'vented and induſtriouſly propagated 'in all places of reſort, which is a kind 'of cowardly aſſaſſination that there is 'no guarding againſt: yet, in ſpite of 'all theſe machinations, and the ſhame- 'ful indifference of mankind, who ſtand 'aloof unconcerned, and ſee this un- 'happy gentleman moſt inhumanly op- 'preſſed by the weight of lawleſs pow- 'er and faction, M——r, far from 'ſuffering himſelf to be dejected by the 'multiplying difficulties that croud up- 'on him, ſtill exerts himſelf with amaz- 'ing fortitude and aſſiduity, and will '(I doubt not) bring the affair he began 'and carried on with ſo much ſpirit, 'while his finances laſted, to an happy 'concluſion.

'It would exceed the bounds of my 'intention, and perhaps treſpaſs too 'much upon your time, were I to enu- 'merate the low artifices and ſhameful 'quibbles, by which the uſurper has 'found means to procraſtinate the deci- 'ſion of the conteſt between him and 'his hapleſs nephew, or to give a detail 'of the damage and perplexity which 'Mr. M——r has ſuſtained and been 'involved in, by the treachery and in- 'gratitude of ſome who liſted themſelves 'under him in the proſecution of this 'affair, and by the villainy of others, 'who, under various pretences of mate- 'rial diſcoveries they had to make, &c. 'had faſtened themſelves upon him, 'and continued to do all the miſchief in 'their power, until the cloven foot was 'detected.

'One inſtance, however, is ſo fla- 'grantly flagitious, that I cannot reſiſt 'the inclination I feel to relate it, as 'an example of the moſt infernal perfi- 'dy that perhaps ever entered the human 'heart. I have already mentioned the 'part which H——n acted in the be- 'ginning of M——r's connection with 'the unfortunate ſtranger, and hinted 'that the ſaid H——n lay under many 'obligations to that gentleman, before 'Mr. A——y's arrival in England. 'He had been chief agent to Lord 'A——y, and, as it afterwards ap- 'peared, received ſeveral payments of 'a ſecret penſion which that lord en- 'joyed, for which he either could not, 'or would not account. His lord- 'ſhip therefore, in order to compel him 'to it, took out writs againſt him, and 'his houſe was continually ſurrounded 'with catchpoles for the ſpace of two 'whole years.

'Mr. M—— believing, from H—n's 'own account of the matter, that the 'poor man was greatly injured, and 'proſecuted on account of his attach- 'ment to the unhappy young gentle- 'man, did him all the good offices in 'his power, and became ſecurity for 'him on ſeveral occaſions: nay, ſuch 'was his opinion of his integrity, that 'after Mr. A——y was cleared of the 'proſecution carried on againſt him by 'his uncle, his perſon was truſted to 'the care of this hypocrite, who deſired 'that the young gentleman might lodge 'at his houſe for the convenience of air, 'M——r's own occaſions calling him 'often into the country.

'Having thus, by his conſummate 'diſſimulation, acquired ſuch a valuable 'charge, he wrote a letter to one of 'Lord A——y's attornies, offering to 'betray Mr. A——y; provided his lord- 'ſhip would ſettle his account and give 'him a diſcharge for eight hundred 'pounds of the penſion which he had 'received and not accounted for. Mr. 'M——r, informed of this treacherous 'propoſal, immediately removed his 'lodger from his houſe into his own, 'without aſſigning his reaſons for ſo 'doing until he was obliged to de- 'clare it, in order to free himſelf from 'the importunities of H——n, who 'earneſtly ſolicited his return. This 'miſcreant finding himſelf detected 'and diſappointed in his villanous de- 'ſign, was ſo much enraged at his miſ- 'carriage, that, forgetting all the be- 'nefits he had received from M—— 'for a ſeries of years, he practiſed all 'the miſchief that his malice could 'contrive againſt him; and at length 'entered into a confederacy with one 'G—ſt—ey, and ſeveral other aban- 'doned wretches, who, as before ſaid, 'under various pretences of being able 'to make material diſcoveries, and other- 'wiſe to ſerve the cauſe, had found

'means

'means to be employed in some extra-'business relating to it, though their 'real intention was to betray the claim-'ant.

'These confederates, in conjunction 'with some auxiliaries of infamous 'character, being informed that Mr. 'M——r was on the point of securing 'a considerable sum, to enable him to 'prosecute Mr. A——y's right, and 'to bring it to a happy conclusion, con-'trived a deep-laid scheme to disappoint 'him in it, and at once to ruin the 'cause. And previous measures being 'taken for that wicked purpose, they 'imposed upon the young gentleman's 'inexperience and credulity, by insinu-'ations equally false, plausible, and 'malicious: to which they at length 'gained his belief, by the mention of 'some circumstances that gave what 'they alledged an air of probability, 'and even of truth. They swore that 'Mr. M——r had taken out an action 'against him for a very large sum of 'money; that they had actually seen 'the writ; that the intention of it was 'to throw him into prison for life, and 'ruin his cause, in consequence of an 'agreement made by him with Lord 'A——y, and his other enemies, to 'retrieve the money that he had laid 'out in the cause.

'This plausible tale was enforced 'with such an air of truth, candour, and 'earnest concern for his safety, and was 'strengthened by so many imprecations, 'and corroborating circumstances of 'their invention, as would have stag-'gered one of much greater experience 'and knowledge of mankind, than Mr. 'A——y could be supposed at that 'time. The notion of perpetual im-'prisonment, and the certain ruin they 'made him believe his cause was threa-'tened with, worked upon his imagi-'nation to such a degree, that he suf-'fered himself to be led like a lamb to 'the slaughter, by this artful band of 'villains; who secreted him at the lodg-'ings of one Pr—nt—ce, an intimate of 'G—ft—ey's, for several days, under 'colour of his being hunted by bailiffs 'employed by Mr. M——r, where he 'was not only obliged by them to 'change his name, but even his wife 'was not suffered to have access to him.

'Their design was to have sold him, 'or drawn him into a ruinous compro-'mise with his adversaries, for a valu-'able consideration to themselves. But 'as no ties are binding among such a 'knot of villains, the rest of the con-'spirators were jockied by G—ft—ey; 'who, in order to monopolize the ad-'vantage to himself, hurried his prize 'into the country, and secreted him even 'from his confederates, in a place of 'concealment one hundred miles from 'London, under the same ridiculous 'pretence of M——r's having taken out 'a writ against him, and of bailiffs 'being in pursuit of him every where 'round London.

'He was no sooner there than G—ft—ey, as a previous step to the other 'villainy he intended, tricked him out 'of a bond for six thousand pounds, 'under colour of his having a person 'ready to advance the like sum upon it, 'as an immediate fund for carrying on 'his cause; assuring him, at the same 'time, that he had a set of gentlemen 'ready, who were willing to advance 'twenty-five thousand pounds more for 'the same purpose, and to allow him 'five hundred pounds a year for his 'maintenance, till his cause should be 'made an end of, provided that Mr. 'M—— should have no farther concern 'with him or his cause.

'Mr. A——y, having by this time 'received some intimations of the de-'ceit that had been put upon him, made 'answer, that he should look upon him-'self as a very ungrateful monster, in-'deed, if he deserted a person who had 'saved his life, and so generously ven-'tured his own, together with his for-'tune, in his cause, until he should 'first be certain of the truth of what 'was alledged of him, and absolutely 'rejected the proposal. G—ft—ey, 'who had no other view in making it 'than to cover the secret villainy he me-'ditated against him, and to facilitate 'the execution therefore, easily receded 'from it when he found Mr. A——y 'so averse to it, and undertook never-'theless to raise the money; adding, 'that he might, if he pleased, return 'to Mr. M——r whenever it was se-'cured. The whole drift of this pre-'tended undertaking to raise the twenty-'five thousand pounds, was only to lay 'a foundation for a dextrous contri-'vance to draw Mr. A——y unwarily 'into the execution of a deed, relin-

'quishing

'quiſhing all his right and title, under 'a notion of it's being a deed to ſecure 'the repayment of that ſum.

'G—ſt—ey having, as he imagined, 'ſo far paved the way for the execution 'of ſuch a deed, enters into an agree- 'ment with an agent, employed for that 'purpoſe by Mr. A——ey's adverſa- 'ries, purporting, that in conſideration 'of the payment of a bond for ſix thou- 'ſand pounds, which he, G—ſt—ey, 'had, as he pretended, laid out in Mr. 'A——ey's cauſe, and of an annuity 'of ſeven hundred pounds a year, he 'was to procure for them from Mr. 'A——ey a deed ready executed, relin- 'quiſhing all right and title to the 'An—ey eſtate and honours. Every 'thing being prepared for the execu- 'tion of this infernal ſcheme, unknown 'to Mr. A——ey, G—ſt—ey then 'thought proper to ſend for him to town 'from his retirement, in order, as he 'pretended, to execute a ſecurity of 'twenty-five thouſand pounds.

'This intended victim to that vil- 'lain's avarice no ſooner arrived in 'town, full of hopes of money to carry 'on his cauſe, and of agreeably ſur- 'prizing his friend and protector Mr. 'M—— with ſo ſeaſonable and unex- 'pected a reinforcement, than an un- 'foreſeen difficulty aroſe, concerning 'the payment of G—ſt—ey's ſix thou- 'ſand pound bond. That money was 'to have been raiſed out of the eſtate of 'a lunatick, which could not be done 'without the leave of the court of chan- 'cery, to whom an account muſt have 'been given of the intended application 'of it. While preparations were mak- 'ing to rectify this omiſſion, G—ſt—ey 'immediately carried Mr. A——ey a- 'gain into the country, leſt he ſhould 'happen to be undeceived by ſome 'means or other.

'In the mean time, this wicked ma- 'chination was providentially diſcover- 'ed by Mr. M——r, before it could 'be carried into execution, by means 'of the jealouſies that aroſe among the 'conſpirators themſelves; and was, at 'the ſame time, confirmed to him by a 'perſon whom the very agent for the 'An——ey party had entruſted with 'the ſecret. M——r no ſooner detect- 'ed it, than he communicated his diſ- 'covery to one of Mr. A——ey's coun- 'ſel, a man of great worth; and imme- 'diately thereupon took proper meaſures 'to defeat it. He then found means 'to lay open to Mr. A——ey himſelf, 'the treacherous ſcheme that was laid 'for his deſtruction: he was highly 'ſenſible of it; and could never after- 'wards reflect on the ſnare that he had ſo 'unwarily been drawn into, and had ſo 'narrowly eſcaped, without a mixture 'of horror, ſhame, and gratitude to his 'deliverer.

'The conſummate aſſurance of the 'monſters who were engaged in this 'plot, after they had been detected, and 'upbraided with their treachery, is 'ſcarce to be paralleled; for they not 'only owned the fact of ſpiriting Mr. 'A——ey away, in the manner above 'mentioned, but juſtified their doing it 'as tending to his ſervice. They alſo 'maintained, that they had actually ſe- 'cured the twenty-five thouſand pounds 'for him, though they never could name 'any one perſon who was to have ad- 'vanced the money. No man was 'more active in this ſcheme than H—n; 'nor any man more ſolicitous to keep 'Mr. A——ey up in the falſe im- 'preſſions he had received, or in pro- 'jecting methods to ruin his protector, 'than he.

'Among many other expedients for 'that purpoſe, a moſt malicious attempt 'was made to lodge an information 'againſt him for treaſonable practices 'with the ſecretary of ſtate, notwith- 'ſtanding the repeated proofs he had 'given of his loyalty; and as a prepa- 'ratory ſtep to his accuſation, a letter, 'which this traitor dictated, was copied 'by another perſon, and actually ſent 'to the Earl of C——d, importing that 'the perſon who copied the letter had 'an affair of conſequence to commu- 'nicate to his lordſhip, if he would ap- 'point a time of receiving the informa- 'tion. But that perſon, upon full con- 'viction of the villainy of the ſcheme, 'abſolutely refuſed to proceed farther 'in it; ſo that his malice once more 'proved abortive: and before he had 'time to execute any other contrivance 'of the ſame nature, he was impriſoned 'in this very gaol for debt.

'Here, finding his creditors inexor- 'able, and himſelf deſtitute of all other 'reſource, he made application to the 'very man whom he had injured in 'ſuch an outrageous manner; ſet forth 'his deplorable caſe in the moſt pathe- 'tick terms; and intreated him, with

'the most abject humility, to use his 'influence in his behalf. The distress 'of this varlet immediately disarmed 'M——r of his resentment, and even 'excited his compassion. Without send-'ing any answer to his remonstrances, 'he interceded for him with his credi-'tors; and the person to whom he was 'chiefly indebted, refusing to release 'him without security, this unwearied 'benefactor joined with the prisoner in 'a bond for above two hundred and 'forty pounds, for which he obtained 'his release.

'He was no sooner discharged, how-'ever, than he entered into fresh com-'binations with G——y and others, in 'order to thwart his deliverer in his 'schemes of raising money, and other-'wise to distress and deprive him of li-'berty; for which purpose, no art or in-'dustry (perjury not excepted) hath been 'spared. And, what is still more extraor 'dinary, this perfidious monster having 'found money to take up the bond, in 'consequence of which he regained his 'freedom, hath procured a writ against 'M——r, upon that very obligation; 'and taken assignments to some other 'debts of that gentleman, with the 'same Christian intention. But, hi-'therto, he hath by surprizing sagacity 'and unshaken resolution baffled all 'their infernal contrivances, and re-'torted some of their machinations on 'their own heads. At this time, when 'he is supposed by some, and represent-'ed by others, as under the circum-'stances of oblivion and despondence, 'he proceeds in his design with the ut-'most calmness and intrepidity, medi-'tating schemes, and ripening measures, 'that will one day confound his ene-'mies, and attract the notice and admi-'ration of mankind.'

Peregrine, having thanked the priest for his obliging information, expressed his surprize at the scandalous inattention of the world to an affair of such importance: observing, that, by such inhuman neglect, this unfortunate young gentleman, Mr. A——ey, was absolutely deprived of all the benefit of society; the sole end of which is, to protect the rights, redress the grievances, and promote the happiness of individuals. As for the character of M——r, he said it was so romantically singular in all it's circumstances, that, though other motives were wanting, curiosity alone would induce him to seek his acquaintance: but he did not at all wonder at the ungrateful returns which had been made to his generosity by H—n and many others, whom he had served in a manner that few besides himself would have done; for he had been long convinced of the truth conveyed in these lines of a celebrated Italian author.

'*Li beneficii, che per la loro grandezza, non 'puonno esser guiderdonati, con la scele-'rata moneta dell' ingratitudine, sono 'pagati.*'

'The story which you have related of 'that young gentleman,' said he, 'bears 'a very strong resemblance to the fate 'of a Spanish nobleman, as it was 'communicated to me by one of his 'own intimate friends at Paris. The 'Countess D'Alvarez died immediately 'after the birth of a son, and the hus-'band surving her but three years, the 'child was left sole heir to his honours 'and estate, under the guardianship of 'his uncle, who had a small fortune 'and a great many children. This in-'human relation, coveting the wealth 'of his infant ward, formed a design 'against the life of the helpless orphan, 'and trusted the execution of it to his 'valet de chambre, who was tempted 'to undertake the murder by the pro-'mise of a considerable reward. He 'accordingly stabbed the boy with a 'knife, in three different places, on the 'right side of his neck: but, as he was 'not used to such barbarous attempts, 'his hand failed in the performance; 'and he was seized with such remorse, 'that, perceiving the wounds were not 'mortal, he carried the hapless victim 'to the house of a surgeon, by whose 'care they were healed: and in the 'mean time, that he might not forfeit 'his recompence, found means to per-'suade his employer, that his orders 'were performed. A bundle being 'made up for the purpose, was pub-'lickly interred as the body of the child, 'who was said to have been suddenly 'carried off by a convulsion: and the 'uncle, without opposition, succeeded 'to his honours and estate. The boy 'being cured of his hurts, was, about 'the age of six, delivered, with a small 'sum of money, to a merchant just em-'barking for Turky; who was given 'to understand, that he was the bastard

'of

'of a man of quality, and that for family reasons it was necessary to conceal his birth.

'While the unfortunate orphan remained in this deplorable state of bondage, all the children of the usurper died one after another; and he himself being taken dangerously ill, attributed all his afflictions to the just judgment of God, and communicated his anxiety on that subject to the valet de chambre, who had been employed in the murder of his nephew. That domestick, in order to quiet his master's conscience, and calm the perturbation of his spirits, confessed what he had done, and gave him hopes of still finding the boy by dint of industry and expence. The unhappy child being the only hope of the family of Alvarez, the uncle immediately ordered a minute enquiry to be set on foot; in consequence of which he was informed that the orphan had been sold to a Turk, who had afterwards transferred him to an English merchant, by whom he was conveyed to London.

'An express was immediately dispatched to this capital, where he understood that the unhappy exile had, in consideration of his faithful services, been bound apprentice to a French barber-surgeon; and after he had sufficiently qualified himself in that profession, been received into the family of the Count de Gallas, at that time the emperor's ambassador at the court of London. From the house of this nobleman he was traced into the service of Count D'Oberstorf, where he had married his lady's chamber-maid, and then gone to settle as a surgeon in Bohemia.

'In the course of these enquiries several years elapsed; his uncle, who was very much attached to the house of Austria, lived at Barcelona when the father of this empress-queen resided in that city, and lent him a very considerable sum of money in the most pressing emergency of his affairs; and when that prince was on the point of returning to Germany, the old count finding his end approaching, sent his father-confessor to his majesty, with a circumstantial account of the barbarity he had practised against his nephew, for which he implored forgiveness, and begged he would give orders, that the orphan, when found, should inherit the dignities and fortune which he had unjustly usuped.

'His majesty assured the old man, that he might make himself easy on that score, and ordered the confessor to follow him to Vienna, immediately after the count's death, in order to assist his endeavours in finding out the injured heir. The priest did not fail to yield obedience to this command: he informed himself of certain natural marks on the young count's body, which were known to the nurse and women who attended him in his infancy; and with a gentleman whom the emperor ordered to accompany him, set out for Bohemia, where he soon found the object of his enquiry, in the capacity of major-domo to a nobleman of that country, he having quitted his profession of surgery for that office.

'He was not a little surprized when he found himself circumstantially catechised about the particulars of his life, by persons commissioned for that purpose by the emperor. He told them, that he was absolutely ignorant of his own birth, though he had been informed, during his residence in Turky, that he was the bastard of a Spanish grandee, and gave them a minute detail of the pilgrimage he had undergone. This information agreeing with the intelligence which the priest had already received, and being corroborated with the marks upon his body, and the very scars of the wounds which had been inflicted upon him in his infancy, the confessor, without farther hesitation, saluted him by the name of Count D'Alvarez, grandee of Spain, and explained the whole mystery of his fortune.

'If he was agreeably amazed at this explanation, the case was otherwise with his wife, who thought herself in great danger of being abandoned by an husband of such high rank; but he immediately dispelled her apprehension, by assuring her, that as she had shared in his adversity, she should also partake of his good fortune. He set out immediately for Vienna, to make his acknowledgments to the emperor, who favoured him with a very gracious reception, promised to use his influence, so that he might enjoy the honours and estate of his family; and in the mean time acknowledged

'himself his debtor for four hundred 'thousand florins, which he had borrowed from his uncle. He threw 'himself at the feet of his august protector, expressed the most grateful sense 'of his goodness and begged he might 'be permitted to settle in some of his 'imperial majesty's dominions.

'This request was immediately granted; he was allowed to purchase land 'in any part of the hereditary dominions 'of the house of Austria, to the amount 'of the sum I have mentioned; and 'made choice of the country of Ratibor 'in Silesia, where, in all probability, 'he still resides.'

Peregrine had scarce finished this narrative, when he perceived Mr. M——r slip something into the hand of the young man with whom he had been conversing at the other end of the room, and rise up from the table in order to take his leave. He at once understood the meaning of this conveyance, and longed for an opportunity to be acquainted with such a rare instance of primitive benevolence; but the consciousness of his present situation hindered him from making any advance, that might be construed into forwardness or presumption.

CHAP. XIV.

HE IS SURPRIZED WITH THE APPEARANCE OF HATCHWAY AND PIPES, WHO TAKE UP THEIR HABITATION IN HIS NEIGHBOURHOOD, CONTRARY TO HIS INCLINATION AND EXPRESS DESIRE.

BEING now regularly initiated in the mysteries of the Fleet, and reconciled in some measure to the customs of the place, he began to bear the edge of reflection without wincing; and thinking it would be highly imprudent in him to defer any longer the purposes by which only he could enjoy any ease and satisfaction in his confinement, he resolved to resume his task of translating, and every week compose an occasional paper, by way of revenge upon the minister, against whom he had denounced eternal war. With this view he locked himself up in his chamber, and went to work with great eagerness and application; when he was interrupted by a ticket-porter, who, putting a letter in his hand, vanished in a moment, before he had time to peruse the contents.

Our hero, opening the billet, was not a little surprized to find a bank-note for fifty pounds, enclosed in a blank sheet of paper; and having exercised his memory and penetration on the subject of this unexpected windfal, had just concluded, that it could come from no other than the lady who had so kindly visited him a few days before, when his ears were suddenly invaded by the well-known sound of that whistle which always hung about the neck of Pipes, as a memorial of his former occupation. This tune being performed, he heard the noise of a wooden leg ascending the stair: upon which he opened his door, and beheld his friend Hatchway, with his old ship-mate at his back.

After a cordial shake of the hand, with the usual salutation of, 'What 'cheer, Cousin Pickle?' honest Jack seated himself without ceremony; and casting his eyes around the apartment, 'Split my topstay-sail,' said he, with an arch sneer, 'you have got into a 'snug birth, cousin! Here you may 'sit all weathers, without being turned 'out to take your watch, and no fear 'of the ship's dragging her anchor. 'You ha'n't much room to spare, 'tis 'true: an' I had known as how you 'stowed so close, Tom should have 'slung my own hammock for you, and 'then you might have knocked down 'this great lubberly hurricane house. 'But, mayhap, you turn in double, and 'so you don't chuse to trust yourself 'and your doxy to a clue and canvass.'

Pickle bore his jokes with great good-humour; rallied him in his turn about the dairy-maid at the garrison, enquiring about his friends in the country; asked if he had been to visit his niece; and, finally, expressed a desire of knowing the cause of his journey to London. The lieutenant satisfied his curiosity in all these particulars; and in answer to the last question observed, that from the information of Pipes, understanding he was land-locked, he had come from the country in order to tow him into the offing. 'I know not how the wind 'sits,' said he, 'but if so be, as three 'thousand pounds will bring you clear 'of the cape, say the word, and you 'shan't lie wind-bound another glass 'for want of the money.'

This was an offer which few people

in

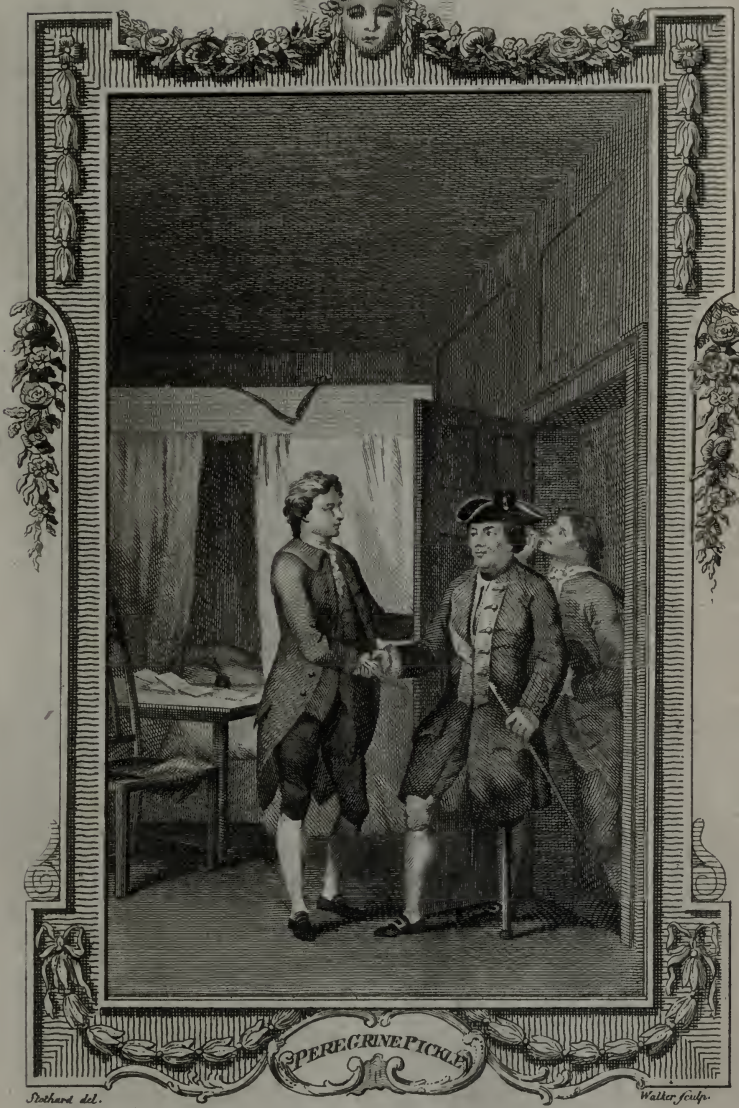


Plate. VIII.

Publish'd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Sep.r 23 1781.

in our hero's situation would have altogether refused; especially, as he had all the reason in the world to believe, that, far from being a vain, unmeaning compliment, it was the genuine tribute of friendship, which the lieutenant would have willingly, aye, and with pleasure, paid. Nevertheless, Peregrine peremptorily refused his assistance, though not without expressing himself in terms of acknowledgment suitable to the occasion. He told him it would be time enough to make use of his generosity when he should find himself destitute of all other resource. Jack employed all his rhetorick with a view of persuading him to take this opportunity to procure his own enlargement; and finding his arguments ineffectual, insisted upon his accepting an immediate supply for his necessary occasions; swearing with great vehemence, that he would never return to the garrison unless he would put him upon the footing of any other tenant, and receive his rent accordingly.

Our young gentleman as positively swore, that he never would consider him in that light; remonstrating, that he had long ago settled the house upon him for life, as a pledge of his own esteem, as well as in conformity with the commodore's desire; and beseeching him to return to his usual avocations, protesting that if ever his situation should subject him to the necessity of borrowing from his friends, Mr. Hatchway should be the first man to whom he would apply himself for succour. To convince him that this was not the case at present, he produced the bank-note which he had received in the letter, together with his own ready-money; and mentioned some other funds, which he invented *extempore*, in order to amuse the lieutenant's concern. In the close of this expostulation, he desired Pipes to conduct Mr. Hatchway to the coffee-house, where he might entertain himself with the newspapers for half an hour; during which he would put on his cloaths, and bespeak something for dinner, that they might enjoy each other's company as long as his occasions would permit him to stay in that place.

The two sailors were no sooner gone, than he took up the pen, and wrote the following letter, in which he inclosed the bank-note, to his generous benefactress.

'MADAM,

'YOUR humanity is not more in-'genious than my suspicion. In 'vain you attempt to impose upon me 'by an act of generosity which no per-'son upon earth but your ladyship is 'capable of committing. Though your 'name was not subscribed on the pa-'per, your sentiments were fully dis-'played in the contents, which I must 'beg leave to restore, with the same 'sense of gratitude, and for the same 'reasons, I expressed when last I had the 'honour to converse with you upon this 'subject. Though I am deprived of 'my liberty by the villainy and ingra-'titude of mankind, I am not yet de-'stitute of the other conveniencies of 'life; and, therefore, beg to be ex-'cused for incurring an unnecessary ad-'dition to that load of obligation you 'have already laid upon, Madam, your 'ladyship's most devoted, humble ser-'vant,

PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Having dressed himself, and repaired to the place of appointment, he dispatched this epistle by the hands of Pipes, who was ordered to leave it at her ladyship's house, without staying for an answer; and in the mean time gave directions for dinner; which he and his friend Hatchway ate very chearfully in his own apartment, after he had entertained him with a sight of all the curiosities in the place. During their repast, Jack repeated his kind offers to our adventurer, who declined them with his former obstinacy, and begged he might be no more importuned on that subject: but, if he insisted upon giving some fresh proofs of his friendship, he might have an opportunity of exhibiting it in taking Pipes under his care and protection; for nothing affected him so much as his inability to provide for such a faithful adherent.

The lieutenant desired he would give himself no trouble upon that score; he being, of his own accord, perfectly well disposed to befriend his old ship-mate, who should never want while he had a shilling to spare. But he began to drop some hints of an intention to fix his quarters in the Fleet; observing, that the air seemed to be very good in that place,

place, and that he was tired of living in the country. What he ſaid did not amount to a plain declaration, and therefore Peregrine did not anſwer it as ſuch, though he perceived his drift; and took an opportunity of deſcribing the inconveniencies of the place, in ſuch a manner as he hoped would deter him from putting ſuch an extravagant plan in execution.

This expedient, however, far from anſwering the end propoſed, had a quite contrary effect, and furniſhed Hatchway with an argument againſt his own unwillingneſs to quit ſuch a diſagreeable place. In all probability, Jack would have been more explicit with regard to the ſcheme he had propoſed, if the converſation had not been interrupted by the arrival of Cadwallader, who never failed in the performance of his diurnal viſit. Hatchway, conjecturing that this ſtranger might have ſome private buſineſs with his friend, quitted the apartment, on pretence of taking a turn: and meeting Pipes at the door, deſired his company to the *Bare*, by which name the open ſpace is diſtinguiſhed; where, during a courſe of perambulation, theſe two companions held a council upon Pickle: in conſequence of which it was determined, ſince he obſtinately perſiſted to refuſe their aſſiſtance, that they ſhould take lodgings in his neighbourhood, with a view of being at hand to miniſter unto his occaſions, in ſpite of his falſe delicacy, according to the emergency of his affairs.

This reſolution being taken, they conſulted the bar-keeper of the coffee-houſe about lodging, and ſhe directed them to the warden; to whom the lieutenant, in his great wiſdom, repreſented himſelf as a kinſman to Peregrine, who, rather than leave that young gentleman by himſelf to the unavoidable diſcomforts of a priſon, was inclined to keep him company, till ſuch time as his affairs could be put in order. This meaſure he the more anxiouſly deſired to take, becauſe the priſoner was ſometimes ſubject to a diſordered imagination, upon which occaſion he ſtood in need of extraordinary attendance; and therefore he (the lieutenant) intreated the warden to accommodate him with a lodging for himſelf and his ſervant, for which he was ready to make any reaſonable acknowledgment. The warden, who was a ſenſible and humane man, could not help applauding his reſolution; and ſeveral rooms being at that time unoccupied, he put him immediately in poſſeſſion of a couple, which were forthwith prepared for his reception.

This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, he diſpatched Pipes for his portmanteau; and returning to the coffee-houſe, found Peregrine, with whom he ſpent the remaining part of the evening. Our hero, taking it for granted that he propoſed to ſet out for the garriſon next day, wrote a memorandum of ſome books which he had left in that habitation, and which he now deſired Jack to ſend up to town by the waggon, directed for Mr. Crabtree. He cautioned him againſt giving the leaſt hint of his misfortune in the neighbourhood, that it might remain, as long as poſſible, concealed from the knowledge of his ſiſter, (who, he knew, would afflict herſelf immoderately at the news;) nor reach the ears of the reſt of his family, who would exult and triumph over his diſtreſs.

Hatchway liſtened to his injunctions with great attention, and promiſed to demean himſelf accordingly: then the diſcourſe ſhifted to an agreeable recapitulation of the merry ſcenes they had formerly acted together; and the evening being pretty far advanced, Peregrine, with ſeeming reluctance, told him that the gates of the Fleet would in a few minutes be ſhut for the night, and that there was an abſolute neceſſity for his withdrawing to his lodging. Jack replied, that he could not think of parting with him ſo ſoon, after ſuch a long ſeparation; and that he was determined to ſtay with him an hour or two longer, if he ſhould be obliged to take up his lodging in the ſtreets. Pickle, rather than diſoblige his gueſt, indulged him in his deſire, and reſolved to give him a ſhare of his own bed. A pair of chickens and 'ſparagus were beſpoke for ſupper, at which Pipes attended with an air of internal ſatisfaction; and the bottle was bandied about in a jovial manner till midnight, when the lieutenant roſe up to take his leave, obſerving, that being fatigued with riding, he was inclined to turn-in. Pipes, upon this intimation, produced a lanthorn ready lighted; and Jack, ſhaking his entertainer

tainer by the hand, wished him good night, and promised to visit him again betimes in the morning.

Peregrine, imagining that his behaviour proceeded from the wine, which he had plentifully drank, told him, that if he was disposed to sleep, his bed was ready prepared in the room, and ordered his attendant to undress his master; upon which Mr. Hatchway gave him to understand, that he had no occasion to incommode his friend, having already provided a lodging for himself: and the young gentleman demanding an explanation, he frankly owned what he had done; saying, 'You gave me such a dismal account of the place, that I could not think of leaving you in it without company.' Our young gentleman, who was naturally impatient of benefits, and foresaw that this uncommon instance of Hatchway's friendship would encroach upon the plan which he had formed for his own subsistence, by engrossing his time and attention, so as that he should not be able to prosecute his labours, closeted the lieutenant next day, and demonstrated to him the folly and ill consequences of the step he had taken. He observed, that the world in general would look upon it as the effect of mere madness; and, if his relations were so disposed, they might make it the foundation for a statute of lunacy against him; that his absence from the garrison must be a very great detriment to his private affairs; and, lastly, that his presence in the Fleet would be a very great hindrance to Pickle himself, whose hope of regaining his liberty altogether depended upon his being detached from all company and interruption.

To these remonstrances Jack replied, that, as to the opinion of the world, it was no more to him than a rotten netline; and if his relations had a mind to have his upper-works condemned, he did not doubt but he should be able to stand the survey, without being declared unfit for service; that he had no affairs at the garrison, but such as would keep cold; and with regard to Pickle's being interrupted by his presence, he gave him his word, that he would never come along-side of him, except when he should give him the signal for holding discourse. In conclusion, he signified his resolution to stay where he was, at all events, without making himself accountable to any person whatsoever.

Peregrine seeing him determined, desisted from any farther importunity; resolving, however, to tire him out of his plan by reserve and supercilious neglect; for he could not bear the thought of being so notoriously obliged by any person upon earth. With this view he quitted the lieutenant, upon some slight pretence; after having told him, that he could not have the pleasure of his company at dinner, because he was engaged with a particular club of his fellow-prisoners.

Jack was a stranger to the punctilios of behaviour, and therefore did not take this declaration amiss; but had immediate recourse to the advice of his counsellor Mr. Pipes, who proposed that he should go to the coffee-house and kitchen, and give the people to understand that he would pay for all such liquor and provisions as Mr. Pickle should order to be sent to his own lodging. This expedient was immediately practised; and as there was no credit in the place, Hatchway deposited a sum of money, by way of security to the cook and the vintner, intimating, that there was a necessity for taking that method of befriending his Cousin Peregrine, who was subject to strange whims, that rendered it impossible to serve him any other way.

In consequence of these insinuations, it was that same day rumoured about the Fleet, that Mr. Pickle was an unhappy gentleman disordered in his understanding, and that the lieutenant was his near relation, who had subjected himself to the inconvenience of living in a gaol, with the sole view of keeping a strict eye over his conduct. This report, however, did not reach the ears of our hero till the next day, when he sent one of the runners of the Fleet, who attended him, to bespeak and pay for a couple of pullets, and something else for dinner, to which he had already invited his friend Hatchway, in hope of being able to persuade him to retire into the country, after he had undergone a whole day's mortification in the place. The messenger returned with an assurance, that the dinner should be made ready according to his directions, and restored the money, observing that his kinsman had paid for what was bespoke.

Peregrine was equally surprized and disgusted at this information, and resolved to chide the lieutenant severely for

for his unſeaſonable treat, which he conſidered as a thing repugnant to his reputation. Meanwhile, he diſpatched his attendant for wine to the coffee-houſe, and finding his credit bolſtered up in that place by the ſame means, was enraged at the preſumption of Jack's friendſhip. He queſtioned the valet about it with ſuch manifeſtation of diſpleaſure, that the fellow, afraid of diſobliging ſuch a good maſter, frankly communicated the ſtory which was circulated at his expence. The young gentleman was ſo much incenſed at this piece of intelligence, that he wrote a bitter expoſtulation to the lieutenant, wherein he not only retracted his invitation, but declared that he would never converſe with him while he ſhould remain within the place.

Having thus obeyed the dictates of his anger, he gave notice to the cook, that he ſhould not have occaſion for what was ordered. Repairing to the coffee-houſe, he told the landlord, that whereas he underſtood the ſtranger with the wooden leg had prepoſſeſſed him and others with ridiculous notions, tending to bring the ſanity of his intellects in queſtion; and to confirm this imputation, had, under the pretence of conſanguinity, undertaken to defray his expences; he could not help (in juſtice to himſelf) declaring, that the ſame perſon was, in reality, the madman, who had given his keepers the ſlip; that therefore he (the landlord) would not find his account in complying with his orders, and encouraging him to frequent his houſe; and that, for his own part, he would never enter the door, or favour him with the leaſt trifle of his cuſtom, if ever he ſhould for the future find himſelf anticipated in his payments by that unhappy lunatick.

The vintner was confounded at this retorted charge; and after much perplexity and deliberation, concluded that both parties were diſtracted; the ſtranger in paying a man's debts againſt his will, and Pickle, in being offended at ſuch forwardneſs of friendſhip.

CHAP. XV.

THESE ASSOCIATES COMMIT AN ASSAULT UPON CRABTREE, FOR WHICH THEY ARE BANISHED FROM THE FLEET. PEREGRINE BEGINS TO FEEL THE EFFECTS OF CONFINEMENT.

OUR adventurer having dined at an ordinary, and in the afternoon retired to his own apartment as uſual, with his friend Cadwallader; Hatchway and his aſſociate, after they had been obliged to diſcuſs the proviſion for which they had paid, renewed their conference upon the old ſubject. Pipes giving his meſs-mate to underſtand, that Peregrine's chief confidante was the old deaf batchelor, whom he had ſeen at his lodging the preceding day, Mr. Hatchway in his great penetration diſcovered, that the young gentleman's obſtinacy proceeded from the advice of the miſanthrope, whom for that reaſon it was their buſineſs to chaſtiſe. Pipes entered into this opinion the more willingly, as he had all along believed the ſenior to be a ſort of wizard, or ſome caco-demon, whom it was not very creditable to be acquainted with. Indeed, he had been inſpired with this notion by the inſinuations of Hadgi, who had formerly dropped ſome hints touching Crabtree's profound knowledge in the magick art; mentioning, in particular, his being poſſeſſed of the philoſopher's ſtone; an aſſertion to which Tom had given implicit credit until his maſter was ſent to priſon for debt, when he could no longer ſuppoſe Cadwallader lord of ſuch a valuable ſecret, or elſe he would have certainly procured the enlargement of his moſt intimate friend.

With theſe ſentiments he eſpouſed the reſentment of Hatchway. They determined to ſeize the ſuppoſed conjuror with the firſt opportunity, on his return from his viſit to Peregrine; and, without heſitation, exerciſe upon him the diſcipline of the pump. This plan they would have executed that ſame evening, had not the miſanthrope luckily withdrawn himſelf by accident before it was dark, and even before they had intelligence of his retreat. But next day they kept themſelves upon the watch till he appeared, and Pipes lifting his hat as Crabtree paſſed, 'O damn ye, old Dun-'ny!' ſaid he, 'you and I muſt grap-'ple by and bye; and a'gad I ſhall lie 'ſo near your quarter, that your ear-'ports will let in the ſound, tho'f they 'are double caulked with oakum.'

The miſanthrope's ears were not quite ſo

ſo faſt cloſed, but that they received this intimation; which, though delivered in terms that he did not well underſtand, had ſuch an effect upon his apprehenſion, that he ſignified his doubts to Peregrine, obſerving, that he did not much like the looks of that ſame ruffian with the wooden leg. Pickle aſſured him he had nothing to fear from the two ſailors, who could have no cauſe of reſentment againſt him; or if they had, would not venture to take any ſtep, which they knew muſt block up all the avenues to that reconcilement, about which they were ſo anxious; and, moreover, give ſuch offence to the governor of the place, as would infallibly induce him to expel them both from his territories.

Notwithſtanding this aſſurance, the young gentleman was not ſo confident of the lieutenant's diſcretion, as to believe that Crabtree's fears were altogether without foundation: he forthwith conjectured that Jack had taken umbrage at an intimacy, from which he found himſelf excluded, and imputed his diſgrace to the inſinuations of Cadwallader, whom in all likelihood he intended to puniſh for his ſuppoſed advice; he knew his friend could ſuſtain no great damage from the lieutenant's reſentment, in a place which he could immediately alarm with his cries; and therefore wiſhed he might fall into the ſnare, becauſe it would furniſh him with a pretence of complaint; in conſequence of which, the ſailors would be obliged to ſhift their quarters, ſo as that he ſhould be rid of their company, in which he at preſent could find no enjoyment.

Every thing happened as he had foreſeen; the miſanthrope, in his retreat from Peregrine's chamber, was aſſaulted by Hatchway and his aſſociate, who ſeized him by the collar without ceremony, and began to drag him towards the pump, at which they would have certainly complimented him with a very diſagreeable bath, had not he exalted his voice in ſuch a manner, as in a moment brought a number of the inhabitants, and Pickle himſelf, to his aid. The aſſailants would have perſiſted in their deſign, had the oppoſition been ſuch as they could have faced with any poſſibility of ſucceſs: nor did they quit their prey before a dozen, at leaſt, had come to his reſcue, and Peregrine, with a menacing aſpect and air of authority, commanded his old valet to withdraw; then they thought proper to ſheer off, and betake themſelves to cloſe quarters, while our hero accompanied the affrighted Cadwallader to the gate, and exhibited to the warden a formal complaint againſt the rioters, upon whom he retorted the charge of lunacy, which was ſupported by the evidence of twenty perſons, who had been eye-witneſſes of the outrage committed againſt the old gentleman.

The governor, in conſequence of this information, ſent a meſſage to Mr. Hatchway, warning him to move his lodging next day, on pain of being expelled. The lieutenant contumaciouſly refuſing to comply with this intimation, was in the morning, while he amuſed himſelf in walking upon the *Bare*, ſuddenly ſurrounded by the conſtables of the court, who took him and his adherents priſoners, before they were aware, and delivered them into the hands of the turnkeys, by whom they were immediately diſmiſſed, and their baggage conveyed to the ſide of the ditch.

This expulſion was not performed without an obſtinate oppoſition on the part of the delinquents; who, had they not been ſurprized, would have ſet the whole Fleet at defiance, and in all probability have acted divers tragedies before they could have been overpowered. Things being circumſtanced as they were, the lieutenant did not part with his conductor without tweaking his noſe by way of farewel; and Pipes, in imitation of ſuch a laudable example, communicated a token of remembrance, in an application to the ſole eye of his attendant, who ſcorning to be outdone in this kind of couteſy, returned the compliment with ſuch good-will, that Tom's organ performed the office of a multiplying glaſs. Theſe were mutual hints for ſtripping; and acordingly each was naked from the waiſt upwards in a trice. A ring of butchers from the market was immediately formed; a couple of the reverend Flamens, who, in morning gowns, ply for marriages in that quarter of the town, conſtituted themſelves ſeconds and umpires of the approaching conteſt, and the battle began without farther preparation. The combatants were, in point of ſtrength and agility, pretty equally matched; but the gaoler had been regularly trained to the art of bruiſing; he had more than once ſignalized himſelf in

publick, by his proweſs and ſkill in this exerciſe, and loſt one eye upon the ſtage in the courſe of his exploits. This was a misfortune of which Pipes did not fail to take the advantage: he had already ſuſtained ſeveral hard knocks upon his temples and jaws, and found it impracticable to ſmite his antagoniſt upon the victualling-office, ſo dextrouſly was it defended againſt aſſault. He then changed his battery, and being ambi-dexter, raiſed ſuch a clatter upon the turnkey's blind-ſide, that this hero believing him left-handed, converted his attention that way, and oppoſed the unenlightened ſide of his face to the right-hand of Pipes, which being thus unprovided againſt, ſlily beſtowed upon him a peg under the fifth rib, that in an inſtant laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement, at the feet of his conqueror. Pipes was congratulated upon his victory, not only by his friend Hatchway, but alſo by all the by-ſtanders, particularly the prieſt who had eſpouſed his cauſe, and now invited the ſtrangers to his lodgings in a neighbouring ale-houſe, where they were entertained ſo much to their liking, that they determined to ſeek no other habitation while they ſhould continue in town: and notwithſtanding the diſgrace and diſcouragement they had met with, in their endeavours to ſerve our adventurer, they were ſtill reſolved to perſevere in their good offices, or, in the vulgar phraſe, to ſee him out.

While they ſettled themſelves in this manner, and acquired familiar connections round all the purlieus of the ditch, Peregrine found himſelf deprived of the company of Cadwallader, who ſignified by letter, that he did not chuſe to hazard his perſon again in viſiting him, while ſuch aſſaſſins occupied the avenues though which he muſt paſs; for he had been at pains to enquire into the motions of the ſeamen, and informed himſelf exactly of the harbour in which they were moored.

Our hero had been ſo much accuſtomed to the converſation of Crabtree, which was altogether ſuitable to the ſingularity of his own diſpoſition, that he could very ill afford to be debarred of it at this juncture, when almoſt every other ſource of enjoyment was ſtopped. He was, however, obliged to ſubmit to the hardſhips of his ſituation; and as the characters of his fellow-priſoners did not at all improve upon him, he was compelled to ſeek for ſatisfaction within himſelf. Not but that he had an opportunity of converſing with ſome people, who neither wanted ſenſe, nor were deficient in point of principle; yet there appeared in the behaviour of them all, without exception, a certain want of decorum, a ſqualor of ſentiment, a ſort of gaoliſh caſt contracted in the courſe of confinement, which diſguſted the delicacy of our hero's obſervation. He therefore detached himſelf from their parties as much as he could, without giving offence to thoſe among whom he was obliged to live, and reſumed his labours with incredible eagerneſs and perſeverance, his ſpirits being ſupported by the ſucceſs of ſome ſevere Philippics, which he occaſionally publiſhed againſt the author of his misfortune.

Nor was his humanity unemployed in the vacations of his revenge: a man muſt be void of all ſympathy and compaſſion, who can reſide among ſo many miſerable objects, without feeling an inclination to relieve their diſtreſs. Every day almoſt preſented to his view ſuch lamentable ſcenes, as were moſt likely to attract his notice, and engage his benevolence. Reverſes of fortune, attended with the moſt deplorable circumſtances of domeſtick woe, were continually intruding upon his acquaintance; his ears were invaded with the cries of the hapleſs wife, who, from the enjoyment of affluence and pleaſure, was forced to follow her huſband to this abode of wretchedneſs and want; his eyes were every minute aſſailed with the naked and meagre appearance of hunger and cold; and his fancy teemed with a thouſand aggravations of their miſery.

Thus ſituated, his purſe was never ſhut while his heart remained open. Without reflecting upon the ſlenderneſs of his ſtore, he exerciſed his charity to all the children of diſtreſs, and acquired a popularity, which, though pleaſing, was far from being profitable. In ſhort, his bounty kept no pace with his circumſtances, and in a little time he was utterly exhauſted. He had recourſe to his bookſeller, from whom, with great difficulty, he obtained a ſmall reinforcement; and immediately relapſed into the ſame want of retention. He was conſcious of his infirmity,

firmity, and found it incurable: he foreſaw that by his own induſtry he ſhould never be able to defray the expence of theſe occaſions; and this reflection ſunk deep into his mind. The approbation of the publick, which he had earned or might acquire, like a cordial often repeated, began to loſe it's effect upon his imagination: his health ſuffered by his ſedentary life and auſtere application; his eye-ſight failed; his appetite forſook him; his ſpirits decayed; ſo that he became melancholy, liſtleſs, and altogether incapable of proſecuting the only means he had left for his ſubſiſtence; and (what did not at all contribute to the alleviation of theſe particulars) he was given to underſtand by his lawyer, that he had loſt his cauſe, and was condemned in coſts. Even this was not the moſt mortifying piece of intelligence he received; he at the ſame time learned that his bookſeller was bankrupt, and his friend Crabtree at the point of death.

Theſe were comfortable conſiderations to a youth of Peregrine's diſpoſition; which was ſo capricious, that the more his miſery increaſed, the more haughty and inflexible he became. Rather than be beholden to Hatchway, who ſtill hovered about the gate, eager for an opportunity to aſſiſt him, he choſe to undergo the want of almoſt every convenience of life, and actually pledged his wearing-apparel to an Iriſh pawnbroker in the Fleet, for money to purchaſe thoſe things without which he muſt have abſolute periſhed. He was gradually irritated by his misfortunes into a rancorous reſentment againſt mankind in general, and his heart ſo alienated from the enjoyments of life, that he did not care how ſoon he quitted his miſerable exiſtence. Though he had ſhocking examples of the viciſſitudes of fortune continually before his eyes, he could never be reconciled to the idea of living like his fellow-ſufferers, in the moſt abject degree of dependance. If he refuſed to accept of favours from his own allies and intimate friends, whom he had formerly obliged, it is not to be ſuppoſed that he would liſten to propoſals of that kind from any of his fellow-priſoners, with whom he had contracted acquaintance: he was even more cautious than ever of incurring obligations; he now ſhunned his former meſsmates, in order to avoid diſagreeable tenders of friendſhip. Imagining that he perceived an inclination in the clergyman to learn the ſtate of his finances, he diſcouraged and declined the explanation, and at length ſecluded himſelf from all ſociety.

CHAP. XVI.

HE RECEIVES AN UNEXPECTED VISIT; AND THE CLOUDS OF MISFORTUNE BEGIN TO SEPARATE.

WHILE he pined in this forlorn condition, with an equal abhorrence of the world and himſelf, Captain Gauntlet arrived in town, in order to employ his intereſt for promotion in the army; and in conſequence of his wife's particular deſire, made it his buſineſs to enquire for Peregrine, to whom he longed to be reconciled, even though at the expence of a ſlight ſubmiſſion. But he could hear no tidings of him at the place to which he was directed; and, on the ſuppoſition that our hero had gone to reſide in the country, applied himſelf to his own buſineſs, with intention to renew his enquiries after that affair ſhould be tranſacted. He communicated his demands to his ſuppoſed patron, who had aſſumed the merit of making him a captain, and been gratified with a valuable preſent on that conſideration; and was cajoled with hopes of ſucceeding in his preſent aim by the ſame intereſt.

Meanwhile, he became acquainted with one of the clerks belonging to the war-office, whoſe advice and aſſiſtance, he was told, would be a furtherance to his ſcheme. As he had occaſion to diſcourſe with this gentleman upon the circumſtances of his expectation, he learned that the nobleman, upon whom he depended, was a perſon of no conſequence in the ſtate, and altogether incapable of aſſiſting him in his advancement. At the ſame time, his counſellor expreſſed his ſurprize that Captain Gauntlet did not rather intereſt in his cauſe the noble peer, to whoſe good offices he owed his laſt commiſſion.

This remark introduced an explanation, by which Godfrey diſcovered, to his infinite aſtoniſhment, the miſtake in which he had continued ſo long with regard to his patron; though he could

not divine the motive which induced a nobleman, with whom he had no acquaintance or connection, to interpose his influence in his behalf. Whatsoever that might be, he thought it was his duty to make his acknowledgment; and for that purpose went next morning to his house, where he was politely received, and given to understand, that Mr. Pickle was the person to whose friendship he was indebted for his last promotion.

Inexpressible were the transports of gratitude, affection, and remorse, that took possession of the soul of Gauntlet when this mystery was unfolded. 'Good 'Heaven!' cried he, lifting up his hands, 'have I lived so long in a state of ani-'mosity with my benefactor? I intend-'ed to have reconciled myself to him, 'at any rate, before I was sensible of 'this obligation; but now I shall not 'enjoy a moment's quiet until I have 'an opportunity of expressing to him 'my sense of his heroick friendship. I 'presume, from the nature of the fa-'vour conferred upon him in my be-'half, that Mr. Pickle is well known 'to your lordship: and I should think 'myself extremely happy, if you could 'inform me in what part of the country 'he is to be found: for the person with 'whom he lodged some time ago could 'give me no intelligence of his mo-'tions.'

The nobleman, touched with this instance of generous self denial in Peregrine, as well as with the sensibility of his friend, lamented the unhappiness of our hero, while he gave Gauntlet to understand that he had been long disordered in his intellects, in consequence of having squandered away his fortune; and that his creditors had thrown him into the Fleet-prison: but whether he still continued in that confinement, or was released from his misfortunes by death, his lordship did not know, because he had never enquired.

Godfrey no sooner received this intimation, than (his blood boiling with grief and impatience) he craved pardon for his abrupt departure: then quitting his informer on the instant, re-embarked in his hackney-coach, and ordered himself to be conveyed directly to the Fleet. As the vehicle proceeded along one side of the market, he was surprized with the appearance of Hatchway and Pipes, who stood cheapening colliflowers at a green-stall, their heads being cased in worsted night-caps, half covered with their hats, and a short tobacco-pipe in the mouth of each. He was rejoiced at sight of the two seamen, which he took for an happy omen of finding his friend; and ordering the coachman to stop the carriage, called to the lieutenant by his name. Jack replying with an *Hilloah!* looking behind him, and recognizing the face of his old acquaintance, ran up to the coach with great eagerness. Shaking the captain heartily by the hand, 'Odd's heart!' said he, 'I am 'glad thou hast fallen in with us; we 'shall now be able to find the trim of 'the vessel, and lay her about on t'other 'tack. For my own part, I have had 'many a consort in my time, that is, 'in the way of good fellowship, and I 'always made shift to ware 'em at one 'time or another: but this headstrong 'toad will neither obey the helm nor 'the sheet; and, for aught I know, 'will founder where a' lies at anchor.'

Gauntlet, who conceived part of his meaning, alighted immediately; and being conducted to the sailor's lodging, was informed of every thing that had passed between the lieutenant and Pickle. He, in his turn, communicated to Jack the discovery which he had made with regard to his commission; at which the other gave no signs of surprize: but taking the pipe from his mouth, 'Why, 'look ye, captain,' said he, 'that's 'not the only good turn you have owed 'him. That same money you received 'from the commodore as an old debt 'was all a sham, contrived by Pickle 'for your service; but a'wool drive 'under his bare poles, without sails 'and rigging, or a mess of provision 'on board, rather than take the same 'assistance from another man.'

Godfrey was not only amazed, but chagrined at the knowledge of this anecdote; which gave umbrage to his pride, while it stimulated his desire of doing something in return for the obligation. He enquired into the present circumstances of the prisoner; and understanding that he was indisposed, and but indifferently provided with the common necessaries of life, though still deaf to all offers of assistance, began to be extremely concerned at the account of his savage obstinacy and pride, which would, he feared, exclude him from the privilege of relieving him in his

his distress. However, he resolved to leave no expedient untried, that might have any tendency to surmount such destructive prejudice; and, entering the gaol, was directed to the apartment of the wretched prisoner. He knocked softly at the door, and when it was opened, started back with horror and astonishment: the figure that presented itself to his view, was the remains of his once happy friend; but so miserably altered and disguised, that his features were scarce cognizable. The florid, the sprightly, the gay, the elevated youth, was now metamorphosed into a wan, dejected, meagre, squalid spectre; the hollow-eyed representative of distemper, indigence, and despair: yet his eyes retained a certain ferocity, which threw a dismal gleam athwart the cloudiness of his aspect; and he, in silence, viewed his old companion with a look betokening confusion and disdain. As for Gauntlet, he could not, without emotion, behold such a woeful reverse of fate, in a person for whom he entertained the noblest sentiments of friendship, gratitude, and esteem: his sorrow was at first too big for utterance, and he shed a flood of tears before he could pronounce one word.

Peregrine, in spite of his misanthropy, could not help being affected with this uncommon testimony of regard; but he strove to stifle his sensations: his brows contracted themselves into a severe frown; his eyes kindled into the appearance of live coals; he waved with his hand, in signal for Godfrey to be gone, and leave such a wretch as him to the miseries of his fate; and finding nature too strong to be suppressed, uttered a deep groan and wept aloud.

The soldier, seeing him thus melted, unable to restrain the strong impulse of his affection, sprung towards, and clasping him in his arms, 'My dearest friend, and best benefactor,' said he, 'I am come hither to humble myself 'for the offence I was so unhappy as 'to give at our last parting; to beg a 'reconciliation, to thank you for the 'ease and affluence I have enjoyed 'through your means, and to rescue 'you, in spite of yourself, from this 'melancholy situation, of which but 'an hour ago I was utterly ignorant. 'Do not deny me the satisfaction of 'acquitting myself in point of duty 'and obligation. You must certainly 'have had some regard for a person, 'in whose favour you have exerted 'yourself so much; and if any part of 'that esteem remains, you will not 'refuse him an opportunity of approving himself in some measure worthy of it. Let me not suffer the 'most mortifying of all repulses, that 'of slighted friendship; but kindly 'sacrifice your resentment and inflexibility to the request of one, who is at 'all times ready to sacrifice his life 'for your honour and advantage. If 'you will not yield to my intreaties, 'have some regard to the wishes of 'my Sophy, who laid me under the 'strongest injunctions to solicit your 'forgiveness, even before she knew 'how much I was indebted to your 'generosity; or, if that consideration 'should be of no weight, I hope you 'will relax a little for the sake of poor 'Emilia, whose resentment hath been 'long subdued by her affection, and 'who now droops in secret at your 'neglect.'

Every word of this address, delivered in the most pathetick manner, made an impression upon the mind of Peregrine: he was affected with the submission of his friend, who, in reality, had given him no just cause to complain. He knew that no ordinary motive had swayed him to a condescension, so extraordinary in a man of his punctilious temper: he considered it, therefore, as the genuine effect of eager gratitude and disinterested love, and his heart began to relent accordingly. When he heard himself conjured in the name of the gentle Sophy, his obstinacy was quite overcome; and when Emilia was recalled to his remembrance, his whole frame underwent a violent agitation. He took his friend by the hand, with a softened look, and as soon as he recovered the faculty of speech, which had been overpowered in the conflict of passions that transported him, protested, that he retained no vestige of animosity, but considered him in the light of an affectionate comrade, the ties of whose friendship adversity could not unbind. He mentioned Sophy in the most respectful terms; spoke of Emilia with the most reverential awe, as the object of his inviolable love and veneration; but disclaimed all hope of ever more attracting her regard;

regard; and excuſed himſelf from profiting by Godfrey's kind intention; declaring, with a reſolute air, that he had broke off all connection with mankind, and that he impatiently longed for the hour of his diſſolution, which, if it ſhould not ſoon arrive by the courſe of nature, he was reſolved to haſten with his own hands, rather than be expoſed to the contempt, and more intolerable pity, of a raſcally world.

Gauntlet argued againſt this frantick determination with all the vehemence of expoſtulating friendſhip; but his remonſtrances did not produce the deſired effect upon our deſperate hero, who calmly refuted all his arguments, and aſſerted the rectitude of his deſign, from the pretended maxims of reaſon and true philoſophy.

While this diſpute was carried on with eagerneſs on one ſide, and deliberation on the other, a letter was brought to Peregrine, who threw it careleſsly aſide unopened, though the ſuperſcription was in an hand-writing to which he was a ſtranger: and, in all probability, the contents would never have been peruſed, had not Gauntlet inſiſted upon his waving all ceremony, and reading it forthwith. Thus ſolicited, Pickle unſealed the billet, which, to his no ſmall ſurprize, contained the following intimation.

'MR. P. PICKLE,

'SIR,

'THIS comes to inform you, that 'after many dangers and diſ-'appointments, I am, by the bleſſing 'of God, ſafely arrived in the Downs, 'on board of the Gomberoon India-'man, having made a tolerable voyage; 'by which I hope I ſhall be enabled 'to repay, with intereſt, the ſeven 'hundred pounds which I borrowed 'of you before my departure from 'England. I take this opportunity 'of writing by our purſer, who goes 'expreſs with diſpatches for the com-'pany, that you may have this ſatiſ-'factory notice as ſoon as poſſible, 'relating to one whom I ſuppoſe you 'have long given over as loſt. I have 'incloſed it in a letter to my broker, 'who, I hope, knows your addreſs, 'and will forward it accordingly: and 'I am, with reſpect, Sir, your moſt 'humble ſervant,

'BENJAMIN CHINTZ.'

He had no ſooner taken a curſory view of this agreeable epiſtle, than his countenance cleared up, and reaching it to his friend, with a ſmile, 'There,' ſaid he, 'is a more convincing argu-'ment on your ſide of the queſtion, 'than all the caſuiſts in the univerſe 'can advance.' Gauntlet, wondering at this obſervation, took the paper, and caſting his eyes greedily upon the contents, congratulated him upon the receipt of it with extravagant demonſtrations of joy: 'Not on account of 'the ſum,' ſaid he, 'which, upon my 'honour, I would with pleaſure pay 'three times over for your convenience 'and ſatisfaction; but becauſe it ſeems 'to have reconciled you to life, and 'diſpoſed your mind for re-enjoying 'the comforts of ſociety.'

The inſtantaneous effect which this unexpected ſmile of fortune produced in the appearance of our adventurer, is altogether inconceivable: it plumped up his cheeks in a moment, unbended and enlightened every feature of his face; elevated his head, which had begun to ſink, as it were, between his ſhoulders; and from a ſqueaking, diſpirited tone, ſwelled up his voice to a clear, manly accent. Godfrey, taking advantage of this favourable change, began to regale him with proſpects of future ſucceſs: he reminded him of his youth and qualifications, which were certainly deſigned for better days than thoſe he had as yet ſeen; he pointed out various paths, by which he might arrive at wealth and reputation; he importuned him to accept of a ſum for his immediate occaſions; and earneſtly begged, that he would allow him to diſcharge the debt for which he was confined; obſerving, that Sophy's fortune had enabled him to exhibit that proof of his gratitude, without any detriment to his affairs; and proteſting that he ſhould not believe himſelf in poſſeſſion of Mr. Pickle's eſteem, unleſs he was permitted to make ſome ſuch return of good-will to the man, who had not only raiſed him from indigence and ſcorn to competence and reputable rank, but alſo impowered him to obtain the poſſeſſion of an excellent woman,

woman, who had filled up the meaſure of his felicity.

Peregrine declared himſelf already overpaid for all his good offices, by the pleaſure he enjoyed in employing them, and the happy effects they had produced, in the mutual ſatisfaction of two perſons ſo dear to his affection; and aſſured his friend, that one time or other he would ſet his conſcience at eaſe, and remove the ſcruples of his honour, by having recourſe to his aſſiſtance: but, at preſent, he could not make uſe of his friendſhip, without giving juſt cauſe of offence to honeſt Hatchway, who was prior to him in point of ſolicitation, and had manifeſted his attachment with ſurprizing obſtinacy and perſeverance.

CHAP. XVII.

PEREGRINE RECONCILES HIMSELF TO THE LIEUTENANT, AND RENEWS HIS CONNECTION WITH SOCIETY. DIVERS PLANS ARE PROJECTED IN HIS BEHALF, AND HE HAS OCCASION TO EXHIBIT A REMARKABLE PROOF OF SELF-DENIAL.

THE captain, with reluctance, yielded the preference in this particular to Jack, who was immediately invited to a conference, by a note ſubſcribed with Pickle's own hand. He was found at the priſon-gate waiting for Gauntlet, to know the iſſue of his negociation. He no ſooner received this ſummons, than he ſet all his ſails, and made the beſt of his way to his friend's apartment; being admitted by the turnkey, in conſequence of Peregrine's requeſt, communicated by the meſſenger who carried the billet. Pipes followed cloſe in the wake of his ſhipmate; and, in a few minutes after the note had been diſpatched, Peregrine and Gauntlet heard the ſound of the ſtump aſcending the wooden ſtair-caſe with ſuch velocity, that they at firſt miſtook it for the application of drum-ſticks to the head of an empty barrel. This uncommon ſpeed, however, was attended with a misfortune; he chanced to overlook a ſmall defect in one of the ſteps, and his prop plunging into a hole, he fell backwards, to the imminent danger of his life. Tom was luckily at his back, and ſuſtained him in his arms, ſo as that he eſcaped without any other damage than the loſs of his wooden leg, which was ſnapped in the middle by the weight of his body in falling; and ſuch was his impatience, that he would not give himſelf the trouble to diſengage the fractured member. Unbuckling the whole equipage in a trice, he left it ſticking in the crevice, ſaying a rotten cable was not worth heaving up; and, in this natural ſtate of mutilation, hopped into the room with infinite expedition.

Peregrine taking him cordially by the hand, ſeated him upon one ſide of his bed; and after having made an apology for that reſerve, of which he had ſo juſtly complained, aſked, if he could conveniently accommodate him with the loan of twenty guineas. The lieutenant, without opening his mouth, pulled out his purſe; and Pipes, who overheard the demand, applying the whiſtle to his lips, performed a loud overture in token of his joy. Matters being thus brought to an accommodation, our hero told the captain, that he ſhould be glad of his company at dinner, with their common friend Hatchway, if he would in the mean time leave him to the miniſtry of Pipes; and the ſoldier went away for the preſent, in order to pay a ſhort viſit to his uncle, who, at that time, languiſhed in a declining ſtate of health, promiſing to return at the appointed hour.

The lieutenant, having ſurveyed the diſmal appearance of his friend, could not help being moved at the ſpectacle, and began to upbraid him with his obſtinate pride, which he ſwore was no better than ſelf-murder. But the young gentleman interrupted him in the courſe of his moralizing, by telling him he had reaſons for his conduct, which perhaps he ſhould impart in due ſeaſon; but at preſent his deſign was to alter that plan of behaviour, and make himſelf ſome amends for the miſery he had undergone. He accordingly ſent Pipes to redeem his cloaths from the pawnbroker's wardrobe, and beſpeak ſomething comfortable for dinner. When Godfrey came back, he was very agreeably ſurprized to ſee ſuch a favourable alteration in his externals; for, by the aſſiſtance of his valet, he had purified himſelf from the dregs of his diſtreſs, and now appeared in a decent ſuit, with clean linen, while his face was diſencumbered of the hair that overſhadowed it,

it, and his apartment prepared for the reception of company.

They enjoyed their meal with great satisfaction, entertaining one another with a recapitulation of their former adventures at the garrison. In the afternoon, Gauntlet taking his leave, in order to write a letter to his sister, at the desire of his uncle, who finding his end approaching, wanted to see her without loss of time, Peregrine made his appearance on the *Bare*, and was complimented on his coming abroad again, not only by his old mess-mates, who had not seen him for many weeks, but by a number of those objects whom his liberality had fed before his funds were exhausted. Hatchway was, by his interest with the warden, put in possession of his former quarters, and Pipes dispatched to make enquiry about Crabtree at his former lodging, where he learned that the misanthrope, after a very severe fit of illness, was removed to Kensington Gravel-pits, for the convenience of breathing a purer air than that of London.

In consequence of this information, Peregrine, who knew the narrowness of the old gentleman's fortune, next day desired his friend Gauntlet to take the trouble of visiting him in his name, with a letter, in which he expressed great concern for his indisposition, gave him notice of the fortunate intelligence he had received from the Downs, and conjured him to make use of his purse, if he was in the least hampered in his circumstances. The captain took coach immediately, and set out for the place, according to the direction which Pipes had procured.

Cadwallader having seen him at Bath, knew him again at first sight; and, though reduced to a skeleton, believed himself in such a fair way of doing well, that he would have accompanied him to the Fleet immediately, had not he been restrained by his nurse, who was, by his physician, invested with full authority to dispute and oppose his will in every thing that she should think prejudicial to his health; for he was considered, by those who had the care of him, as an old humourist, not a little distempered in his brain. He enquired particularly about the sailors, who (he said) had deterred him from carrying on his usual correspondence with Pickle, and been the immediate cause of his indisposition, by terrifying him into a fever. Understanding that the breach between Pickle and Hatchway was happily cemented, and that he was no longer in any danger from the lieutenant's resentment, he promised to be at the Fleet with the first convenient opportunity; and, in the mean time, wrote an answer to Peregrine's letter, importing that he was obliged to him for his offer, but had not the least occasion for his assistance.

In a few days our adventurer recovered his vigour, complexion, and vivacity; he mingled again in the diversions and parties of the place; and he received, in a little time, the money he had lent upon bottomry, which, together with the interest, amounted to upwards of eleven hundred pounds. The possession of this sum, while it buoyed up his spirits, involved him in perplexity. Sometimes he thought it was incumbent upon him, as a man of honour, to employ the greatest part of it in diminishing the debt for which he suffered; on the other hand, he considered that obligation effaced, by the treacherous behaviour of his creditor, who had injured him to ten times the value of the sum: and in these sentiments, entertained thoughts of attempting his escape from prison, with a view of conveying himself, with the shipwreck of his fortune, to another country, in which he might use it to better advantage.

Both suggestions were attended with such doubts and difficulties, that he hesitated between them, and for the present laid out a thousand pounds in stock, the interest of which, together with the fruits of his own industry, he hoped, would support him above want in his confinement, until something should occur that would point out the expediency of some other determination. Gauntlet still insisted upon having the honour of obtaining his liberty, at the expence of taking up his notes to Gleanum, and exhorted him to purchase a commission with part of the money which he had retrieved. The lieutenant affirmed, that it was his privilege to procure the release of his cousin Pickle; because he enjoyed a very handsome sum by his aunt, which of right belonged to the young gentleman, to whom he was moreover indebted for the use of his furniture, and for the very house that stood over his head; and that, although he

he had already made a will in his favour, he should never be satisfied, nor easy in his mind, so long as he remained deprived of his liberty, and wanted any of the conveniences of life.

Cadwallader, who by this time assisted at their councils, and was best acquainted with the peculiarity and unbending disposition of the youth, proposed, that seeing he was so averse to obligations, Mr. Hatchway should purchase of him the garrison with it's appendages, which, at a moderate price, would sell for more money than would be sufficient to discharge his debts; that, if the servile subordination of the army did not suit his inclinations, he might with his reversion buy a comfortable annuity, and retire with him to the country, where he might live absolutely independent, and entertain himself, as usual, with the ridiculous characters of mankind.

This plan was to Pickle less disagreeable than any other project which had as yet been suggested; and the lieutenant declared himself ready to execute his part of it without delay; but the soldier was mortified at the thoughts of seeing his assistance unnecessary, and eagerly objected to the retirement, as a scheme that would blast the fairest promises of fame and fortune, and bury his youth and talents in solitude and obscurity. This earnest opposition on the part of Gauntlet, hindered our adventurer from forming any immediate resolution; which was also retarded by his unwillingness to part with the garrison upon any terms, because he looked upon it as a part of his inheritance, which he could not dispose of without committing an insult upon the memory of the deceased commodore.

CHAP. XVIII.

HE IS ENGAGED IN A VERY EXTRAORDINARY CORRESPONDENCE, WHICH IS INTERRUPTED BY A VERY UNEXPECTED EVENT.

WHILE this affair was in agitation, the captain told him, in the course of conversation, that Emilia was arrived in town, and had enquired about Mr. Pickle with such an eagerness of concern, as seemed to proclaim that she was in some measure informed of his misfortune: she therefore desired to know if he might be allowed to make her acquainted with his situation, provided he should be again importuned by her on that subject, which he had at first industriously waved.

This proof, or rather presumption, of her sympathizing regard, did not fail to operate powerfully upon the bosom of Peregrine, which was immediately filled with those tumults which love, ill stifled, frequently excites. He observed, that his disgrace was such as could not be effectually concealed; therefore he saw no reason for depriving himself of Emilia's compassion, since he was for ever excluded from her affection; and desired Godfrey to present to his sister the lowly respects of a despairing lover.

But, notwithstanding his declaration of despondence on this head, his imagination involuntarily teemed with more agreeable ideas: the proposal of Crabtree had taken root in his reflection, and he could not help forming plans of pastoral felicity, in the arms of the lovely Emilia, remote from those pompous scenes which he now detested and despised. He amused his fancy with the prospect of being able to support her in a state of independency, by means of the slender annuity which it was in his power to purchase, together with the fruits of those endeavours which would profitably employ his vacant hours; and foresaw provision for his growing family in the friendship of the lieutenant, who had already constituted him his heir. He even parcelled out his hours among the necessary cares of the world, the pleasures of domestick bliss, and the enjoyments of a country life; and spent the night in ideal parties with his charming bride, sometimes walking by the sedgy bank of some transparent stream, sometimes pruning the luxuriant vine, and sometimes sitting in social converse with her in a shady grove of his own planting.

These, however, were no more than the shadowy phantoms of imagination, which he well knew would never be realized: not that he believed such happiness unattainable by a person in his circumstances; but because he would not stoop to propose a scheme, which might, in any shape, seem to interfere with the interest of Emilia, or subject

himself to a repulse from that young lady, who had rejected his addresses in the zenith of his fortune.

While he diverted himself with these agreeable reveries, an unexpected event intervened, in which she and her brother were deeply interested. The uncle was tapped for the dropsy, and died in a few days after the operation; having bequeathed, in his will, five thousand pounds to his nephew, and twice that sum to his niece, who had always enjoyed the greatest share of his favour.

If our adventurer before this occurrence, looked upon his love for Emilia as a passion which it was necessary, at any rate, to conquer or suppress; he now considered her accession of fortune as a circumstance which confirmed that necessity, and resolved to discourage every thought on that subject, which should tend to the propagation of hope. One day, in the midst of a conversation calculated for the purpose, Godfrey put into his hand a letter directed to Mr. Pickle, in the hand-writing of Emilia; which the youth no sooner recognized, than his cheeks were covered with a crimson dye, and he began to tremble with violent agitation: for he at once guessed the import of the billet, which he kissed with great reverence and devotion, and was not at all surprized when he read the following words.

'SIR,

'I Have performed a sufficient sacri-'fice to my reputation, in retain-'ing hitherto the appearance of that re-'sentment which I had long ago dis-'missed; and as the late favourable 'change in my situation impowers me 'to avow my genuine sentiments, with-'out fear of censure, or suspicion of 'mercenary design, I take this oppor-'tunity to assure you, that if I still 'maintain that place in your heart, 'which I was vain enough to think I 'once possessed, I am willing to make 'the first advances to an accommoda-'tion; and have actually furnished my 'brother with full powers to conclude 'it in the name of your appeased

'EMILIA.'

Pickle, having kissed the subscription with great ardour, fell upon his knees, and lifting up his eyes, 'Thank Heaven!' cried he with an air of transport, 'I have not been mistaken in my opi-'nion of that generous maid. I be-'lieved her inspired with the most dig-'nified and heroick sentiments, and 'now she gives me a convincing proof 'of her magnanimity: it is now my 'business to approve myself worthy of 'her regard. May Heaven inflict upon 'me the keenest arrows of it's ven-'geance, if I do not, at this instant, 'contemplate the character of Emilia 'with the most perfect love and adora-'tion! yet, amiable and inchanting as 'she is, I am, more than ever, deter-'mined to sacrifice the interest of my 'passion to my glory, though my life 'should fail in the contest; and even to 'refuse an offer, which, otherwise, the 'whole universe should not bribe me to 'forego.'

This declaration was not so unexpected as unwelcome to his friend Gauntlet, who represented that his glory was not at all interested in the affair; because he had already vindicated his generosity, in repeated proffers to lay his whole fortune at Emilia's feet, when it was impossible that any thing selfish could enter into the proposal; but that, in rejecting her present purpose, he would give the world an opportunity to say that his pride was capricious, his obstinacy invincible, and his sister would have undeniable reason to believe, that either his passion for her was dissembled, or the ardour of it considerably abated.

In answer to these remonstrances, Pickle observed, that he had long set the world at defiance; and as to the opinion of Emilia, he did not doubt that she would applaud in her heart the resolution he had taken, and do justice to the purity of his intention.

It was not an easy task to divert our hero from his designs at any time of life; but since his confinement his inflexibility was become almost insurmountable. The captain, therefore, after having discharged his conscience, in assuring him that his sister's happiness was at stake, that his mother had approved of the step she had taken, and that he himself should be extremely mortified at his refusal, forbore to press him with farther argument, which served only to rivet him the more strongly in his own opinion; and undertook to deliver this answer to Emilia's letter.

'MADAM,

'MADAM,

'THAT I revere the dignity of 'your virtue with the utmoſt 'veneration, and love you infinitely 'more than life, I am at all times ready 'to demonſtrate; but the ſacrifice to 'honour it is now my turn to pay; 'and ſuch is the rigour of my deſtiny, 'that, in order to juſtify your genero-'ſity, I muſt refuſe to profit by your 'condeſcenſion. Madam, I am doom-'ed to be for ever wretched, and to 'ſigh without ceaſing for the poſſeſſion 'of that jewel, which, though now in 'my offer, I dare not enjoy. I ſhall 'not pretend to expreſs the anguiſh that 'tears my heart, whilſt I communicate 'this fatal renunciation; but appeal to 'the delicacy of your own ſentiments, 'which can judge of my ſufferings, 'and will, doubtleſs, do juſtice to the 'ſelf-denial of your forlorn

'P. PICKLE.'

Emilia, who knew the nicety of our hero's pride, had foreſeen the purport of this epiſtle before it came to her hands; ſhe did not therefore deſpair of ſucceſs, nor deſiſt from the proſecution of her plan, which was no other than that of ſecuring her own happineſs, in eſpouſing the man upon whom ſhe had fixed her unalterable affection. Confident of his honour, and fully ſatisfied of the mutual paſſion with which they were inſpired, ſhe gradually decoyed him into a literary correſpondence, wherein ſhe attempted to refute the arguments on which he grounded his refuſal; and, without doubt, the young gentleman was not a little pleaſed with the enjoyment of ſuch delightful commerce, in the courſe of which he had (more than ever) an opportunity of admiring the poignancy of her wit, and the elegance of her underſtanding.

The contemplation of ſuch excellency, while it ſtrengthened the chains with which ſhe held him enſlaved, added emulation to the other motives that induced him to maintain the diſpute; and much ſubtlety of reaſoning was expended upon both ſides of this very particular queſtion, without any proſpect of conviction on either part; till at laſt ſhe began to deſpair of making him a proſelyte to her opinion by dint of argument, and reſolved for the future to apply herſelf chiefly to the irreſtible preſſeſſions of his love, which were not at all diminiſhed or impaired by the eſſays of her pen. With this view ſhe propoſed a conference, pretending that it was impoſſible to convey all her reflections upon this ſubject in a ſeries of ſhort letters; and Godfrey undertook to bail him for the day: but, conſcious of her power, he would not truſt himſelf in her preſence, though his heart throbbed with all the eagerneſs of deſire to ſee her fair eyes diſrobed of that reſentment which they had wore ſo long, and to enjoy the raviſhing ſweets of a fond reconciliation.

Nature could not have held out againſt ſuch powerful attacks, had not the pride and caprice of his diſpoſition been gratified to the full in the triumph of his reſiſtance; he looked upon the conteſt as altogether original, and perſevered with obſtinacy, becauſe he thought himſelf ſure of favourable terms, whenever he ſhould be diſpoſed to capitulate. Perhaps he might have over-ſhot himſelf in the courſe of his perſeverance: a young lady of Emilia's fortune and attractions could not fail to find herſelf ſurrounded by temptations which few women can reſiſt. She might have miſinterpreted the meaning of ſome paragraph, or taken umbrage at an unguarded expreſſion in one of Peregrine's letters: ſhe might have been tired out by his obſtinate peculiarity; or, at the long run, conſtrued it into madneſs, ſlight, or indifference; or, rather than waſte her prime in fruitleſs endeavours to ſubdue the pride of an headſtrong humouriſt, ſhe might have liſtened to the voice of ſome admirer, fraught with qualifications ſufficient to engage her eſteem and affection. But all theſe poſſibilities were providentially prevented by an accident, attended with more important conſequences than any we have hitherto recounted.

Early one morning, Pipes was diſturbed by the arrival of a meſſenger, who had been ſent expreſs from the country by Mr. Clover, with a packet for the lieutenant, and arrived in town over night; but as he was obliged to have recourſe to the information of Jack's correſpondent in the city, touching the place of his abode, before he demanded entrance at the Fleet, the gate was ſhut; nor would the turnkeys admit him, although he told them, that he was charged with a meſſage of the utmoſt conſequence; ſo that he was fain to tarry till

day-break, when he, at his earneſt ſolicitation, was allowed to enter.

Hatchway, opening the packet, found a letter incloſed for Peregrine, with an earneſt requeſt that he ſhould forward it to the hands of that young gentleman with all poſſible diſpatch. Jack, who could not dive into the meaning of this extraordinary injunction, began to imagine that Mrs. Clover lay at the point of death, and wanted to take her laſt farewel of her brother; and this conceit worked ſo ſtrongly upon his imagination, that, while he huddled on his cloaths, and made the beſt of his way to the apartment of our hero, he could not help curſing, within himſelf, the folly of the huſband in ſending ſuch diſagreeable meſſages to a man of Peregrine's impatient temper, already ſoured by his own uneaſy ſituation.

This reflection would have induced him to ſuppreſs the letter, had not he been afraid to tamper with the tickliſh diſpoſition of his friend, to whom, while he delivered it, 'As for my own part,' ſaid he, 'may-hap I may have as much 'natural affection as another; but, 'when my ſpouſe parted, I bore my 'misfortune like a Britiſh man and a 'Chriſtian: for, why? he's no better 'than a freſh-water ſailor, who knows 'not how to ſtem the current of miſ-'chance.'

Pickle being waked from a pleaſant dream, in which the fair Emilia was principally concerned, and hearing this ſtrange preamble, ſat up in his bed, and unſealed the letter in a ſtate of mortification and diſguſt; but what were the emotions of his ſoul, when he read the following intimation!

'DEAR BROTHER,

'IT hath pleaſed God to take your 'father ſuddenly off by a fit of 'apoplexy; and as he has died inteſtate, 'I give you this notice, that you may, 'with all ſpeed, come down and take 'poſſeſſion of your right in deſpite of 'Mauter Gam and his mother, who, 'you may be ſure, do not ſit eaſy under 'this unexpected diſpenſation of Pro-'vidence. I have, by virtue of being 'a juſtice of the peace, taken ſuch pre-'cautions as I thought neceſſary for 'your advantage; and the funeral ſhall 'be deferred until your pleaſure be 'known. Your ſiſter, though ſeverely 'afflicted by her father's fate, ſubmits 'to the will of Heaven with laudable 'reſignation, and begs you will ſet out 'for this place without delay; in which 'requeſt ſhe is joined by, Sir, your 'affectionate brother, and humble ſer-'vant,

'CHARLES CLOVER.'

Peregrine, at firſt, looked upon this epiſtle as a mere illuſion of the brain, and a continuation of the reverie in which he had been engaged. He read it ten times over, without being perſuaded that he was actually awake; he rubbed his eyes, and ſhook his head, in order to ſhake off the drowſy vapours that ſurrounded him; he hemm'd thrice with great vociferation, ſnapped his fingers, tweaked his noſe, ſtarted up from his bed, and opening the caſement, took a ſurvey of the well known objects that appeared on each ſide of his habitation. Every thing ſeemed congruous and connected, and he ſaid, within himſelf, 'Sure this is the moſt diſtinct dream 'that ever ſleep produced.' Then he had recourſe again to the paper, which he carefully peruſed, without finding any variation from his firſt notion of the contents.

Hatchway, ſeeing all his extravagances of action, accompanied with a wild ſtare of diſtraction, began to believe that his head was at length fairly turned, and was really meditating means for ſecuring his perſon; when Pickle, in a tone of ſurprize, exclaimed, 'Good 'God! am I or am I not awake?'—'Why look ye, Couſin Pickle,' replied the lieutenant, 'that is a queſtion 'which the deep-ſea line of my under-'ſtanding is not long enough to ſound: 'but; howſomever, tho' I can't truſt 'to the obſervation I have taken, it 'ſhall go hard but I will fall upon a 'way to gueſs where abouts we are.' So ſaying, he lifted up a pitcher full of cold water, that ſtood behind the outward door, and diſcharged it in the face of Peregrine without ceremony or heſitation.

This remedy produced the deſired effect: unpalatable as it was, the young gentleman no ſooner recovered his breath, which was endangered by ſuch a ſudden application, than he thanked his friend Jack for the ſeaſonable operation he had performed. Having no longer any juſt reaſon to doubt the reality of what appeared ſo convincingly to his ſenſes, he

ſhifted

shifted himself on the instant, not without hurry and trepidation; and putting on his morning dress, sallied forth to the *Bare*, in order to deliberate with himself on the important intelligence he had received.

Hatchway, not yet fully convinced of his sanity, and curious to know the purport of the letter, which had affected him in such an extraordinary manner, carefully attended his footsteps in this excursion, in hope of being favoured with his confidence in the course of their perambulation. Our hero no sooner appeared at the street-door, than he was saluted by the messenger, who having posted himself in the way for that purpose, 'God bless your noble honour, 'Squire Pickle,' cried he, 'and give 'you joy of succeeding to your father's 'estate!' These words had scarce proceeded from his mouth, when the lieutenant, hopping eagerly towards the countryman, squeezed his hand with great affection, and asked if the old gentleman had actually taken his departure. 'Aye, Master Hatchway,' replied the other, 'in such a woundy 'haste, that he forgot to make a will.' —'Body of me!' exclaimed the seaman, 'these are the best tidings I have 'heard since I first went to sea. Here, 'my lad, take my purse, and stow thy-'self chocque full of the best liquor in 'the land.' So saying, he tipped the peasant with ten pieces, and immediately the whole place echoed with the sound of Tom's instrument. Peregrine, repairing to the walk, communicated the billet to his honest friend, who at his desire went forthwith to the lodgings of Captain Gauntlet, and returned in less than half an hour with that gentleman, who (I need not say) was heartily rejoiced at the occasion.

CHAP. XIX.

PEREGRINE HOLDS A CONSULTATION WITH HIS FRIENDS, IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH HE BIDS ADIEU TO THE FLEET. HE ARRIVES AT HIS FATHER'S HOUSE, AND ASSERTS HIS RIGHT OF INHERITANCE.

NOR did our hero keep the misanthrope in ignorance of this happy turn of fortune: Pipes was dispatched to the senior with a message, requesting his immediate presence; and he accordingly appeared, in obedience to the summons, growling with discontent, for having been deprived of several hours of his natural rest. His mouth was immediately stopped with the letter, at which he *smiled horrible a ghastly grin*; and, after a compliment of congratulation, they entered into close divan, about the measures to be taken in consequence of this event.

There was no room for much debate: it was unanimously agreed, that Pickle should set out with all possible dispatch for the garrison, to which Gauntlet and Hatchway resolved to attend him. Pipes was accordingly ordered to prepare a couple of post-chaises, while Godfrey went to procure bail for his friend, and provide them with money for the expence of the expedition, but not before he was desired by Peregrine to conceal this piece of news from his sister, that our youth might have an opportunity to surprize her in a more interesting manner, after he should have settled his affairs.

All these previous steps being taken, in less than an hour our hero took his leave of the Fleet, after he had left twenty guineas with the warden for the relief of the poor prisoners, a great number of whom convoyed him to the gate, pouring forth prayers for his long life and prosperity; and he took the road to the garrison, in the most elevated transports of joy, unallayed with the least mixture of grief at the death of a parent whose paternal tenderness he had never known. His breast was absolutely a stranger to that boasted στοργὴ, or instinct of affection, by which the charities are supposed to subsist.

Of all the journies he had ever made, this, sure, was the most delightful: he felt all the extasy that must naturally be produced in a young man of his imagination from such a sudden transition in point of circumstance; he found himself delivered from confinement and disgrace, without being obliged to any person upon earth for his deliverance; he had it now in his power to retort the contempt of the world in a manner suited to his most sanguine wish; he was reconciled to his friend, and enabled to gratify his love, even upon his own terms; and saw himself in possession of a fortune more ample than his first inheritance,

heritance, with a ſtock of experience that would ſteer him clear of all thoſe quick-ſands, among which he had been formerly wrecked.

In the middle of their journey, while they halted at an inn for a ſhort refreſhment and change of horſes, a poſtilion running up to Peregrine in the yard, fell at his feet, claſped his knees with great eagerneſs and agitation, and preſented to him the individual face of his old valet de chambre. The youth perceiving him in ſuch an abject garb and attitude, commanded him to riſe and tell the cauſe of ſuch a miſerable reverſe in his fortune. Upon which Hadgi gave him to underſtand, that he had been ruined by his wife, who having robbed him of all his caſh and valuable effects, had eloped from his houſe with one of his own cuſtomers, who appeared in the character of a French count, but was in reality no other than an Italian fidler; that, in conſequence of this retreat, he (the huſband) was diſabled from paying a conſiderable ſum which he had ſet apart for his wine-merchant; who being diſappointed in his expectation, took out an execution againſt his effects; and the reſt of his creditors following his example, hunted him out of houſe and home: ſo that finding his perſon in danger at London, he had been obliged to eſcape into the country, ſkulking about from one village to another, till being quite deſtitute of all ſupport, he had undertaken his preſent office, to ſave himſelf from ſtarving.

Peregrine liſtened with compaſſion to his lamentable tale, which too well accounted for his not appearing in the Fleet, with offers of ſervice to his maſter in diſtreſs; a circumſtance that Pickle had all along imputed to his avarice and ingratitude. He aſſured him, that as he had been the means of throwing in his way the temptation to which he fell a ſacrifice, he would charge himſelf with the retrieval of his affairs: in the mean time, he made him taſte of his bounty, and deſired him to continue in his preſent employment until he ſhould return from the garriſon, when he would conſider his ſituation, and do ſomething for his immediate relief.

Hadgi attempted to kiſs his ſhoe, and wept, or affected to weep, with ſenſibility at this gracious reception; he even made a merit of his unwillingneſs to exerciſe his new occupation, and earneſtly begged that he might be allowed to give immediate attendance upon his dear maſter, from whom he could not bear the thoughts of a ſecond parting. His intreaties were reinforced by the interceſſion of his two friends, in conſequence of which the Swiſs was permitted to follow them at his own leiſure, while they ſet forwards after a ſlight repaſt, and reached the place of their deſtination before ten o'clock at night.

Peregrine, inſtead of alighting at the garriſon, rode ſtraightway to his father's houſe; and no perſon appearing to receive him, not even a ſervant to take care of his chaiſe, he diſmounted without aſſiſtance. Being followed by his two friends, he advanced into the hall, where perceiving a bell-rope, he made immediate application to it in ſuch a manner as brought a couple of footmen into his preſence. After having reprimanded them, with a ſtern look, for their neglect in point of attendance, he commanded them to ſhew him into an apartment; and as they ſeemed unwilling to yield obedience to his orders, aſked if they did not belong to the family.

One of them, who took upon himſelf the office of ſpokeſman, replied with a ſullen air, that they had been in the ſervice of old Mr. Pickle, and now that he was dead, thought themſelves bound to obey nobody but their lady, and her ſon Mr. Gamaliel. This declaration had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when our hero gave them to underſtand, that ſince they were not diſpoſed to own any other maſter, they muſt change their quarters immediately. He ordered them to decamp without farther preparation; and as they ſtill continued reſtive, they were kicked out of doors by the captain and his friend Hatchway. Squire Gam, who overheard every thing that paſſed, and was now more than ever inflamed with that rancour which he had ſucked with his mother's milk, flew to the aſſiſtance of his adherents, with a piſtol in each hand, bellowing, 'Thieves! 'thieves!' with great vociferation, as if he had miſtaken the buſineſs of the ſtrangers, and actually believed himſelf in danger of being robbed. Under this pretence he diſcharged a piece at his brother, who luckily eſcaped the ſhot, cloſed with him in a moment, and wreſting

ing the other piſtol from his gripe, turned him out into the court-yard, to the conſolation of his two dependents.

By this time, Pipes and the two poſtilions had taken poſſeſſion of the ſtables, without being oppoſed by the coachman and his deputy, who quietly ſubmitted to the authority of their new ſovereign: but the noiſe of the piſtol had alarmed Mrs. Pickle, who running down ſtairs with the moſt frantick appearance, attended by two maids and the curate, who ſtill maintained his place of chaplain and ghoſtly director in the family, would have aſſaulted our hero with her nails, had ſhe not been reſtrained by her attendants. Though they prevented her from uſing her hands, they could not hinder her from exerciſing her tongue, which ſhe wagged againſt him with all the virulence of malice. She aſked, if he was come to butcher his brother, to inſult his father's corpſe, and triumph in her affliction; ſhe beſtowed upon him the epithets of ſpendthrift, gaol-bird, and unnatural ruffian; ſhe begged pardon of God for having brought ſuch a monſter into the world; accuſed him of having brought his father's grey hairs with ſorrow to the grave; and affirmed, that were he to touch the body, it would bleed at his approach.

Without pretending to refute the articles of this ridiculous charge, he allowed her to ring out her alarm; and then calmly replied, that if ſhe did not quietly retire to her chamber, and behave as became a perſon in her preſent ſituation, he ſhould inſiſt upon her removing to another lodging without delay; for he was determined to be maſter in his own family. The lady, who in all probabily, expected that he would endeavour to appeaſe her with all the tenderneſs of filial ſubmiſſion, was ſo much exaſperated at his cavalier behaviour, that her conſtitution could not ſupport the tranſports of her ſpirits; and ſhe was carried off by her women in a fit, while the officious clergyman was diſmiſſed after his pupil, with all the circumſtances of diſgrace.

Our hero having thus made his quarters good, took poſſeſſion of the beſt apartment in the houſe, and ſent notice of his arrival to Mr. Clover; who, with his wife, viſited him in leſs than an hour, and was not a little ſurprized to find him ſo ſuddenly ſettled in his father's houſe. The meeting of Julia and her brother was extremely pathetick. She had always loved him with uncommon tenderneſs, and looked upon him as the ornament of her family; but ſhe had heard of his extravagancies with regret, and though ſhe conſidered the ſtories that were circulated at his expence, as the malicious exaggerations of his mother and her darling ſon, her apprehenſion had been grievouſly alarmed by an account of his impriſonment and diſtreſs, which had been accidentally conveyed to that country by a gentleman from London, who had been formerly of his acquaintance; ſhe could not, therefore, without the moſt tender emotions of joy, ſee him, as it were, reſtored to his rightful inheritance, and re-eſtabliſhed in that ſtation of life which ſhe thought he could fill with dignity and importance.

After their mutual expreſſions of affection, ſhe retired to her mother's chamber, with a view to make a ſecond offer of her ſervice and attendance, which had been already rejected with ſcorn ſince her father's death; while Peregrine conſulted his brother-in-law about the affairs of the family, ſo far as they had fallen within his cognizance and obſervation.

Mr. Clover told him, that though he was never favoured with the confidence of the defunct, he knew ſome of his intimates, who had been tampered with by Mrs. Pickle, and even engaged to ſecond the remonſtrances by which ſhe had often endeavoured to perſuade her huſband to ſettle his affairs by a formal will; but that he had from time to time evaded their importunities with ſurprizing excuſes of procraſtination, that plainly appeared to be the reſult of invention and deſign, far above the ſuppoſed pitch of his capacity; a circumſtance from which Mr. Clover concluded, that the old gentleman imagined his life would not have been ſecure, had he once taken ſuch a ſtep as would have rendered it unneceſſary to the independence of his ſecond ſon. He moreover obſerved, that in conſequence of this information, he no ſooner heard of Mr. Pickle's death, which happened at the club, than he went directly with a lawyer to his houſe, before any cabal or conſpiracy could be formed againſt the rightful heir; and, in preſence of witneſſes provided for the purpoſe, ſealed up all the papers of the deceaſed, after the

the widow had, in the first transports of her sorrow and vexation, fairly owned, that her husband had died intestate.

Peregrine was extremely well satisfied with this intelligence, by which all his doubts were dispelled; and having cheerfully supped with his friends on a cold collation which his brother-in-law had brought in his chariot, they retired to rest, in different chambers, after Julia had met with another repulse from her capricious mother, whose overflowing rage had now subsided into the former channel of calm inveteracy.

Next morning the house was supplied with some servants from the garrison, and preparations were made for the funeral of the deceased. Gam having taken lodgings in the neighbourhood, came with a chaise and cart to demand his mother, together with his own cloaths, and her personal effects.

Our hero, though he would not suffer him to enter the door, allowed his proposal to be communicated to the widow, who eagerly embraced the opportunity of removing; and was, with her own baggage, and that of her beloved son, conveyed to the place which he had prepared for her reception. Thither she was followed by her woman, who was desired by Peregrine to assure her mistress, that, until a regular provision could be settled upon her, she might command him in point of money, or any other accommodation in his power.

CHAP. XX.

HE PERFORMS THE LAST OFFICES TO HIS FATHER, AND RETURNS TO LONDON UPON A VERY INTERESTING DESIGN.

SUITS of mourning being provided for himself, his friends, and adherents, and every other previous measure taken suitable to the occasion, his father was interred in a private manner in the parish church; and his papers being examined, in presence of many persons of honour and integrity invited for that purpose, no will was found, or any other deed, in favour of the second son, though it appeared by the marriage settlement, that the widow was intitled to a jointure of five hundred pounds a year. The rest of his papers consisted of East India bonds, South Sea annuities, mortgages, notes, and assignments, to the amount of fourscore thousand seven hundred and sixty pounds, exclusive of the house, plate and furniture, horses, equipage and cattle, with the garden and park adjacent, to a very considerable extent.

This was a sum that even exceeded his expectation, and could not fail to entertain his fancy with the most agreeable ideas. He found himself immediately a man of vast consequence among his country neighbours, who visited him with compliments of congratulation, and treated him with such respect as would have effectually spoiled any young man of his disposition, who had not the same advantages of experience as he had already purchased at a very extravagant price. Thus shielded with caution, he bore his prosperity with surprizing temperance; every body was charmed with his affability and moderation. When he made a circuit round the gentlemen of the district, in order to repay the courtesy which he owed, he was caressed by them with uncommon assiduity, and advised to offer himself as a candidate for the county at the next election, which they supposed would soon happen, because the present member was in a declining state of health. Nor did his person and address escape unheeded by the ladies, many of whom did not scruple to spread their attractions before him, with a view of captivating such a valuable prize: nay, such an impression did this legacy make upon a certain peer, who resided in this part of the country, that he cultivated Pickle's acquaintance with great eagerness; and, without circumlocution, offered to him in marriage his only daughter, with a very considerable fortune.

Our hero expressed himself upon this occasion as became a man of honour, sensibility, and politeness; and frankly gave his lordship to understand, that his heart was already engaged. He was pleased with the opportunity of making such a sacrifice to his passion for Emilia, which, by this time, inflamed his thoughts to such a degree of impatience, that he resolved to depart for London with all possible speed; and for that purpose industriously employed almost every hour of his time in regulating his domestick affairs. He paid off all his father's servants, and hired others, at the

the recommendation of his ſiſter, who promiſed to ſuperintend his houſhold in his abſence: he advanced the firſt half-yearly payment of his mother's jointure; and as for his brother Gam, he gave him divers opportunities of acknowledging his faults, ſo as that he might have anſwered to his own conſcience for taking any ſtep in his favour; but that young gentleman was not yet ſufficiently humbled by misfortune, and not only forbore to make any overtures of peace, but alſo took all occaſions to ſlander the conduct and revile the perſon of our hero, being in this practice comforted and abetted by his righteous mamma.

Every thing being thus ſettled for the preſent, the triumvirate ſet out on their return to town in the ſame manner with that in which they had arrived in the country, except in this ſmall variation, that Hatchway's chaiſe-companion was now the valet de chambre refitted, inſtead of Pipes, who, with another lacquey, attended them on horſeback. When they had performed two thirds of their way to London, they chanced to overtake a country ſquire, on his return from a viſit to one of his neighbours, who had entertained him with ſuch hoſpitality, that (as the lieutenant obſerved) he rolled himſelf almoſt gunwale to every motion of his horſe, which was a fine hunter: and when the chaiſes paſſed him at full ſpeed he ſet up the ſportſman's holloa, in a voice that ſounded like a French horn, clapping ſpurs to Sorrrel at the ſame time, in order to keep up with the pace of the machine.

Peregrine, who was animated with an uncommon flow of ſpirit, ordered his poſtilion to proceed more ſoftly; and entered into converſation with the ſtranger touching the make and mettle of his horſe, upon which he deſcanted with ſo much learning, that the ſquire was aſtoniſhed at his knowledge. When they approached his habitation, he invited the young gentleman and his company to halt, and drink a bottle of his ale; and was ſo preſſing in his ſolicitation, that they complied with his requeſt. He accordingly conducted them through a ſpacious avenue, that extended as far as the highway, to the gate of a large *chateau*, of a moſt noble and venerable appearance, which induced them to alight and view the apartments, contrary to their firſt intention of drinking a glaſs of his October at the door.

The rooms were every way ſuitable to the magnificence of the outſide, and our hero imagined they had made a tour through the whole ſweep, when the landlord gave him to underſtand, that they had not yet ſeen the beſt apartment of the houſe, and immediately led them into a ſpacious dining room, which Peregrine did not enter without giving manifeſt ſigns of uncommon aſtoniſhment. The pannels all round were covered with portraits, at full length, by Vandyke; and not one of them appeared without a ridiculous tye-periwig, in the ſtyle of thoſe that uſually hang over the ſhops of two-penny barbers. The ſtrait boots in which the figures had been originally painted, and the other circumſtances of attitude and drapery, ſo inconſiſtent with this monſtrous furniture of the head, exhibited ſuch a ludicrous appearance, that Pickle's wonder, in a little time, gave way to his mirth, and he was ſeized with a violent fit of laughter which had well nigh deprived him of his breath.

The ſquire, half pleaſed and half offended at this expreſſion of ridicule, 'I know,' ſaid he, 'what makes you 'laugh ſo wofully: you think it 'ſtrange to zee my vorefathers booted 'and ſpurred, with huge three-tailed 'periwigs on their pates. The truth 'of the matter is this; I could not 'abide to zee the pictures of my vamily 'with a parcel of looſe hair hanging 'about their eyes, like zo many colts; 'and zo I employed a painter vellow 'from Lundon to clap decent peri-'wigs upon their ſkulls, at the rate of 'vive ſhillings a head, and offered him 'three ſhillings a-piece to furniſh each 'with an handſome pair of ſhoes and 'ſtockings: but the raſcal, thinking I 'muſt have 'em done at any price after 'their heads were covered, haggled with 'me for vour ſhillings a picture; and 'zo, rather than be impoſed upon, I 'turned him off, and ſhall let 'em ſtand 'as they are, till zome more reaſonable 'brother of the bruſh comes round the 'country.'

Pickle commended his reſolution, though in his heart he bleſſed himſelf from ſuch a barbarous Goth; and, after they had diſpatched two or three bottles of his beer, they proceeded on their jour-

ney, and arrived in town about eleven at night.

CHAP. XXI.

HE ENJOYS AN INTERVIEW WITH EMILIA, AND MAKES HIMSELF AMPLE AMENDS FOR ALL THE MORTIFICATIONS OF HIS LIFE.

GODFREY, who had taken leave of his ſiſter, on pretence of making a ſhort excurſion with Peregrine, whoſe health required the enjoyment of freſh air after his long confinement, ſent a meſſage to her that ſame night, announcing his arrival, and giving her notice that he would breakfaſt with her next morning; when he and our hero, who had dreſſed himſelf for the purpoſe, taking a hackney-coach, repaired to her lodging, and were introduced into a parlour adjoining to that in which the tea-table was ſet. Here they had not waited many minutes, when they heard the ſound of feet coming down ſtairs; upon which our hero's heart began to beat the alarm. He concealed himſelf behind the ſcreen, by the direction of his friend, whoſe ears being ſaluted with Sophy's voice from the next room, he flew into it with great ardour, and enjoyed upon her lips the ſweet tranſports of a meeting ſo unexpected; for he had left her in her father's houſe at Windſor.

Amidſt theſe emotions, he had almoſt forgot the ſituation of Peregrine; when Emilia, aſſuming an inchanting air, 'Is not this,' ſaid ſhe, 'a moſt 'provoking ſcene to a young woman 'like me, who am doomed to wear the 'willow by the ſtrange caprice of my 'lover? Upon my word, brother, you 'have done me infinite prejudice, in 'promoting this jaunt with my obſti'nate correſpondent; who, I ſuppoſe, 'is ſo raviſhed with his tranſient glimpſe 'of liberty, that he will never be per'ſuaded to incur unneceſſary confine'ment for the future.'—'My dear 'ſiſter,' replied the captain, tauntingly, 'your own pride ſet him the example; 'ſo you muſt e'en ſtand to the conſe'quence of his imitation.'—'It is a 'hard caſe, however,' anſwered the fair offender, 'that I ſhould ſuffer all my 'life, by one venial treſpaſs. Heigh ho! 'who would imagine that a ſprightly 'girl, ſuch as I, with ten thouſand 'pounds, ſhould go a begging? I have 'a good mind to marry the next perſon 'that aſks me the queſtion, in order to 'be revenged upon this unyielding hu'mouriſt. Did the dear fellow diſcover 'no inclination to ſee me in all the 'term of his releaſement? Well, if ever 'I can catch the fugitive again, he ſhall 'ſing in his cage for life.'

It is impoſſible to convey to the reader a juſt idea of Peregrine's tranſports, while he overheard this declaration; which was no ſooner pronounced, than unable to reſiſt the impetuoſity of his paſſion, he ſprung from his lurking-place, exclaiming, 'Here I ſurren'der!' and ruſhing into her preſence, was ſo dazzled with her beauty, that his ſpeech failed; he was fixed, like a ſtatue, to the floor, and all his faculties were abſorpt in admiration. Indeed, ſhe was now in the full bloom of her charms, and it was nearly impoſſible to look upon her without emotion. What then muſt have been the extaſy of our youth, whoſe paſſion was whetted with all the incitements which could ſtimulate the human heart! The ladies ſcreamed with ſurprize at his appearance, and Emilia underwent ſuch agitation as fluſhed every charm with irreſiſtible energy: her cheeks glowed with a moſt delicate ſuffuſion, and her boſom heaved with ſuch bewitching undulation, that the cambrick could not conceal or contain the ſnowy hemiſpheres that roſe like a viſion of paradiſe to his view.

While he was almoſt fainting with unutterable delight, ſhe ſeemed ready to ſink under the tumults of tenderneſs and confuſion; when our hero, perceiving her condition, obeyed the impulſe of his love, and circled the charmer in his arms, without ſuffering the leaſt frown or ſymptom of diſpleaſure. Not all the pleaſures of his life had amounted to the ineffable joy of this embrace, in which he continued for ſome minutes totally entranced. He faſtened upon her pouting lips, with all the eagerneſs of rapture; and, while his brain ſeemed to whirl round with tranſport, exclaimed in a delirium of bliſs, 'Heaven and 'earth! this is too much to bear.'

His imagination was accordingly relieved, and his attention in ſome meaſure divided, by the interpoſition of Sophy, who kindly chid him for his having overlooked his old friends: thus accoſted,

accosted, he quitted his delicious armful, and saluting Mrs. Gauntlet, asked pardon for his neglect; observing, that such rudeness was excusable, considering the long and unhappy exile which he had suffered from the jewel of his soul. Then turning to Emilia, 'I am 'come, Madam,' said he, 'to claim 'the performance of your promise, 'which I can produce under your own 'fair hand: you may, therefore, lay 'aside all superfluous ceremony and 'shyness, and crown my happiness with-'out farther delay; for, upon my soul! 'my thoughts are wound up to the last 'pitch of expectation, and I shall cer-'tainly run distracted if I am doomed 'to any term of probation.'

His mistress, having by this time recollected herself, replied with a most exhilarating smile, 'I ought to punish 'you for your obstinacy with the mor-'tification of a twelve month's trial; 'but 'tis dangerous to tamper with an 'admirer of your disposition, and there-'fore I think I must make sure of you 'while it is in my power.'—'You are 'willing, then, to take me for better 'for worse, in presence of Heaven and 'these witnesses?' cried Peregrine kneeling, and applying her hand to his lips. At this interrogation, her features softened into an amazing expression of condescending love; and while she darted a side-glance that thrilled to his marrow, and heaved a sigh more soft than Zephyr's balmy wing, her answer was, 'Why—aye—and Heaven grant me 'patience to bear the humours of such a 'yoke-fellow.'—'And may the same 'powers,' replied the youth, 'grant 'me life and opportunity to manifest the 'immensity of my love! Meanwhile, I 'have eighty thousand pounds, which 'shall be laid immediately in your lap.'

So saying, he sealed the contract upon her lips, and explained the mystery of his last words, which had begun to operate upon the wonder of the two sisters. Sophy was agreeably surprized with the account of his good fortune: nor was it, in all probability, unacceptable to the lovely Emilia; though, from this information, she took an opportunity to upbraid her admirer with the inflexibility of his pride, which (she scrupled not to say) would have baffled all the suggestions of his passion, had not it been gratified by this providential event.

Matters being thus happily matured, the lover begged that immediate recourse might be had to the church, and his happiness ascertained before night. But the bride objected, with great vehemence, to such precipitation, being desirous of her mother's presence at the ceremony; and she was seconded in her opinion by her brother's wife. Peregrine, maddening with desire, assaulted her with the most earnest intreaties, representing, that as her mother's consent was already obtained, there was surely no necessity for a delay, that must infallibly make a dangerous impression upon his brain and constitution. He fell at her feet, in all the agony of impatience; swore that his life and intellects would actually be in jeopardy by her refusal; and when she attempted to argue him out of his demand, began to rave with such extravagance, that Sophy was frightened into conviction: and Godfrey enforcing the remonstrances of his friend, the amiable Emilia was teazed into compliance.

After breakfast the bridegroom and his companion set out for the Commons for a licence, having first agreed upon the house at which the ceremony should be performed, in the lodgings of the bride: and the permission being obtained, they found means to engage a clergyman, who undertook to attend them at their own time and place. Then a ring was purchased for the occasion; and they went in search of the lieutenant, with whom they dined at a tavern, and not only made him acquainted with the steps they had taken, but desired that he would stand godfather to the bride: an employment which Jack accepted with demonstrations of particular satisfaction; till chancing to look into the street, and seeing Cadwallader approach the door, in consequence of a message they had sent to him by Pipes, he declined the office in favour of the senior; who was accordingly ordained for that purpose, on the supposition that such a mark of regard might facilitate his concurrence with a match, which otherwise he would certainly oppose, as he was a professed enemy to wedlock, and as yet ignorant of Peregrine's intention.

After having congratulated Pickle upon his success, and shook his two friends by the hand, the misanthrope asked whose mare was dead, that he was summoned in such a plaguy hurry from his dinner, which he had been fain to

gobble up like a cannibal. Our hero gave him to understand, that they had made an appointment to drink tea with two agreeable ladies, and were unwilling that he should lose the opportunity of enjoying an entertainment which he loved so much. Crabtree, shrivelling up his face like an autumn leaf at this intimation, cursed his complaisance, and swore they should keep their assignation without him, for he and letchery had shook hands many years ago.

The bridegroom, however, likening him unto an old coachman, who still delights in the smack of the whip, and dropping some flattering hints of his manhood, even at these years, he was gradually prevailed upon to accompany them to the place of rendezvous; where, being ushered into a dining-room, they had not waited three minutes, when they were joined by the parson, who had observed the hour with great punctuality.

This gentleman no sooner entered the room, than Cadwallader, in a whisper to Gauntlet, asked if that was not the cock-bawd; and before the captain could make any reply, 'What an unconscionable whore-master the rogue is!' said he; 'scarce discharged from confinement, and sweetened with a little fresh air, when he wenches with a pimp in canonicals in his pay.' The door again opened, and Emilia broke in upon them with such dignity of mien, and divinity of aspect, as inspired every spectator with astonishment and admiration. The lieutenant, who had not seen her since her charms were ripened into such perfection, expressed his wonder and approbation in an exclamation of, 'Add's zooks! what a glorious galley!' and the misanthrope's visage was instantly metamorphosed into the face of a mountain goat. He licked his lips instinctively, snuffed the air, and squinted with a most horrible obliquity of vision.

The bride and her sister being seated, and Hatchway having renewed his acquaintance with the former, who recognized him with particular civility, Peregrine withdrew into another apartment with his friend Crabtree, to whom he imparted the design of this meeting; which the latter no sooner understood, than he attempted to retreat, without making any other reply than that of, 'Pshaw! rot your matrimony! can't you put your neck in the noose without my being a witness of your folly?'

The young gentleman, in order to vanquish this aversion, stepped to the door of the next room, and begged the favour of speaking with Emilia, to whom he introduced the testy old batchelor, as one of his particular friends, who desired to have the honour of giving her away. The bewitching smile with which she received his salute, and granted his request, at once overcame the disapprobation of the misanthrope, who with a relaxation in his countenance, which had never been perceived before that instant, thanked her in the most polite terms for such an agreeable mark of distinction. He accordingly led her into the dining-room, where the ceremony was performed without delay; and after the husband had asserted his prerogative on her lips, the whole company saluted her by the name of Mrs. Pickle.

I shall leave the sensible reader to judge what passed at this juncture, within the bosoms of the new-married couple: Peregrine's heart was fired with inexpressible ardour and impatience; while the transports of the bride were mingled with a dash of diffidence and apprehension. Gauntlet saw it would be too much for both, to bear their present tantalizing situation till night, without some amusement to divert their thoughts; and therefore proposed to pass part of the evening at the publick entertainments in Marybone Gardens, which were at that time frequented by the best company in town. The scheme was relished by the discreet Sophy, who saw the meaning of the proposal, and the bride submitted to the persuasion of her sister; so that, after tea, two coaches were called, and Peregrine was forcibly separated from his charmer during the conveyance.

The new-married couple and their company having made shift to spend the evening, and supped on a slight collation in one of the boxes, Peregrine's patience was almost quite exhausted; and taking Godfrey aside, he imparted his intention to withdraw in private from the sea-wit of his friend Hatchway, who would otherwise retard his bliss with unseasonable impediments, which, at present, he could not possibly bear. Gauntlet, who sympathized with his impatience, undertook to intoxicate the lieutenant

lieutenant with bumpers to the joy of the bride, and in the mean time desired Sophy to retire with his sister, under the auspices of Cadwallader, who promised to squire them home.

The ladies were accordingly conducted to the coach; and Jack proposed to the captain, that, for the sake of the joke, the bridegroom should be plied with liquor, in such a manner as would effectually disable him from enjoying the fruits of his good fortune for one night at least. Gauntlet seemed to relish the scheme, and they prevailed upon Pickle to accompany them to a certain tavern, on pretence of drinking a farewel glass to a single life; there the bottle was circulated, till Hatchway's brain began to suffer innovation. As he had secured our hero's hat and sword, he felt no apprehension of an elopement, which however was effected; and the youth hastened on the wings of love to the arms of his inchanting bride. He found Crabtree in a parlour, waiting for his return, and disposed to entertain him with a lecture upon temperance; to which he paid very little attention, but ringing for Emilia's maid, desired to know if her mistress was abed. Being answered in the affirmative, he sent her up stairs to announce his arrival, undressed himself to a loose gown and slippers, and wishing the misanthrope good night, after having desired to see him next day, followed in person to the delicious scene, where he found her elegantly dished out, the fairest daughter of chastity and love.

When he approached, she was overwhelmed with confusion, and hid her lovely face from his transporting view. Mrs. Gauntlet, seeing his eyes kindled at the occasion, kissed her charming sister; who, throwing her snowy arms about her neck, would have detained her in the room, had not Peregrine gently disengaged her confidante from her embrace, and conducted her trembling to the door; which having bolted and barricadoed, he profited by his good fortune, and his felicity was perfect.

Next day he rose about noon, and found his three friends assembled, when he learned that Jack had fallen in his own snare, and been obliged to lie in the same tavern where he fell: a circumstance of which he was so much ashamed, that Peregrine and his wife escaped many jokes, which he would have certainly cracked, had he not lain under the imputation of this disgrace. In half an hour after he came down, Mrs. Pickle appeared with Sophy, blushing like Aurora or the goddess of health, and sending forth emanations of beauty unparalleled: she was complimented upon her change of situation by all present, and by none more warmly than by old Crabtree, who declared himself so well satisfied with his friend's fortune, as to be almost reconciled to that institution, against which he had declaimed during the best part of his life.

An express was immediately dispatched to Mrs. Gauntlet, with an account of her daughter's marriage; a town house was hired, and a handsome equipage set up, in which the new-married pair appeared at all publick places, to the astonishment of our adventurer's fair-weather friends, and the admiration of all the world: for, in point of figure, such another couple was not to be found in the whole united kingdom. Envy despaired, and Detraction was struck dumb, when our hero's new accession of fortune was consigned to the celebration of publick fame: Emilia attracted the notice of all observers, from the pert Templar to the sovereign himself, who was pleased to bestow encomiums upon the excellence of her beauty. Many persons of consequence, who had dropped the acquaintance of Peregrine in the beginning of his decline, now made open efforts to cultivate his friendship anew: but he discouraged all these advances with the most mortifying disdain; and one day, when the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged came up to him in the drawing-room, with the salutation of, 'Your servant, 'Mr. Pickle!' he eyed him with a look of ineffable contempt; saying, 'I sup-'pose your lordship is mistaken in your 'man!' and turned his head another way, in presence of the whole court.

When he had made a circuit round all the places frequented by the beau-monde, to the utter confusion of those against whom his resentment was kindled, paid off his debts, and settled his money matters in town, Hatchway was dismissed to the country, in order to prepare for the reception of his fair Emilia. In a few days after his departure, the whole company (Cadwallader himself included)

included) set out for his father's house, and in their way took up Mrs. Gauntlet the mother, who was sincerely rejoiced to see our hero in the capacity of her son-in-law. From her habitation they proceeded homewards at an easy pace, and; amidst the acclamations of the whole parish, entered their own house; where Emilia was received in the most tender manner by Mr. Clover's wife, who had provided every thing for her ease and accommodation, and next day surrendered unto her the management of her own houshold affairs.

FINIS.

MORAL TALES,

BY

M. MARMONTEL.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH,

BY C. DENNIS AND R. LLOYD.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.
M DCC LXXXI.

MORAL TALES

BY

M. MARMONTEL.

ORIGINAL PREFACE.

HAVING been engaged some time since in writing upon comedy, I searched into nature for the rules and means of the art. This study led me to examine if it were true, as has been said, that all the great strokes of ridicule had been seized by Moliere, and the poets who have followed him.

In running over the canvas of society, I thought I perceived, that in the inexhaustible combinations of follies and extravagancies of all conditions, a man of genius might still find sufficient employment. I had even collected some observations to propose to young poets, when my friend, M. De Boissi, desired me to supply him with some pieces in prose, to insert in the Mercure. It came into my head to make use, in a tale, of one of the strokes in my collection; and I chose, by way of essay, the ridiculous pretension of being loved merely for one's self. This tale had all the success that such a trifle could have. My friend pressed me to give him a second. I proposed to myself to display the folly of those who use authority to bring a woman to reason; and I chose for an example a sultan and his slave, as being the two extremes of power and dependence. This fresh essay also succeeded; and, pleased with having hit the taste of the public in a species of writing which they deigned to look upon as new, I continued to exercise myself in it.

I shall say little concerning the style: when it is I that speak, I deliver myself up to the actual impression of the sentiment or image which I mean to present; my subject furnishes me with the manner. When I make my characters speak, all the art I employ is to fancy myself present at their conversation, and to write down what I imagine I hear. In general, the most simple imitation of nature, in the manners and language, is what I have endeavoured in these tales: if they have not this merit, they have none.

I proposed, some years since, under the article Dialogue in the Encyclopedia, to banish the *said he*, and *said she*, from lively and animated dialogue. I have made the experiment in these tales, and I think it has succeeded. This manner of rendering the narration more rapid is uncouth only at first; as soon as we are accustomed to it, it makes the talent of reading well appear with greater lustre.

The ſucceſs which the ſtory of Soliman has had upon the ſtage, as treated by a gentleman who writes with much eaſe and elegance, permits me to hope that the ſame uſe will be made of ſome of theſe little pictures of human life; and for the future I ſhall employ myſelf (as I have done in the three new tales, The Good Huſband, The Connoiſſeur, and School of Fathers) in chuſing ſtories eaſy to be brought upon the ſtage, in order to give authors leſs trouble.

MORAL

MORAL TALES.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

ALCIBIADES; OR, SELF.

NATURE and fortune ſeemed to have conſpired towards the happineſs of Alcibiades. Riches, talents, perſon, birth, the flower of youth, and of health; what titles for the poſſeſſion of every foppery! Alcibiades had but one: he wanted to be loved for *himſelf* only. From the lighteſt coquette up to the greateſt prude, he had ſeduced every female in Athens—but, in loving him, was it really *himſelf* that they loved? This whimſical piece of delicacy ſeized him one morning as he was juſt come from paying his court to a prude: this is the moment for reflection. Alcibiades's thoughts turned upon what is called the *ſentimental*, the *metaphyſicks* of love. 'I am a pretty fool,' ſaid he, 'to throw away my attention on a woman who perhaps loves me only for 'her own ſake! I will know the truth 'of it, by all the gods! and if that be 'the caſe, ſhe may look out among our 'prize-fighters for a lover to ſerve in 'my place.'

The charming prude, according to cuſtom, ſtill oppoſed ſome feeble reſiſtance to the deſires of Alcibiades. It was a dreadful affair! ſhe could not even think of it without bluſhing! it was neceſſary to be ſmitten as deeply as ſhe was, in order to come to ſuch a reſolution! She could have wiſhed for all the world that he were leſs young and leſs preſſing! Alcibiades took her at her word. 'I perceive, Madam,' ſaid he, one day, 'that theſe compliments coſt 'you dear. Well, I am determined to 'give you a proof of the moſt perfect 'love. Yes, I conſent, ſince you will 'have it ſo, that our *ſouls* only may be 'united, and I give you my word that 'I will aſk nothing more.'

The prude commended this reſolution with an air ſufficient to have deſtroyed it. Alcibiades, however, kept to the text. She was ſurprized and piqued; but was obliged to diſſemble.

The day following every temptation which the moſt enchanting diſhabille could afford was made uſe of. The livelineſs of deſire ſparkled in her eyes; a voluptuous negligence in her air. The ſlighteſt covering, the moſt favourable diſorder, every thing about her invited Alcibiades to forget himſelf. He perceived the ſnare. 'What a victory,' ſaid he to her, 'Madam! what a victory 'have I now to gain over myſelf! I ſee 'plainly that Love is putting me to the 'trial, and I am glad of it. The delicacy of my ſentiments ſhall appear 'with greater luſtre. Theſe coverings, 'ſo thin and tranſparent; theſe couches, 'of which pleaſure herſelf ſeems to have 'formed her throne; your beauty; my 'deſires; how many enemies are theſe 'to ſubdue! Ulyſſes could not have 'eſcaped them; Hercules would have 'fallen before them. I will be wiſer 'than Ulyſſes, and leſs frail than Hercules. Yes, I will convince you, that 'the ſingle pleaſure of loving can take 'place of all other pleaſures.'—'You 'are a charming creature,' ſaid ſhe; 'and I may pride myſelf in having a 'very extraordinary lover! all I dread 'is, leſt your paſſion ſhould be weaken-

'ed by it's rigour.'—'On the contrary,' interrupted Alcibiades briskly, 'it will only become the more ardent.'—'But, my dear child, you are young; 'there are moments when we are not 'matters of ourselves, and I should 'think your fidelity in great danger, if 'I were to deliver you up to your desires.'—'Be easy, Madam, I will be 'answerable for every thing. If I can 'conquer my desires towards you, who 'is there towards whom I shall not be 'master of them?'—'You promise me, 'at least,' said she, 'that if they become too violent, you will fairly confess it? Do not let any mistaken 'bashfulness restrain you. Do not 'pique yourself on keeping your word 'with me: there is nothing I would not 'sooner pardon you, than an instance 'of infidelity.'—'Yes, Madam, I will 'confess my weakness to you with the 'greatest sincerity in the world, when-'ever I am ready to yield to it: but 'suffer me, at least, to try my own 'strength; I feel that it will yet go a 'great way, and I hope that love will 'give me new force.' The prude was now quite enraged; but, without giving herself the lye, she could not complain. She still checked herself, in hopes that on a new trial Alcibiades would give way. He received the day after, as soon as he awoke, a billet conceived in these terms.

'I Have passed a most cruel night; 'come to see me! I cannot live 'without you!'

He arrives at the prude's. Her window-curtains were but half open: a gentle day stole into the apartment on waves of purple. The prude was yet in a bed strewed with roses. 'Come,' said she to him, with a plaintive voice; 'come, and ease my inquietudes. A 'frightful dream has disturbed me all 'night. I thought I saw you at the 'feet of a rival. Oh! I shudder at it 'even yet! I have already told you, 'Alcibiades, that I cannot live under 'the apprehensions of your proving unfaithful; my misfortune would be the 'more cutting, as I should myself be 'the cause; and I would at least have 'nothing to reproach myself. It is in 'vain for you to promise me that you 'will subdue yourself; you are too 'young to be able to do so long. Do I 'not know you? I perceive that I have 'required too much of you; I am sensible that it is both imprudent and cruel 'to impose such hard terms on you.' As she spoke these words with the most touching air in the world, Alcibiades threw himself at her feet. 'I am very 'unhappy, Madam,' said he, 'if you 'have not a sufficient esteem for me, to 'believe me capable of attaching myself 'to you by the ties of sentiment only! 'After all, of what have I deprived 'myself? Of that which is a dishonour 'to love. I blush to see that you set 'any value on such a sacrifice. But 'were it as great as you imagine it, I 'should but have the more glory.'—'No, my dear Alcibiades,' said the prude, giving him at the same time her hand, 'I wish not for a sacrifice that 'costs you so dear: I am too well assured, and too much pleased, with the 'pure and delicate love you have so 'fully testified for me. Be happy; I 'consent to it.'—'I am so, Madam,' cried he, 'in the pleasure of living for 'you. Cease to suspect and complain 'of me; you see before you the most 'faithful, most tender, and most respect-'ful of lovers.'—'And the foolish-'est!' interrupted she, drawing the curtains roughly, and calling to her slaves. Alcibiades sallied out in a rage, to find that he had been loved only like another man, and fully resolved never more to see a woman who had taken him merely for her own pleasure. 'It is not thus,' said he, 'that we love in the age of in-'nocence; and if the young Glycerium 'should feel for me what her eyes seem 'to declare, I am very certain it must 'be love in it's utmost purity.'

Glycerium, just fifteen years, began already to excite the wishes of the handsomest young men. Let us form to ourselves the image of a rose-bud just opening; such were the freshness and splendor of her beauty.

Alcibiades presented himself, and his rivals disappeared. It was not yet the custom at Athens to marry, in order to hate and despise one another the next day; but they gave the young folks time, before wedlock, to see and converse with each other with a becoming freedom: the young ladies did not commit the care of their virtue to their guardians; they were discreet of themselves. Modesty did not begin to make a feeble resistance, till after it was

robbed

robbed of the honours of victory. Glycerium's made the handsomest defence. Alcibiades omitted nothing to surprize or win her. He extolled the young Athenian lady for her talents, her graces, her beauty; he made her perceive, in every thing she said, a refinement she never meant to give it, and a delicacy of which she had not so much as thought. What a pity, that with so many charms she was not endued with a sensible heart! 'I adore you,' said he to her; 'and I am happy if you 'love me! Do not be afraid to tell 'me so: an ingenuous candour is the 'virtue peculiar to your age. It is in 'vain that they have given the name 'of prudence to dissimulation: that 'beautiful mouth is not made to dis-'guise the sentiments of your heart; 'let it rather be the organ of Love, 'since it was for himself that he formed 'it.'—'If you would have me be sin-'cere,' replied Glycerium, with a mo-desty mingled with tenderness, 'con-'trive at least that I may be so with-'out blushing. I would not disguise 'the sentiments of my heart, neither 'would I violate my duty; and I 'should betray either the one or the 'other, if I were to say more.' Glycerium wished that their marriage should be agreed upon before she explained herself. Alcibiades wanted her to explain herself before they should think of marriage. 'It will be a fine time, 'indeed,' said he, 'to assure me of 'your love, when marriage shall have 'made it a duty, and I shall have re-'duced you to the necessity of coun-'terfeiting: it is now that you are 'free, that it would please me to hear 'from that mouth the disinterested con-'fession of a natural and pure senti-'ment.'—'Well, then, be content, 'and reproach me not with wanting a 'sensible heart; it has at least been so 'since I have seen you. I esteem you 'sufficiently to trust you with the se-'cret of my heart; but now it has 'escaped me, I ask one favour of you: 'it is, not to request any more private 'interviews, till you have adjusted the 'affair with those on whom I depend.' The confession which Alcibiades had just obtained would have compleated the happiness of any other, less difficult, lover; but his whim still possessed him. He wanted still to see whether he was loved for *himself*. 'I will not 'conceal from you,' said he, 'that 'the offer which I am going to make, 'may not be attended with success. 'Your relations receive me with a cold 'civility, which I should have taken 'for a dismission, if the pleasure I have 'in seeing you had not overcome my 'delicacy; but if I oblige your father 'to explain himself, there will no 'longer be any room for dissembling. 'He is a member of the Areopagus: 'Socrates, the most virtuous of men, 'is there suspected and odious; I am 'the friend and disciple of Socrates, 'and I greatly fear that the hatred 'they have for him may extend to 'me. My apprehensions, perhaps, 'carry me too far; but, at last, if 'your father sacrifice us to his poli-'ticks, if he refuses to give me your 'hand, what do you determine to do?' —'To be unhappy,' replied Glycerium; 'and to submit to my destiny.'— 'You will see me then no more?'— 'If they forbid me to see you, I must 'obey.'—'You will obey, then, also, 'if they propose another husband to 'you?'—'I shall become the victim 'of my duty.'—'And out of duty, 'likewise, you will love the husband 'they shall chuse for you?'—'I shall 'endeavour not to hate him. But what 'questions you put to me! What 'would you think of me yourself, if 'I entertained any other sentiments?' —'That you loved me as you ought 'to love me.'—'It is too true that I 'do love you.'—'No, Glycerium! 'Love knows no law; he is above all 'obstacles: but, to do you justice, this 'sentiment is too great for your age. 'It requires firm and courageous souls, 'whom difficulties animate, and ill-'fortune does not shock. Such a pas-'sion, I confess, is rare. To wish for 'an estate, a name, and a fortune, at 'one's disposal; to throw one's self, 'in short, into the arms of a husband; 'to protect one against one's parents; 'this is what is now called love, but 'what I call a desire of independence.' —'This is downright tyranny,' said Glycerium, with tears in her eyes, 'to add injury to reproaches! I 'have said nothing to you but what 'was tender and honest. Did I ba-'lance one moment to sacrifice my 'lovers to you? Did I hesitate to con-'fess to you your triumph? What is 'it you ask farther of me?'—'I ask of 'you,'

'you,' said he, 'to swear a constancy 'to me proof against every thing; to 'swear to me, that you will be mine, 'whatever happens; and that you will 'be only mine.'—'Indeed, Sir,' said she, 'that is what I will never do.'— 'Indeed, Madam, I ought to have ex- 'pected this answer, and I blush that I 'have exposed myself to it.' At these words he retired, transported with anger, and saying to himself, 'I was well set 'to work to fall in love with a child, 'who has no soul, and whose heart dis- 'poses of itself only by the advice of 'her parents!'

There was in Athens a young widow who appeared inconsolable for the loss of her husband. Alcibiades paid her, as all the world did, his first devoirs, with that grave air which decorum enjoins towards persons afflicted. The widow found a sensible consolation in the discourses of this disciple of Socrates, and Alcibiades an inexpressible charm in the tears of the widow. Their moral discourses, however, grew more lively every day. They joined in praises on the good qualities of the deceased, and agreed as to his bad ones. He was the honestest man in the world! but his understanding, strictly speaking, was but ordinary. He had a pretty good figure, but without elegance or grace: full of attention and care, but his assiduity was tiresome. In short, she was in despair for having lost so good a husband, but fully resolved not to take a second. 'What!' said Alcibiades, 'at your age renounce ma- 'trimony!'—'I confess to you,' said the widow, 'that as averse as I am to 'slavery, yet liberty frightens me as 'much. At my age, delivered up to my 'own guidance, and being quite inde- 'pendent, what will become of me!' Alcibiades failed not to insinuate, that between the bondage of matrimony and the abandoned state of widowhood, there was a middle path; and that with respect to decorums, nothing in the world was easier to be reconciled to them than a tender attachment. She was startled at the proposition; she had rather die! 'Die at the age of loves and graces!' It was easy to show the ridiculousness of such a project, and the widow dreaded nothing so much as ridicule. It was resolved, therefore, that she should not die; it was already decided, that she could not even live without being protected by somebody; this somebody could be only a lover; and, without prejudice, she knew no man more worthy than Alcibiades to please and attach her. He redoubled his assiduities: at first she complained of them; in a short time she accustomed herself to them; at length she asked the meaning of them; and to avoid all imprudence, they settled matters decently.

Alcibiades was now at the pinnacle of his desires. It was neither the pleasures of love, nor the advantages of matrimony, that were to be loved in him; it was he *himself*, at least he imagined so. He triumphed over the grief, prudence, and pride of a woman, who required nothing in return but secrecy and love. The widow, on her side, plumed herself on holding under her dominion the object of the jealousy of all the beauties of Greece. But how few persons know how to enjoy without a confidante! Alcibiades, while a lover in secret, was only a common lover like another man; and the greatest triumph is no farther pleasing, than in proportion as it is publick. An author has said, that it is not enough to be in a fine country, if we have no one whom we can say to, 'What a fine country!' The widow found in like manner, that it was not sufficient to have Alcibiades for a lover, if she could not tell any one, 'I have Alcibiades for a lover.' She communicated it, therefore, in confidence, to an intimate friend, who communicated it again to her lover, and he to all Greece. Alcibiades, astonished that his adventure was become publick, thought it his duty to acquaint the widow of it, who accused him of indiscretion. 'If I were capable of any such 'thing,' said he, 'I should suffer those 'reports to prevail, which I had been 'desirous of propagating; but I wish 'for nothing so much as to stifle them. 'Let us be upon our guard; let us 'avoid meeting in publick; and when- 'ever accident may happen to bring us 'together, be not offended at the strange 'and careless air I shall affect towards 'you.' The widow received all this but very indifferently. 'I perceive, 'indeed,' said she, 'that you will be 'the more at ease for it: assiduities and 'attention confine you too much, and 'you ask nothing better than the power 'of wandering. But for me, what sort 'of a countenance would you have me-

'put

' put on? I know not how to act the ' coquette: weary of every thing in your ' abſence, penſive and embarraſſed be- ' fore you, I ſhall have the appearance ' of being trifled with; and, in fact, ' perhaps *ſhall* be ſo. If they are per- ' ſuaded that you poſſeſs me, there is ' no remedy: the world is not to be ' brought back. Where will be the ' good, then, of this pretended myſtery? ' We ſhall have the appearance, you of ' a diſengaged lover, I of a forſaken ' miſtreſs.' This anſwer from the wi- dow ſurprized Alcibiades: her conduct compleated his aſtoniſhment. Day after day ſhe gave herſelf greater freedoms and liberty: at any publick ſhow ſhe expected that he ſhould be ſeated be- hind her, and that he ſhould hand her to the temple, and be of the party in her walks and ſuppers. She affected above all things to have him among her rivals; and in the midſt of them it was her plea- ſure that he ſhould ſee nobody but her: ſhe commanded him in an abſolute tone of voice, viewed him with an eye of myſ- tery, ſmiled at him with an air of mean- ing, and whiſpered him in the ear with that familiarity which betrays to the world the connection there is between two perſons. He ſaw plainly that ſhe led him every where like a ſlave chained to her car. ' I have taken airs for ſen- ' timents,' ſaid he, with a ſigh; ' it is ' not *myſelf* that ſhe loves; it is the ' glory of having conquered me; ſhe ' would deſpiſe me if ſhe had no rivals. ' Let me teach her, that vanity is un- ' worthy to fix love.'

The envy of the philoſophers could not forgive Socrates, that he taught no- thing in publick but truth and virtue: they preferred every day to the Areopa- gus the heavieſt complaints againſt this dangerous citizen. Socrates, employed in doing good, let them ſay all the harm of him they thought proper; but Alci- biades, devoted to Socrates, oppoſed his enemies. He preſented himſelf before the magiſtrates; he reproached them with liſtening to baſe perſons, and coun- tenancing impoſtors; and ſpoke of his maſter as the juſteſt and wiſeſt of mor- tals. Enthuſiaſm creates eloquence: in the conferences which he had with one of the members of the Areopagus, in preſence of the wife of the judge, he ſpoke with ſo much ſweetneſs and vehe- mence, with ſo much ſenſe and reaſon, his beauty glowed with a fire ſo noble and affecting, that this virtuous woman was affected to the bottom of her ſoul. She took her perturbation for admira- tion. ' Socrates,' ſaid ſhe to her ſpouſe, ' is really a divine man, if he makes ' ſuch diſciples. I am charmed with ' the eloquence of this young man, it ' is impoſſible to hear him without im- ' provement.' The magiſtrate, who was far from doubting the prudence of his wife, informed Alcibiades of the praiſes ſhe beſtowed on him. Alci- biades was pleaſed with them, and aſked the huſband's permiſſion to cultivate the eſteem of his wife. The good man in- vited him to his houſe. ' My wife,' ſaid he, ' is a philoſopher too, and I ' ſhall be very glad to ſee you diſputing ' together.' Rhodope (for that was the name of this reſpectable matron) prided herſelf, indeed, on her philoſophy; and that of Socrates from the mouth of Al- cibiades pleaſed her more and more. I forgot to mention, that ſhe was of that age in which women are paſt being *pretty*, but in which they may ſtill be reckoned *handſome*; in which perhaps they are a little leſs lovely, but in which they know better how to love. Alci- biades paid his devoirs to her. She diſtruſted neither him nor herſelf. The ſtudy of wiſdom filled up all their con- verſations; the leſſons of Socrates paſſ- ed from the ſoul of Alcibiades into that of Rhodope, and in their paſſage gathered new charms: it was a rivulet of pure water running over flowers. Rhodope became every day more chang- ed: ſhe accuſtomed herſelf to define, according to the principles of Socrates, wiſdom and virtue, truth and juſtice. Friendſhip came in it's turn; and, after examining it's eſſence, ' I ſhould be ' glad,' ſaid Rhodope, ' to know what ' difference Socrates makes between ' love and friendſhip?'—' Though So- ' crates is not one of thoſe philoſo- ' phers,' replied Alcibiades, ' who a- ' nalyſe every thing, yet he diſtinguiſhes ' three ſorts of love: the one groſs ' and baſe, which is common to us ' with other animals; that is to ſay, ' the impulſe of neceſſity, and the re- ' liſh of pleaſure. The other pure ' and celeſtial, by which we approach ' the gods; this is the moſt ardent and ' tender friendſhip. Laſtly, the third, ' which participates of the two firſt, ' preſerves the medium between the gods ' and the brutes, and ſeems the moſt ' natural to man; this is the union of ' ſouls, cemented by that of the ſenſes.

' Socrates

'Socrates gives the preference to the 'poor charm of friendſhip: but as he 'thinks it no crime in nature to contain 'ſpirit united to matter, ſo he thinks 'it none in man to ſavour of this mix-'ture in his inclinations and pleaſures. 'Above all, when Nature has taken 'pains to unite a fine perſon with a 'fine ſoul, he would have us reſpect 'the work of Nature; for how ill-'favoured Socrates may be himſelf, 'he does juſtice to beauty. If he knew, 'for example, with whom I hold theſe 'diſcourſes concerning philoſophy, I 'make no doubt but he would reproach 'me for having ſo ill employed my 'leſſons.'—'A truce with your gal-'lantry,' interrupted Rhodope, 'I am 'talking to a ſage; and young as he is, 'my wiſh is, that he would inſtruct, 'and not flatter me! Let us return to 'the principles of your maſter. He 'permits love, you ſay, but does he 'know it's errors and exceſſes?'—'Yes, 'Madam, as he knows thoſe of drun-'kenneſs, and nevertheleſs allows the 'uſe of wine.'—'The compariſon is 'not juſt,' ſaid Rhodope; 'we may 'chuſe our wines, and moderate the uſe 'of them: have we the ſame liberty in 'love? It is without choice or meaſure.' —'Yes, without doubt,' rejoined Alcibiades, 'in a man without morals or 'principles; but Socrates begins by 'making men wiſe and virtuous, and 'it is to them only that he permits love. 'He well knows that they will love 'nothing but what is honeſt, and there 'we run no riſk of loving to exceſs. 'The mutual inclination of two virtu-'ous ſouls cannot but render them ſtill 'more virtuous.' Every anſwer of Alcibiades removed ſome difficulty in the mind of Rhodope, and rendered her inclination for him more inſinuating and rapid. There remained now only conjugal fidelity, and there was the Gordian knot. Rhodope was not one of thoſe with whom one might cut it, there was a neceſſity for undoing it for her; Alcibiades ſounded her at a diſtance. As they were one day on the ſubject of ſociety; 'Neceſſity,' ſaid Alcibiades, 'has united mankind, common intereſt 'has regulated their duties, and the 'abuſes of them have produced laws. 'All this is ſacred; but all this is fo-'reign to our ſoul. As men are con-'nected but externally, the mutual du-'ties which they impoſe upon each other 'paſs not beyond the ſurface. Nature 'alone is the legiſlatreſs of the heart: 'ſhe alone can inſpire with gratitude, 'friendſhip, love. Sentiment cannot be 'a duty by inſtitution. Thence comes 'it, for example, that in marriage 'we can neither promiſe nor require 'any more than corporal attachment.' Rhodope, who had reliſhed the principle, was terrified at the conſequence. 'What,' ſaid ſhe, 'could I have pro-'miſed my huſband only *to behave* as 'if I loved him!'—'What elſe was it 'in your power to promiſe him?'—'To love him in reality,' replied ſhe, in a very indeterminate tone of voice. 'He has promiſed you, then, in his turn, 'to be not only amiable, but of all 'men the moſt amiable in your eyes?'—'He has promiſed me to do all in his 'power towards it, and he keeps his 'word.'—'Very well, you alſo do all 'in your power to love him only: yet 'neither the one nor the other of you 'are ſure of ſucceſs.'—'This is fright-'ful philoſophy!' cried Rhodope.—'Happily, Madam, it is not ſo fright-'ful: there would be too many crimi-'nals, if conjugal love were an eſſen-'tial duty.'—'What, Sir! do you 'doubt it?'—'I doubt nothing, Ma-'dam! but my frankneſs may diſpleaſe 'you, and I do not ſee you diſpoſed to 'imitate it. I thought I was ſpeaking 'to a philoſopher, but I find I was 'ſpeaking only to a woman of a lively 'genius. I retire, confounded at my 'miſtake; but I would give you at 'parting an inſtance of ſincerity. I 'believe I have morals as pure, as ho-'neſt, as the moſt virtuous woman; I 'know, too, full as well as ſhe, to what 'the honour and religion of an oath en-'gages us; I know the laws of mar-'riage, and the crime of violating them: 'however, had I married a thouſand 'women, I ſhould not have reproach-'ed myſelf in the leaſt for thinking you 'alone handſomer, and a thouſand times 'more amiable, than theſe thouſand 'women put together. According to 'you, in order to be virtuous, we muſt 'have neither heart nor eyes; I congra-'tulate you on being arrived at ſuch a 'degree of perfection!'

This diſcourſe, pronounced with a tone of vexation and anger, left Rhodope in an aſtoniſhment from which ſhe had ſome difficulty to recover. From that time Alcibiades diſcontinued his

'viſits.

Plate L

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Oct. 13. 1781

visits. She had discovered in his adieus a warmer interest than that occasioned by the heat of the dispute: she perceived on her own side, that the loss of his philosophical conferences was not what she regretted most. A dislike of every thing, a disgust to herself, a secret repugnance to the attentions of her husband; lastly, the confusion and blushes which the name alone of Alcibiades created. All these things made her dread the danger of seeing him again; and yet she burned with the desire of seeing him once more. Her husband brought him back to her. As she had given him to understand, that they had differed a little in a dispute concerning words, the magistrate rallied Alcibiades on it, and obliged him to return. The interview was grave; the husband amused himself with it some time; but his affairs soon called him away. 'I leave you,' said he to them; 'and I hope, that after having quarrelled about words, you will come to a 'reconciliation upon things.' The good man meant no harm: but his wife could not help blushing for him.

After a pretty long silence, Alcibiades began. 'Our conferences, Madam, were once my delight; and with 'all the tendency imaginable to dissipation, you had taught me to relish and 'prefer the charms of solitude. I was 'no longer one of the world, I was no 'longer myself, I was wholly and entirely yours. Think not that a foolish 'hope of seducing and leading you 'astray had stolen into my soul: virtue, 'much more than wit and beauty, had 'enslaved me to your laws. But loving you with a passion as delicate as 'it was tender, I flattered myself I 'should have inspired you with the like. 'This pure and virtuous love offends 'you, or rather is only troublesome to 'you; for it is impossible that you 'should condemn it in reality. All that 'I feel for you, Madam, you yourself 'feel for another; you have confessed 'it to me. I cannot reproach you on 'the account, nor complain of it; but 'allow, that I am not happy. There 'is perhaps but one woman in Athens 'who really has love for her husband, 'and it is for this very woman that I 'am distracted.'—'Indeed, you are a 'great simpleton for the disciple of a 'sage,' said Rhodope with a smile. He replied very gravely; she answered again jeeringly; he took her by the hand, she grew angry; he kissed her hand, she would have withdrawn; he detained her; she blushed; and the heads of both the philosophers were turned topsy-turvy.

It is unnecessary to say how much Rhodope was grieved, and how she consoled herself. All this is easily supposed in a virtuous and captivated woman.

She trembled above all for the honour and peace of her husband. Alcibiades swore inviolable secresy; but the malice of the publick rendered any indiscretion on his part absolutely needless. It was well known, that he was not the sort of man to talk for ever about philosophy to an amiable woman. His assiduities created suspicions; suspicions in the world always go as far as certainties. It was decided that Alcibiades *had* Rhodope. The report came to the ears of her husband: he was far from giving credit to it; but his honour, and that of his wife, required that she should put herself above suspicion. He spoke to her of the necessity of putting away Alcibiades, with so much good-humour, reason, and confidence, that she had not the courage to reply. Nothing is more grievous to a soul naturally sensible and virtuous, than the receiving marks of esteem which it no longer deserves.

Rhodope from that moment resolved never more to see Alcibiades; and the more weakness she perceived in herself towards him, the more firmness she displayed in her resolution of breaking with him. In vain did he endeavour to subdue her by his eloquence. 'I have suffered 'myself to be persuaded,' said she to him, 'that the secret injuries we do a 'husband were nothing; but the very 'appearances of them become real injuries from the moment they attack 'his honour, or disturb his peace. I 'may be willing to believe that I am 'not obliged to love my husband; but 'to render him happy, as far as in me 'lies, is an indispensible duty.'—'So 'then, Madam, you prefer his happiness to mine?'—'I prefer,' said she to him, 'my engagements to my inclinations: this word, which has now 'escaped me, shall be my last weakness.'—'Alas! I thought myself be'loved,' cried Alcibiades with displeasure. 'Farewel, Madam; I see plain'ly that I owed my happiness only to 'the caprice of a moment. See! these 'are our virtuous women!' continued

he. 'When they take to us, it is an 'excefs of love; when they forfake us, 'it is an effort of virtue; and, at the 'bottom, this love and this virtue are 'nothing more than a mere phantafy, 'which feizes them at one time, and 'leaves them at another.'—'I have de-'ferved this affront!' faid Rhodope, burfting into tears. 'A woman who 'has not maintained a proper refpect 'for herfelf, is not to expect it from 'others. It is very juft that our weak 'neffes fhould bring us into contempt.'

Alcibiades, after fo many proofs, was thoroughly convinced, that there was no longer any dependence upon women; but he had not confidence enough in himfelf to expofe himfelf to new dangers; and fully refolved as he was, not to love again, he yet perceived in a confufed manner the neceffity of loving.

In this fecret inquietude, while he was walking one day on the fea-fhore, he faw a woman advancing towards him, whofe gait and beauty might have made him take her for a goddefs, if he had not difcovered her to be the courtezan Erigone. He would have fhunned her, but fhe made up directly to him. 'Al-'cibiades,' faid fhe, 'philofophy will 'make a fool of you. Tell me, my 'dear boy, is it a time, at your age, to 'bury one's felf alive in thefe chimeri-'cal and melancholy ideas? Take my 'advice, and be happy; we have al-'ways time enough to be wife.'—'I 'have no ambition to be wife,' faid he to her, 'but in order to be happy.'—'A pretty road, indeed, to happinefs! 'Do you think I wear myfelf out in the 'ftudy of wifdom? Not I. And yet 'is there any of your honeft women 'more content with her condition? This 'Socrates has fpoiled you: it is a pity! 'but yet there is a cure for you, if you 'will take fome leffons from me. I 'have had a defign upon you for fome 'time: I am young, handfome, and 'fenfible; and I believe I may fay, 'without vanity, of as much value as 'any long-bearded philofopher of them 'all. They teach mortification; hor-'rible fcience! Come to my fchool, 'and I will teach you the art of enjoy-'ment.'—'I have learned it but too 'well, to my coft,' replied Alcibiades: 'oftentation and pleafure have ruined 'me. I am no longer that opulent 'and magnificent perfon whom his fol-'lies rendered fo famous, and I have 'not at prefent even a fupport but at 'the expence of my creditors.'—'Very 'well; and is it that which chagrins 'you? Be comforted: I have gold and 'jewels in abundance, and the follies 'of others fhall ferve to repair thine.' —'You flatter me greatly,' replied Alcibiades, 'by thefe obliging offers; but 'I fhall not make an ill ufe of them.'— 'What do you mean by this delicacy? 'Does not love make all things com-'mon? Befides, who will imagine that 'you owe any thing to me? You are 'not fool enough to boaft of it, and I 'have too much pride to publifh it my-'felf.'—'You furprize me; for, to 'fay the truth, you have the character 'of being avaricious.'—'Avaricious! 'Aye, to be fure, with thofe whom I do 'not love, in order to be lavifh to the 'man that I love. My diamonds are 'very dear to me, but you are ftill dear-'er: if you want them, fay but the 'word; to-morrow I will facrifice them 'to you.'—'Your generofity,' replied Alcibiades, 'confounds and pene-'trates me: I would give you the plea-'fure of exercifing it, if I were able at 'leaft to fhew my gratitude like a young 'fellow; but I ought not to diffemble 'with you, that the immoderate ufe of 'pleafures has not only ruined my for-'tune, but I have found out the fecret 'of growing old before my time.'— 'I believe fo,' replied Erigone fmiling; 'you have known fo many virtuous 'women! But I am going to fur-'prize you ftill more: a lively and de-'licate fentiment is all that I expect 'from you; and if your heart, too, is 'not ruined, you have yet enough to 'fatisfy me.'—'You rally!' faid Alcibiades. 'Not at all. If I took a 'Hercules for a lover, I fhould wifh 'him to prove himfelf a Hercules; but 'I would have Alcibiades love me only 'like Alcibiades, with all the delicacy 'of that tranquil pleafure whofe fource 'is in the heart. If on the fenfual fide 'you intend me any furprize, fo much 'the better! I allow you every thing, 'and exact nothing.'—'Indeed,' faid Alcibiades, 'I am as much charmed as 'aftonifhed; and but for the uneafinefs 'and jealoufy I fhould feel on account 'of my rivals—' 'Rivals! you fhall 'have none but unfortunate ones, I 'give you my word. Truft me, my 'friend, women do not change but 'either through coquetry or curiofity;

'and

'and with me, you know both, the one 'and the other are exhausted. If I were 'unacquainted with mankind, the pro- 'mise I now make you might be a little 'rash; but in sacrificing them to you, 'I know very well what I am doing. 'After all, there is one certain way of 'making you easy: you have a farm 'at a good distance from Athens, where 'no impertinents will come to trouble 'us. Do you think yourself capable 'of supporting a *tête à tête* there with 'me? We will set out whenever you 'will.'—'No,' said he to her, 'my en- 'gagements detain me for some time 'in town; but if we should settle mat- 'ters together, need we advertise our- 'selves?'—'Just as you please: if you 'think proper to own me, I shall pro- 'claim you; if you chuse secresy, I 'will be more discreet and reserved than 'a prude. As I am dependent on no- 'body, and love you merely for your 'own sake, I neither fear nor desire 'to attract the eyes of the publick. 'Put no constraint on yourself; con- 'sult your heart; and if I am agree- 'able to you, my supper is ready for 'us. Let us go and call the gods of joy 'and pleasure to witness to our vows!' Alcibiades seized Erigone by the hand, and kissed it with transport. 'At last,' said he, 'I have found true love; and 'from this day my happiness com- 'mences.'

They arrive at the courtezan's. The most delicate and exquisite of every thing that taste could invent to gratify all the senses at once, seemed to have concurred in this supper to enchant Alcibiades. It was in such an apartment that Venus received Adonis, when the Loves poured out nectar, and the Graces served ambrosia. 'When I took,' said Erigone, 'the name of one of the mis- 'tresses of Bacchus, I did not flatter 'myself with possessing one day a mor- 'tal handsomer than the conqueror of 'India. What do I say? a mortal! 'It is Bacchus, Apollo, and the god 'of love himself, that I possess; and I 'am this moment the happy rival of 'Erigone, Calliope, and Psyché. I 'crown you then, my young god, with 'the vine leaf, the laurel, and the myr- 'tle. May I be able to bring before 'your eyes all the attractions adored by 'those immortals, whose charms are 'united in you!' Alcibiades, intoxi- cated with self-love and desire, display- ed all those enchanting talents which might have seduced wisdom itself. He sung his triumph on the lyre; he com- pared his happiness to that of the gods; and he found himself happier than they, as he had before been found to be more amiable.

After supper he was conducted into a neighbouring apartment, but separated from that of Erigone. 'Repose your- 'self, my dear Alcibiades,' said she, leaving him: 'may love possess you in 'your dreams of nothing but me! 'Vouchsafe at least to make me believe 'so; and if any other object should pre- 'sent itself to your imagination, spare 'my delicacy, and by a complaisant 'falsehood repair the involuntary wrong 'you shall have done me in your sleep.' —'Ah, what,' replied Alcibiades ten- derly, 'will you reduce me to the plea- 'sure of illusion?'—'You shall never 'have with me,' said she, 'any other 'laws than your desires.' At these words she withdrew into her own apart- ment, humming a tune. Alcibiades cried out in a transport of joy, 'O mo- 'desty! O virtue! what then are ye, if 'in a heart where you reside not there 'is found pure and chaste love; love, 'such as it descended from the skies to 'animate man while yet innocent, and 'to embellish human nature!' In this excess of joy and admiration he gets up, and goes to surprize Erigone.

Erigone received him with a smile. Inspired with a sensibility tempered with delicacy, her heart seemed only to take fire from the desires of Alcibiades. Two months glided away in this delicious union, without the courtezan's ever be- lying for one moment the character she had assumed; but the fatal day now ap- proached that was to dissipate so flatter- ing an illusion.

The preparation for the Olympick Games engrossed the conversation of all the youth of Athens. Erigone spoke of these games, and of the glory of bearing away the prize in them, with so much warmth, that she made her lover form the design of entering into the course, and conceive a hope of tri- umphing. But he wanted to delight her by an agreeable surprize.

The day on which these games were to be celebrated, Alcibiades left her, in order to repair thither. 'If they should 'see us together,' said he, 'at these spec- 'tacles, they would not fail of drawing

'inferences; and we have agreed to 'avoid even ſuſpicion. Let us repair 'to the Circus, each on different ſides. 'We will return here after the feaſt, 'and I expect you at ſupper.'

The people aſſemble, and ſeat themſelves. Erigone preſents herſelf, and attracts the eyes of all. The handſome women view her with envy, the ugly with indignation; the old men with regret, and the young with univerſal tranſport. However, the eyes of Erigone, wandering over the vaſt amphitheatre, looked for nothing but Alcibiades. All on a ſudden ſhe ſaw appear before the barrier the courſers and the chariot of her lover. She durſt not believe her eyes; but, ſoon after, a young man more beautiful than the god of love, and more gallant than Mars, vaults into the glittering car. 'It is Alcibiades! 'it is he himſelf!' The name paſſes from mouth to mouth; ſhe hears no longer any thing around her but theſe words: 'It is Alcibiades, the glory and or-'nament of the Athenian youth!' Erigone turned pale with joy: he caſt a look at her, which ſeemed to be the preſage of victory. The chariots range themſelves in a line, the barrier opens, the ſignal is given, the ground reſounds in cadence under the feet of the horſes, a cloud of duſt enfolds them. Erigone no longer breathes: all her ſoul is in her eyes, and her eyes purſue the chariot of her lover through the clouds of duſt. The chariots ſeparate, the ſwifteſt get the ſtart; that of Alcibiades is of the number. Erigone, trembling, puts up vows to Caſtor, to Pollux, to Hercules, to Apollo. At laſt ſhe perceives Alcibiades at the head, and having only one who kept pace with him. It was then that fear and hope held her ſoul ſuſpended. The wheels of the two chariots ſeemed to turn on the ſame axle, and the horſes guided by the ſame reins. Alcibiades redoubles his ardour, and the heart of Erigone begins to dilate; his rival increaſes his ſpeed, and the heart of Erigone ſhuts itſelf up again: every alternate revolution produces a ſudden change in her. The two chariots arrive at the goal; but Alcibiades's antagoniſt has outſtripped him by a ſingle ſhoot forwards. Immediately a thouſand cries made the air reſound with the name of Piſicrates of Samos. Alcibiades, confounded, retires in his chariot; his head hung down, and the reins floating looſely, avoiding that ſide of the circus where Erigone, overwhelmed with confuſion, had hid her face beneath her veil. It appeared to her as if all eyes were fixed upon her, to reproach her of loving a man who had juſt been conquered. A general murmur, however, is heard round her; ſhe looks up to ſee the cauſe; it is Piſicrates, who is bringing back his chariot on the ſide where ſhe is placed. A new occaſion of confuſion and grief! But what is her ſurprize, when the chariot ſtopping at her feet, ſhe ſees the conqueror alight, and preſent her with the Olympick crown! 'I owe it to you, 'Madam,' ſaid he, and I come to pay 'you the homage of it.' Let us conceive, if poſſible, all the emotions of the ſoul of Erigone at this ſpeech; but love was predominant. 'You owe me no-'thing,' ſaid ſhe to Piſicrates, bluſhing; 'my wiſhes, pardon my frank-'neſs, my wiſhes were not for you.'— 'The deſire of conquering before you,' replied he, 'has not the leſs on that 'account acquired me this glory. If 'I have not been happy enough to in-'tereſt you in the contention, let me be 'at leaſt ſufficiently ſo to intereſt you 'in the triumph.' He then preſſed her anew, with the moſt affecting air, to receive his offering: all the people invited her to it by redoubled ſhouts of applauſe. Self-love at length prevailed over her love for Alcibiades: ſhe received the fatal laurel, to yield, ſhe ſaid, to the acclamations and inſtances of the people; but who could believe it? She received it with a ſmiling air; and Piſicrates remounted his chariot, intoxicated with love and glory.

As ſoon as Alcibiades was recovered of his firſt dejection, 'You are very weak, 'and very vain,' ſaid he to himſelf, 'to afflict yourſelf to this immoderate 'degree! and for what? becauſe there 'is found in the world one man more 'dexterous, or more happy, than thy-'ſelf. But I ſee what it is that tor-'ments you: you would have been 'tranſported to have conquered in the 'preſence of Erigone; and you dread 'the thought of being loved leſs, after 'being vanquiſhed. Do her more 'juſtice: Erigone is not like the ordi-'nary run of women; ſhe will be 'pleaſed with you for the ardour you 'have ſhewn to conquer; and as to 'your ill-ſucceſs, ſhe will be the firſt

'to

'to make you bluſh for your ſenſibi-
'lity on ſo ſmall a misfortune. Let
'me go and ſee her with confidence;
'I have even cauſe to rejoice at this
'moment of adverſity: it is a new
'trial of her heart, and Love contrives
'me a triumph more pleaſing than that
'of the courſe.' Full of theſe conſoling ideas, he arrives at Erigone's, but finds the chariot of the conqueror at the door.

This was a clap of thunder to him. Shame, indignation, deſpair, ſeize his ſoul. Diſtracted and raging, his diſordered ſteps turn, as it were of themſelves, to the houſe of Socrates.

The good man, who had been preſent at the games, ran out to meet him. 'So!' ſaid he, 'you come to conſole
'yourſelf with me, becauſe you have
'been vanquiſhed. I dare ſay, young
'man, that I ſhould not have ſeen
'you, had you triumphed. I am not,
'however, the leſs thankful for the
'viſit. I love to have people come to
'me in adverſity. A ſoul intoxicated
'with it's good fortune, vents itſelf
'wherever it can; the confidence of a
'ſoul in affliction is more flattering
'and affecting. Confeſs, however,
'that your horſes did miracles. Why,
'you miſſed of the prize only by one
'ſpring. You may boaſt, therefore,
'that, next to Piſicrates of Samos, you
'have the beſt courſers in all Greece;
'and indeed it is a moſt glorious thing
'for a man to have excellent horſes!' Alcibiades, confounded at his misfortune, did not even hear the raillery of Socrates. The philoſopher, gueſſing at the trouble of his heart by the alteration of his countenance, 'What, then,' ſaid he to him in a graver tone, 'does
'a trifle, a mere childiſh amuſement,
'affect you thus? If you had loſt an em-
'pire, I could ſcarce pardon you being
'in the ſtate of humiliation and dejec-
'tion wherein I now ſee you.'—'Ah!
'my dear maſter,' cried Alcibiades, coming to himſelf, 'how unhappy are
'we in having ſenſibility! We ought
'to have a ſoul of marble to live in the
'age we do.'—'I confeſs,' replied Socrates, 'that ſenſibility coſts us dear
'ſometimes; but it is ſo good a quali-
'ty, that we cannot pay too dear for
'it. Let us know, however, what has
'befallen you?'

Alcibiades recounted to him his adventures with the prude, the young lady, the widow, the magiſtrate's wife, and the courtezan who at that very inſtant had juſt ſacrificed him to another. 'What is it that you bemoan
'yourſelf for?' ſaid Socrates, after hearing his complaint; 'it appears to
'me, that each of them loved you after
'her manner with the greateſt ſincerity
'in the world. The prude, for ex-
'ample, loved pleaſure; ſhe found it
'in you; you deprive her of it, ſhe
'diſmiſſes you; and ſo with the reſt.
'It was their *own* happineſs, never
'doubt it, that they ſought in their
'lover. The young lady ſaw in you
'a huſband whom ſhe could love with
'freedom and decency; the widow, a
'glorious triumph which did honour
'to her beauty; the magiſtrate's wife,
'an amiable and diſcreet man, with
'whom, without either danger or noiſe,
'her philoſophy and her virtue might
'take ſome relaxation; the courtezan,
'a man admired, applauded, and uni-
'verſally deſired, whom ſhe ſhould have
'the ſecret pleaſure of poſſeſſing alone,
'while all the beauties of Greece
'ſhould vainly diſpute with each other
'the glory of captivating him.'—'You
'confeſs, then,' ſaid Alcibiades, 'that
'not one of them loved me for *myſelf?*'
—'For *yourſelf!*' cried the philoſopher;
'ah, my dear child! who has put this
'ridiculous pretenſion into your head?
'None love but for themſelves. Friend-
'ſhip itſelf, purely ſentimental as it is,
'founds it's preferences only on per-
'ſonal intereſt; and if you demand
'that it ſhould be diſintereſted, you
'may begin by renouncing mine.—
'I am amazed,' purſued he, 'to ſee
'how fooliſh ſelf-love is, even in thoſe
'who have the beſt underſtanding. I
'ſhould be very glad to know, what
'is this SELF that you would have
'them love in you? Birth, fortune,
'glory, youth, talents, and beauty,
'are but *accidents*. Nothing of all
'this is *your*-SELF, and yet this is all
'that renders you amiable. The *ſelf*,
'which unites all theſe charms, is no
'more than the canvas of the tapeſtry: it
'is the embroidery that gives it value.
'In loving all theſe endowments in
'you, they confound them with you.
'Do not, I adviſe you, run into ima-
'ginary diſtinctions; and receive, as
'it is given you, the reſult of this
'mixture: it is a coin of which the
'alloy forms the conſiſtence, but which
'loſes

'loſes it's value in the crucible. I 'am not ſorry that your delicacy has 'detached you from the prude and the 'widow; nor that the reſolution of 'Rhodope, and the vanity of Erigone, 'has reſtored you to liberty: but I re-'gret the loſs of Glycerium, and ad-'viſe you to return to her.'—'You 'jeſt!' ſaid Alcibiades; 'ſhe is a 'mere child, who only wants to be 'married.'—'Very well, you ſhall 'marry her then.'—'Did I hear right? 'Socrates adviſe me to marriage!'—'Why not? If your wife be wiſe and 'reaſonable, you will be a happy man; 'if ſhe be a wanton or a coquette, you 'will become a philoſopher; you can-'not, therefore, do otherwiſe than gain 'by it.'

SOLIMAN II.

IT is pleaſant to ſee grave hiſtorians racking their brains, in order to find out great cauſes for great events. Sylla's valet de chambre would perhaps have laughed heartily to hear the politicians reaſon on the abdication of his maſter; but it is not of Sylla that I am now going to ſpeak.

Soliman II. married his ſlave, in contempt of the laws of the ſultans. It is natural at firſt to paint to ourſelves this ſlave as an accompliſhed beauty, with an elevated ſoul, an uncommon genius, and a profound ſkill in politicks. No ſuch thing: the fact was as follows.

Soliman grew ſplenetick in the midſt of his glory: the various, but ready pleaſure of the ſeraglio, were become inſipid to him. 'I am weary,' ſaid he one day, 'of receiving here the careſſes 'of mere machines. Theſe ſlaves move 'my pity. Their ſoft docility has no-'thing poignant, nothing flattering. 'It is to hearts nouriſhed in the boſom 'of liberty, that it would be delightful 'to make ſlavery agreeable.'

The whimſies of a ſultan are laws to his miniſters. Large ſums were inſtantly promiſed to ſuch as ſhould bring European ſlaves to the ſeraglio. In a ſhort time there arrived three, who, like the three Graces, ſeemed to have divided among themſelves all the charms of beauty.

Features noble and modeſt, eyes tender and languiſhing, an ingenuous temper, and a ſenſible ſoul, diſtinguiſhed the touching Elmira. The entrance of the ſeraglio, the idea of ſervitude, had chilled her with a mortal terror: Soliman found her in a ſwoon in the arms of his women. He approaches; he recalls her to life; he encourages her; ſhe lifts towards him a pair of large blue eyes, bedewed with tears; he reaches forth his hand to her; he ſupports her himſelf; ſhe follows him with a tottering ſtep. The ſlaves retire; and as ſoon as he is alone with her, 'It is not with 'fear, beautiful Elmira,' ſaid he to her, 'that I would inſpire you. Forget 'that you have a maſter; ſee in me only 'a lover.'—'The name of lover,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'is not leſs unknown to 'me than that of maſter: and both the 'one and the other make me tremble. 'They have told me (and I ſtill ſhud-'der at the thought) that I am deſtined 'to your pleaſures. Alas! what plea-'ſure can it be to tyrannize over weak-'neſs and innocence! Believe me, I am 'not capable of the compliances of ſer-'vitude; and the only pleaſure poſſible 'for you to taſte with me, is that of 'being generous. Reſtore me to my 'parents, and my country; and in the 'reſpect you ſhew for my virtue, my 'youth, and my misfortunes, merit 'my gratitude, my eſteem, and my re-'gret.'

This diſcourſe from a ſlave was new to Soliman: his great ſoul was moved by it. 'No,' ſaid he, 'my dear child, I 'will owe nothing to violence. You 'charm me! I will make it my happi-'neſs to love and pleaſe you; and I 'prefer the torment of never ſeeing you 'more to that of ſeeing you unhappy. 'However, before I reſtore you to li-'berty, give me leave to try, at leaſt, 'whether it be not poſſible for me to 'diſſipate that terror which the name of 'ſlave ſtrikes into you. I aſk only one 'month's trial; after which, if my love 'cannot move you, I will avenge my-'ſelf

'ſelf no otherwiſe on your ingratitude, 'than by delivering you up to the in- 'conſtancy and perfidy of mankind.'— 'Ah, my lord!' cried Elmira, with an emotion mixed with joy, 'how unjuſt 'are the prejudices of my country, and 'how little are your virtues known 'there! Continue ſuch as I now ſee 'you, and I no longer reckon this day 'unfortunate.'

Some moments after, ſhe ſaw ſlaves enter, carrying bakets filled with ſtuffs and valuable trinkets. 'Chuſe,' ſaid the ſultan to her; 'theſe are cloaths, 'not ornaments, that are here preſented 'to you: nothing can adorn you.'— 'Decide for me,' ſaid Elmira to him, runnjng her eyes over the baſkets. 'Do 'not conſult me,' replied the ſultan; 'I hate, without diſtinction, every thing 'that can rob me of your charms.' Elmira bluſhed, and the ſultan perceived ſhe preferred the colours moſt favourable to the character of her beauty. He conceived a pleaſing hope from that circumſtance: for care to adorn one's ſelf is almoſt a deſire to pleaſe.

The month of trial paſſed away in timid gallantries on the part of the ſultan, and on Elmira's ſide in complaiſance and delicate attentions. Her confidence in him increaſed every day, without her perceiving it. At firſt he was not permitted to ſee her, but after the buſineſs of the toilette, and on condition to depart when ſhe prepared to undreſs again; in a ſhort time he was admitted both to her toilette and diſhabille. It was there that the plan of their amuſements for that day and the next was formed. Whatever either propoſed was exactly what the other was going to propoſe. Their diſputes turned only on the ſtealing of thoughts. Elmira, in theſe diſputes, perceived not ſome ſmall ſlips which eſcaped her modeſty. A pin miſplaced, or a garter put on unthinkingly, &c. afforded the ſultan pleaſures which he was cautious not to teſtify. He knew, (and it was much for a ſultan to know) that it was impolitick to advertiſe modeſty of the dangers to which it expoſes itſelf; that it is never fiercer than when alarmed; and that, in order to ſubdue it, one ſhould render them familiar. Nevertheleſs, the more he diſcovered of Elmira's charms, the more he perceived his fears increaſe, on account of the approach of the day that might deprive him of them.

The fatal period arrives. Soliman cauſes cheſts to be prepared, filled with ſtuffs, precious ſtones, and perfumes. He repairs to Elmira, followed by theſe preſents. 'It is to-morrow,' ſaid he, 'that I have promiſed to reſtore you to 'liberty, if you ſtill regret the want of 'it. I now come to acquit myſelf of 'my promiſe, and to bid adieu to you 'for ever.'—'What!' ſaid Elmira trembling, 'is it to morrow? I had forgot 'it.'—'It is to-morrow,' reſumed the ſultan, 'that, delivered up to my deſpair, I am to become the moſt unhappy of men.'—'You are very cruel, 'then, to yourſelf, to put me in mind of 'it!'—'Alas! it depends only on you, 'Elmira, that I ſhould forget it for 'ever.'—'I confeſs,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'that your ſorrow touches me; that 'your proceedings have intereſted me 'in your happineſs; and if, to ſhew my 'gratitude, it were neceſſary only to 'prolong the time of my ſlavery—' 'No, Madam, I am but too much accuſtomed to the happineſs of poſſeſſing 'you. I perceive that the more I ſhall 'know of you, the more terrible it would 'be to me to loſe you: this ſacrifice 'will coſt me my life; but I ſhall only 'render it the more grievous by deferring it. May your country prove 'worthy of it! May the people whom 'you are going to pleaſe, deſerve you 'better than I do! I aſk but one favour 'of you, which is, that you would be 'pleaſed cordially to accept theſe preſents, as the feeble pledges of a love 'the moſt pure and tender, that yourſelf, yes, that yourſelf, are capable of 'inſpiring.'—'No,' ſaid ſhe to him, with a voice almoſt ſmothered, 'I will 'not accept of your preſents. I go: 'you will have it ſo! But I ſhall carry 'away from you nothing but your 'image.' Soliman, lifting up his eyes to Elmira, met her's bedewed with tears. 'Adieu, then, Elmira!'—'Adieu, So'liman!' They bid each other ſo many and ſuch tender adieus, that they concluded by ſwearing not to ſeparate for life. The avenues of pleaſure through which he had paſſed ſo rapidly with his ſlaves from Aſia, appeared to him ſo delicious with Elmira, that he found an inexpreſſible charm in going through them ſtep by ſtep: but arrived at the happineſs itſelf, his pleaſures had from that time the ſame defect as before; they became too eaſy of acceſs, and in a ſhort

a short time after too languid. Their days, so well filled up till then, began to hang heavy. In one of these moments, when complaisance alone retained Soliman with Elmira, 'Would it be 'agreeable to you,' said he, 'to hear a 'slave from your own country, whose 'voice has been greatly commended to 'me?' Elmira, at the proposal, plainly perceived that she was lost: but to put any constraint on a lover who begins to grow tired, is to tire him still more. 'I 'am for any thing,' said she, 'that you 'please;' and the slave was ordered to enter.

Delia (for that was the singer's name) had the figure of a goddess. Her hair exceeded the ebony in blackness, and her skin the whiteness of ivory. Two eye-brows, boldly arched, crowned her sparkling eyes. As soon as she began tuning, her lips, which were of the finest vermilion, displayed two rows of pearl set in coral. At first she sung the victories of Soliman, and the hero felt his soul elevated at the remembrance of his triumphs. His pride hitherto, more than his taste, applauded the accents of that thrilling voice, which filled the whole saloon with it's harmony and strength.

Delia changed her manner, to sing the charms of pleasure. She then took the theorbo; an instrument favourable to the display of a rounded arm, and to the movements of a delicate and light hand. Her voice, more flexible and tender, now resounded none but the most touching sounds. Her modulations, connected by imperceptible gradations, expressed the delirium of a soul intoxicated with pleasure, or exhausted with sentiment. Her sounds, sometimes expiring on her lips, sometimes swelled and sunk with rapidity, expressed by turns the sighs of modesty and the vehemence of desire; while her eyes still more than her voice animated these lively descriptions.

Soliman, quite transported, devoured her both with his ears and eyes. 'No,' said he, 'never before did so beautiful 'a mouth utter such pleasing sounds. 'With what delight must she, who 'sings so feelingly of pleasure, inspire 'and relish it! How charming to draw 'that harmonious breath, and to catch 'again in their passage those sounds ani-'mated by love!' The sultan, lost in these reflections, perceived not that all the while he kept beating time on the knee of the trembling Elmira. Her heart oppressed with jealousy, she was scarce able to breathe. 'How happy 'is Delia,' said she, in a low voice, to Soliman, 'to have so tuneable a voice! 'Alas! it ought to be the organ of my 'heart! every thing that she expresses, 'you have taught me to feel.' So said Elmira, but Soliman did not listen to her.

Delia changed her tone a second time to inconstancy. All that the changeful variety of nature contains, either interesting or amiable, was recapitulated in her song. It seemed like the fluttering of the butterfly over roses, or like the zephyrs losing themselves among the flowers. 'Listen to the turtle,' said Delia, 'she is faithful but melan-'choly. See the inconstant sparrow: 'pleasure moves his wings; his warb-'ling voice is exerted merely to return 'thanks to love. Water freezes only 'in stagnation; a heart never languishes 'but in constancy. There is but one 'mortal on earth, whom it is possible to 'love always. Let him change, let 'him enjoy the advantage of making a 'thousand hearts happy; all prevent 'his wishes, or pursue him. They 'adore him in their own arms; they 'love him even in the arms of another. 'Let him give himself up to our desires, 'or withdraw himself from them, still 'he will find love wherever he goes, 'wherever he goes will leave the print 'of love on his footsteps.'

Elmira was no longer able to dissemble her displeasure and grief. She gets up and retires: the sultan does not recal her; and while she is overwhelming herself with tears, repeating a thousand times, 'Ah, the ungrateful! Ah, the 'perfidious man!' Soliman, charmed with his divine songstress, prepares to realize with her some of those pictures which she had drawn so much to the life. The next morning the unhappy Elmira writ a billet filled with reproach and tenderness, in which she puts him in mind of the promise he had made her. 'That is true,' said the sultan; 'let 'us send her back to her country, laden 'with marks of my favour. This poor 'girl loves me dearly, and I am to 'blame on her account.'

The first moments of his love for Delia were no more than an intoxication; but as soon as he had time for reflection,

reflection, he perceived that she was more petulant than sensible, more greedy of pleasure than flattered in administering it; in a word, fitter than himself to have a seraglio at command. To feed his illusion, he sometimes invited Delia; that he might hear that voice which had enchanted him; but that voice was no longer the same. The impression made by it became every day weaker and weaker by habitude; and it was now no more than a slight emotion, when an unforeseen circumstance dissipated it for ever.

The chief officer of the seraglio came to inform the sultan, that it was impossible to manage the untractable vivacity of one of the European slaves; that she made a jest of his prohibitions and menaces; and that she answered him only by cutting railleries and immoderate bursts of laughter. Soliman, who was too great a prince to make a state affair of what merely regarded the regulation of his pleasures, entertained a curiosity of seeing this young madcap. He repaired to her, followed by the eunuch. As soon as she saw Soliman, 'Heaven 'be praised!' said she, 'here comes a 'human figure! You are without doubt 'the sublime sultan, whose slave I have 'the honour to be? Do me the favour 'to drive away this old knave, who 'shocks my very sight.' The sultan had a great deal of difficulty to refrain laughing at this beginning. 'Roxa-'lana,' said he to her, for so she was called, 'shew some respect, if you 'please, to the minister of my pleasures: 'you are yet a stranger to the manners 'of the seraglio; till they can instruct 'you in them, contain yourself and 'obey.'—'A fine compliment!' said Roxalana. '*Obey!* Is that your Turk-'ish gallantry? Sure you must be 'mightily beloved, if it is in this strain 'you begin your addresses to the ladies! '*Respect the minister of my pleasures!* 'You have your pleasures, then? and, 'good Heaven! what pleasures, if they 'resemble their minister! an old am-'phibious monster, who keeps us here, 'penned in, like sheep in a fold, and 'who prowls round with his frightful 'eyes always ready to devour us! See 'here the confidante of your pleasures, 'and the guardian of our prudence! 'Give him his due, if you pay him to 'make yourself hated, he does not 'cheat you of any of his wages. We 'cannot take a step but he growls. 'He forbids us even to walk, and to 'receive or pay visits. In a short time, 'I suppose, he will weigh out the air to 'us, and give us light by the yard. If 'you had seen him rave last night, be-'cause he found me in these solitary 'gardens! Did you order him to forbid 'our going into them? Are you afraid 'that it should rain men? and if there 'should fall a few from the clouds, 'what a misfortune! Heaven owes us 'this miracle.'

While Roxalana spoke thus, the sultan examined, with surprize, the fire of her looks, and the play of her countenance. 'By Mahomet!' said he to himself, 'here is the prettiest looking romp 'in all Asia. Such faces as these are 'made only in Europe.' Roxalana had nothing fine, nothing regular in her features; but, taken all together, they had that smart singularity which touches more than beauty. A speaking look, a mouth fresh and rosy, an arch smile, a nose somewhat turned up, a neat and well-made shape; all these circumstances gave her giddiness a charm which disconcerted the gravity of Soliman. But the great, in his situation, have the resource of silence; and Soliman, not knowing how to answer her, fairly walked off, concealing his embarrassment under an air of majesty.

The eunuch asked him what orders he would be pleased to give with respect to this saucy slave. 'She is a mere 'child,' replied the sultan; 'you must 'pass over some things in her.'

The air, the tone, the figure, the disposition of Roxalana, had excited in the soul of Soliman an anxiety and emotion which sleep was not able to dispel. As soon as he awoke, he ordered the chief of the eunuchs to come to him. 'You 'seem to me,' said he, 'to be but little 'in Roxalana's good graces; in order 'to make your peace, go and tell her I 'will come and drink tea with her.' On the arrival of the officer, Roxalana's women hastened to wake her. 'What 'does the ape want with me!' cried she, rubbing her eyes. 'I come,' replied the eunuch, 'from the emperor, to kiss the 'dust of your feet, and to inform you 'that he will come and drink tea with 'the delight of his soul.'—'Get away 'with your strange speeches! My feet 'have no dust, and I do not drink tea 'so early.'

The eunuch retired without replying, and gave an account of his embaſſy. 'She is in the right,' ſaid the ſultan; 'why did you wake her? You do every 'thing wrong.' As ſoon as it was broad day with Roxalana, he went thither. 'You are angry with me?' ſaid he; 'they have diſturbed your ſleep, 'and I am the innocent cauſe of it. 'Come, let us make peace; imitate me: 'you ſee that I forget all that you ſaid 'to me yeſterday.'—'You forget it! 'ſo much the worſe: I ſaid ſome good 'things to you. My frankneſs diſ-'pleaſes you, I ſee plainly: but you 'will ſoon grow accuſtomed to it. And 'are you not too happy, to find a friend 'in a ſlave? Yes, a friend, who inte-'reſts herſelf in your welfare, and who 'would teach you to love. Why have 'not you made a voyage to my country? 'It is there that they know love; it is 'there that it is lively and tender; and 'why? becauſe it is free. Sentiment 'is involuntary, and does not come by 'force. The yoke of marriage amongſt 'us is much lighter than that of ſlavery; 'and yet a huſband that is beloved is a 'prodigy. Every thing under the name 'of duty ſaddens the ſoul, blaſts the 'imagination, cools deſire, and takes 'off that edge of ſelf-love which gives 'all the reliſh and ſeaſoning to affection. 'Now, if it be ſo difficult to love a 'huſband, how much harder is it to 'love a maſter, eſpecially if he has not 'the addreſs to conceal the fetters he 'puts upon us?'—'And I,' replied the ſultan; 'I will forget nothing to ſoften 'your ſervitude; but you ought in your 'turn——' 'I *ought!* nothing but 'what one *ought!* Leave off, I pr'ythee, 'now, theſe humiliating phraſes. They 'come with a very ill grace from the 'mouth of a man of gallantry, who 'has the honour of talking to a pretty 'woman.'—'But, Roxalana, do you 'forget who I am, and who you are?' —'*Who you are, and who I am!* 'You are powerful, I am pretty; and 'ſo we are even.'—'May be ſo,' replied the ſultan, haughtily, 'in your country; 'but here, Roxalana, I am maſter, and 'you a ſlave.'—'Yes, I know you have 'purchaſed me; but the robber who 'ſold me could transfer to you only 'thoſe rights over me which he had 'himſelf, the rights of rapine and vio-'lence; in one word, the rights of a 'robber; and you are too honeſt a man 'to think of abuſing them. After all, 'you are my maſter, becauſe my life is 'in your hands; but I am no longer 'your ſlave, if I know how to deſpiſe 'life; and truly the life one leads here 'is not worth the fear of loſing it.'— 'What a frightful notion!' cried the ſultan: 'do you take me for a barba-'rian? No, my dear Roxalana, I would 'make uſe of my power only to render 'this life delightful to yourſelf and me.' —'Upon my word,' ſaid Roxalana, 'the proſpect is not very promiſing. 'Theſe guards, for inſtance, ſo black, 'ſo diſguſting, ſo ugly, are they the 'ſmiles and ſports which here accom-'pany love?'—'Theſe guards are not 'ſet upon you alone. I have five hun-'dred women, whom our manners and 'laws oblige me to keep watched.'— 'And why five hundred women?' ſaid ſhe to him, with an air of confidence. 'It is a kind of ſtate which the dignity 'of ſultan impoſes upon me.'—'But 'what do you do with them, pray? 'for you lend them to nobody.'—'In-'conſtancy,' replied the ſultan, 'has 'introduced this cuſtom. A heart void 'of love, ſtands in need of variety. 'Lovers only are conſtant, and I never 'was a lover till I ſaw you. Let not the 'number of theſe women give you the 'ſhadow of uneaſineſs; they ſhall ſerve 'only to grace your triumph: you ſhall 'ſee them all eager to pleaſe you, and 'you ſhall ſee me attentive to no one 'but yourſelf.'—'Indeed,' ſaid Roxa-lana, with an air of compaſſion, 'you 'deſerve better luck. It is pity you 'are not a plain private gentleman in 'my country; I ſhould then be weak 'enough to entertain ſome ſort of 'kindneſs for you: for, at the bot-'tom, it is not yourſelf that I hate, 'it is that which ſurrounds you. You 'are much better than ordinary for a 'Turk: you have even ſomething of 'the Frenchman about you; and, with-'out flattery, I have loved ſome who 'were not ſo deſerving as yourſelf.'— 'You have loved!' cried Soliman, with horror. 'Oh, not at all! I took care 'of that. But do you expect one to 'have kept one's virtue all one's life-'time, in order to ſurrender it to you? 'Indeed theſe Turks are pleaſant peo-'ple!'—'And you have not been vir-'tuous? O Heavens, what do I hear! 'I am betrayed! I am loſt! Deſtruc-'tion ſeize the traitors who meant to

'impoſe

'impose upon me!'—'Forgive them,' said Roxalana; 'the poor creatures are 'not to blame. The most knowing are 'often deceived. And then, the mis-'fortune is not very great. Why do 'not you restore me to my liberty, if 'you think me unworthy of the honours 'of slavery?'—'Yes, yes, I will restore 'you to that liberty, of which you have 'made so good use.' At these words the sultan retired in a rage, saying to himself, 'I plainly foresaw that this lit-'tle turned-up nose had made a slip.'

It is impossible to describe the confusion into which this imprudent avowal of Roxalana's had thrown him. Sometimes he had a mind to have her sent away, sometimes that they should shut her up, next that they should bring her to him, and then again, that she should be sent away. The great Soliman no longer knows what he says. 'My 'lord,' remonstrated the eunuch, 'can 'you fall into despair for a trifle? One 'girl more or less; is there any thing 'so uncommon in her? Besides, who 'knows whether the confession she has 'made be not an artifice to get herself 'sent back to her own country?'—'What say you? How! can it be pos-'sible? It is the very thing! He 'opens my eyes. Women are not 'used to make such confessions. It is a 'trick! a stratagem! Ah, the perfi-'dious hussy! Let me dissemble in my 'turn: I will drive her to the last ex-'tremity. Hark ye! go and tell her that 'I invite her to sup with me this even-'ing. But, no; order the songstress to 'come here: it is better to send her.'

Delia was charged to employ all her art to engage the confidence of Roxalana. As soon as the latter had heard what she had to say, 'What!' said she, 'young and handsome as you are, does 'he charge you with his messages, and 'have you the weakness to obey him? 'Get you gone, you are not worthy to 'be my countrywoman. Ah! I see 'plainly that they spoil him, and that 'I alone must take upon me to teach 'this Turk how to live. I will send 'him word that I keep you to sup with 'me; I must have him make some 'atonement for his impertinence.'—'But, Madam, he will take it ill.'—'He! I should be glad to see him take 'any thing ill of me.'—'But he seemed 'desirous of seeing you alone.'—'A-'lone, ah! it is not come to that yet; 'and I shall make him go over a good 'deal of ground, before we have any 'thing particular to say to each other.'

The sultan was as much surprized as piqued to learn that they should have a third person. However, he repaired early to Roxalana's. As soon as she saw him coming, she ran to meet him with as easy an air as if they had been upon the best footing in the world together. 'There,' says she, 'is a hand-'some man come to sup with us! Do 'you like him, Madam? Confess, So-'liman, that I am a good friend. Come, 'draw near, salute the lady. There! 'very well. Now, thank me. Softly! 'I do not like to have people dwell too 'long on their acknowledgments. Won-'derful! I assure you he surprizes me. 'He has had but two lessons, and see 'how he is improved! I do not despair 'of making him, one day or other, an 'absolute Frenchman.'

Do but imagine the astonishment of a sultan; a sultan! the conqueror of Asia! to see himself treated like a school-boy by a slave of eighteen. During supper, her gaiety and extravagance were inconceivable. The sultan was beside himself with transport. He questioned her concerning the manners of Europe. One picture followed another. Our prejudices, our follies, our humours, were all laid hold of, all represented. Soliman thought himself in Paris. 'The 'witty rogue!' cried he; 'witty rogue!' From Europe she fell upon Asia. This was much worse: the haughtiness of the men, the weakness of the women, the dulness of their society, the filthy gravity of their amours, nothing escaped her, though she had seen nothing but cursorily. The seraglio had it's turn; and Roxalana began by felicitating the sultan on having been the first to imagine that he could ensure the virtue of the women by the absolute impotence of the blacks.

She was preparing to enlarge upon the honour that this circumstance of his reign would do him in history; but he begged her to spare him. 'Well,' said she, 'I perceive that I take up those 'moments which Delia could fill up 'much better. Throw yourself at her 'feet, to obtain from her one of those 'airs which they say she sings with so 'much taste and spirit.' Delia did not suffer herself to be entreated. Roxalana appeared charmed: she asked Soliman, in a low voice, for a handkerchief; he

gave her one, without the leaſt ſuſpicion of her deſign. 'Madam,' ſaid ſhe to Delia, preſenting it to her, 'I am de-'ſired by the ſultan to give you the 'handkerchief; you have well deſerved 'it.'—'Oh, to be ſure!' ſaid Soliman, tranſported with anger; and preſenting his hand to the ſongſtreſs, retired along with her.

As ſoon as they were alone, 'I con-'feſs,' ſaid he to her, 'that this giddy 'girl confounds me. You ſee the ſtyle 'in which ſhe treats me. I have not 'the courage to be angry with her. In 'ſhort, I am mad, and I do not know 'what method to take to bring her to 'reaſon.'—'My lord,' ſaid Delia, 'I 'believe I have diſcovered her temper. 'Authority can do nothing. You 'have nothing for it but extreme cold-'neſs or extreme gallantry. Coldneſs 'may pique her; but I am afraid we 'are too far gone for that. She knows 'that you love her. She will enjoy the 'pain that this will coſt you; and you 'will come to ſooner than ſhe. This 'method, beſides, is diſagreeable and 'painful; and if one moment's weak-'neſs ſhould eſcape you, you will have 'all to begin again.'—'Well, then,' ſaid the ſultan, 'let us try gallantry.'

From that time there was in the ſe-raglio every day a new feſtival, of which Roxalana was the object; but ſhe re-ceived all this as an homage due to her, without concern or pleaſure, but with a cool complaiſance. The ſultan ſome-times aſked her, 'How did you like 'thoſe ſports, thoſe concerts, thoſe 'ſpectacles?'—'Well enough,' ſaid ſhe, 'but there was ſomething wanting.'—'And what?'—'Men and liberty.'

Soliman was in deſpair: he had re-courſe to Delia. 'Upon my word,' ſaid the ſongſtreſs, 'I know nothing 'elſe that can touch her; at leaſt, un-'leſs glory have a ſhare in it. You re-'ceive to-morrow the ambaſſadors of 'your allies; cannot I bring her to ſee 'this ceremony behind a curtain, which 'may conceal us from the eyes of your 'court?'—'And do you think,' ſaid the ſultan, 'that this would make any 'impreſſion on her?'—'I hope ſo,' ſaid Delia, 'the women of her country love 'glory.'—'You charm me!' cried So-liman. 'Yes my dear Delia, I ſhall 'owe my happineſs to you.'

At his return from this ceremony, which he took care to render as pompous as poſſible, he repaired to Roxalana. 'Get you gone,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'out 'of my ſight, and never ſee me more.' The ſultan remained motionleſs and dumb with aſtoniſhment. 'Is this, then,' purſued ſhe, 'your art of love? Glory 'and grandeur, the only good things 'worthy to touch the ſoul, are reſerved 'for you alone; ſhame and oblivion, 'the moſt inſupportable of all evils, are 'my portion; and you would have me 'love you! I hate you worſe than 'death!' The ſultan would fain have turned this reproach into raillery. 'Nay, 'but I am ſerious,' reſumed ſhe; 'if 'my lover had but a hut, I would ſhare 'his hut with him, and be content. He 'has a throne; I will ſhare his throne, 'or he is no lover of mine. If you 'think me unworthy to reign over the 'Turks, ſend me back to my own 'country, where all the handſome wo-'men are ſovereigns, and much more 'abſolute than I ſhould be here; for 'they reign over hearts.'—'The ſove-'reignty of mine then is not ſufficient 'for you?' ſaid Soliman with the moſt tender air in the world. 'No; I de-'ſire no heart which has pleaſures that 'I have not. Talk to me no more of 'your feaſts, all mere paſtimes for chil-'dren. I muſt have embaſſies.'—'But, 'Roxalana, you are either mad, or you 'dream!'—'And what do you find, 'then, ſo extravagant, in deſiring to 'reign with you? Am I formed to 'diſgrace a throne? And do you think 'that I ſhould have diſplayed leſs great-'neſs and dignity than yourſelf in aſ-'ſuring our ſubjects and allies of our 'protection?'—'I think,' ſaid the ſul-tan, 'that you would do every thing 'with grace; but it is not in my power 'to ſatisfy your ambition, and I be-'ſeech you to think no more of it.'—'Think no more of it! Oh! I promiſe 'you I ſhall think of nothing elſe; and 'I will from henceforward dream of 'nothing but a ſceptre, a crown, an 'embaſſy.' She kept her word. The next morning ſhe had already contrived the deſign of her diadem, and had al-ready ſettled every thing, except the co-lour of the ribband which was to tie it. She ordered rich ſtuffs to be brought her for her habits of ceremony; and as ſoon as the ſultan appeared, ſhe aſked his opinion on the choice. He exerted all his endeavours to divert her from this idea; but contradiction plunged her into

into the deepeſt melancholy; and to draw her out of it again, he was obliged to flatter her illuſion. Then ſhe diſplayed the moſt brilliant gaiety. He ſeized theſe moments to talk to her of love; but, without liſtening, ſhe talked to him of politicks. All her anſwers to the harangues of the deputies, on her acceſſion to the crown, were already prepared. She had even formed projects of regulations for the territories of the grand ſignior. She would make them plant vines and build opera-houſes; ſuppreſs the eunuchs, becauſe they were good for nothing; ſhut up the jealous, becauſe they diſturbed ſociety; and baniſh all ſelf-intereſted perſons, becauſe ſooner or later they became rogues. The ſultan amuſed himſelf for ſome time with theſe follies: nevertheleſs, he ſtill burned with the moſt violent love, without any hope of being happy. On the leaſt ſuſpicion of violence ſhe became furious, and was ready to kill herſelf. On the other hand, Soliman found not the ambition of Roxalana ſo very fooliſh: 'For, in ſhort,' ſaid he, 'is it not 'cruel to be alone deprived of the happineſs of aſſociating to my fortune a 'woman whom I eſteem and love? All 'my ſubjects may have a lawful wife; 'an abſurd law forbids marriage to me 'alone.' Thus ſpoke love, but policy put him to ſilence. He took the reſolution of confiding to Roxalana the reaſons which reſtrained him. 'I would 'make it,' ſaid he, 'my happineſs to 'leave nothing wanting to yours: but 'our manners—' 'Idle ſtories!'—'Our laws—' 'Old ſongs!'—'The 'prieſts—' 'What care they!'—'The 'people and the ſoldiery—' 'What is it 'to them? Will they be more wretched 'when you ſhall have me for your con'ſort? You have very little love, if you 'have ſo little courage!' She prevailed ſo far, that Soliman was aſhamed of being ſo fearful. He orders the mufti, the vizier, the camaican, the aga of the ſea, and the aga of the janiſſaries, to come to him; and he ſays to them, 'I have carried, 'as far as I was able, the glory of the 'creſcent; I have eſtabliſhed the power 'and peace of my empire; and I deſire 'nothing, by way of recompence for 'my labours, but to enjoy with the 'good-will of my ſubjects a bleſſing 'which they all enjoy. I know not 'what law, but it is one that is not de'rived down to us from the prophet, 'forbids the ſultans the ſweets of the 'marriage-bed: thence I perceive my'ſelf reduced to the condition of ſlaves, 'whom I deſpiſe; and I have reſolved 'to marry a woman whom I adore. 'Prepare my people, then, for this mar'riage. If they approve it, I receive 'their approbation as a mark of their 'gratitude; but if they dare to mur'mur at it, tell them that I will have 'it ſo.' The aſſembly received the ſultan's orders with a reſpectful ſilence, and the people followed their example.

Soliman, tranſported with joy and love, went to fetch Roxalana, in order to lead her to the moſque; and ſaid to himſelf in a low voice, as he was conducting her thither, 'Is it poſſible that 'a little turned-up noſe ſhould overturn 'the laws of an empire!'

THE SCRUPLE;

OR,

LOVE DISSATISFIED WITH ITSELF.

'HEAVEN be praiſed,' ſaid Beliſa on going out of mourning for her huſband, 'I have now fulfilled 'a grievous and painful piece of duty! 'It was time it ſhould be over. To 'ſee one's ſelf delivered up at the age 'of ſixteen to a man whom we know 'nothing of; to paſs the beſt days of 'one's life in dullneſs, diſſimulation, 'and ſervitude; to be the ſlave and 'victim of a love we inſpire, but of 'which we cannot partake; what a 'trial for virtue! I have undergone it, 'and am now diſcharged. I have no'thing to reproach myſelf with; for 'though I did not love my huſband, I 'pretended to love him, and that is 'much more heroick. I was faithful

'to

'to him, notwithstanding his jealousy: 'in short, I have mourned for him. 'This, I think, is carrying goodness 'of heart as far as it can go. At length 'restored to myself, I depend on no- 'thing but my own will, and it is only 'from to-day that I begin to live. Ah! 'how my heart would take fire, if any 'one should succeed so far as to please 'me! But let me consider well before 'I engage this heart of mine; and 'let me not, if possible, run the risk 'either of ceasing to love, or of ceas- 'ing to be loved.—Cease to be loved! 'That, I believe, is a difficult matter,' resumed she, consulting at the same time her looking-glass; 'but to cease to love 'is still worse. How could one for any 'considerable time feign a passion one 'did not feel? I should never be able 'to do it. To leave a man after we 'have taken to him, is a piece of ef- 'frontery beyond me; and then com- 'plaints, despair, the noise of a rup- 'ture, all that is frightful! Let me love, 'since Heaven has given me a sensible 'heart; but let me love my whole life 'long, and not flatter myself with those 'transient likings, those caprices, which 'are so often taken for love. I have 'time to chuse and try myself; the only 'thing to be done to avoid all sur- 'prize, is to form a distinct and exact 'notion of love. I have read that love 'is a passion, which of two souls makes 'but one; which pierces them at the 'same time, and fills them one with 'the other; which detaches them from 'every thing, supplies the want of every 'thing, and makes their mutual hap- 'piness their only care and desire. Such, 'without doubt, is love; and accord- 'ing to this idea of it, it will be very 'easy for me to distinguish in myself, 'and in others, the illusion from the 'reality.'

Her first experiment was made on a young magistrate, with whom the disposition of her late husband's effects gave her some connection. The President de S——, with an agreeable figure, a cultivated understanding, a sweet and sensible temper, was simple in his dress, easy in his manner, and modest in his conversation. He valued himself neither on being a connoisseur in equipages nor fineries. He talked not of his horses to the women, nor of his intrigues to the men. He had all the talents becoming his place without ostentation, and all the agreeable qualities of a man of the world without being a coxcomb. He was the same at court and in company; not that he passed decrees at an entertainment, or rallied when he heard causes; but as he had not the least affectation, he was always without disguise.

Belisa was touched with such uncommon merit. He had gained her confidence; he obtained her friendship, and under that name the heart goes a great way. The affairs of Belisa's husband being settled, 'May I be permitted,' said the president one day to the widow, 'to ask you one question in confidence? 'Do you propose to remain free, or 'shall the sacrifice of your liberty make 'one man more happy?'—'No, Sir,' said she, 'I have too much delicacy 'ever to make it any man's duty to live 'only for me.'—'That duty would 'be a very pleasing one,' replied the gallant magistrate; 'and I greatly fear, 'that without your consent more than 'one lover will impose it upon him- 'self.'—'So much the better,' said Belisa; 'let them love me without being 'obliged to it: it is the most pleasing 'of all homages.'—'Yet, Madam, I 'cannot suspect you of being a coquette.' —'Oh! you would do me great injustice 'if you did; for I abominate coquet- 'try.'—'But to desire to be loved with- 'out loving again?'—'And who, Sir, 'has told you that I shall not love? 'Such resolutions are not taken at my 'age. I would neither constrain, nor 'be constrained; that is all.'—'Very 'well: you desire, then, that the en- 'gagement should cease with inclina- 'tion?'—'I desire that both the one 'and the other should be eternal, and 'for that reason I would avoid even the 'shadow of constraint. I feel myself 'capable of loving all my life long in 'liberty; but, to tell you the truth, I 'would not promise to love two days 'in slavery.'

The president saw plainly that he must humour her delicacy, and content himself with being on the footing of a friend. He had the modesty to bring himself to that; and from thenceforward every little tenderness of love was practised in order to touch her. He succeeded. I shall not mention the degrees by which Belisa's sensibility was every day more and more affected; let it suffice, that she was now come to that pass, when prudence, in equipoise with love, waits only one slight effort to turn the scale. They were

were at this point, and were *tête-à-tête*. The president's eyes, enflamed with love, devoured the charms of Belisa; he pressed her hand tenderly. Belisa, trembling, hardly breathed. The president solicited her with the impassioned eloquence of desire. 'Ah! president,' said she to him at last, 'could you be capable of deceiving me?' At these words the last sigh of modesty seemed to have escaped her lips. 'No, Madam,' said he, 'it is my heart, it is Love himself who has just spoken by my mouth, and may I die at your feet, if—' As he fell at Belisa's feet, his knee came upon one of the paws of *Shock*, the young widow's favourite lap-dog. *Shock* set up an howl. 'Lord, Sir, how awkward you are?' cried Belisa with anger. The president coloured, and was disconcerted. He took *Shock* to his bosom, kissed the injured paw, asked his pardon a thousand times, and intreated him to solicit his forgiveness. *Shock*, recovered of his pain, returned the president's caresses. 'You see, Madam, he has good-nature; he forgives me; it is a fine example for you.' Belisa made no reply. She was fallen into a profound reverie, and a cold gravity. He wanted at first to interpret her gravity as a little pouting, and threw himself again at Belisa's feet in order to appease her. 'Pray, Sir, get up,' said she to him; 'these freedoms displease me, and I do not know that I have given any room for them.'

Imagine the president's astonishment. He was confounded for two whole minutes, without being able to bring out a word. 'What! Madam,' said he to her at last, 'can it be possible that so trivial an accident has drawn your anger upon me?'—'Not at all, Sir; but I may, without anger, take it ill that any one should throw himself at my feet: it is a situation that suits only happy lovers, and I esteem you too much to suspect your having dared to form any such pretensions.'—'I do not see, Madam,' replied the president with emotion, 'why a hope founded on love should render me less worthy of esteem: but may I presume to ask you, since love is a crime in your eyes, what is the nature of the sentiment you have expressed towards me?'—'Friendship, Sir, friendship; and I desire you very seriously to keep to that.'—'I ask your pardon, Madam: I should have sworn that it had been somewhat else; I see plainly that I was mistaken.'—'That may be, Sir; many others are mistaken as well as yourself.' The president could no longer sustain the shock of so strange an instance of caprice. He went away in despair, and was not recalled.

As soon as Belisa found herself alone, 'Was not I going to be guilty of a fine piece of folly?' said she with indignation. 'I have seen the moment when my weakness was going to yield to a man whom I did not love. They may well say, that we know nothing less than ourselves. I could have sworn that I adored him, that there was nothing which I was not disposed to sacrifice to him; no such thing: he happens, without intending it, to hurt my little dog, and this violent love immediately gives place to anger. A dog touches me more than he, and without a moment's hesitation I take the part of this little animal against the man in the world whom I thought I loved best. A very lively passion indeed, mighty solid, and tender! See how we take ideas for sentiments! The brain is heated, and we fancy the heart inflamed; we proceed to all manner of follies; the illusion ceases, and disgust succeeds: we must tire ourselves with constancy without love, or be inconstant with indecency. O, my dear *Shock*, what do I not owe you! It is you that have undeceived me. But for you, I should perhaps have been at this moment overwhelmed with confusion, and torn with remorse.'

Whether Belisa did or did not love the president, (for questions of this nature turn merely on the equivocation of terms) it is certain, that on the strength of saying to herself that she did not love him, she succeeded so far as to convince herself of it; and a young officer soon confirmed her in her opinion.

Lindor, from being one of the pages, had just obtained a company of horse. Freshness of youth, impatience of desire, giddiness, and levity, which are graces at sixteen, and follies at thirty, rendered agreeable in the eyes of Belisa this young man of quality, who had the honour of belonging to her husband's family. Lindor was extremely fond of himself, and not without reason; he knew that he was well made, and of a charming figure. He said so sometimes; but he laughed so heartily after he had said

said it, he discovered in laughing so fresh a mouth and such fine teeth, that these simplicities were pardoned at his age. He mingled besides such lofty and noble sentiments with the puerilities of self-love, that all this together was very engaging. He was desirous of having a handsome mistress, and a good war-horse; he would view himself in the glass as he went through the Prussian exercise. He would beg Belisa to lend him the Sopha*, and asked her if she had read Folard's Polybius. He thought it long till spring, that he might have an elegant suit, in case of a peace, or make a campaign if it should be war. This mixture of frivolousness and heroism is perhaps the most seducing of any thing in the eyes of a woman. A confused presage that this pretty little creature, who trifles at the toilette, who caresses his dear self, who admires his own sweet person, will, perhaps, in two months time throw himself in the face of a battery, upon a squadron of the enemy, or climb like a grenadier up a mined breach; this presage gives to the gentilities of a fine gentleman an air of the marvellous, which creates admiration and tenderness: but this foppery sits well on none but young gentlemen of the army. A piece of advice, by the way, to pretty fellows of every condition.

Belisa was affected by the simple and airy graces of Lindor. He had conceived a passion for her from the first visit. A young page is in haste to be in love. 'My beautiful cousin,' said he to her one day, for so he called her on account of their alliance, 'I ask of 'Heaven but two things; to make my 'first campaigns against the English, 'and with you.'—'You are a giddy 'creature,' said she, 'and I advise you 'to desire neither one nor the other: 'one will happen perhaps but too soon, 'and the other will never happen at all.' —'Never happen at all! That is very 'strange, my sweet cousin. But I ex-'pected this answer: so it does not dis-'courage me. Come, I will lay you a 'wager, that before my second cam-'pain you will cease to be cruel. Now 'that I have nothing to plead for me but 'my age and figure, you treat me like a 'child; but when you shall have heard 'it said, "He was in such an action, his "regiment charged on such an occasion, "he distinguished himself, he took a "post, he has run at housand risks;" 'then your little heart will go pit-a-pat 'with fear and pleasure, and perhaps 'with love; who knows? If I were 'wounded, for example! Oh, that is 'very moving! For my part, if I were 'a woman, I should wish that my lover 'had been wounded in the wars. I 'would kiss his scars, I should have 'infinite pleasure in counting them. 'My beautiful cousin, I shall shew you 'mine. You will never be able to hold 'it.'—'Go, you young fool, do your 'duty like a gallant man, and do not 'shock me with presages that make me 'tremble.'—'See, now, if I have not 'spoke truth? I make you tremble be-'forehand. Ah! if the idea alone af-'fects you, what will the reality? Cou-'rage, my pretty cousin, you may trust 'yourself to me: will not you give me 'something in advance upon account 'of the laurels that I am going to ga-'ther?'

Such fooleries passed between them every day. Belisa, who pretended to laugh at them, was not the less sensibly touched; but that vivacity which made so great an impression upon her heart, prevented Lindor from perceiving it. He was neither knowing enough, nor attentive enough, to observe the gradations of sentiment, and to draw his advantages from them. Not but he was as enterprizing as politeness requires; but a look intimidated him, and the fear of displeasing influenced him as much as his impatience to be happy. Thus two months passed away in slight attempts, without any decisive success. However, their mutual passion grew more and more animated; and feeble as Belisa's resistance was, she was tired of it herself, when the signal for war gave the alarm to their loves.

At this terrible signal all engagements are suspended; one flies away without waiting an answer to a most gallant billet, another fails in an assignation that would have crowned all his wishes: a total revolution in the whole empire of pleasures!

Lindor had scarce time to take leave of Belisa. She had now reproached herself a hundred times for her imaginary cruelties. 'This poor youth,' said she, 'loves me with all his soul: nothing 'can be more natural or tender than the

* The title of a loose novel.

'expression

'expression of his sentiments. His figure is a model for a painter or statuary. He is beautiful as the day; giddy, indeed; but who is not so at his age? And he has an excellent heart. He has nothing to do but to amuse himself: he would find few cruel; yet he sees only me, he breathes only for me, and I treat him with disdain. I wonder how he bears it. I confess, that if I were in his place, I should soon leave this rigid Belisa to stupify herself with her virtue; for, in short, though prudery is well enough sometimes, yet to be always acting the prudish part—' As she was making these reflections, the news arrived that the negociations of peace were broken off, and that the officers had orders to rejoin their corps without a moment's delay. At this news all her blood froze in her veins. 'He is going,' cried she, her heart struck and penetrated. 'He is going to fight; going to die, perhaps; and 'I shall never see him more!' Lindor arrives in his uniform. 'I am come to bid 'you adieu, my sweet cousin: I am going; going to face the enemy. Half 'of my wish is fulfilled; and I hope 'that at my return you will fulfil the 'other half. I love you dearly, my 'sweet cousin! Do you sometimes remember your little cousin: he will 'return your faithful servant, he gives 'you his word. If he is slain, indeed, 'he will not return; but in that case 'his ring and watch shall be sent you. 'You see here this little dog in enamel. 'In it you will retrace my image, my 'fidelity, my tenderness, and you will 'sometimes kiss it.' In pronouncing these last words, he smiled tenderly, and his eyes were bedewed with tears. Belisa, who was no longer able to retain her own, said to him with the most sorrowful air in the world, 'You quit me 'very gaily, Lindor: you say you love 'me; are these the adieus of a lover? 'I thought it had been dreadful to 'banish one's self from what one loves. 'But it is not now the time to reproach 'you; come, embrace me.' Lindor, transported, made use of this permission even to licentiousness, and Belisa was not offended. 'And when are you to 'depart?' said she. 'Immediately.' —'Immediately! what! do not you sup 'with me!'—'Impossible.'—'I had a 'thousand things to say to you.'—'Say 'them quickly, then; my horses wait.' —'You are very cruel to refuse me one 'evening!'—'Ah! my pretty cousin, 'I would give you my life; but my 'honour is at stake: my hours are 'numbered; I must be there to a minute. Think, if there should be an 'action and I not there, I should be undone: your little cousin would be unworthy of you. Suffer me to deserve 'you.'

Belisa embraced him anew, bathing him at the same time with her tears. 'Go,' said she; 'I should be distracted 'if I drew the least reproach upon you; 'your honour is as dear to me as my 'own. Be wise, expose yourself only 'just as much as duty requires, and return such as I now see you. You 'do not give me time to say more; but 'we will write to each other. Adieu.' —'Adieu, my sweet cousin.'—'Adieu, 'adieu, my dear boy.'

It is thus that among us gallantry is the soul of honour, as honour is the soul of our armies. Our ladies have no occasion to meet our warriors more than half-way, in order to make them fight; but the contempt with which they treat a paltroon, and the favour they shew to men of courage, render their lovers intrepid.

Belisa passed the night in the most profound sorrow, and bathed her bed with her tears. The day following she wrote to Lindor: all that a tender and delicate soul could inspire of the most touching nature was expressed in her letter. O ye, who are so ill educated! who is it that teaches you to write so well? Does nature take pleasure to humble us by giving you your revenge?

Lindor in his answer, which was full of fire and irregularity, expressed by turns the two passions of his soul, military ardour and love. Belisa's impatience disturbed her rest till she received this answer. Their correspondence was established, and continued without interruption for half the campaign; and the last letter they wrote was always the warmest; the last that was expected always the most desired. Lindor, to his misfortune, had a suspicious confidante. 'You are bewitched,' said this bosom-friend to him, 'with this wo-'man's being so fond of you. Ah, if 'you did but know the bottom of all 'this! I know women. Will you 'make one proof of your mistress? 'Write her word that you have lost an

'eye; I will lay a wager she will advise 'you to take patience, and forget her.' Lindor, quite certain of his triumph, consented to make the trial: and as he knew not how to lye, his friend dictated the letter. Belisa was distracted: the image of Lindor presented itself to her imagination, but with one eye wanting. That large black patch made it impossible to know him. 'What pity!' said she, sighing. 'His two eyes were so 'brilliant! Mine met them with so 'much pleasure! Love had painted him-'self there with so many charms! Yet 'he is only the more interesting to my 'heart on this account, and I ought to 'love him the more. He must be dis-'consolate; and dreads nothing so much 'as the appearing less amiable to me. 'Let me write to him, to encourage, 'to comfort him, if it be possible.' This was the first time that Belisa was ever obliged to say to herself, *Let me write to him!* Her letter was cold, in spite of herself: she perceived it, tore it, and writ it over anew. The expressions were strong enough; but the turn of them was forced, and the style laboured. That black patch, instead of a fine eye, clouded her imagination, and chilled her conceptions. 'Ah! let me flatter 'myself no longer,' said she, tearing her letter a second time: 'this poor 'youth is no longer beloved; an eye 'lost turns my soul topsy-turvy. I 'wanted to play the heroine; and I am 'but a weak woman; let me not affect 'sentiments above my character. Lin-'dor does not deserve to be deceived: 'he reckons upon a generous and sen-'sible soul; but if I cannot love him, 'I ought at least to undeceive him; his 'lying under a mistake will give me 'pain. "I am disconsolate," writ 'she to him, "and am much more to "be lamented than yourself: you have "lost only a charm, but I am going to "lose your esteem, as I have already "lost my own. I thought myself wor-"thy to love you, and to be beloved "by you; I am no longer so: my heart "flattered itself with being superior to "events; a single accident has changed "me. Console yourself, Sir! you will "always please any reasonable woman; "and after the humiliating confession "I have now made you, you have no "longer any occasion to regret me."

Lindor was distracted on reading this billet. The *Sir* especially appeared to him an atrocious injury. '*Sir!*' cried he. 'Ah! the perfidious woman! Her 'little cousin, *Sir!* This, *Sir*, is for 'the man with one eye.' He went to find out his friend. 'I told you so,' said the confidante. 'Now is the time 'to take your revenge; unless you had 'rather wait the end of the campaign, 'in order to give your heroine the plea-'sure of a surprize.'—'No, I will put 'her to confusion this very day,' replied the unfortunate Lindor. He then wrote to her that he was quite transported that he had tried her; that *Sir* had still got his two eyes, but that those eyes would never view her more, but as the most ungrateful of women. Belisa was confounded, and from that instant resolved to renounce the world, and bury herself in the country. 'Let me go and ve-'getate,' said she; 'I am fit for no-'thing else.'

In her country-neighbourhood was a kind of philosopher in the flower of his age, who, after having enjoyed every thing for six months of the year in town, was come for the other six months to enjoy himself in voluptuous solitude. He paid his compliments to Belisa. 'You have,' said she to him, 'the re-'putation of wisdom; what is your 'plan of life?'—'Plan, Madam! I 'never had any,' replied the Count de P. 'I do every thing that can amuse me, I 'seek after every thing that I love, and 'carefully avoid every thing that makes 'me dull, or displeases me.'—'Do you 'live alone? or do you see company?' —'I see our shepherd sometimes, whom 'I teach morality; I converse with hus-'bandmen, who are better instructed 'than all our *literati*; I give a ball to 'some of the prettiest young villagers in 'the world; I make lotteries for them 'of laces and ribbands, and I marry 'off the most amorous.'—'What!' said Belisa with astonishment, 'do these folks 'know what love is?'—'Better than 'we do, Madam; a hundred times bet-'ter than we do. They love like turtles: 'they give me an appetite for it.'— 'You will confess, however, that they 'love without delicacy.'—'Alas, Ma-'dam! delicacy is a refinement of art; 'they have instinct from Nature, and 'that instinct renders them happy. They 'talk of love in town, but it is prac-'tised only in the country. They have 'in sentiment what we have in imagi-'nation, I have tried, like other peo-'ple,

'ple, to love and be loved in the world; 'caprice and convenience, order and 'disorder, every thing. A connection 'is nothing more than a rencounter; 'here inclination makes the choice: 'you will see in the sports that I give 'them, how their simple and tender 'hearts seek each other without know-'ing it, and attract each other by turns.' —'You give me,' said Belisa, 'a pic-'ture of the country beyond expecta-'tion. They say these people are so 'much to be lamented!'—'They were 'so, Madam, some years ago; but I 'have found out the secret of render-'ing their condition more agreeable.' —'O, you shall tell me your secret,' interrupted Belisa briskly, 'I want to 'make use of it.'—'It is your own 'fault if you do not. It is this: I 'have an income of forty thousand livres 'a year; of this I spend ten or twelve 'at Paris in the two seasons that I pass 'there; eight or ten at my house in the 'country; and by this management I 'have twenty thousand livres to throw 'away on exchanges.'—'What ex-'changes?'—'I have lands well cul-'tivated, meadows well watered, orch-'ards well fenced and well planted.' —'What then?'—'What then! Lu-'cas, Blaise, Nicolas, my neighbours 'and my good friends, have grounds 'lying fallow or poor; they have not 'wherewith to cultivate them; I swap 'mine with them for theirs; and the 'same extent of land, which hardly 'maintained them, after two crops makes 'them rich. The ground which was 'barren under their hands, becomes 'fertile in mine. I chuse the seed for 'it, the plant, the manure, the hus-'bandry that suits it, and as soon as it 'is in good condition, I bethink me of 'some new exchange. These are my 'amusements.'—'Charming!' cried Belisa, 'you understand agriculture 'then?'—'A little, Madam, and I 'instruct myself in it; I oppose the 'theory of the learned to the experience 'of farmers; I endeavour to correct 'what I see defective in the speculations 'of the one, and in the practice of the 'other: and the study is amusing.'— 'Oh! I believe it, and I would fain 'give into it. Why? You ought to 'be adored in these parts; these poor 'labourers ought to consider you as 'their father.'—'Yes, Madam, we 'have a great affection for each other.' —'I am very happy, my lord, that 'chance has given me such a neighbour! 'Let us see each other often, I intreat 'of you: I want to pursue your la-'bours, to follow your method, and 'become your rival in the hearts of 'these good people.'—'You cannot 'have, Madam, any rivals of either sex 'wherever it is your desire to please, 'and even where it is not.'

Such was their first interview; and from this moment see Belisa a villager, entirely taken up with agriculture, conversing with farmers, and reading nothing but the *Compleat System of Agriculture*. The count invited her to one of his holiday-feasts, and presented her to the peasants as a new benefactress, or rather as their sovereign. She was a witness of the love and respect they had for him. Sentiments of this kind are catching: they are so natural and so tender! it is the highest of all encomiums, and Belisa was touched with them even to jealousy; but how distant was this jealousy from hatred! 'It must be 'confessed,' said she, 'that they have 'great reason to love him. Exclusive 'of his good actions, nobody in the 'world is more amiable.'

From this time the most intimate, and in appearance the most philosophical connection, was established between them. Their conversation turned only on natural studies, on the means of renovating this old mother earth, who exhausts herself for the sake of her children. Botany pointed out to them the plants salutary to the flocks and herds, and those that were hurtful; mechanicks afforded them the powers to raise water at a small expence to the top of dry hills, and to soften the fatigues of animals destined to labour; natural history taught them how to calculate the œconomical inconveniencies and advantages in the choice of these animals; practice confirmed or corrected their observations; and they made their experiments in small, in order to render them less expensive. The holiday came round, and their sports suspended their studies.

Belisa and the philosopher mingled in the dances of the villagers. Belisa perceived with surprize that not one of them was taken up in admiring her. 'You will now,' said she to her friend, 'suspect me of a very strange piece of 'coquetry: but I will not dissemble 'with you. I have been told a hun-

'dred times that I was handſome; I 'have likewiſe, much beyond theſe peaſants, the advantage of dreſs; yet I 'do not ſee, in the eyes of the young 'country-fellows, any traces of emotion at the ſight of me. They think 'only of their companions; they have 'no ſouls but for them.'—'Nothing is 'more natural, Madam,' ſaid the count. 'Deſire never comes without ſome ray of 'hope; and theſe poor people find you 'no otherwiſe beautiful, than as they 'do the ſtars and the flowers.'—'You 'ſurprize me,' ſaid Beliſa; 'is it hope 'that renders us ſenſible?'—'No; but 'it directs our ſenſibility.'—'We never 'love, then, but with the hope of pleaſ-'ing?'—'No, to be ſure, Madam; or 'elſe who could help loving you?'—'A 'philoſopher, then, has gallantry?' replied Beliſa, with a ſmile. 'I ſpeak the 'truth, Madam, though no philoſo-'pher; but if I deſerved that name, I 'ſhould only have the more ſenſibility. 'A true philoſopher is a man, and glo-'ries in being ſo. Wiſdom never con-'tradicts nature, but when nature is in 'the wrong.' Beliſa bluſhed, the count was confounded, and they ſat ſome time with their eyes fixed on the ground, without daring to break ſilence. The count endeavoured to renew the converſation on the beauties of the country; but their diſcourſe was confuſed, broken, and without continuation: they no longer knew what they ſaid, and ſtill leſs what they were going to ſay. They parted at laſt, ſhe thoughtful and he loſt; and both afraid that they had ſaid too much.

The youth of the neighbouring villages aſſembled the next day, in order to give them a feaſt: it's ſprightlineſs compoſed all it's ornament. Beliſa was tranſported at it; but the cataſtrophe ſurprized her. The maſter of the feaſt had made ſongs in praiſe of her and the count, and the couplets cloſed with ſaying, that Beliſa was the elm, and the count the ivy. The count knew not whether he ſhould ſilence them, or take the matter in jeſt; but Beliſa was offended at it. 'Pardon them, Madam,' ſaid the count to her, as he re-conducted her home; 'theſe good people ſpeak 'what they think, and know no better. 'I ſhould have put them to ſilence, but 'that I had not the courage to make 'them unhappy.' Beliſa made him no anſwer, and he retired overwhelmed with ſorrow for the impreſſion this innocent ſport had made on her.

'How unhappy am I!' ſaid Beliſa, after the departure of the count. 'See, 'here again is a man I am going to love. 'It is ſo clear, that even theſe peaſants 'perceive it: it will be with him, as 'with all others, a ſlight flame, a ſpark. 'No; I will ſee him no more: it is 'ſhameful to be deſirous of inſpiring a 'paſſion, when we are not ſuſceptible 'of it ourſelves. The count would de-'liver himſelf up to me without reſerve, 'and with the greateſt confidence: I 'ſhould make a very reſpectable man 'unhappy, if I were to break with 'him.' The next day he ſent to know if ſhe was to be ſeen. 'What ſhall I 'do? If I refuſe him to-day, I muſt 'ſee him to-morrow; if I perſiſt in not 'ſeeing him more, what will he think 'of this change? What has he done 'that can have diſpleaſed me? Shall I 'leave him to think that I miſtruſt him 'or myſelf? After all, what if he 'ſhould aſſure me that he loves me? 'And if he ſhould love, am I obliged 'to love him? I will bring him to rea-'ſon; I will give him a ſketch of my 'character; he will eſteem me the more 'for it: I muſt ſee him.' The count comes.

'I am going to ſurprize you,' ſaid ſhe to him; 'I have been on the point 'of breaking with you.'—'With me, 'Madam! why? What is my crime?' —'Being amiable and dangerous. I 'declare to you that I came here in 'queſt of repoſe; that I fear nothing 'ſo much as love; that I am not form-'ed for a ſolid engagement; that I 'have the lighteſt, the moſt inconſtant 'ſoul in the world; that I deſpiſe tran-'ſitory likings; and that I have not a 'ſufficient fund of ſenſibility to enter-'tain a durable paſſion. This is my 'character: I give you warning. I 'can anſwer for myſelf with reſpect to 'friendſhip; but as to love, you muſt 'not depend on me; and that I may 'have no cauſe to reproach myſelf, I 'would neither inſpire it, nor be in-'ſpired with it myſelf. 'Your ſincerity 'encourages mine,' replied the count; 'you are now going to know me in my 'turn. I have conceived for you, without 'the leaſt ſuſpicion or intention, a love 'the moſt tender and violent: it is the 'happieſt thing that could have hap-

'pened

'pened to me, and I reſign myſelf up 'to it with all my heart. Say what 'you pleaſe to me. You think your-'ſelf light and inconſtant; I think I 'know the character of your ſoul bet-'ter than yourſelf.'—'No, Sir, I have 'tried myſelf, and now you ſhall judge.' She told him the ſtory of the preſident, and that of the young page. 'You 'loved them, Madam! you loved them! 'you diſcourage yourſelf without cauſe. 'Your anger againſt the preſident was 'without conſequence. The firſt emo-'tion is always for the dog, but the 'ſecond for the lover: ſo nature has 'ordered it. As to the cooling of 'your love towards the page, that 'would not have been more durable. 'An eye loſt always produces this ef-'fect; but by degrees we become ac-'cuſtomed to it. As to the duration 'of a paſſion, I muſt be ingenuous with 'you. What a madman is he who re-'quires impoſſibilities! I ardently de-'ſire to pleaſe you; I ſhall make it the 'happineſs of my life: but if your in-'clination ſhould happen to grow faint, 'it would be a misfortune, but no 'crime. What! becauſe there is no 'pleaſure in life without it's alloy, muſt 'we deprive ourſelves of every thing, 'renounce every thing? No, Madam, 'we muſt make choice of what is good; 'and pardon both in ourſelves, and 'others, what is not quite ſo well, or 'what is really evil. We lead an eaſy, 'quiet life here; nothing but love is 'wanting to embelliſh it: let us make 'the experiment. If love ſhould va-'niſh, friendſhip ſtill remains, and as 'vanity has no ſhare in it, the friend-'ſhip that ſurvives love is the ſweeter, 'the more intimate, and more tender.' —'Really, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'this is 'ſtrange philoſophy.'—'Simple and 'natural, Madam! I could make ro-'mances as well as another; but life 'is not a romance: our principles, as 'well as ſentiments, ought to be found-'ed in nature. Nothing is eaſier than 'to imagine prodigies of love; but all 'thoſe heroes exiſt only in the brains of 'authors: they ſay what they pleaſe; 'let us do what we can. It is a misfor-'tune, without doubt, to ceaſe to pleaſe; 'it is a greater to ceaſe to love; but the 'height of miſery is to paſs one's life in 'fear and ſelf-conſtraint. Confide in 'yourſelf, Madam, and deign to con-'fide in me. It is cruel enough not to 'be able to love always, without doom-'ing one's ſelf never to love at all. Let 'us imitate our villagers: they do not 'examine whether they ſhall love long; 'it is ſufficient for them to feel that 'they love. I ſurprize you! You have 'been brought up in the region of chi-'meras. Believe me, you have a good 'diſpoſition: return to truth; ſuffer 'yourſelf to be guided by Nature; ſhe 'will conduct you much better than 'Art, which loſes itſelf in the void, and 'reduces ſentiment to nothing by means 'of analyſing it.'

If Beliſa was not perſuaded, ſhe was much leſs confirmed in her firſt reſolution; and from the moment that reaſon wavers, it is eaſy to overturn it. Beliſa ſubmitted without difficulty, and never did mutual love render two hearts more happy! Reſigned with the utmoſt freedom one to the other, they forgot the world; they forgot themſelves. All the faculties of their ſouls united in one, formed a mere vortex of fire, of which love was the centre, and pleaſure the fuel.

This firſt ardour abated, and Beliſa was alarmed; but the count confirmed her. They return to their rural amuſements. Beliſa found that nature was embelliſhed: that the heavens were more ſerene, and the country more delightful; the ſports of the villagers pleaſed her more than before: they recalled a delicious remembrance. Their labours became more intereſting. 'My 'lover,' ſaid ſhe to herſelf, 'is the 'god who encourages them: his hu-'manity, his generoſity, are the rivu-'lets which fertilize theſe fields.' She loved to converſe with the huſbandmen on the benefits ſhowered upon them by this mortal, whom they called their father. Love brought home to herſelf all the good they ſaid of him. Thus ſhe paſſed the whole ſummer in loving, in admiring him, in ſeeing him make others happy, and in making herſelf happy alſo.

Beliſa had propoſed to the count to paſs the winter out of town, and he had anſwered her with a ſmile, 'With all 'my heart.' But as ſoon as the country began to grow bare; that walking was impracticable; that the days became rainy, the mornings cold, and the evenings long; Beliſa perceived with bitterneſs, that wearineſs took poſſeſſion of her ſoul, and that ſhe wanted to re-

viſit

visit Paris. She confessed it with her usual frankness. 'I told you so before-'hand; you would not believe me: 'the event but too well justifies the ill 'opinion I had of myself.'—'What 'event?'—'Ah, my dear count! since 'I must tell you, I grow tired: I love 'you no longer.'—'You grow tired! 'that is very possible,' replied the count, with a smile; 'but you do not love me 'the less: it is the country that you 'love no longer.'—'Alas! Sir, why 'do you flatter me? All places, all sea-'sons, are agreeable with those we love.' —'Yes, in romances, I have told you 'so already, but not in nature.'—'It 'is in vain for you to say so,' insisted Belisa; 'I know full well, that two 'months ago I could have been happy 'with you in a desart.'—'Without 'doubt, Madam, such is the intoxica-'tion of a growing passion; but this 'first flame lasts only for a time. Love, 'when made happy, grows calm and 'moderate. The soul, from that in-'stant, less agitated, begins to become 'sensible to impressions from without; 'we are no longer alone in the world; 'we begin to feel the necessity of dissi-'pation and amusement.'—'Ah, Sir! 'to what do you reduce love?'—'To 'truth, my dear Belisa.'—'To nothing, 'my dear count, to nothing! You 'cease to be my only happiness, I have 'therefore ceased to love you.'—'No, 'my soul's idol, no! I have not lost 'your heart, and I shall be always dear 'to you.'—'Always dear! yes, to be 'sure; but how?'—'As I would wish 'to be.'—'Alas! I perceive my own 'injustice too clearly to conceal it from 'myself.'—'No, Madam, you are not 'unjust! You love me sufficiently: I 'am content, and would not be loved 'more. Will you be more difficult 'than I?'—'Yes, Sir, I shall never for-'give myself the having been able to 'grow tired of the most amiable man in 'the world.'—'And I, Madam, and 'I, who have nothing to boast of, am 'tired also at times of the most adorable 'of all women, and I forgive myself 'for it.'—'What, Sir! are you ever 'tired of me?'—'Even of you. Ne-'vertheless, I love you more than my 'life. Are you satisfied now?'—'Come, 'Sir, let us return to Paris!'—'Yes, 'Madam, with all my heart; but re-'member, that the month of May shall 'find us in the country again.'—'I don't 'believe it.'—'I assure you it will, and 'more fond than ever.'

Belisa, on her return to town, began to give herself up to all the amusements which the winter occasions, with an avidity which she thought insatiable. The count, on his side, abandoned himself to the torrent of the world, but with less eagerness. By degrees Belisa's ardour abated. The suppers appeared long to her: she grew tired at the play. The count took care to see her seldom; his visits were short, and he chose those hours when she was surrounded by a multitude of adorers: she asked him one day, in a very low voice, 'What 'do you think of Paris?'—'Every 'thing amuses, nothing attaches me.' —'Why do not you come and sup with 'me?'—'You have seen me so often, 'Madam! I am discreet; the world 'has it's turn, and I shall have mine.' —'You are still persuaded, then, that 'I love you?'—'I never talk of love 'in town. What think you, Madam, 'of the new opera?' pursued he aloud, and the conversation became general.

Belisa was always comparing the count with every thing that appeared best, and the comparison always turned out in his favour. 'Nobody,' said she, 'has that candour, that simplicity, that 'evenness of character; nobody has that 'goodness of soul and elevation of sen-'timent. When I recollect our con-'versation, all our young people seem 'nothing more than well-taught par-'rots. He may well doubt that one 'can cease to love him after having 'known him: but, no; it is not the 'good opinion he has of himself, it is 'the good opinion he has of me, that 'gives him this confidence. How hap-'py should I be were it well founded!'

Such were Belisa's reflections; and the more she perceived her inclination for him revive, the more she was at ease with herself. In short, the desire of seeing him again became so strong, that she could not resist writing to him. He repaired to her; and accosting her with a smile, 'What, Madam,' said he, 'a *tête-'à-tête!* I shall create a thousand jea-'lousies.'—'Nobody, Sir,' said Belisa, 'has a right to be so; and you know 'that I have only friends: but you, 'are not you afraid of disturbing some 'new conquest?'—'I never made but 'one in my life,' replied the count; 'she 'expects me in the country, and I shall

'go.

'go this spring to see her.'—'She would 'be to be pitied if she were in town: 'you are so taken up here, that she 'would run the hazard of being neg-'lected.'—'She would amuse herself, 'Madam, and think nothing of me.'—'No more of this beating about the 'bush,' resumed she; 'why do I see 'you so seldom, and for so short a time?'

'To let you enjoy at full liberty all 'the pleasures of your youth.'—'You 'can never give me too much of your 'company, Sir; my house is your's; 'look upon it as such, it will flatter 'me: I request it, and I have acquired 'a right to exact it.'—'No, Madam, 'exact nothing; I should despair if I 'displeased you: but permit me not to 'see you again till the summer.' This obstinacy piqued her. 'Go, Sir,' said she to him, with anger, 'go seek pleasures 'in which I have no part. I have me-'rited your inconstancy.' From that day she had not a moment's ease: she informed herself of all his proceedings; she sought and followed him with her eyes in the publick walks and at the theatres; the women whom he saw became odious to her; she never ceased questioning his friends. The winter appeared intolerably long. Though it was but the beginning of March, some fine days happening, 'I must,' said she, 'con-'found him, and justify myself. I have 'been wrong hitherto, he has that ad-'vantage over me; but to-morrow he 'shall have it no longer.' She sent to request him to come to her; every thing was ready for their departure. The count arrives. 'Your hand,' said Belisa, 'to 'help me into my coach. 'Where 'are we going, then?' said he. 'To 'grow tired of ourselves in the coun-'try.' The count was transported with joy at these words. Belisa, at the move-ment of the hand that supported her, perceived the extasy and emotion herself had given birth to. 'O, my dear count!' said she to him, pressing that hand which trembled beneath her's, 'what do I not 'owe you? You have taught me to 'love; you have convinced me that I 'was capable of it; and in clearing up 'my doubts, with respect to my own 'sentiments, you have done me the most 'pleasing violence: you have forced 'me to think well of myself, and to 'believe myself worthy of you. My 'love is satisfied. I have no longer 'any SCRUPLE, and I am happy.'

THE FOUR PHIALS;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES OF ALCIDONIS OF MEGARA.

I Regret the loss of fairyism. It was to lively imaginations a source of in-nocent pleasures, and the handsomest way in the world of forming agreeable dreams. The climates of the East were formerly peopled with genii and fairies. The Greeks considered them as medi-ating beings between men and gods: witness the familiar demon of Socrates; witness the fairy which protected Alci-donis, as I am going to relate.

The fairy Galante had taken Alci-donis under her protection, even before his coming into the world. She presided at his birth, and endowed him with the gift of pleasing, without any determined inclination to love. His youth was but the unfolding of those talents and graces which he had received as his lot.

He had passed his fifteenth year, when his father, one of the richest and most honourable citizens of Megara, on his sending him to Athens to perform his exercises, embraced him, and said thus: 'My dear son, you are going to mix 'in the world among a number of giddy 'young fellows, who launch out into 'the most outrageous abuse of women. 'Never believe them. Those fellows 'affect to despise them, only because 'they have not been able to render them 'despicable. For my own part, to be-'gin with your mother, my virtuous 'wife, I have found in the fair-sex

'that

'that delicacy of sentiment, candour, 'and truth, of which few men are ca- 'pable. Do as I have done; chuse an 'honest wife, of an even temper, solid 'character, and a sociable, and not au- 'stere, virtue. There are women of this 'stamp every where. My consent shall 'follow your choice: I am a tender 'father, and desire nothing but your 'happiness.' Alcidonis, full of these lessons, arrives at Athens. His first visit was to Seliana, to whom he had recommendations. Seliana in her youth had been handsome and agreeable: she was still agreeable, but began to be no longer handsome. After the first compliments, 'What is your business here?' said an old captain to him, who was husband to Seliana, and an old friend of his father. 'A fine thing indeed, at your 'age, to bury one's self among the wo- 'men! The Circus, the Piræus, these 'are the schools for you, and not that 'trifling circle which they call the *beau* '*monde*. I am mad when I see a young 'fellow come to Athens! they ought 'to go to Sparta.'

Alcidonis was disconcerted by so warm an apostrophe; but Seliana took his part warmly. 'That is so like you,' said she to her husband; 'Sparta, the Cir- 'cus, the Piræus! well, and pr'ythee, 'now, what do they learn in these fa- 'mous schools?'—'To get money and 'fight,' replied the husband, roughly. 'To get money! very noble indeed! 'To fight! very agreeable! The first 'is unworthy the ambition of a gallant 'man, and the second is learned but too 'soon.'—'Not so soon, Madam, not so 'very soon as you imagine. I am afraid 'that after passing his youth at the toi- 'lette, a man would make neither a 'good officer, nor a good soldier.'— 'Well! for my part, there is nothing 'more hideous and disagreeable in my 'eyes, than a man who has never learn- 'ed any thing but to fight. One would 'imagine, that you came into the world 'only to cut one another's throats. 'Peace has it's talents and virtues, as 'well as war. Men are not always at 'the head of a troop.'—'So much the 'worse! by all the gods, so much the 'worse! I wish it were forbid, even 'in time of peace, to quit the co- 'lours on pain of death.'—'How, Sir! 'would you not allow us so much as 'one man!'—'You should have men 'enough, Madam: you should have all 'the refuse. There are numbers quite 'useless to the state!'—'Very fine, in- 'deed! you would reduce us then to 'the refuse of the commonwealth. The 'ladies are infinitely obliged to you!' —'I acquit them of all obligations.'— 'No, Sir, we are citizens, and we ge- 'nerously give up to the state all those 'figures that displease us, all faces that 'fright one, all those fierce characters 'that delight in nothing but murder, 'and are good for nothing else.'—— 'And you reserve to yourselves the 'handsome men who love to live; is 'it not so?'—'Certainly.'—'That 'is right; and the Areopagus, to be 'sure, will take care to pass it into a 'decree, to please you.—Pardon me, 'Sir, my wife is a fool.—I leave you; 'for I can stand it no longer.—Oh, 'Hercules! Madam, must I be your 'husband! These things happen to no- 'body but myself.' At these words he went out stamping with his feet, and clapped the door roughly after him.

'Here is a strange family!' said Alcidonis; 'Pray, Madam, have you 'often scenes of this kind?'—'Why, 'yes,' replied she coldly, 'always when 'I have company.'—'And, when you 'are alone?'—'He grumbles still, but 'not quite so loud.'—'And how came 'you to marry him?'—'As all the 'world marry, for convenience and in- 'terest. As to any thing else, he is 'the best man in the world. When I 'am weary of him, I contradict him; 'he grows impatient, and walks off: 'then I do what I please. I advise you 'to shew him respect. His friendship 'is not to be neglected, and may be of 'use to you. Do you bring recom- 'mendations to many people here?'— 'To my father's particular friends; 'but the number of them is not great.' —'So much the better, we shall see 'each other the oftener. I wish it for 'your own sake; for, on entering into a 'new world, the wisest have need of a 'guide.'—'Will you, Madam, con- 'descend to be mine?'—'Either I or 'my husband; you shall take your 'choice.'—'My choice is made, Ma- 'dam.' Thus passed their first inter- view.

When the husband returned, 'You 'are a strange man,' said Seliana to him; 'your behaviour has frighted 'away this young man.'—'Whom 'you wanted to render familiar?'— 'I under-

'I understand you, Sir; henceforth I 'shall order my door to be shut against 'him.'—'How! no Madam! I am 'not jealous. It would be beginning 'a little too late. I was not jealous in 'the bloom of your youth, and I shall 'hardly be so now you are grown old-'er.'—'How extremely gallant! but 'I am used to it. Remember, how-'ever, that you owe a visit to this son 'of your old friend.'—'I shall see 'him, Madam: I know life, and you 'may trust to my behaviour.'

The day after, at his entrance into Alcidonis's lodging, he resumed the conversation of the night before. 'Well,' said he to him, 'are you going to give 'into the effeminate manners of the 'Athenian youth? My wife has dis-'posed you for it, no doubt. Take 'care; not of her, for her time is past, 'thank Heaven; but take care of the 'rest of her sex. They are most dan-'gerous syrens. No safety in any deal-'ings with them. They take you, de-'ceive you, and quit you, without shame. 'One would think, on seeing them a-'musing themselves with the men, that 'we were made only for their play-'things.'—'If so,' said Alcidonis, 'the 'women of Athens are not like those 'of Megara!'—'At Megara it is the 'very same as here. You are like your 'old father. The good man would 'swear only by his chaste better half. 'It was out of complaisance to him, 'that she dressed and saw company; 'out of piety, that she shut herself up 'with a young priest of Minerva; by 'way of retirement, that she went to 'pass the evenings at a little house 'which he had fitted up for himself: 'he relied upon her virtue with the most 'absolute confidence in the world.'—'He had reason, no doubt; and I beg 'you, Sir, to respect my mother's me-'mory.'—'Your mother! your mother 'was a woman. Would you have had 'some being made on purpose? I have 'seen enough of them; but I know 'none but my termagant that is truly 'faithful; and what is still more, it is 'I that made her so. I rendered her 'virtuous in spite of her teeth; but I 'have not been able to root out those 'seeds of coquetry which nature or 'example plants in them almost at their 'birth. I would lay a wager that she 'is even capable of attempting to se-'duce you, for the sake of the plea-'sure of laughing at you. You would 'not be the first whom she has reduced 'to despair. She used to amuse her-'self formerly at this pretty little diver-'sion, and then she has given me ac-'counts of it, at which she laughed 'as if she had been mad. By good 'luck she grows older, and the danger 'is no longer so great.'

Alcidonis's thoughts were taken up a considerable part of the night with what he had heard. 'The women here,' said he, 'are very terrible then!' And he went to sleep with a resolution of avoiding them.

The fairy Galante appeared to him in a dream, and said, 'Nothing is so 'much like man as woman. All the 'good, all the evil, that is said of them, 'is true in particular, but false in ge-'ral. One should neither trust in every 'one, nor distrust every one. Live with 'the women, but resign yourself to 'them only at times. I have not given 'you a determined character, that you 'may be more flexible to their's. A 'precise man is an unsociable man. 'You will be charming, if they cry, '*We do whatever we please with him.* 'But it is not enough to please; one 'must know likewise how to love; and 'to love neither too much nor too little. 'There are three sorts of love; passion, 'liking, and fancy. All the art of be-'ing happy consists in the proper dispo-'sition of these three shades. For this 'purpose, here are four phials, which 'you alone shall use. They are as 'different in their virtues as colours. 'You are to drink out of the purple 'phial, in order to be in love to distrac-'tion; out of the rose-coloured one, 'to skim the surface of sentiment and 'pleasure; out of the blue one, to taste 'of it without uneasiness and intoxica-'tion; and out of the white one, to 'come to yourself again.' At these words the fairy vanished like a vapour.

Alcidonis awakes quite ravished with so charming a dream. But what was his surprize, at finding in reality the four phials at his elbow! 'As for the 'trial,' said he, 'I shall make it at my 'leisure.' He gets up full of gratitude to the fairy, and the same day revisits Seliana. She was alone. 'You have 'seen my husband?' says she. 'Has 'not he been declaiming against gal-'lantry?'—'Violently.'—'He has 'told you a thousand frightful stories

'of women?'—'He has.'—'I hope 'he excepted me.'—'Only in the 'article of fidelity.'—'Poor man!'—'He is perſuaded that you are faithful 'to him; but he ſays that you are only 'the more dangerous on that account, 'and that you divert yourſelf moſt cru-'elly with thoſe who have the mis-'fortune to fall in love with you.'—'Ah! how he abuſes me! He would 'richly deſerve .... But hold, I muſt 'have ſome reſpect to myſelf.'—'Your 'virtue, he ſays, is of his own form-'ing; and it is he that has made you 'honeſt.'—'He!'—'Yes, he; and 'in ſpite of your teeth.'—'In ſpite 'of my teeth! Upon my word! See 'whether he can make me virtuous in 'ſpite of my teeth!'—'I muſt own, 'that in your place ..... And I 'ſhould be glad, too, to revenge his in-'ſult to my mother.'—'Your mo-'ther!'—'Yes; he dared to tell me 'that my father was a fool, and that 'there is no man in the world but him-'ſelf who is not ſo.'—'Poor man! 'he has great reaſon to brag, truly! 'But, once more, I muſt reſpect my-'ſelf. No, Sir, I am no coquette; 'and ſince he obliges me to juſtify my-'ſelf, I have a heart as tender, and 'more tender, than another.'—'And 'what uſe do you make of that heart?—' 'Alas! no uſe at all; but you may 'eaſily believe that it is not for his 'ſweet looks that I keep it. I am pru-'dent for my own ſake, that I may not 'expoſe myſelf to the caprice, incon-'ſtancy, and ingratitude of men. I 'feel that if I loved, I ſhould love paſ-'ſionately, and I ſhould wiſh to be paſ-'ſionately beloved.'—'Ah! and ſo 'you ſhall.'—'I dare not flatter my-'ſelf with that: nothing is weaker, 'vainer, and more inconſtant, than the 'love of your ſex. They have their 'likings, their fancies; but the paſſion 'of love, that intoxication which is the 'greateſt charm, and it's only excuſe, 'they are quite unacquainted with.'—'For my part, Madam, I know very 'well how to acquire that love which 'you deſerve; and were I ſure of a 'return, I ſhould take a good doſe of 'it!' Seliana ſmiled at Alcidonis's ſim-plicity, (for the fairy had given him that unaffected air, that ingenuous manner, which coquettes are ſo fond of.) 'No,' ſaid ſhe, 'people are not inflamed all 'at once; and how can we poſſibly be 'in love? We do not know each other 'yet.'—'At your own time, Madam; 'I am in no hurry. To-morrow we ſhall 'know each other better.'—'I ſhall 'ſee you to-morrow, then!'—'Yes, 'Madam.'—'After dinner; do you 'hear? For I would ſpare you the 'diſagreeable circumſtance of finding 'my huſband at home. We ſhall be 'alone, and at liberty, and I ſhall talk 'reaſon to you.'

Alcidonis repaired to the appoint-ment, with his phials in his pocket. Seliana received him in the moſt tempt-ing diſhabille. 'See there,' ſaid Alci-donis, on ſeeing her, 'the privilege of 'beauty: the leſs ornament, the more 'charms.' Seliana affected to bluſh. 'Do you know,' ſaid ſhe, 'that this 'pretended ſimplicity of yours makes 'you dangerous? One might be taken 'by it, and be deceived.'—'I deceive 'you, Madam! I never deceived any 'body.'—'And you would begin with 'me?'—'No, I ſwear—' 'Why then 'this flattering diſcourſe, thoſe tender 'looks?'—'You are handſome; I have 'eyes; I ſpeak what I ſee; there is no 'flattery in that.'—'Why, indeed, your 'tranquillity makes it evident that you 'have no deſign to ſeduce me.'—'Nay, 'nay, if you would but have it ſo, 'that tranquillity ſhould ſoon vaniſh.' —'Oh, to be ſure! and to be all on 'fire, you only wait for my conſent; 'is it not ſo?'—'Nothing elſe; you 'need only ſay the word.'—'Indeed 'you are very fine, with that air of 'yours, ſo cold and ſo determined.'—'It is becauſe I am certain of what I 'do.'—'What if I ſhould oblige you 'to ſhew ſome deſire of being loved?' —'You may do it to any degree you 'pleaſe, I aſſure you.'—'I ſee, Alci-'donis, that you don't know what you 'promiſe, and what I might demand.' —'Demand, Madam! demand! my 'heart defies you. I will love you as 'much as you pleaſe.'—'You will 'love me then, if I pleaſe, to diſtrac-'tion!'—'To diſtraction? It is all the 'ſame to me.'—'His ſimplicity charms 'me.—Very well, then, I would have 'you vaſtly in love with me.'—'Paſ-'ſionately?'—'Paſſionately.'—And 'you will love me in like manner?'—'I believe ſo.'—'That is not enough.' —'Well, I am ſure of it.'—'That is 'ſufficient;

'sufficient; now you shall see fine 'sport.'—'Where are you going?'—'Yours; allow me but one minute.'

The credulous Alcidonis, having retired into a corner, drank up the elixir in the purple phial, to the very last drop. He appears again, his eyes enflamed, his heart beating, and his voice almost extinct. The more foolery, the more gallantry: his language was rapid, broken, full of matter and warmth. Words were not sufficient to declare his sentiments. Inarticulate accents supplied the place of speech; a vehement gesture, an impetuous action, redoubled their energy. This pathetick eloquence put Seliana quite beside herself. She is moved, agitated, lost: she hardly knows him again, and can scarce conceive so wonderful a change. She would seem to doubt, to fear, to hesitate still: vain efforts! Her heart relents, her eyes brighten, her reason fails; and one would have thought, the very moment after, that she had also drank of the same phial.

Two months passed away in transports which they found it difficult to confine within any bounds. The husband was perpetually rallying Alcidonis on his assiduities to his wife. 'Poor 'dupe,' said he to him, 'you would 'not believe me. You are caught; I 'am glad of it. Throw yourself away 'in dangling after her: you have a 'fine time of it!' Alcidonis took the best revenge he could for this insulting irony. But his passion was no longer seconded: Seliana's grew every day weaker and weaker. Seliana sufficed him; but he was no longer able to suffice Seliana. She wanted dissipation, diversion, and to return to the world, which she had forgot. Alcidonis was hurt, and saw with concern that she amused herself with every thing, while he was taken up with nothing but her. He became pensive, uneasy, and jealous; and went so far, that she was offended, and resolved to dismiss him.

'It is true,' said she to him, 'I have 'loved you; I was mad. I am now 'come to my senses again; do you do 'so too. We are no where enjoined 'to carry on love, even to decay. E-'very thing has an end, even love it-'self. Mine is enfeebled; you have 'chid me for it. It is become extinct; 'you distract yourself about it. So 'much the worse for you; but I can-'not help it.'—'How! perfidious! un-'grateful! perjured woman!'—'Go 'on; vent your reproaches, if that will 'comfort you.'—'Ah, just Heaven, 'how am I treated!'—'Like a child, 'in whom we pardon every thing.'—'Are these, perfidious woman! the oaths 'that you have sworn a hundred times, 'to love me to the last gasp?'—'Rash 'oaths, which bind us to nothing; mad, 'whoever makes them; mad, whoever 'trusts them. Would you believe any 'one who, on sitting down to table, 'should swear by all the gods that he 'would always have the same stomach?' —'The same stomach! What an image! 'Is this your boasted delicacy?'—'An-'other piece of folly. We disavow the 'empire of the senses, at the very in-'stant we are their slaves. I am a wo-'man, I love like a woman, and you 'ought not to have expected that Na-'ture should work a miracle in your 'favour.' Alcidonis, at these words, tore his hair with despair. 'Very fine,' pursued she, 'what is that for? Will 'you be more amiable, or better be-'loved, when you are bald? Hark ye, 'Alcidonis! I have still a compassionate 'friendship for you?'—'Ah, cruel wo-'man! is it friendship or compassion 'that I require of you?'—'You must 'really bring yourself to that; I feel 'nothing more for you. Which of the 'two is to blame, the party who ceases 'to love, or that which ceases to be 'agreeable? The question is not yet, 'nor will soon be determined. In the 'mean time, be advised, and take your 'resolution with courage.'—'It is taken, 'ungrateful woman; it is taken!' said he, withdrawing to drink; and I need not say, that he had recourse to the white phial.

On a sudden his senses were all calm, and his reason returned. 'Indeed,' said he, returning to Seliana with an easy and sedate air, 'I was a fool to make 'myself uneasy. We have been lovers; 'now we are friends. All this must 'happen in life. Passion is a fever: 'when it is over, there is an end of the 'matter. We are not obliged to see 'one another any longer than is agree-'able, and nothing is more natural than 'to change when we are tired. You 'loved me as long as you were able. It 'would have been ridiculous to pique 'yourself on a constancy that was pain-'ful! Enjoy, Madam, the right your

'beauty gives you of multiplying your 'conquests. I am too happy in having 'been of the number. Every man in 'his turn, and I wish you much enter-'tainment.'

Seliana was as much surprized as piqued at this coldness. She wished, indeed, that he should console himself, but neither so soon, nor so easily. So sudden a change was inconceivable. On reflection she was persuaded, that this apparent tranquillity was only a pretended disgust; and she failed not to tell some of her she-friends, that the poor boy was mad with despair, that he had put her into a terrible fright, and that she had all the difficulty in the world to prevent him from committing violence on himself. The day following Alcidonis went to sup at the voluptuous Alcipe's, with some of the youngest and handsomest women in Athens. 'All one to me,' said he to himself, 'the purple phial is dry; and it would 'be to no purpose for the fairy to re-'plenish it, for may I die if I would 'taste a single drop of it.' As soon as he saw all those beauties, 'Ah! now 'let us trifle for once: this is the mo-'ment for whim and frolick.' He drinks of the rose-coloured phial, and immediately his eyes and desires wander without fixing.

Chance seated him at a table next to a fair beauty, with languishing looks, and an extreme modesty and timidity, with which he was sensibly touched; but he had on the other side of him a *brunette*, dazzling the beholders with her freshness and vivacity. He had a great mind to the latter, yet was deeply smitten with the former; and on farther consideration would have preferred the fair beauty, had it not been for a certain *je-ne-scai-quoi* which inclined him to the brown. This *je-ne-scai-quoi* determined his choice. He shewed her all the assiduities of a warm gallantry; which she received with an air of inattention, as an homage that was due to her. Alcidonis was piqued at it. Whim, as well as passion, is irritated by obstacles. Excited by the desire of pleasing, he formed all the delight of the entertainment. Corinna, his charming brunette, saw that the ladies envied her her conquest. She at length perceived the value of it, and some looks of complacency infused hope into the heart of her new lover.

The hour of parting now arrived. Corinna rises, he follows. 'You will 'attend me then?' said she to him, receiving the offer of his hand; 'I am 'sensible of all the sacrifices you make 'me.' He swore that he made her none. 'Pardon me: I carry you away from 'the handsomest women in Athens; 'and that is no mean triumph.'—'I 'did but just look at them: but they 'appeared to me pretty well.'—'Pret-'ty well! Your commendations are 'very sparing, indeed! Will you only 'call Cleonida *pretty well?* Those 'large eyes, and regular features, that 'majestick figure .... one would take 'her for a goddess.'—'True, the state-'ly Juno.'—'You wicked devil! and 'Amate, what do you think of her? 'That air of voluptuousness, that at-'tracting negligence, which seems to 'invite pleasure?'—'Right; the pic-'ture of opportunity neglected.'—'Neglected! a cruel phrase, I will not 'repeat it; it would pass into a proverb. 'I hope, at least, that you will shew 'some favour to the ingenuous and ti-'mid air of Cephisa: that lively com-'plexion, that tender look, that mouth 'which is afraid to smile, and yet when 'it smiles is so beautiful: what say you 'to her?'—'That she wants nothing 'but a soul.'—'And you would be 'glad to give her yours?'—'I con-'fess, that if it had not been for your-'self she should have had the apple.'—'Alas! and what would she have done 'with it? Nothing is more cold, more 'indolent, more insensible, than Ce-'phisa.'—'And therefore she had only 'my first glance.'—'Yet I caught you, 'when supper was almost over, with 'your eyes fixed upon her.'—'True, 'I admired her as I would a fine model 'in wax.'—'Right, a fine model if 'you please: but the general opinion 'is, that this model stands in great need 'of drapery.'

While they thus run over the objects of Corinna's jealousy, they arrived at her house. 'Will you walk up for a mo-'ment?' said she to Alcidonis; 'it is ear-'ly; we will have a little chat.' Alcidonis was transported. The fairy, who had made him so censorious with Corinna, knew what she was doing. The most flattering compliment to a handsome woman, is the abuse of her rivals; and this she had taken well at his hands.

'I long,' pursued Corinna, 'to know, 'in my turn, the good and ill you think

'of

'of me.'—'The ill! alas, if you have 'any, have you given me time, or oc-'casion to find it out? You are sur-'rounded with illusion. That lustre, 'that sparkling vivacity, would conceal 'deformity itself: I should have taken 'it for beauty. I see you, I am daz-'zled, intoxicated, transported! this is 'my case. It is an infatuation, a mad-'ness, whatever you please; but no-'thing in the world is truer; and you 'can make me, by a single word, the 'happiest or most miserable of men.'—'Madness, indeed,' cried she, seeing him at her knees; 'you see me by 'chance; you love me, if one may be-'lieve it, and dare confess it to me! Do 'you know whether I merit this? Do 'you know whether I can make any 'return to it?'—'No, Madam, I know 'nothing. You are, perhaps, the most 'cruel of women, the most inconstant, 'the most perfidious. That fine per-'son, those charming features, may 'conceal an insensible soul. I fear it, 'yet I will run the hazard of it; and 'though the danger were as great again, 'it is not in my power to avoid it.'—'Ah! I perceive plainly by these strokes 'the truth of your general character. 'You, Alcidonis, who are the most 'dangerous of men, and the person 'whom of all mankind I should most 'dread to love—' 'Why so? what 'have you heard of me?'—'That you 'are one who love passionately; and a 'man who loves passionately is insup-'portable; that you abandon yourself 'distractedly; that you love like a 'madman, and want to be loved in the 'same manner. If we do not love as 'passionately as yourself, then come no-'thing but complaints and reproaches. 'You become sulky, uneasy, and jea-'lous. There is no knowing how to 'quit you, and no possibility of keep-'ing you.'—'It is true, Madam, that 'I have given into these absurdities; 'but I am now thoroughly cured. You 'may take me with safety; and I 'will sign my discharge beforehand.'—'Do not imagine, Sir, that I am 'jesting with you: what but liberty 'forms the charms of love! Without 'these a lover becomes a husband, and 'indeed it would be no misfortune to 'become a widow.'—'I understand 'reason, my beautiful Corinna, and you 'may depend upon me.'—'You would 'give your word of honour, then, to a 'woman who should entertain a weak-'ness for you, to retire without making 'a bustle, as soon as she should have told 'you as a friend, I have loved you, 'but now I love you no longer?'—'To be sure: I have learned to live, 'and you need only try me.'—'Well, 'I will then; but remember, that I 'engage myself to love you no longer 'than you shall be agreeable.'

'I see plainly,' said Alcidonis with-in himself, 'that here the white phial 'will be of great service to me.' He was mistaken; he had no occasion for it: the impression of the rose-coloured one very soon vanished of itself. He was yet at Corinna's, and yet the idea of the other beauties he had seen at Alcipe's presented itself to his imagination. 'Such 'a one is lively,' says he, 'but that is 'all; no sentiment, no delicacy. That 'other changes her lovers as she does her 'cloaths. To-morrow I should be dis-'missed, if to-morrow any other amuses 'her. I should have a fine time of it, 'to throw away my sighs on her! I 'should have done much better to have 'bestowed them on that languishing *fair* 'beauty, whose eyes were raised towards 'me in so tender, so affecting a manner. 'Corinna speaks ill of Cephisa, and 'therefore Cephisa must have merit. 'She is not very animated; but what a 'pleasure it would be to animate her! 'A woman naturally lively is so to all 'the world; but such a one would be 'so to me alone. Come, let me go 'and see her: besides, I should not care 'to be dismissed. Corinna shall find 'that I am not one of those who are to 'be dropped as she pleases, and that I 'know how to give a dismission full as 'well as herself.

He repeats to Cephisa the same things that he said to Corinna, but with more dis-cretion. 'Is it possible?' cried she, with-out any emotion. 'What! you would 'be unhappy if I were not to love you?'—'More unhappy than I can express.'—'I am sorry for it, for I do not know 'how to love.'—'Oh! my beautiful 'Cephisa, with that enchanting smile, 'that tender look, that voice which 'goes to the very soul, you do not know 'how to love!'—'No, indeed!'—'But 'if I should teach you how?'—'You 'would do me great pleasure, for I 'am very curious. But so many have 'attempted it, and not one has succeed-'ed. My husband himself would lose

'all

'all his labour.'—'Your husband; I 'believe it; but have you had lovers?'—'Many, and those some of the hand-'someſt and moſt tender.'—'And did 'you make them happy?'—'No; for 'they all complained that I did not love 'them. It was not my fault; I did 'all in my power. Only think! I uſed 'now and then to take four at a time, 'in order to endeavour, among the 'number, to love at leaſt one or two: 'yet all to no purpoſe.'

'This,' ſaid Alcidonis, 'is a very 'rare inſtance of ingenuity; but let us 'not be diſcouraged, my dear; you 'will love me.'—'Do you think ſo?'—'I do think ſo: you have ſenſibility?'—'Yes, at times, here and there; but 'it paſſes away in a moment.'—'This 'is certainly a diſeaſe. Have you, in 'order for your cure, offered up any ſa-'crifices to Venus?'—'My huſband 'has offered up a great many; but he 'always found me the ſame at his re-'turn from the temple.'—'And why 'did he not carry you there?'—'He 'took care not to do that: the prieſt 'was young, and wanted to initiate me.'—'Initiate you! And do you know 'what that means?'—'Alas! not I; 'I know nothing of it.'—'Shall I 'ſhew you?' reſumed Alcidonis, tak-ing ſome liberties with her. 'Softly, 'Sir,' cried ſhe; 'you act as if I loved 'you; I am not in love with you yet.'—'How ſhould you know that, unleſs 'we make ſome experiments?'—'I 'have made a thouſand; but all that 'proves nothing. At firſt I think I 'love, and then I think I do not. It 'is better to wait till it comes; and if 'it comes, I will tell you.'

Alcidonis, from day to day, made ſome new progreſs on the indolent ſen-ſibility of Cephiſa; but ſhe was not yet come to the pitch that he wanted to bring her to. In order to heat her imagina-tion, he propoſed to meet her at a feaſt which was to be celebrated in honour of Venus. She conſented, on condition that ſhe ſhould not be initiated. The day after, each of them, out of decency, repaired ſeparately to their quarter. The girls and the boys, arrayed like the Graces and the Loves, ſung hymns in honour of the goddeſs, and danced to the ſound of the lyre, beneath the ſhade of a ſacred grove which ſurrounded the temple.

Cephiſa got there firſt. 'Ah!' ſaid ſhe to Alcidonis, 'I was looking for 'you; I have good news to tell you. 'The goddeſs has anticipated our vows: 'I think I now begin to love you in 'good earneſt. This very night I have 'ſeen you in my ſleep. You was preſ-'ſing; I was animated.'—'Well!'—'Well! I will tell you the reſt at ſup-'per.'—'At ſupper!' replied Alcidonis, with an indifferent air, and his eyes fixed on the feaſt. 'At ſupper let it be, with 'all my heart. What a beautiful danc-'ing-girl is there? how charmingly that 'woman ſings!'—'We ſhall be alone, 'do you hear?'—'Alone! very well. 'I ſhould be glad to know who that 'handſome dancer is?'—'Alcidonis, 'you do not hear me!'—'Pardon me, I 'do hear you; but I am looking out for 'ſomebody who may tell me——Oh, 'Pamphilus! one word. Tell me who 'is that beautiful dancer?'—'It is 'Chloe,' ſays Pamphilus. 'I am to 'ſup with her.'—'This evening?'—'This very evening.'—'I ſhould be 'glad to make one.'—'That cannot 'be.'—'I beſeech you, my dear Pam-'philus, by our friendſhip.'—'You do 'not conſider, Alcidonis,' whiſpered the diſordered Cephiſa, 'you are to ſup 'with me; I told you ſo.'—'True, I 'intended it; but I have promiſed my 'friend Pamphilus. My word is ſacred, 'and I cannot break it.'

He ſaw Chloe, found her adorable, as it is called, for a quarter of an hour, and inſipid the moment after. He ſaw Phillina, the ſinger; he was ſmitten with her for an evening, and the next day tired of her. 'Alas, how fatiguing 'are whimſies!' ſays he; 'every inſtant 'new deſires, without ſatisfaction. It 'is the torment of the Danaides. A-'way with theſe tranſitory beams of 'ſentiment which revive ſo faſt, and 'leave me no repoſe: let me drink obli-'vion to my follies!' He ſaid, and emptied the white phial. He had now none left but the blue; and his happi-neſs depended on the uſe he ſhould make of it.

Alcidonis ſtudied philoſophy under Ariſtus the academician. Ariſtus dying, left behind him a young widow, one of the moſt virtuous and beautiful women in the world. The diſciple of Ariſtus thought it his duty to give the widow all the conſolation and aſſiſtance of friendſhip. Glycerium refuſed his offers with a mo-deſty mingled with ſweetneſs and pride.

'I have

'I have little wealth,' said she, 'and 'less desires. My husband has left me 'a most valuable inheritance, a relish 'for the golden mean, and the habit of 'living upon little.' So much prudence united to so much beauty deserved a delicate and lasting attachment. 'It is 'time,' says Alcidonis, 'that I should 'drink out of the blue phial.'

A soft and lively warmth diffused itself through all his veins; not the restlessness of whim; not the transport of passion; but a delightful emotion, the presage of happiness. He burns to belong to Glycerium; he burns to have henceforth but one fortune with her, one life, and one soul; and giving way to his impatience, he proposes marriage to her. Glycerium was not insensible to this mark of love and esteem. 'You 'are generous enough,' said she, 'to 'offer me your hand. I will deserve it 'by refusing it. I should be unworthy 'of it if I accepted it.' It was in vain that he urged his father's consent, that he made it a crime in her to refuse him, that he menaced her with the reproaches she would throw out against herself for having made him unhappy; she appeared immoveable.

Glycerium, however, in her retirement, wept without ceasing. The only slave she had left saw the grief that consumed her, but was not able to penetrate the cause. Should he attribute it to the death of her husband? What! lament, without ceasing, a philosophical husband! That was not natural. His mistress often writ to a citizen of Argos; and the answers he returned her forced deep sighs from her. Curiosity or zeal induced the slave to open one of Glycerium's letters. It was conceived in these terms.

'IF you have not an heart of brass, 'you will be touched, my lord, 'with the despair of an unfortunate 'woman, who would give her life for 'the liberty of her father. Aristus, my 'husband, to whom I was not ashamed 'to confess that I was born of a slave, 'spared no pains to restore my father to 'my wishes. He caused him to be 'sought after in vain. I learn at last 'that he is in your power, and I learn 'it, in indigence. I have made an 'estimate of every thing that I have 'left; but, alas! I am far from being 'able to raise what you demand: so that 'the only resource now left me, is to 'offer myself in exchange for my father. 'It is not just that I should be free 'while my father is a slave. I am 'young; he is borne down by years. 'You may derive more advantage from 'my servitude than from his. My hands 'will inure themselves to labour; my 'heart is prepared for patience. Were 'I inclined to avail myself of the easy 'means which those of my age have in 'their power to seduce and interest the 'men, I should not be reduced to this 'cruel extremity; but slavery is less 'shameful than vice, and I make my 'choice without hesitation.'

The slave, struck with admiration and pity, carried this letter to Alcidonis. 'Ah!' cried he, his heart overcome, and his eyes swimming with tears; 'here, 'then, is the cause of her refusal! She 'was born a slave! What signifies that? 'Virtue is the empress of the whole 'world. Fortune only should be asham-'ed. What piety! what tenderness! 'You, Glycerium! you in slavery! 'Why have I not a throne to offer you! 'I conjure thee by the gods,' said he to the slave, 'keep this a secret! I will 'go. The tears of thy mistress shall 'soon be wiped away, and thy zeal shall 'have it's reward.'

Alcidonis repairs to Argos, and Glycerium's father is set free. The unknown stranger, who procured him his liberty, gives him wherewith to defray his expences to Athens, and says to him at parting, 'You are now going to see 'Glycerium; you owe your liberty to 'her tenderness and virtue. It is in 'her power to be happy, and to render 'you so: and if the service I have just 'now done you be dear to you, promise 'me to engage this virtuous daughter 'of yours to conceal her birth and 'your misfortunes from the eyes of the 'man who demands her in marriage. I 'know his respect for her is so great, 'that it would shock him to see her 'blush. Wherefore, if your benefac-'tor ever appears before you, suppress 'your gratitude; for he would be known 'by you alone.'—'What!' said the old man, melting into tears, 'shall my daugh-'ter never know the hand that has bro-'ken my chains?'—'No,' replied Alcidonis, 'overwhelm not Glycerium with 'this load of humiliation. It is one of 'those duties that debase the soul. Leave 'to her's, I conjure you, it's nobleness 'and

'and freedom.' The old man promised his deliverer to comply.

On his arrival at Athens, his daughter faints away at the sight of him. 'Oh, my father!' said she to him, 'what god grants you to my tears? 'Has then your master's avarice at 'length relented?'—'Yes, my daughter,' replied the old man; 'I know 'that I owe to your tenderness my life, 'and the happiness of coming to die in 'your arms.'

Alcidonis, at his return, came to press Glycerium by all the tenderness of love to consent to their marriage. The old man had not been wanting to exhort his daughter to silence on the humbleness of their former condition. 'No,' replied she to him with spirit, 'it is less humiliating to confess, than to be silent: they 'whom it shall concern to know me, 'shall learn from myself who I am.

'You chuse, then,' said she to Alcidonis, 'that I should open my soul to 'you? While I was unhappy, I concealed my grief; but you deserve to 'partake of my joy. Know, that my 'destiny decreed me to be born in servitude. I was emancipated; but my 'father still groaned under it. Some 'propitious deity restored him to me: 'he is free; he is here; you shall see 'him. However, the blot of our servitude is not to be effaced; and to 'confess to you who we are, is to declare irrevocably, that neither your 'honour, nor my gratitude, will permit 'me to listen to your offers.'

'You do me injustice, Glycerium,' said Alcidonis, with an air of tenderness mingled with reproach. 'Do you 'think me less a philosopher, or less generous, than Aristus? Did you conceal from him the misfortune of your 'birth? No, certainly. Did not he 'despise the injustice of fortune and 'opinion? I am his disciple: his precepts are engraved in my heart. Is it 'reproachful to follow his example? 'Or do you imagine that I have not 'virtue enough to imitate him?'—'It 'is not virtue,' said she to him, smiling, 'but prudence, that you want. Aristus had had time to try himself. You 'are not, like him, of an age at which 'we can answer for ourselves; and I 'would save you the bitterness of repentance.'

Alcidonis, grieved at her invincible constancy, fell at Glycerium's feet, in order to move her by pity. In that moment appears the old man, whom he had delivered from slavery. 'What do 'I see? Ah, daughter!' cried he, 'it 'is he——' and then all of a sudden calling to mind Alcidonis's prohibition, he stopped short, and remained with his eyes fixed on his deliverer, as it were inadvertently letting fall tears. 'What! 'my father,' said Glycerium, astonished, 'you know him then? It is he, you 'say! make an end. What has he 'done? Where have you known him? 'Alcidonis, you look down! you blush! 'My father views you with the most 'melting tenderness! Ah! I understand you both. My father, it is he 'who redeemed you; it is to him that 'I owe my father.'—'Yes, my daughter, there is my benefactor.'—'Is 'this,' said Alcidonis, embracing the old man, who threw himself at his feet; 'is this what you promised me?'—'Pardon me,' said the old man, 'my 'heart was touched; my daughter has 'guessed my secret; it is not my fault. —'Well, then, since she knows all, 'oblige this cruel daughter not to drive 'me to despair. It is her hand, her 'heart, that I ask as the price of the 'happiness I restore to her.' The old man, struck to the heart, warmly reproached his daughter for a piece of ingratitude of which she was not guilty; and taking her trembling hand, put it into that of his deliverer. 'It is to your 'father that I owe it; that I owe this 'hand which you refused me,' said Alcidonis to her, tenderly, and kissing her hands. 'Console yourself,' replied Glycerium, with a smile; 'you owe him 'only my hand; my heart surrendered 'of itself.'

Alcidonis, transported, employed the remainder of the day in preparing to set out on the morrow for Megara. That night, while he enjoyed a gentle slumber, the fairy Galante appeared to him again, and said, 'Be happy, Alcidonis; 'love without uneasiness; possess without disgust; desire in order to enjoy; 'make others jealous, but never be so 'yourself. It is not advice that I now 'give you; it is your destiny that I unfold. You have drank at the spring 'of perfect happiness. I distribute with 'a lavish hand the purple and rose-coloured phials; but the blue bottle is a 'gift which I reserve for my favourites.'

LAUSUS

LAUSUS AND LYDIA.

Lausus Equûm Dormitor, Debellatorque Ferarum. VIRG. Æn. vii.

THE character of Mezentius, king of Tyrrhene, is well known. A bad prince and a good father, cruel and tender by turns. He had nothing of the tyrant, nothing that shewed violence, as long as his desires knew no obstacle; but the calm of this haughty soul was the repose of a lion.

Mezentius had a son named Lausus, whose valour and beauty rendered him famous among the young heroes of Italy. Lausus had attended Mezentius in the war against the King of Prænestе. His father, at the very summit of joy, saw him, covered with blood, fighting and vanquishing by his side. The King of Prænestе, driven out of his territories, and seeking safety in flight, had left in the hands of the conqueror a treasure more precious than his crown, a princess, at that age wherein the heart has only the virtues of nature, and nature has all the charms of innocence and beauty. Every thing that the Graces in tears possess, either noble or affecting, was painted in Lydia's countenance. In her grief, courage, and dignity, one might discover the daughter of kings amidst the crowd of slaves. She received the first compliments of her enemies without haughtiness, without acknowledgment, as an homage due to her rank, the noble sentiments of which were not weakened by ill fortune.

She heard her father named, and at that name lifted up to Heaven her fine eyes filled with tears. All hearts were moved. Mezentius himself, astonished, forgot his pride and age. Prosperity, which hardens weak souls, softens proud hearts, and nothing can be gentler than an hero after a victory.

If the savage heart of old Mezentius was not able to resist the charms of his captive, what was the impression on the virtuous soul of young Lausus! He mourned over his exploits; he reproached himself with his victory: it cost Lydia tears. 'Let her avenge herself,' said he; 'let her hate me as much as I love 'her; I have deserved it but too much!' But an idea still more distressful presents itself to his imagination: he sees Mezentius, astonished, softened, pass on a sudden from rage to clemency. He judged rightly, that humanity alone had not effected this revolution; and the fear of having his father for a rival completed his confusion.

At the age of Mezentius jealousy follows closely upon love. The tyrant observed the eyes of Lausus with an uneasy attention: he saw extinguished in them, all at once, that joy and ardour which had lighted up the face of the young hero on his first victory. He saw him disturbed: he caught some looks which it was but too easy to understand. From that instant he considered himself as betrayed; but nature interposed, and suspended his rage. A tyrant even in his fury constrains himself to think that he is just; and before he condemned his son, Mezentius laboured to convict him.

He began by dissembling his own passion with so much art, that the prince looked on his former fears as vain, and considered the attentions of love as nothing more than the effects of clemency. At first he affected to allow Lydia all the appearances of liberty: but the tyrant's court was full of spies and informers, the usual retinue of men of power; who, not being able to make themselves beloved, place their greatness in being feared.

His son was no longer afraid of paying Lydia a respectful homage. He mingled with his sentiments an interest so delicate and tender, that Lydia very soon began to reproach herself for the hatred which she thought she entertained for the blood of her enemy; while Lausus lamented that he had contributed to Lydia's misfortunes. He called the gods to witness that he would do all in his power to repair them. 'The king my 'father,' says he, 'is as generous after 'victory, as untractable before battle: 'satisfied with victory, he is incapable 'of oppression. It is easier than ever 'for the King of Prænestе to engage 'him to a peace that shall be glorious 'to both. That peace will dry up your 'tears, beautiful Lydia; but will it 'efface the remembrance of their crime

'who cauſed you to ſhed them? Why 'did I not ſee all my blood flow rather 'than thoſe tears?'

Lydia's replies, which were full of modeſty and greatneſs, betrayed to Lauſus no warmer emotion than that of gratitude: though at the bottom of her heart ſhe was but too ſenſible of the care he took to conſole her. She ſometimes bluſhed for having liſtened to him with complaiſance; but her father's intereſts made it a law to her to avail herſelf of ſuch a ſupport.

In the mean time their conferences growing more frequent, became alſo more animated, more intereſting, more intimate; and love made it's way inſenſibly through reſpect and gratitude, as a flower, which, in order to blow, opens the ſlight texture in which it is enfolded.

Deceived more and more by the feigned tranquillity of Mezentius, the credulous Lauſus flattered himſelf, that he ſhould very ſoon ſee his duty accord with his inclination: and nothing in the world, in his opinion, was eaſier than to reconcile them. The treaty of peace which he had meditated, was reduced to two articles; to reſtore to the King of Præneſte his crown and his territories; and to make his marriage with the princeſs the band of union between the two powers. He communicated this project to Lydia. The confidence he placed in it, the advantages he ſaw accruing from it, the tranſports of joy which the idea alone inſpired him with, ſurprized the lovely captive into a ſmile, mingled with tears. 'Gene-'rous prince,' ſays ſhe to him, 'may 'Heaven fulfil the wiſhes you pour out 'for my father! I ſhall not be ſorry 'that I am made the pledge of peace, 'and the token of gratitude.' This touching reply was accompanied with a look ſtill more touching. The tyrant was informed of all. His firſt tranſport would have hurried him to ſacrifice his rival; but this ſon was the only ſupport of his crown, the only barrier between the people and him: the ſame ſtroke would have rendered him compleatly odious to his ſubjects, and have taken from him the only defender, whom he could oppoſe to the publick hatred. Fear is the ruling paſſion of tyrants. Mezentius reſolves to diſſemble. He orders his ſon into his preſence, talks to him with good-humour, and bids him prepare to ſet out the next day for the frontiers of his territories, where he had left his army. The prince endeavoured to conceal the grief which wrung his ſoul, and ſet out without having time to take leave of Lydia.

The very day of Lauſus's departure, Mezentius had cauſed honourable conditions of peace to be propoſed to the King of Præneſte; the firſt article of which was his marriage with the daughter of the vanquiſhed monarch. That unfortunate monarch heſitated not to conſent, and the ſame ambaſſador that offered him peace brought back his agreement for an anſwer.

Lauſus had in the court a friend, who had been attached to him from his infancy. A remarkable reſemblance to the young prince had been the means of making the fortune of this young man, who was called Phanor; but they reſembled each other ſtill more in their diſpoſition than their figure; the ſame inclinations, the ſame virtues. Lauſus and Phanor ſeemed to have but one ſoul. Lauſus, at parting, had confided to Phanor his paſſion and his deſpair. The latter was therefore inconſolable on hearing of the marriage of Lydia with Mezentius: he thought it his duty to acquaint the prince with it. The ſituation of the lover at this news cannot be deſcribed; his heart is troubled, his reaſon forſakes him; and, in the diſtraction of a blind ſorrow, he writes to Lydia the warmeſt and moſt imprudent letter that love ever dictated. Phanor was charged with the delivery of it. He went to her at the hazard of his life, if he ſhould be diſcovered. He was ſo. Mezentius, enraged, orders him to be laden with irons, and dragged to a frightful priſon.

However, every thing was prepared for the celebration of this unhappy marriage. We may juſtly conclude that the feaſt was ſuitable to the character of Mezentius. Wreſtling, the ceſtus, gladiators, combats between men and animals bred up to carnage, every thing that barbarity has invented for it's amuſements, was to have graced the pomp: nothing was wanting to this bloody ſpectacle, but perſons to fight againſt the wild beaſts; for it was cuſtomary to expoſe to theſe fights none but criminals condemned to die; and Mezentius, who on any ſuſpicion was always eager to put the innocent to death,

death, retarded ſtill leſs the puniſhment of the guilty. There remained in the priſons none but the faithful friend of Lauſus. 'Let him be expoſed,' ſaid Mezentius; 'let him fall a prey to 'devouring lions: the traitor deſerves 'a more cruel death; but this beſt ſuits 'his crime and my vengeance, and his 'puniſhment is a feaſt worthy of in-'jured love.'

Lauſus having in vain expected the anſwer of his friend, impatiently gave way to affright. 'Should we be diſ-'covered!' ſays he, 'ſhould I have loſt 'my friend by my fatal imprudence! 'Lydia herſelf—Ah! I tremble. No, 'I cannot live any longer in this dread-'ful uncertainty.' He ſets out; he diſguiſes himſelf carefully; he arrives; he hears the reports ſpread among the people; he learns that his friend is in chains, and that the next day is to unite Lydia with Mezentius. He learns that they are preparing the feaſt which is to precede the marriage-feſtival, and that, by way of ſhew at this feſtival, they are to ſee the unhappy Phanor a prey to wild beaſts. He ſhrinks at this recital; a deadly chillneſs ſpreads through all his veins; he comes again to himſelf; but loſt in diſtraction, he falls on his knees, and cries out, 'Great gods, reſtrain 'my hand, my deſpair terrifies me! let 'me die to ſave my friend; but let me 'die with virtue!' Reſolved to deliver his dear Phanor, though he ſhould periſh in his ſtead, he flies to the gates of the priſon; but how is he to enter there? He addreſſes himſelf to the ſlave whoſe office it was to carry food to the priſoners. 'Open your eyes,' ſaid he, 'and 'know me: I am Lauſus, I am the ſon 'of the king. I expect an important 'ſervice from you. Phanor is confined 'here: I will ſee him; I will. I have 'but one way to come at him: give 'me your cloaths; fly! There are the 'pledges of my acknowledgment: with-'draw yourſelf from the vengeance of 'my father. If you betray me, you 'ruſh on your ruin; if you aſſiſt me in 'my undertaking, my favour ſhall find 'you in the very heart of the deſarts.'

The weak and timorous ſlave yields to his promiſes and threats. He aſſiſts the prince in diſguiſing himſelf, and diſappears, after having told him the hour at which he was to preſent himſelf, and the conduct he was to obſerve in order to deceive the vigilance of the guards. Night approaches, the moment arrives, Lauſus preſents himſelf: he aſſumes the name of the ſlave; the bolts of the dungeon open with a diſmal ſound. By the feeble glimmering of a torch, he penetrates into this manſion of horror; he advances, he liſtens: the accents of a moaning voice ſtrike his ear; he knows it to be the voice of his friend; he ſees him lying down in the corner of a cell, covered with rags, conſumed with weakneſs, the paleneſs of death on his countenance, and the fire of deſpair in his eyes. 'Leave me,' ſaid Phanor to him, taking him for the ſlave; 'away with 'theſe odious nouriſhments; ſuffer me 'to die. Alas!' added he, ſending forth cries interrupted by ſighs; 'alas! my 'dear Lauſus is ſtill more unhappy than 'I. O, ye gods! if he knows the ſtate 'to which he has reduced his friend!' —'Yes,' cried Lauſus, throwing himſelf on his boſom; 'yes, my dear Pha-'nor, he does know it, and he par-'takes of it.'—'What do I ſee?' cried Phanor tranſported: 'Ah, Lauſus! ah, 'my prince!' At theſe words both of them loſe the uſe of their ſenſes; their arms are locked in each other, their hearts meet, their ſighs are intermingled. They remain for a long time mute and immoveable, ſtretched out on the floor of the dungeon; grief ſtifles their voice, and they anſwer each other only by embracing more cloſely, and bathing one another with their tears. Lauſus at laſt coming to himſelf; 'Let us not loſe 'time,' ſaid he to his friend; 'take 'theſe cloaths, get hence, and leave me 'here.'—'What I! great gods! can 'I be ſo vile? Ah, Lauſus, could you 'believe it! Ought you to propoſe it 'to me!'—'I know you well,' ſaid the prince; 'but you ſhould alſo know me. 'The ſentence is pronounced, your pu-'niſhment is prepared, you muſt die or 'fly.'—'Fly!'—'Hear me; my father 'is violent, but he is not without ſen-'ſibility; Nature aſſerts her right over 'his heart: if I deliver you from death, 'I have only to melt him to compaſ-'ſion for myſelf; and his arm, when 'lifted up againſt a ſon, will be eaſily 'diſarmed.'—'He would ſtrike,' ſaid Phanor, 'and your death would be my 'crime; I cannot abandon you.'—'Well then,' ſaid Lauſus, 'remain 'here; but at your death you ſhall ſee 'mine alſo. Depend not on my father's 'clemency; it would be in vain for him

'to pardon me; think not that I would 'pardon myself. This hand, which 'wrote the fatal billet that condemns 'you; this hand, which, even after it's 'crime, is still the hand of your friend, 'shall re-unite us in your own despite.' In vain would Phanor have insisted. 'Let us argue no longer,' interrupted Lausus; 'you can say nothing to me 'that can equal the shame of surviving 'my friend, after I have destroyed him. 'Your pressing earnestness makes me 'blush, and your prayers are an affront. 'I will answer for my own safety, if 'you will fly. I swear to die, if you 'will stay and perish; chuse: the mo-'ments now are precious,'

Phanor knew his friend too well to pretend to shake his resolution. 'I con-'sent,' says he, 'to let you try the 'only means of safety that is left us; 'but live, if you would have me live: 'your scaffold shall be mine.'—'I 'readily believe it,' said Lausus, 'and 'your friend esteems you too much to 'desire you to survive him.' At these words they embraced, and Phanor went out of the dungeon in the habit of the slave, which Lausus had just thrown off.

What a night! what a dreadful night for Lydia! Alas! how shall we paint the emotions that arise in her soul, that divide, that tear it, between love and virtue? She adores Lausus, she detests Mezentius; she sacrifices herself to her father's interests, she delivers herself up to the object of her hatred, she tears herself for ever from the wishes of an adored lover. They lead her to the altar as it were to punishment. Barbarous Mezentius! thou art content to reign over the heart by violence and fear! it suffices thee that thy consort trembles before thee, as a slave before his master. Such is love in the heart of a tyrant.

Yet, alas! it is for him alone that she is hereafter to live: it is to him that she is going to be united. If she resists, she must betray her lover and her father: a refusal will discover the secret of her soul; and if Lausus is suspected to be dear to her, he is undone.

It was in this cruel agitation that Lydia waited the day. The terrible day arrives. Lydia, dismayed and trembling, sees herself decked out, not as a bride to be presented at the altars of Love and Hymen, but as one of those innocent victims which a barbarous piety crowned with flowers before it sacrificed them.

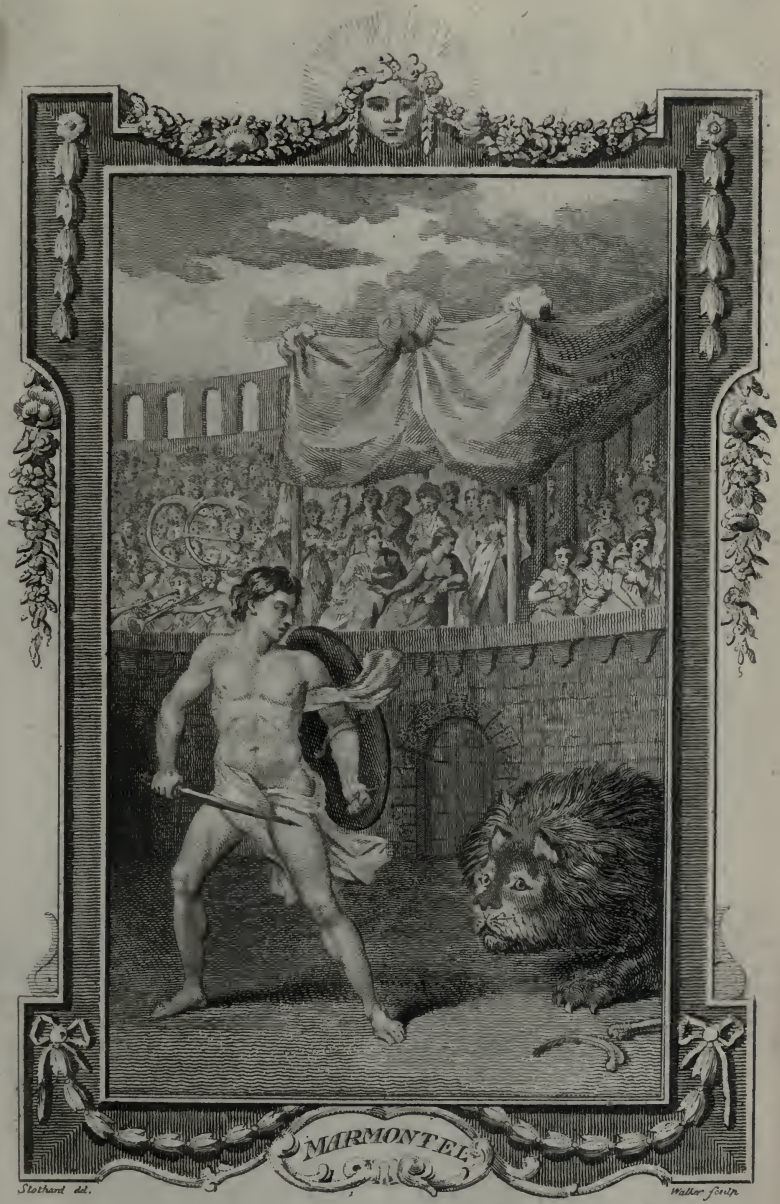
They lead her to the place where the spectacle is to be exhibited; the people assemble there in multitudes; the sports begin. I shall not stop to describe the engagements at the cestus, at wrestling, at the sword; a more dreadful object engages our attention.

An enormous lion advances. At first, with a calm pride, he traverses the arena, throwing his dreadful looks round the amphitheatre that environs him: a confused murmur announces the terror that he inspires. In a short time the sound of the clarions animate him; he replies by his roarings; his shaggy mane is erected around his monstrous head; he lashes his loins with his tail, and the fire begins to issue from his sparkling eyeballs. The affrighted populace wish and dread to see the wretch appear, who is to be delivered up to the rage of this monster. Terror and pity seize on every breast.

The combatant, whom Mezentius's guards themselves had taken for Phanor, presents himself. Lydia could not distinguish him. The horror with which she is seized had obliged her to turn away her eyes from this spectacle, which shocks the sensibility of her tender soul. Alas! what would she feel, if she knew that Phanor, that the dear friend of Lausus, is the criminal whom they have devoted; if she knew that Lausus himself had taken his friend's place, and that it is he who is going to fight!

Half-naked, his hair dishevelled, he walks with an intrepid air; a poniard for the attack, a buckler for defence, are the only arms by which he is protected. Mezentius, prepossessed, sees in him only the guilty Phanor. His own blood is dumb, Nature is blind; it is his own son whom he delivers up to death, and his bowels are not moved; resentment and revenge stifle every other sentiment. He sees with a barbarous joy the fury of the lion rising by degrees. Lausus, impatient, provokes the monster, and urges him to the combat. He advances towards him; the lion springs forward. Lausus avoids him. Thrice the enraged animal makes towards him with his foaming jaws, and thrice Lausus escapes his murderous fangs.

In the mean time Phanor learns what is doing. He runs up, and bears down the multitude before him, while his piercing



Stothard del.

Waller sculp.

Plate II.

Publish'd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co.ª Oct.ʳ 28. 1781.

piercing cries make the amphitheatre resound. 'Stop, Mezentius! save your 'son: it is he; it is Lausus who is engaged.' Mezentius looks and knows Phanor, who hastens towards him: 'O, 'ye gods, what do I see! My people 'assist me; throw yourselves on the 'arena, ravish my son from the jaws of 'death!' At the name of Lausus, Lydia falls down dead on the steps of the amphitheatre; her heart is chilled, her eyes are covered with darkness. Mezentius sees only his son, who is now in inevitable danger: a thousand hands arm in vain for his defence; the monster pursues him, and would have devoured him, before they could have arrived to his assistance. But, O incredible wonder! O unlooked for happiness! Lausus, while he eludes the bounds of the furious animal, strikes him a mortal blow, and the sword, with which he is armed, is drawn reeking from the lion's heart. He falls, and swims in seas of blood, vomited through his foaming jaws. The universal alarm now changes into triumph, and the people reply to Mezentius's doleful cries only by shouts of admiration and joy. These shouts recal Lydia to life; she opens her eyes, and sees Lausus at Mezentius's feet, holding in one hand the bloody dagger, and in the other his dear and faithful Phanor. 'It is I,' said he to his father, 'it is I alone who 'am culpable. Phanor's crime was 'mine: it was my duty to expiate it. 'I forced him to resign his place; and 'was about to kill myself if he refused. 'I live, I owe that life to him; and if 'your son be still dear to you, you owe 'your son to him; but if your vengeance is not appeased, our days are in 'your hands: strike; we will perish 'together; our hearts have sworn it.' Lydia, trembling at this discourse, viewed Mezentius with suppliant eyes, overflowing with tears. The tyrant's cruelty could not withstand this trial. The cries of nature and the voice of remorse put to silence jealousy and revenge. He remains for a long time immoveable, and dumb, rolling by turns, on the subjects that surround him, looks of trouble and confusion, in which love, hatred, indignation, and pity, combat and succeed each other. All tremble around the tyrant. Lausus, Phanor, Lydia, a multitude innumerable, wait with terror the first words that he is to pronounce. He submits at last, in spite of himself, to that virtue whose ascendancy overpowers him; and passing of a sudden, with impetuous violence, from rage to tenderness, he throws himself into his son's arms. 'Yes,' says he, 'I pardon thee, 'and I pardon also thy friend. Live, 'love one another: but there remains 'one sacrifice more for me to make thee, 'and thou hast just now rendered thyself 'worthy of it. Receive it then,' said he with a new effort; 'receive this hand, 'the gift of which is dearer to thee 'than life: it is thy valour which has 'forced it from me; it is that alone 'could have obtained it.'

BY GOOD LUCK.

'NO, Madam,' said the Abbé de Chateauneuf to the old Marchioness of Lisban, 'I cannot believe 'that what is called virtue in a woman, 'is so rare as is said; and I would lay a 'wager, without going farther, that you 'yourself have never been guilty of one 'indiscretion.'—'Upon my word, my 'dear abbé, I could almost say like Agnes, *do not lay*.'—'Should I lose?'—'No, you would win; but by so little, so 'very little, that to say the truth it is 'not worth boasting of.'—'That is to 'say, your prudence has run some risks.'—'Alas! yes: I have seen it more 'than once on the point of being shipwrecked. *By good luck* you behold it 'in port.'—'Ah, Madam, trust me 'with the recital of your adventures.'—'With all my heart. We are arrived 'at an age wherein we have no longer 'any thing to dissemble, and my youth 'is now so long past, that I may speak 'of it as of a gay dream.

'If you recollect the Marquis of Lisban, he was one of those insipid fine 'figures, which say to you, *Here am I!* 'He was one of those awkward pieces

'of

'of vanity which always miſs their aim. He valued himſelf on every thing, and was good at nothing: he took the lead in converſation, demanded ſilence, ſuſpended the attention, and then brought out the flatteſt ſpeech in the world. He laughed before he told a ſtory, but no one elſe laughed at his ſtories; he often aimed at being refined, and gave ſuch fine turns to what he ſaid, that at laſt he did not know what he was ſaying: when he had given ladies the vapours, he thought he had made them penſive; when they were diverting themſelves with his follies, he took it for coquetry.'—'Ah, Madam, what a happy temper!'—'Our firſt interviews were filled with the recital of his intrigues. I began by liſtening to him with impatience; I ended by hearing him with diſguſt: I even took the liberty of declaring to my parents that the creature tired me to death. They replied, that I was a ſimpleton, for that a huſband was formed to do ſo. I married him. They made me promiſe to love him alone: my mouth ſaid, *Yes*; my heart ſaid, *No*; and my heart kept it's promiſe. The Count of Palmene preſented himſelf before me with all the graces of mind and figure. My huſband, who introduced him, did the honours of my modeſty: he replied to the handſome things the count ſaid on his happineſs with an air of ſuperiority that made me mad. If you would believe him, I loved him to diſtraction; and this declaration was ſucceeded by all that indiſcreet diſcloſure of ſecrets, no leſs ſhocking to truth than decorum, while vanity abuſes the ſilence of modeſty. I was not able to contain myſelf; I quitted the room, and Palmene could perceive by my diſguſt, that the marquis impoſed upon him. "The impertinent creature!" ſaid I to myſelf, "he goes on boaſting "of his triumphs, becauſe he is perſuaded I ſhall not have the courage "to contradict him. They will believe him, they will ſuppoſe me taſteleſs enough to love the ſilleſt and "vaineſt man in the world. If he had "ſpoken of an honeſt attachment to my "duty, I could have borne it; but to "talk of love! of a weakneſs for him! "this is enough to bring a diſgrace on "me. No, I would not have it ſaid in "the world, that I am fond of my huſband: it is of the higheſt conſequence "that I ſhould undeceive Palmene: "and with him I ought to begin."

'My huſband, who congratulated himſelf on having put me out of countenance, did not diſcover, any better than myſelf, the true cauſe of my confuſion and anger. He valued himſelf too much, and loved me too little, to condeſcend to be jealous. "You have behaved like a child," ſaid he to me when the count was gone: "I can tell you, however, that "he thinks you charming. Yet do "not liſten too much to him; he is a "dangerous man." I felt it much better than he could tell me.

'Next day the Count de Palmene came to ſee me; he found me alone. "Do you forgive me, Madam," ſaid he, "for the confuſion I ſaw you in yeſterday? I was the innocent cauſe of it, "but I could freely have diſpenſed "with the marquis's making me his "confident."—"I know not," ſaid I to him, looking down, "why he takes "ſo much pleaſure in relating what it "gives me ſo much pain to hear."—"When we are ſo happy, Madam, we "are very pardonable in being indiſcreet."—"If he is happy, I congratulate him; but indeed he has no "reaſon."—"What! can he be otherwiſe," replied the count with a ſigh, "when he poſſeſſes the moſt beautiful "woman in the world?"—"Suppoſe, "Sir, ſuppoſe for once that I am ſo; "where is the glory, the merit, the "happineſs of poſſeſſing me? Did I diſpoſe of myſelf?"—"No, Madam; "but, if I may believe him, you ſoon "applauded the choice they had made "for you."—"What! Sir! will the "men never conſider that they train us "up to diſſimulation from our infancy; "that we loſe our frankneſs with our "liberty; and that it is no longer the "time to require of us to be ſincere, "when they have impoſed it as a duty "on us to be otherwiſe?" Here I was a little too much ſo myſelf, and perceived it too late: hope had now inſinuated itſelf into the count's ſoul. To confeſs that one does not love one's huſband, is almoſt to confeſs that we love another; and the perſon who is made the confident of ſuch a confeſſion, is very often the object of it.

'Theſe ideas had plunged the count into a pleaſing reverie. "You have

"diſſembled

" dissembled then mighty well," said ' he, after a long silence, " for the mar- " quis has told me astonishing things of " your mutual love."—" Very well, " Sir; let him flatter himself as much " as he pleases: I shall not try to un- " deceive him."—" But for yourself, " Madam, ought you to be unhappy?" —" I do my duty, I submit to my des- " tiny: question me no more about it; " and, above all, make no ill use of the " secrets which the imprudence of my " husband, my own natural sincerity, " and my impatience, have forced from " me."—" I! Madam; may I die " sooner than be unworthy your confi- " dence. But I would enjoy it alone, " and without reserve: look upon me " as a friend who shares all your dis- " quiets, and in whose breast you may " safely deposit them."

' This name of *friend* infused into ' my heart a perfidious tranquillity: I ' no longer mistrusted either myself or ' him. A friend of twenty-four hours, ' of the count's age and figure, appear- ' ed to me the most reasonable, as well ' as the most decent thing in the world; ' and a husband such as mine, the thing ' of all the world the most ridiculous ' and most afflicting.

' The latter obtained no longer, from ' the duty I owed him, any more than ' a few cold civilities; of which, how- ' ever, he had still the folly to pride ' himself, and was always mentioning ' them in confidence to Palmene, and ' at the same time exaggerating their ' value. The count knew not what to ' think of it. " Why deceive me?" said ' he sometimes. " Why disown a com- ' " mendable sensibility? Are you a- " " shamed to contradict yourself?"— " " Alas! no, Sir; I could glory in it; " " but I am not happy enough to have " " occasion to retract."

' At these words my eyes were filled ' with tears. Palmene was melted by ' them. What did he not say to me to ' soften my sorrows! What pleasure ' did I take in hearing him! O, my ' dear abbé! the dangerous comforter: ' he assumed from that moment an ab- ' solute empire over my soul; and, of ' all my thoughts, my love for him was ' the only one I concealed from him. He ' had never spoke to me of his own ' passion but under the title of friend- ' ship; but making an ill use at last of ' the ascendance he had over me, he writ ' to me as follows:

" I Have deceived myself, and imposed " upon you: that friendship, so " calm and so sweet, to which I resign- " ed myself without fear, is become " love, the most violent, the most pas- " sionate, that ever existed. I shall see " you this evening, to devote my life " to you, or to bid you an eternal fare- " wel."

' I shall not explain to you, my dear ' abbé, the different emotions that arose ' in my soul: all I know is, that vir- ' tue, love, and fear, strove there to- ' gether; but I remember, too, that joy ' had it's part. I endeavoured, how- ' ever, to prepare myself for making a ' good defence. First, I thought I ' would not be alone—" and I will go " " and tell them to let in all the world." ' Secondly, I resolved I would look at ' him but very slightly, without giving ' his eyes an opportunity to fix them- ' selves for one moment on mine. " This " " effort will cost me dear; but virtue is " " not virtue for nothing. In short, I " " will avoid giving him an opportunity " " of speaking to me in particular: and, " " if he should dare to attempt it, I will " " answer him in a tone, in such a tone " " as shall deceive him."

' My resolution being taken, I sat ' down to my toilette; and, without in- ' tending it, dressed myself that day with ' more grace and elegance than ever. ' In the evening a prodigious deal of ' company came to see me, and this ' company put me out of humour. My ' husband also, more earnest and assidu- ' ous than usual, as if he had done it ' on purpose, harrassed me almost to ' death. At length they announced ' Palmene. He blushed, he paid his ' respects to me: I received him with a ' profound curtsey, without deigning ' to raise my eyes towards him, and said ' to myself, " Well, this is very fine!" ' The conversation at first was general: ' Palmene let drop some words, which, ' to the rest of the company, carried very ' little meaning, but signified a great deal ' to me. I pretended not to understand ' them, and applauded myself in my ' own mind for so well-supported a ri- ' gour. Palmene had not the courage ' to approach me: my husband forced

' him

'him to it by his familiar pleasantries. 'The count's respect and timidity soft-'ened me. "The poor wretch," said 'I, "is more to be pitied than blamed; "if he dared, he would ask pardon of "me; but he will never have the cou-"rage. I will chear him by a look." —"I have been guilty of an indiscre-"tion, Madam," said he to me, "do "you pardon me for it?"—"No, Sir." 'This *No*, pronounced I know not 'how, appeared to me very great. Pal-'mene got up, as it were to go: my 'husband retained him by force. Word 'was brought that supper was on table. "Come, my dear count, be gallant; "give my wife your hand: she seems "to me to be rather in ill-humour; but "we shall contrive to drive it away."

'Palmene, in despair, squeezed my 'hand; I looked at him, and thought I 'saw in his eyes the image of love and 'grief. I was touched with it, my 'dear abbé; and by a movement, which 'proceeded from my heart, my hand 'replied to his. I cannot describe to 'you the change which appeared all of 'a sudden on his countenance. It 'sparkled with joy, and that joy dif-'fused itself into the souls of all the 'company. Love, and the desire of 'pleasing, seemed to animate them all, 'as well as himself.

'The discourse turned upon gallan-'try. My husband, who thought him-'self an Ovid in the art of love, deli-'vered a thousand impertinencies on 'the subject. The count, in his an-'swers, endeavoured to soften them with 'a delicacy and ingenuity that quite 'charmed me. *By good luck*, a young 'fop, who had seated himself by me, 'took it into his head to say handsome 'things to me. *By good luck* also I 'paid some attention to him, and an-'swered him with an air of satisfaction. 'The amiable Palmene now changed of 'a sudden both his language and tem-'per. The conversation had passed 'from love to coquetry. The count 'inveighed against that general desire of 'pleasing, with a warmth and gravity 'that astonished me. "I forgive," 'said he, "a woman for changing her "lover; I can even pardon her for having "several; all this is natural: it is not "her fault if they cannot fix her; at "least, if she seeks to captivate only "those she loves, and whom she makes "happy; and if she contributes at one "time to the happiness of two or three, "it is only a blessing multiplied. But "a coquette is a tyrant who wants to "enslave, merely for the pleasure of "having slaves. Idolatress of herself, "she cares for nobody else: her pride "makes a sport of our weakness, and a "triumph of our torments; her looks "are false, her mouth deceitful, her "language and her behaviour are only "a series of snares, her graces so many "syrens, her charms so many poisons."

'This declamation astonished all pre-'sent. "What! Sir," said the young 'gentleman to him, who talked to me, "do you prefer a woman of gallantry "to a coquette!"—"Yes, without "doubt do I, and it is beyond all dis-"pute."—"Such a one is more conve-"nient!" said I to him ironically. And "more inestimable, Madam," replied 'he with an air of chagrin; "more "estimable a thousand times." I con-'fess that I was piqued at this insult. "Come, Sir," replied I with disdain, "it is to no purpose that you reproach "us, as with a crime, of one of the most "innocent and most natural pleasures "in the world; your opinion will not "be a law. The coquettes, you say, "are tyrants: you are a much greater "tyrant yourself, for wanting to de-"prive us of the only advantage that "nature has given us. If we must "give up the desire of pleasing, what "have we left in society? Talents, "genius, the striking virtues, all these "you have, or think you have; it is "permitted a woman only to attempt "to be amiable; and yet you most "cruelly condemn her never to wish to "be so, except to one man. This is to "bury her alive amidst the living; this "is to render the whole world nothing "to her."—"Ah, Madam!" said the 'count to me in a pet, "you are in the "way of the world! Indeed I could "not have believed it."—"You are "wrong, my dear," replied my hus-'band, "you are wrong: my wife "would please every body, but desires "to make none happy but me. That "is cruel, I confess, and I have told "her so a hundred times; but it is her "foible: so much the worse for the "dupes. Besides, why take so seri-"ously what is but a jest? If she takes "a pleasure in hearing herself called "handsome, must she for that reason "reply in the same strain? She loves

"me,

" me, that is plain; but you, and as " many others who amuse her, ye have " no pretensions to her heart. She " keeps that for me; and I defy any " body to rob me of it."—" You shut " my mouth," said Palmene, " the " moment you cite your lady for an ex- " ample, and I have nothing to say in " reply." At these words they went ' out from table.

' I conceived from that instant, I will ' not say an aversion for the count, but ' a dread which almost comes up to ' it. " What a strange man!" said I ' to myself; " what an imperious dis- " position! He would make a woman " miserable." After supper he fell in- ' to a sullen silence, from which nothing ' could rouze him. At last, finding ' me for a moment alone, " Do you " really think as you spoke?" demand- ' ed he with the air of a severe judge. " Certainly."—" Enough: you shall " never see me more as long as I live."

' *By good luck* he kept his word with ' me, and I perceived by the chagrin ' which this rupture gave me, all the ' danger I had run.'—' See,' said the abbé, moralizing very gravely, ' what ' one moment of ill-humour produces. ' A trifle becomes a serious affair: we ' are exasperated, humbled; love is ter- ' rified, and flies.'

' The character of the Chevalier de ' Luzel,' resumed the marchioness, ' was quite the reverse of that of the ' Count de Palmene.'—' This gentle- ' man, Madam, was, without doubt, ' the person who was so sweet upon you ' during supper?'—' Yes, my dear ab- ' bé, the same. He was beautiful as ' Narcissus, and he loved himself no ' less: he had vivacity, and a gentility ' in his understanding, but not the ' shadow of common sense.

" Ah! marchioness," said he to me, " this Palmene of yours is a melan- " choly creature! What do you do with " the man? He talks, he moralizes, he " overwhelms us with his arguments. " For my own part, I know but two " things; to amuse myself, and to be " amusing to others: I know the world " I live in, I see what passes there; I " see that the greatest of evils that afflict " mankind is dullness. Now this dull- " ness proceeds from an evenness in the " temper, a constancy in our connec- " tions, a solidity in our tastes, a mo- " notony, in short, which gives a sleepi- " ness even to pleasure itself; while " levity, caprice, coquetry, keep it a- " wake. Besides, I love coquettes to " distraction: coquetry is the charm of " society. Besides, sensible women are " tiresome in the long-run. It is a " good thing to have somebody with " whom you may unbend."—" With " me," said I to him smiling, " you " may unbend as much as you please." —" And that now is what I want, what " I seek in a coquette; to oppose, to " resist, to defend herself, if possible. " Yes, Madam, I would fly you, if I " thought you capable of a serious at- " tachment."—' Madam,' replied the abbé gravely, ' this young fop was a ' dangerous person.'—' I assure you, ' my good friend, he was; and I was ' not long before I perceived it. I ' treated him at first as a child, and this ' ascendancy of my understanding over ' his could not but be very flattering at ' my time of life; but he might be ' taken from me by somebody. I be- ' gan to grow uneasy at it. His ab- ' sence put me out of humour; his con- ' nections raised my jealousy. I de- ' manded sacrifices, and wanted to im- ' pose laws.

" Well, now," said he to me one day ' when I was reproaching him for his ' dissipation, " would you work a little " miracle; make me discreet at once: " I ask nothing better." I understood ' very well, that to make him discreet, ' there was a necessity for ceasing to be ' so myself. I asked him, however, on ' what this little miracle depended. " On a trifle," said he: " we seem to me " to love one another already; the rest " is easily imagined."—" If we loved " one another, as you say, but which I " do not believe, the miracle would be " already performed: love alone would " have rendered you discreet."—" O, " no, Madam, we must be just: I " willingly abandon all other hearts " for yours, win or lose; it is the chance " of the game, and I wish to run the " hazard of it; but yet there is an ex- " change to make, and you cannot in " conscience desire that I should re- " nounce all pleasure for nothing."— ' Madam,' interrupted the abbé, ' the ' chevalier was not so void of sense as ' you say, and here he reasoned pretty ' well.'—' I was astonished,' said the marchioness; ' but the more I perceived ' he was in the right, the more I endea-

'voured to perſuade him that he was 'wrong. I even told him, as far as I 'can remember, ſome of the fineſt things 'in the world on honour, duty, and 'conjugal fidelity: but he paid no re-'gard to them; he pretended that ho-'nour was only a decorum, marriage a 'ceremony, and the oath of fidelity a 'compliment, a piece of politeneſs, 'which in reality bound us to nothing. 'So much was ſaid on one ſide and the 'other, that we began to loſe ourſelves 'in our ideas, when on a ſudden my 'huſband arrived.'

'*By good luck*, Madam!'—'Oh! by 'great good luck, I confeſs: never did 'huſband come more opportunely. We 'were confuſed; my bluſhes would have 'betrayed me; and, for want of time to 'recollect myſelf, I ſaid to the chevalier, "Hide yourſelf." He retired into the 'cloſet of my dreſſing-room.'—'A 'dangerous retreat, Madam!'—'It was 'ſo; but this cloſet had a back-door, 'and I was eaſy about the chevalier's 'eſcape.'—'Madam,' ſaid the abbé, with his air of reflection, 'I would lay 'a wager that the chevalier is ſtill in 'the cloſet.'—'Patience,' replied the marchioneſs, 'we are not come to the 'unravelling of the plot. My huſband 'accoſted me with that air of ſelf-con-'tent which appeared always on his 'countenance; and I, in order to con-'ceal my embarraſſment from him, ran 'up haſtily to embrace him with an ex-'clamation of ſurprize and joy.'—"So, "you little fool," ſaid he to me, "there "now, I ſuppoſe you are pleaſed! You "ſee me again. I am very good, to "come and paſs the evening with this "poor thing. You are not aſhamed, "then, to love your huſband? But do "you know that it is ridiculous, and "that they ſay that they muſt bury us "together, or that I muſt be baniſhed "from you; that you are good for no-"thing, ever ſince you have been my "wife; that you drive all your lovers "into deſpair, and that you ought to "be puniſhed for it?'—"I, Sir! I "drive nobody into deſpair. Do not "you know me? I am one of the beſt-"natured women in the world."—"What an air of ſimplicity! one would "believe it. Thus, for example, Pal-"mene ought to take it for granted "that you have not played the coquette "with him: the chevalier ought to be "content that you prefer your huſband "to him; and what a huſband too! A "dull, inſipid fellow, who has not even "common ſenſe: is it not ſo? What "a contraſt to an elegant chevalier!"—"Indeed I form no compariſon between "you."—"The chevalier has wit, vi-"vacity, and grace. How do I know "but he has the gift of tears alſo? Has "he never wept at your knees? You "bluſh! That is almoſt a confeſſion. "Out with it; tell me?"—"Have "done," ſaid I to him, "or I will leave "the room."—"What! do not you "ſee that I am joking."—"Such jok-"ing would deſerve——" "How "now! what, angry! You threaten me "too! You may, but I ſhall not be at "all alarmed."—"You take advantage "of my virtue."—"Of your virtue? "Oh, not at all! I depend only on my "own planet, which will not ſuffer me "to be made a fool of!"—"And you "truſt to your planet?"—"I truſt ſo "ſtrongly in it, I depend ſo thoroughly "upon it, that I defy you to counteract "it. Hark ye, child, I have known "women without number; and not "one, whatever I did, could bring her-"ſelf to be untrue to me. Ah! I may "ſay without vanity, that when they "love me, they love me heartily. Not "that I am better than any other: I do "not flatter myſelf ſo far as that; but "there is a certain *je-ne-ſçai-quoi*, as "Moliere ſays, which cannot be ex-"plained." At theſe words, ſurvey-'ing himſelf with his eyes, he walked 'before a glaſs. "You ſee too," con-'tinued he, "how little reſtraint I put "upon you. For example, to-night "have you any appointment, any *tête-"à-tête*, I take my leave. It is mere-"ly on a ſuppoſition that you are diſen-"gaged, that I come to paſs the even-"ing with you."—"However that be," 'ſaid I to him, "you had better ſtay." —"For the greater ſurety, is it not ſo?" —"Perhaps ſo."—"I thank you: I ſee "I muſt ſup with you."—'Sup then 'quickly,' interrupted the abbé; 'the 'marquis makes me impatient: I am 'in pain till you get up from table; till 'you are retired into your own apart-'ment, and your huſband leaves you 'there.'—'Well, my dear abbé, behold 'me there, in the moſt cruel anxiety I 'ever experienced in my life. My ſoul 'ſtruggling (I bluſh at it yet) between 'fear and deſire. I advance with a 'trembling pace towards the cloſet of

'my

'my dreſſing-room, to ſee at laſt if my 'fears have any foundation: I perceive 'nobody there, I think him gone, this 'perfidious chevalier! but, *by good luck*, 'I hear ſomebody ſpeaking in a low 'voice in the next room; I draw near, 'I liſten: it was Luzel himſelf, with 'the youngeſt of my women. "It is "true," ſaid he, "I came here with a "deſign upon the marchioneſs, but "chance uſes me better than love. What "a compariſon! and how unjuſt is for-"tune! Your miſtreſs is well enough; "but has ſhe that ſhape, that air of "neatneſs, that bloom, that gentility? "You are, by nature, a woman of qua-"lity. A woman muſt either be very "modeſt, or very vain, to have an at-"tendant of your age and figure! Faith, "Lucy, if the Graces are made like "you, Venus cannot ſhine much at her "toilette."—"Keep your gallantries, "Sir, for my lady, and remember that "ſhe will be here preſently."—"Oh, "no, ſhe is with her huſband; they are "the beſt in the world together. I even "think, God forgive me! that I hear "them ſaying tender things to each "other. It would be pleaſant if he "ſhould come to paſs the night with "her. But however that be, ſhe does "not know that I am here, and from "this moment I am no longer for her."—"But, Sir, you do not conſider; what "will become of me if they ſhould "know it?"—"Take courage, I have "provided for every thing: if to-mor-"row they ſhould ſee me go out, it is "eaſy to give it a proper turn."—"But, Sir, my lady's honour——" "Stuff: your lady's honour is mightily "concerned in it! And, after all, if they "ſhould give her ſuch a man as myſelf, "ſo much the better, that would bring "her into faſhion."—'Oh, the wretch!' cried the abbé. 'Judge, my friend,' reſumed the marchioneſs, 'my indig-'nation at this diſcourſe. I was on the 'point of burſting out upon them; but 'ſuch a burſt of paſſion would have 'ruined me: neither my people nor my 'huſband would have been able to per-'ſuade themſelves that the chevalier 'came there on Lucy's account. I re-'ſolved to diſſemble: I rang; Lucy ap-'peared; I had never ſeen her look ſo 'handſome before; for jealouſy embel-'liſhes it's object, when it cannot make 'it ugly. "Was that one of your "maſter's ſervants," ſaid I to her, "whom I juſt now heard talking with "you?"—"Yes, Madam," replied ſhe 'with confuſion. "Let him withdraw "this inſtant, and do not come back "till he is gone." I ſaid no more; 'but whether Lucy ſaw through me, 'or fear determined her to ſend away 'the chevalier, he retired that inſtant, 'and got out undiſcovered. You may 'eaſily judge, my dear abbé, that my 'door was ever after ſhut againſt him, 'and that Lucy the next day dreſſed 'my head ill, did every thing wrong, 'was good for nothing, put me quite 'out of patience, and was diſcharged.'

'You had reaſon, Madam,' cried the abbé, 'to ſay that your virtue has run 'ſome riſks.'—'This is not all,' con-tinued ſhe, 'I ſhall now entertain you 'with another adventure. We paſſed 'the ſummer every year at our coun-'try-houſe at Corbéil, where we had 'a celebrated painter for our neigh-'bour, which inſpired the marquis with 'the gallant notion of having my por-'trait and his own. You know that 'it was his foible to believe himſelf be-'loved by me. He would have us re-'preſented in the ſame piece, chained 'together by Hymen with wreaths of 'flowers. The painter took the hint; 'but being accuſtomed to draw after 'nature, he deſired to have a model for 'the figure of Hymen. In the ſame 'village was at that time a young abbé, 'who now and then came to ſee us. 'His fine eyes, his roſy mouth, his 'complexion ſcarce yet ſhaded with 'the down of youth, his hair of a 'bright flaxen colour flowing in ſmall 'ringlets on a neck whiter than ivory, 'the tender vivacity of his looks, the 'delicacy and regularity of his features, 'every thing about him ſeemed ſo form-'ed for the purpoſe, that the marquis 'prevailed on the abbé to conſent to 'ſerve as a model to the painter.'

At this beginning, the Abbé de Cha-teauneuf redoubled his attention; but contained himſelf till the end, in order to hear the concluſion of the ſtory.

'The expreſſion to be given to the 'countenances,' continued the marchio-neſs, 'produced excellent ſcenes between 'the painter and the marquis. The 'more my huſband endeavoured to put 'on an air of ſenſibility, the more ſim-'ple he looked. The painter copied 'faithfully, and the marquis was en-'raged at ſeeing himſelf painted to the

'life. For my part, I had something 'of mockery in my countenance, which 'the painter imitated as well. The 'marquis swore, the artist retouched 'without ceasing; but he still found on 'the canvas the air of a sly baggage 'and a fool. At last a dullness seized 'me; the marquis took it for a soft 'languor: on his side he gave himself a 'foolish laugh, which he called a tender 'smile, and the painter came off for 'drawing him as he saw him. We 'were to proceed next to the figure of 'Hymen. "Come, Sir," said the pain-'ter to the abbé, "now for the Graces "and voluptuousness! Look tenderly "on the lady; still more tenderly."— "Take her hand," added my husband, "and imagine that you are saying to "her, "Fear not, my dear; these bands "are made of flowers; strong, but "light." Animate yourself, then, my "dear abbé; your countenance has no "expression in it: you have the air of "a Hymen benumbed." The young 'man profited wonderfully by the in-'structions of the painter and the mar-'quis. His timidity vanished by de-'grees, his mouth wore an amorous 'smile, his complexion was heightened 'with a livelier red, his eyes sparkled 'with a gentler flame, and his hand 'pressed mine with a tremor which my-'self only could perceive. I must tell 'you all; the emotion of his soul passed 'into mine, and I viewed the god with 'much more tenderness than I had done 'my spouse. "There! the very thing," 'said the marquis: "go on, abbé; ad-"mirable!—Is not it?" said he to the 'painter. "We shall make something "of this little model.—Come, wife, "do not let us be cast down: I knew "very well that it would be a fine "piece. There! you are now just as "I wanted.—Courage, abbé.—Go on, "Madam: I leave you both in the "right attitude; do not change it till "I return." As soon as the marquis 'was gone, my little abbé became quite 'heavenly; my eyes devoured his, and 'yet I could not be satisfied. The 'sittings were long, and seemed to us 'to last only for a moment. "What "a pity," said the painter, "that I did "not take my lady at such a juncture "as this! There is the expression I "wished for! quite another counte-"nance. Ah, Sir! what a pleasure it "is to copy you! You do not flag at "all: your features become more and "more animated.—No inattention, "Madam; fix your eyes on his: my "Hymen will be a capital figure." 'When the head of the Hymen was fi-'nished, "I want, Madam," said he 'to me one day in my husband's ab-'sence, "I want to retouch your por-"trait. Change places, abbé, and "take that of the marquis."—"Why "so, Sir?" said I, blushing. "Oh, "Heavens, Madam! let me alone. I "know best what will set you off to "advantage." I understood him, and 'the abbé blushed at it as well as my-'self. The artifice of the painter had 'a wonderful effect. The languor 'gave place to the most touching ex-'pression of timid voluptuousness. The 'marquis, at his return, could not 'cease admiring this change, which 'he could not comprehend. "This "is very strange!" said he; "it looks "as if the picture had animated it-"self."—"It is the effect of my co-"lours," replied the painter, coldly, "to display themselves thus in propor-"tion as they take place. You will "see it quite a different thing in a "short time from what it is now!"— "But my head," resumed the marquis, "to me does not seem to improve so." —"That is easily accounted for," re-'plied the artist: "the lineaments "are stronger, and the colours less "delicate. But do not be impatient: "it will become, in time, one of the "finest husband's heads that ever was "seen."

'When the picture was finished, 'the abbé and myself fell into a pro-'found melancholy. Those soft mo-'ments in which our souls spoke 'through our eyes, and shot themselves 'into one another, were now no more. 'His timidity and my modesty laid 'us under a cruel restraint. He no 'longer dared to visit us so often, and 'I no longer dared to invite him.

'In short, one day when he happen-'ed to be at our house, I found him 'alone, motionless and pensive, before 'the picture. "You are well employ-"ed, Sir," said I to him. "Yes, Ma-"dam," replied he briskly, "I am en-"joying the only pleasure that will "henceforth be permitted me: I am "admiring yourself in your picture." —"You are admiring me! That is "very gallant!"—"Ah! I would say "more

" more if I durſt."—" Indeed? You " are content?"—" Content, Madam! " I am enchanted. Alas! why are you " not ſtill ſuch as I ſee you in this pic- " ture!"—" It is pretty well," inter- ' terrupted I, pretending not to under- ' ſtand him; " but yours appears to me " to be better."—" Better, Madam! " mine is as cold as ice."—" You joke " about your coldneſs: nothing in the " world can be more warm."—" Ah, " Madam! had I but been at liberty " to ſuffer that emotion to diſplay itſelf " in my countenance which paſſed in " my heart, you ſhould have ſeen quite " another thing. But how could I ex- " preſs what I felt in thoſe moments? " 'The painter, if not the marquis, had " his eyes continually upon me. I was " obliged to aſſume a tranquil air. " Would you ſee," added he, " how I " ſhould have viewed you, if we had " been without witneſſes? Give me " once more that hand which I preſſed " not without trembling, and let us re- " ſume the ſame attitude."—' Would ' you believe it, my friend? I had the ' curioſity, the complaiſance, and, if ' you pleaſe, the weakneſs, to let my ' hand drop into his. I muſt confeſs, ' I never ſaw any thing ſo tender, ſo paſ- ' ſionate, ſo touching, as the figure of my ' little abbé at this dangerous confe- ' rence. Voluptuouſneſs ſmiled on his ' lips, deſire ſparkled in his eyes, and all ' the flowers of the ſpring ſeemed to blow ' on his beautiful cheeks. He preſſed ' my hand againſt his heart, and I felt ' it beat with a vivacity that commu- ' nicated itſelf to mine. " Yes," ſaid ' I, endeavouring to diſſemble my con- ' fuſion, " that would be more expreſ- " ſive, I confeſs, but it would no longer " be the figure of Hymen."—" No, " Madam, no; it would be that of Love: " but Hymen at your feet ought to be " no other than Love himſelf." At ' theſe words he ſeemed to forget him- ' ſelf, and thought himſelf in reality ' the god whoſe image he repreſented.

' *By good luck* I had ſtill ſtrength ' enough left to be in a paſſion: the ' poor creature, ſhocked and confound- ' ed, took my emotion for anger, and ' loſt, in aſking my pardon, the moſt ' favourable moment to offend me with ' impunity.'—' Ah! Madam,' cried the Abbé de Chateauneuf, ' is it poſſible ' that I have been ſuch a fool!'— ' How now?' reſumed the marchio- neſs. ' Alas! this little fool was I!' —' You! impoſſible!'—' It was I, ' I myſelf; nothing more certain. You ' recal my own ſtory to my remem- ' brance. Cruel woman! had I known ' but what I know now——' ' My ' old friend, you would have had too ' great an advantage; and this pru- ' dence which you now extol ſo high- ' ly would have made but a feeble ' reſiſtance.'——' I am confounded,' cried the abbé, ' I ſhall never for- ' give myſelf as long as I live.'— ' Conſole yourſelf, for it is time,' re- plied the marchioneſs ſmiling; ' but ' confeſs that there is a great deal of ' *good luck* in virtue itſelf, and that ' thoſe ladies who have the moſt, ought ' to judge leſs ſeverely of them who ' have not had enough."

THE TWO UNFORTUNATE LADIES.

IN the convent of the viſitation of Cl.... had for ſome ſhort time retired the Marchioneſs of Clarence. The calm and ſerenity which ſhe ſaw reign in this ſolitude, did but render more lively and bitter the grief that conſumed her. ' How happy,' ſaid ſhe, ' are thoſe innocent doves, which have ' taken their flight towards heaven! ' Life is to them a cloudleſs day; they ' know neither the ſorrows nor plea- ' ſures of the world.'

Amidſt theſe pious maidens, whoſe happineſs ſhe envied, one only, named Lucilia, ſeemed to her to be penſive and pining. Lucilia, ſtill in the bloom of her youth, had that ſtyle of beauty which is the image of a ſenſible heart; but ſorrow and tears had taken off it's freſh- neſs, like a roſe which the ſun has wi- thered,

thered, but which leaves us ſtill capable of judging, in it's languiſhing ſtate, of all the beauty it had in the morning. There ſeems to be a dumb language between tender ſouls. The marchioneſs read in the eyes of this afflicted fair-one what nobody had diſcovered there before. So natural is it to the unhappy to complain, and love their partners in affliction! She took a liking to Lucilia. Friendſhip, which in the world is hardly a ſentiment, in the cloiſter is a paſſion. Their connection in a ſhort time became very intimate; but on both ſides a concealed ſorrow poiſoned it's ſweetneſs. They were ſometimes a whole hour ſighing together, without preſuming to aſk each other the ſecret of their griefs. The marchioneſs at laſt broke the ſilence.

'A mutual confeſſion,' ſaid ſhe, 'would ſpare us perhaps a great deal 'of uneaſineſs: we ſtifle our ſighs on 'both ſides; ought friendſhip to keep 'any thing a ſecret from the breaſt 'where a mutual friendſhip is found?' At theſe words a modeſt bluſh animated the features of Lucilia, and the veil of her eye-lids dropped over her fine eyes. 'Ah! why,' replied the marchioneſs, 'why this bluſh? Is it the effect of 'ſhame? It is thus that the thought of 'happineſs ought to colour beauty. 'Speak, my Lucilia; pour out your 'heart into the boſom of a friend, more, 'without doubt, to be lamented than 'yourſelf, but who would conſole her-'ſelf for her own happineſs, if ſhe could 'but ſoften yours.'—'What is it you 'aſk of me, Madam? I ſhare all your 'ſorrows, but I have none of my own 'to confide to you. The alteration of 'my health is the only cauſe of that 'languor into which you ſee me plunged. I am decaying inſenſibly; and, 'thanks to Heaven, my end approaches.' She ſpoke theſe laſt words with a ſmile, at which the marchioneſs was greatly affected. 'Is that, then,' ſaid ſhe, 'your 'only conſolation? yet, though impatient to die, you will not confeſs to me 'what it is that renders life odious to 'you. How long have you been here?' —'Five years, Madam.'—'Was you 'brought hither by compulſion?'—'No, 'Madam; by reaſon, by Heaven, which 'was pleaſed to attract my heart entirely to itſelf.'—'That heart, then, 'was attached to the world?'—Alas! 'yes, for it's own puniſhment.'—'Fi-'niſh.'—'I have told you all.'—'Were 'you in love, Lucilia, and had the for-'titude to bury yourſelf alive? Was 'it ſome perfidious wretch whom you 'have abandoned?'—'The moſt vir-'tuous, moſt tender, and moſt valuable 'of mankind. Aſk no more: you ſee 'the guilty tears that ſteal from my 'eyes; all the wounds of my heart 'open afreſh at the thought.'—'No, 'my dear Lucilia, it is not a time for 'us now to keep any thing a ſecret. I 'would penetrate into the inmoſt re-'ceſſes of your ſoul, in order to pour 'conſolation into it: believe me, the 'poiſon of grief exhales not but by com-'plaints; ſhut up in ſilence, it only 'becomes the more violent.'—'You 'will have it, Madam? Weep then 'over the unfortunate Lucilia; weep 'over her life, and ſhortly over her 'death.

'Scarce had I appeared in the world, 'when this fatal beauty attracted the 'eyes of a fickle and imprudent youth, 'whoſe homage could not dazzle me. 'One man alone, yet in the age of in-'nocence and candour, taught me that 'I was ſenſible of love. The equality 'of our years, birth, fortune; the con-'nection alſo between our families; and, 'above all, a mutual inclination, had 'united us to each other. My lover 'lived only for me: we ſaw with pity 'this immenſe void of the world, where 'pleaſure is only a ſhadow, where love 'is but a gleam; our hearts full of 'themſelves. . . . But I loſe myſelf. 'Ah, Madam, what do you now oblige 'me to call to mind!'—'What, my 'dear, do you reproach yourſelf for hav-'ing been juſt? When Heaven has form-'ed two virtuous and ſenſible hearts, 'does it make it criminal in them to 'ſeek each other, to attract, to capti-'vate reciprocally? If ſo, why has it 'made them?'—'It formed, no doubt, 'with pleaſure that heart in which mine 'loſt itſelf; where virtue took place of 'reaſon, and where I ſaw nothing that 'was a reproach to nature. Oh, Ma-'dam, who was ever loved like me! 'Would you believe that I was obliged 'to ſpare my lover's delicacy even the 'confeſſion of thoſe tender inquietudes 'which ſometimes afflict love? He 'would have deprived himſelf of life, 'if Lucilia had been jealous of it. 'When he perceived in my eyes any 'mark of ſorrow, it was to him as if 'all

' all nature had been eclipſed: he ſup-
' poſed himſelf always the cauſe, and
' reproached himſelf for all my faults.

' It is but too eaſy to judge to what
' exceſs the moſt amiable of men muſt
' have been loved. Intereſt, which diſ-
' ſolves all ties except thoſe of love,
' intereſt diſunited our families: a fatal
' law-ſuit, commenced againſt my mo-
' ther, was to us the æra and ſource of
' our misfortunes. The mutual hatred
' of our friends raiſed itſelf as an eter-
' nal barrier between us: we were oblig-
' ed to give over ſeeing each other. The
' letter which he wrote to me will ne-
' ver be effaced out of my memory.

" EVERY thing is loſt to me, my
" dear Lucilia: they tear from
" me my only happineſs. I am juſt
" come from throwing myſelf at my
" father's feet, I am juſt come from
" conjuring him, bathing him at the
" ſame time with my tears, to give over
" this fatal law-ſuit. He received me
" as a child. I proteſted to him that
" your fortune was ſacred to me, that
" my own would become odious.
" He has treated my diſintereſtedneſs
" as a folly. Mankind conceive not
" that there is ſomething above riches:
" and yet what ſhould I do with wealth
" if I loſe you? They ſay that one
" day I ſhall be glad they did not liſten
" to me. If I believed that age, or
" what they call reaſon, could ſo far
" debaſe my ſoul, I ſhould ceaſe to live
" from this moment, terrified at what
" was to come. No, my dear Lucilia,
" no; all I have or aſk is yours. The
" laws would in vain give me a part of
" your inheritance; my laws are in
" my heart, and my father there ſtands
" condemned. A thouſand pardons for
" the uneaſineſſes he occaſions you!
" Pray God that I offer up no criminal
" wiſhes! I could cut off from my
" own days to add to my father's;
" but, if ever I am maſter of thoſe
" riches he is now accumulating, and
" with which he would overload me in
" ſpite of myſelf, ample reparation ſhall
" be made for all. But yet I am de-
" prived of you. They will diſpoſe,
" perhaps, of the heart which you have
" given me. Ah! beware of ever con-
" ſenting to it: think that my life is at
" ſtake, think that our oaths are written
" in heaven. But can you withſtand
" the imperious will of a mother? I
" ſhudder at the thought; ſpeak com-
" fort to me, in the name of the moſt
" tender love."

' You anſwered him, without doubt.'
—' Yes, Madam; but in very few
' words.

" I upbraid you with nothing. I am
" unhappy, but I know how to
" be ſo: learn from me to ſuffer."

' The law-ſuit, however, was begun,
' and carried on with heat. One day,
' alas! one terrible day! while my mo-
' ther was reading with indignation a
' memorial publiſhed againſt her, ſome-
' body aſked to ſpeak with me. " Who
" is it?" ſaid ſhe; " let them come in."
' The ſervant, confounded, heſitates for
' ſome time, ſtammers in his anſwers,
' and concludes by confeſſing that he
' was charged with a billet to me.
" For my daughter! from whom?" I
' was preſent; judge of my ſituation;
' judge of the indignation of my mother
' when ſhe heard the name of the ſon of
' the perſon whom ſhe called her perſe-
' cutor. If ſhe had vouchſafed to read
' the billet, which ſhe ſent back without
' opening, perhaps ſhe had been moved
' by it. She would have ſeen, at leaſt,
' the extreme purity of our ſentiments:
' but whether the vexation into which
' this law-ſuit had plunged her, re-
' quired only an opportunity to vent it-
' ſelf, or that a ſecret correſpondence be-
' tween her daughter and her enemies
' was in her eyes a real crime, there are
' no reproaches with which I was not
' loaded. I fell down confounded at
' my mother's feet, and ſubmitted to
' the humiliation of her upbraidings,
' as if I had deſerved them. It was de-
' termined on the ſpot that I ſhould go
' and conceal in a cloiſter what ſhe call-
' ed my ſhame and her own. Being
' brought here the day after, orders
' were given not to ſuffer me to ſee any
' body; and I was here three whole
' months, as if my family and the world
' had been entirely annihilated to me.
' The firſt and only viſit I received was
' my mother's: I preſaged from her
' embraces the ſentence ſhe was going
' to pronounce. " I am ruined," ſaid
' ſhe to me, as ſoon as we were alone:
" iniquity has prevailed; I have loſt
" my law-ſuit, and with it all means
" of eſtabliſhing you in the world.

" Scarce

" Scarce enough remains for my ſon to " ſupport himſelf according to his birth. " As to you, my daughter, God has " called you here; here you muſt live " and die: to-morrow you take the " veil." At theſe words, which were ſtrengthened by the cold and abſolute tone in which they were pronounced, my heart was ſtruck, and my tongue frozen; my knees gave way beneath me, and I fell ſenſeleſs on the ground. My mother called for aſſiſtance, and laid hold of that opportunity to withdraw herſelf from my tears. When I was come to myſelf again, I found myſelf ſurrounded with thoſe pious damſels, whoſe companion I was to be, and who invited me to partake with them the ſweet tranquillity of their condition. But that ſtate, ſo fortunate for an innocent and diſengaged ſoul, preſented to my eyes nothing but ſtruggles, perjuries, and remorſe. A dreadful abyſs was going to be opened betwixt my lover and me; I found my better part torn from me; I ſaw no longer any thing around me but ſilence and vacuity; and in this immenſe ſolitude, in this renunciation of all nature, I found myſelf in the preſence of Heaven, with my heart full of the lovely object, which it was neceſſary I ſhould forget for it's ſake. Theſe holy damſels told me, with the ſtrongeſt conviction, all that they knew of the vanities of the world: but it was not to the world that I was attached; the moſt horrible deſart would have ſeemed a raviſhing abode, with the man whom I had left in that world which to me was nothing.

' I deſired to ſee my mother again: ſhe pretended at firſt to have taken my ſwooning for a natural accident. " No, Madam, it is the effect " of the violent ſituation into which " you have thrown me; for it is no " longer time to feign. You have " given me life, you may take it from " me; but, Madam, have you con- " ceived me only as a victim devoted " to the torment of a lingering death? " and to whom is it you ſacrifice " me? Not to God. I feel that he re- " jects me: the Almighty demands " only pure victims, voluntary ſacri- " fices; he is jealous of the offerings " made him, and the heart which pre- " ſents itſelf to him ought thenceforward to be his alone. If violence " drags me to the altar, perjury and " ſacrilege attend me there."—" What " ſay you, wretched girl?"—" A ter- " rible truth, which deſpair forces from " me: yes, Madam, my heart has " given itſelf away without your con- " ſent; innocent or culpable, it is no " longer mine; God only can break " the band by which it is tied."— " Go, unworthy daughter, go and " ruin yourſelf: I will never acknow- " ledge you more."—" Dear mother, " by your own blood, abandon me not; " ſee my tears, my deſpair; ſee hell " open at my feet!"—" Is it in this " light, then, that a fatal paſſion makes " thee view the aſylum of honour, the " tranquil port of innocence? What, is " there then but the world in thy eyes? " Know, however, that this world has " but one idol, intereſt. All our ho- " mages are for the ſucceſsful: obli- " vion, deſertion, and contempt, are " the portion of the unfortunate."

" Ah, Madam! ſeparate from that " corrupt multitude the man——" " Whom you love, is it not ſo? I " know all that he can have ſaid to you: " He is no accomplice in the iniquity " of his father; he diſclaims it, he " complains to you of it; he will re- " pair the injury done you! Vain pro- " miſes; the fine ſpeeches of a young " man, which will be forgot to-morrow. " But were he conſtant in his paſſion, " and faithful in his promiſes, his fa- " ther is young; he will grow old, for " the wicked grow old; and in the " mean time love becomes extinct, am- " bition prompts, duty commands; " rank, alliance, fortune, preſent them- " ſelves to him, and the credulous, be- " guiled maid, becomes the publick " talk. Such is the lot that awaited " you: your mother has preſerved you " from it. I now coſt you ſome tears, " but you will one day bleſs me for it. " I leave you, my daughter: prepare " yourſelf for the ſacrifice which God " requires of you. The more painful " this ſacrifice, the more worthy will it " be of Him."

' In a word, Madam, I was obliged to reſolve. I took this veil, this bandage; I entered the path of penitence; and during the time of probation, in which we are yet free, I flattered myſelf with the hopes of ſubduing myſelf, and attributed my irreſolution and weakneſs ſolely to the

' fatal

'fatal liberty of having it in my power 'to return. I thought the time long 'till I could bind myself by an irrevocable oath. I took that oath; I renounced the world; an easy matter. 'But, alas! I renounced also my lover, 'and that was more than renouncing 'my life. On pronouncing those vows, 'my soul fluttered on my lips, as if 'ready to leave me. Scarce had I 'strength enough to drag me to the foot 'of the altar; whence they were obliged 'to carry me away as dead. My mother came to me transported with a 'cruel joy.—Pardon me, my God: I 'respect, I love her still; I will love her 'to my last gasp.' These words of Lucilia were interrupted by sighs, and two rivulets of tears overflowed her face.

'The sacrifice was now compleated,' resumed she after a long silence: 'I was 'the Almighty's, I was no longer my 'own. All sensual ties were now to 'be broken: I was become dead to the 'earth; I presumed to believe it. But 'what was my terror, on searching into the abyss of my own soul! I there 'still found love, but a frantick and 'criminal love; love covered with shame 'and despair, love rebelling against 'Heaven, against nature, against myself; love consumed by regret, torn 'with remorse, and transformed into 'rage. "What have I done!" cried I 'to myself a thousand times, "what "have I done! This adored man, whom "I must see no more, presents himself "to my imagination in all his charms." 'The happy knot which was to have 'made us one, all the moments of a 'delicious life, all the emotions of two 'hearts which death alone would have 'separated, presented themselves to my 'distracted soul. Ah, Madam, how 'grievous was the image! There is nothing which I have not done in order 'to blot it from my memory. For these 'five years past have I by turns banished it from my sight, and seen it recur 'without ceasing. In vain do I sink 'myself in sleep, which only revives it 'in my mind; in vain do I abstract 'myself in solitude, where it awaits 'me: I find it at the foot of the altar, 'I bear it into the bosom of God himself. Meantime that God, who is the 'father of mercies, has at length taken 'pity on me. Time, reason, penance, 'have weakened the first shocks of this 'criminal passion, but a painful languor has succeeded. I feel myself 'dying every moment, and the thought 'that I am drawing near to my grave is 'my sole consolation.'

'Oh, my dear Lucilia!' cried the marchioness, after hearing her, 'which 'of us is most to be pitied! Love has 'been the cause both of your misfortunes and mine: but you loved the 'tenderest, the most faithful, the most 'grateful of men; and I the most perfidious, the most ungrateful, the most 'cruel. You devoted yourself to Heaven, I delivered myself up to a villain; your retreat was a triumph, 'mine is a reproach: people lament 'you, love you, and respect you; but 'me they revile and traduce.

'Of all lovers, the most passionate 'before marriage was the Marquis of 'Clarence. Young, amiable, seducing 'to the highest degree, he promised a 'most happy disposition. He seemed to 'possess all the virtues, as he really did 'all the graces. The docile ease of 'his temper received in so lively a manner the impression of virtuous sentiments, that they seemed as if they 'could never have been effaced. It was 'too easy for him, alas! to inspire me 'with the passion which he had himself, or at least thought he had for me. 'All the conveniencies, which make 'great matches, conspired with this 'mutual inclination; and my parents, 'who had seen it rising in my bosom, 'consented to crown it. Two years 'passed in the tendered union. O, 'Paris! O theatre of vices! O dreadful rock of love, innocence, and virtue! My husband, who till then had 'been but little conversant with those 'of his own age, and that merely to 'amuse himself, as he said, with their 'irregularities and follies, imbibed insensibly the poison of their example. 'The noisy preparation for their insipid 'meetings, the mysterious confidence 'of their adventures, the proud recitals 'of their empty pleasures, the commendations lavished on their worthless 'conquests, all excited his curiosity. 'The sweetness of an innocent and 'peaceful union had no longer the same 'charms for him. I had myself no 'other talents than those which a virtuous education bestows; I perceived 'that he required more in me. "I am "undone," said I to myself, "my heart

" is no longer a ſufficient return for " his." Indeed his attentions from ' that time were nothing more than ' complaiſance; he no longer preferred ' thoſe ſweet converſations, thoſe private ' interviews, ſo delicious to me, to the ' ebb and flow of a tumultuous ſociety. ' He himſelf perſuaded me to abandon ' myſelf to diſſipation, only in order to ' authoriſe him to be abandoned. I ' became more preſſing, and reſtrained ' him. I took the reſolution of leaving ' him at liberty, that he might wiſh for ' me, and ſee me again with pleaſure, ' after a compariſon which I thought ' muſt be to my advantage: but young ' corrupters ſeized that ſoul, unfor- ' tunately too flexible; and from the in- ' ſtant he had ſteeped his lips in the ' poiſoned cup, his intoxication was ' without remedy, and his wandering ' without return. I wanted to recal ' him; but it was too late. " You " deſtroy yourſelf, my dear," ſaid I to ' him; " and though it be dreadful to ' me to ſee a huſband torn from me " who formed all my delight, yet it is " more for your ſake than my own that " I lament your error. You ſeek hap- " pineſs where it is moſt aſſuredly not " to be found. Falſe delights, ſhame- " ful pleaſures, will never ſatisfy your " ſoul. The art of ſeducing and de- " ceiving is the whole of that worldly " art that now charms you; your wife " knows it not, and you know it no " better than ſhe: that infamous ſchool " is not formed for our hearts; yours " ſuffers itſelf to be loſt in it's intoxica- " tion; but it will laſt only for a time; " the illuſion will vaniſh like a dream; " you will return to me, and find me " ſtill the ſame; an indulgent and faith- " ful love waits your return, and all " will be forgotten. You will have " neither reproach nor complaint to " fear from me: happy if I can conſole " you, for all the chagrins which you " may have occaſioned me! But you, " who know the value of virtue, and " have taſted of her charms; you, whom " vice ſhall have plunged from one " abyſs into another; you, whom it " ſhall diſmiſs perhaps with contempt, " to conceal at home with your wife " the languiſhing days of a premature " old age, your heart withered with " ſadneſs, your ſoul a prey to cruel re- " morſe, how will you reconcile your- " ſelf to yourſelf? how will you be " able ſtill to reliſh the pure pleaſure of " being beloved by me? Alas! my love " itſelf will be your puniſhment. The " more lively alſo and tender that love " will be, the more humiliating will it " be for you. It is this, my dear mar- " quis, it is this that grieves and over- " powers me. Ceaſe to love me, if you " pleaſe; I can forgive you, ſince I " have ceaſed to be agreeable: but " never render yourſelf unworthy of " my tenderneſs, and contrive at leaſt " not to be obliged to bluſh before me."

' Would you believe it, my dear Lu- ' cilia? a piece of raillery was all his ' anſwer. He told me that I talked ' like an angel, and that what I had ' ſaid deſerved to be committed to writ- ' ing. But ſeeing my eyes brimful of ' tears, " Nay, do not play the child!" ' ſaid he to me: " I love you, you know " it; ſuffer me to amuſe myſelf, and " be aſſured that nothing attaches me."

' However, ſome officious friends ' failed not to inform me of every thing ' that could grieve and confound me. ' Alas! my huſband himſelf in a ſhort ' time deſiſted from keeping himſelf ' under my reſtraint, and even from ' flattering me.

' I ſhall not tell you, my dear Lucilia, ' the many marks of humiliation and ' diſguſt that I endured. Your griefs, in ' compariſon of mine, would even ap- ' pear light to you. Imagine, if poſ- ' ſible, the ſituation of a virtuous and ' feeling ſoul, lively and delicate to ex- ' ceſs, receiving every day new outrages ' from the only object of it's affection; ' ſtill living for him alone, when he ' lives no longer for her, when he is not ' aſhamed to live for objects devoted to ' contempt. I ſpare your delicacy the ' moſt horrible part of this picture. Re- ' jected, abandoned, ſacrificed by my ' huſband, I devoured my grief in ſi- ' lence: and if I afforded ſome profli- ' gate companies a topick of ridicule, ' a pure juſt and compaſſionate publick ' conſoled me with it's pity; and I en- ' joyed the ſole good which his vice ' could not take from me, a ſpotleſs ' character. I have ſince loſt that, my ' dear Lucilia. The wickedneſs of the ' women, whom my example humbled, ' could not bear to ſee me irreproach- ' able. They interpreted, according to ' their wiſhes, my ſolitude and appa- ' rent tranquillity: they aſcribed to me ' as a lover the firſt man who had the

' impudence

'impudence to conceive that he was 'well received by me. My husband, 'to whom my presence was a continual 'reproach, and who found himself not 'yet sufficiently at liberty, in order to rid 'himself of my importunate grief, took 'the first pretext that was presented to 'him, and banished me to one of his 'country-seats. Unknown to the world, 'far from the sight of my misfortunes, 'I at least enjoyed in solitude the liber-'ty of indulging my grief; but the 'cruel man caused it to be notified to 'me, that I might chuse a convent; 'that his seat of Florival was sold, 'and that I must retire from thence.' —'Florival!' interrupted Lucilia, in a violent emotion. 'That was the place 'of my exile,' resumed the marchioness. 'Ah, Madam! what name have 'you pronounced!'—'The name of 'my husband before he acquired the 'marquisite of Clarence.'—'What do 'I hear! Oh, Heaven! oh, just Heaven! 'is it possible?' cried Lucilia, throwing herself upon the bosom of her friend. 'What is the matter! what troubles 'you! what sudden revolution! Luci-'cilia, recover your senses.'—'How, 'Madam! is Florival then the perfidi-'ous wretch, the villain, who betrays 'and dishonours you!'—'Do you know 'him?'—'It is the man, Madam, 'whom I adored, whom I have mourn-'ed for these five years past; the man 'who would have had my last sighs!' —'What say you?'—'It is he, Ma-'dam! Alas, what had been my lot!' At these words, Lucilia bowing her face to the ground, 'Oh, my God!' said she; 'oh, my God! it was thou who 'stretchedst out thine hand towards 'me.' The marchioness was confound-ed, and unable to recover from her asto-nishment. 'Doubt it not,' said she to Lucilia; 'the designs of Heaven are vi-'sibly manifested upon us: it brings 'us together, inspires us with a mutual 'confidence, and opens our hearts to 'each other, as two sources of light 'and consolation. Well, my worthy 'and tender friend, let us endeavour to 'forget at once both our misfortunes, 'and the person who occasioned them.'

From this time the tenderness and in-timacy of their friendship increased to the highest degree: their solitude had pleasures, known only to the unfor-tunate. But, in a little time, this calm was interrupted by the news of the dan-ger which threatened the marquis. His dissipations cost him his life. At the point of death he asked for his virtu-ous wife. She tears herself from the arms of her forlorn companion; hastens to him; arrives; and finds him ex-piring. 'Oh you, whom I have so 'greatly and so cruelly injured,' said he to her on recollecting her, 'see the 'fruit of my irregularities; see the 'dreadful stroke which the hand of God 'has inflicted upon me. If I am yet 'worthy of your pity, raise up to Hea-'ven your innocent voice, and lay my 'remorse before it.' The distracted wife would have thrown herself on his bosom. 'Stand off,' said he; 'I shud-'der at myself; my breath is the blast 'of death:' adding, after a long si-lence, 'Do you know me again in this 'state to which my crimes have reduced 'me? Is this that pure soul that used 'to mix itself with thine? Is this that 'half of thyself? Is this that nuptial 'bed that received me when worthy of 'thee? Perfidious friends; detestable 'enchantresses; come, see, and shud-'der! Oh, my soul! who will deliver 'thee from this hideous prison?—Sir,' said he to his physician, 'have I yet 'long to live? My pains are intole-rable. Leave me not, my generous 'friend; I should fall, but for thee, 'into the most dreadful despair. . . . 'Cruel death, compleat, compleat the 'expiation of my life. There are no 'evils which I do not deserve: I have 'betrayed, dishonoured, basely perse-'cuted innocence and virtue itself.'

The marchioness, in the agonies of grief, made every moment new efforts to throw herself on the bed, from which they endeavoured to remove her. At last the unhappy man expired; his eyes fixed upon her, and his voice died away in asking her pardon.

The only consolation the marchioness was capable of, arose from that religious confidence with which so good a death inspired her. 'He was,' said she, 'more 'weak than wicked, and more frail 'than culpable. The world led him 'astray by it's pleasures; God brought 'him back again by afflictions: he 'has chastised, and pardons him.—Yes, 'my husband, my dear Clarence,' cried she, 'now disencumbered of the ties of 'blood and the world, thou waitest me 'in the bosom of thy God.'

Her soul filled with those holy ideas,

she went to join her friend, whom she found at the foot of the altar. Lucilia's heart was rent within her at the relation of this cruel and virtuous death. They wept together for the last time; and, some time after, the marchioness consecrated to God, with the same vows as Lucilia, that heart, those charms, those virtues, of which the world was unworthy.

ALL OR NOTHING.

AT that time of life, when it is so agreeable to be a widow, Cecilia could not help thinking of a fresh engagement. Two rivals disputed her choice. One, modest and plain, loved only her; the other, artful and vain, was above all things fond of himself. The first had the confidence of Cecilia; the second had her love. Cecilia was unjust, you will say: not at all. Plain folks neglect themselves; they think, that in order to please, it is sufficient to love with sincerity, and to convince others of their love. But there are few dispositions which do not require a little ornament. A man without art in the midst of the world, is like a lady at the opera without *rouge*.

Eraſtus, with his usual frankness, had said to Cecilia, 'I love you!' and from that time loved her as if he had breathed nothing else: his love was his life. Floricourt had rendered himself agreeable by those little gallantries which have the air of pretending to nothing. Among the attentions which he paid to Cecilia, he chose, not the most passionate, but the most seducing. Nothing affected, nothing grave: he appeared so much the more amiable, as he seemed not to intend it. She pitied Eraſtus; did not know an honester man: it was pity that it was impossible to love him. She dreaded Floricourt: he was a dangerous creature, and would perhaps be the ruin of a woman; but how was it possible to defend one's self? However, she would not deceive Eraſtus. She must confess the whole to him.

'I esteem you, Eraſtus,' said Cecilia to him, 'and I am sensible you merit 'more. But the heart has it's caprices; 'my own dissents from my reason.'—'I understand you, Madam,' replied Eraſtus, containing himself, but with tears in his eyes; 'your reason pleads 'for me, but your heart for another.'—'I confess it, and not without regret; 'I should be to blame, if I were free; 'but there is no answering for inclination.'—'Very well, Madam: I will 'love then alone; I shall derive the more 'glory from it.'—'But there, now, is 'the very thing I would not have.'—'Nor I neither; but that is to no pur-'pose.'—'And what is to become of 'you?'—'Whatever Love and Na-'ture please.'—'You distress me, Eras-'tus, by thus abandoning yourself."—'I must abandon myself, when I can-'not help it.'—'How unhappy am I 'in having ever known you!'—'In-'deed, you had need complain: it is a 'terrible misfortune to be beloved!'—'Yes, it is a misfortune to have cause 'to reproach one's self on account of a 'man we esteem.'—'You, Madam! 'you have nothing to reproach yourself. 'An honest man may complain of a 'coquette who trifles with him; or ra-'ther, she is unworthy of his complaints 'and regret; but what wrongs have 'you committed? Have you employed 'any seducing arts to attract me; any 'complaisance to retain me? Did I 'consult you about loving you? Who 'obliges you to think me amiable? 'Follow your own inclination, and I 'will follow mine. Be not afraid that 'I shall plague you.'—'No, but you 'will plague yourself; for, in short, 'you will see me.'—'What! would 'you be cruel enough to forbid me your 'sight?'—'Far from it, I assure you; 'but I wish to see you easy, and as my 'best friend.'—'Friend, let it be; the 'name signifies nothing.'—'But the 'name is not enough; I would bring 'you back in reality to that sentiment, 'so pure, so tender, and so solid, to that 'freindship which I feel for you.'—'Well, Madam, you may love me as 'you

'you pleaſe; pray now permit me to 'love you as I can, and as much as I 'can. I only deſire the liberty of be- 'ing unhappy after my own manner.'

The obſtinacy of Eraſtus grieved Cecilia; but, after all, ſhe had done her duty: ſo much the worſe for him, if he loved her ſtill. She gave herſelf up, therefore, without concern or reproach to her inclination for Floricourt. The moſt refined gallantry was put in practice to captivate her. Floricourt ſucceeded without difficulty. He knew how to pleaſe, thought he loved, and was happy, if he had choſen to be ſo. But ſelf-love is the bane of love. It was but a trifle in Floricourt's eyes to be loved more than every thing elſe; he wanted to be loved ſolely, without reſerve or participation. It is true that he ſet the example: he had detached himſelf for Cecilia from a prude whom he had ruined, and a coquette who ruined him; he had broke off with five or ſix of the vaineſt and fooliſheſt young fellows in the world. He ſupped no where but at Cecilia's, where it was delicious ſupping; and he had the goodneſs to think of her amidſt a circle of women, not one of whom equalled her either in grace or beauty. Such uncommon proceedings, not to ſpeak of merit ſtill more uncommon, had not they a right to exact from Cecilia the moſt abſolute devotion!

In the mean time, as he was not ſufficiently in love to be at all deficient in addreſs, he took care not to ſuffer his pretenſions to appear at firſt. Never had man, before conqueſt, been more complaiſant, more docile, leſs aſſuming, than Floricourt; but from the moment he ſaw himſelf maſter of her heart, he became it's tyrant. Difficult, imperious, jealous, he wanted to poſſeſs alone all the faculties of Cecilia's ſoul. He could not ſo much as permit her one idea except his own, much leſs a thought which came not from him. A deciſive taſte, a ſtrict connection, was ſure to diſpleaſe him; but his meaning was to be gueſſed at. He would force her to aſk him a hundred times over what he was thinking of, or what had put him out of humour; and it was never but as a favour that he confeſſed at laſt that ſuch a thing had diſpleaſed him, or ſuch a perſon made him dull. In ſhort, as ſoon as he ſaw that his will was a law, he declared it without ceremony; and it was ſubmitted to without oppoſition. It was but a ſmall matter to require of Cecilia the ſacrifice of thoſe pleaſures which naturally preſented themſelves; he gave birth to them the oftener, on purpoſe to ſee them ſacrificed to him. He ſpoke with tranſport of a play or an entertainment; he invited Cecilia to it; and they ſettled the party with ladies of his own naming: the hour came, they were dreſſed, the horſes put to; he changed his deſign, and Cecilia was obliged to pretend a head-ach. He preſented to her a ſhe-friend, whom he introduced as an adorable woman; ſhe was found ſuch; an intimacy was contracted. A week after, he confeſſed he had been deceived; ſhe was affected, inſipid, or giddy! and Cecilia was obliged to break off with her. Cecilia was in a ſhort time reduced to ſlight acquaintances, whom, however, he complained of her ſeeing too often. She perceives not that her complaiſance was changed into ſlavery. We think we purſue our own will when we purſue the will of thoſe we love. Floricourt ſeemed to her only to foreſtal her own deſires. She ſacrificed every thing to him, without ſo much as ſuſpecting that ſhe made him any ſacrifices; yet Floricourt's ſelf-love was not ſatisfied.

The company of the town, perfectly frivolous and tranſitory as it was, yet appeared to him too intereſting. He extolled ſolitude; he repeated a hundred times, that there was no true love but in the country, far from diſſipation and noiſe, and that he ſhould never be happy but in a retreat inacceſſible to impertinents and rivals. Cecilia had a country-houſe to his wiſh. She had longed to paſs the fineſt part of the year there with him, but could ſhe do it with decency? He gave her to underſtand, that it was ſufficient to take off all the air of a private party, by carrying ſuch a friend along with them as Eraſtus, and a woman of the character of Artenice. After all, if people ſhould talk, their marriage, which was ſoon to be concluded, would ſilence them. They ſet out, Eraſtus was of the party, and this again was a refinement of Floricourt's ſelf-love. He knew that Eraſtus was his rival, his unſucceſsful rival: it was the moſt flattering teſtimony that he could have of his triumph; therefore he had contrived excellently to bring it about. His attentions to him had an

air

air of compaſſion and ſuperiority, at which Eraſtus was ſometimes quite out of patience; but the tender and delicate friendſhip of Cecilia made him amends for theſe humiliations, and the fear of diſpleaſing her made him diſguiſe them. However, ſure as he was that they were going into the country only in order to enjoy their love there at liberty, how could he reſolve with himſelf to follow them? This reflection Cecilia made as well as he; ſhe would have hindered him, but the party was ſettled, paſt revocation. Beſides, Artenice was young and handſome. Solitude, opportunity, liberty, example, jealouſy, and pique, might engage Eraſtus to turn towards her thoſe vows which Cecilia could not liſten to. Cecilia was modeſt enough to think it poſſible for a perſon to be unfaithful to her, and juſt enough to wiſh it; but it was betraying a very ſlight knowledge of the heart and character of Eraſtus.

Artenice was one of thoſe women with whom love is only an arrangement of ſociety, who are offended at a long attachment, who grow tired of a conſtant paſſion, and who depend ſufficiently on the honeſty of the men to deliver themſelves up to them without reſerve, and to quit them without heſitation. They had told her, 'We are going to 'paſs ſome time in the country; Eraſ-'tus is to be there; will you make one?' She replied with a ſmile, 'With all my 'heart; a pleaſant ſcheme!' and the party was immediately ſettled. This was an additional torment to Eraſtus. Artenice had heard Cecilia praiſe her friend; as the moſt prudent man in the world, the honeſteſt and moſt reſerved. 'That is charming,' ſaid Artenice within herſelf; 'that is a kind of man 'to be taken and diſmiſſed without pre-'caution or noiſe. Happy or unhappy, 'that is not to the purpoſe: one is ne-'ver at one's eaſe but with people of 'this ſort. An Eraſtus is a rarity!' We may readily conclude, after theſe reflections, that Eraſtus did not want for encouragement.

Floricourt behaved towards Cecilia with an aſſiduity perfectly diſtreſſing to an unſucceſsful rival. Cecilia in vain endeavoured to conſtrain herſelf; her looks, her voice, her very ſilence, betrayed her. Eraſtus was upon the rack; but he concealed his pain. Artenice, like a dextrous woman, kept conveniently at a diſtance, and engaged Eraſtus to follow her. 'How happy are 'they,' ſaid ſhe one day to him as they were walking together: 'wholly 'taken up with each other, they feel a 'mutual ſatisfaction, and live only for 'themſelves! It is a great happineſs 'merely to love. What ſay you to it?' —'Yes, Madam,' replied Eraſtus looking down, 'it is a great happineſs when 'two——' 'Oh, there are always 'two; for I do not ſee that one is alone 'in the world.'—'I mean, Madam, 'two hearts equally ſenſible, and made 'to love one another equally.'—'Equally! that is very unreaſonable. For 'my part, I think that we ought to be 'leſs difficult, and to content ourſelves 'with coming up within a ſmall matter of it. Suppoſe, I have more ſenſibility in my temper than he who attaches himſelf to me, muſt I puniſh 'him for it? Every one gives what he 'has, and we have no room to reproach 'him who contributes towards ſociety 'that portion of ſenſibility which Nature has given him. I wonder that 'the coldeſt hearts are always the moſt 'delicate. You, for example; you now, 'are a man that would expect one to 'love you to diſtraction.'—'I, Madam! I expect nothing.'—'You miſtake me; that is not what I mean. 'You have enough in you to ſeduce a 'woman, to be ſure. I ſhould not even 'be ſurprized at her conceiving an inclination for you.'—'That may be, 'Madam: in point of folly, I doubt 'nothing; but if a woman were ſo fooliſh as to fall in love with me, I think 'ſhe would be much to be pitied.'—'Is this a caution, Sir, which you are 'ſo good as to give me?'—'You, Madam! I flatter myſelf that you think 'me neither fooliſh nor weak enough 'to give you any ſuch caution.'—'Very well, you ſpeak in general then, 'and except me out of politeneſs?'—'The exception itſelf is unneceſſary, 'Madam; for you have nothing to do 'in the caſe.'—'Pardon me, Sir: it is 'I who tell you, that you have qualities enough to pleaſe, and that one 'might very eaſily love you to diſtraction; and it is to me that you reply, 'that one ſhould be very much to be 'pitied if one loved you. Nothing, in 'my opinion, can be more perſonal. 'Hey! what, you are embarraſſed?'—'I confeſs that your raillery embar-

'raſſes

'raſſes me; I know not how to reply 'to it; but it is not generous to at- 'tack me with weapons which I am 'not armed with.'—'But if I were in 'earneſt, Eraſtus; if nothing in the 'world were truer?'—'Your ſervant, 'Madam: the ſituation I am now re- 'duced to will not permit me to amuſe 'you any longer.'—'Ah! upon my 'word he is in downright earneſt,' ſaid ſhe following him with her eyes. 'The 'tone of levity, the laughing air which 'I aſſumed, piqued him: he is a man 'for ſentiment; I muſt talk to him in 'his own language. To-morrow, in 'this grove, one turn more, and my 'victory is decided.'

Eraſtus's walk with Artenice had appeared very long to Cecilia. Eraſtus returned from it quite penſive, and Artenice in triumph. 'Well,' ſaid Cecilia to her friend in a very low voice, 'what do you think of Eraſtus?'

'Why I like him pretty well; he 'has not quite tired me, and that is a 'great deal; he has ſome excellent qua- 'lities, and one might make an agree- 'able man of him. I find him only a 'little romantick in his manner. He 'expects ſentiment; a fault of habit, 'a mere country prejudice, of which it 'is eaſy to break him.'—'*He expects ſentiment!*' ſaid Cecilia within herſelf; 'they are coming to terms al- 'ready! This is going very far at one 'interview. I think Eraſtus acts his 'part with a good grace. Well! but 'if he is happy, am I to take it ill? 'Yet, it was wrong in him to want to 'perſuade me that he was ſo greatly to 'be pitied. He might have ſpared my 'delicacy the heavy reproaches, which 'he knew very well I heaped upon my- 'ſelf. It is the frenzy of lovers always 'to exaggerate their pains. In ſhort, 'he is conſoled, and I am ſufficiently 'comforted.'

Cecilia, in this idea, put leſs reſtraint on herſelf with regard to Floricourt. Eraſtus, whom nothing eſcaped, became more melancholy than uſual. Cecilia and Artenice attributed his melancholy to the ſame cauſe. A growing paſſion always produces that effect. The day after, Artenice did not fail to contrive a *tête à-tête* for Cecilia and Flocourt, by taking away Eraſtus along with her.

'You are angry,' ſaid ſhe, 'and I 'want to be reconciled to you. I ſee, 'Eraſtus, that you are not one of thoſe 'men with whom love is to be treated 'with raillery: you look upon an en- 'gagement as one of the moſt ſerious 'things in the world; I like you the 'better for it.'—'I! Not at all, Ma- 'dam; I am too well perſuaded that a 'ſerious paſſion is the higheſt extrava- 'gance, and that love is no longer a 'pleaſure than while it is a jeſt.'— 'Be conſiſtent then. Yeſterday even- 'ing you required an equal ſenſibility, 'a mutual inclination.'—'I required 'an impoſſibility; or, at leaſt, the moſt 'uncommon thing in the world; and I 'maintain, that without this union, 'which is ſo difficult that it muſt be 'given up, the wiſeſt and ſureſt way 'is to make a jeſt of love, without an- 'nexing any chimerical value or im- 'portance to it.'—'Upon my word, 'my dear Eraſtus, you talk like an an- 'gel. Why, indeed, ſhould we tor- 'ment ourſelves to no purpoſe, endea- 'vouring to love more than we are able? 'We agree, ſettle matters, grow weary 'of each other, and part. On caſting 'up the account, we have had plea- 'ſure; the time, therefore, was well 'employed; and would to Heaven we 'could be ſo amuſed all our lives!'— 'This, now,' ſaid Eraſtus within him- ſelf, 'is a very convenient way of think- 'ing!'—'I well know,' continued ſhe, 'what they call a ſerious paſſion: no- 'thing is more gloomy, nothing more 'dull. Uneaſineſs, jealouſy, are con- 'tinually tormenting the two unhappy 'creatures. They pretend to be ſatisfied 'with each other, and weary themſelves 'to death.'—'Ah, Madam! what is 'it you ſay? They want nothing, if 'they love truly. Such an union is 'the charm of life, the delight of the 'ſoul, the fullneſs of happineſs!'— 'Really, Sir, you are mad with your 'eternal inconſiſtencies. What would 'you have, pray?'—'What is not to 'be found, Madam; and what, per- 'haps, will never be ſeen.'—'A fine 'expectation, truly! And in the mean 'while your heart will continue diſen- 'gaged?'—'Alas, would to Heaven 'it could!'—'It is not ſo, then, Eraſ- 'tus?'—'No, certainly, Madam; and 'you would pity it's condition, could 'you but conceive it.' At theſe words he left her, lifting his eyes towards heaven, and heaving a profound ſigh. 'This, then,' ſaid Artenice, 'is what

'they

'they call a reserved man! He is so 'much so, that it makes him a down-'right beast. By good luck, I have not 'explained myself. Possibly I ought 'to have spoken out: bashful people 'must be assisted. But he walks off 'with an exclamation, without giving 'one time to ask him what possesses or 'afflicts him. He shall see: he must 'declare; for, in short, I am come to 'a compromise, and my honour is con-'cerned.'

Floricourt, during supper, wanted to entertain himself at the expence of Erastus. 'So,' said he to Artenice, 'where 'have you been? Nothing should be 'concealed from friends, and we set 'you the example.'—'Right,' said Artenice with indignation, 'if we knew 'how to profit by the examples that are 'set us; or did we even know what we 'would be at. If one talks of a se-'rious passion, the gentleman treats it 'as a jest; if one agrees to it's being a 'jest, he goes back again to the se-'rious.'—'It is easy for you, Madam,' said Erastus, 'to turn me into ridicule; 'I submit to it, as much as you please.' —'Nay, Sir! I have no such design; 'but we are among friends, let us ex-'plain. We have not time to observe 'and guess at each other. I please you; 'that you have given me to under-'stand: I will not dissemble that you are 'agreeable enough to me. We are not 'come here to be idle spectators; ho-'nour itself requires that we should be 'employed: let us make an end, and 'understand one another. How is it 'that you would love me? How would 'you have me love you?'—'I, Ma-'dam!' cried Erastus, 'I do not want 'you to love me.'—'What, Sir! have 'you deceived me then?'—'Not at all, 'Madam; I call Heaven to witness 'that I have not said one word to you 'in the least like love.'—'Nay, then,' said she to him, getting up from table, 'this is a piece of effrontery beyond any 'thing I ever saw.' Floricourt would have detained her. 'No, Sir, I am 'not able to endure the sight of a man 'who has the assurance to deny the dull 'and insipid declarations with which he 'has affronted me, and which I had 'the goodness to put up with, prepos-'sessed by the commendations that had 'been given me, I know not why, of 'this wretched creature.'

'Artenice is gone off in a rage,' said Cecilia to Erastus, on seeing him again the next day: 'what has passed between 'you?'—'Some idle talk, Madam, 'the result of which on my side was, 'that nothing is more to be dreaded 'than a serious passion, and nothing is 'more despicable than a frivolous one. 'Artenice has seen me sigh; she thought 'I sighed for her; and I undeceived 'her, that is all.'—'You undeceived 'her! that is handsome enough; but 'you should have done it with a little 'more art!'—'How, Madam! could 'she dare to tell you that we were on 'the brink of love, and would you have 'had me contain myself? What would 'you have thought of my assent, or 'even of my silence?'—'That you 'were very much in the right. Arte-'nice is young and handsome, and your 'attachment would have been merely 'an amusement.'—'I am not in an hu-'mour to amuse myself, Madam, and 'I beg of you to spare the advice, by 'which I shall never profit.'—'But 'you are now alone with us, and you 'yourself must perceive that you will 'act but a very strange part here.'— 'I shall act, Madam, the part of a 'friend: nothing is, in my opinion, 'more honourable.'—'But, Erastus, 'how will you be able to support it?' —'Leave that to me, Madam, and 'do not make yourself at all uneasy on 'my account.'—'I cannot help being 'uneasy; for, in short, I know your 'situation, and indeed it is dreadful.' —'May be so; but it is neither in your 'power nor mine to render it better: 'let me alone,' and let us talk no more 'of it.'—'Talk no more of it! Soon 'said; but you are unhappy, and I 'am the cause.'—'Oh! no, Madam; 'no: I have told you so a hundred 'times; you have nothing to reproach 'yourself with. In God's name be 'easy.'—'I should be easy, if you 'could but be so?'—'Nay, now, you 'are cruel. Though you should insist 'upon knowing what passes in my soul, 'yet I should not have one pang the 'less, but you would have a piece of 'chagrin the more for it: pr'ythee now 'forget that I love you.'—'Hey! how? 'forget it? I see it every moment.— 'You would have me leave you then?' —'Why, our situation would require 'it.'—'Very well: drive me away 'then, that will be the best.'—'I drive 'you away, my friend! It is for you

'that

'that I am in pain.'—'O, then, for 'my part I declare to you, that I cannot live without you.'—'You think 'so; but abſence——' 'Abſence! 'a fine remedy for love like mine!'—'Doubt not it's efficacy, my dear Eraſtus: there are women more amiable 'and leſs unjuſt than I.'—'I am glad of 'it; but that is all one to me.'—'You 'think ſo at preſent.'—'I am now what 'I ſhall be all my life long: I know 'myſelf; I know the women. Do not 'be afraid that any of them can make 'me either happy or unhappy.'—'I believe that you would not attach 'yourſelf at firſt; but you will diſſipate in the world.'—'And with what? 'Nothing in it amuſes me. Here, at 'leaſt, I have no time to grow dull: I 'ſee you, or am going to ſee you; you 'talk to me kindly; I am ſure that you 'do not forget me; and if I were at a 'diſtance from you, I have an imagination that would be my torment.'—'And could it paint any thing more 'cruel than what you ſee?'—'I ſee 'nothing, Madam; I deſire to ſee nothing: ſpare me the uneaſineſs of being your confident.'—'Indeed I admire your moderation.'—'Yes, I have 'great merit, indeed, in being moderate! 'Would you have me beat you?'—'No; but people uſually complain on 'ſuch occaſions.'—'And of what?'—'I do not know; but I cannot reconcile ſo much love with ſo much reaſon.'—'Be aſſured, Madam, every 'one loves after his own faſhion: mine 'is not to rave. If ill language would 'pleaſe you, I could beſtow as much 'as another; but I doubt whether that 'would ſucceed.'—'I loſe nothing by 'that, Eraſtus; and at the bottom of 'your heart—' 'No, I vow that my 'heart reſpects you as much as my 'mouth. I never ſurprized myſelf one 'moment poſſeſſed with the leaſt anger 'againſt you.'—'Yet you torment your'ſelf, I ſee plainly. Melancholy gains 'upon you.'—'I am not very gay.'—'You hardly eat.'—'I live, at leaſt.'—'I am ſure you do not ſleep at all.'—'Pardon me, I ſleep a little, and that is 'the happieſt part of my time; for I 'ſee you in my ſlumbers ſuch almoſt as 'I wiſh you to be.'—'Eraſtus!'—'Cecilia!'—'You offend me.'—'Nay, 'Madam! it is too much to want to 'rob me of my dreams. You are, in 'reality, ſuch as you think proper; ſuffer me then, at leaſt in idea, to have 'you ſuch as pleaſes me.'—'Do not be 'angry, but let us talk reaſon. Theſe 'very dreams, which I ought not to 'know of, nouriſh your paſſion.'—'So 'much the better, Madam, ſo much the 'better: I ſhould be very ſorry to be 'cured of it.'—'And why do you perſiſt to love me without hope?'—'Without hope! I am not reduced to that 'yet: if your ſentiments were juſt, they 'would be durable. But——' 'Do 'not flatter yourſelf, Eraſtus; I am in 'love, and for my whole life.'—'I do 'not flatter myſelf, Cecilia; it is you 'that ſlander yourſelf. Your paſſion is 'a fever, which will have it's period. 'It is not generous to ſpeak ill of one's 'rival: I am ſilent; but I refer it to 'the goodneſs of your diſpoſition, to 'the delicacy of your heart—' 'They 'are both blind.'—'That is owning 'they are not ſo. One muſt have ſeen 'or have had ſome glimmerings, even 'to know that we ſee badly.'—'Well, 'I confeſs it: I remember to have diſcovered faults in Floricourt; but I 'know nothing more in him.'—'That 'knowledge will come to you, Madam, 'and on that I depend.'—'And if I 'marry Floricourt, as, indeed, every 'thing tends that way——' 'In that 'caſe I ſhall have nothing more either 'to hope or to fear; and my reſolution 'is already taken.'—'And what is it?'—'To give over loving you.'—'And 'how are you to do that?'—'How? 'nothing ſo eaſy. If I were in the army, and a ball——' O Heavens!'—'Is it ſo difficult, then, to ſuppoſe one's 'ſelf in the army?'—'Ah, my cruel 'friend, what is it you ſay? and with 'what levity do you tell me of a miſchief for which I ſhould never for'give myſelf!' Cecilia began to melt at this idea, when Floricourt came up to them. Eraſtus ſoon left them, according to his uſual practice. 'Our 'friend, my dear Cecilia,' ſaid Floricourt, 'is a very gloomy mortal; what 'ſay you?'—'He is an honeſt creature,' replied Cecilia, 'whoſe virtues I reſpect.'—'Faith, with all his virtues I wiſh 'he would go and indulge his reveries 'ſomewhere elſe; we want gaiety and 'company in the country.'—'Perhaps 'he has ſome reaſon to be penſive and 'ſolitary.'—'Yes, I believe ſo, and I 'gueſs it. You bluſh, Cecilia! I ſhall 'be diſcreet, and your embarraſſment

'impoſes ſilence on me.'—'And what 'ſhould be my embarraſſment, Sir? 'You believe that Eraſtus loves me, and 'you have reaſon to believe it. I pity 'him, I adviſe him, I talk to him as his 'friend; there is nothing in all this to 'bluſh at.'—'Such a confeſſion, my 'beautiful Cecilia, renders you ſtill 'more deſerving of eſteem; but allow 'that it comes a little too late.'—'I did 'not think myſelf obliged, Sir, to in-'form you of a ſecret which was not 'mine; and I ſhould have concealed it 'from you all my life long, if you had 'not ſurprized me into the diſcovery. 'There is in theſe kinds of confidences 'an oſtentation and cruelty not in my 'diſpoſition. We ſhould at leaſt re-'ſpect thoſe whom we have made un-'happy.'—'There is heroiſm for you!' cried Floricourt in a tone of anger and irony. 'And does this friend whom 'you uſe ſo well know how far matters 'are gone between us?'—'Yes, Sir, I 'have told him all.'—'And he has 'ſtill the goodneſs to ſtay here!'—'I 'endeavoured to diſpoſe him to leave 'us.'—'Ah! I have nothing more to 'ſay; I ſhould have been ſurprized if 'your delicacy had not forerun mine. 'You perceived the indecency of ſuf-'fering a man who loves you to con-'tinue in your houſe, at the very mo-'ment in which you are going to de-'clare for his rival. There would even 'be inhumanity in it, to render him a 'witneſs of the ſacrifice you make me. 'When is he to depart?'—'I do not 'know; I have not had the courage 'to preſcribe the time; and he has not 'the reſolution to determine upon it.' —'You rally, Cecilia: who then is to 'propoſe to him to rid us of his pre-'ſence? it would not be handſome in 'me.'—'It ſhall be myſelf, Sir; do 'not be uneaſy.'—'And what uneaſi-'neſs do I ſhew, Madam! Would you 'do me the honour of ſuppoſing me to 'be jealous? I aſſure you I am not 'in the leaſt ſo; my delicacy has your-'ſelf only in view, and for the little 'pain it may give you——' 'It will 'give me pain, no doubt, to deprive a 'reſpectable friend of the only conſola-'tion that is left him: but I know how 'to do myſelf violence.'—'Violence, 'Madam! that is very ſtrong. I would 'have no violence; that would be the 'way to render me odious, and I ſhall 'therefore go myſelf, and perſuade this 'reſpectable friend not to abandon you.' —'Go on, Sir; your raillery is mighty 'well timed; and I deſerve, indeed, 'that you ſhould talk to me in this 'manner.'—'I am very unhappy, Ma-'dam, to have diſpleaſed you,' ſaid Floricourt, on ſeeing her eyes bedewed with tears. 'Forgive me my impru-'dence. I did not know all the con-'cern you had for my rival and your 'friend.' At theſe words he left her, overcome with grief.

Eraſtus, at his return, found her in this ſituation. 'What is the matter, 'Madam?' ſaid he, accoſting her; 'in 'tears!'—'You ſee, Sir, the moſt 'wretched of women: I am ſenſible 'that my weakneſs will ruin me, and 'yet am unable to cure myſelf. A 'man, to whom I have ſacrificed every 'thing, doubts of my ſentiments, treats 'me with contempt, and ſuſpects me.' 'I underſtand, Madam, he is jealous, 'and muſt be made eaſy. Your quiet 'is concerned in it, and there is no-'thing that I would not ſacrifice to a 'concern ſo dear to me. Adieu: may 'you be happy! and I ſhall be leſs 'wretched.' Cecilia's tears burſt forth afreſh at theſe words. 'I have ex-'horted you to fly me,' ſaid ſhe to him; 'I adviſed you to it as a friend, and for 'your own ſake. The effort I made 'over my own ſoul had nothing humi-'liating in it; but to baniſh you to 'gratify an unreaſonable man, to rid 'him of a ſuſpicion which I ought ne-'ver to have feared, to be obliged to 'juſtify my love by the ſacrifice of 'friendſhip, is ſhameful and overwhelm-'ing. Never did any thing coſt me ſo 'dear before.'—'It muſt be ſo, Ma-'dam, if you love Floricourt.'—'Yes, 'my dear Eraſtus, pity me: I do love 'him, and it is in vain I reproach my-'ſelf for it.' Eraſtus liſtened no longer, but went off.

Floricourt made uſe of every method to appeaſe Cecilia; his gentleneſs, his complaiſance, were not to be equalled, when his will was fulfilled. Eraſtus was almoſt forgot; and what is it we do not forget for the perſon we love, when we have the happineſs to believe ourſelves beloved again! One only amuſement, alas! and that a very innocent one, yet remained to Cecilia in their ſolitude. She had brought up a goldfinch, which, by a wonderful inſtinct, anſwered to her careſſes. He knew her voice, and would

fly

fly to meet her. He never ſung but when he ſaw her; he never eat but out of her hand, nor drank but out of her mouth: ſhe would give him his liberty, he would uſe it but for a minute, and as ſoon as ſhe called him, he flew to her immediately. No ſooner was he placed on her boſom, then a ſenſibility ſeemed to agitate his wings, and to precipitate the warblings of his melodious throat. Could one believe that the haughty Floricourt was offended at the attention which Cecilia paid to the ſenſibility and ſportiveneſs of this little animal! 'I will 'know,' ſaid he one day within himſelf, 'whether the love ſhe entertains for me 'is ſuperior to theſe weakneſſes. It 'would be pleaſant, indeed, if ſhe ſhould 'be more attached to her goldfinch than 'her lover! Yet it may be ſo: I will 'make the experiment, and that before 'the evening be over.—And where is 'the little bird?' ſaid he, accoſting her with a ſmile. 'He is enjoying the open 'air and liberty; he is ſomewhere flut-'tering in the garden.'—'And are you 'not afraid that at laſt he ſhould ac-'cuſtom himſelf to that, and never re-'turn more?'—'I would forgive him 'if he found himſelf happier.'—'Ah! 'pr'ythee now, let us ſee if he be faith-'ful to you. Will you pleaſe to recal 'him?' Cecilia made the uſual ſignal, and the bird flew to her hand. 'That is charming,' ſays Floricourt; 'but he is too dear to you; I am jea-'lous of him, and I would have *all or* '*nothing* from the perſon I love.' At theſe words he attempted to lay hold of the dear little bird, in order to throttle it: ſhe ſet up a cry; the bird flew away; Cecilia, affrighted, grew pale, and loſt all ſenſation. The ſervants ran to her aſſiſtance, and recalled her to life. As ſoon as ſhe opened her eyes, ſhe ſaw at her feet, not the man whom ſhe loved beſt, but to her the moſt odious of mortals. 'Be gone, Sir!' ſaid ſhe to him with horror: 'This laſt ſtroke has 'given me a clear inſight of your fright-'ful character, equally mean and cruel. 'Out of my houſe! never to enter it 'more! You are too happy, that I ſtill 'reſpect myſelf more than I deſpiſe you. —'O, my dear and worthy Eraſtus! to 'what a man ſhould I have ſacrificed 'you?' Floricourt went out, fuming with rage and ſhame: the bird returned to careſs his beautiful miſtreſs; and it is unneceſſary to add, that Eraſtus ſaw himſelf recalled.

THE PRETENDED PHILOSOPHER.

CLARISSA had for ſome years heard of nothing but philoſophers. 'What kind of mortals are they?' ſaid ſhe; 'I want much to ſee one.' They tell her firſt, that true philoſophers were very rare, and not much addicted to communication; but in every other point, they were of all men the plaineſt, without the leaſt ſingularity. 'There are two 'ſorts, then?' ſaid ſhe; 'for in all the 'accounts that I hear, a philoſopher is 'a fantaſtical being, who pretends to 'be like nothing.' Of thoſe, they told her, there were enough every where: 'you ſhall have as many as you pleaſe 'of them: nothing ſo eaſily contrived.'

Clariſſa was in the country with an idle party who ſought only to amuſe themſelves. They preſented to her, a few days after, the ſententious Ariſtus. 'The gentleman, then, is a philoſopher?' ſaid ſhe on ſeeing him. 'Yes, Ma-'dam,' replied Ariſtus. 'This philo-'ſophy is a fine thing; is it not?'—'Why, Madam, it is the knowledge of 'good and evil; or, if you pleaſe, wiſ-'dom.'—'Is that all?' ſaid Doris. 'And the fruit of this wiſdom,' conti-nued Clariſſa, 'is to be happy, no 'doubt?'—'And, Madam, to make 'others happy alſo.'—'I ſhould be a 'philoſopher to them,' ſaid the ſimple Lucinda in a low voice, 'for I have 'been told a hundred times, that it de-'pended only on me to be happy by 'making others happy.'—'Right! who 'does not know that?' reſumed Doris. 'It is a mere ſtage-ſecret.'

Ariſtus, with a ſmile of contempt, gave them to underſtand, that philoſophical happineſs was not that which a pretty woman can taſte, and make others

'taste. 'I doubted it much,' said Clarissa; 'and nothing is more unlike, I 'should think, than a fine woman and 'a philosopher.—But let us hear, first, 'how the sage Aristus makes use of it, 'in order to be happy himself?'—'That 'is very simple, Madam: I have no 'prejudices, I depend on nobody, I 'live on little, I love nothing, and I 'speak every thing that I think.'—'To love nothing,' observed Cleon, 'seems to me a disposition but little favourable to make people happy.'—'How, Sir!' replied the philosopher; 'what, do we do good only to that we 'love? Do you love the miserable wretch 'whom you relieve as you go along? 'It is just so that we distribute to mankind the assistance of our lights.'—'And it is with your lights, then,' said Doris, 'that you make people happy?'—'Yes, Madam, and that we are so 'ourselves.' The fat Lady President of Ponval thought this happiness very slender. 'Has a philosopher,' demanded Lucinda, 'many pleasures?'—'He has 'but one, Madam; that of despising 'them all.'—'That must be very entertaining,' said Mrs. President roughly. 'And if you love nothing, Sir, 'what do you do with your soul?'—'What do I do with it? I employ it 'to the only use worthy of it. I contemplate, I observe the wonders of 'Nature.'—'Aye, but what can that 'nature have interesting to you,' replied Clarissa, 'if mankind, if your equals, 'have nothing in them to attach you?'—'My equals, Madam! I will not 'dispute about words; but that expression is a little too strong. But however that be, nature, which I study, 'has to me the attraction of curiosity, 'which is the spring of understanding; 'as that which is called desire is the 'movement of sentiment,'—'Oh! aye, 'I conceive,' said Doris, 'that curiosity is something; but do you reckon 'desire, Sir, as nothing?'—'Desire, I 'have already told you, is an attraction 'of another sort.'—'Why, then, deliver 'yourself up to one of these attractions, 'while you resist the other?'—'Ah, 'Madam, because the enjoyments of the 'understanding are not mingled with 'any bitterness, and all those of the 'senses contain a concealed poison.'—'But, at least,' said Cleon, 'you have 'senses?'—'Yes, I have senses, if you 'please; but they have no dominion 'over me: my mind receives their impressions as a glass, and nothing but 'the pure objects of the understanding 'can affect it strongly.'—'A very insipid fellow this!' said Doris to Clarissa in a very low voice: 'who brought 'this strange creature here?'—'Peace,' replied Clarissa, 'this will do for the 'country; there is a way to divert ourselves with him.'

Cleon, who wanted still to develope the character of Aristus, testified his surprize of seeing him resolved to love nothing: 'For, after all,' said he, 'do 'you know nothing amiable?'—'I 'know surfaces,' replied the philosopher, 'but I know how to defy the bot-'tom.'—'It remains, then, to know,' said Cleon, 'whether this defiance be 'well founded.'—'Oh! very well 'founded, believe me: I have seen 'enough to convince me that this globe 'is peopled only by fools, knaves, and 'ingrates.'—'If you were to consider 'it well,' said Clarissa to him in a tone of reproach, 'you would be less unjust, 'and perhaps also more happy.'

The sage, confounded for a moment, pretended not to have heard. Word was brought that dinner was ready; he gave his hand to Clarissa, and seated himself next her at table. 'I would 'fain,' said she to him, 'reconcile you 'to human nature.'—'Impossible, Madam! impossible! man is the most vicious of beings. What can be more 'cruel, for example, than the spectacle 'of your dinner? How many innocent 'animals are sacrificed to the voraciousness of man? The ox, from which 'you have this beef, what harm had 'he done you? And the sheep from 'whence came this mutton, the symbol of candour, what right had you 'over his life? And this pigeon, the 'ornament of our dove-houses, just torn 'from it's tender mate? O heavens! 'if there had been a Buffon * among 'the animals, in what class would he 'place man? The tiger, the vulture, 'the shark, would yield to him the 'first rank among those of prey.' All the company concluded that the philosopher subsisted only on pulse and they were afraid to offer him any part of the meats which he enumerated with so

* Buffon, the famous naturalist.

much

much compassion. ' Nay, help me,' said he; ' since they have gone so far as ' to kill them, somebody must eat them.' He declaimed, in like manner, at the same time that he eat of every thing, against the profusion of victuals, the pains taken to procure them, and the delicacy of them. ' O happy time!' said he, ' when man browzed with the ' goats.—Some drink, pray? Nature ' is greatly degenerated!' The philosopher got drunk in describing the clear brook where his forefathers used to quench their thirst.

Cleon seized the moment when wine makes us say every thing, to discover the principle of this philosophical ill-humour, which extended itself towards all mankind. ' Well,' said he to Aristus, ' you are here now among men; do you ' find them so odious? Confess that you ' condemned them on hearsay, and that ' they do not deserve all the harm that ' is said of them?'—' On hearsay, Sir! ' Learn, that a philosopher judges not ' but after his own notions: it is be- ' cause I have well considered and well ' developed mankind, that I believe them ' vain, proud, and unjust.'—' Ah! ' pr'ythee now,' interrupted Cleon, ' spare us a little: our admiration of ' you merits at least some tenderness; ' for, in short, you cannot reproach us ' with not honouring merit.'—' And ' how do you honour it?' replied the philosopher briskly; ' is it by neglect ' and desertion that it is to be honoured? ' Oh! the philosophers of Greece were ' the oracles of their age, the legislators ' of their country. Now-a-days wis- ' dom and virtue languish in oblivion; ' intrigue, meanness, and servility, carry ' all before them.'—' Suppose that were ' the case,' said Cleon, ' it would pos- ' sibly be the fault of those great men ' who disdain to shew themselves.'— ' And would you have them, then, run ' their heads into the faces, or rather ' throw themselves at the feet of the ' dispensers of rewards?'—' It is true,' said Cleon, ' that they might spare ' themselves the trouble, and that such ' a person as yourself, (pardon my ' bringing up your name)——' ' No ' harm done,' replied the philosopher with great humility. ' Such a person ' as yourself ought to be dispensed from ' paying his court.'—' I pay my court! ' Ah! let them wait for that; I believe ' their pride would never have much to ' plume itself upon: I know how to ' set a right value on myself, thank ' Heaven, and I would go and live in ' the deserts rather than disgrace my ' being.'—' It would be great pity,' said Cleon, ' that society should lose ' you: born to enlighten mankind, you ' ought to live amongst them. You ' cannot think, ladies, the good that a ' philosopher does to the world: I will ' lay a wager, now, that this gentleman ' has discovered a multitude of moral ' truths, and that there are perhaps at ' this very time fifty virtues of his own ' making.'—' Virtues!' replied Aristus, looking down, ' I have not struck out ' many of them, but I have unveiled ' many vices.'—' How, Sir!' said Lucinda to him, ' why did not you leave ' them their veil? They would have ' been less ugly.'—' Your humble ser- ' vant for that,' replied Madam De Ponval: ' I love an acknowledged vice ' better than an equivocal virtue; one ' knows at least what to depend on.' —' And yet see how they requite us!' cried Aristus with indignation. ' It ' is on this account that I have taken ' the resolution to live only for myself: ' let the world go on as it may.'—' No,' said Clarissa politely to him, getting up from table, ' I must have you live for ' us. Have you any urgent business ' at Paris?'—' None, Madam: a phi- ' losopher has no business.'—' Well, ' then, I shall keep you here. The ' country should be agreeable to philo- ' sophy; and I promise you solitude, re- ' pose, and freedom.'—' Freedom, Ma- ' dam!' said the philosopher, in an arti- culate voice; ' I am greatly afraid you ' will fail in your promise.'

The company dispersed to walk, and Aristus, with a thoughtful air, pretended to go and meditate in a walk, where he mused without thinking of any thing. I mistake; he thought of Clarissa, and said within himself, ' A handsome wo- ' man, a good house, all the conveni- ' encies of life: that promises well! let ' us see the end. It must be confessed,' continued he, ' that society is a pleasant ' scene: if I were gallant now, forward, ' complaisant, amiable, they would ' scarce pay any attention to me: they ' see nothing else in the world, and the ' vanity of women is surfeited with ' these common homages; but to tame ' a bear, to civilize a philosopher, to ' bend his pride, to soften his soul,

' is

'is a triumph difficult and uncommon, 'with which their self-love is not a 'little flattered. Clarissa, of her own 'accord, rushes into my toils; let me 'expect her there, without coming to 'any compromise.'

The company, on their side, amused themselves at the expence of Aristus. 'He is a pleasant original enough,' said Doris; 'what shall we strike out of 'him?'—'A comedy,' replied Cleon; 'and if Clarissa will come into it, my 'plan is already settled.' He communicated his thought, all the company applauded it, and Clarissa, after some difficulty, consented to play her part. She was much younger and handsomer than was necessary to move a philosopher, and some words, some looks, which had escaped our sage, seemed to promise an excellent catastrophe. She threw herself, therefore, as it were by chance, into the same walk with Aristus. 'I put you 'out,' said she; 'excuse me, I was only 'passing.'—'You do not interrupt me, 'Madam, I can meditate with you.'—'You will do me pleasure,' says Clarissa: 'I perceive that a philosopher does 'not think like another man, and I 'should be very glad to see things with 'your eyes.'—'It is true, Madam, that 'philosophy creates, as it were, a new 'world. The vulgar see only in the 'gross: the details of nature are a spectacle reserved for us; it is for us that 'she seems to have disposed, with an art 'so wonderful, the fibres of these leaves, 'the stamina of these flowers, the texture of this rind; an ant-hill is to 'me a republick, and each of the atoms that compose the world, appear 'in my eyes a new world.'—'That is 'admirable!' said Clarissa: 'what was 'it took up your thoughts this moment!'—'These birds,' replied the sage. 'They are happy, are they not?'—'Ah! very happy, without doubt; 'and can they be otherwise? Independence, equality, few wants, ready 'pleasures, oblivion of the past, no concern for the future, and their whole 'sollicitude to support life, and to perpetuate their species; what lessons, 'Madam! what lessons for mankind!'—'Confess, then, that the country is a 'delicious abode: for, in short, it 'brings us nearer to the condition of 'animals; and, like them, we seem to 'have no laws there, but the gentle instinct of Nature.'—'Ah, Madam! how 'true is all this! but the impression is 'effaced from the heart of man: society 'has ruined every thing.'—'You are 'right; this society is something very 'troublesome; and since we want nobody, it would be quite natural to live 'for one's self.'—'Alas! that is what 'I have said a hundred times, and what 'I never cease to write; but nobody 'will listen to me: you, Madam, for 'example, who seem to acknowledge 'the truth of this principle, could you 'have the strength to practise it?'—'I 'cannot but wish,' said Clarissa, 'that 'philosophy should come in fashion: 'I should not be the last to come into 'it, as I ought not to be the first to set 'it.'—'This is the language that every 'one speaks: nobody will venture to 'set the example; and, in the mean 'time, human nature groans, loaded 'with the yoke of opinion, and the 'chains of custom.'—'What would 'you have us do, Sir? Our ease, our 'honour, all that we hold dear, depends 'on decorums.'—'Well, Madam, observe then these tyrannical decorums; 'wear virtues as you do habits, made 'to the taste of the age; but your soul 'is your own: society has no right but 'to externals, and you owe it only appearances. The decorums, so much 'insisted on, are themselves nothing 'more than appearances well preserved: but the interior, Madam, the interior is the sanctuary of the will, and 'the will is independent.'—'I conceive,' said Clarissa, 'that I may wish 'for what I please, provided I go no 'farther.'—'To be sure,' replied the philosopher, 'it is better to stop there 'than to run the hazard of giving into 'imprudences: for, Madam, do you 'know what a vicious woman is? It 'is a woman who has no regard, no 'respect to herself, in any case.'—'What, Sir!' demanded Clarissa, affecting an air of satisfaction, 'does vice, 'then, consist only in imprudence!'—'Before I answer you, Madam, permit 'me to ask you, what is vice in your 'eyes? Is it not that which overturns 'order, which hurts, or which may 'hurt?'—'The very thing.'—'Very 'well, Madam; all that is external. 'Why then submit your sentiments and 'your thoughts to prejudice! See in 'these birds that soft and unrestrained 'liberty which Nature gave you, and 'which you have lost.'—'Ah!' said Clarissa

Clariſſa with a ſigh, 'the death of my 'huſband had reſtored me this precious 'gift; but I am on the point of re-'nouncing it again.'—'O, Heaven! 'what do I hear,' cried he; 'are you 'going to form a new chain?'—'Why, 'I do not know.'—'You do not 'know!'—'They will have it ſo.'—'And who, Madam? who are the ene-'mies who dare propoſe it to you? No; 'believe me, marriage is a yoke, and 'freedom is the ſupreme good. But, 'however, who is the huſband whom 'they would give you?'—'Cleon.'—'Cleon, Madam! I am no longer ſur-'prized at the unconſtrained air he aſ-'ſumes here. He queſtions, decides, 'condeſcends ſometimes to be affable, 'and has that haughty politeneſs which 'ſeems to let himſelf down to a level 'with us; it is plain that he is doing the 'honours of his own houſe; and I 'know, from henceforth, the reſpect 'and deference that I owe him.'—'You owe to each other a mutual ci-'vility, and I intend that with me every 'body ſhall be on an equality.'—'You 'intend it, Clariſſa! Alas, your choice 'deſtroys all equality between mankind, 'and the perſon who is to poſſeſs 'you—— But let us talk no more of 'it, I have ſaid too much already; this 'place is not made for a philoſopher; 'permit me to leave it.'—'No,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'I have need of you, and 'you plunge me into irreſolutions, from 'which you alone can draw me. It 'muſt be confeſſed, that philoſophy is a 'very comfortable thing; but if a phi-'loſopher were a deceiver, he would be 'a very dangerous friend! Adieu, I 'would not have them ſee us together; 'I am going to rejoin the company; 'come to us ſoon.—See there, then,' ſaid ſhe, as ſhe was going from him, 'what 'they call a philoſopher!'—'Courage!' ſaid he on his ſide; 'Cleon hangs only 'by a thread.' Clariſſa, with bluſhes, gave an account of the firſt ſcene, and her beginning was received with ap-plauſe: but the lady preſident, knitting her brow, 'Do you intend,' ſaid ſhe, 'that I ſhould be only a looker on? 'No, no; I muſt play my part, and I 'aſſure you it ſhall be pleaſant. Do 'you think that you ſhall ſubdue this 'ſage? No: I will have the honour of 'it.'—'You, Madam!'—'Oh! you 'may laugh: my fifty years, my triple 'chin, and my muſtaches of Spaniſh 'ſnuff, defy all your graces.' The whole company applauded this challenge by redoubled peals of laughter. 'Nothing 'is more ſerious,' reſumed ſhe; 'and 'if it be not enough to triumph over one, 'you have only to join, and diſpute the 'conqueſt with me; I defy you all three. 'Go, divine Doris; charming Lucinda; 'admirable Clariſſa; go and diſplay be-'fore his eyes all the ſeductions of beau-'ty and coquetry; I laugh at it.' She ſpoke theſe words with a tone of reſolu-tion ſufficient to make her rivals trem-ble.

Cleon affected to appear dull and penſive at the arrival of Ariſtus, and Clariſſa aſſumed with the philoſopher a reſerved air of myſtery. They ſpoke little, but ogled much. Ariſtus, on re-tiring to his apartment, found it furniſhed with all the inventions of luxury. 'O heavens!' ſaid he to the company, who for the ſake of diverting them-ſelves had conducted him thither; 'O 'heavens! is it not ridiculous that all 'this preparation ſhould be made for 'one man's ſleep? Was it thus that 'they ſlept at Lacedæmon? O Lycur-'gus, what wouldſt thou ſay! a toi-'lette for me! This is downright 'mockery. Do they take me for a 'Sybarite? I muſt retire, I cannot ſtand 'it.'—'Would you have us,' ſaid Cla-riſſa, 'unfurniſh it on purpoſe for you? 'Take my advice, and enjoy the plea-'ſures of life when they preſent them-'ſelves: a philoſopher ſhould know how 'to put up with every thing, and ac-'commodate himſelf to every thing.'—'Very well, Madam,' ſaid he, ſome-what appeaſed, 'I muſt at preſent com-'ply with you; but I ſhall never be able 'to ſleep on this heap of down. Upon 'my world,' ſays he, as he laid himſelf down, 'this luxury is a fine thing!' and the philoſopher fell aſleep.

His dreams recalled to his remem-brance his converſation with Clariſſa, and he awoke with the pleaſing idea, that this virtue by convention, which is called prudence in women, would make but a feeble reſiſtance againſt him.

He was not yet up, when a lacquey came to propoſe the bath to him. The bath was a good preſage. 'Be it ſo,' ſaid he; 'I will bathe: the bath is a 'natural inſtitution. As for perfumes, 'the earth yields them: let us not diſ-'dain her preſents.' He would fain have made uſe of the toilette which they had

had provided for him; but shame restrained him. He contented himself with giving to his philosophical negligence the most decent air he could, and the glass was twenty times consulted. 'What a fright you have made your-'self!' said Clarissa to him, on seeing him appear: 'why not dressed like the 'rest of the world? This habit, this 'wig, give you a vulgar air which you 'have not naturally.'—'What! Madam, is it by the air that we are to 'judge of mankind? Would you have 'me submit to the caprices of fashion, 'and be dressed like your Cleons?'—'Why not, Sir? Do you not know 'that they derive an advantage from 'your simplicity, and that it is this in 'particular that lessens in people's opi-'nions the consideration due to you? 'I myself, in order to do you justice, 'have need of my reflection: the first 'sight makes against you, and it is ve-'ry often the first sight that decides. 'Why not give to Virtue all the charms 'of which she is capable?'—'No, 'Madam, Art is not made for her. 'The more naked, the more beautiful; 'they disguise her when they endeavour 'to adorn her.'—'Very well, Sir, let her 'contemplate herself alone at her ease; 'as for me, I declare, that this rustick 'and low air displeases me. Is it not 'strange, that having received from na-'ture a distinguishing figure, any one 'should take a pride in degrading it?'—'But, Madam, what would you say, 'if a philosopher should employ his at-'tention about his dress, and set himself 'off like your marquis?'—'I would 'say, he seeks to please, and he does 'right; for, do not flatter yourself, 'Aristus, there is no pleasing without 'taking a good deal of pains.'—'Ah! 'I desire nothing so much as to please 'in your eyes.'—'If such a desire really 'possesses you,' replied Clarissa, with a tender look, 'bestow at least a quarter 'of an hour upon it. Here, Jasmin, 'Jasmin! go, dress the gentleman's 'head.' Aristus, blushing, yields at length to these gentle instances; and now behold the sage at his toilette!

The nimble hand of Jasmin disposes his locks with art; his physiognomy now displays itself; he admires the metamorphosis, and is scarce able to conceive it. 'What will they say on seeing me?' said he to himself; 'let them say what 'they please; but the philosopher has 'a good face.' He presents himself blown up with pride, but with an awkward and bashful air. 'Aye, now,' said Clarissa, 'you look handsome. There 'is nothing now but the colour of those 'cloaths that offends my eyes.'—'Ah! 'Madam, for the sake of my reputa-'tion, leave me at least this characte-'ristick of the gravity of my condition.'—'And what then, by your leave, is 'this chimerical condition which you 'have so much at heart? I approve 'very much of people's being wise; 'but in my opinion all sorts of colours 'are indifferent to wisdom. Is this 'chesnut of Mr. Guillaume more 'founded in nature than the sky-blue 'or rose-colour? By what caprice is 'it that you imitate in your garments 'the husk of the chesnut, rather than 'the leaf of the rose or the tuft of the 'lily with which the spring is crowned? 'Ah! for my part, I confess to you 'that the rose-colour charms my sight: 'that colour has something, I know 'not what, of softness in it, which goes 'to my very soul, and I should think 'you the handsomest creature living in 'a suit of rose-colour.'—'Rose colour, 'Madam! O heavens! a philosopher 'in rose-colour!'—'Yes, Sir, a very 'rose-colour: what would you have? It 'is my weakness. By writing to Paris di-'rectly, you may have it by to-morrow 'afternoon, can you not?'—'What, 'Madam?'—'A suit for the country, 'of the colour of my ribbands.'—'No, 'Madam, it is impossible.'—'Pardon 'me, nothing is easier; the workmen 'need only be up all night.'—'Alas! 'it is of mighty consequence what the 'time is which they are to employ in 'rendering me ridiculous! Consider, I 'beseech you, that such an extravagance 'as this would ruin my reputation.'—'Well, Sir, when you shall have lost 'that reputation, you will gain ano-'ther, and it is odds that you will 'gain by the exchange.'—'I protest to 'you, Madam, that it is shocking to 'me to displease you, but——' 'But! 'you put me out of all patience; I do 'not love to be thwarted. It is very 'strange,' continued she, in a tone of displeasure, 'that you should refuse me 'a trifle. The importance you give it 'teaches me to take care of myself in 'matters that are more serious.' At these words she quitted the room, leaving the philosopher confounded that so tri-

'fling

fling an incident ſhould deſtroy his hopes. ‘ Roſe-colour!’ ſaid he, ‘ roſe-colour! ‘ how ridiculous! what a contraſt! ſhe ‘ will have it ſo; I muſt ſubmit.’ And the philoſopher wrote for the cloaths.

‘ You are obeyed, Madam,’ ſaid he to Clariſſa, accoſting her. ‘ Has it coſt ‘ you much?’ demanded ſhe with a ſmile of diſdain. ‘ A great deal, Madam, ‘ more than I can expreſs: but, in ‘ ſhort, you would have it ſo.’ All the company admired the philoſopher's head. Madam Preſident, above all, ſwore by the great gods, that ſhe had never ſeen any man's head ſo well dreſſed before. Ariſtus thanked her for ſo flattering a compliment. ‘ Compliments!’ reſumed ſhe, ‘ compliments! I never ‘ make any. They are the falſe coin of ‘ the world.’—‘ Nothing was ever better conceived,’ cried the ſage: ‘ that deſerves to be ſet down in writing.’ They perceived that Madam Preſident was now beginning the attack, and they left them to themſelves. ‘ You think, then,’ ſaid ſhe to him, ‘ that nobody but yourſelf ‘ can make ſentences? I am a philoſopher too, ſuch as you ſee me.’—‘ You, Madam! and of what ſect! A ‘ Stoick, or an Epicurean?’—‘ Oh, take ‘ my word for it! the name is nothing. ‘ I have ten thouſand crowns a year, ‘ which I ſpend with gaiety; I have ‘ good Champagne, which I drink with ‘ my friends; I enjoy a good ſtate of ‘ health; I do what I pleaſe, and leave ‘ every one to live after their own manner. There's a ſect for you!’—‘ It ‘ is well done, and exactly what Epicurus taught.’—‘ Oh! I declare to you ‘ I was taught nothing: all this comes ‘ of my own ſelf. For theſe twenty ‘ years I have read nothing but the liſt ‘ of my wines and the bill of fare of ‘ my ſupper.’—‘ Why, upon that footing, you muſt be the happieſt woman ‘ in the world.’—‘ Happy! not entirely ſo: I want a huſband of my own ‘ way of thinking. My preſident was ‘ a beaſt; good for nothing but the bar: ‘ he underſtood the law, and that was ‘ all. I want a man who knows how ‘ to love me, and who would employ ‘ himſelf about me alone.’—‘ You may ‘ find a thouſand, Madam.’—‘ Oh! ‘ I want but one; but I would have ‘ him be a good one. Birth, fortune, ‘ all that is perfectly indifferent to me; ‘ I attach myſelf only to the man.’—‘ Indeed, Madam, you aſtoniſh me: ‘ you are the firſt woman in whom I ‘ have found any principles; but is it ‘ preciſely a huſband that you want?’—‘ Yes, Sir, a huſband who ſhall be mine ‘ in all forms. Theſe lovers are all ‘ rogues, who deceive us, and who forſake us without leaving us room to ‘ complain: whereas a huſband is ours ‘ in the face of the world; and if mine ‘ ſhould deſert me, I ſhould like to be ‘ able to go, with my title in my hand, ‘ and in all honour and honeſty give an ‘ hundred ſlaps on the face to the inſolent huſſy that ſhould have taken him ‘ from me.’—‘ Very good, Madam! ‘ very good! the right of property is an ‘ inviolable right. But do you know ‘ that there are very few ſouls like ‘ yours? What courage, what vigour!’—‘ Oh, I have as much as a lionneſs. ‘ I know I am not handſome; but ten ‘ thouſand crowns a year, made over ‘ on the wedding-day, are worth all the ‘ prettineſſes of a Lucinda or Clariſſa; ‘ and though love be rare in this age, ‘ one ought to have it for ten thouſand ‘ crowns.’ This converſation brought them back again to the houſe, at the very inſtant that word was brought that ſupper was ready.

Ariſtus appeared plunged in ſerious reflections; he weighed the advantages and inconveniencies that might attend his marrying the lady preſident, and calculated how much longer a woman of fifty could live, ſwallowing every evening a bottle of Champagne. A diſpute which aroſe between Madam de Ponval and Clariſſa, drew him out of his reverie. Doris gave riſe to the diſpute. ‘ Is ‘ it poſſible,’ ſaid ſhe, ‘ that Madam ‘ Preſident ſhould have been able to ſupport for a whole hour a *tête-à-tête* ‘ with a philoſopher; ſhe who falls a ‘ yawning the moment one talks to her ‘ of reaſon!’—‘ Truly,’ replied Madam de Ponval, ‘ it is becauſe your reaſon has not common ſenſe: aſk this ‘ wiſe man, here, if mine be not good. ‘ We talked of the ſtate that ſuits an ‘ honeſt woman, and he agrees with me, ‘ that a good huſband is by much the ‘ beſt for her.’—‘ Oh, fie!’ cried Clariſſa, ‘ are we made to be ſlaves? and what ‘ becomes then of that freedom, which ‘ is the firſt of all goods?’ Cleon declaimed againſt this ſyſtem of freedom; he maintained, that the union of hearts was very different from a ſtate of ſlavery. Madam Preſident ſupported this opinion, and declared that ſhe could perceive no diſtinction between the love of

freedom, and the love of libertiniſm. 'May this glaſs of wine,' ſaid ſhe, 'be 'the laſt I ſhall drink, if I ever form 'the leaſt dependence on any man who 'ſhall not firſt have taken an oath that 'he will be only mine. All the reſt is 'but froth.'—'And there now,' ſaid Clariſſa, 'is the great mortification of 'marriage. Love, with it's freedom, 'loſes all it's delicacy.—Is it not ſo, 'Sir?' demanded ſhe of the philoſopher. —'Why, Madam, I have thought as 'you do; yet it muſt be confeſſed that 'if freedom has it's charms, it has alſo 'it's dangers, it's rocks: happy diſpo-'ſitions are ſo great a good, and incon-'ſtancy is ſo natural to man, that the 'moment he feels a laudable inclina-'tion, he acts prudently in depriving 'himſelf of the fatal power of chang-'ing.'—'Do you hear him, ladies? 'Theſe men for my money! no flattery! 'this is what is called a philoſopher. 'Try to ſeduce him if you can: for my 'part I retire quite charmed.—Adieu, 'philoſopher, I want reſt; I did not 'ſhut my eyes all laſt night, and I long 'to be aſleep, in order to have the plea-'ſure of dreaming.' She accompanied this adieu with an amorous glance, twinkling with Champagne. 'Ladies,' ſaid Lucinda, 'did you mind that look?' —'Surely,' replied Doris, 'ſhe is diſ-'tracted for Ariſtus; that is clear.'— 'For me, Madam! you do not think 'ſo; our taſtes, I believe, and our tem-'pers, are not made for each other. I 'drink little, I ſwear ſtill leſs, and I do 'not love to be confined.'—'Ah, Sir, 'ten thouſand crowns a year!'—'Ten 'thouſand crowns a year, Madam, are 'an inſult when mentioned to perſons 'like myſelf.'

Theſe words were repeated the next day to Madam the preſident. 'Oh! 'the inſolent wretch!' ſaid ſhe, 'I am 'piqued: you ſhall ſee him at my feet.' I paſs ſlightly over the nocturnal reflections of the ſage Ariſtus. A good coach, a commodious apartment very far from my lady's, and the beſt cook in Paris; ſuch was his plan in life. 'Our philoſophers,' ſaid he, 'perhaps 'will murmur a little. However, an 'ugly woman has in it ſomething phi-'loſophical; at leaſt, they will not ſu-'ſpect that I have purſued the pleaſures 'of ſenſuality.'

The day of his triumph arrives, and the ſuit of roſe-colour along with it: he views it, and bluſhes through vanity rather than ſhame. Cleon, however, came to ſee him, with the diſturbed air of one poſſeſſed; and after having caſt an eye of indignation on the preparations for his dreſſing; 'Sir,' ſaid he to him, 'if I had to do with a man of the 'world, I ſhould propoſe to him, by 'way of preface, to exchange a thruſt 'with me. But I am ſpeaking to a phi-'loſopher, and I come to aſſault him 'with no other arms than frankneſs 'and virtue.'—'What is the matter, 'then?' demanded the ſage, ſomewhat confounded at this preamble. 'I loved 'Clariſſa, Sir,' replied Cleon; 'ſhe loved 'me; we were going to be married. I 'know not what change is made all of 'a ſudden in her ſoul, but ſhe will not 'hear me ſpeak any more either of mar-'riage or of love. I had at firſt only 'ſome ſuſpicions concerning the cauſe; 'but this roſe-coloured ſuit confirms 'them. Roſe-colour is her paſſion; 'you adopt her colours: you are my 'rival.'—'I, Sir!'—'I cannot doubt 'it, and all the circumſtances that atteſt 'it croud themſelves on my imagina-'tion: your ſecret walks, your whiſ-'pers in the ear, looks and words that 'have eſcaped you, her hatred particu-'larly againſt Madam de Ponval, every 'thing betrays you, every thing ſerves 'to open my eyes. Hear, then, Sir, 'what I have to propoſe. One of us 'muſt give place: violence is an unjuſt 'method; generoſity will ſet us on 'good terms. I love, I idolize Cla-'riſſa; I had been happy but for you; 'I may ſtill be ſo: my aſſiduities, time, 'and your abſence, may bring her back 'to me. If, on the contrary, I muſt 'renounce her, you ſee one who will 'be driven to deſpair, and death will be 'my reſource. Judge, Ariſtus, whe-'ther your ſituation be the ſame. Con-'ſult yourſelf, and anſwer me. If the 'happineſs of your life depends on giv-'ing up your conqueſt to me, I require 'nothing, and I retire.'—'Go, Sir,' replied the philoſopher to him with a ſerene air, 'you ſhall never overcome 'Ariſtus in a point of generoſity; and 'whatever it may coſt me, I will prove 'to you that I merited this mark of 'eſteem.'

'At laſt,' ſaid he, when Cleon had left the room, 'here is an opportunity 'of ſhewing an heroical virtue. Ha, 'ha! you gentlemen of the world, you 'will learn to admire us.... They will 'not know it perhaps.... Oh, yes;

'Clariſſa

'Clariſſa will communicate it in confi-
'dence to her friends; theſe will tell it
'again to others; the adventure is un-
'common enough to make a noiſe: after
'all, the worſt that can happen will be
'to publiſh it myſelf. It is neceſſary
'that a good deed ſhould be known,
'and it matters not which way: our
'age has need of theſe examples; they
'are leſſons for mankind.... How-
'ever, let me not become a dupe to my
'own virtues, and diſpoſſeſs myſelf of
'Clariſſa before I am ſure of Madam
'Preſident. Let me ſee what Cham-
'pagne and ſleep may have produced.'

While he reflected thus on his conduct, the philoſopher dreſſed himſelf. The induſtrious Jaſmin ſurpaſſed himſelf in dreſſing his head: the roſe-coloured ſuit was put on before the looking-glaſs with a ſecret complacency, and the ſage ſallied out all radiant to viſit Madam Preſident, who received him with an exclamation of ſurprize. But paſſing all of a ſudden from joy to confuſion, 'I perceive,' ſaid ſhe, 'Cla-
'riſſa's favourite colour; you are at-
'tentive to ſtudy her taſte. Go, Ariſ-
'tus, go and avail yourſelf of the trou-
'ble you take to pleaſe her: it will,
'no doubt, have it's reward.'—'My
'natural ingenuouſneſs,' replied the philoſopher, 'permits me not to con-
'ceal from you, that in the choice of
'this colour I have followed only her
'caprice. I will do more, Madam; I
'will confeſs that my firſt deſire was to
'pleaſe in her eyes. The wiſeſt is not
'without weakneſs; and when a wo-
'man prejudices us by flattering atten-
'tions, it is difficult not to be touched
'with them; but how my attachment
'is weakened! I acknowledge it with
'reproach to myſelf, Madam, and you
'ought alſo to reproach yourſelf for it.'
—'Ah! philoſopher, why is this not
'true? But this roſe-colour confounds
'all my ideas.'—'Very well, Madam,
'I aſſumed it with regret; I now go to
'quit it with joy; and if my firſt ſim-
'plicity——' 'No, ſtay, I think you
'charming. But what do I ſay? Ah,
'how happy are people in being ſo hand-
'ſome! Ariſtus, why am I not beauti-
'ful!'—'What, Madam! do not you
'know that uglineſs and beauty exiſt
'only in opinion? Nothing is hand-
'ſome, nothing ugly in itſelf. A beau-
'ty in one country is far from being
'reckoned a beauty in another; ſo many
'men, ſo many minds.'—'You flatter
'me,' ſaid Madam Preſident with a childiſh baſhfulneſs, and pretending to bluſh; 'but I know, alas! but too well,
'that I have nothing beautiful in me,
'except my ſoul.'—'Very well, and
'is not the ſupreme beauty the only
'charm worthy to touch the heart?'—
'Ah, philoſopher! believe me, that
'beauty alone has few charms.'—'It
'has few, no doubt, for the vulgar;
'but to repeat it once more, you are not
'reduced to that. Is there nothing in
'a noble air, a commanding look, and
'an expreſſive countenance? And then,
'as to majeſty, is ſhe not the queen of the
'Graces?'—'And for this plumpneſs
'of mine, what ſay you to that?'—
'Ah, Madam, this plumpneſs, which
'is reckoned an exceſs among us, is a
'beauty in Aſia. Do you think, for
'example, that the Turks have no ſkill
'in women? Well, then, all thoſe ele-
'gant figures which we admire at Paris
'would not even be admitted into the
'Grand Signor's ſeraglio; and the
'Grand Signior is no fool. In a word,
'a roſy ſtate of health is the mother of
'the pleaſures, and plumpneſs is it's
'ſymbol.'—'You will bring me pre-
'ſently to believe that my fat is not
'unbecoming. But for this noſe of
'mine, noſe without end, which runs out
'before my face.'—'Why, good God,
'what do you complain of? Were not
'the noſes of the Roman matrons noſes
'without end? Obſerve all the ancient
'buſts.'—'But at leaſt they had not
'this great mouth, and ſuch blubber-
'lips?'—'Thick lips, Madam, are the
'charm of the American beauties: they
'are, as it were, two cuſhions, on which
'ſoft and tender pleaſure takes it's re-
'poſe. As to a wide mouth, I know
'nothing that gives the countenance
'more openneſs and gaiety.'—'True,
'when the teeth are fine; but unhap-
'pily——' 'Go to Siam, there fine
'teeth are vulgar, and it is a ſcandal
'even to have any. Thus all that is
'called beauty depends on the caprice
'of mankind, and the only real beauty
'is the object which has charmed us.'
—'Shall I be yours then, my dear phi-
'loſopher?' demanded ſhe, hiding her face behind her fan. 'Pardon me,
'Madam, if I heſitate. My delicacy
'renders me timid, and I profeſs a diſin-
'tereſtedneſs not yet ſufficiently known
'to you, to be above ſuſpicion. You
'have talked to me of ten thouſand
'crowns a year, and that circumſtance

'makes me tremble.'—'Go, Sir, you 'are too juſt to impute to me ſuch 'mean ſuſpicions; it is Clariſſa that 'detains you; I ſee your evaſions; 'leave me.'—'Yes, I leave you, to go 'and acquit myſelf of the promiſe I 'have juſt made to Cleon. He was 'diſmiſſed, he complained to me of it, 'and I have promiſed him to engage 'Clariſſa to give him her hand. Now 'believe that I love her,'—'Is it poſ-'ſible? Oh, you charm me, and I 'cannot ſtand this ſacrifice. Go and 'ſee her, I wait you here; do not let 'me languiſh: this very evening we 'will leave the country,'

'I wonder at myſelf,' ſaid he as he was going off, 'for having the courage 'to marry her. She is frightful; but 'ſhe is rich.' He comes to Clariſſa, finds her at her toilette, and Cleon along with her, who aſſumes, on ſeeing him, a dejected air. 'O! the handſome 'ſuit!' cried ſhe. 'Come this way, 'that I may ſee you. It is quite delici-'ous, is it not, Cleon? It was my choice.' —'I ſee it plainly, Madam,' replied Cleon with a melancholy air. 'Let us 'leave off this trifling,' interrupted the philoſopher; 'I am come to clear my-'ſelf of a crime of which I am accuſed, 'and to fulfil a ſerious duty. Cleon 'loves you, you love him; he has loſt 'your heart, he tells me, and that I am 'the cauſe of it.'—'Yes, Sir; and why 'all this myſtery? I have juſt been 'making a declaration of it to him.'—'And I, Madam, declare to you that I 'will never make unhappy a worthy 'man, who merits you, and dies if he 'loſes you. I love you as much as 'he can love you: it is a confeſſion 'which I am not aſhamed to make; but 'his inclination has been more rooted 'by the unconquerable force of habit 'than mine, and perhaps alſo I ſhall 'find in myſelf reſources which he has 'not in himſelf.'—'O, the wonderful 'man!' cried Cleon, embracing the philoſopher. 'What ſhall I ſay to you? 'You confound me.'—'There is no 'mighty matter in all this,' replied the philoſopher with humility; 'your gene-'roſity ſet the example, I only imitate 'you.'—'Come, ladies,' ſaid Clariſſa to Lucinda and Doris, whom ſhe ſaw ap-pear at that inſtant; 'come and be wit-'neſſes of the triumph of philoſophy. 'Ariſtus reſigns me to his rival, and 'ſacrifices his love for me to the hap-'pineſs of a man he hardly knows.' Their aſtoniſhment and admiration were acted up to the life; and Ariſtus, taking Clariſſa's hand, which he put into Cleon's, ſnuffed up in abundance, with a ſupercilious modeſty, the incenſe of adoration. 'Be happy,' ſaid he to them, 'and ceaſe your aſtoniſhment at 'an effort, which however painful, car-'ries it's recompence along with it. 'What would a philoſopher be, if vir-'tue were not all in all with him?' At theſe words he retired, as it were, to withdraw himſelf from his glory.

Madam Preſident waited the philoſo-pher's coming. 'Is it done, then?' de-manded ſhe of him. 'Yes, Madam, 'they are united; I am now my own 'and yours.'—'Oh, I triumph; you 'are mine. Come here then, that I 'may enchain you.'—'Ah, Madam!' ſaid he, falling at her knees, 'what do-'minion you have acquired over me! 'O Socrates! O Plato! what is become 'of your diſciple? Do you yet know 'him in this ſtate of debaſement!' While he ſpoke thus, Madam Preſident took a roſe-coloured ribband, which ſhe bound about the ſage's neck, and imi-tating Lucinda in the Oracle, with the moſt comical infantine air in the world called him by the name of *Charmer*. 'Good Heaven! what would become 'of me, if any body knew?—Ah, Ma-'dam,' ſaid he, 'let us fly, let us baniſh 'ourſelves from a ſociety that watches 'us; ſpare me the humiliation?'—'What is it you call humiliation? I 'muſt have you glory in their preſence 'that you are mine, that you wear 'my chain.' At theſe words the door opens, and Madam Preſident riſes from 'her chair, holding the philoſopher in a 'ſtring. 'See here,' ſaid ſhe to the company, 'ſee here this proud man, who 'ſighs at my feet for the beauty of my 'purſe; I deliver him up to you, I have 'played my part.' At this picture the roof reſounded with the name of *Charmer*, and innumerable peals of laughter. Ariſtus, tearing his hair, and rending his cloaths with rage, launched out into re-proaches on the perfidy of women, and went off to compoſe a book againſt the age, in which he roundly aſſerted, that there was no ſage but himſelf.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

MORAL TALES.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

THE BAD MOTHER.

AMONG the monſtrous productions of Nature may be reckoned the heart of a mother who loves one of her children to the excluſion of all the reſt. I do not mean an enlightened tenderneſs, which diſtinguiſhes among the young plants which it cultivates, that which yields the beſt returns to it's early care; I ſpeak of a blind fondneſs, frequently excluſive, ſometimes jealous, which creates an idol and victims amid the little innocents brought into the world, for each of whom we are equally bound to ſoften the burden of life. Of this error, ſo common and ſo ſhameful to human nature, I am now going to give an example.

In one of our maritime provinces, M. de Carandon, an intendant, who had rendered himſelf reſpectable by his ſeverity in repreſſing grievances, making it a principle to favour the weak and controul the ſtrong, died poor, and almoſt inſolvent. He had left behind him a daughter, whom nobody would marry, becauſe ſhe had much pride, little beauty, and no fortune. At laſt, a rich and honeſt merchant made his addreſſes to her, out of reſpect to the memory of her father. 'He has done us ſo many 'good offices,' ſaid the worthy Corée, this was the merchant's name, 'it is 'but juſt that ſome of us ſhould repay 'them to the daughter.' With theſe thoughts Corée offered himſelf in an humble manner; and Mademoiſelle Carandon, with a great deal of reluctance, conſented to give him her hand, on condition that ſhe ſhould maintain an abſolute authority in his houſe. The good man's reſpect for the memory of the father extended even to the daughter; he conſulted her as his oracle; and if at any time he happened to differ in opinion from her, ſhe had nothing to do but to utter theſe ſilencing expreſſions, 'The late M. de Carandon, my 'father ——' Corée never waited for her to conclude, before he confeſſed himſelf in the wrong.

He died rather young, and left her two children, of which ſhe had condeſcended to permit him to be the father. On his death-bed he thought it his duty to regulate the partition of his effects; but M. de Carandon held it, as ſhe told him, for a maxim, that in order to retain children under the dependence of a mother, it was neceſſary to render her the diſpenſer of their effects. This law was the rule of Corée's will; and his inheritance was left in the hands of his wife, with the fatal right of diſtributing it to her children as ſhe ſhould think proper. Of theſe two children the eldeſt was her delight; not that he was handſomer, or of a more happy diſpoſition, than the younger, but becauſe ſhe had ran ſome danger of her life in bringing him into the world; he had firſt made her experience the pains and joy of child-bed; he had poſſeſſed himſelf of her tenderneſs, which he alſo ſeemed to have exhauſted; ſhe had, in ſhort, all the bad reaſons that a bad mother could have for loving only him.

Little Jemmy was the rejected child: his mother hardly vouchſafed to ſee him, and never ſpoke to him but to chide him.

him. The poor child, intimidated, durſt not look up before her, nor anſwer her without trembling. He had, ſhe ſaid, his father's diſpoſition, a vulgar ſoul, and the air of ſuch kind of folks.

As to the eldeſt, whom ſhe had taken care to render as headſtrong, diſobedient, and humourſome as poſſible, he was gentility itſelf: his obſtinacy was called greatneſs of ſpirit; his humours, exceſs of ſenſibility. She was delighted to ſee that he would never give up a point when he was in the right; and you muſt know that he was never in the wrong. She was eternally declaring that he knew his own good, and that he had the honour of reſembling the ſweet Madam his mamma. This eldeſt boy, who was ſtyled M. De l'Etang, (for it was not thought right to leave him the name of Corée) had maſters of all ſorts: the leſſons they ſet were for him alone, but little Jemmy reaped the fruit of them; inſomuch, that at the end of a few years Jemmy knew all that they had taught M. De l'Etang, who knew nothing at all.

The good women, who make a practice of attributing to children all the little wit they have themſelves, and who ruminate all morning on the pretty things they are to ſay in the day, had inade the mother, whoſe weakneſs they were well acquainted with, believe that her eldeſt ſon was a prodigy. The maſters, leſs complaiſant, or leſs artful, while they complained of the indocility and inattention of this favourite, were boundleſs in their encomiums on Jemmy: they did not abſolutely ſay that M. De l'Etang was a blockhead, but they ſaid that little Jemmy had the genius of an angel. The mother's vanity was wounded; and out of an injuſtice, which one would not believe exiſted in nature, if this vice of mothers were leſs in faſhion, ſhe redoubled her averſion to the little wretch, became jealous of his improvement, and reſolved to take away from her ſpoiled child the humiliation of a compariſon.

A very affecting adventure awakened, however, in her, the ſentiments of nature; but this retort upon herſelf only humbled, without correcting her. Jemmy was ten years of age, M. De l'Etang near fifteen, when ſhe fell dangerouſly ill. The eldeſt employed himſelf about his pleaſures, and very little about his mother's health. It is the puniſhment of fooliſh mothers to love unnatural children. However, ſhe began to grow uneaſy; Jemmy perceived it, and his little heart was ſeized with grief and fear: the impatience to ſee his mother grew too ſtrong for him to conceal. They had accuſtomed him never to appear but when he was called; but at laſt his tenderneſs gave him courage. He ſeized the inſtant when the chamber-door was half open, entered ſilent and with trembling ſteps, and approached his mother's bed. 'Is it you, my ſon?' ſaid ſhe. 'No, mamma, it is Jemmy.' This natural and overwhelming anſwer penetrated with ſhame and grief the ſoul of this unjuſt woman; but a few careſſes from her bad ſon ſoon reſtored him to his full aſcendancy; and Jemmy, in the end, was neither the better beloved, nor reckoned the more worthy to be ſo.

Scarce was Madam Corée recovered, when ſhe reſumed the deſign of baniſhing him her houſe: her pretence was, that M. De l'Etang, being naturally lively, was too ſuſceptible of diſſipation to have a companion in his ſtudies; and the impertinent prepoſſeſſions of the maſters for the child, who was the moſt humble and fawning with them, might eaſily diſcourage the other, whoſe ſpirit being higher, and leſs tractable, required more management: it was her pleaſure, therefore, that l'Etang ſhould be the only object of their cares, and ſhe got rid of the unfortunate Jemmy by exiling him to a college.

At ſixteen L'Etang quitted his maſters in the mathematicks, phyſicks, muſick, &c. juſt as he had taken them: he began his exerciſes, which he performed much in the ſame manner as he had done his ſtudies; and at twenty he appeared in the world with the ſelf-ſufficiency of a coxcomb, who has heard of every thing, but reflected on nothing.

Jemmy, on his part, had gone through his ſtudies; and his mother was quite wearied with the commendations they gave him. 'Well then,' ſaid ſhe, 'ſince 'he is ſo wiſe, he will ſucceed in the 'church; he has nothing to do but to 'take to that courſe of life.'

Unfortunately, Jemmy had no inclination for the eccleſiaſtick ſtate; he came, therefore, to intreat his mother to diſpenſe with his entering into it. 'You imagine, then,' ſaid ſhe to him with a cold and ſevere air, 'that I have 'enough to maintain you in the world?

'I aſſure

'I assure you I have not. Your father's 'fortune was not so considerable as was 'imagined; it will scarce be sufficient 'to settle your elder brother. For your 'part, you have only to consider whe-'ther you will run the career of bene-'fices or of arms; whether you will 'have your head shaven or broken; in 'short, whether you will take a band, 'or a lieutenancy of infantry: this is 'all that I can do for you.' Jemmy answered her with respect, that there were less violent courses to be taken by the son of a merchant. At these words Mad. de Carandon was near dying with grief, for having brought into the world a son so little worthy of her, and forbid him her sight. Young Corée, distressed at having incurred his mother's anger, retired sighing, and resolved to try whether Fortune would be less cruel to him than Nature. He learned that a vessel was on the point of sailing for the Antilles, whether he had a design of repairing. He writ to his mother to ask her consent, her blessing, and a parcel of goods. The two first articles were amply granted him, but the latter very sparingly.

His mother, too happy in being rid of him, wanted to see him before his departure, and, while she embraced him, bestowed on him a few tears. His brother also had the goodness to wish him a good voyage. These were the first caresses he had ever received from his relations: his sensible heart was penetrated with them; yet he durst not ask them to write to him; but he had a fellow-collegian, by whom he was tenderly beloved, and he conjured him at parting, now and then to send him news of his mother.

She was now only employed in the care of settling her favourite son. He declared for the robe: they obtained him a dispensation from it's studies; and he was soon admitted into the sanctuary of the laws. Nothing remained wanting but an advantageous marriage: they proposed a rich heiress; but they required of the widow the settlement of her fortune. She had the weakness to consent to it, scarce reserving to herself sufficient to live decently; well assured that her son's fortune would be always at her disposal.

At the age of twenty-five, M. De l'Etang found himself a dapper little counsellor, neglecting his wife as much as his mother, taking great care of his own person, and paying very little regard to the bar. As it was genteel for a husband to have somebody besides his wife, L'Etang thought it his duty to set up for a man of intrigue. A young girl, whom he ogled at the play, returned his invitations, received him at her lodgings with a great deal of politeness, told him he was charming, which he very readily believed, and in a short time eased him of a pocket-book with ten thousand crowns. But as there is no such thing as eternal love, this perjured beauty quitted him at the expiration of three months for a young English lord, equally foolish, and more magnificent. L'Etang, who could not conceive how they could dismiss such a person as himself, resolved to avenge himself by taking a mistress still more celebrated, and loading her with favours. His new conquest raised him a thousand rivals; and when he compared himself with a crowd of adorers who sighed for her in vain, he had the pleasure of thinking himself more amiable, as he found himself more happy. However, having perceived that he was not without uneasiness, she was desirous of convincing him, that there was nothing in the world which she was not resolved to quit for him, and proposed, for the sake of avoiding impertinence, that they should go together to Paris to forget all the world, and live only for each other. L'Etang was transported at this mark of tenderness. Every thing is got ready for the journey; they set out, they arrive, and chuse their retreat in the neighbourhood of the Palais Royal. Fatima (that was the name of this beauty) asked and obtained, without difficulty, a coach to take the air. L'Etang was surprized at the number of friends that he found in this good city. These friends had never seen him; but his merit attracted them in crowds. Fatima received none but L'Etang's company, and he was always very sure of his friends and of her. This charming woman had, however, one weakness: she believed in dreams. One night she had had one which could not, she said, be effaced from her memory. L'Etang wanted to know this dream which engaged her attention so seriously. 'I dreamed,' said she, 'that I was in a delicious apartment. 'In it was a damask bed of three diffe-'rent colours, with tapestry and sofas 'suited

'suited to this superb bed; pannels 'dazzling with gold, polished cabinets, 'porcelaine of Japan, China monkies, 'the prettiest in the world; but all this 'was nothing. A toilette was ready 'set out; I drew near it; what did I 'see? My heart beats at it: a casket 'of diamonds; and what diamonds! 'the most beautiful aigrette, the finest 'ear-rings, the handsomest esclavage, 'and a river without end. I am sure, 'Sir, something very extraordinary will 'happen to me. This dream has af-'fected me very strongly, and my 'dreams never deceive me.'

It was in vain that M. De l'Etang employed all his eloquence to persuade her that dreams signified nothing: she maintained that this dream did signify something; and, at length, he feared lest some of his rivals should propose to realize it. He was under a necessity, therefore, of capitulating; and, except in some few circumstances, resolved to accomplish it himself. We may easily judge, that this experiment did not cure her of dreaming: she took a delight in it, and dreamed so often, that even the fortune of good Master Corée became hardly any thing more than a dream. M. De l'Etang's young wife, to whom this journey had not been very agreeable, demanded to be separated from the fortunes of a husband, who abandoned her; and her portion, which he was obliged to restore, put him still less at his ease.

Play is a resource. L'Etang pretended to excel at piquet; his friends, who made up a common purse, all betted for him, while one of them played against him. Every time that he threw out, 'Faith,' said one of the betters, 'that 'is well played!'—'There is no play-'ing better,' said another. In short, M. De l'Etang played the best in the world; but he never had the aces. While they insensibly stripped him, the faithful Fatima, who perceived his decline, dreamed one night that she quitted him, and left him the next day: however, as it is mortifying to fall off, he piqued himself upon his honour, and would not abate any thing of his grandeur, so that in a few years he was ruined.

He was now at his last shifts, when the good lady his mother, who had not managed her own reserve better, wrote to him to desire some money. He returned her answer, that he was very sorry; but that, far from being able to send her any relief, he stood in need of it himself. The alarm was already spread among their creditors, and the question was, who should first seize the ruins of their fortune. 'What have I 'done!' said the distracted mother; 'I 'have stripped myself of all for a son 'who has squandered every thing.'

In the mean time, what became of the unfortunate Jemmy?—Jemmy, with a good understanding, the best heart, the handsomest figure in the world, and his little venture, was happily arrived at St. Domingo. It is well known how easy a Frenchman of good morals, and a good person, finds it to establish himself in the isles. The name of Corée, his own good sense and prudence, soon acquired him the confidence of the inhabitants. With the assistances that were offered him, he purchased himself a settlement, cultivated it, and rendered it flourishing; trade, which was then very brisk, enriched him in a short time, and in the space of five years he was become the object of the jealousy of the handsomest and richest widows and damsels of the colony. But, alas! his fellow-collegian, who till that time had given him none but the most satisfactory news, now sent him word that his brother was ruined, and that his mother, abandoned by every body, was driven to the most dreadful extremities. This fatal letter was bedewed with tears. 'Ah, my poor mother!' cried he, 'I 'will fly to your relief.' He would not trust his charge to any body. Accident, infidelity, neglect, or delay, might deprive her of the assistance sent by her son, and leave her to perish in indigence and despair. 'Nothing ought 'to retain a son,' said he to himself, 'when the honour and life of a mother 'are at stake.'

With these sentiments, Corée was only employed in the care of rendering his riches portable. He sold all his possessions, and this sacrifice cost him nothing; but he could not but feel some regret for a more precious treasure, which he left in America. Lucella, the young widow of an old coloniſt, who had left her immense riches, had cast upon Corée one of those looks which seem to penetrate to the bottom of the soul, and to unravel it's character; one of those looks which decide the opinion, determine the inclination, and the sudden and con-

confuſed effect of which is generally taken for a ſympathetick emotion. She had imagined ſhe ſaw in this young man every thing that could render a virtuous and ſenſible woman happy; and her love for him had not waited for reflection to give it birth and diſcover itſelf. Corée, on his ſide, had diſtinguiſhed her among her rivals, as the moſt worthy of captivating the heart of a wiſe and virtuous man. Lucella, with a figure the moſt noble and intereſting; an air the moſt animated, and yet the moſt modeſt; a brown complexion, but freſher than the roſe; a hair of the blackneſs of the ebony, and teeth of a dazzling whiteneſs and enamel; the ſtature and gait of one of Diana's nymphs; the ſmile and look of the companions of Venus; Lucella, with all theſe charms, was endowed with that greatneſs of ſpirit, that loftineſs of temper, that juſtneſs in her ideas, that rectitude in her ſentiments, which make us ſay, though not with the greateſt propriety, that ſuch a woman has the ſoul of a man. It was not one of Lucella's principles to be aſhamed of a virtuous inclination. Scarce had Corée confeſſed to her the choice of his heart, when he obtained from her, without evaſion, a like confeſſion, by way of reply; and their mutual inclination becoming more tender, in proportion as it became more conſidered, now wanted nothing but to be conſecrated at the altar. Some diſputes, concerning the inheritance of Lucella's huſband had retarded their happineſs. Theſe diſputes were on the point of being ſettled, when the letter from Corée's friend arrived, to tear him all at once from what he held deareſt in the world, except his mother. He repaired to the beauteous widow's, ſhewed her the letter from his friend, and aſked her advice. 'I flatter myſelf,' ſaid ſhe, 'that you have no need of it. Convert your wealth into mercantile commodities, haſten to the relief of your mother, pay your reſpects to all your friends, and come back again: my fortune awaits you. If I die, my will ſhall ſecure it to you; if I live, inſtead of a will, you know what right you will have over it.' Corée, ſtruck with gratitude and admiration, ſeized the hands of this generous woman, and bathed them with his tears; but as he was launching out in encomiums on her, 'Go,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'you are a child: entertain not the prejudices of Europe. The moment that a woman does any thing tolerably handſome, they cry her up as a prodigy, as if Nature had not given us a ſoul. Should you, in my place, now, be much pleaſed to ſee me in aſtoniſhment, and viewing in you, as a phenomenon, the pure emotion of a good heart?'—'Pardon me,' ſaid Corée, 'I ought to have expected it; but your principles, your ſentiments, the eaſe, the ſimplicity of your virtues, enchant me: I admire them without being amazed at them.'—'Go, my dear,' ſaid ſhe to him, ſaluting him; I am thine, ſuch as God has made me. Do your duty, and return as ſoon as poſſible.'

He embarks, and with him he embarks all his fortune. The paſſage was pretty favourable till they came towards the Canaries; but there their veſſel, purſued by a corſair from Morocco, was obliged to ſeek for ſafety in it's ſails. The corſair which chaſed them was on the point of joining them; and the captain, terrified at the danger of being boarded, was going to ſtrike to the pirate. 'Oh, my dear mother!' cried Corée, embracing the caſket in which were contained all his hopes, and then tearing his hair with grief and rage; 'No,' ſaid he, 'this barbarous African ſhall have my heart firſt.' Then addreſſing himſelf to the captain, the crew, and the affrighted paſſengers, 'What! my friends,' ſaid he, 'ſhall we ſurrender ourſelves like cowards? Shall we ſuffer this robber to carry us to Morocco, loaded with irons; and to ſell us like beaſts? Are we diſarmed? Are the people on board the enemy's ſhip invulnerable? or are they braver than we? They want to board us; let them! what then? we ſhall have them the nearer.' His courage reanimated their ſpirits; and the captain, embracing him, extolled him for having ſet the example.

Every thing is now got ready for defence; the corſair boards them; the veſſels daſh againſt each other; death flies on both ſides. In a ſhort time the two ſhips are covered with a cloud of ſmoke and fire. The cannonade ceaſes; day-light appears, and the ſword ſingles out it's victims. Corée, ſabre in hand, made a dreadful ſlaughter; the inſtant he ſaw an African throw himſelf on board, he ran up to him, and cleaved

him in two, crying out, 'Oh, my poor 'mother!' His fury was as that of the lioness defending her little ones; it was the last effort of nature in despair: and the gentlest, the most sensible heart that ever existed, was now become the most violent and bloody. The captain discerned him every where, his eye flashing fire, and his arm drenched in blood. 'This is not a mortal,' said he to his companions; 'it is a god who fights for 'us!' His example kindled their courage. He finds himself at length hand to hand with the chief of the barbarians. 'My God!' cried he, 'have pity of 'my mother!' and at these words, with a back-handed blow, he let out the pirate's bowels. From this moment the victory was decisive: the few who were left of the crew of the corsair begged their lives, and were put in irons. Corée's vessel, with her booty, arrives at length on the coast of France; and this worthy son, without allowing himself one night's repose, repairs with his treasure to his unhappy mother. He finds her on the brink of the grave, and in a state more dreadful than death itself; stripped of all relief, and in the care of one man-servant, who, disgusted at suffering the indigence to which she was reduced, paid her, with regret, the last duties of an humiliating pity. The shame of her situation had induced her to forbid this servant from admitting any person, except the priest and the charitable physician who sometimes visited her. Corée asks to see her, and is refused.

'Tell my name,' said he to the servant. 'And what is your name?'—'Jemmy.' The servant approaches the bed. 'A stranger,' says he, 'ask 'to see you, Madam.'—'Alas! and 'who is this stranger?'—'He says that 'his name is Jemmy.' At this name her heart was so violently agitated, that she was near expiring. 'Ah, my son!' said she in a faint voice, and lifting upon him her dying eye-lids. 'Ah, my 'son, at what a moment are you re'turned to see your mother! Your 'hand will soon close her eyes.' What was the grief of this pious and tender child, to see that mother whom he had left in the bosom of luxury and opulence, to see her now in a bed surrounded with rags, the very description of which would make the stomach rise, if it were permitted me to give it. 'Oh, my mo'ther!' cried he, throwing himself upon this bed of woe: his sobs choaked his voice, and the rivers of tears with which he bathed the bosom of his expiring mother, were for a long time the only expression of his grief and love. 'Hea'ven punishes me,' replied she, 'for 'having loved too much an unnatural 'son; for having——' He interrupted her: 'All is atoned for, my dear 'mother,' said this virtuous young man; 'live: fortune has loaded me 'with her favours; I come to pour 'them into the lap of Nature; it is for 'you that they are given me. Live! I 'have enough to make you love life.'—'Ah! my dear child, if I have any 'desire to live, it is to expiate my in'justice; it is to love a son of whom I 'was not worthy; a son whom I have 'deprived of his inheritance.' At these words she covered her face, as unworthy to see the light. 'Ah, Ma'dam!' cried he, pressing her in his arms, 'deprive me not of the sight of 'my mother. I am come across the 'seas to seek and relieve her!' At this instant arrive the priest and physician. 'See there,' said she, 'my 'child, the only comforters that Hea'ven has left me: without their charity 'I should now be no more.' Corée embraces them, bursting into tears. 'My friends!' says he to them; 'my 'benefactors! what do I not owe you! 'but for you I should no longer have 'had a mother: go on, recal her to 'life. I am rich: I am come to make 'her happy. Redouble your cares, 'your consolations, your assistances: 'restore her to me.' The physician prudently saw that this situation was too violent for the sick lady. 'Go, 'Sir,' said he to Corée; 'trust in our 'zeal, and think of nothing but to 'provide her a convenient and whole'some lodging; to which the lady shall 'this evening be removed.'

Change of air, proper nourishment, or rather the revolution created by joy, and the calm which succeeded it, insensibly re-animated the organs of life. A profound chagrin had been the ground of the disease; consolation was the remedy. Corée learned that his unhappy brother had just perished in misery. I draw a veil over the frightful picture of his death, which he had but too justly merited. They kept the knowledge of it from a feeling mother, who was as yet

too

too weak to support, without expiring, a new attack of grief. She learned it at last, when her health was better established. All the wounds of her heart were now opened afresh, and the maternal tears trickled from her eyes. But Heaven, while it took away from her a son unworthy of her tenderness, restored her one who had merited it by every sensible and touching tie of nature and virtue. He confided to her the desires of his soul; which were to embrace at once his mother and his wife. Madam Corée seized with joy the opportunity of going over with her son to America. A city, filled with her follies and misfortunes, was to her an odious place of residence; and the moment in which she embarked restored her a new life. Heaven, which protects piety, granted them a favourable passage. Lucella received the mother of her lover as she would have received her own. Hymen made of these lovers the happiest couple, and their days still roll on in that unalterable peace, in those pure and serene pleasures, which are the portion of virtue.

THE GOOD MOTHER.

THE care of a mother for her children is of all duties the most religiously observed. This universal sentiment governs all the passions; it prevails even over the love of life. It renders the fiercest of animals sensible and gentle, the most sluggish indefatigable, the most timid courageous to excess: not one of them loses sight of it's little ones, till the moment that their care becomes useless. We see only among mankind the odious examples of a too early desertion.

In the midst of a world, where vice, ingenious to disguise itself, takes a thousand seducing forms; it is there, above all, that the most happy disposition requires to be enlightened without ceasing. The more shelves there are, and the more they are hidden, the more need has the frail bark of innocence and happiness of a prudent pilot. What would have been, for example, the fate of Miss Troëne, if Heaven had not made expressly for her a mother, who was one of ten thousand.

This respectable widow had devoted to the education of an only daughter the most agreeable years of her life. These were her reflections at the age of five and twenty.

'I have lost my husband,' said she; 'I have nothing but my daughter and 'myself: shall I live for myself, or 'shall I live for her? The world smiles 'upon me, and pleases me still: but 'if I give myself up to it, I abandon 'my daughter, and hazard her happi-'ness and my own. Suppose that a 'life of noise and dissipation has all 'the charms that are attributed to it, 'how long may I be able to taste them? 'How few of my years, which are 'rolling on, have I to pass in the 'world? how many in solitude and 'the bosom of my child? The world, 'which invites me now, will dismiss 'me soon without pity; and if my 'daughter should forget herself, ac-'cording to my example; if she is un-'happy through my negligence, what 'will be my comfort? Let me in good 'time add grace to my retreat; let me 'render it as agreeable as it is honour-'able; and let me sacrifice to my 'daughter, who is every thing to me, 'that alien multitude, to whom in a 'short time I shall be nothing.'

From that moment this prudent mother became the friend and companion of her daughter. But to obtain her confidence was not the work of a day.

Emily (that was the young lady's name) had received from Nature a soul susceptible of the most lively impressions; and her mother, who studied it incessantly, experienced an uneasy joy on perceiving this sensibility, which does so much harm and so much good. 'Hap-'py,' said she sometimes, 'happy the 'husband whom she will love, if he is 'deserving of her tenderness; if by 'esteem and friendship he knows how 'to render dear to her the cares she shall

'take to pleaſe him! but woe be to him, 'if he humbles and ſhocks her: her 'wounded delicacy will be the torment 'of them both. I ſee that if a reproach 'eſcapes even me, a ſlight complaint 'which ſhe has not merited, tears of 'grief trickle from her eyes; her droop-'ing heart is diſpirited. Nothing is 'eaſier than to ſoothe her, nothing eaſier 'than to frighten her.'

Temperate as was the life of Madam Du Troëne, it was however conformable to her condition, and relative to the deſign ſhe had of inſtructing herſelf at leiſure in the choice of a huſband worthy of Emily. A crowd of admirers, caught with the charms of the daughter, paid, according to cuſtom, aſſiduous court to the mother. Of this number was the Marquis De Verglan, who, to his own misfortune, was endowed with a very handſome figure. His glaſs and the ladies had ſo often told him ſo, that he could not but believe it. He liſtened to them with pleaſure, contemplated himſelf with delight, ſmiled upon himſelf, and was eternally ſinging his own praiſes. Nothing could be objected to his politeneſs; but it was ſo cold, and ſo ſlight, in compariſon to the attentions with which he honoured himſelf, that one might clearly perceive that he poſſeſſed the firſt place in his own eſteem. He would have had, without thinking on them, all the graces of Nature: he ſpoiled them all by affecting them. In regard to underſtanding, he wanted only juſtneſs, or rather reflection. Nobody would have talked better than he, if he had known what he was going to ſay; but it was his firſt care to be of an opinion contrary to that of another. Right or wrong was all one to him; he was ſure of dazzling, of ſeducing, of perſuading to whatever he would. He knew by heart all that little toilette chit-chat, all thoſe pretty things which mean nothing. He was thoroughly verſed in all the love-anecdotes of the city and court: who was the gallant of yeſterday, who of to-day, who of the morrow, and how many times in the year ſuch and ſuch a lady had changed her admirers. He even knew a certain perſon who had refuſed to be upon the liſt, and who would have ſupplanted all his rivals, if he had choſen to give himſelf the trouble.

This young coxcomb was the ſon of an old friend of M. Du Troëne, and the widow ſpoke of him to her daughter with a kind of compaſſion. 'It is a 'pity,' ſaid ſhe, 'that they ſpoil this 'young man! He is of a good family, 'and might have ſucceeded.' He had already ſucceeded but too well in the heart of Emily. That which is ridiculous in the eyes of a mother, is not always ſo in the eyes of a daughter. Youth is indulgent to youth; and there are ſuch things as beautiful defects.

Verglan, on his ſide, thought Emily tolerably handſome, only a little too plain and ſimple; but that might be corrected. He took but very little care to pleaſe her; but when the firſt impreſſion is made, every thing contributes to ſink it deeper. The very diſſipation of this young fop was a new attraction to Emily, as it threatened her with the danger of loſing him; and nothing haſtens, ſo much as jealouſy, the progreſs of a growing love.

In giving an account of his life to Madam Du Troëne, Verglan repreſented himſelf (as to be ſure he ought) the moſt deſirable man in the world.

Madam Du Troëne dropped a hint concerning modeſty: but he proteſted that nobody was leſs vain than himſelf; that he knew perfectly well that it was not for his own ſake that they ſought him; that his birth did a great deal, and that he owed the reſt to his wit and figure, qualities which he had not given himſelf, and which he was far from being proud of.

The more pleaſure Emily felt in ſeeing and hearing him, the more care ſhe took to conceal it. A reproach from her mother would have touched her to the heart; and this delicate ſenſibility rendered her fearful to exceſs.

In the mean time, Emily's charms, with which Verglan was ſo faintly touched, had inſpired the diſcreet and modeſt Belzors with the tendereſt paſſion. A juſt way of thinking, and an upright heart, formed the baſis of his character. His agreeable and open figure was ſtill more ennobled by the high idea that was conceived of his ſoul; for we are naturally diſpoſed to ſeek, and believe that we diſcover, in the features of a man, what we know to be in his heart.

Belzors, in whom nature had been directed to virtue from his infancy, enjoyed the ineſtimable advantage of being able to give himſelf up to it without precaution and conſtraint. Decency, honeſty,

honesty, candour, a frankness which gains confidence, together with a severity of manners which creates respect, had in him the free ease of habit. An enemy to vice, without pride; indulgent to follies, without contracting any; complying with innocent customs; incorruptible by bad examples; he swam upon the torrent of the world; beloved, respected, even by those to whom his life was a reproach, and to whom the publick esteem delighted to oppose it, in order to humble their pride.

Madam Du Troëne, charmed with the character of this young man, had secretly pitched upon him as the most deserving husband she could give her daughter. She was inexhaustible in his commendations; and while Emily applauded with the modesty of her age, Madam Du Troëne mistook the ingenuous and agreeable air which her daughter assumed towards him: for, as the esteem with which Belzors inspired her was not mingled with any sentiment that she needed to conceal, Emily was quite at her ease.

It were to be wished, that she had been as free and as tranquil with the dangerous Verglan; though the painful situation into which his presence cast her, had in good measure the appearance of spleen. If Madam Du Troëne spoke in commendation of him, Emily looked down, and kept silence. 'You do not 'seem to me, daughter,' said Madam Du Troëne, 'to relish those light and 'shining graces, on which the world 'lays so much stress.'—'I know no-'thing at all of them!' said Emily, blushing. The good mother concealed her joy: she thought she saw the plain and modest virtues of Belzors triumphing in Emily's heart over the little brilliant vices of Verglan, and those of his character; till an accident, slight in appearance, but striking to an attentive and discerning mother, drew her out of this illusion.

One of Emily's accomplishments was drawing. She had chosen the delineation of flowers, as the most suitable to her age: for what can be more natural than to see a rose blow beneath the hand of beauty! Verglan, by a taste somewhat resembling her's, was passionately fond of flowers; and he never appeared without a nosegay, the prettiest in the world.

One day Madam Du Troëne's eyes were thrown casually on Verglan's nosegay. The day after, she perceived that Emily, perhaps without thinking of it, was drawing the flowers of it. It was natural enough, that the flowers she had seen the evening before should be still present to her imagination, and come, as it were, of their own accord, to offer themselves to her pencil; but that which was not quite so natural, was the air of enthusiasm which she betrayed in drawing them. Her eyes sparkled with the fire of genius; her mouth smiled amorously at every stroke of the pencil, and a colour more animated than that of the flowers which she was endeavouring to delineate, diffused itself over her cheeks. 'Are you pleased with the execution?' said the mother to her carelessly. 'It 'is impossible,' replied Emily, 'to re-'present Nature well, when we have 'her not before our eyes.' It was certain, however, that she had never copied her more faithfully.

Some few days after, Verglan came again with new flowers. Madam Du Troëne, without any particularity, observed them, one after another; and, in Emily's next lesson, Verglan's nosegay was drawn again. The good mother continued her observations, and every trial confirming her suspicions, redoubled her uneasiness. 'After all,' said she, 'I am alarmed perhaps at somewhat 'very innocent. Let me see, however, 'if she has any meaning in all this.'

The studies and accomplishments of Emily were a secret to her mother's acquaintance. As she had only intended to make her relish solitude, and preserve her imagination from the dangers of meditation, and the tediousness of idleness; Madam Du Troëne derived neither to herself nor daughter the least vanity from those talents which she had cultivated with so much care. But one day when they were alone with Belzors, and the conversation turned on the great advantage of employing and amusing one's self; 'My daughter,' said Madam Du Troëne, 'has created herself 'an amusement, which she relishes more 'and more. I want to have you see 'some of her designs.' Emily opened her port-folio; and Belzors, charmed, was never weary of admiration of her performances. 'How soft and pure,' said he, 'are the pleasures of innocence! 'In vain does vice torment itself, it 'will never taste the like. Is it not

'true,

'true, Madam, that the hour of labour 'paſſes away quick? And yet you have 'fixed it: ſee it here retraced and pro- 'duced anew to your eyes. Time is 'never loſt but to the idle.' Madam Du Troëne liſtened with a ſecret com- placency. Emily thought his obſerva- tions very ſenſible, but was not in the leaſt touched by them.

Some days after, Verglan came to ſee them. 'Do you know, Sir,' ſays Ma- dam Du Troëne, 'that my daughter has 'received the higheſt encomiums from 'Belzors on her talent for drawing! I 'want your opinion of it.' Emily, in confuſion, bluſhed, heſitated, ſaid that ſhe had nothing finiſhed by her, and beſeeched her mother to wait till ſhe ſhould have ſome piece fit to be ſeen. She did not doubt but her mother was laying a ſnare for her. 'Since there is 'a myſtery in this, there is alſo a de- 'ſign,' ſaid this diſcerning mother with- in herſelf: 'ſhe is afraid that Verglan 'may know his own flowers, and pene- 'trate into the ſecret motive of the plea- 'ſure which ſhe has taken in drawing 'them. My daughter loves this young 'fop; my fears were but two well 'founded.'

Madam Du Troëne, ſolicited on all ſides, excuſed herſelf ſtill on account of Emily's youth, and the reſolution ſhe had taken not to conſtrain her in her choice. However, this choice alarmed her. 'My daughter,' ſaid ſhe, 'is 'going to prefer Verglan; there is, at 'leaſt, room to think ſo: and this 'young man has every quality that can 'render a woman unhappy. If I de- 'clare my will to Emily, if I only ſuf- 'fer her to have the ſlighteſt perception 'of it, ſhe will make it a law to ſub- 'ſcribe to it without murmuring; ſhe 'will marry a man whom ſhe does 'not love, and the remembrance of the 'man ſhe loves will haunt her even in 'the arms of another. I know her ſoul; 'ſhe will become the victim of her duty. 'But ſhall I ordain this grievous ſacri- 'fice? God forbid! No: let her own 'inclination decide it; but I may di- 'rect her inclination by enlightening 'it, and that is the only lawful uſe of 'the authority that is given me. I am 'certain of the goodneſs of heart, of the 'juſtneſs of my daughter's ſentiments; 'let me ſupply, by the light natural to 'my years, the inexperience of her's; 'let her ſee by her mother's eyes, and 'fancy, if poſſible, that ſhe conſults 'only her own inclination.'

Every time that Verglan and Belzors met together at Madam Du Troëne's, ſhe turned the converſation on the man- ners, cuſtoms, and maxims, of the world. She encouraged contradiction; and with- out taking any ſide, gave their diſpoſi- tions room to diſplay themſelves. Thoſe little adventures with which ſociety a- bounds, and which entertain the idle curioſity of the circles at Paris, moſt commonly furniſhed matter for their reflections. Verglan, light, deciſive, and lively, was conſtantly on the ſide of the faſhion. Belzors, in a modeſter tone, conſtantly defended the cauſe of morality with a noble freedom.

The arrangement of Count D'Aube- rive with his lady was at that time the town-talk. It was ſaid, that after a pretty briſk quarrel, and bitter com- plaints on both ſides, on the ſubject of their mutual infidelity, they agreed, that they owed each other nothing; that they had concluded by laughing at the folly of being jealous without loving; that D'Auberive had conſented to ſee the Chevalier De Clange make love to his wife; and that ſhe had promiſed, on her ſide, to receive with the greateſt polite- neſs the Marchioneſs De Talbe, to whom D'Auberive paid his court; that the peace had been ratified by a ſupper, and that two couple of lovers never maintained a better underſtanding with each other.

At this recital Verglan cried out, that nothing was wiſer. 'They talk of the 'good old times,' ſaid he; 'let them 'produce an inſtance of the manners of 'our forefathers comparable to this. 'Formerly an inſtance of infidelity ſet 'a family in flames; they ſhut up, they 'beat their wives. If the huſband 'made uſe of the liberty that was re- 'ſerved to him, his ſad and faithful half 'was obliged to put up with the injury, 'and vent her moans at home, as in an 'obſcure priſon. If ſhe imitated her 'wandering huſband, it was with ter- 'rible riſks. Nothing leſs than her lover's 'and her own life were at ſtake. They 'had the folly to attach the honour of the 'man to the virtue of his wife; and the 'huſband, who was not the leſs a fine 'gentleman for intriguing elſewhere 'himſelf, became the ridiculous object 'of publick contempt on the firſt falſe 'ſtep of his lady. Upon honour, I do

'not

'not conceive how, in these barbarous 'ages, they had the courage to marry. 'The bands of Hymen were then down-'right chains. Now-a-days, complai-'sance, freedom, peace, reign in the 'bosom of families. If the married 'pair love one another, so much the 'better; they live together, they are 'happy. If they cease to love, they 'tell it like well-bred persons, and dis-'pense with each other's promise of fide-'lity. They give over being lovers, 'and become friends. These are what 'I call social manners, free and easy. 'This makes one long to be married.' —'You find it then quite easy,' said Madam Du Troëne, 'for a wife to be 'the confidante of her husband, and 'for him to be the complaisant friend 'of his wife?'—'To be sure; provided 'it be mutual. Is it not just to grant 'our confidence to those who honour 'us with their's, and to render each 'other by turns the offices of friend-'ship? Can a man have a better friend 'than his wife, or the wife a surer and 'more intimate friend than her hus-'band? With whom shall we be free, 'if not with the person, who, from 'situation, is one with us? And when 'unfortunately we no longer find any 'pleasure at home, what can be better 'than to seek it abroad, to return each 'at their own time, without jealousy 'and restraint?'

'Nothing is more pleasant,' said Bel-zors, 'than this new method; but you 'and I have a great deal of ground to 'go over before we can relish it. In 'the first place, we must give up all 'love for ourselves, wife, and chil-'dren; we must be able to accustom 'ourselves to consider, without repug-'nance, as being one half of one's self, 'somebody whom we despise sufficient-'ly, to deliver up——' 'Well,' re-plied Verglan, 'what but mere preju-'dices are all these scruples! what hin-'ders us from esteeming one another, 'if it be settled that there is no longer 'any scandal in it?'—'When that is 'settled,' said Belzors, 'all the ties of 'society are broken. The inviolable 'sanctity of the marriage-tie forms the 'sanctity of all the ties of nature. Re-'member, my friend, that if there are 'no longer any sacred duties for the 'parents, there will no longer be any 'for the children. All these conditions 'depend on each other. Family quar-'rels were violent in the days of our 'fathers; but the mass of morals was 'sound, and the wound soon closed up 'again. At present it is a languishing 'body, wasting by a slow poison. On 'the other side, my dear Verglan, we 'have not now the idea of those pure 'and intimate pleasures which the mar-'ried pair felt amidst their family; nor 'of that union which formed the de-'light of their youth, and the consola-'tion of their advanced years. Now-'a-days, when a mother is afflicted at 'the dissipations of her son, or a fa-'ther overwhelmed with any reverse of 'fortune, are they a refuge or support 'to each other? They are obliged to 'unbosom their grief abroad; and the 'consolation of strangers is very weak 'indeed.'

'You talk like an oracle, my sage 'Belzors,' said Verglan; 'but who has 'told you that two married persons 'would not do best to love, and to be 'faithful to each other all their lives? 'I am only, if unfortunately this mu-'tual liking should cease, for their 'consoling each other, and settling 'matters amicably, without forbidding 'those who may have loved reciprocal-'ly from the times of our fathers, to 'love on still, if their heart inclines 'them to it.'—'Aye,' said Madam Du Troëne, 'what is there to hinder them?' —'What is there to hinder them, Ma-'dam!' replied Belzors. 'Custom, 'example, the *bon ton*, the facility of 'living, without shame, according to 'their liking. Verglan will agree, that 'the life led in the world is agreeable; 'and change is naturally pleasing: our 'very weakness invites us to it. Who, 'then, will resist this inclination, if they 'take off the curb of morality?'— 'I! I take off nothing,' said Verglan, 'but I am for every body's living 'according to their liking; and I very 'much approve of the course that 'D'Auberive and his lady have taken 'to overlook on both sides what are 'called injuries. If they are satisfied, 'every body else ought to be so too.'

As he finished these last words, a servant announced the Marquis D'Au-berive. 'Ah, Marquis! you come very 'opportunely,' said Verglan: 'tell us, 'pr'ythee, if your story be true. They 'say that your lady forgives you your 'rhubarb, and that you pass by her 'senna.'—'Psha! what stuff!' said D'Au-

D'Auberive to him careleſsly. 'I have 'maintained that nothing was more rea-'ſonable; but Belzors there condemns 'you without appeal.' — 'Why ſo, 'pray? Would not he have done as 'much? My wife is young and hand-'ſome: a coquette; that is quite evi-'dent. At the bottom, however, I 'believe her to be very virtuous; but 'though ſhe ſhould err a little, juſtice 'ought to take place. I conceive, 'however, that a perſon more jealous 'than myſelf may condemn me; but 'what aſtoniſhes me is, that Belzors 'ſhould be the firſt. I have hitherto 'received nothing but commendations. 'Nothing is more natural than my pro-'ceeding; and all the world felicitate 'me upon it as on ſomething marvel-'lous. It looks as if they did not 'think I had underſtanding enough to 'take a reaſonable ſtep. Upon honour, 'I am quite confounded at the com-'pliments I receive on it. As to the 'rigid gentlemen, I honour them ſuf-'ficiently; but I live for myſelf. Let 'every one do as much, and the hap-'pieſt will always be the wiſeſt.'— 'Well, how is the Marchioneſs?' ſaid Madam Du Troëne to him, with a de-ſign of changing the ſubject. 'Won-'derfully well, Madam; we ſupped 'together laſt night, and I never ſaw 'her in ſuch good-humour.'—'I will 'lay a wager,' ſays Verglan, that you 'will take her again ſome day.'— 'Faith, very poſſibly: for but yeſter-'day, when we got up from table, I 'caught myſelf ſaying tender things to 'her.'

This firſt experiment made the moſt lively impreſſion on Emily's underſtand-ing. Her mother, who perceived it, gave free courſe to her reflections; but in order to put her into the way, 'It is 'wonderful,' ſaid ſhe, 'how much 'opinions depend upon tempers. Here, 'now, theſe two young men, educated 'with the ſame care, both endued with 'the ſame principles of honeſty and vir-'tue; obſerve, however, how they dif-'fer from one another! and each of 'them believes he is in the right.' Emi-ly's heart did it's beſt to excuſe in Ver-glan the fault of having defended the manners of the age. 'With what levi-'ty,' ſaid ſhe, 'do they treat modeſty 'and fidelity! how they ſport with what 'is moſt ſacred in nature! and Ver-'glan gives into theſe irregularities! 'Why has he not the ſoul of Belzors!

Some time after, Emily and her mo-ther, being at the play, Belzors and Verglan preſented themſelves at their box, and Madame Du Troëne invited them both to take their ſeats there. The play was Ines*. The ſcene of the chil-dren gave Verglan an opportunity of ut-tering ſome *bons mots*, which he put off as excellent criticiſms. Belzors, with-out liſtening to him, melted into tears, and took no pains to conceal it. His rival rallied him on his weakneſs. 'What,' ſaid he to him, 'do children 'make you cry?'—'And what would 'you have me be affected by?' ſaid Belzors. 'Yes, I confeſs, I never hear 'without much emotion the tender 'names of father and mother; the pa-'thos of Nature penetrates me; even the 'moſt touching love intereſts me, moves 'me much leſs.' Ines was followed by Nanine†: and when they came to the cataſtrophe, 'Oh! ſaid Verglan, 'that 'is carrying the jeſt too far: let Dol-'ban love this little wench, with all 'my heart; but to marry her, I think, 'is rather too much.'—'It is a folly, 'perhaps,' replied Belzors; 'but I feel 'myſelf capable of it: when virtue and 'beauty are united, I cannot anſwer 'for my diſcretion.' Not one of their obſervations eſcaped Madam Du Troëne; Emily, ſtill more attentive, bluſhed at the advantage which Belzors had over his rival. After the play, they ſaw the Chevalier D'Olcet paſs by in weepers. 'What is the meaning of this, Che-'valier?' ſaid Verglan to him with an air of gaiety. 'An old uncle,' replies D'Olcet, 'who has been ſo kind as to 'leave me ten thouſand crowns a year.' —'Ten thouſand crowns! I give you 'joy. This uncle was a brave old fel-'low. Ten thouſand crowns! charm-'ing.' Belzors, embracing him in his turn, ſaid to him, 'Chevalier, I con-'dole with you on his death: I know 'that you think too juſtly to conceive 'any unnatural joy on the occaſion.'— 'He has long been as a father to me,' ſaid the chevalier, confounded at the pleaſant air he had aſſumed; 'but he 'was ſo old, you know!'—'That is

* Ines de Caſtro, from which Mallet's Elvira is taken.

† A petit piece of Voltaire; the ſtory ſomewhat like Pamela.

'a cauſe

'a cauſe for patience,' replied Belzors mildly, 'but not for conſolation. A 'good relation is the beſt of friends; 'and the riches he has left you are not 'equal to the value of ſuch a one.'— 'An old uncle is but a dull kind of 'Friend,' ſaid Verglan; 'and it is a 'rule, that every one muſt live in his 'turn. Young folks would be much 'to be pitied, if old fellows were im-'mortal.' Belzors changed the diſcourſe, in order to ſpare Verglan an humiliating reply. At every ſtroke of this contraſt, Emily's heart was cruelly torn. Madam Du Troëne ſaw with joy the reſpectful and ſenſible air ſhe aſſumed towards Belzors, and the cold and chagrined air with which ſhe replied to Verglan's compliments; but in order to bring about another trial, ſhe invited them both to ſupper.

They played at cards. Verglan and Belzors had a *tête-à-tête* at trictrack. Verglan liked nothing but high play; Belzors would play for as little as you pleaſed. The party was intereſting. Mademoiſelle Du Troëene was of the number of lookers-on; and the Good Mother, in making her own party, kept an eye upon her daughter, to read in her countenance what paſſed in her heart. Fortune favoured Belzors; Emily, diſpleaſed as ſhe was with Verglan, had too good a heart not to ſuffer, on ſeeing him engaged in a ſerious loſs. The young coxcomb could no longer contain himſelf; he grew angry, he doubled the game, and, before ſupper, he was on the point of playing upon honour. Ill-humour had ſeized him: he did his utmoſt to be merry; but the alteration of his countenance baniſhed all joy. He perceived himſelf that they pitied him, and that they did not laugh at ſome pleaſantries he endeavoured to throw out; he was humbled, and indignation would have taken place, if they had not quitted the table. Belzors, whom neither his own good-luck, nor the chagrin of his rival, had moved, was eaſy and modeſt, according to cuſtom. They ſat down again to play. Madam Du Troëne, who had finiſhed her own party, came to be preſent at this, extremely uneaſy at the iſſue it might have, but deſirous that it might make it's impreſſion on the ſoul of Emily. The ſucceſs exceeded her expectation: Verglan loſt more than he had to pay; his trembling hand and pale countenance expreſſed the trouble he wanted to conceal. Belzors, with an unbounded complaiſance, gave him as many opportunities of revenging himſelf, as he thought proper; and when, by doubling the game, he had ſuffered Verglan to get off for a reaſonable ſum; 'If you pleaſe,' ſaid he, 'we will ſtop here: I think I may fair-'ly win as much as I was reſolved to 'loſe.' So much moderation and diſcretion excited a murmur of applauſe in the company. Verglan alone appeared inſenſible to it, and ſaid, on getting up, with an air of diſdain, 'It was 'not worth the trouble of playing ſo 'long for.'

Emily did not ſleep that night, ſo violently was her ſoul agitated with what ſhe had juſt ſeen and heard. 'What a dif-'ference!' ſaid ſhe, 'and by what ca-'price is it that I muſt ſigh at having 'been enlightened? Ought not the ſe-'duction to ceaſe, as ſoon as we per-'ceive that we are ſeduced? I admire 'one, and love the other. What is this 'miſunderſtanding between the heart 'and the reaſon, which makes us ſtill 'hold dear that which we ceaſe to 'eſteem?'

In the morning, ſhe appeared, according to cuſtom, at her mother's levee. 'You ſeem ſtrangely altered,' ſaid Madam Du Troëne. 'Yes, Madam, 'I am very much ſo.'—'What, have 'not you ſlept well?'—'Very little,' ſaid ſhe, with a ſigh. 'You muſt en-'deavour, however, to look handſome; 'for I am going to take you this morn-'ing to the Thuilleries, where all 'Paris is to be aſſembled. I uſed to 'lament that the fineſt garden in the 'world was abandoned: I am very 'glad it is come into faſhion again.'

Verglan failed not to repair there, and Madam Du Troëne retained him about her. The view of this walk had the air of enchantment. A thouſand beauties, in all the gaiety of dreſs, were ſeated round the baſon, whoſe ſides are decorated by ſculpture. The ſuperb walk which this baſon crowns, was filled with young nymphs; who, by their charms and accompliſhments, attracted the deſires after their ſteps. Verglan knew them all, and ſmiled upon them, following them with his eyes. 'This here,' ſaid he, 'is Fa-'timé. Nothing is more tender and 'ſenſible: ſhe lives like an angel with 'Cleon; he has given her twenty thou-

'ſand crowns in ſix months; they love 'like two turtles. That there is the ce-'lebrated Corinna: her houſe is the 'temple of luxury; her ſuppers the 'moſt brilliant in Paris; ſhe does the 'honours of them with a grace that en-'chants us. Do you ſee that fair beau-'ty who looks ſo modeſt, and whoſe 'glances wander languiſhingly on eve-'ry ſide? She has three lovers, each 'of whom flatters himſelf, that he a-'lone is the happy man. It is a plea-'ſure to ſee her amidſt her adorers, 'diſtributing ſlight favours to each, 'and perſuading each, in their turns, 'that ſhe jilts their rivals. She is a 'model of coquetry, and nobody de-'ceives a ſet of lovers with ſo much ad-'dreſs and ſprightlineſs. She will go 'a great way on my word, and I have 'told her ſo.'—'You are in her confi-'dence, then?' ſaid Madam Du Troëne. 'Oh, yes, they do not diſemble with 'me: they know me; they know very 'well, that they cannot impoſe upon 'me.'—'And you, Belzors,' ſaid Madam Du Troëne to the ſenſible and virtuous young man, who had joined, 'are you 'initiated in theſe myſteries?'—'No, 'Madam: I can believe that all that is 'very amuſing; but the charm makes 'the danger.' Madam Du Troëne obſer-ed that the modeſt women received, with a cold and reſerved air, the ſmiling and familiar ſalute of Verglan, while they re-turned with an air of eſteem and friend-ſhip the reſpectful ſalutation of Belzors. She rallied Verglan on this diſtinction, in order to make Emily perceive it. 'It is true,' ſaid he, 'Madam, that 'they behave rigidly to me in publick; 'but *tête-à-tête*, they make me amends 'for it.'

On her return home with them, ſhe received a viſit from Eleonora, a young widow of uncommon beauty. Eleonora ſpoke of the misfortune ſhe had ſuſtain-ed in loſing a deſerving huſband; ſhe ſpoke of it with ſo much ſenſibility, can-dour, and grace, that Madam Du Tro-ëne, Emily, and Belzors, liſtened to her with tears in their eyes. 'To a 'young, handſome woman,' ſaid Verg-lan, in a gay tone, 'a huſband is a 'trifling loſs, and eaſy to be repaired.' —'Not to me, Sir,' replied the tender and modeſt Eleonora: 'a huſband who 'honoured a wife of my age with his 'eſteem and his confidence, and whoſe 'delicate love never was tainted either 'by fears or jealouſy, or the negligences 'of habitude, is not one of thoſe whom 'we can eaſily replace.'—'He had, I 'take it for granted, a fine perſon?' ſaid Verglan. 'No, Sir, but his ſoul 'was beautiful.'—'A beautiful ſoul!' replied Verglan, with a diſdainful air: 'a beautiful ſoul! He was young at 'leaſt?'—'Not at all; he was of an 'age wherein we are affected when we 'have any occaſion to be ſo.'—'But if 'he was neither young nor handſome, 'I do not ſee why you ſhould afflict 'yourſelf. Confidence, eſteem, hand-ſome treatment, attend of courſe an 'amiable woman; nothing of that kind 'could have been wanting to you. Be-'lieve me, Madam, the eſſential point 'is to ſuit yourſelf, as to age and fi-'gure; to unite the Graces with the 'Loves; in one word, to marry a hand-'ſome man, or to preſerve your liberty.' —'Your advice is very gallant,' re-plied Eleonora; 'but unfortunately it 'is miſplaced.'—'There is a pretty 'prude!' ſaid Verglan, as ſoon as ſhe was gone. 'Prudery, Sir!' replied Madam Du Troëne, 'is an exaggerated 'copy of prudence and reaſon; and I 'ſee nothing in Eleonora but what is 'plain and natural.'—'For my part,' ſaid Belzors, I think her as reſpectable 'as ſhe is handſome.'—'Reſpect her, 'Sir! reſpect her!' reſumed Verglan, with vivacity, 'who hinders you? She 'is the only perſon can take it ill.'— 'Do you know,' interrupted Madam Du Troëne, 'who could conſole Eleo-'nora? Such a man as Belzors; and 'if I were the confidante that he con-'ſulted to his choice, I would perſuade 'him to think of her.'—'You do me 'great honour, Madam,' ſaid Belzors, colouring, 'but Eleonora deſerves a 'heart that is diſengaged, and unhap-'pily mine is not ſo.' At theſe words he took his leave, quite confounded with the diſmiſſion which he thought he had received. 'For, in ſhort,' ſaid he, 'to 'invite me herſelf to pay my addreſſes 'to Eleonora, is not that giving me 'notice to renounce Emily? Alas! 'how little my heart is known to her!' Verglan, who took it in the ſame ſenſe, affected to pity his rival. He ſpoke of him as one of the honeſteſt men in the world. 'It is a pity he is ſo 'gloomy,' ſaid he, with a tone of com-paſſion; 'that is all they get by their 'virtue; they grow tireſome, and are 'diſmiſſed.'

'dismissed.' Madam Du Troëne, without explaining herself, assured him that she had not intended saying any thing disobliging to a man for whom she had a most particular esteem and regard. In the mean time, Emily sat with downcast eyes, and her blushes betrayed the agitation of her soul. Verglan, not doubting but this confusion was an emotion of joy, retired in triumph, and the day following wrote her a billet conceived in these terms.

'YOU must have thought me very 'romantick, beautiful Emily, 'in having so long spoke to you only 'by my eyes! Do not accuse me of 'an unjust diffidence: I have read your 'heart, and if I had only that to consult, I should be very sure of it's answer. But you depend on a mother, 'and mothers have their caprices. Happily your mother loves you, and her 'affection has enlightened her choice. 'The dismission of Belzors apprizes 'me that she has determined; but your 'consent ought to precede her's: I wait 'it with the most tender impatience, and 'the most violent love.'

Emily opened this billet without knowing whence it came: she was as much offended as surprized at it, and without hesitation communicated it to her mother. 'I take very kindly of you,' said Madam Du Troëne, 'this mark of your 'friendship; but I owe you in my 'turn confidence for confidence. Bel'zors has writ to me; read his letter.' Emily obeyed and read.

'MADAM,

'I Honour the virtue, I admire the 'beauty, I do justice to Eleono'ra; but has Heaven favoured only 'her? And after having adored in 'your image every thing that Heaven 'has made most affecting, do you 'think me in a condition to follow the 'counsel which you have given me? I 'will not say to you how cruel it is; 'my respect stifles my complaints. If 'I have not the name, I have at least 'the sentiments of your son, and that 'character cannot be effaced.'

Emily could not finish without the most lively emotion. Her mother pretended not to perceive it, and said to her, 'There now, child, *I* indeed must 'answer these two rivals; but *you* must 'dictate my answers.'—'I, Madam!' —'Who else? Is it I whom they 'demand in marriage? Is it my heart 'that I am to consult?'—'Ah, Madam! is not your will mine? Have 'not you the right to dispose of me?' —'You are very good, my dear; but 'as your own happiness is concerned, 'it is just that you should decide on it. 'These young men are both well born; 'their condition and fortunes nearly 'the same: see which comes up nearest 'to the idea you have formed of a good 'husband. Let us keep him, and dis'miss the other.' Emily, struck, kissed her mother's hands, and bathed them with her tears. 'Compleat your good'ness,' said she to her, 'by enlighten'ing me in my choice: the more im'portant it is, the more need have I 'for your advice to determine it. The 'husband whom my mother shall 'chuse for me shall be dear to me; my 'heart dares promise that.'—'No, my 'dear, there is no loving out of mere 'duty, and you know better than my'self the man who is likely to make 'you happy. If you are not so, I will 'console you: I would readily share 'your sorrows, but I would not be the 'cause of them. Come, I take pen in 'hand, I am going to write; you need 'but to dictate.' Imagine the trouble, the confusion, the moving situation of Emily. Trembling by the side of this tender mother, one hand on her eyes, and the other on her heart, she essayed in vain to obey her; her voice expired on her lips. 'Well,' said the good mother, 'to which of the two are we to 'return an answer? Make an end, or 'I shall grow impatient.'—'To Ver'glan,' said Emily, with a feeble and faultering voice. 'To Verglan; be it 'so: what shall I say to him?'

"It is impossible, Sir, that a man, "so necessary to society as yourself, "should renounce it to live in the bo"som of his family. My Emily has "not qualities sufficient to indemnify "you for the sacrifices which she would "require. Continue to embellish the "world; for it is for that you are "made."—'Is this all?'—'Yes, Ma'dam.'—'And to Belzors; what shall 'we say to him?' Emily continued to

dictate with somewhat more confidence. "To deem you worthy of a woman as "virtuous as handsome, was not, Sir, "to forbid you to make a choice which "interests me as much as it does me "honour; it was even to encourage "you. Your modesty has reversed "things, and you have been unjust "both to yourself and to me. Come, "and learn to judge better of the in-"tentions of a Good Mother. I dispose "of the heart of my daughter, and I "esteem none in the world more than "yourself."

'Come hither, my child, that I may 'embrace you,' cried Madam Du Troëne; 'you fulfil the wishes of your 'mother, and you could not have said 'better, though you had consulted my 'heart.'

Belzors hastened to them quite beside himself with joy. Never was marriage more applauded, more fortunate. Belzors' affection was divided between Emily and her mother; and it was a moot point among the world, which of the two he loved most.

THE SHEPHERDESS OF THE ALPS.

IN the mountains of Savoy, not far from the road from Briançon to Modena, is a solitary valley, the sight of which inspires travellers with a pleasing melancholy. Three little hills in form of an amphitheatre, on which are scattered, at a great distance from each other, some shepherds huts, torrents that fall from the mountains, clumps of trees here and there, pastures always green, form the ornament of this rural place.

The Marchioness of Fonrose was returning from France to Italy with her husband. The axle-tree of their carriage broke; and as the day was on the decline, they were obliged to seek in this valley for some shelter to pass the night. As they advanced towards one of the huts, they saw a flock going that way, conducted by a shepherdess whose gait astonished them. They drew nearer, and heard a heavenly voice, whose plaintive and moving accents made the echoes groan.

'How the setting sun still glitters 'with a gentle light! It is thus,' said she, 'that at the end of a painful race, 'the exhausted soul departs to grow 'young again in the pure source of im-'mortality. But, alas! how distant is 'the period, and how long is life!' On saying these words, the shepherdess retired, with her head inclined; but the negligence of her attitude seemed to give still more nobleness and majesty to her person and deportment.

Struck with what they saw, and still more with what they had just heard, the Marquis and Marchioness of Fonrose redoubled their pace, in order to overtake the shepherdess whom they admired. But what was their surprize, when under the plainest head-dress, beneath the most humble garb, they saw all the graces, all the beauties united! 'Child,' said the marchioness to her, on seeing that she avoided them, 'fear 'nothing; we are travellers, whom an 'accident obliges to seek shelter in these 'huts till the day: will you be so good 'as to be our guide?'—'I pity you, 'Madam,' said the shepherdess to her, looking down and blushing; 'these huts 'are inhabited by poor wretches, and 'you will be very ill lodged.'—'You 'lodge there, without doubt, yourself,' replied the marchioness; 'and I can 'easily endure, for one night, the incon-'veniencies which you suffer always.' —'I am formed for that,' said the shepherdess, with a modesty that charmed them. 'No, surely,' said the Marquis De Fonrose, who could no longer dissemble the emotion she had caused in him; 'no, you are not formed to suffer; 'and Fortune is very unjust! Is it 'possible, lovely damsel, that so many 'charms are buried in this desart, un-'der that habit?'—'Fortune, Sir!' replied Adelaïde, (this was the name of the shepherdess;) 'Fortune is not cruel 'but when she takes from us that which 'she has given us. My condition has

'it's

'it's pleaſures for one who knows no 'other; and cuſtom creates wants for 'you, which ſhepherds do not know.' —'That may be,' ſaid the marquis, 'with reſpect to thoſe whom Heaven 'has placed from their birth in this 'obſcure condition; but you, aſtoniſh-'ing damſel, you whom I admire, you 'who enchant me, you were never born 'what you now are; that air, that gait, 'that voice, that language, every thing 'betrays you. But two words which 'you have juſt now ſpoken, proclaim 'a cultivated underſtanding, a noble 'ſoul. Proceed; teach us what mis-'fortune can have reduced you to this 'ſtrange abaſement.'—'For a man in 'misfortune,' replied Adelaïde, 'there 'are a thouſand ways to extricate him-'ſelf; for a woman, you know, there 'is no other honeſt reſource than ſervi-'tude, and the choice of maſters. They 'do well, in my opinion, who prefer 'the good. You are now going to ſee 'mine; you will be charmed with the 'innocence of their lives, the candour, 'the ſimplicity, the probity of their 'manners.'

While ſhe talked thus, they arrived at the hut. It was ſeparated by a partition from the fold into which this incognita drove her ſheep, telling them over with the moſt ſerious attention, and without deigning to take any farther notice of the travellers, who contemplated her. An old man and his wife, ſuch as Philemon and Baucis are deſcribed to us, came forth to meet their gueſts, with that village-honeſty which recals the golden age to our minds. 'We have nothing to offer you,' ſaid the good woman, 'but freſh ſtraw for 'a bed; milk, fruit, and rye-bread for 'your food; but the little that Heaven 'gives us, we will moſt heartily ſhare 'with you.' The travellers, on entering the hut, were ſurprized at the air of regularity which every thing breathed there. The table was one ſingle plank of walnut-tree highly poliſhed: they ſaw themſelves in the enamel of the earthen veſſels deſigned for their milk. Every thing preſented the image of chearful poverty, and of the firſt wants of nature agreeably ſatisfied. 'It is our dear daughter,' ſaid the good woman, 'who takes up-'on her the management of our houſe. 'In the morning, before her flock ramble 'far into the country, and while they 'begin to graze round the houſe on the 'graſs covered with dew, ſhe waſhes, 'cleans, and ſets every thing in order, 'with a dexterity that charms us.'— 'What!' ſaid the marchioneſs, 'is this 'ſhepherdeſs your daughter?'—'Ah, 'Madam, would to Heaven ſhe were!' cried the good old woman; 'it is my 'heart that calls her ſo, for I have a 'mother's love for her: but I am not 'ſo happy as to have borne her; we 'are not worthy to have given her 'birth.'—'Who is ſhe then? Whence 'comes ſhe? and what misfortune has 'reduced her to ſuch a condition?'— 'All that is unknown to us. It is 'now four years ſince ſhe came in the 'habit of a female peaſant to offer her-'ſelf to keep our flocks; we would 'have taken her for nothing, ſo much 'had her good look and pleaſing manner 'won upon our hearts. We doubted 'her being born a villager; but our 'queſtions afflicted her, and we thought 'it our duty to abſtain from them. 'This reſpect has but augmented in 'proportion as we have become better 'acquainted with her ſoul; but the 'more we would humble ourſelves to 'her, the more ſhe humbles herſelf to us. 'Never had daughter more attention 'for her father and mother, nor offici-'ouſneſs more tender. She cannot obey 'us, becauſe we are far from com-'manding her; but it ſeems as if ſhe 'ſaw through us, and every thing that 'we can wiſh is done, before we per-'ceive that ſhe thinks of it. She is an 'angel come down among us to comfort 'our old age.'—'And what is ſhe do-'ing now in the fold?' demanded the marchioneſs. 'Giving the flock freſh 'litter; drawing the milk from the 'ewes and ſhe-goats. This milk, preſſed 'out by her hand, ſeems to become the 'more delicate for it. I, who go and 'ſell it in the town, cannot ſerve it faſt 'enough. They think it delicious. 'The dear child employs herſelf, while 'ſhe is watching the flock, in works of 'ſtraw and oſier, which are admired by 'all. Every thing becomes valuable 'beneath her fingers. You ſee, Ma-'dam,' continued the good old woman, 'you ſee here the image of an eaſy and 'quiet life: it is ſhe that procures it to 'us. This heavenly daughter is never 'employed but to make us happy.'— 'Is ſhe happy herſelf?' demanded the Marquis De Fonroſe. 'She endeavours 'to perſuade us ſo,' replied the old man; 'but

'but I have frequently observed to my 'wife, that at her return from the pas- 'ture, she had her eyes bedewed with 'tears, and the most afflicted air in the 'world. The moment she sees us, she 'affects to smile: but we see plainly 'that she has some grief that consumes 'her. We dare not ask her what it is.' —'Ah, Madam!' said the old woman, 'how I suffer for this child, when she 'persists in leading out her flocks to 'pasture in spite of rain and frost! 'Many a time have I thrown myself on 'my knees, in order to prevail with her 'to let me go in her stead; but I never 'could prevail on her. She goes out 'at sun-rise, and returns in the evening 'benumbed with cold. "Judge, now," 'says she to me, "whether I would "suffer you to quit your fire-side, and "expose yourself at your age to the ri- "gours of the season. I am scarce "able to withstand it myself." Never- 'less, she brings home under her arm 'the wood with which we warm our- 'selves; and when I complain of the 'fatigue she gives herself, "Have "done, have done, my good mother, "it is by exercise that I keep myself "from cold: labour is made for my "age." In short, Madam, she is as 'good as she is handsome, and my hus- 'band and I never speak of her but 'with tears in our eyes.'—'And if she 'should be taken from you?' said the marchioness. 'We should lose,' inter- rupted the old man, 'all that we hold 'dearest in the world; but if she her- 'self was to be the happier for it, we 'would die happy in that consolation.' —'Oh, aye!' replied the old woman, shedding tears; 'Heaven grant her a 'fortune worthy of her, if it be pos- 'sible! It was my hope, that that hand, 'so dear to me, would have closed my 'eyes, for I love her more than my 'life.' Her arrival broke off their dis- course.

She appeared with a pail of milk in one hand, a basket of fruit in the other; and after saluting them with an ineffable grace, she directed her attention to the care of the family, as if nobody observed her. 'You give yourself a great 'deal of trouble, my dear child,' said the marchioness. 'I endeavour, Madam,' replied she, 'to fulfil the intention of 'those I serve, who are desirous of en- 'tertaining you in the best manner they 'are able. You will have,' continued she, spreading over the table a coarse but very white cloth, 'you will have a frugal and 'rural repast: this bread is not the whitest 'in the world, but it tastes pretty well; 'the eggs are fresh, the milk is good; 'and the fruits, which I have just now 'gathered, are such as the season affords.' The diligence, the attention, the noble and becoming grace with which this wonderful shepherdess paid them all the duties of hospitality; the respect she shewed for her master and mistress, whether she spoke to them, or whether she fought to read in their eyes what they wanted her to do; all these things filled the Marquis and Marchioness of Fonrose with astonishment and admiration. As soon as they were laid down on the bed of fresh straw which the shepherdess had prepared for them herself, 'Our 'adventure has the air of a prodigy,' said they one to another; 'we must 'clear up this mystery; we must carry 'away this child along with us.'

At break of day, one of the men, who had been up all night mending their carriage, came to inform them that it was thoroughly repaired. Madam De Fonrose, before she set out, ordered the shepherdess to be called to her. 'With- 'out wanting to pry,' said she, 'into 'the secret of your birth, and the cause 'of your misfortune; all that I see, all 'that I hear, interests me in your fa- 'vour. I see that your spirit has raised 'you above ill fortune; and that you 'have suited your sentiments to your 'present condition: your charms and 'your virtues render it respectable, but 'yet it is unworthy of you. I have it 'in my power, amiable stranger, to pro- 'cure you a happier lot; my husband's 'intentions agree entirely with mine. 'I have a considerable estate at Turin: 'I want a friend of my own sex, and I 'shall think I bear away from this 'place an invaluable treasure, if you 'will accompany me. Separate from 'the proposal, from the suit I now 'make you, all notion of servitude: I 'do not think you made for that con- 'dition; but though my prepossessions 'in your favour should deceive me, I 'had rather raise you above your birth, 'than leave you beneath it. I repeat to 'you, it is a friend of my own sex that 'I want to attach to me. For the rest, 'be under no concern for the fate of 'these good people: there is nothing 'which I would not do to make them

'amends

'amends for your loss; at least they 'shall have wherewith to spend the re-'mainder of their lives happily, accord-'ing to their condition; and it is from 'your hand that they shall receive the 'benefits I intend them.' The old folks, who were present at this discourse, kissing the hands of the marchioness, and throwing themselves at her feet, begged the young incognita to accept of these generous offers: they represented to her with tears, that they were on the brink of the grave; that she had no other consolation than to make them happy in their old age; and that at their death, when left to herself, their habitation would become a dreadful solitude. The shepherdess, embracing them, mingled her tears with their's; she returned thanks to the Marquis and Marchioness of Fonrose for their goodness, with a sensibility that made her still more beautiful. 'I cannot,' said she, 'accept 'of your courtesies. Heaven has mark-'ed out my place, and it's will is ac-'complished; but your goodness has 'made impressions on my soul which 'will never be effaced. The respectable 'name of Fonrose shall ever be present 'to my imagination. I have but one 'favour more to ask you,' said she, blushing, and looking down; 'that is, 'to be so good as to bury this adven-'ture in eternal silence, and to leave the 'world for ever ignorant of the lot of 'an unknown wretch, who wants to 'live and die in oblivion.' The Marquis and Marchioness of Fonrose, moved with pity and grief, redoubled a thousand times their instances: she was immovable, and the old people, the travellers, and the shepherdess, separated with tears in their eyes.

During the journey, the marquis and his lady were taken up with nothing but this adventure. They thought they had been in a dream. Their imaginations being filled with this kind of romance, they arrive at Turin. It may easily be imagined that they did not keep silence, and this was an inexhaustible subject for reflections and conjectures. The young Fonrose, being present at these discourses, lost not one circumstance. He was at that age wherein the imagination is most lively, and the heart most susceptible; but he was one of those characters whose sensibility displays not itself outwardly, and who are so much the more violently agitated, when they are so at all, as the sentiment which affects them does not weaken itself by any sort of dissipation. All that Fonrose hears said of the charms, virtues, and misfortunes of the shepherdess of Savoy, kindles in his soul the most ardent desire of seeing her. He forms to himself an image of her, which is always present to him. He compares her to every thing that he sees, and every thing that he sees vanishes before her. But the more his impatience redoubles, the more care he takes to conceal it. Turin becomes odious to him. The valley, which conceals from the world it's brightest ornament, attracts his whole soul. It is there that happiness waits him. But if his project is known, he foresees the greatest obstacles: they will never consent to the journey he meditates; it is the folly of a young man, the consequences of which they will be apprehensive of; the shepherdess herself, affrighted at his pursuits, will not fail to withdraw herself from them; he loses her, if he should be known. After all these reflections, which employed his thoughts for three months, he takes a resolution to quit every thing for her sake; to go, under the habit of a shepherd, to seek her in her solitude, and to die there, or draw her out of it.

He disappears; they see him no more. His parents become alarmed at his absence: their fear increases every day; their expectations disappointed throw the whole family into affliction; the fruitlessness of their enquiries compleats their despair; a duel, an assassination, every thing that is most unfortunate, presents itself to their imagination; and these unhappy parents ended their researches by lamenting the death of their son, their only hope. While his family are in mourning, Fonrose, under the habit of a shepherd, presents himself to the inhabitants of the hamlets adjoining to the vallies, which they had but too well described to him. His ambition is accomplished: they trust him with the care of their flocks.

The first day after his arrival, he left them to wander at random, solely attentive to discover the places to which the shepherdess led her's.

'Let us manage,' said he, 'the ti-'midity of this solitary fair-one: if she 'is unfortunate, her heart has need of 'consolation; if it be nothing but a 'desire to banish herself from the world,

'and

'and the pleasure of a tranquil and in-
'nocent life that retains her here, she
'will feel some dull moments, and wish
'for company to amuse or console her.
'If I succeed so far as to render that
'agreeable to her, she will soon find it
'necessary; then I shall take counsel
'from the situation of her soul. After
'all, we are here alone, as it were in
'the world, and we shall be every thing
'to each other. From confidence to
'friendship the passage is not long;
'and from friendship to love, at our
'age, the road is still easier.' And what was Fonrose's age when he reasoned thus? Fonrose was eighteen; but three months reflection on the same object unfolds a number of ideas. While he was thus giving himself up to his imagination, with his eyes wandering over the country, he hears at a distance that voice, the charms of which had been so often extolled to him. The emotion it excited in him was as lively as if she had been unexpected. 'It is
'here,' said the shepherdess in her plaintive strains; 'it is here that my heart
'enjoys the only happiness that remains
'to it. My grief has a luxury in it for
'my soul; I prefer it's bitterness to the
'deceitful sweets of joy.' These accents rent the sensible heart of Fonrose.
'What,' said he, 'can be the cause of
'the chagrin that consumes her? How
'pleasing would it be to console her!'
A hope still more pleasing presumed, not without difficulty, to flatter his desires. He feared to alarm the shepherdess if he resigned himself imprudently to his impatience of seeing her near, and for the first time it was sufficient to have heard her. The next day he went out again to lead his sheep to pasture; and after observing the route which she had taken, he placed himself at the foot of a rock, which the day before repeated to him the sounds of that touching voice. I forgot to mention that Fonrose, to the handsomest figure had joined those talents which the young nobility of Italy do not neglect. He played on the hautboy like Besuzzi, of whom he had taken his lessons, and who formed at that time the delight of Europe. Adelaïde, buried in her own afflicting ideas, had not yet made her voice heard, and the echoes kept silence. All on a sudden this silence was interrupted by the plaintive sounds of Fonrose's hautboy. These unknown sounds excited in the soul of Adelaïde a surprize mingled with anxiety. The keepers of the flocks that wandered on the hills had never caused her to hear aught before but the sounds of rustick pipes. Immoveable and attentive, she seeks with her eyes who it was that could form such harmonious sounds. She perceives, at a distance, a young shepherd seated in the cavity of a rock, at the foot of which he fed his flock; she draws near, to hear him the better. 'See,' said she, 'what the mere instinct of Na-
'ture can do! The ear teaches this
'shepherd all the refinements of art.
'Can any one breathe purer sounds?
'What delicacy in his inflexions! what
'variety in his gradations! Who can
'say after this, that taste is not a gift
'of Nature?' Ever since Adelaïde had dwelled in this solitude, this was the first time that her grief, suspended by an agreeable distraction, had delivered up her soul to the sweet emotion of pleasure. Fonrose, who saw her approach and seat herself at the foot of a willow to hear him, pretended not to perceive her. He seized, without seeming to affect it, the moment of her retreat, and managed the course of his own flock in such a manner as to meet her on a declivity of a hill, where the roads crossed. He cast only one look on her, and continued his route, as if taken up with nothing but the care of his flock. But what beauties had that one look ran over! What eyes! what a divine mouth! How much more ravishing still would those feature be, which are so noble and touching in their languor, if love re-animated them! He saw plainly that grief alone had withered in their spring the roses on her lovely cheeks; but of so many charms, that which had moved him most was the noble elegance of her person and her gait; in the ease of her motions he thought he saw a young cedar, whose straight and flexible trunk yields gently to the zephyrs. This image, which love had just engraven in flaming characters on his memory, took up all his thoughts.
'How feebly,' said he, 'have they
'painted to me this beauty, unknown to
'the world, whose adoration she merits!
'And it is a desart that she inhabits! and
'it is thatch that covers her! She who
'ought to see kings at her feet, employs
'herself in tending an humble flock!
'Beneath what garments has she pre-
'sented herself to my view? She a-
'dorns

Plate IV.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co Nov.r 1 1781

'dorns every thing, and nothing dis-
'figures her. Yet what a life for a
'frame so delicate! Coarse food, a sa-
'vage climate, a bed of straw; great
'gods! And for whom are the roses
'made? Yes, I will draw her out of
'this state, so much too hard and too
'unworthy of her.' Sleep interrupted his reflections, but effaced not her image. Adelaïde, on her side, sensibly struck with the youth, the beauty of Fonrose, ceased not to admire the caprices of Fortune. 'Where is Nature going,' said she, 'to re-assemble together so
'many talents and so many graces!
'But, alas! those gifts which to him
'are here but useless, would be perhaps
'his misfortune in a more elevated state.
'What evils does not beauty create in
'the world! Unhappy as I am, is it
'for me to set any value on it?' This melancholy reflection began to poison in her soul the pleasure she had tasted; she reproached herself for having been sensible of it, and resolved to deny it herself for the future. The next day Fonrose thought he perceived that she avoided his approach; he fell into a profound melancholy. 'Could she suspect my
'disguise?' said he. 'Should I have
'betrayed it myself?' This uneasiness possessed him all the live-long day, and his hautboy was neglected. Adelaïde was not so far but she could easily have heard it; and his silence astonished her. She began to sing herself. 'It seems,' said the song, 'that every thing around
'me partakes of my heaviness: the
'birds send forth none but sorrowful
'notes; Echo replies to me in complaints;
'the Zephyrs moan amidst these leaves;
'the sound of the brooks imitates my
'sighs, one might say that they flowed
'with tears.' Fonrose, softened by these strains, could not help replying to them. Never was concert more moving than that of his hautboy with Adelaïde's voice. 'O Heaven!' said she, 'it is
'enchantment! I dare not believe my
'ears: it is not a shepherd, it is a god
'whom I have heard! Can the natural
'sense of harmony inspire such concord
'of sounds?' While she was speaking thus, a rural, or rather a celestial melody made the valley resound. Adelaïde thought she saw those prodigies realizing which Poetry attributes to her sprightly sister Musick. Astonished, confounded, she knew not whether she ought to take herself away, or resign herself up to this enchantment. But she perceived the shepherd, whom she had just heard, re-assembling his flock in order to regain his hut. 'He knows not,' says she,
'the delight he diffuses around him;
'his undisguised soul is not in the least
'vain of it: he waits not even for the
'praises I owe him. Such is the power
'of musick: it is the only talent that
'places it's happiness in itself; all the
'others require witnesses. This gift of
'Heaven was granted to man in his in-
'nocence: it is the purest of all plea-
'sures. Alas! it is the only one I still
'relish; and I consider this shepherd as
'a new echo, who is come to answer to
'my grief.'

The following day Fonrose affected to keep at a distance in his turn: Adelaïde was afflicted at it. 'Chance,' said she, 'seemed to have procured me this
'feeble consolation; I gave myself up
'to it too easily, and to punish me, she
'has deprived me of it.' At last, one day, when they happened to meet on the declivity of the hill, 'Shepherd,' said she to him, 'are you leading your flocks
'far off?' These first words of Adelaïde caused an emotion in Fonrose, which almost deprived him of the use of his voice. 'I do not know,' said he, hesitating; 'it is not I who lead my flock,
'but my flock that leads me; these
'places are better known to it than to
'me: I leave to it the choice of the best
'pastures.'—'Whence are you, then?' said the shepherdess to him. 'I was
'born beyond the Alps,' replied Fonrose. 'Were you born among shep-
'herds?' continued she. 'As I am a
'shepherd,' said he, looking down, 'I
'must have been born to be one.'—'I
'doubt it,' replied Adelaïde, viewing him with attention. 'Your talents,
'your language, your very air, all tell
'me, that Fate had placed you in a better
'situation.'—'You are very obliging,' said Fonrose; 'but ought you, of all
'persons, to believe that Nature refuses
'every thing to shepherds? Were you
'born to be a queen?' Adelaïde blushed at this answer; and changing the subject, 'The other day,' said she, 'by
'the sound of a hautboy you accompa-
'nied my songs with an art that would
'be a prodigy in a simple shepherd.'—
'It is your voice that is so,' replied Fonrose, 'in a simple shepherdess.'—
'But has nobody instructed you?'—
'I have, like yourself, no other guides

'than my heart and my ear. You sung, 'I was melted; what my heart feels, 'my hautboy expresses; I breathe my 'soul into it. This is the whole of my 'secret; nothing in the world is easier.' —'That is incredible,' said Adelaïde. 'I said the very same on hearing you,' replied Fonrose, 'but I was forced to 'believe it. What will you say? Nature and Love sometimes take a delight in assembling their most precious 'gifts in persons of the most humble 'fortune, to shew that there is no condition which they cannot ennoble.'

During this discourse, they advanced towards the valley; and Fonrose, whom a ray of hope now animated, began to make the air resound with those sprightly notes which pleasure inspires. 'Ah, 'pr'ythee now!' said Adelaïde, 'spare 'my soul the troublesome image of a 'sentiment which she cannot relish. 'This solitude is consecrated to Grief; 'her echoes are not used to repeat the 'accents of a profane joy; here every 'thing groans in concert with me.'— 'I also have cause to complain!' replied the young man; and these words, pronounced with a sigh, were followed by a long silence. 'You have cause to 'complain!' replied Adelaïde; 'is it of 'mankind? is it of fortune?'—'No 'matter,' said he, 'but I am not happy: ask me no more.'—'Hear me,' said Adelaïde: 'Heaven gives us to 'each other as a consolation in our 'troubles; mine are like an overwhelming load, which weighs down my heart. 'Whoever you may be, if you know 'misfortune, you ought to be compassionate, and I believe you worthy of 'my confidence; but promise me that 'it shall be mutual.'—'Alas!' said Fonrose, 'my misfortunes are such, 'that I shall perhaps be condemned 'never to reveal them.' This mystery but redoubled the curiosity of Adelaïde. 'Repair to-morrow,' said she to him, 'to the foot of that hill, beneath that 'old tufted oak where you have heard me 'moan. There I will teach you things 'that will excite your pity.' Fonrose passed the night in the utmost emotion. His fate depended on what he was going to hear. A thousand alarming ideas agitated him by turns. He dreaded, above all, the being driven to despair by the communication of an unsuccessful and faithful love. 'If she is in 'love,' said he, 'I am undone!'

He repairs to the appointed place. He sees Adelaïde arrive. The day was overcast with clouds, and Nature, mourning, seemed to forebode the sadness of their conversation. As soon as they were seated at the foot of the oak, Adelaïde spoke thus. 'You see these stones 'which the grass begins to cover; they 'are the tomb of the most tender, the 'most virtuous of men, whom my love 'and my imprudence have cost his life. 'I am a French woman, of a family 'of distinction; and, to my misfortune, 'too rich. The Count D'Orestan conceived the tendrest passion for me; I 'was sensible to it, sensible to excess. 'My parents opposed the inclination 'of our hearts, and my frantick passion made me consent to a marriage 'sacred to virtuous souls, but disallowed by the laws. Italy was at that 'time the theatre of war. My husband 'went thither to join the corps which 'he was to command; I followed him 'as far as Briançon: my foolish tenderness retained him there two days, 'in spite of himself; for he, a young 'man, full of honour, prolonged his 'stay there with the greatest reluctance. 'He sacrificed his duty to me: but 'what would not I have sacrificed to 'him! In a word, I required it of 'him; and he could not withstand my 'tears. He took leave with a foreboding which alarmed me. I accompanied him as far as this valley, where 'I received his adieus; and in order 'to wait to hear from him, I returned 'to Briançon. A few days after, a 'report was spread of a battle. I doubted whether D'Orestan had got thither; 'I wished it for his honour, I dreaded it 'for my love; when I received a letter 'from him, which I thought very consoling. "I shall be such a day, at "such an hour," said he, "in the val"ley, and under the oak where we "parted; I shall repair there alone; "I conjure you to go there, and expect "me, likewise, alone; I live yet but for "you." How great was my mistake! 'I perceived in this billet nothing more 'than an impatience to see me again, 'and this impatience made me happy. 'I repaired, then, to this very oak. 'D'Orestan arrives; and, after the tendrest reception, "You would have "it so, my dear Adelaïde," said he; "I have failed in my duty at the most "important moment of my life. What

"I feared

" I feared is come to pass. A bat-
" tle has happened; my regiment
" charged; it performed prodigies of
" valour, and I was not there. I
" am dishonoured; lost without re-
" source. I reproach not you with
" my misfortune, but I have now but
" one sacrifice more to make you, and
" my heart is come to accomplish it."
' At this discourse, pale, trembling,
' and scarce breathing, I took my hus-
' band into my arms. I felt my blood
' congeal in my veins, my knees bent
' under me, and I fell down senseless.
' He availed himself of my fainting to
' tear himself from my bosom; and in a
' little time I was recalled to life by the
' report of a shot, which killed him. I
' will not describe to you the situation I
' was in; it is inexpressible; and the
' tears which you now see flowing, the
' sighs that stifle my voice, are but a
' feeble image of it.—After passing the
' whole night beside his bloody corpse,
' in a grief that stupified me, my first
' care was, to bury along with him my
' shame: my hands dug out his grave.
' I seek not to move you; but the mo-
' ment in which the earth was to sepa-
' rate me from the sorrowful remains of
' my husband, was a thousand times more
' dreadful to me than that can be which
' is to separate my body from my soul.
' Spent with grief, and deprived of
' nourishment, my enfeebled hands took
' up two whole days in hollowing out this
' tomb with inconceivable labour. When
' my strength forsook me, I reposed my-
' self on the livid and cold bosom of my
' husband. In short, I paid him the
' rites of sepulture, and my heart pro-
' mised him to wait in these parts till
' death re-unites us. In the mean
' time, cruel hunger began to devour
' my exhausted entrails. I thought it
' criminal to refuse nature the supports
' of a life more grievous than death. I
' changed my garments for the plain
' habit of a shepherdess, and I embraced
' that condition as my only refuge.
' From that time my only consolation
' has been to come here, and weep over
' this grave, which shall be my own.
' You see,' continued she, ' with what
' sincerity I open my soul to you. With
' you I may henceforth weep at liberty:
' it is a consolation I had need of; but
' I expect the same confidence from
' you. Do not think that you have de-
' ceived me. I see clearly, that the
' state of a shepherd is as foreign, and
' newer to you than to me. You are
' young, perhaps sensible; and, if I
' may believe my conjectures, our mis-
' fortunes have the same source, and you
' have loved as well as I. We shall only
' feel the more for one another. I con-
' sider you as a friend, whom Heaven,
' touched by my misfortunes, deigns to
' send me in my solitude. Do you also
' consider me as a friend, capable of
' giving you, if not salutary counsel,
' at least a consolatary example.'

' You pierce my very soul,' said Fonrose, overcome with what he had just heard; ' and whatever sensibility you ' may attribute to me, you are very far ' from conceiving the impression that ' the recital of your misfortunes has ' made on me. Alas! why cannot I ' return it with that confidence which ' you testify towards me, and of which ' you are so worthy? But I warned you ' of it; I foresaw it. Such is the na-
' ture of my sorrows, that an eternal
' silence must shut them up in the bot-
' tom of my heart. You are very un-
' happy,' added he with a profound sigh;
' I am still more unhappy: this is all I
' can tell you. Be not offended at my
' silence; it is terrible to me to be con-
' demned to it. The constant companion
' of all your steps, I will soften your
' labours; I will partake of all your
' griefs: I will see you weep over this
' grave, I will mingle my tears with
' yours. You shall not repent having
' deposited your woes in a heart, alas!
' but too sensible.'—' I repent me of it
' from this moment,' said she with con-
fusion; and both, with downcast eyes, retired in silence from each other. Adelaïde, on quitting Fonrose, thought she saw in his countenance the impression of a profound grief. ' I have re-
' vived,' said she, ' the sense of his
' sorrows; and what must be their hor-
' ror, when he thinks himself still more
' wretched than I!'

From that day more sighing and more conversation followed between Fonrose and Adelaïde. They neither sought nor avoided one another: looks of consternation formed almost their only language; if he found her weeping over the grave of her husband, his heart was seized with pity, jealousy, and grief; he contemplated her in silence, and answered her sighs with deep groans.

Two months had passed away in this

painful situation, and Adelaïde saw Fonrose's youth wither as a flower. The sorrow which consumed him afflicted her so much the more deeply, as the cause of it was unknown to her. She had not the most distant suspicion that she was the object of it. However, as it is natural, when two sentiments divide a soul, for one to weaken the other, Adelaïde's regret on account of the death of D'Oreſtan became less lively every day, in proportion as she delivered herself up to the pity with which Fonrose inspired her. She was very sure that this pity had nothing but what was innocent in it; it did not even come into her head to defend herself from it; and the object of this generous sentiment being continually present to her view, awakened it every instant. The languor into which this young man was fallen became such, that she thought it her duty not to leave him any longer to himself. 'You are dying,' said she to him, 'and 'you add to my griefs that of seeing 'you consumed with sorrow under my 'eye, without being able to apply any 'remedy. If the recital of the imprudences of my youth has not inspired 'you with a contempt for me; if the 'purest and tenderest friendship be dear 'to you; in short, if you would not 'render me more unhappy than I was 'before I knew you, confide to me the 'cause of your griefs: you have no 'person in the world but myself to 'assist you in supporting them; your 'secret, though it were more important than mine, fear not that I shall 'divulge. The death of my husband 'has placed a gulph betwixt the world 'and me; and the confidence which I 'require will soon be buried in this 'grave, to which grief is with slow steps 'conducting me.'—'I hope to go before you,' said Fonrose, bursting into tears. 'Suffer me to finish my deplorable life without leaving you afterwards the reproach of having shortened it's course.'—'O Heaven, what do 'I hear?' cried she with distraction. 'What, I! can I have contributed to 'the evils which overwhelm you? Go 'on; you pierce my soul. What have 'I done? what have I said? Alas, I 'tremble! Good Heaven! hast thou 'sent me into the world only to create 'wretches? Speak; nay, speak! you 'must no longer conceal who you are; 'you have said too much to dissemble 'any longer.'—'Well, then, I am—— 'I am Fonrose, the son of those travellers whom you filled with admiration and respect. All that they related of your virtues and your charms 'inspired me with the fatal design of 'coming to see you in this disguise. I 'have left my family in the deepest sorrow, thinking they have lost me, and 'lamenting my death. I have seen you; 'I know what attaches you to this 'place; I know that the only hope that 'is left me, is to die here, adoring you. 'Give me no useless counsel or unjust 'reproaches. My resolution is as firm 'and immoveable as your own. If, in 'betraying my secret, you disturb the 'last moments of a life almost at an 'end, you will to no purpose injure me, 'who would never offend you.'

Adelaïde, confounded, endeavoured to calm the despair into which this young man was plunged. 'Let me,' said she, 'do to his parents the service of restoring him to life; let me save their only 'hope: Heaven presents me with this 'opportunity of acknowledging their 'favours.' Thus, far from making him furious by a misplaced rigour, all the tenderness of pity, and consolation of friendship, was put in practice in order to soothe him.

'Heavenly angel!' cried Fonrose, 'I 'see all the reluctance that you feel to 'make any one unhappy: your heart is 'with him who repoſes in this grave; 'I see that nothing can detach you from 'him; I see how ingenious your virtue is 'to conceal your woe from me; I perceive it in all it's extent, I am overwhelmed by it, but I pardon you: it 'is your duty never to love me, it is 'mine ever to adore you.'

Impatient of executing the design which she had conceived, Adelaïde arrives at her hut. 'Father,' said she to her old master, 'do you think you 'have strength to travel to Turin? I 'have need of somebody whom I can 'trust, to give the Marquis and Marchioness of Fonrose the most interesting intelligence.' The old man replied, that his zeal to serve them inspired him with courage. 'Go,' resumed Adelaïde, 'you will find them bewailing 'the death of their only son; tell them 'that he is living, and in these parts, 'and that I will restore him to them;

'but

'but that there is an indispensible ne-
'cessity for their coming here themselves
'to fetch him.'

He sets out, arrives at Turin, sends in his address as the old man of the valley of Savoy. 'Ah!' cried Madam De Fonrose, 'some misfortune, per-
'haps, has happened to our shepherdess.'—'Let him come in,' added the marquis; 'he will tell us, perhaps, that 'she consents to live with us.'—'After the loss of my son,' said the marchioness, 'it is the only comfort I can 'taste in this world.' The old man is introduced. He throws himself at their feet: they raise him. 'You are la-
'menting the death of your son,' said he, 'I come to tell you that he lives: 'our dear child has discovered him in 'the valley; she sends me to inform 'you of it; but yourselves only, she 'says, can bring him back.' As he spoke this, surprize and joy deprived the Marchioness of Fonrose of her senses. The Marquis, distracted and amazed, calls out for help for his lady, recals her to life, embraces the old man, publishes to the whole house that their son is restored to them. The marchioness, resuming her spirits, 'What shall we 'do?' said she, taking the old man by the hands, and pressing them with tenderness, 'what shall we do in gratitude 'for this benefit, which restores life to 'us?'

Every thing is ordered for their departure. They set out with the good man; they travel night and day, and repair to the valley, where their only good awaits them. The shepherdess was out at pasture: the old woman conducts them to her; they approach. How great is their surprize! their son, that well-beloved son, is by her side in the habit of a simple shepherd. Their hearts, sooner than their eyes, acknowledge him. 'Ah, cruel child!' cried his mother, throwing herself into his arms, 'what 'sorrow have you occasioned us! why 'withdraw yourself from our tender-
'ness? and what is it you come here 'for?'—'To adore,' said he, 'what 'you yourself admired.'—'Pardon me, 'Madam,' said Adelaïde, while Fonrose embraced his father's knees, who raised him with kindness; 'pardon me 'for having left you so long in grief: 'if I had known it sooner, you should 'have been sooner consoled.' After the first emotions of nature, Fonrose relapsed into the deepest affliction. 'Let 'us go,' said the marquis, 'let us go 'rest ourselves in the hut, and forget 'all the pain that this young madman 'has occasioned us.'—'Yes, Sir, I have 'been mad,' said Fonrose to his father, who led him by the hand, 'nothing 'but the loss of my reason could have 'suspended in my heart the emotions of 'nature, so as to make me forget the 'most sacred duties; in short, to de-
'tach myself from every thing that I 'held dearest in the world: but this 'madness you gave birth to, and I am 'but too severely punished for it. I 'love without hope the most accomp-
'lished person in the world; you see 'nothing, you know nothing of this 'incomparable woman: she is honesty, 'sensibility, virtue itself; I love her 'even to idolatry, I cannot be happy 'without her, and I know that she 'cannot be mine.'—'Has she confided 'to you,' said the marquis, 'the secret 'of her birth?'—'I have learned e-
'nough of it,' said Fonrose, 'to assure 'you, that it is in no respect beneath 'my own; she has even renounced a 'considerable fortune to bury herself in 'this desart.'—'And do you know 'what has induced her to it?'—'Yes, 'Sir; but it is a secret which she alone 'can reveal to you.'—'She is married, 'perhaps?'—'She is a widow; but 'her heart is not the more disengaged; 'her ties are but too strong.'—'Daugh-
'ter,' said the marquis, on entering the hut, 'you see that you turn the 'heads of the whole family of Fonrose. 'The extravagant passion of this young 'man cannot be justified but by such a 'prodigy as you are. All my wife's 'wishes are confined to having you for 'a companion, and a friend; this child, 'here, will not live unless he obtains 'you for his wife; I desire no less to 'have you for my daughter: see how 'many persons you will make unhappy 'by a refusal.'—Ah, Sir!' said she, 'your goodness confounds me; but 'hear and judge for me.' Then Adelaïde, in the presence of the old man and his wife, made a recital of her deplorable adventure. She added the name of her family, which was not unknown to the Marquis de Fonrose, and ended by calling on himself to witness the inviolable fidelity she owed her spouse. At these words, consternation spread itself over every countenance. Young

Fonrose,

Fonroſe, choaked with ſobs, threw himſelf into a corner of the hut, in order to give them free ſcope. The father, moved at the ſight, flew to the aſſiſtance of his ſon. 'See,' ſaid he, 'my dear Adelaïde, to what a condition you have reduced him.' Madam de Fonroſe, who was near Adelaïde, preſſed her in her arms, bathing her at the ſame time with her tears. 'Alas! why, my daughter,' ſaid ſhe, 'why will you a ſecond time make us mourn the death of our dear child?' The old man and his wife, their eyes filled with tears, and fixed upon Adelaïde, waited her ſpeaking. 'Heaven is my witneſs,' ſaid Adelaïde, riſing, 'that I would lay down my life in gratitude for ſuch goodneſs. It would heighten my misfortunes to have occaſion to reproach myſelf with yours; but I am willing that Fonroſe himſelf ſhould be my judge: ſuffer me, if you pleaſe, to ſpeak to him for a moment.' Then retiring with him alone; 'Fonroſe,' ſaid ſhe, 'you know what ſacred ties retain me in this place. If I could ceaſe to love and lament a huſband who loved me but too well, I ſhould be the moſt deſpicable of women. Eſteem, friendſhip, gratitude, are the ſentiments I owe you; but none of theſe can cancel love: the more you have conceived for me, the more you ſhould expect from me; it is the impoſſibility of fulfilling that duty, that hinders my impoſing it on myſelf. At the ſame time, I ſee you in a ſituation that would move the leaſt ſenſible heart; it is ſhocking to me to be the cauſe, it would be ſtill more ſhocking to me to hear your parents accuſe me with having been your deſtruction. I will forget myſelf, then, for the preſent, and leave you, as far as in me lies, to be the arbiter of our deſtiny. It is for you to chuſe that of the two ſituations which appears to you leaſt painful; either to renounce me, to ſubdue yourſelf, and forget me; or to poſſeſs a woman, whoſe heart, being full of another object, can only grant you ſentiments too feeble to ſatisfy the wiſhes of a lover.'—'That is enough,' ſaid Fonroſe; 'and in a ſoul like yours, friendſhip ſhould take place of love. I ſhall be jealous, without doubt, of the tears which you ſhall beſtow to the memory of another huſband: but the cauſe of that jealouſy, in rendering you more reſpectable, will render you alſo more dear in my eyes.

'She is mine!' ſaid he, coming and throwing himſelf into the arms of his parents; 'it is to her reſpect for you, to your goodneſs, that I owe her, and it is owing you a ſecond life.' From that moment their arms were chains from which Adelaïde could not diſengage herſelf.

Did ſhe yield only to pity, to gratitude? I would fain believe it, in order to admire her the more: Adelaïde believed ſo herſelf. However it be, before ſhe ſet out, ſhe would reviſit the tomb, which ſhe quitted but with regret. 'O, my dear D'Oreſtan,' ſaid ſhe, 'if from the womb of the dead thou canſt read the bottom of my ſoul, thy ſhade has no cauſe to murmur at the ſacrifice I make: I owe it to the generous ſentiments of this virtuous family; but my heart remains thine for ever. I go to endeavour to make them happy, without any hope of being myſelf ſo.' It was not without ſome ſort of violence they forced her from the place; but ſhe inſiſted that they ſhould erect a monument there to the memory of her huſband; and that the hut of her old maſter and miſtreſs, who followed her to Turin, ſhould be converted into a country-houſe, as plain as it was ſolitary, where ſhe propoſed to come ſometimes to mourn the errors and misfortunes of her youth. Time, the aſſiduities of Fonroſe, the fruits of her ſecond marriage, have ſince opened her ſoul to the impreſſions of a new affection; and they cite her as an example of a woman, remarkable and reſpectable even in her infidelity.

THE

THE HAPPY DIVORCE.

UNEASINESS and inconstancy, are, in the greatest part of mankind, nothing more than the consequence of false calculation. Too strong a prepossession in favour of the happiness we desire, makes us experience, as soon as we possess it, that uneasiness and disgust which suffer us to relish nothing. The imagination deceived, and the heart dissatisfied, wander to new objects, the prospect of which dazzles in it's turn, and the approach disabuses us. Thus, from illusion to illusion, life is passed away in changing the chimera: this is the malady of lively and delicate souls; Nature has nothing sufficiently perfect for them; whence it proceeds, that it is thought such a mighty matter to fix the taste of a pretty woman.

Lucilia, in the convent, had painted to herself the charms of love, and the delights of marriage, with the colouring of an imagination of a girl of fifteen, whose flower nothing had yet tarnished.

She had seen the world only in those ingenious fictions which are the romance of human nature. It costs nothing to an eloquent man to give love and marriage all the charms that he conceives. Lucilia, according to these pictures, saw lovers and husbands only as they are to be met with in fables, always tender and full of love, saying nothing but fine things, taken up solely with the care of pleasing, new homages, or pleasures eternally varied.

Such was the prepossession of Lucilia, when they came to draw her out of the convent to marry the Marquis De Lisere. His engaging and noble figure inspired her with a favourable opinion of him, and his first addresses succeeded in determining the irresolution of her soul. She saw not yet in the marquis the ardour of a passionate lover; but she thought modestly enough of herself not to pretend to set him on fire at first sight. This liking, tranquil at it's birth, would make a rapid progress; he must have time. However, the marriage was concluded upon, and solemnized before the inclination of the marquis was grown a violent passion.

Nothing was more steady or solid than the temper of the Marquis De Lisere. In marrying a young woman, he proposed to himself, in order to make her happy, to begin by being her friend, persuaded that an honest man does whatever he pleases with a well-disposed woman, when he has gained her confidence; and that a husband who makes himself dreaded, invites his wife to deceive him, and authorizes her to hate him.

In order to follow the plan which he had traced out to himself, it was necessary not to be a too passionate lover: passion knows no rule. He had considered well before his engagement, on the kind of liking with which Lucilia inspired him, resolved never to marry a woman whom he should love to distraction. Lucilia found in her husband only that lively and tender friendship, that attentive and constant complaisance, that soft and pure pleasure, that love, in short, which has neither it's hot nor cold fits. At first, she flattered herself that intoxication, enchantment, transports, would have their turn; but the soul of Lisere was unalterable.

'This is very extraordinary,' said she; 'I am young, handsome, and my 'husband does not love me! I am his, 'and he thinks it enough to possess me 'with coldness. But, then, why suffer him to be cold? Can he have any 'violent longings for what is in his 'power without reserve or trouble? He 'would become passionately fond of 'me, if he were jealous. How unjust 'are men! We must torment them, in 'order to please them. Be tender, faithful, fond, they neglect, they disdain 'you. An even course of happiness 'makes them dull: caprice, coquetry, 'inconstancy, rouze and enliven them; 'they set no value on pleasure, but in 'proportion to the trouble it gives them. 'Lisere, less sure of being beloved, 'will become a thousand times fonder. 'That is easy; let me be in the fashion. 'Every thing around me presents me 'with enough to make him uneasy, if 'he is capable of jealousy.'

After this fine project, Lucilia gave herself up to dissipation, to coquetry: she assumed a mystery in all her proceedings; she made parties without the marquis.

marquis. 'Did I not foreſee it,' ſaid he to himſelf, 'that I had a wife like 'other women? Six months after mar-'riage, ſhe begins to be tired of it. I 'ſhould be a happy man, now, if I were 'paſſionately fond of my wife! Hap-'pily my liking and eſteem for her 'leave me full enjoyment of my reaſon: 'I muſt make uſe of it, diſſemble, 'ſubdue myſelf, and employ nothing 'but gentleneſs and ſoothing meaſures, 'to keep her in order. They do not 'always ſucceed; but reproaches, com-'plaints, reſtraint, and violence, ſuc-'ceed ſtill leſs.' The moderation, complaiſance, and tranquillity of the marquis, put Lucilia out of all patience. 'Alas!' ſaid ſhe, 'do what I will, it 'is all to no purpoſe; this man will 'never love me: he is one of thoſe 'cold ſouls whom nothing moves, no-'thing engages; and I am condemned 'to paſs my life with a ſtone that knows 'neither how to love nor hate! O, 'the delight of ſenſible ſouls, the charm 'of impaſſioned hearts!—Love, who 'raiſeſt us to heaven on thy fiery pi-'nions! where are thoſe flaming darts, 'with which thou woundeſt happy lov-'ers? where is that intoxication into 'which thou plungeſt them? where are 'thoſe raviſhing tranſports with which 'they mutually inſpire each other?—'Where are they?' continued ſhe. 'In 'free and independent love, in the diſ-'poſal of two hearts which give a looſe 'to themſelves. And why ſhould the 'marquis be fond? What ſacrifice have 'I made him? By what marks of 'courage, by what heroick devotion of 'myſelf, have I moved the ſenſibility 'of his ſoul? Where is the merit of 'having obeyed, of having accepted for 'a huſband an amiable and rich young 'man, choſen without my conſent? Is 'it for love to interfere in a marriage 'of convenience? But is this then the 'lot of a woman of ſixteen, to whom, 'without vanity, Nature has given 'wherewith to pleaſe, and ſtill more, 'wherewith to love? For, after all, I 'cannot conceal from myſelf the graces 'of my figure, nor the ſenſibility of 'my heart. At ſixteen, to languiſh 'without hope in cold indifference, and 'to ſee at leaſt a ſcore of years waſte 'away without pleaſure, which might 'have been delicious! I ſay, a ſcore at 'leaſt, and it is not deſiring to tire the 'world, to be content to renounce it 'before forty years of age. Cruel fa-'mily! was it for you that I took a 'huſband? You choſe me an honeſt 'man! a rare preſent you made me! 'To be dull with an honeſt man, and 'to be dull all one's life! Very hard, 'indeed!'

This diſcontent ſoon degenerated into peeviſhneſs; and Liſere thought he perceived, at laſt, that ſhe had taken an averſion to him. His friends diſpleaſed her, their company became troubleſome to her, ſhe received them with a coolneſs ſufficient to keep them at a diſtance. The marquis could no longer diſſemble. 'Madam,' ſaid he to Lucilia, 'the end 'of marriage is to make people happy; 'we are not ſo, and it is in vain to 'pique ourſelves on a conſtancy which 'reſtrains us. Our fortune puts us in 'a condition of doing without each 'other, and of reſuming that liberty 'of which we imprudently made a mu-'tual ſacrifice. Live by yourſelf; I 'will live by myſelf. I aſk towards 'me only that decency and regard which 'you owe to yourſelf.'—'With all my 'heart, Sir,' replied Lucilia with the coldneſs of diſguſt; and from that moment every thing was ſettled, that Madam might have her equipage, her table, her domeſticks, in one word, a ſeparate maintenance.

Lucilia's ſuppers ſoon became ranked among the moſt brilliant in Paris. Her company was ſought by all the handſome women and men of gallantry. But there was a neceſſity for Lucilia's having ſome particular, and he who ſhould engage her firſt, it was obſerved, had the only hard taſk! In the mean time, ſhe enjoyed the homages of a brilliant ſet; and her heart, yet irreſolute, ſeemed to ſuſpend her choice only to render it more flattering. She thought, at laſt, ſhe ſaw the perſon who would determine it. At the approach of the Count De Blamzé, all other pretenders lowered their tone. He was, of the whole court, the moſt to be dreaded by a young woman. It was agreed, that there was no reſiſting him, and ſo they ſpared themſelves the trouble. He was beautiful as the day, preſented himſelf with grace, ſpoke little, but extremely well; and if he ſaid common things, he rendered them intereſting by the moſt pleaſing ſound of voice, and the moſt beautiful look in the world. They could not ſay that Blamzé was a fop, his fop-

pery

pery had so much dignity. A modest haughtiness formed his character; he decided with the gentlest air in the world, and the most laconick tone: he listened to contradictions with good-humour, replied to them only with a smile; and if they pressed him to explain himself, he smiled still and kept silence, or repeated what he had said before. Never did he combat the opinion of another, never did he take any trouble to give a reason for his own: it was the most attentive politeness, and the most decisive presumption, that had ever yet been united in a young man of quality.

This assurance had something commanding in it, which rendered him the oracle of taste, and the legislator of fashion. They were never sure of being right in the choice of a suit, or the colour of a carriage, till Blamzé had approved by a glance. '*It is excellent*, '*it is handsome!*' were the precious words from his mouth; and his silence a dead warrant. The despotism of his opinion extended even over beauty, talents, wit, and graces. In a circle of women, she whom he had honoured with a particular attention was that instant in vogue.

Blamzé's reputation had gone before him to Lucilia's; but the deference which even his rivals paid him, redoubled the esteem she had conceived for him. She was dazzled with his beauty, and still more surprized at his modesty. He presented himself with the most respectful air, seated himself in the lowest place, but all looks were soon directed towards him. His dress was the model of taste: all the young people who surrounded him studied it with a scrupulous attention. His laces, his embroidery, his manner of dressing his head, were all examined: they wrote down the names of his tradespeople and workmen. 'It is strange,' said they, 'we see these designs, these colours, no 'where else!' Blamzé confessed modestly, that it cost him very little trouble. 'Industry,' said he, 'is at it's 'highest perfection; you need but to 'enlighten and direct it.' He took a pinch of snuff as he said these words, and his box excited new curiosity; it was, however, the work of a young artist whom Blamzé had drawn from his obscurity. They asked him the price of every thing; he replied with a smile, that he knew the price of none of them; and the women whispered in each other's ear the name of the female who took these matters under her care.

'I am ashamed, Madam,' said Blamzé to Lucilia, 'that these trifles 'should engage the attention which 'ought to centre in a more interesting 'object. Pardon me if I listen to the 'frivolous questions of these young 'men: never did complaisance cost me 'so dear. I hope,' added he in a low voice, 'that you will permit me to 'come and make myself amends in 'some more tranquil moment.'—'I 'shall be very glad to see you,' replied Lucilia blushing, and by her blushes, and the tender smile with which Blamzé accompanied a most respectful bow, the assembly judged that it would not be long before matters came to a conclusion. Lucilia, who did not see the consequence of a few words said in her ear, and who did not think that she had made an assignation, scarce paid any attention to the meaning looks which the women cast on each other, or the light railleries which escaped the men. She delivered herself up insensibly to her own reflections, and was quite grave the whole evening. They often turned the conversation on Blamzé; all the company spoke well of him: his rivals talked of him with esteem; Lucilia's rivals spoke of him with complaisance. Nobody was more genteel, more gallant, more respectful; and of twenty women, on whose account he had reason to pride himself, not one had any reason to complain. Lucilia became attentive: nothing escaped her. 'Twenty women?' said she within herself; 'that is much; 'but where is the wonder? He seeks 'one who may be worthy to fix him, 'and capable of fixing herself.'

She hoped the next day that he would come early, and before the crowd of visitors: she waited for him; she grew uneasy; he never came; she was out of temper: he writ; she read his billet, and her ill-humour ceased. He was distracted to lose the most agreeable moments of his life. Some impertinents had broke in upon him, he would have made his escape; but these impertinents were people of rank. It was not in his power to be happy till the next day; but he beseeched Lucilia to receive him early, 'To abridge,' said he, 'by a few hours, 'the cruel weariness of absence.' The company came as usual, and Lucilia

received them with a coldneſs at which they were piqued. 'We ſhall not have 'Blamzé this evening,' ſaid Clariſſa, with a diſconſolate air, 'he goes to ſup 'at Araminta's little box.' At theſe words Lucilia turned pale, and the gaiety which reigned around her only ſerved to redouble the grief which ſhe endeavoured to diſſemble. Her firſt emotion was, not to ſee the perfidious man more. But Clariſſa wanted, perhaps, either out of malice or jealouſy, to impute a wrong to him of which he was not guilty. It was after all engaging herſelf to nothing, to ſee him once more; and before condemning him, it was but juſt to hear him.

While ſhe was yet at her toilette, Blamzé arrives in an undreſs, but the moſt elegant undreſs in the world. Lucilia was a little ſurprized to ſee a man whom ſhe ſcarce knew appear in a diſhabille; yet if he had given himſelf time to dreſs, perhaps ſhe would have been ſorry for it. But he ſaid ſo many handſome things to her on the freſhneſs of her complexion, the beauty of her hair, the brilliancy of her morning appearance, that ſhe had not the courage to complain. However, Araminta did not go out of her head; but it would not have been decent to appear jealous ſo ſoon; and one reproach might betray her. She contented herſelf with aſking him what he had done with himſelf the evening before. What did I do with my-'ſelf! Do I know myſelf? O, how 'troubleſome the world is? How happy 'are we in being forgotten and far from 'the crowd, in being devoted to one's 'ſelf, and the perſon we love! Follow 'my advice, Lucilia, get out of this 'whirlwind: the more repoſe, the more 'liberty, as ſoon as we give ourſelves 'up to it. Now I have mentioned the 'whirlwind, what do you do with all 'theſe young fellows who pay court to 'you? They diſpute with each other 'the conqueſt of you; have you vouch-'ſafed to make a choice?' The eaſy familiarity of Blamzé had at firſt aſtoniſhed Lucilia; this queſtion entirely confounded her. 'I am impertinent, 'perhaps?' reſumed Blamzé, who perceived it. 'Not at all,' replied Lucilia with gentleneſs. 'I have nothing to 'conceal, and I am not afraid that any 'body ſhould ſee through me. I amuſe 'myſelf with the levity of theſe giddy 'young fellows, but not one of them 'ſeems to me worthy of a ſerious at-'tachment.' Blamzé ſpoke of his rivals with indulgence, and thought that Lucilia judged too ſeverely of them. 'Cle-'on, for example,' ſaid he, 'has ſome-'thing very amiable in him; he knows 'nothing as yet; it is a pity, for he 'ſpeaks well enough of things which 'he is ignorant of, and he is a proof 'to me, that with wit one may diſpenſe 'with common ſenſe. Clairfont is a 'coxcomb; but it is the firſt fire of his 'age, and he only wants to be diſci-'plined by a woman who has ſeen life. 'Pomblac's diſpoſition pronounces him 'a man of ſentiment; and that ſimpli-'city which looks ſo like fillineſs, would 'pleaſe me well enough if I were a wo-'man: ſome coquette will make her 'advantage of him. Little Linval is 'conceited, but when he has been ſup-'planted five or ſix times, people will 'not be ſurprized to ſee him grown 'modeſt. At preſent,' continued Blamzé, 'none of all theſe will ſuit you; 'we behold you, therefore, free: what 'uſe do you make of your freedom?'—'I endeavour to enjoy it,' replied Lucilia. 'That is mere childiſhneſs,' reſumed the count: 'we never enjoy our 'freedom but in the moment when we 'renounce it; and we ought not to pre-'ſerve it with care, but in order to loſe 'it at a proper opportunity. You are 'young, you are handſome, do not flat-'ter yourſelf with being long diſen-'gaged: if you will not reſign your 'heart, it will reſign itſelf; but among 'thoſe who may pretend to it, it is of 'importance to make a right choice. 'As ſoon as you love, and even when 'you do not love, you will be beloved 'infallibly: that is not the point; but 'at your age women have need of find-'ing in a lover a counſellor, a guide, 'a friend, a man formed by the cuſtom 'of the world, and able to enlighten 'you in reſpect of the dangers you are 'going to run in it.'—'A man, like 'yourſelf, for example!' ſaid Lucilia, in an ironical tone, and with a ſneering ſmile. 'Yes, indeed,' continued Blamzé; 'I ſhould do pretty well for your 'purpoſe, were it not for all this mul-'titude that beſieges me; but how to 'diſengage myſelf from it?'—'Why, 'do not diſengage yourſelf from it at 'all,' replied Lucilia; 'you would ex-'cite too many complaints, and make me 'too many enemies,'—'As to com-'plaints,'

'plaints,' said the count coldly, 'I am 'accustomed to them: as to enemies, 'one never gives one's self the least con-'cern about them, when one has cause 'to be satisfied, and the good sense to 'live for one's self.'—'At my age,' said Lucilia smiling, 'we are still too timo-'rous; and though there were nothing 'farther to experience in it than the 'despair of an Araminta, that alone 'would make me tremble.'—'An 'Araminta;' replied Blamzé, without any emotion. 'Araminta is a good 'creature who hears reason, and who 'does not give herself up to despair: I 'see somebody has been talking to you 'of her; you shall have the whole ac-'count of my connections with her. 'Araminta is one of those beauties, who 'seeing themselves on the decline, that 'they may not fall into oblivion, and 'to revive their expiring consequence, 'have occasion from time to time to 'make some noise in the world. She 'has engaged me to pay her some small 'attentions, and to behave to her with 'some warmth. It would not have been 'handsome to refuse her, so I made 'myself subservient to her views. In 'order to give the more celebrity to our 'adventure, she has thought proper to 'take a little box. It was in vain that I 'represented to her that it was not worth 'while for a month at most which I had 'to bestow on her: the box was fur-'nished without my knowledge, and in 'the handsomest manner; she made 'me promise, and there lay the grand 'point, to sup with her there with an 'air of mystery; yesterday was the day 'appointed. Araminta, for the greater 'secresy, invited nobody there but five 'of her female friends, and permitted 'me to carry only the like number of 'my friends. I went; assumed an air 'of pleasure; was gallant and warm 'towards her: in a word, I let all the 'guests go away, and did not retire 'myself till half an hour after them; 'this was all, in my opinion, that de-'corum required; and accordingly A-'raminta was charmed with me. It 'was sufficient to bring her again into 'vogue; and I may henceforth take 'my leave of her whenever I please, 'without fear of reproach. This, Ma-'dam, is my manner of conducting 'myself. The reputation of a woman 'is as dear to me as my own; nay, 'more: it costs me nothing to make a 'sacrifice to her glory of my own vani-'ty. The greatest misfortune to a wo-'man who sets up for a beauty, is to 'be forsaken: I never forsake them; I 'leave myself to be discharged, I pre-'tend even to be inconsolable at it, and 'sometimes I have shut myself up three 'days successively without seeing any 'body, in order to leave the lady from 'whom I had detached myself all the 'honour of the rupture. You see, beau-'tiful Lucilia, that the men are not all 'as bad as they say, and that there 'are still among us principles and mo-'rals.'

Lucilia, who had read only the romances of time past, was not at all accustomed to this new style, and her surprize redoubled at every syllable. 'What, 'Sir!' said she; 'is this what you call 'principles and morals?'—'Yes, Ma-'dam, but this is rare, and the singular 'reputation which my proceedings have 'acquired me, does no great honour to 'the rest of our youth. Upon honour, 'the more I think on it, the more I 'wish, for your own interest, that you 'had somebody like me.'—'I flat-'ter myself,' said Lucilia, 'that I shall 'be treated as tenderly as another, and 'that, at least, I shall not experience 'the shock of being forsaken.'—'You 'are merry, Madam; but, to be serious, 'you deserve a person who thinks, and 'knows how to develope those quali-'ties of heart and understanding, which 'I think I have discovered in you. Li-'sere is a good man; but he never 'knew how to make the most of his 'wife; and in general the desire of pleas-'ing a husband is not strong enough, 'to induce a woman to give herself the 'trouble of being amiable to him to a 'certain degree. Happily, he leaves 'you at your own pleasure; and you 'would not be worthy of so reasonable 'a procedure, if you should lose the 'most precious time of your life in in-'dolence or dissipation.'—'I am not 'afraid,' said Lucilia, 'of falling into 'any of these excesses.'—'We see, 'however, nothing else in the world.' —'True, Sir; and that is the reason 'why I should be difficult in my 'choice, if I had any design of making 'one: for I think there is no excuse 'for an attachment, but that it is solid 'and durable.'—'What, Lucilia! at 'your age would you pique yourself 'upon constancy? Really, if I thought

'so, I should be capable of committing 'a folly.'—'And that folly would 'be——' 'To grow prudent, and at- 'tach myself in good earnest.'—'Se- 'riously! would you have the courage?' —'Upon my credit, I am a little fear- 'ful of it, if you would have me own 'the truth.'—'A strange declaration!' 'It is a little ill expressed; but I beg 'you will pardon me: it is the first in 'my life.'—'The first, say you?'— 'Yes, Madam: hitherto they have had 'the modesty to spare me the trouble of 'making advances; but I see plainly 'that I grow old.'—'Well, Sir, for 'the novelty of the thing, I pardon you 'this first essay: I will do more still, 'I will confess to you, that it cannot 'displease me.'—'That is happiness 'indeed! Do you give me leave to love 'you; and will you do me the honour 'to love me too?'—'Ah! that is an- 'other thing; time shall show me whe- 'ther you deserve it.'—'Look at me, 'Lucilia.'—'I do look at you.'—'And 'do not you laugh?'—'What should 'I laugh at?'—'At your own answer. 'Do you take me for a child?'—'I 'talk reasonably to you, I think.'— 'And it is in order to talk reasonably 'to me, that you have done me the ho- 'nour to grant me a *tête à-tête?*'— 'I did not think, that in order to be 'reasonable, we had need of witnesses; 'after all, what have I said to you, 'which you ought not to have expected? 'I find in you graces, wit, an engag- 'ing and noble air.'—'You are very 'good.'—'But that is not enough to 'merit my confidence, and determine 'my inclination.'—'Not enough, Ma- 'dam! excuse me a little. Please to 'inform me, what you would require 'more?'—'A more thorough know- 'ledge of your temper, a more inti- 'mate persuasion of your sentiments for 'me. I promise you nothing, I for- 'bid myself nothing; you have every 'thing to hope, but nothing to claim: 'you are to consider whether that suits 'you.'—'No price, without doubt, 'beautiful Lucilia, should be thought 'too dear to merit and obtain you: but 'seriously, would you have me renounce 'all the charms of the world to have 'my happiness depend on an uncertain 'contingency? I am, you know, and 'I am not conceited of it, I am the 'man the most sought after in all France; 'be it taste or fancy, it is no matter; 'it is her concern that should have me, 'though but for a time.'—'You are 'right,' said Lucilia; 'I was unrea- 'sonable, and your moments are too 'precious.'—'No, I confess to you 'seriously, that I am tired of being in 'fashion; I was looking out for an 'object that might fix me; I have 'found it; I attach myself: nothing 'can be more fortunate; but still this 'ought not to be to no purpose. You 'would have time for reflection; I give 'you twenty-four hours: I think that 'is very handsome, and I never gave so 'much time before.'—'My reflections 'are too slow,' replied Lucilia, 'and 'you are too much in a hurry for us to 'agree on this point. I am young, 'perhaps have sensibility; but my age 'and sensibility shall never engage me 'in an imprudent step. I have told 'you, if my heart yields, time, proofs, 'reflection, the pleasing habitude of 'confidence and esteem, will have de- 'cided it's choice.'—'Madam, in good 'earnest, now, do you think to find an 'amiable man sufficiently disengaged to 'lose his time in spinning out an in- 'trigue to this length? and do you 'yourself intend to pass your youth in 'consulting whether you shall love or 'no?'—'I cannot tell,' replied Luci- lia, 'whether I shall ever love, nor what 'time I shall employ in resolving; but 'that time will not be lost, if it spares 'me regret.'—'I admire you, Madam; 'I admire you!' said Blamzé, taking his leave; 'but I have not the honour to 'be of the ancient order of chivalry, 'and I did not come here so early to 'compose a romance with you.'

Lucilia, thunderstruck at the scene which she had just had with Blamzé, passed in a short time from astonishment to reflection. 'Is this, then,' said she, 'the man in vogue, the most amiable 'man in the world? He condescends 'to think me handsome; and if he be- 'lieved me capable of constancy, he 'would be guilty of the folly of loving 'me in good earnest; but yet he has 'not time to wait till I have consulted 'myself. I must seize the moment of 'pleasing him, and determine in twen- 'ty-four hours: he never gave so much 'time before. Do the women, then, 'humble themselves thus, and the men 'thus prescribe them the condition! 'happily he has made himself known 'to me. Under that modest air which

'had

'had seduced me, what conceit, what 'presumption! Ah! I see, the most 'mortifying evil to a woman, is that 'of loving a fop.'

The same day, after the opera, Lucilia's company being met together, Pomblac came to tell her, with an air of mystery, that she would have neither Blamzé nor Clairfont to sup with her. 'Very well,' said she, 'I require not of 'my friends any assiduity that con-'strains them: there are even such peo-'ple whose assiduity would constrain 'me.'—'If Blamzé be of that num-'ber,' replied Pomblac frankly, 'Clair-'font has delivered you from him, at 'least for some time.'—'How so?'—'Do not be frightened: all is very well 'over.'—'How, Sir, what is over!'—'After the opera, the curtain being 'dropped, we were on the stage, and, 'according to custom, hearing Blamzé 'deciding on every thing. Having giv-'en us his opinion on the singing, the 'dancing, and the decorations, he asked 'us, if we were to sup at the little mar-'chioness's: (pardon me, Madam, it 'was you he spoke of.) We replied, "Yes."—"I shall not be there," said 'he; "we are in the pouts since this "morning." I asked what might be 'the cause of these pouts. Blamzé told 'us, that you had made him an assig-'nation; that he never came; that you 'were piqued at it; that he had made 'up that this morning; that you play-'ed the child; that he was in a hurry 'to conclude; that you had demanded 'time for reflection; and that, tired 'out with your *ifs* and your *buts*, he 'had left you in the lurch. He told 'us, that you wanted to set off with a 'serious engagement; that he had some 'inclination to it; but that he had not 'time enough on his hands; that, on 'calculating the strength of the citadel, 'he had judged that it might sustain a 'siege; but that nothing would do for 'him but a surprize. "It is an ex-"ploit that may suit some of you," 'added he; "you are young, it is the "time when one loves to encounter "difficulties, in order to overcome them; "but I forewarn you, that virtue is her "fort, and sensibility her weak part: "every thing was concluded, if I had "taken the trouble to play the passio-"nate lover!" I was fully persuaded 'that he lyed,' resumed the young man, 'but I had the prudence to be silent, 'Clairfont was not so patient as I: he 'signified to him, that he did not be-'lieve one word of his story; and at 'this declaration they went out toge-'ther. I followed them. Clairfont re-'ceived a wound.'—'And Blamzé—?' 'Blamzé has two, of which he will not 'recover without some difficulty. While 'I helped him to get into his coach, "If Clairfont," said he, "knows how "to make an advantage of this adven-"ture, he will carry Lucilia. A woman "defends herself but ill against a man "who defends her so well. Tell him "that I dispense with this being a se-"cret to her; it is just that she should "know what she owes to her knight."

Lucilia had all the difficulty in the world to conceal the trouble and consternation which this story gave her. She feigned a head-ache, and it is well known that a head-ache, in a handsome woman, is a civil way of dismissing impertinents: so they left her alone at their rising from table.

Delivered up to herself, Lucilia could not console herself for having been the subject of a duel, which would make her the town-talk. She was strongly touched by the warmth with which Clairfont had revenged the affront offered her; but what an humiliation to her if this adventure should make a noise, and Lisere should be informed of it? Happily the secret was kept. Pomblac and Clairfont made a point of saving Lucilia's honour; and Blamzé, being cured of his wounds, was far from boasting of an imprudence by which he had been so severely punished. It will be asked, perhaps, how a man, till then so discreet, came all of a sudden to cease to be so. It is because we are under less temptation to publish favours which we obtain, than to avenge ourselves for the rigours we undergo. This first indiscretion had like to have cost him his life. He was for a month on the brink of the grave. Clairfont had less difficulty to get his wound cured, and Lucilia saw him again with a tenderness hitherto unknown to him. If we attach ourselves to any one who has exposed his life for us, we attach ourselves as naturally to the person for whom we have exposed our life; and such services, perhaps, are stronger ties to the person who has performed them, than to the party for whom they were performed. Clairfont then became desperately in

love

love with Lucilia; but the more she owed him in return, the less he dared to require any thing of her; he found a sensible pleasure in being generous, and he ceased to be so if he availed himself of the rights he had acquired to Lucilia's gratitude: accordingly, he was more timorous than if he had merited nothing; but Lucilia read his soul, and this delicacy took the strongest hold of her. In the mean time, the fear of appearing to want gratitude, or the dread of carrying it too far, made her dissemble her knowledge of the intelligence Pomblac had given her; thus the good-will she testified towards Clairfont appeared free and disinterested, and he was so much the more affected by it. Their mutual inclination every day made a sensible progress. They sought one another with their eyes, conferred with intimacy, listened to each other with complaisance, gave one another an account of their proceedings, in reality, without affectation, and, as it were, for the sake of saying something; but with so much exactness, that they knew, almost to a minute, the hour at which they were to see each other again. Clairfont insensibly became more familiar, and Lucilia less reserved. Nothing remained but to explain themselves; for which purpose there was no need of those marvellous incidents which love sometimes sends to the assistance of bashful lovers. One day that they were alone, Lucilia let her fan drop; Clairfont picks it up, and presents it to her; she receives it with a pleasing smile; that smile inspires the lover with the courage to kiss her hand; that hand was the most beautiful hand in the world; and from the moment that Clarifont's lips were applied to it, she was unable to withdraw it. Lucilia, in her emotion, made a slight effort to draw back her hand; he opposed a gentle violence, and his eyes, tenderly fixed on Lucilia's eyes, entirely disarmed her. Their looks had expressed every thing before their tongues interfered; and the mutual confession of their love was made and returned in two words. 'I breathe, we love!' said Clairfont, intoxicated with joy. 'Alas! 'yes, we do love!' replied Lucilia, with a profound sigh; 'it is no longer time 'to deny it. But remember that I am 'bound by duties: those duties are in-'violable; and, if I am dear to you, 'they will be sacred.'

Lucilia's inclination was not one of those fashionable passions which stifle shame in their infancy, and Clairfont respected it too much to take advantage of it as a weakness. Transported with being loved, he for a long time confined his desires to the delicious possession of a heart pure, virtuous, and faithful. 'How 'little we love,' said he to himself in his delirium, 'when we are not made 'happy by the single pleasure of loving! 'Who was the stupid savage who first 'branded with the name of rigour that 'resistance which timid modesty op-'poses to wild desire? Is there, beautiful 'Lucilia, is there a denial which your 'looks would not soften? Can I com-'plain when you smile upon me? And 'has my soul any wishes still to form, 'when my eyes draw from yours that 'heavenly voluptuousness with which 'you intoxicate all my senses? Far be 'from us, I consent to it, all those plea-'sures followed by regrets, which would 'trouble the serenity of your life. I re-'spect your virtue as much as you cherish 'it yourself; and I should never pardon 'myself the having caused any remorse 'to spring up in the bosom of inno-'cence itself.' Sentiments so heroick charmed Lucilia; and Clairfont, more tender every day, was every day more beloved, more happy, and more worthy to be so. But at length the railleries of his friends, and the suspicions they excited in him with respect to that virtue which he adored, embittered his happiness. He became gloomy, uneasy, jealous; every thing vexed him, every thing gave him umbrage. Lucilia every day perceived her chain become closer and heavier; every day there were new complaints to hear, new reproaches to undergo. Every man that she received with civility was a rival whom she must banish. The first sacrifices that he required were made without opposition; he demanded new ones, he obtained them; he wanted still more, she was weary of obeying him. Clairfont imagined he saw in Lucilia's impatience an invincible attachment to the connections which he prohibited; and that love, at first so delicate and submissive, became fierce and tyrannical. Lucilia was terrified; she sought to appease him, but to no purpose. 'I will not believe,' said the imperious Clairfont, 'I will not 'believe that you love me till you live 'for me alone, as I do for you. What!

'if

'if I poſſeſs, if I fill your ſoul, what do 'you do with this troubleſome crowd? 'Ought it to coſt you any thing to baniſh 'what afflicts me? Would it coſt me 'any pain to renounce ever thing that 'would diſpleaſe you? What do I ſay? 'Is it not a continual violence that I 'do myſelf to ſee any thing but Lucilia? Would to Heaven we were freed 'from this crowd, which beſieges you, 'and which deprives me every moment 'either of your looks or your thoughts! 'The ſolitude that ſo terrifies you would 'compleat all my wiſhes. Are not our 'ſouls of the ſame nature? or the love 'which you think you feel, is it not 'the ſame that I feel? You complain 'that I demand ſacrifices of you! Require, Lucilia, require in your turn; 'chuſe the moſt painful, the moſt grievous trials; you ſhall ſee whether I 'heſitate. There is no connection which 'I would not break, no effort which I 'would not make; or rather I ſhould 'not make any. The pleaſure of gratifying you will make me amends, 'will ſerve inſtead of every thing; and 'what they call denials would be to me 'enjoyments.'—'You think ſo, Clairfont,' replied the tender and ingenuous Lucilia, 'but you deceive yourſelf. 'Each of theſe denials is but little; 'but all together make up a great deal. 'It is the continuance of them that is 'tireſome: you have made me know 'by experience, that no complaiſance is 'inexhauſtible.' While ſhe ſpoke thus, Clairfont's eyes, ſparkling with impatience, were ſometimes turned up to heaven, and ſometimes fixed on her. 'Believe me,' continued Lucilia, 'the 'ſacrifices of true love are made in the 'heart, and under the veil of myſtery: 'ſelf-love alone demands publick ones; 'to that victory is little; it aſpires to 'the honours of a triumph; and that 'is what you exact.'

'What a cold analyſis,' cried he, 'and what vain metaphyſicks! Love, 'to be ſure, reaſons thus! I love you, 'Madam; nothing, to my misfortune, 'is truer; I would ſacrifice a thouſand 'lives to pleaſe you; and whatever may 'be this ſentiment which you call ſelf-love, it detaches me from the whole 'world to deliver myſelf up ſolely to 'you; but in abandoning myſelf thus, 'I would poſſeſs you in the ſame manner. Cleon, Linval, Pomblac, all 'theſe are ſufficient to make me uneaſy: I cannot anſwer for myſelf. 'After this, if you love me, nothing 'ought to be more precious to you than 'my repoſe; and my uneaſineſs, were 'it even a folly, you ought to diſſipate. 'But why do I ſay a folly? You render my alarms and ſuſpicions but too 'reaſonable. And how ſhould I be 'eaſy, when I ſee that every one who 'comes near you engages you more than 'myſelf?'

'Ah, Sir! what acknowledgments 'do I owe you?' ſaid Lucilia with a ſigh; 'you make me ſee the depth of 'the abyſs into which love was going 'to plunge me. Yes, I ſee that there 'is no ſlavery comparable to that which 'a jealous lover impoſes.'—'I, Madam! do I make you a ſlave? Have 'not you even an abſolute empire over 'me? do not you do what you pleaſe 'with me?'—'Enough, Sir: I have 'ſuffered a long time; I flattered myſelf; but you now draw me out of 'my illuſion, and nothing can lead me 'into it again. Be my friend, if you 'can be ſo: it is the only title that remains to you with me.'—'Ah, cruel 'woman! would you have my death?' 'I want nothing but your eaſe and my 'own.'—'You overwhelm me. What 'is my crime?'—'Loving yourſelf too 'well, and not eſteeming me enough.' —'Ah! I ſwear to you—' 'Swear 'nothing: your jealouſy is a vice in 'your diſpoſition, and the diſpoſition 'never corrects itſelf. I know you, 'Clairfont; I begin to dread you, and 'ceaſe to love you. This very moment 'I ſee my frankneſs makes you deſperate; but of two puniſhments I chuſe 'the ſhorteſt; and by taking away from 'you the right of being jealous, I create 'you the happy neceſſity of ceaſing to 'be ſo.'—'I know you in my turn,' replied Clairfont with a ſtifled rage: 'the delicacy of a ſenſible ſoul ill agrees 'with the levity of yours; it is a 'Blamzé that you muſt have for a lover, 'and I was a fool to take it ill . . . .' —'Go no farther,' interrupted Lucilia, 'I know all that I owe to you; but I 'retire to ſpare you the ſhame of having 'reproached me with it.'

Clairfont went off in a rage, and fully reſolved never more to reviſit a woman whom he had ſo tenderly loved, and who had diſmiſſed him with ſo much inhumanity.

Lucilia, reſtored to herſelf, found herſelf,

herself, as it were, relieved from a burden that overwhelmed her. But, on one side, the dangers of love, which she had just experienced; on the other, the sad prospect of everlasting indifference; suffered her to hope hereafter for nothing but cruel disquietudes, or insupportable dulness. 'What,' said she, 'has Heaven given me a sensible heart only to 'make me the sport of a fop, the victim 'of a tyrant, or the gloomy companion 'of a kind of philosopher, neither affected nor moved at any thing!' These reflections plunged her into a languor which she was not able to conceal: her company perceived it, and became soon as melancholy as herself. The women, to whom her house was a rendezvous, were alarmed at it. 'She is lost,' said they, 'if we draw her not out of this 'sad state; she is disgusted with the 'world: she loves nothing but soli'tude; the symptoms of her melan'choly become every day more terrible; 'and, by the force of some violent pas'sion which agitates her, it is to be 'feared that she will fall again into the 'power of her husband. Do we know 'nobody to turn this young head? 'Blamzé himself set about it the wrong 'way, and did not succeed: as to Clair'font, on whom we depended, he is a 'little fool who loves like a madman; 'no wonder she should be affronted.'—'Hold,' said Cephisa, after being lost in thought for some time, 'Lucilia has 'a romantick way of thinking; she 'must have something in the fairy taste, 'and the magnificent Dorimon is ex'actly the man that suits her. She 'will grow mad for him, I am sure; 'let us engage him only to go and in'vite her to supper at his fine country'house: I will take upon me to give him 'his lesson.' The party was accepted, and Dorimon made acquainted with it.

Dorimon was the man in the world who knew best the most able artists, received them with the best grace, and recompensed them most liberally; accordingly he had the reputation of a connoisseur, and a man of taste.

If, some centuries hence, this tale should be read, they may imagine it mere fiction, and the habitation I am going to describe may pass for a fairy castle; but it is not my fault if the luxury of our times comes into competition with the marvellous of fables, and if, in the representation of our follies, probability should be wanting to truth.

On the rich banks of the Seine arises, in form of an amphitheatre, a small eminence exposed to the first rays of the morning, and the ardent fires of noon. The forest which crowns it, defends it from the chilling blast of the north, and the watery influence of the west. From the summit of the hill fall in cascades three copious springs of water purer than chrystal, which the industrious hand of art has conducted by a thousand windings over green slopes. Sometimes these waters divide themselves, and glide along in meanders; sometimes they reunite in basons, in which the heavens behold themselves with delight; then they precipitate themselves, and pour along, dashing against rocks cut out into grottos in which the chizzel has imitated the fanciful varieties of Nature. The Seine, which forms a bow at the foot of the hill, receives them into his peaceable bosom; and their fall recals to our minds those fabulous times in which the nymphs of the fountains descended into the humid palace of the rivers, to temper the ardours of youth and love.

An ingenious whimsicalness seems to have designed the gardens watered by these streams. All sides of this smiling scene agree without sameness: the very symmetry is striking; the eye roves without lassitude, and reposes without dulness. A noble elegance, a richness well managed, a bold and yet delicate taste, have been employed in embellishing them. Nothing is neglected, nothing forced or laboured with too much art. The concourse of simple beauties forms all it's magnificence; and the equilibrium of masses, joined to the variety of forms, produces that beautiful harmony which forms the delight of beholders.

Groves ornamented with statues, lattice-work fashioned into arbours and bowers, decorate all the known gardens; but these riches, displayed without understanding and taste, generally excite nothing more than a cold and dull admiration, soon attended with satiety. Here the disposition and connection of the parts form, of a thousand different sensations, but one continued enchantment. The second object that is discovered adds to the pleasure raised by

the

the first; and both are still farther embellished by the charms of the new object that succeeds, without effacing them.

This delicious landscape is terminated by a palace of such airy architecture, that the Corinthian order itself has less elegance and lightness. Here the columns imitated the palm-trees united in arbours. The roof of the vault, formed of palms, composes a chapiter more natural and as noble as the vase of Callimachus. These palms were interwoven among each other in the interstices of the columns, and their natural wreathings concealed from the deceived eye the heaviness of the entablature. As these columns are sufficient for the weight of the edifice, they leave a continued transparency to the walls, by means of chasms artfully contrived. We see none of those double roofs which crush our modern architecture; and the frightful irregularity of our Gothick chimnies is lost in the crown-work.

The interior luxury of the palace is suitable to the magnificence without. It is, in short, the temple of the arts and of taste. The pencil, the chizzel, the graving tool, every thing that industry has invented for the delicacies of life, is there displayed with a discreet profusion; and the Pleasures, the daughters of Opulence, there flatter the soul through all the senses.

Lucilia was dazzled with so much magnificence; the first evening appeared to her a dream; it was nothing but one continued scene of shews and feastings, of which she plainly perceived herself was the divinity. The earnestness, the vivacity, the gallantry with which Dorimon did the honours of this beautiful dwelling, the changes of scene which he produced with one single look, the absolute empire which he seemed to exercise over the arts and pleasures, recalled to Lucilia's imagination every thing that she had read of the most celebrated enchanters. She dared not trust her eyes, and even thought herself enchanted. If Dorimon had availed himself of the intoxication into which she was plunged, the dream perhaps had ended after the manner of modern romances. But Dorimon was merely gallant; and all he had the courage to permit himself to do, was to ask Lucilia to come sometimes and embellish his hermitage; for so he called this mansion.

Lucilia's companions had observed her with attention. The most experienced judged that Dorimon was too much taken up with his magnificence, and too little with his happiness. 'He 'ought,' said they, 'to have seized the 'first moment of surprize: it is a kind of 'transport which we do not feel twice.'

In the mean time, Lucilia's head being filled with all that she had just seen, she formed to herself the most wonderful idea of Dorimon himself. So much gallantry bespoke an imagination brisk and sprightly, a cultivated genius, a delicate taste, and a lover, if ever there was one, wholly taken up with the care of pleasing. This portrait, though a little too flattering, was not wholly unlike. Dorimon was yet young, of an engaging figure, and a most joyous temper. His wit was all in sallies: he had in his way of thinking little warmth, but much refinement. Nobody said more gallant things; but he had not the gift of enforcing them: every body loved to hear him, but nobody believed him. He was the most seducing man in the world for a coquette, the least dangerous to a woman of sentiment.

She consented to see him again at his own house, and this gave occasion to new entertainments. But in vain had the gallantry of Dorimon re-assembled there all the pleasures which she had given birth to; in vain were these pleasures varied every instant with as much art as taste: Lucilia was at first slightly moved, soon after satiated; and before the close of the day, she conceived it possible to grow dull in this delicious abode. Dorimon, who never quitted her, exerted all the talents of pleasing; he held her in discourse on a thousand ingenious subjects, he mingled also some soft things with them; but still this was not what she had conceived. She thought to find a god, and Dorimon was but a man; the pomp of his house eclipsed him; proportions were not observed; and Dorimon, while he surpassed himself, was all the while inferior to the idea which every thing around him inspired.

He was very far from suspecting the injury which this comparison did him in the imagination of Lucilia, and he waited only one happy moment to avail himself of his advantages. After the concert, and before supper, he led her, as it were by chance, into a solitary closet, where she might go, he said, and

ruminate, when she should have any moments of pouting. The door opens, and Lucilia sees her image reflected a thousand times in the dazzling pier-glasses; the voluptuous paintings with which the pannels were covered, multiplied themselves around her. Lucilia, admiring herself, thought she beheld the goddess of Loves. At this sight an exclamation of surprize and admiration escaped her, and Dorimon seized the instant of this sudden emotion. 'Reign 'here; there is your throne,' said he to her, shewing her a sofa, which the hand of fairies had sown with flowers. 'My throne!' said Lucilia, seating herself, and with a tone of gaiety; 'well, aye, 'I like it pretty well, and I find myself 'the queen of a mighty pretty people.' She spoke of the multitude of Loves which she perceived in the glasses. 'A-'midst these subjects, will you conde-'scend, Madam, to admit me?' said Dorimon with ardour, and throwing himself at her feet. 'Ah! as to you,' said she with a serious air, 'you are no 'child;' and at these words she would have got up, but he retained her with a strong hand, and the effort she made to escape rendered him still bolder. 'Where am I, then?' said she with terror: 'let me go; let me go, I say; or 'my cries——' These words awed him. 'Excuse, Madam,' said he, 'an 'imprudence, of which you are your-'self in some measure the cause. To 'come here *tête-à-tête*, and repose your-'self on this sofa, as you have done, is 'giving to understand, according to 'the received custom, that a little vio-'lence would not be ill taken. With 'you I see plainly that it means no-'thing; we misunderstand each other.' —'Oh! very much,' said Lucilia, going out in a rage; and Dorimon followed her, a little confounded at his mistake. Happily their absence had not been long enough to give time for slander to speak ill of it. Lucilia, dissembling her perturbation, told the company that she had just been seeing a very fine cabinet. They ran there in a body; and their exclamations of admiration were only interrupted by the coming in of supper.

The sumptuousness of this feast seemed to improve still upon all the pleasures that they had tasted. But Dorimon endeavoured in vain to do the honours of it; he had lost that gaiety which was so natural to him; and Lucilia replied to the gallant things they addressed to her, in order to draw her out of her reverie, only by a forced smile, with which good-breeding endeavours to disguise ill-humour.

'There,' said her friends to her, on going home with her, 'there now is a 'man who suits you: with him life 'is a continual enchantment; it ap-'pears as if all the pleasures obeyed his 'voice; the moment he commands, they 'arrive in troops.'

'There are some,' said Lucilia coldly, 'which cannot be commanded: they 'are above riches; we find them only 'in our hearts.'—'Upon my word, my 'dear,' said Cephisa to her, 'you are 'very difficult.'—'Yes, Madam, very 'difficult,' replied she with a sigh: and during the rest of the journey they kept a profound silence. 'This is nothing 'but a handsome woman spoiled,' said her friends, at quitting her; 'yet if 'her whims were chearful ones, we 'might amuse ourselves with them; but 'nothing in the world is more gloomy. 'It was worth while indeed to separate 'from her husband, to be a prude to 'the rest of the world!'

'Is this, then, the world so much 'boasted of?' said Lucilia, on her side; 'I have passed rapidly through every 'thing agreeable in it: what have I 'found? a coxcomb, a jealous lover, 'a vain man, who arrogates to himself, 'as so many charms, his gardens, his 'palace, and his entertainments, and 'who thinks that the severest virtue can 'desire no better than to yield to him. 'Ah, how I hate those makers of ro-'mances, who have lulled me with their 'fables! My imagination filled with a 'thousand chimeras, I thought my hus-'band insipid; and yet he is worth more 'than all I have seen. He is plain; 'but is not his plainness a thousand 'times preferable to the vain pretensions 'of a Blamzé? He is temperate in his 'affections, and what would become of 'me if he were violent and passionate 'like Clairfont? He loved me little, 'but he loved only me; and if I had 'been reasonable, he loved me enough 'to make me happy. I had not with 'him those pompous and noisy pleasures 'which intoxicate at first, and soon af-'ter cloy: but his complaisance, his 'sweetness, his delicate attentions, fur-'nished me every moment with plea-

'sures,

'sures, the most pure and solid, if I 'had but known how to relish them. 'Fool that I was! I pursued illusions, 'and fled happiness itself: it is placed 'in the silence of the passions, the equi-'librium and repose of the soul. But, 'alas! it is a fine time to acknowledge 'my errors, when they have made me 'lose the friendship, the confidence, per-'haps the esteem, of my husband. Thank 'Heaven! I have nothing to reproach 'myself with but the indiscretions of my 'age.—But is Lisere obliged to believe 'me in this point, and would he vouch-'safe to hear me?—Ah, how difficult 'is it to return to one's duty, when we 'have once abandoned it!—Difficult! 'and why? Who hinders me? The dread 'of being humbled.—But Lisere is a 'good man; and if he has spared me 'in my errors, would he distress me in 'my reformation? I have but to detach 'myself from a pernicious society, to 'live at home with such of my female 'friends as my husband respects, and 'whom I can see without blushing. All 'the while that he has seen me delivered 'up to the world, he has never come 'near me; but if he sees me restored to 'myself, he will condescend, perhaps, to 'recal me to him; and if his heart be 'not restored to me, the only consola-'tion that remains to me, is that of 'rendering myself worthy of it: I shall 'be at least reconciled to myself, if I 'cannot be so to my husband.'

Lisere, full of grief, had kept sight of her through all her whirl of company: he depended on the justness of her way of thinking, and the probity of her soul. 'She will perceive,' said he, 'the frivo-'lousness of the pleasures which she 'seeks, the folly of the women, the va-'nity of the men, the falsity of both; 'and, if she returns virtuous, her vir-'tue will be but the more confirmed by 'the dangers it has run. But will she 'have escaped all the shelves that sur-'round her, the charms of flattery, the 'snares of seduction, the attractions 'of pleasure? We despise the world 'when we know it thoroughly; but we 'give ourselves up to it before we know 'it, and the heart is frequently lost be-'fore reason enlightens it. O Lucilia!' cried he, looking at the portrait of his wife, which in solitude was his only con-versation; 'O Lucilia! you were so de-'serving of being happy! and I flatter-'ed myself that you would be so with 'me. Alas! perhaps some one of those 'handsome corrupters, who form at 'once the ornament and misfortune of 'the world, is at this very time employ-'ed in seducing her innocence, and is 'bent upon her defeat, merely for the 'pleasure of boasting of it. What, 'would my wife's shame raise an eter-'nal barrier between us! It would no 'longer be permitted me to live with 'her, from whom death alone ought to 'separate me! I have betrayed her in 'abandoning her. Heaven had chosen 'me for the guardian of her imprudent 'and frail youth. I have consulted 'only custom, and I have been struck 'only by the frightful idea of being 'hated as a tyrant.'

While Lisere floated thus in this cruel uncertainty, Lucilia was not less agitated between the desire of returning, and the dread of being repulsed. Twenty times had she risen, after passing the night in sighs and tears, with the resolution of going to wait his rising, in order to throw herself at his feet, and ask his pardon. But a shame, well known to sensible and delicate souls, had still witheld her footsteps. If Lisere did not despise her, if he still preserved any feeling for her, any esteem; from the time when she had broken off with her parties, from the time that she had lived retired and soli-tary, how came it that he had never vouchsafed to see her even once? Every day, as he went by, he enquired after his lady's health; she heard of it: she hoped that at last he would ask to see her; each day this hope was renewed; she expect-ed, all trembling, the moment of Li-sere's calling; she drew as near as pos-sible, in order to listen to him, and re-tired in tears, after having heard him ask, as he went along, '*How does my* '*Lady do?*' She could have wished to have Lisere informed of her repentance, of her return to herself: 'But to whom 'can I trust? said she; 'to friends! is 'there one of them faithful enough, 'discreet enough, wise enough, for so 'delicate an interposition? Some of them 'might have the talents, but had not 'the zeal; and others had the zeal, but 'not the talents: besides, it is so hard 'to trust to others what we dare not 'confess ourselves! A letter . . . .; 'but what shall I write to him? Gene-'ral expressions would not touch him, 'and particulars are so humiliating!' At length a thought came into her head,

by which her delicacy and sensibility were equally satisfied. Lisere had absented himself for two days, and Lucilia seized the opportunity of his absence to execute her design.

Lisere had an old servant, whom Lucilia saw melting into tears at the moment of their separation, and whose zeal, honesty, and discretion, were well known to her. 'Ambrose,' said she to him, 'I have a favour to ask of you.'—'Ah, Madam!' said the good man, 'command me; I am yours, with all 'my soul: would to God that you and 'my master loved one another as I love 'you! I know not which of you is 'wrong; but I am sorry for you both: 'it would be delightful to see you together, and I see nothing here which 'does not give me sorrow, ever since 'you have been on ill terms.'—'It is 'perhaps my fault,' said Lucilia, humiliated; 'but, my dear Ambrose, the 'evil is not without remedy: only do 'what I shall tell you. You know 'that my portrait is in your master's 'chamber.'—'O yes, Madam, he 'knows it very well too; for he sometimes shuts himself up with it for 'whole days: it is all his consolation. 'He looks at it, he talks to it, he sighs 'most pitifully; and I see plainly that 'the poor gentleman would still much 'rather converse with you than with your 'picture.'—'You tell me very comfortable news, my dear Ambrose; but go 'and take away that portrait privately; 'and chuse, in order to bring it me, a 'time when you may not be seen by 'any body.'—'I, Madam, deprive my 'master of all that he holds dearest in 'the world! rather ask my life.'—'Be assured,' replied Lucilia, 'my design is not to deprive him of it. To'morrow evening thou shalt come and 'fetch it, to put it in it's place again: 'I will only beg of you to say nothing 'to my husband.'—'Very well,' said Ambrose; 'I know that you are good'ness itself, and you would not now, 'at the latter end of my life, give me 'the mortification of having made my 'master uneasy.' The faithful Ambrose executed Lucilia's order. She had in her portrait the tender and languishing air which was natural to her; but her look was serene, and her hair set with flowers. She sent for her painter, ordered him to draw her with her hair dishevelled, and to paint the tears trickling from her eyes. As soon as her idea was carried into execution, the picture was replaced in Lisere's apartment. He comes into it, and his eyes are soon raised on the dear object. It is easy to conceive how great was his surprize. The dishevelled hair strikes him first: he draws near, and sees the tears flow. 'Ah!' cried he; 'ah, Lucilia! are these 'the tears of repentance? Is that the 'sorrow of love?' He goes out transported; he flies to her; he seeks her with his eyes, and he finds her in the same situation as the picture had represented her. Immoveable for a moment, he eyes her with tenderness; and suddenly throwing himself at her feet, 'Is 'it really true,' said he, 'that my wife 'is restored to me?'—'Yes,' said Lucilia, with sighs; 'yes, if you think her 'still worthy of you?'—'Can she have 'ceased to be so,' replied Lisere, locking her in his arms. 'No, my dear, 'be comforted; I know your soul, and 'I have never ceased to mourn and to 'esteem you. You would not return 'to me, if the world had been able to 'seduce you, and this voluntary return 'is the proof of your virtue.'—'Oh! 'thank Heaven!' said she, her heart being eased by the tears which flowed in abundance from her eyes; 'thank 'Heaven! I have no shameful weak'ness to blush at: I have been foolish, 'but not dishonest.'—'If I doubted it, 'would you now be in my bosom?' replied Lisere; and at these words —— but who can describe the transports of two sensible hearts; which, after having groaned under a cruel separation, were reunited for ever! On learning their reconciliation, the family were filled with joy; and the good Ambrose said, his eyes swimming with tears, 'God be praised! I shall now die con'tent.'

From that day, the tender union of this pair serves as an example to all those of their age. Their divorce has convinced them that the world had nothing that could make either of them amends; and this is what I call A HAPPY DIVORCE.

ANNETE

ANNETE AND LUBIN.

A TRUE STORY.

IF it be dangerous to tell every thing to children, it is more dangerous ſtill to leave them in ignorance of every thing. There are grievous crimes according to the laws, which are not ſo in the eyes of Nature; and we are now going to ſee into what an abyſs the latter leads innocence when ſhe has a fillet over the eyes.

Annete and Lubin were the children of two ſiſters. Theſe ſtrict ties of blood ought to be incompatible with thoſe of marriage: but Annete and Lubin had no ſuſpicion that there were in the world other laws than the ſimple laws of Nature. From the age of eight years they kept ſheep together on the ſmiling banks of the Seine. They now touched on their ſixteenth; but their youth differed not from infancy but by a warmer ſentiment of mutual friendſhip.

Annete, beneath a plain country coif, bound back negligently her ebon hair. Two large blue eyes ſparkled beneath her long eye-laſhes, and expreſſed moſt innocently every thing which the dull eyes of our old coquettes endeavour to expreſs. Her roſy lips ſeemed to ſolicit to be kiſſed. Her complexion, tanned by the ſun, was enlivened by that light ſhade of purple which colours the down of the peach. Every part of her, which the veils of modeſty concealed from the rays of noon, effaced the whiteneſs of the lily: we thought we ſaw the head of a lively Brunette on the ſhoulders of a beautiful Blonde.

Lubin had that deciſive, open, and joyous air, which proclaims a free and contented mind. His look was that of deſire, his laugh the laugh of joy. When he burſt out, he diſplayed teeth whiter than ivory. The freſhneſs of his round cheeks invited the hand to pat them. Add to all this a noſe in the air, a dimple in the chin, white ſilver locks curled by the hand of Nature, a genteel make, a deliberate pace, the frankneſs of the golden age, which ſuſpects and bluſhes at nothing. This was the portrait of Annete's couſin.

Philoſophy brings man back nearer to Nature; and it is for this reaſon that inſtinct ſometimes reſembles it. I ſhould not be ſurprized, then, if my ſhepherds ſhould be imagined to be ſomewhat philoſophical; but I forewarn my readers that it is without their knowing it.

As they both went frequently to ſell fruits and milk in the city, and as people were glad to ſee them, they had an opportunity of obſerving what paſſed in the world, and of giving an account to each other of their little reflections. They compared their lot to that of the moſt opulent citizens, and found themſelves happier and wiſer. 'The ſenſeleſs creatures!' ſaid Lubin; during 'the fineſt part of the year they ſhut 'themſelves up in quarries! Is it not 'true, Annete, that our hut is preferable to thoſe magnificent priſons which 'they call palaces? When the thatch 'that covers us is burnt up by the ſun, 'I go to the neighbouring foreſt, and 'in leſs than an hour make you a new 'houſe, more chearful than the former. 'The air and the light are ours. A 'branch leſs gives us the freſhneſs of 'the eaſt or the north; a branch more 'defends us from the heats of the ſouth, 'and rains of the weſt: that is not very 'dear, Annete?'

'No, truly,' ſaid ſhe: 'and I cannot think why, in the fine weather, 'they do not come all, two and two, 'to live in a pretty hut. Have you ſeen, 'Lubin, thoſe tapeſtries of which they 'are ſo vain? What compariſon between them and our beds of verdure? 'How we ſleep on them! how we 'wake!'—'And you, Annete, have 'you remarked what trouble they take 'to give a rural air to the walls which 'ſhut them up? Thoſe landſcapes which 'they endeavour to imitate, Nature 'has made for us: it is for us that the 'ſun ſhines; it is for us that the ſeaſons delight to vary themſelves.'—'Right,' ſaid Annete; 'I carried the 'other day ſome ſtrawberries to a lady 'of quality; they were entertaining her 'with muſick. Ah, Lubin! "what a ter"rible noiſe!" I ſaid in myſelf: "why "does ſhe not come ſome morning and "hear our nightingales?" The unhappy woman was laid down upon 'cuſhions; and ſhe yawned in ſuch a 'manner

'manner as to move pity. I asked 'what ailed her ladyship; they told me 'that she had the vapours. Do you know, Lubin, what the vapours are?' —'No, not I; but I am afraid they 'are one of those distempers which one 'gets in the city, and which take away 'from persons of quality the use of their 'legs. That is very sad, is it not, Annete? And if they were to hinder 'you from running upon the grass, 'you would be very sorry, I believe!' —'O, very sorry; for I love to run; 'especially, Lubin, when I run after 'you.'

Such was pretty nearly the philosophy of Lubin and Annete. Free from envy and ambition, their state had nothing humiliating to them, nothing painful. They passed the fine weather in that green hut, the master-piece of Lubin's art. In the evening they were obliged to lead back their flocks to the village; but the fatigue and pleasures of the day prepared them a tranquil repose. The morning recalled them to the fields, more earnest to see each other again. Sleep effaced in their lives nothing but the moment of absence: it preserved them from dulness. Nevertheless, a happiness so pure was not unalterable. The slender waist of Annete insensibly became rounder. She knew not the cause of it; Lubin himself did not suspect it.

The bailiff of the village was the first who perceived it. 'God defend you, 'Annete,' said he to her one day, 'you 'seem to be very round!'—'True,' said she, dropping a curtsey. 'But, 'Annete, what has happened to this 'handsome shape? Have you had any 'love affair?'—'Any love affair? Not 'that I know.'—'Ah, child! nothing 'is more certain; you have listened to 'some of your young fellows.'—'Yes, 'truly, I do listen to them: does that 'spoil the shape?'—'No, not that, but 'some of them have a kindness for you.' —'Kindness for me? Aye, Lubin and 'I are kind to each other all the day 'long.'—'And you have granted him 'every thing, is it not so?'—'Oh, 'Lord, yes: Lubin and I have nothing 'to refuse one another.'—'How, no-'thing to refuse one another!'—'Oh, 'nothing at all! I should be very sorry 'if he kept any thing to himself, 'and more sorry still to have him be-'lieve that I have any thing which 'is not his. Are we not cousins?'— 'Cousins?'—'Cousins german, I tell 'you.'—'O Heaven!' cried the bailiff, 'there is an adventure!'—'Aye, or else 'do you think that we should have been 'every day together? that we should 'have had but one and the same hut? I 'have heard it said, indeed, that the 'shepherds are to be dreaded; but a 'cousin is not dangerous.' The judge continued to interrogate; Annete continued to reply; insomuch that it was clearer than the day that she would shortly be a mother. Become a mother before marriage! that was a riddle to Annete. The bailiff explained it to her. 'What,' said he to her, 'the first 'time that this misfortune happened, 'did not the sun hide himself? did not 'the heavens thunder upon you?'— 'No,' replied Annete; 'I remember it 'was the finest weather in the world.' —'Did not the earth shake! did it not 'open itself?'—'Alas, no!' said Annete again, 'I saw it covered with flowers.' —'And do you know what a crime 'you have committed?'—'I know not 'what a crime is; but all that we have 'done, I swear to you, was in good 'friendship, and without any ill design. 'You think that I am big with child; I 'should never have thought it; but if 'it be so, I am very glad of it: I shall 'have a little Lubin, perhaps.'—'No,' replied the man of law, 'you will bring 'into the world a child, which will 'own neither it's father nor mother, 'which will be ashamed of it's birth, 'and will reproach you for it. What 'have you done, unhappy girl! what 'have you done! How I pity you, and 'how I pity that innocent!' These last words made Annete grow pale and tremble. Lubin found her all in tears. 'Here!' said she to him with terror, 'do you know what has happened; I 'am big with child.'—'With child! 'and by whom?'—'By you.'—'You 'joke. And how has that happened?' —'The bailiff has just explained it to 'me.'—'Well?'—'Well! when we 'thought we were only shewing kind-'ness to each other, we were making 'love.'—'That is droll!' said Lubin; 'only see how we come into the world. 'But you are in tears, my dear Annete! 'Is it this that makes you uneasy?'— 'Yes, the bailiff has made me tremble: 'my child, he said, will own neither 'it's father nor mother; he will re-

'proach

'proach us with it's birth.'—'Why?'—'Becauſe we are couſins, and have 'committed a crime. Do you know, 'Lubin, what a crime is?'—'Yes, it 'is a wicked thing. For example, it is 'a crime to take away life from any 'one; but it is not to give it. The 'bailiff does not know what he ſays.'—'Ah, my dear Lubin! go and find 'him out, I beſech thee: I am all of a 'tremble. He has put I know not 'what into my ſoul, which embitters 'all the pleaſure I had in loving thee.'

Lubin ran to the bailiff. 'A word, 'if you pleaſe, Mr. Judge,' ſaid he, accoſting him; 'you will have it that I 'am not to be the father of my own 'child, and that Annete is not to be 'it's mother?'—'Ah, wretch! dare 'you ſhew yourſelf,' ſaid the bailiff, 'after ruining this young innocent?'—'You are a wretch yourſelf,' replied Lubin. 'I have not ruined Annete; 'ſhe waits me now in our hut. But 'it is you, wicked man, that (ſhe ſays) 'have put I know not what into her 'ſoul, that grieves her; and it is very 'ill done to afflict Annete.'—'You 'young villain! it is you that have 'ſtolen from her her chief good.'—'And what is that?'—'Innocence and 'honour.'—'I love her more than my 'life,' ſaid the ſhepherd, 'and if I 'have done her any injury, I am here 'to repair it. Marry us; who hinders 'you? We aſk no better.'—'That is 'impoſſible.'—'Impoſſible! And why? 'The moſt difficult part, in my opinion, 'is over, ſeeing we are now father and 'mother.'—'And there is the crime,' cried the judge; 'you muſt ſeparate, 'you muſt fly each other.'—'Fly each 'other! And have you the heart to pro-'poſe it to me, Mr. Bailiff? And who 'is to take care of Annete and my 'child? Quit them! I would ſooner 'die.'—'The law obliges thee to it,' ſaid the bailiff. 'There is no law that 'holds good there,' replied Lubin, clapping on his hat. 'We have a child 'without you, and if it pleaſe Heaven 'we will have more, and we will love 'for ever.'—'Ah, the audacious young 'knave, what rebel againſt the law!'—'Ah, the wicked man, the bad heart, 'that wants me to abandon Annete! 'Let me go and find out our parſon,' ſaid he to himſelf; 'he is a good man, 'and will have pity on us.' The prieſt was ſeverer than the judge, and Lubin retired, confounded at having offended Heaven without knowing it. 'For, 'after all,' ſaid he ſtill, 'we have done 'nobody any harm.'

'My dear Annete,' cried Lubin, on ſeeing her again, 'every body condemns 'us; but no matter: I will never leave 'you.'—'I am big with child,' ſaid Annete, reclining her face on her two hands, which ſhe bathed with tears; 'and I cannot be your wife! Leave me, 'I am diſtreſſed; I have no longer any 'pleaſure in ſeeing you. Alas! I am 'aſhamed of myſelf, and I reproach 'myſelf for all the moments that I 'have paſſed with you.'—'Ah, the 'curſed bailiff!' ſaid Lubin: 'but for 'him we were ſo happy!'

From that moment, Annete, a prey to her grief, could not endure the light. If Lubin wanted to conſole her, he ſaw her tears ſtream afreſh: ſhe replied to his careſſes only by puſhing him off with horror. 'What, my dear Annete!' ſaid he to her, 'am I no longer the Lubin 'you loved ſo much?—'Alas! no; 'you are no longer the ſame. I tremble the moment you come near me; 'my child, who moves in my womb, and 'whom I ſhould have had ſo much joy 'in feeling, ſeems already to complain 'that I have given him my couſin for a 'father.'—'You will hate my child, 'then?' ſaid Lubin to her, ſobbing. 'Oh, no, no; I ſhall love it with all my 'ſoul!' ſaid ſhe. 'At leaſt they will 'not forbid me to love my child, to give 'him my milk and my life. But that 'child will hate it's mother: the judge 'has foretold it to me.'—'Do not men-'tion that old devil,' ſaid Lubin, claſping her in his arms, and bathing her with tears; 'your child ſhall love you, 'my dear Annete; he will love you, for 'I am his father.'

Lubin in deſpair employed all the eloquence of nature and love to diſſipate Annete's fear and grief. 'Let us ſee,' ſaid he, 'what have we done to anger 'Heaven? We have led out our flocks 'to feed in the ſame meadows; there is 'no harm in that. I have built a hut, 'you have taken pleaſure in repoſing in 'it; there is no harm in that. You 'ſlept upon my knees: I drew in your 'breath, and that I might not loſe one 'gaſp, I drew gently near you; there 'was no harm yet. It is true, that

'ſome-

'sometimes, awakened by my careſ-
'ſes——' 'Alas!' ſaid ſhe, ſighing,
'there was no harm in that.'

It was in vain that they recalled to memory all that had paſſed in the hut; they ſaw nothing but what was natural and innocent, nothing of which any body had any room to complain, nothing at which Heaven could be incenſed. 'Yet that is all,' ſaid the ſhepherd; 'where then is the crime? We are 'couſins, ſo much the worſe; but if 'that does not hinder our loving, why 'ought it to hinder our marrying? Am 'I on that account leſs the father of my 'child, and you leſs it's mother? Mark 'me, Annete! let them talk on: you 'depend on nobody; I am my own 'maſter; let us diſpoſe of ourſelves; 'every one does what he pleaſes with 'his own property. We ſhall have 'a child: ſo much the better. If 'it be a daughter, ſhe will be genteel 'and amiable, like yourſelf; if it be 'a boy, he will be alert and joyous, 'like his father. It will be a treaſure 'to us both. We will try who 'can love him beſt; and ſay what they 'will, he will know his father and 'mother by the tender care we ſhall take 'of him.' It was in vain that Lubin talked ſenſe and reaſon; Annete was not at eaſe; and her uneaſineſs redoubled every day. She did not comprehend the diſcourſe of the bailiff, and this very obſcurity rendered his reproaches and menaces more terrible.

Lubin, who ſaw her conſuming herſelf with ſorrow, ſaid to her one morning, 'My dear Annete, your grief will 'kill me; return to yourſelf, I beſeech 'you. I have this night thought of an 'expedient which may relieve us. The 'parſon told me, that if we were rich, 'the evil would be but half ſo great, 'and that by means of a good deal of 'money couſins drew themſelves out of 'trouble; let us go and find out the 'lord of the manor: he is rich, and 'not proud; he is a father to us all; 'with him a ſhepherd is a man; and 'I have heard it ſaid in the village, that 'he likes that they ſhould get children. 'We will relate our adventure to him, 'and beg him to aſſiſt us in repairing 'the evil, if there be any.'—'What, 'would you dare?' ſaid the ſhepherdeſs. 'Why not?' replied Lubin: 'my lord 'is goodneſs itſelf, and we ſhould be 'the firſt unfortunate creatures whom 'he would have left without ſuccour.'

Behold, then, Annete and Lubin directing their way towards the caſtle. They aſk to ſpeak with his lordſhip, and are permitted to appear. Annete, with her eyes fixed on the ground, and her hands placed one in another over her round little waiſt, makes a modeſt curtſey. Lubin makes a leg, and pulls off his hat, with the ſimple grace of Nature. 'My lord,' ſaid he, 'here is Annete 'big with child, ſaving your preſence, 'and it is I alone who have done her 'that injury. Our judge ſays that we 'ought to be married, in order to get 'children; I deſire him to marry us. 'He ſays that is impoſſible, becauſe we 'are couſins; but I think the thing may 'be done, ſeeing that Annete is big 'with child, and that it is not more 'difficult to be a huſband than a father. 'The bailiff ſends us to the devil, and 'we recommend ourſelves to you.' The good man had much ado to withold laughing at Lubin's harangue. 'Chil-'dren,' ſays he, 'the bailiff is right. 'But take courage, and tell me how 'the affair happened.' Annete, who had not thought Lubin's manner ſufficiently touching; (for Nature teaches women the art of ſoftening and gaining upon men, and Cicero is but a novice to a young female petitioner.) Annete then ſpoke. 'Alas, my lord!' ſaid ſhe, 'nothing is more plain or more natural 'than all that has happened to us. Lubin 'and I from our infancy kept ſheep to-'gether: we careſſed one another while 'infants; and when we ſee one another 'continually, we grow up without per-'ceiving it. Our parents are dead: we 'were alone in the world. "If we "love not one another," ſaid I, "who "will love us?" Lubin ſaid the ſame. 'Leiſure, curioſity, and I know not 'what beſides, made us try every me-'thod of teſtifying that we loved one 'another; and you ſee what has befallen 'us. If I have done ill, I ſhall die 'with ſorrow. All that I deſire is, to 'bring my child into the world, in or-'der to conſole him when I ſhall be no 'more.'—'Ah, my lord,' ſaid Lubin, burſting into tears, 'prevent Annete 'from dying. I ſhould die too, and 'that would be a pity. If you knew 'how we lived together, you ſhould 'have ſeen us before this old bailiff 'ſtruck terror into our ſouls! it was 'then who ſhould be gayeſt. See, now, 'how pale and ſorrowful ſhe is; ſhe 'whoſe complexion could have defied

'all

'all the flowers of the spring. What 'distheartens her most is, that they 'threaten her that her child will re-'proach her with it's birth.' At these last words, Annete was not able to contain her sobs. 'He will come, then,' said she, 'to reproach me in my grave. 'I only ask of Heaven to live long 'enough to give him suck; and may I 'die the instant he has no need of his 'mother!' At these words she covered her face with her apron, to hide the tears which overflowed it.

The wise and virtuous mortal, whose succour they implored, had too much sensibility not to be touched with this affecting scene. 'Go, children,' said he, 'your innocence and love are equally 'respectable. If you were rich, you 'would obtain the permission of loving 'one another, and of being united. It 'is not just that your misfortune should 'be deemed a crime.' He disdained not to write to Rome in their favour, and Benedict XIV. consented with pleasure that these lovers should be made man and wife.

THE SAMNITE MARRIAGES.

AN ANCIENT ANECDOTE.

LET every legislator, who would assure himself of the hearts of men, begin by ranging the women on the side of the laws and manners; let him put virtue and glory under the guard of beauty, under the tutelage of love: without this agreement he is sure of nothing.

Such was the policy of the Samnites, that warlike republick which made Rome pass under the yoke, and was a long time her rival. What made a Samnite a warrior, a patriot, a man virtuous against every trial, was the care they took to attach to all these qualities the most valuable prize of love.

The ceremony of their marriages was celebrated every year in a wide place, destined for military exercises. All the youth, who were of a sufficient age to give citizens to the republick, assembled on a solemn day. There the young men chose their wives, according to the rank which their virtues and their exploits had given them in the annals of their country. We may easily conceive what a triumph this must be to those women who had the glory of being chosen by the conquerors; and how pride and love, those two springs of the human passions, gave force to virtues on which all their success depended. They expected every year the ceremony of their marriages with a timid impatience: till then the young men and maidens of the Samnites never saw one another but in the temple, under the eyes of their mothers and prudent old men, with a modesty equally inviolable to both sexes. Indeed, this austere confinement was no restraint to the desires: the eyes and heart made a choice; but it was to the children a religious and sacred duty to confide their inclination to the authors of their days; a secret of this sort divulged was the shame of a family. This intimate communication of the dearest sentiment of their soul, this tender disclosure, which it was not permitted them to give to their desires, their regrets, their fears, but in the respectable bosom of Nature, rendered a father and mother the friends, the consolers, the support, of their children. The glory of some, the happiness of others, connected all the members of a family by the warmest interests of the human heart; and this society of pleasure and pain, cemented by habitude, and consecrated by duty, lasted till the grave. If the event did not answer their desires, an inclination which had not manifested itself abandoned it's object so much the easier, as it would have been in vain to have pursued it with obstinacy, and there was a necessity for it's giving place to the object of a new choice: for marriage was an act of duty in a citizen.

The legislator had wisely considered, that he who would not take a wife himself, depended in some measure on the wives of others: and in making a crime of adultery, he had made a duty of marriage. There was a necessity, therefore, of presenting themselves to the assembly as soon as they had attained the age pointed out by the laws, and of making a choice according to their rank, though it were not also according to their desires.

Among a warlike people, beauty, even in the weaker sex, has something fierce and noble, which savours of their manners. The chace was the most familiar amusement of the Samnite maidens; their skill in drawing the bow, their nimbleness in the race, are talents unknown among us. These exercises gave their persons a wonderful ease, and their action a freedom full of graces. Unarmed, modesty was painted on their countenances; as soon as they had fastened on their quivers, their head was erected with a warlike assurance, and courage sparkled in their eyes. The beauty of the men had a majestick and serious character; and the image of battles, for ever present to their imaginations, gave to their looks a grave, commanding, and savage boldness. Amidst this warlike youth was distinguished, by the delicacy of his features, his sensible and tender air, the son of the brave Telespon, one of the old Samnites who had fought best for liberty. This old man, in resigning up his arms to the hands of his son, had said to him, 'My son, I hear sometimes the old men, 'with an ill-natured raillery, telling 'me that I ought to clothe you like a 'woman, and that you would have made 'a pretty huntress. These railleries 'afflict your father; but he consoles 'himself in the hope that Nature has at 'least made no mistake in the heart 'which she has given you.'—'Take 'courage, my father,' replied the young man, piqued with emulation; 'these 'old men will, perhaps, be glad one 'day that their children follow my ex-'ample: let them take me for a girl 'here, the Romans shall not be mistaken 'in me.' Agatis kept his word with his father, and displayed in his first campaigns an intrepidity, an ardour, which changed their railleries into encomiums. His companions said to one another with astonishment, 'Who would have thought 'this effeminate body was filled with so 'manly a courage? Cold, hunger, fa-'tigue, nothing daunts him: with his 'touching and modest air he braves 'death full as well as we.'

One day, in presence of the enemy, Agatis seeing with composure a shower of arrows falling around him; 'You 'who are so handsome, how are you so 'brave?' said one of his companions, who was remarkable for his ugliness. At these words the signal for the attack was given. 'And you, who are so 'ugly,' replied Agatis, 'will you now 'see which of us two shall carry off the 'standard of the battalion we are going 'to charge?' He said: both of them spring forward; and, in the midst of the carnage, Agatis appears with the standard in his hand.

However, he now approached the age wherein he was to enter himself in the number of married persons; and, in the quality of father, to obtain that of citizen. The young damsels, who heard of his valour with esteem, and saw his beauty with a soft emotion, envied each other his looks. One alone at last attracted them, the beautiful Cephalis.

In her were assembled, in the highest degree, that modesty and boldness, those noble and touching graces, which characterize the Samnite beauties. The laws, as I have said, had not forbid the eyes to speak; and the eyes of love are very eloquent, when it has no other language. If you have sometimes seen lovers constrained by the presence of a severe witness, do not you admire with what rapidity the whole soul unfolds itself in the lightening of one fugitive glance? A look of Agatis declared his trouble, his fears, his hope, and the emulation of virtue and glory with which love had just enflamed his heart. Cephalis seemed to forbid her eyes to meet those of Agatis; but her eyes were sometimes a little slow in obeying her, and were not cast downwards till after they had been answered. One day especially, and it was that which decided the triumph of her lover; one day her looks being fixed upon him, after remaining for some time immoveable, were turned up towards Heaven with the most tender expression. 'Ah! I understand that 'wish,' said the young man in himself; 'I understand it, and I will accomplish 'it. Charming maiden, have I flat-'tered myself too much? Did not your

'eyes,

'eyes, raised up to Heaven, beseech it 'to render me deserving of chusing you? 'Well, Heaven has listened to you; I 'feel it by the emotions of my soul. 'But, alas! all my rivals (and I shall 'have rivals without number) will dis-'pute with me this honour: a brilliant 'action depends upon circumstances; 'should any one happier than I attain 'it, he has the honour of the first choice; 'and the first choice, beautiful Ceph-a-'lis, cannot but fall upon you.'

These ideas engaged his attention without remission: they engaged also the attention of his mistress. 'If Aga-'tis had to chuse,' said she, 'he would 'fix upon me; I dare believe it: I 'have observed him well, I have tho-'roughly read his soul. Whether he 'presents himself to my companions, 'or whether he speaks to them, he 'has not with them that complaisance, 'that sweet earnestness, which he be-'trays on seeing me. I perceive also 'that his voice, naturally soft and ten-'der, has something still more sensible 'when he speaks to me. His eyes espe-'cially . . . . Oh! his eyes have said 'to me what they say to no one else; 'and would it had pleased the gods that 'he were the only one who distinguish-'ed me from the crowd! Yes, my dear 'Agatis, it would be a misfortune to 'seem handsome to any other than thee. 'What comparison between him and 'those youths who terrify me while 'they seek me out with their eyes? 'Their murderous air frightens me. 'Agatis is valiant, but has nothing 'ferocious in him; even under arms, 'we see in him I know not what that 'is moving. He will perform prodi-'gies of valour, I am sure; but after 'all, if fortune betrays love, and if some 'other has the advantage . . . . that 'thought chills me with terror.'

Cephalis dissembled not her fears to her mother. 'Put up vows,' said she to her, 'put up vows for Agatis's 'glory; you will put them up for the 'happiness of your daughter. I think, 'I am sure he loves me; and can I 'not adore him? You know that he 'has the esteem of our elders; he is the 'idol of all my companions: I see their 'confusion, their blushes, their emotion 'at his approach; one word from his 'mouth fills them with pride.'—'Very 'well,' said her mother smiling, 'if he 'loves you, he will chuse you.'—'He 'would chuse me, without doubt, if he 'had the right of chusing; but my 'mother—' 'But my daughter, he 'will have his turn.'—'His turn, alas! 'it will be a pretty time,' replied Ce-phalis, fixing her eyes on the ground. 'How, my daughter? Methinks, to 'hear you—the word is, who shall have 'you! You flatter yourself a little.'—'I do not flatter myself; I tremble; 'happy if I had known to please only 'him whom I shall always love!'

Agatis, on his side, the evening of the day on which he took the field, said to his father, embracing him, 'Adieu, 'dear author of my life; either you see 'me for the last time, or you shall see 'me again the most glorious of all the 'sons of the Samnites.'—'Well said, 'my boy: thus it is that a well-born 'son ought to take leave of his father. 'In reality, I see thee animated with an 'ardour that astonishes even myself; 'what propitious deities inspire thee?' —'What deities, my father? Nature 'and Love, the desire of imitating 'you, and of meriting Cephalis.'—'Oh! I understand; love is concerned 'in it: there is no harm in that. Come, 'tell me a little: I think I have some-'times distinguished your Cephalis a-'mong her companions.'—'Yes, my 'father, she is easily distinguished.'—'But do you know that she is very 'beautiful?'—'Beautiful! beautiful 'as glory.'—'I think I see her,' con-tinued the old man, who took a delight in animating him; 'I see in her the figure 'of a nymph.'—'Ah, my father!' cried Agatis, 'you do a great deal of honour 'to the nymphs.'—'An elegant gait?' —'And still more noble.'—'A fresh 'complexion?'—'The rose itself.'—'Long tresses braided with grace?'—'And her eyes, my father, her eyes? 'Oh! that you had seen them, when 'lifted up to Heaven after being fixed 'on me, they prayed for victory.'—'You are right, she is all charming; 'but you will have rivals.'—'Rivals! 'I have undoubtedly a thousand.'—'They will carry her off from you.'—'They will carry her off from me?'—'To tell you the truth, I am afraid of 'it; these Samnites are very brave 'young fellows!'—'Oh! let them be 'as brave as you please; that is not 'what disturbs me. Let them but give 'me an opportunity of meriting Ceph-a-'lis, you shall hear of me.' Telespon,

who till then had taken a delight in ſtimulating him, could no longer contain his tears. 'Ah! the rare preſent that 'Heaven makes us,' ſaid he, embracing him, 'when he gives us a ſenſible heart! 'It is the principle of all the virtues. 'My dear child, you overwhelm me 'with joy. There remains ſtill in my 'veins ſufficient to make one campaign; 'and you promiſe me ſuch fine things, 'that I will make this along with you.'

The day of departure, according to cuſtom, the whole army filed off before the young maidens, who were ranged on the ſpot, to animate the warriors. The good old Teleſpon marched by his ſon's ſide. 'Ah, ah!' ſaid the other old men, 'ſee Teleſpon is grown young again; 'where is he going then at his age?'—'To a wedding,' replied the good man; 'to a wedding.' Agatis made him remark Cephalis from afar, who towered above her companions with a grace perfectly celeſtial. His father, who had his eyes upon him, perceived, that in paſſing before her, that ſweet and ſerene countenance was inflamed with a martial ardour, and became terrible as the countenance of Mars. 'Courage, 'my ſon!' ſaid he to him; 'indulge thy 'paſſion, it becomes thee well.'

Part of the campaign paſſed between the Samnites and the Romans in obſerving each other, without coming to any deciſive action. The ſtrength of the two ſtates conſiſted in their armies; and the generals on both ſides acted like able officers. However, the young Samnites who were to marry, burned with impatience of coming to blows. 'I 'have done nothing yet,' ſaid one, 'worthy to be inſcribed in the annals of the 'republick; I ſhall have the ſhame of 'hearing myſelf named without any eu-'logy to diſtinguiſh me.'—'What pity,' ſaid another, 'that they vouchſafe not 'to offer us an opportunity of ſignaliz-'ing ourſelves! I ſhould have done 'wonders this campaign.'—'Our ge-'neral,' ſaid the greater part, 'will diſ-'honour us in the eyes of our elders 'and wives. If he leads us back with-'out fighting, they will have room to 'think that he miſtruſted our valour.'

But the ſage warrior, who was at their head, heard them unmoved. From his ſlowneſs and delays, he promiſed himſelf two advantages; one was to perſuade the enemy that he was weak or fearful, and to engage him, in this confidence, to an imprudent attack; the other, to ſuffer the impatience of his warriors to increaſe, and to carry their ardour to exceſs before he riſked a battle. Both theſe ſtratagems ſucceeded. The Roman general, haranguing his troops, pointed out to them the Samnites wavering, and ready to fly before them. 'The genius of Rome triumphs,' ſaid he to them; 'that of our enemies trem-'bles, and is not able to ſuſtain our 'approach. Come on, brave Romans; 'if we have not the advantage of ground, 'that of valour makes it up to us: it 'is ours; let us march.'—'There they 'are,' ſaid the Samnite general to his impatient youth; 'let us ſuffer them to 'approach within bow-ſhot, and you 'ſhall then have all the liberty imagin-'able to deſerve your wives.'

The Romans advance; the Samnites wait them with firmneſs. 'Let us fall 'upon them,' ſaid the Roman general; 'a ſtill body cannot ſuſtain the impe-'tuoſity of that which runs upon them.' On a ſudden the Samnites themſelves ſpring forward, with the rapidity of courſers when the barrier is opened to them. The Romans halt; they receive the ſhock without being broken or diſordered; and the ſkilfulneſs of their chief changes on a ſudden the attack to a defence. They fought a long time with incredible obſtinacy: to conceive it, we muſt picture to ourſelves men who had no other paſſions than love, nature, country, liberty, glory, defending in thoſe deciſive moments all thoſe intereſts at once. In one of the redoubted attacks of the Samnites, old Teleſpon was dangerouſly wounded, as he fought by the ſide of his ſon. The youth, full of love for his father, ſeeing the Romans giving way in all parts, and thinking the battle won, purſued the invincible movement of nature, and drawing his father out of the tumult, helped him to drag himſelf to ſome diſtance from the place of combat. There, at the foot of a tree, he dreſſed, with tears, the deep wound of the venerable old man. While he was drawing the dart out of it, he heard near him the noiſe of a troop of Samnites, who had been repulſed. 'Whither are you going, my 'friends?' ſaid he to them, quitting his 'father. 'You fly! this is your way.' And perceiving the left wing of the Romans uncovered; 'Come on,' ſaid he; 'let us attack their flank; they are

'van-

'vanquiſhed, if you but follow me,' This rapid evolution ſtruck terror into that wing of the Roman army; and Agatis, ſeeing them put to the rout, 'Purſue,' ſaid he, 'my friends! the road is 'open: I quit you for a moment, to 'go and aſſiſt my father.' Victory at laſt decided for the Samnites, and the Romans, too much enfeebled by their loſſes, were obliged to retire within their walls.

Teleſpon had fainted away through pain. The cares of his ſon re-animated him. 'Are they beaten?' demanded the old man. 'They are putting the 'finiſhing ſtroke to it,' ſaid the young one; 'things are in a good poſture.'— 'If ſo,' ſaid the old man, ſmiling, 'endeavour to recal me to life: it is ſweet 'to conquerors; and I would ſee thee 'married.' The good man, for a long time, had not ſtrength to ſay more; for the blood, which had flowed from his wound, had reduced him to extremity.

The Samnites, after their victory, buſied themſelves the whole night in ſuccouring the wounded; they ſpared no pains to ſave the worthy father of Agatis; and he recovered, though with ſome difficulty, of his weakneſs.

The return from the campaign was the time of their marriages, for two reaſons: one, that the reward of ſervices done their country might follow them cloſe, and that the example might thence have more force; the other, that during the winter the young huſbands might have time to give life to new citizens, before they went to expoſe their own. As the deeds of this glowing youth had been more brilliant than ever, they thought proper to give more pomp and ſplendour to the feaſt, which was to be their triumph.

There were few maidens in the ſtate, who had not, like Cephalis, ſome communication of ſentiments and deſires with ſome one of the young men; and each of them put up vows for him whoſe choice ſhe hoped to fix, if he ſhould have it in his power to chuſe.

The place in which they were to aſſemble, was a vaſt amphitheatre, entered by triumphal arches, on which were ſeen hung up the ſpoils of the Romans. The young warriors were to repair there armed at all points; the young maidens with their bow and quiver, and as well clad as the ſimplicity of a ſtate, in which luxury was unknown, permitted.

'Come, daughters,' ſaid the mothers, eager to adorn them, 'you muſt preſent 'yourſelves at this auguſt feaſt, with 'all the charms that Heaven has been 'pleaſed to grant you. The glory of 'men is to conquer, that of women to 'pleaſe. Happy thoſe who ſhall merit 'the wiſhes of theſe young and valiant 'citizens, who are now going to be adjudged the moſt worthy of giving de'fenders to the ſtate! the palm of me'rit will ſhelter their habitation, the 'publick eſteem will ſurround it. Their 'children will be the elder ſons of their 'country, and it's moſt precious hope.' While they ſpoke thus, theſe tender mothers interweaved with vine-leaves and myrtle the beautiful treſſes of theſe young virgins, and gave to the foldings of their veil that air and turn which was moſt favourable to the character of their beauty. From the knots of the girdle beneath the boſom, they created waves of the moſt elegant drapery; fixed the quiver on their ſhoulders; inſtructed them to preſent themſelves with grace, leaning on the bow; and threw back their light robe negligently, above one of their knees, in order to give their gait more eaſe and majeſty. This induſtry of the Samnite mothers was an act of piety; and gallantry itſelf, employed in the triumph of virtue, aſſumed the ſacred character of it. The maidens, admiring themſelves in the chryſtal of the pure wave, never thought themſelves ſufficiently handſome; each of them exaggerated the advantages of her rivals, and dared no longer reckon upon her own.

But of all the wiſhes formed in that great day, there were none more ardent than thoſe of the beautiful Cephalis. 'May the gods grant us our prayers,' ſaid her mother to her, embracing her; 'but, my daughter, wait their will with 'the ſubmiſſion of an humble heart! if 'they have given you ſome charms, they 'know what value to ſet upon them. 'It is for you to crown their gifts with 'the graces of modeſty. Without mo'deſty, beauty may dazzle, but will 'never touch the heart. It is by this 'that it inſpires a tender veneration, and 'obtains a kind of worſhip. Let this 'amiable modeſty ſerve as a veil to de'ſires, which, perhaps, may become 'extinct before the day cloſes, and give 'place to a new inclination.' Cephalis was not able to bear this idea without letting fall ſome tears. 'Theſe tears,' ſaid

said her mother to her, 'are unworthy 'a Samnite maiden. Learn, that of all 'the young warriors now about to af-'semble, there is not one but has la-'vished his blood for our defence, and our 'liberty; that there is not one of them 'but merits you, and towards whom you 'ought to be proud of paying the debt 'due from your country. Think of 'that, dry up your tears, and follow 'me.'

On his side, the good old Telespon conducted his son to the assembly. 'Well,' said he, 'how goes thy heart? 'I have been sufficiently pleased with 'you this campaign, and I hope they 'will speak well of it.'—'Alas!' said the tender and modest Agatis, 'I had 'but a moment for myself. I should 'perhaps have done something; but 'you were wounded. I owed all my 'attention to you. I do not reproach 'myself for having sacrificed my glory 'to you: I should be inconsolable for 'having betrayed my country; but I 'should have been no less so for having 'abandoned my father. Thank Hea-'ven! my duties were not incompatible; 'the rest is in the hand of the gods.'—'How religious we are, when we are 'afraid!' said the old man smiling. 'Confess that you were more resolute, 'when you went out to charge the Ro-'mans; but take courage, all will go 'well: I promise you a handsome wife.'

They repair to the assembly, where several generations of citizens, ranged in amphitheatre, formed a most awful sight. The circuit rounded off into an oval. On one side were seen the daughters at the feet of their mothers; on the other side, the fathers ranged above their sons: at one end sat the council of old men; at the other the youth not yet marriage-able, placed according to the degrees of their age. The new-married pairs of the preceding years crowned the circle. Respect, modesty, and silence, reigned throughout. This silence was suddenly interrupted by the noise of warlike instruments, and the Samnite general was seen to enter environed with heroes, who commanded under him. His presence made all the assembly look down. He traverses the circuit, and goes to place himself with his retinue in the midst of the sages.

The annals of the republick are opened, and a herald reads with a loud voice, according to the order of time, the testimony which the magistrates and generals had paid to the behaviour of the young warriors. He, who by any cowardice or baseness had set a blot upon his name, was condemned by the laws to the infamous punishment of celibacy, till he had redeemed his honour by some brave action: but nothing was more rare than such examples. A plain honesty, an irreproachable bravery, was the least praise that could be given a young Samnite: and it was a kind of shame to have done only one's duty. The greater part amongst them had given proofs of a courage, a virtue, which every where else would be deemed heroick, but which in the manners of that people were hardly to be distinguished, so familiar were they. Some of them raised themselves above their rivals by actions that were striking; but the judgment of the spectators became more severe in proportion as they received the report of virtues still more worthy of commendation; and those which had at first struck them, were effaced by greater strokes. The first campaigns of Agatis were of this number; but when they came to the recital of the last battle, and it was related how he had abandoned his father to rally his companions, and lead them back to the fight; this sacrifice of nature to his country carried all their suffrages: the tears ran from the eyes of the old men; those who surrounded Telespon embraced him with joy, those at a greater distance congratulated him by gesture and look. The good man smiled, and burst into tears; the very rivals of his son viewed him with respect; and the mothers, pressing their daughters in their arms, wished them Agatis for their husband. Cephalis, pale and trembling, dares not lift up her eyes: her heart, filled with joy and fear, had suspended it's motion; her mother, who supported her on her knees, dares not speak to her, for fear of betraying her, and thinks she sees all eyes fixed upon her.

As soon as the murmur of the universal applause was appeased, the herald names Parmeno, and relates, that in the last battle, the courser of the Samnite general being thrown down under him, transfixed by a deadly shaft, and the hero in his fall being for a moment defenceless, a Roman soldier was on the point of piercing him with his javelin; when Parmeno, to save the chief's life, had exposed his own, by throwing himself

ſelf before the blow, from which he had received a deep wound. 'It is certain,' ſaid the general, addreſſing himſelf to the aſſembly, 'that this brave citizen 'made a buckler for me with his body; 'and if my life be of ſervice to my 'country, it is a gift of Parmeno's.' At theſe words, the aſſembly, leſs moved, but not leſs aſtoniſhed, at Parmeno's courage than that of Agatis, beſtowed upon him the ſame eulogies; and the ſuffrages and good wiſhes were now divided between thoſe two rivals. The herald, by order of the elders, commands ſilence; and thoſe venerable judges get up to deliberate. Their opinions are oppoſed to each other for a long time with equal advantage. Some of them pretended, that Agatis ought not to have quitted his poſt to aſſiſt his father, and that he had done nothing but repair this fault by abandoning his father to rally his companions: but this unnatural ſentiment was eſpouſed by very few. The moſt aged of the elders then ſpoke, and ſaid, 'Is it not virtue that we are 'to recompenſe? The point, then, is 'only to know which of theſe two 'emotions is the moſt virtuous; to 'abandon a dying father, or to expoſe 'one's own life.' Our young warriors 'have both of them performed an action 'deciſive with reſpect to the victory: it 'is for you, virtuous citizens, to judge 'which of the two it muſt have coſt 'moſt. Of two examples equally ſer-'viceable, the moſt painful is that which 'muſt be moſt encouraged.'

Will it be believed of the manners of this people? It was decided with one voice, that it was braver to tear one's ſelf from the arms of a dying father, whom we could ſuccour, than to expoſe one's ſelf to death, even though it were inevitable; and all the ſuffrages concurred in decreeing to Agatis the honour of the firſt choice. But the conteſt about to ariſe will appear ſtill leſs probable. Their deliberations were carried on aloud; and Agatis had heard that the principles of generoſity alone made the balance incline in his favour. There aroſe in his ſoul a reproach which made him aſhamed. 'No,' ſaid he in himſelf, 'it is a ſurprize; I ought not 'to make an ill uſe of it.' He aſks leave to ſpeak; they attend in ſilence. 'A triumph which I have not merited,' ſaid he, 'would be the torment of my 'life; and in the arms of my virtuous 'ſpouſe, my happineſs would be im-'bittered by the crime of having ob-'tained her unjuſtly. You think you 'crown in me the perſon who has done 'moſt for his country; ye wiſe Sam-'nites, I muſt confeſs, that what I did, 'was not entirely done for that alone. 'I love, I longed to merit what I love; 'and if there is any glory redounds to 'me from a conduct which you vouch-'ſafe to commend, love divides it with 'virtue. Let my rival judge himſelf, 'and let him receive the prize, which I 'yield to him, if he has been more ge-'nerous than I.' How is it poſſible to expreſs the emotion which this confeſſion cauſed in all hearts! On one ſide it tarniſhed the luſtre of the actions of this young man; and on the other it gave to the character of his virtue ſomething more heroick, more ſurprizing, more uncommon, than the moſt noble devotion of life. This ſtroke of frankneſs and candour, produced with regard to theſe young rivals, two very oppoſite effects. Some, admiring them with an undiſguiſed joy, ſeemed to teſtify, by a noble aſſurance, that this example raiſed them above themſelves; others, loſt and confuſed, appeared to be overwhelmed, as by a weight above their ſtrength. The matrons and virgins, in their hearts, unanimouſly gave the prize of virtue to him who had the magnanimity to declare, that he was not worthy of it: and the elders had their eyes fixed on Parmeno; who, with a compoſed countenance, waited till they ſhould deign to hear him. 'I know not,' ſaid he at laſt, addreſſing himſelf to Agatis, 'I know not to what degree the actions 'of men ought to be diſintereſted, in 'order to be virtuous. There is no-'thing, ſtrictly ſpeaking, but is done 'for our own ſatisfaction; but what 'I ſhould not have done for mine, is 'the confeſſion I have juſt heard; and 'even ſuppoſing that there may have 'been hitherto ſomething more brave 'in my conduct than in yours, which 'is a point yet undecided, the ſeverity 'with which you have juſt now judged 'yourſelf, raiſes you above me.'

Here the elders, confounded, knew not which ſide to take: they had not even recourſe to voices, in order to determine to whom to give the prize. It was decided by acclamation, that both of them merited it, and the honour of the ſecond choice was now unworthy either of one

or the other. The moſt aged of the judges ſpoke again. 'Why delay,' ſaid he, 'by our irreſolutions, the happineſs 'of our young people? Their choice 'is made in the bottom of their hearts; 'let them be permitted to communicate 'one to the other the ſecret of their 'deſires: if the object of them be dif-'ferent, each, without precedency, will 'obtain the wife he loves; if it hap-'pen that they are rivals, the law of 'chance ſhall decide it; and there is 'no Samnite maiden but may glory in 'conſoling the leſs ſucceſsful of theſe 'two warriors.' Thus ſpoke the vene-rable Androgeus, and all the aſſembly applauded.

They cauſe Agatis and Parmeno to advance to the middle of the circus. They begin by embracing each other, and all eyes are bedewed with tears. Trembling each, they heſitate: they are afraid to name the wife of their deſires; neither of them thinks it poſſible that the other can have made a choice dif-ferent from his own. 'I love,' ſaid Parmeno, 'the moſt accompliſhed of 'Heaven's works; grace and beauty 'itſelf.'—'Alas!' replied Agatis, 'you 'love her whom I adore: it is naming 'her, to paint her thus; the nobleneſs 'of her features, the gentle fire of her 'looks, I know not what of divinity 'in her ſhape and gait, ſufficiently di-'ſtinguiſh her from the crowd of Sam-'nite maidens. How unhappy will one 'of us be, reduced to another choice!' —'You ſay true,' replied Parmeno, 'there is no happineſs without Eliana.' —'Eliana, ſay you! What,' cried Agatis, 'is it the daughter of the wife 'Androgeus, Eliana, whom you love?' —'And who then ſhould I love?' ſaid Parmeno, aſtoniſhed at the joy of his rival. 'Eliana! not Cephalis!' reſum-ed Agatis with tranſport. 'Ah! if ſo, 'we are happy: embrace me; you re-'ſtore me to life.' By their embraces it was eaſy to judge that they were re-conciled about their love. The elders ordered them to draw near; and, if their choice was not the ſame, to declare it aloud. At the names of Eliana and Cephalis, the whole amphitheatre re-ſounded with ſhouts of applauſe. An-drogeus and Teleſpon, the brave Eu-menes, father of Cephalis, Parmeno's father, Melante, felicitated each other with that melting tenderneſs which min-gles in the joy of old men. 'My 'friends,' ſaid Teleſpon, 'we have 'brave children there: with what ar-'dour are they going to beget others! 'When I think of it, I imagine myſelf 'to be ſtill in the flower of my age. Pa-'ternal weakneſs apart, the day of mar-'riages is a feſtival to me: I think it 'is I who marry all the virgins of the 'commonwealth.' While he ſpoke thus, the good man leaped with joy; and as he was a widower, they adviſed him to put himſelf again into the ranks. 'No 'raillery,' ſaid he; 'if I were always 'as young, I might yet do ſomething 'to ſpeak of.'

They repaired to the temple to con-ſecrate at the foot of the altar the cere-mony of the marriages. Parmeno and Agatis were conducted together in tri-umph; and there was ordered a ſolemn ſacrifice, to return thanks to the gods for having given to the republick two ſuch virtuous citizens.

THE GOOD HUSBAND.

FELISONDE, one of thoſe good fathers of a family who recal the golden age to our minds, had married his only daughter, Hortenſia, to the Ba-ron De Valſain; and his niece, Amelia, to the Preſident De Luſane.

Valſain, gallant without aſſiduity, ſufficiently tender without jealouſy, too much taken up about his own glory and advancement to make himſelf the guardian of his wife, had left her upon the ſtrength of her own virtue, to deli-ver herſelf up to the diſſipations of a world, in which being launched him-ſelf, he took a delight in ſeeing her ſhine. Luſane, more retired, more aſ-ſiduous, breathed only for Amelia; who, on her ſide, lived but for him. The mutual care of pleaſing was their con-ſtant employment, and to them the moſt

ſacred

facred of duties was the fweeteft of pleafures.

Old Felifonde was enjoying the union of his family, when the deaths of Amelia and Valfain diffufed forrow and mourning over it. Lufane in his grief had not even the confolation of being a father: Valfain left Hortenfia two children with very little to fupport them. The firft forrows of the young widow were only her hufband; but we forget ourfelves in vain, we return thither infenfibly. The time of mourning was that of reflection.

At Paris, a young woman, refigned to diffipation, is exempt from cenfure as long as fhe is in the power of a hufband: they fuppofe that the perfon moft intereffed ought to be the moft rigid, and what he approves they dare not blame; but, delivered up to herfelf, fhe falls again under the tutelage of a fevere and jealous publick, and it is not at twenty-two that widowhood is a free ftate. Hortenfia then faw clearly that fhe was too young to depend only on herfelf, and Felifonde faw it ftill clearer. One day this good father communicated his fears to his nephew Lufane. 'My 'friend,' faid he, 'you are much to be 'pitied, but I am ftill more fo. I have 'but one daughter; you know how I 'love her, and you fee the dangers that 'fhe runs. The world, which has fe-'duced her, invites her back again; 'her mourning over, fhe will refign 'herfelf to it; and I am afraid, old as 'I am, I may live long enough to have 'occafion to be afhamed. My daugh-'ter has a fund of virtue; but our 'virtue is within ourfelves, and our 'honour, that honour fo dear, is placed 'in the opinion of others.'—'I under-'ftand you, Sir; and to fay the truth, 'I fhare your uneafinefs. But can we 'not engage Hortenfia to a new match?'—'Ha, my friend! what reafons fhe 'has to oppofe me! two children, two 'children without fortune; for you 'know that I am not rich, and that 'their father was ruined.'—'No mat-'ter, Sir; confult Hortenfia: I know 'a man, if it fhould be agreeable to 'her, who thinks juftly enough, who 'has a heart good enough to ferve as a 'father to her children.' The good old man thought he underftood him. 'O, you,' faid he to him, 'who form-'ed the happinefs of my niece Amelia, 'you whom I love as my own fon; 'Lufane! Heaven reads in my heart—'But tell me, does the hufband whom 'you propofe know my daughter? Is 'not he afraid of her youth, her levity, 'the flight fhe has taken in the world?'—'He knows her as well as you do, 'and he eftems her no lefs.' Felifonde delayed not to fpeak to his daughter. 'Yes, my father, I agree,' faid fhe, 'that my fituation is delicate. To be 'obfervant of one's felf, to be afraid of 'one's felf without ceafing, to be in the 'world as before one's judge, is the lot 'of a widow at my age: it is painful 'and dangerous.'—'Well, then, daugh-'ter, Lufane has talked to me of a huf-'band who would fuit you.'—'Lu-'fane, my father? Ah, if it be pof-'fible, let him give me one like him-'felf! Happy as I was myfelf with 'Valfain, I could not help envying 'fometimes the lot of his wife.' The father, tranfported with her anfwer, went to give an account of it to his nephew. 'If you do not flatter me,' faid Lufane, 'to-morrow we fhall all be 'happy.'—'What, my friend, is it 'you?'—'I myfelf.'—'Alas! my 'heart had told me fo.'—'Yes, it is I, 'Sir, who would confole your old age, 'by bringing back to her duty a daugh-'ter worthy of you. Without giving 'into indecent extravagancies, I fee 'that Hortenfia has aflumed all the airs, 'all the follies of a woman of fafhion. 'Vivacity, caprice, the defire of pleaf-'ing and of amufements, have engaged 'her in the labyrinth of a noify and fri-'volous acquaintance; the point is to 'withdraw her from it. To do that, I 'have occafion for a little courage and 'refolution: I fhall have tears perhaps 'to contend with, and that is much 'for a heart fo fenfible as mine; never-'thelefs, I can anfwer for myfelf. But 'you, Sir, you are a father; and if 'Hortenfia fhould come to complain to 'you——' 'Fear nothing; difpofe of 'my daughter: I confide her to thy 'virtue; and if the authority of a huf-'band be not enough, I refign to you 'that of a father.'

Lufane was received by Hortenfia with the moft touching graces. 'Think 'that you fee in me,' faid fhe to him, 'the wife that you have loft; if I take 'her place in your heart, I have no-'thing to regret.'

When they came to draw up the articles; 'Sir,' faid Lufane to Felifonde,

'let us not forget that we have two 'orphans. Their father's eſtate has 'not permitted him to leave them a 'large inheritance; let us not deprive 'them of their mother's, nor let the 'birth of my children be a misfortune 'to them.' The old man was moved even to weeping with the generoſity of his nephew, whom he called from that moment his ſon. Hortenſia was not leſs ſenſible to the proceedings of her new huſband. The moſt elegant equipage, the richeſt cloaths, the moſt precious trinkets, a houſe in which every thing breathed taſte, elegance, wealth, proclaimed to this young lady a huſband attentive to all her pleaſures. But the joy ſhe felt was not of long duration.

As ſoon as a calm had ſucceeded to the tumult of the wedding, Luſane thought it his duty to come to an explanation with her on the plan of life which he wanted to trace out to her. He took for this ſerious diſcourſe the peaceful moment of her waking; that moment in which the ſilence of the ſenſes leaves the reaſon it's perfect freedom, wherein the ſoul herſelf, lulled by the trance of ſleep, ſeems to revive with pure ideas, and being wholly miſtreſs of herſelf, contemplates herſelf, and reads in her own boſom, as we ſee to the bottom of a clear and ſmooth water.

'My dear Hortenſia,' ſaid he to her, 'I want you to be happy, and to be always ſo. But it will coſt you ſome 'ſlight ſacrifices, and I had much rather 'aſk them plainly of you, than engage 'you to them by indirect methods, 'which would ſhew diſtruſt.

'You have paſſed with the Baron De Valſain ſome agreeable years. Made 'for the world, and for pleaſures, 'young, brilliant, and diſſipated himſelf, he inſpired you with all his taſtes. 'My character is more ſerious, my condition more modeſt, my temper a little 'more ſevere; it is not poſſible for me 'to aſſume his manners, and I believe 'it is the better for you. The path 'you have yet followed is ſtrewed with 'flowers and ſnares; that which we 'are going to purſue has fewer attractions and fewer dangers. The charm 'which ſurrounded you would have 'been diſſipated with youth; the ſerene 'days I prepare for you will be the ſame 'in all ſeaſons. It is not in the midſt of 'the world that an honeſt woman finds 'happineſs; it is in the midſt of her 'own family, in the love of her duties, 'the care of her children, and the intimate commerce of a worthy ſet of 'acquaintance.'

The preamble gave Hortenſia ſome ſurprize; above all, the word *family* ſtartled her ear: but aſſuming a tone of raillery, 'I ſhall become, perhaps, ſome 'day or other,' ſaid ſhe, 'an excellent 'manager of a family; at preſent I 'know nothing of it. My duty is to 'love you, I fulfil it; my children do 'not yet want me: as to my acquaintance, you know that I ſee none but 'genteel people.'—'Let us not confound, my dear, genteel people with 'good people.'—'I underſtand your 'diſtinction; but in point of acquaintances, we ought not to be ſo difficult. 'The world, ſuch as it is, amuſes me; 'and the way of living in it has nothing 'incompatible with the decency of your 'condition: it is not I who wear the 'robe, and I do not ſee why Madame 'Luſane ſhould be more obliged to be 'a mope than Madam De Valſain. Be, 'then, my dear preſident, as grave as 'you pleaſe; but do not take it amiſs 'that your wife be giddy a few years 'longer: every age will bring it's likings along with it.'—'It is pity,' replied Luſane, 'to bring you back to ſeriouſneſs, for you are a charming trifler. 'There is a neceſſity, however, for talking reaſon to you. In the world, do 'you love without diſtinction every 'thing that compoſes it?'—'Not ſeparately; but the medley pleaſes me 'well enough all together.'—'What of 'the dealers in ſcandal, for inſtance?' —'The ſcandal-mongers have their 'charms.'—'They give a ridiculous 'turn to the plaineſt things, a criminal 'air to the moſt innocent, and publiſh, 'with exaggeration, the foibles or irregularities of thoſe whom they have 'juſt flattered.'—'It is true, that at 'the firſt glance we are frightened at 'theſe characters, but at bottom they 'are very little dangerous: from the 'moment that we rail at all the world, 'railing does no harm: it is a ſpecies 'of contagion which weakens in proportion as it extends itſelf.'—'And 'thoſe fops, whoſe very looks are an 'inſult to a virtuous woman, and whoſe converſation diſhonours her, what ſay 'you to them?'—'One never believes 'them.'—'I would not imitate them 'in ſpeaking ill of your ſex; there are

'many

'many valuable women, I know, but 'there are——!' 'Juſt as it is a-'mongſt you, a mixture of virtues and 'vices.'—'Very well; and what pre-'vents our making a choice in this mix-'ture?'—'We *do* make one intimacy, 'but in the world we live with the 'world.'—'But I, my dear, I would 'live only with people, who by their 'manners and character are deſerving 'to be my friends.'—'Your friends, 'Sir, your friends! and how many of 'them have we in life?'—'A great 'many, when we are worthy, and know 'how to cultivate them. I ſpeak not 'of that generous friendſhip, the devo-'tion of which proceeds almoſt to he-'roiſm; I call thoſe friends who come 'to me with the deſire of finding joy 'and peace, diſpoſed to pardon my 'foibles, to conceal them from the eyes 'of the publick, to treat me when pre-'ſent with frankneſs, when abſent with 'tenderneſs. Such friends are not ſo 'rare; and I preſume to hope, that I 'ſhall have ſuch.'—'With all my 'heart; we will introduce our ſeveral 'acquaintance to each other.'—'I will 'not have two ſets of acquaintance.'—'What, Sir, will not your door be open?'—'Open to my friends, always: to 'every comer, never, I give you my 'word.'—'No, Sir; I will not ſuffer 'you to revolt againſt the publick by 'odious diſtinctions. We may not 'love the world, but we ought to fear 'it, and not offend it.'—'Oh, be eaſy, 'my dear, that is my concern: they 'will ſay that I am a brute; jealous, 'perhaps; that ſignifies little to me.'—'It ſignifies to me. I would have 'my huſband be reſpected, and not have 'cauſe to reproach me with having 'made him the town-talk. Form your 'own company as you ſhall think pro-'per, but leave me to cultivate my old 'acquaintance, and prevent the court 'and town from letting their tongues 'looſe upon you.'

Luſane admired the addreſs of a young woman in defending her liberty. 'My 'dear Hortenſia,' ſaid he to her, 'it is 'not, as a whim, that I have taken my 'reſolution: it is upon thorough con-'ſideration, you may believe me, and 'nothing in the world can change it. 'Chuſe, among the perſons whom you 'ſee, ſuch a number of decent women 'and prudent men as you ſhall think 'proper, my houſe ſhall be theirs; but 'that choice made, take leave of the 'reſt. I will join my friends to yours: 'our two liſts united ſhall be depoſited 'with my porter for his conſtant rule; 'and if he deviates from it, he ſhall be 'diſcharged. This is the plan I pro-'poſe to myſelf, and which I wanted 'to communicate to you.'

Hortenſia remained confounded at ſeeing all her fine projects vaniſh in a moment. She could not believe that it was Luſane, that gentle and complaiſant man, who had juſt been talking to her. 'After this,' ſaid ſhe, 'who can 'truſt men? ſee the tone this man aſ-'ſumes! with what compoſure he dic-'tates his will to me! To ſee only vir-'tuous women, and accompliſhed men! 'a fine chimera! And then the amuſing 'ſociety which this circle of reſpectable 'friends muſt afford! *Such is my plan*, 'ſaid he, as if there was nothing but to 'obey when he had ſaid it. See how 'we ſpoil them. My couſin was a 'good little woman, who moped as 'much as he pleaſed. She was as happy 'as a queen the moment her huſband 'deigned to ſmile upon her, and quite 'tranſported with one careſs, ſhe would 'come to me and boaſt of him as a di-'vinity. He believes, without doubt, 'that according to her example I ſhall 'have nothing elſe to do but to pleaſe 'him: he is miſtaken, and if he in-'tends to put me in leading-ſtrings, I 'will let him ſee that I am no longer a 'child.'

From that moment, to the joyous, free, and endearing manner which ſhe had obſerved with Luſane, ſucceeded a cold and reſerved air, which he ſaw plain enough, but took no notice of it to her. She had not failed to make her marriage known to that ſwarm of ſlight acquaintances, who are called friends. They came in crowds to congratulate her, and Luſane could not decline returning with her thoſe viſits of ceremony; but he infuſed into his politeneſs ſuch ſtriking diſtinctions, that it was not difficult for Hortenſia to diſcern thoſe whom he wiſhed to ſee again.

In this number was not included one Olympia, who, with a ſovereign contempt for the opinion of the publick, pretends that every thing which pleaſes is right, and joins the example to the precept; nor one Climene, who does not know why a woman ſhould make any ſcruple to change her lovers when ſhe is

tired of the man she has taken, and thinks the timid precautions of secresy too much beneath her quality. In this number were not included those smart toilette and scene hunters, who leading in Paris a life of idleness and inutility, (*grubs in the morning, and butterflies in the evening**) pass one half of their time in having nothing to do, and the other half in doing nothing; nor those obliging gentry by profession, who having no personal existence in the world, attach themselves to a handsome woman to pass for one of her danglers, and who ruin her in order to support themselves.

Hortensia retired to her own apartment uneasy and pensive. She thought she saw herself on the point of being deprived of every thing that makes life agreeable: vanity, a taste for pleasure, the love of liberty, every thing revolted against the empire which her husband wanted to assume. However, having armed herself with resolution, she thought it her duty to dissemble for a time, the better to chuse the moment of breaking out.

The next day Lusane asked her if she had made out her list. 'No, Sir,' said she, 'I have not, and shall not make 'any.'—'Here is mine,' continued he, without any discomposure; 'see, if in 'the number of your friends and of 'mine I have forgot any one you like, 'and that is fit for us.'—'I have told 'you, Sir, that I shall not meddle in 'your arrangements, and I beg of you, 'once for all, not to interfere in mine. 'If our acquaintance do not suit, let 'us do like all the rest of the world: 'let us divide them without constraining ourselves. Have those whom you 'like to dinner; I will have those whom 'I like to supper.'—'Ah, my dear 'Hortensia! what you propose to me 'is far from my principles. Do not 'think of it: never in my house shall 'such a custom take place. I will make 'it as agreeable as I can to you; but 'no distinction, if you please, between 'your friends and mine. This evening all whom this list contains are invited to sup with you. Receive them 'well, I beseech you, and prepare yourself to live with them.' At these words he retired, leaving the list for Hortensia to peruse. 'There,' said she, 'his law is laid down!' And running it over, she was encouraging herself not to submit to it, when the Countess De Fierville, Valsain's aunt, came to see her, and found her with tears in her eyes. This haughty woman had taken Hortensia into her friendship, and as she flattered her inclinations, had gained her confidence. The young lady, whose heart stood in need of consolation, told her the cause of her chagrin. 'How! 'what!' cried the countess, 'after having had the folly to dispose of yourself so unsuitably, will you also be so 'weak as to degrade yourself? You 'a slave! and to whom? a man of the 'robe! Remember that you have had 'the honour to be Madam De Valsain.' Hortensia was now ashamed of having had the weakness to expose her husband. 'Though he might be in the wrong,' said she, 'that should not hinder me 'from respecting him: he is the honest'est man in the world, and what he has 'done for my children—' 'An honest 'man! and who is not so? That is a 'merit to be met with in every street. 'And what has this honest man done 'so wonderful for your children? He 'has not robbed them of their fortune. 'To be sure it would have been worth 'while to have abused your father's 'weakness! No, Madam, he has not 'acquired the right of talking so magisterially. Let him preside in his 'own court, but leave you to com'mand at home.' At these words Lusane entered. 'In my house, Madam, 'it is neither my wife nor I that com'mands, it is reason; and probably it 'is not you that she will chuse for an 'arbitress.'—'No, Sir!' replied the countess, with a commanding tone, 'it 'is not for you to make laws for this 'lady. You have heard me, and I am 'glad of it; you know my opinion of 'the absurdity of your proceedings.'—'Madam,' replied Lusane, 'if I were 'as wrong as you suppose me, I am not 'to be corrected by affronts. Gentleness and modesty are the arms of your 'sex, and Hortensia by herself is much 'more powerful than with your assist-

* *Grubs in the morning, and butterflies in the evening.*] *Chenilles le matin, et papillions le soir.* The humour of this passage, being in some degree local, cannot be entirely preserved in the translation. It is an allusion to dress, *en chenille* being at Paris a common cant phrase for a morning dishabille.

'ance

'ance. Leave our agreements to our-
'ſelves, ſince we are the perſons who
'muſt live together. Though you
'ſhould have rendered her duties odious
'to her, you could not have diſpenſed
'with her fulfilling them; though you
'ſhould have made her loſe the confi-
'dence and friendſhip of her huſband,
'you could not have made her amends
'for them. Spare her that advice which
'ſhe neither will nor ought to follow.
'To another they might have been dan-
'gerous; to her, thank Heaven! they
'are only uſeleſs.—Hortenſia,' added
he, going, 'you have not deſired to give
'me uneaſineſs, but let this ſerve you
'as a leſſon.'—'See how you defend
'yourſelf!' ſaid Madam De Fierville
to Hortenſia, who had not even dared
to lift up her eyes. 'Obey, my dear,
'obey! It is the portion of weak ſouls.
'Good Heaven!' ſaid ſhe going out,
'I am the gentleſt, the moſt virtuous
'woman on the face of the earth; but
'if a huſband had dared to treat me
'thus, I ſhould have taken an handſome
'revenge of him!' Hortenſia had ſcarce
ſtrength enough to get up to attend
Madam De Fierville, ſo great was her
terror and confuſion. She perceived
the advantage that her imprudence gave
her huſband; but far from availing
himſelf of it, he did not even ſo much
as reproach her with it; and his delicacy
puniſhed her more than his reſentment
would have done.

In the evening, the viſitors being aſ-
ſembled, Luſane ſeized the moment
when his wife was yet in her own apart-
ment. 'Here,' ſaid he to them, 'is
'the rendezvous of friendſhip: if you
'like it, come often, and let us paſs
'our life together.' They all replied
with one voice, that they deſired no-
thing better. 'There,' continued he,
preſenting to them the good Feliſonde,
'there is our worthy and tender father,
'who will be the ſoul of our pleaſures.
'At his age, joy has ſomething more
'ſenſible and tender in it than in youth,
'and nothing is more amiable than an
'amiable old man. He has a daughter
'whom I love, and whom I would make
'happy. Aſſiſt me, my friends, to
'keep her among us; and let love, na-
'ture, and friendſhip, conſpire to ren-
'der her houſe every day more agreea-
'ble to her. She entertains for the
'world the prepoſſeſſions of her age;
'but when we ſhall have taſted the
'charms of a virtuous ſociety, this vain
'world will touch her but little.' While
Luſane ſpoke thus, old Feliſonde could
not refrain letting fall ſome tears. 'O,
'my friend!' ſaid he, claſping him in
his arms; 'happy the father, who at his
'death can leave his daughter in ſuch
'good hands!'

The inſtant after arrived Madam De
Luſane. All hearts flew out to meet
her; but her own was not eaſy. She
diſguiſed her ill temper under the reſerv-
ed air of ceremony; and her politeneſs,
though grave, ſtill appeared amiable and
touching; ſuch a gift have the natural
graces of embelliſhing every thing.

They played. Luſane made Horten-
ſia obſerve that all his company played
low. 'It is,' ſaid he, 'the way to
'maintain union and joy. High play
'prepoſſeſſes and alienates our minds;
'it afflicts thoſe who loſe; it impoſes
'on thoſe who win the duty of being
'grave, and I think it incompatible
'with the openneſs of friendſhip.' The
ſupper was delicious: tranſport and
good-humour were diffuſed round the
table. The heart and the mind were
at eaſe: the gallantry was ſuch as mo-
deſty might ſmile at, and neither decency
nor liberty were under reſtraint.

Hortenſia in another ſituation would
have reliſhed theſe tranquil pleaſures;
but the idea of conſtraint which ſhe
attached to them embittered their ſweet-
neſs.

The day after, Luſane was ſurprized
to find her of a freer and pleaſanter air:
he ſuſpected that ſhe had taken ſome new
reſolution. 'What ſhall we do to-
'day?' ſaid he. 'I am going to the
'play,' ſaid ſhe, 'and I ſhall come
'home to ſupper.'—'Very well; and
'who are the ladies you are going with?'
—'Two of Valſain's friends, Olympia
'and Artenice.'—'It is cruel to me,'
ſaid the huſband, 'to be obliged to give
'you uneaſineſs continually; but why,
'Hortenſia, will you expoſe me to it?
'Do you think me ſo inconſiſtent in the
'principles I have laid down, as to
'conſent that you ſhould be ſeen in
'publick with thoſe women?'—'To
'be ſure you muſt conſent to it, for the
'party is ſettled, and I ſhall certainly
'not fail in it.'—'Pardon me, Madam;
'you ſhall fail in it, that you may not
'fail in the regard due to yourſelf.'—
'Is it failing in regard to myſelf to ſee
'women whom all the world ſees?'—
'Yes,

'Yes, it is to expose yourself to be confounded with them in the opinion of the publick.'—'The publick, Sir, is not unjust; and in the world all persons answer for themselves.'—'The publick, Madam, supposes with reason, that those who are allied in pleasures, are allied in manners, and you ought not to have any thing in common with Olympia and Artenice. If you would not break off with them too abruptly, there is a way; excuse yourself only from the play, and invite them to supper: my door shall be shut against all my friends, and we will be alone with them.'—'No, Sir! no!' said she to him with ill-humour; 'I will not abuse your complaisance.' And she writ to dissengage herself. Nothing had cost her so much as this billet: tears of anger bedewed it. 'To be sure,' said she, 'I care very little for these women; the play interests me still less: but to see one's self opposed in every thing; never to have a will of one's own! to be subjected to that of another! to hear him dictating his laws to me with an insulting tranquillity! that is what drives me mad, and what will make me capable of every thing.'

It was certain, however, that the tranquillity of Lusane was far from having an insulting air, and it was easy to see that he did violence to himself. His father-in-law, who came to sup with him, perceived the melancholy into which he was plunged. 'Ah, Sir!' said Lusane to him, 'I see that I have entered into an engagement with you very painful to fulfil!' He told him what had happened. 'Courage, my friend,' said this good father to him, 'let us not be discouraged; if it pleases Heaven, you will render her worthy your cares and love. In pity to me, in pity to my daughter, maintain your resolution. I am going to see her, and if she complain——' 'If she complain, console her, Sir, and appear sensible to her grief: her reason will be more tractable when her heart is comforted. Let her hate me just at present; I expected it, and am not surprized at it; but if the bitterness of her temper should alter the sentiments of nature in her soul, if her confidence in you should be weakened, all would be lost. The goodness of her heart is my only resource, and it is only by an unalterable gentleness that we can prevent her being exasperated. After all, the trials to which I put her are grievous at her time of life, and you must be her support.'

These precautions were useless; whether from vanity or delicacy, Hortensia had the power to conceal her chagrin from the eyes of her father. 'A good sign,' said Lusane; 'she knows how to subdue herself; and there are none but weak souls of whom we ought to despair.' The day following they dined together alone, and in the most profound silence. At their getting up from table, Hortensia ordered the horses to be put to. 'Where are you going?' said her husband. 'To make an excuse, Sir, for the rudeness I was guilty of yesterday.'—'Go, Hortensia, since you will have it so; but if my repose be dear to you, take your last leave of those women.'

Artenice and Olympia, to whom Madam De Fierville had related the scene she had had with Lusane, suspected that it was he who had hindered Hortensia from going to the play with them. 'Yes,' said they to her, 'it was he; we saw him but for a minute, but we have formed our opinion of him: he is a morose, absolute man, and one who will make you unhappy.'—'He has talked to me hitherto only in the style of friendship. It is true, that he has his particular principles, and a way of living but little compatible with the customs of the world, but—' 'But let him live by himself,' replied Olympia; 'and let him leave us to amuse ourselves in peace. Do you ask him to follow you? A husband is the man in the world we can best spare, and I do not see why you have occasion for his advice to receive whomsoever you think proper, and to go and see whom you please.'—'No, Madam,' said Hortensia to her, 'it is not so easy as you imagine, to put one's self, at my age, above the will of a husband who has behaved so well to me.'—'She gives way; see, she is quite tamed.' replied Artenice. 'Ah, my dear! you do not know what it is to yield once to a man, with whom one is to pass one's life. Our husbands are our tyrants if they are not our slaves. Their authority is a torrent which swells as it runs; we can stop it only at it's source; and I speak from

'from experience: for having been 'guilty of an unfortunate complaisance 'to my husband twice, I have been for 'six months together obliged to strug- 'gle with him for the ascendancy which 'my weakness had given him; and but 'for an unparalleled effort of courage 'it would have been all over with me, 'I was a gone woman.'—'That de- 'pends upon tempers,' said Hortensia; 'and my husband is not one of those 'who are to be brought down by obsti- 'nacy.'—'Undeceive yourself,' replied Olympia; 'there is not one whom gen- 'tleness ever reconciles; it is by op- 'posing them that we rule them; it is 'by the dread of ridicule and shame 'that we hold them: what are you a- 'fraid of? We are very strong when 'we are handsome, and have nothing 'to reproach ourselves. Your cause is 'that of all the women; and the men 'themselves, the men who know how 'to live, will be on your side.' Hortensia objected the example of her cousin, whom Lusane had made happy. They replied, that her cousin was a weak woman; that if the life which she had led was a good one to her, it was because she knew no better; but that a woman, launched into the great world, who had tasted the charms of it, and formed it's ornament, was not made to bury herself in the solitude of her own house, and the narrow circle of an obscure acquaintance. They talked to her of a superb ball which the Duchess of —— was to give the next day. 'All 'the handsome women will be invited 'there,' said they to her: 'if your hus- 'band prevents your going, it is a 'stroke that will cry out for vengeance; 'and we advise you, as friends, to seize 'that occasion to make a noise, and to 'part.'

Though Hortensia was very far from wishing to follow these violent counsels, she still retained a bitterness in her soul, at seeing that her unhappiness was going to be known in the world, and that they would look for her in vain at those feasts where but for this she would have seen herself adored. On her return home, a card was put into her hands; she read it with impatience, and sighed after having read it. Her trembling hand still held it, when her husband accosted her. 'It is,' said she to him carelessly, 'a card of invi- 'tation to the Duchess of ——'s ball.'— 'Well, Madam!'—'Well, Sir, I shall 'not go: be easy.'—'Why, then, Hor- 'tensia, deprive yourself of decent plea- 'sures? Have I forbid them you? The 'honour that is done you, pleases me 'as much, and more than it does your- 'self: go to the ball, eclipse every 'thing there that is most lovely; that 'will be a triumph to me.' Hortensia was not able to dissemble her surprize and joy. 'Ah, Lusane!' said she to him, 'why are you not always the same? 'There now is the husband I promised 'myself. I recover him now; but is 'it for a long time?' Lusane's company assembled in the evening, and Hortensia was adorable. They proposed suppers, parties to the play; she engaged herself to them with the best grace. Chearful with the men, engaging with the women, she charmed them all. Lusane alone dared not yet deliver himself up to the joy which she inspired; he foresaw that this good-humour would not continue long without clouds. In the mean time he said just one word to his valet de chambre; and the next day when his wife asked for her domino, it was like a surprize in a play. They presented her with a dress for the ball, which the hand of Flora seemed to have varied with the most beautiful colours of the spring; those flowers in which the art of Italy equals nature, and deceives the ravished eyes, those flowers ran in garlands over the light waves of a silk tissue of the most brilliant freshness. Hortensia, in love with her dress, her husband, and herself, could not conceal her transport. Her glass being consulted, promised her the most striking successes, and that oracle never deceived her: accordingly, on appearing at the assembly, she enjoyed the flattering emotion occasioned by unanimous admiration; and to a young woman, this ebb and flow, this murmur, have all together something so touching! It is easy to judge that at her return Lusane was pretty well treated; it seemed as if she wanted to paint all the transports which she had raised. At first he received her caresses without reflection, for the wisest sometimes forget themselves; but when he recollected himself; 'A ball,' said he, 'a domino, turns this young head! 'Ah! what conflicts have I yet to sus- 'tain before I see her such as I could 'wish her!'

Hortensia had seen at the ball all those giddy young people, from whom her husband

husband wanted to detach her. 'He 'does right,' said they to her, 'to grow 'reasonable, and to restore you to your 'friends: he was going to become the 'publick jest, and we had made a league 'to distress him wherever he appeared; 'tell him then, for his own ease, to 'vouchsafe to let us see you. If we 'have the unhappiness to displease him, 'we give him leave to put himself un-'der no restraint; but let him be con-'tented with rendering himself invisible, 'without requiring that his wife should 'be so.' Intimidated by these menaces, Hortensia gave her husband to under-stand, that they took it ill that his door was shut against them, that people of fashion complained of it, and proposed to remonstrate even to him upon it. 'If 'they do,' said he, 'I will teach them 'how to take their revenge on me: let 'each of them marry a handsome wo-'man, live at home with their friends, 'and shut their doors in my face every 'time that I go to trouble them.'

Some days after, two of these young fellows, piqued at not having been able to introduce themselves to Hortensia, saw Lusane at the opera, and went up to him, in order to ask him the reason of the rude behaviour of his Swiss. 'Sir,' said the Chevalier De St. Placide to him, 'have they told you that the Marquis 'De Cirval and myself have been twice 'at your house?'—'Yes, gentlemen, 'I know that you have given your-'selves that trouble.'—'Neither your-'self nor your lady were to be seen.'—'That is very often the case.'—'Yet 'you see company.'—'Only friends.' —'We are Hortensia's friends, and in 'Valsain's time we always saw her. 'Ah, Sir! what an agreeable man was 'Valsain! she has not lost by the ex-'change; but he was the genteelest, the 'most complaisant of all husbands.'—'I know it.'—'He, for example, was 'not jealous.'—'Happy man!'—'You 'speak as if you envied him; can it be 'true, as they say, that you are not so 'easy?'—'Ah, gentlemen, if ever you 'marry, take care you do not love your 'wives; it is a cruel thing, this jea-'lousy!'—'What, are you really come 'to that?'—'Alas! yes, for my sins.' 'But Hortensia is so virtuous!'—'I 'know it.'—'She lived like an angel 'with Valsain.'—'I hope she will live 'the same with me too.'—'Why, then, 'do her the injustice of being jealous?' —'It is an involuntary emotion, which 'I cannot account for.'—'You con-'fess, then, it is a folly?'—'To such a 'degree, that I cannot see near my wife 'any man of a handsome figure, or 'distinguished merit, but my head turns; 'and this is the reason that my gate is shut 'against the most amiable people in the 'world.'—'The marquis and I,' said the chevalier, 'are not dangerous, and 'we hope—' 'You, gentlemen, you 'are among those who would make 'me unhappy all my life. I know you 'too well not to fear you: and since I 'must confess it, I have myself required 'of my wife that she should never see 'you again.'—'But, Mr. President, 'that is but a sorry kind of a compli-'ment.'—'Ah, gentlemen, it is the 'most agreeable one that a jealous hus-'band can make you.'—'Chevalier,' said the marquis, when Lusane had quitted them, 'we wanted, I thought, 'to make a jest of this man.'—'That 'was my design.'—'I am afraid, God 'forgive me, that he makes a jest of us.' —'I have some suspicion of it; but 'I will take my revenge on him.'—'How?'—'As men revenge themselves 'on a husband.'

The same evening, at supper, at the Marchioness of Bellune's, they repre-sented Lusane as the most odious of men. 'And the little woman,' said the marchioness, 'has the meanness to 'suffer him to restrain her? Ah! I will 'give her a lesson.' Madam De Bel-lune's house was the rendezvous of all the giddy people both of city and court, and her secret for drawing them toge-ther was to assemble the handsomest wo-men. Hortensia was invited to a ball which she gave. There was a necessity of acquainting Lusane with it before-hand; but without having any appear-ance of asking his consent, she just dropped a word *en passant*. 'No, my 'dear,' said Lusane to Hortensia, 'Ma-'dam De Bellune's house is in a style 'that does not suit you. Her ball is a 'rendezvous at which you ought not to 'be. The publick is not obliged to 'believe you more infallible than an-'other, and in order to prevent all 'suspicion of miscarriage, the surest 'way is to avoid the hazard of it.' The young woman, so much the more irri-tated at this refusal, as she did not ex-pect it, burst into complaints and re-proaches. 'You abuse,' said she to him,

'the

'the authority which I have confided 'to you; but beware of driving me to 'extremities.'—'I understand you, 'Madam,' replied Lusane to her, in a firmer and graver tone; 'but as long as 'I esteem you, I shall not fear this me- 'nace, and I should fear it still less, if 'I were to cease to esteem you.' Hortensia, who had annexed no idea to the words that had just escaped her, blushed at the meaning they seemed to carry with them, and replied only by tears. Lusane seized the moment when resentment yielded to confusion. 'I grow 'odious to you,' said he, 'yet what 'is my crime? that of saving your 'youth from the dangers which sur- 'round it, of detaching you from that 'which might cast a blemish—I do not 'say on your innocence, but on your 'reputation; of wanting to make you 'love soon what it is necessary that you 'must love always.'—'Yes, Sir, your 'intentions are good; but you have a 'bad method of carrying them into 'execution. You want to make me 'love my duty, and you make a slavery 'of it: there may be some ill conse- 'quences to be foreseen in my con- 'nections; but I must dissolve instead 'of breaking them, and detach myself 'insensibly from the people who dis- 'please you, without making you an 'object of ridicule, by imprisoning me 'in my own house.'—'When the ridi- 'cule is without foundation,' replied Lusane, 'it recoils on those who give 'it. The prison of which you com- 'plain is the asylum of virtue, and will 'also be that of peace and happiness, 'whenever you shall think proper to 'make it so. You upbraid me with 'not having used a little delicacy to- 'wards these people and yourself; I 'have had my reasons for cutting to 'the quick. I know that at your time 'of life the contagion of fashion, ex- 'ample, and habitude, make new pro- 'gress every day; and that without 'cutting off all communication, there 'is no way of guarding against it. It 'gives me inexpressible uneasiness to 'talk to you in an absolute tone; but 'it is my affection for you that gives 'me the courage: a friend ought to 'know on occasion how to contradict 'a friend. Be well assured, then, that 'as long as I love you, I shall have the 'strength to resist you; and woe to you, 'if I abandon you!'—'Woe to me! 'you esteem me very little if you think 'me lost the moment you cease to lead 'me in a string. No, Sir, I knew how 'to conduct myself long ago; and Val- 'sain, who did me justice, never had 'occasion to repent of his confidence. 'I own to you, that in my husband I 'did not intend to create myself a ty- 'rant. In order to submit to your 'will, one ought to have a strength or 'a weakness which I have not; all the 'denials you impose on me are grievous, 'and I will never accustom myself to 'them.'

Lusane, left alone to himself, reproached himself for the tears he had made her shed. 'What have I under- 'taken?' said he, 'and what a trial to 'my soul! I her tyrant! I, who love 'her more than my life, and whose 'heart is torn in pieces with her com- 'plaints! If I persist, I drive her to dis- 'traction, and if I give way one single 'moment, I lose the fruit of my per- 'severance. One step into this round 'of company, which she loves, will en- 'gage her in it anew. I must support 'this cruel character, this character so 'much more cruel to myself than to 'her.'

Hortensia passed the night in the greatest trouble: all violent measures presented themselves to her mind; but the probity of her mind shuddered at them. 'Why discourage myself?' said she, when her wrath was a little appeased: 'this man commands himself, and 'rules me because he does not love me; 'but if he should ever come to love me, 'I should soon reign in my turn. Let 'me use the only arms Nature has given 'us, gentleness and seduction.'

Lusane, who had not closed his eyes, came to ask her in the morning, with an air of friendship, how she had passed the night. 'You know how,' said she to him; 'you who take a pleasure in dis- 'turbing my repose. Ah, Lusane! was 'it for you to be the cause of my un- 'happiness? who could have told me 'that I should have repented of a 'choice which I made with such a good 'will, and such good intentions?' In pronouncing these words, she had stretched out her hand to him; and two eyes, the most eloquent that love ever yet made speak, reproached him for his ingratitude. 'My better half,' said he to her, embracing her, 'believe that I 'have placed all my glory and happi-

'neſs in making you happy. I would 'have your life ſtrewed with flowers; but 'permit me to pluck away the thorns. 'Wiſh for what may never coſt you 'any regret, and be aſſured it ſhall be 'fulfilled in my ſoul, as ſoon as formed 'in thine. The law which I impoſe 'upon you is only your own will: not 'that of the moment, which is a whim, 'a caprice; but that which will ariſe 'from reflection and experience, that 'which you will have ten years hence. 'I entertain for you the tenderneſs of 'a lover, the frankneſs of a friend, 'and the uneaſy vigilance of a father: 'there is my heart; it is worthy of you; 'and if you are ſtill unjuſt enough to 'complain of it, you ſhall not long have 'occaſion to do ſo.' This diſcourſe was accompanied with the moſt touching marks of a paſſionate love, and Hortenſia appeared ſenſible of them. Eight days paſſed away in the beſt underſtanding, in the moſt intimate union that could reign between two married people. To the charms of beauty, of youth, Hortenſia joined the enchantment of thoſe timid careſſes, which love, in conjunction with duty, ſeems to ſteal from modeſty. It is the fineſt of all toils to enmeſh a tender heart. But was all this really ſincere? Luſane thought ſo; I think ſo too. After all, ſhe would not be the firſt woman who ſhould have made her inclination agree with her views, and her policy with her pleaſures.

In the mean time, they approach thoſe days conſecrated to folly and joy, during which we are as fooliſh, but much leſs joyous than our fathers. Hortenſia gave ſome intimation to Luſane of her deſire to give an entertainment, in which muſick ſhould precede a ſupper, which ſhould be followed by a dance. Luſane conſented with the beſt grace in the world, but not without precaution: he agreed with his wife on the choice and number of perſons whom ſhe ſhould invite; and according to this arrangement the cards were diſtributed.

The day arrives, and every thing is prepared with the attention of a magnificent lover; but that very morning the Swiſs aſks to ſpeak to his maſter. 'Beſides 'thoſe who ſhall come with cards, it 'is my lady's pleaſure,' ſaid he to him, 'that I admit all who come to the ball. 'Is that your intention, Sir?'—'To be 'ſure,' ſaid Luſane, concealing his ſurprize, 'and you ought not to doubt but 'I approve what your lady orders.' He then went directly to her, and having told her what had juſt happened; 'You 'have expoſed yourſelf,' ſaid he, 'to 'be put to ſhame before your ſervants; 'you have hazarded what a woman 'cannot too much conciliate, the confidence of your huſband. Is it for 'you, Hortenſia, to make uſe of ſurprize towards me? Were I leſs perſuaded of the probity of your ſoul, 'what an opinion would you give me 'of it, and what would have been the conſequence of this imprudence? The 'pleaſure of afflicting me for a moment, and of making me more miſtruſtful of you than I would wiſh 'to be. Ah! ſuffer me to eſteem you 'for ever, and reſpect yourſelf as much 'as I reſpect you! I will not humble you by revoking the order you 'have given, but you will give me 'unſpeakable uneaſineſs if you do not 'revoke it yourſelf, and your conduct 'this day ſhall be my rule all my life.' —'I have committed a fault,' ſaid ſhe; 'I ſee it, and I will repair it. I will 'ſend word that I ſhall have neither 'muſick, nor ſupper, nor ball, to-night; 'I would not wear an appearance of 'joy when I have a deadly grief in my 'heart. The publick ſhall know that I 'am unhappy, for I am weary of diſſembling.' Luſane then falling at her feet; 'If I loved you leſs,' ſaid he, 'I 'ſhould yield to your reproaches; but 'I adore you, I will ſubdue myſelf: I 'ſhall die of grief to be hated by my 'wife, but I cannot live in the ſhame 'of having betrayed her by abandoning her. I took a ſenſible pleaſure 'in giving you an entertainment; you 'refuſe it, becauſe I exclude what is not 'worthy to approach you; you declare 'to me from thence, that a frivolous 'world is dearer to you than your huſband: it is enough; I will go and 'give notice that the entertainment will 'not take place.' Hortenſia, moved to the bottom of her ſoul with what ſhe had juſt heard, and more touched ſtill with the tears that ſhe had ſeen trickle from his eyes, recollected herſelf. 'What am I going to perſiſt in?' ſaid ſhe; 'are the people, whom he wants 'me to detach myſelf from, my friends? 'Would they ſacrifice the ſlighteſt of 'their intereſts to me? and yet for them 'I loſe the quiet of my life; I trouble 'it, I embitter it, I renounce every 'thing

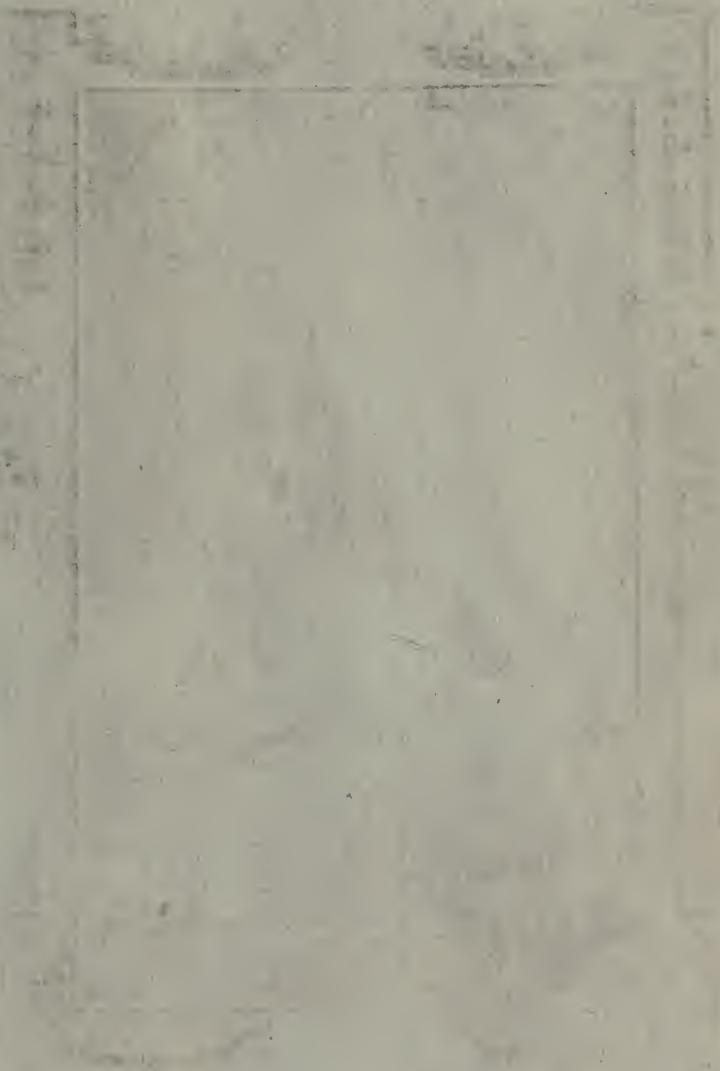


Plate. VI.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Nov.r 25. 1781.

'thing that can form it's happineſs. It 'is ſpite, it is vanity, that inſpire me. 'Have I even choſen to examine whether my huſband was right? I have 'ſeen nothing but the humiliation of 'obeying. But who ſhall command, if 'it be not the wiſeſt? I am a ſlave; 'and who is not ſo, or who ought not to 'be ſo, to their duties? I call an honeſt 'man a tyrant, who conjures me with 'tears in his eyes to take care of my reputation! where then is that pride with 'which I reproach him? Ah! I ſhould 'perhaps be much to be pitied if he 'were as weak as I. I afflict him in 'the very moment that he had ſhewn 'the moſt delicate attention to ſpare me! 'Theſe are injuries, theſe are real ones, 'and not thoſe which I attribute to him.' —'Go,' ſaid ſhe to one of her women; 'go, and tell your maſter that I would 'ſpeak to him.' Scarce had ſhe ſent this meſſage, when a ſudden qualm ſeized her. 'I am going, then,' ſaid ſhe, 'to conſent to mope all my life: for I 'cannot conceal it from myſelf, but 'that one has amuſements only in the 'great world; and all thoſe good folks 'among whom he wants me to live, 'have not the charms of Valſain's 'friends.' As this reflection had a little changed the diſpoſition of her ſoul, ſhe contented herſelf with telling Luſane, that ſhe would willingly give way to him for this once. She excuſed herſelf to the people who had aſked to be admitted to her ball: and the entertainment, which was as brilliant as poſſible, had all the vivacity of joy, without tumult and confuſion.

'Tell me then, my dear, if any thing 'has been wanting to our amuſement?' ſaid Luſane to Hortenſia. 'You diſ'guiſe ſometimes,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'the 'conſtraint you put upon me; but en'tertainments do not come every day. 'It is in the void and ſilence of her 'houſe that a woman of my age draws 'in the poiſon of dulneſs; and if you 'would ſee that ſlow poiſon conſume my 'youth, you will have all the pleaſure 'of it.'—'No, Madam,' ſaid he to her, penetrated with grief; 'I have not that 'deliberate cruelty of which you ſuſpect me. If I muſt renounce the care 'of making you happy, that dear, that 'pleaſing care, which ought to take up 'my whole life, at leaſt I will not have 'to reproach myſelf with having poiſoned the happineſs of your days. 'Neither I, nor the virtuous friends I 'have choſen for you, have ſufficient to 'make you amends for the denials I 'occaſion you; without that crowd 'that ſurrounded you, my houſe ſeems 'a dreadful ſolitude to you; you have 'the cruelty to tell me ſo yourſelf: I 'muſt reſtore you then to that liberty, 'without which you like nothing. I 'aſk of you but one more act of complaiſance: to-morrow I ſhall bring 'you a new ſet of company; and if you 'do not judge them worthy to employ 'your leiſure, if they do not take place 'of this world, which is ſo dear to you, 'all is over, and I give you up to your'ſelf.' Hortenſia had not much difficulty in granting him what he aſked: ſhe was very ſure that he had nothing to preſent her which was equivalent to her liberty; but it was not purchaſing it too dear to ſubmit to this ſlight trial.

The next day, on her waking, ſhe ſaw her huſband enter with a ſhining countenance, in which ſparkled love and joy. 'Here,' ſaid he, 'is the new 'company which I propoſe to you; if 'you are not ſatisfied with this, I no 'longer know how to amuſe you.' Imagine the ſurprize of this ſenſible mother on ſeeing before her the two children whom ſhe had by Valſain. 'Chil'dren,' ſaid Luſane, taking them in his arms in order to lift them to Hortenſia's bed, 'embrace your mother, and pre'vail on her tenderneſs to vouchſafe to 'ſhare the cares which I ſhall take to 'bring you up.' Hortenſia preſſed them to her boſom, and bathed them with her tears. 'Till Nature,' continued Luſane, 'grant me the title of father, 'love and friendſhip give it me, and I 'am going to fulfil it's duties.'—'Come, my love,' ſaid Hortenſia, 'this 'is to me the deareſt and tendereſt of all 'your leſſons. I had forgot that I was 'a mother; I was going to forget that 'I was a wife. You recal me to thoſe 'duties; and thoſe two bands united, 'bind me for all my life.'

THE CONNOISSEUR.

CELICOUR, from the age of fifteen, had been in the country what is called a little prodigy. He made the moſt gallant verſes in the world. There was not one handſome woman in the neighbourhood whom he had not celebrated, and who had not diſcovered that his eyes had ſtill more ſpirit than his verſes. It was pity to ſuffer ſuch great talents to lie buried in a little country-town: Paris ought to be their theatre, and he managed ſo well that his father reſolved to ſend him there. This father was an honeſt man, who loved wit, without having any himſelf, and who admired, without knowing why, every thing that came from the capital; he had even ſome literary relations there, and in the number of his correſpondents was a Connoiſſeur, called M. De Fintac. It was particularly to him that Celicour was recommended.

Fintac received the ſon of his friend with the kindneſs of one who takes perſons under his protection. 'Sir,' ſaid he, 'I have heard of you: I know that 'you have had ſucceſs in the country; 'but in the country, believe me, arts 'and letters are yet in their infancy. 'Without taſte, wit and genius pro'duce nothing but what is deformed, 'and there is no taſte but at Paris. Be'gin, then, by perſuading yourſelf that 'you are but juſt born, and by forget'ing all that you have learned.'—'What would I not forget?' ſaid Celicour, caſting his eyes on a niece of eighteen, whom the Connoiſſeur had with him: 'Yes, Sir, it is to day that 'I begin to live. I know not what 'charm breathes in theſe places; but it 'unfolds in me faculties unknown to 'me before: I ſeem to myſelf to have 'acquired new ſenſes, a new ſoul.'—'Good!' cried Fintac; 'there now is 'enthuſiaſm: he is born a poet, and 'from this ſingle ſtroke I warrant him 'one.'—'There is no poetry in that, replied Celicour; 'it is plain and ſimple 'nature.'—'So much the better! there 'is the true talent. And at what age 'did you feel yourſelf animated with 'this divine fire?'—'Alas, Sir! I have 'had ſome ſparks of it in the country, 'but I never experienced there this 'lively and ſudden heat which pene'trates me at this inſtant.'—'It is the 'air of Paris,' ſaid Fintac. 'It is the 'air of your houſe,' ſaid Celicour: 'I 'am in the temple of the Muſes.' The Connoiſſeur found that this young man had happy diſpoſitions.

Agathe, the moſt beautiful little wag that love ever formed, loſt not one word of this converſation; and certain ſly looks, a certain ſmile which played on her lips, gave Celicour to underſtand, that ſhe did not miſtake the double meaning of his replies. 'I am greatly 'pleaſed with your father,' added the Connoiſſeur, 'for having ſent you hi'ther at an age when the mind is do'cile enough to receive right impreſ'ſions; but guard yourſelf againſt bad. 'You will find at Paris more falſe con'noiſſeurs than good judges. Do not 'go and conſult every body, but ſtick 'cloſe to the inſtruction of a man who 'has never been miſtaken in any thing.' Celicour, who did not imagine that one might praiſe one's ſelf with ſo much openneſs, had the ſimplicity to aſk who that infallible man was. 'It is I, Sir!' replied Fintac with a tone of confidence; 'I, who have paſſed my life with all 'the artiſts and *literati* of greateſt con'ſideration; I, who for theſe forty 'years have exerciſed myſelf in diſtin'guiſhing, in things both of fancy and 'of taſte, the real and permanent beau'ties, the beauties of mode and of con'vention. I ſay it, becauſe it is well 'known; and there is no vanity in 'agreeing to a known fact.'

Extraordinary as this language was, Celicour hardly paid any attention to it, which was engaged by an object more intereſting. Agathe had ſometimes deigned to lift up her eyes upon him, and thoſe eyes ſeemed to tell him the moſt obliging things in the world: but was it their natural vivacity, or the pleaſure of ſeeing their triumph, that animated them? That was a point to be cleared up. Celicour therefore begged the Connoiſſeur to allow him the honour of viſiting him often, and Fintac himſelf preſſed him to it.

On

On his second visit, the young man was obliged to wait till the Connoisseur was visible, and to pass a quarter of an hour *tête-à-tête* with the lovely niece. She made him many excuses; and he replied, that there was no occasion for them. 'Sir,' said Agathe to him, 'my 'uncle is charmed with you.'—'That 'is a very pleasing piece of success to 'me; but, Madam, there is one which 'would touch me still more.'—'My 'uncle says you are formed to succeed 'in every thing.'—'Ah! why do not 'you think the same?'—'I am pretty 'often of my uncle's opinion.'—'Assist me, then, to merit his kindness.'—'You seem to me to want no assistance.' —'Pardon me; I know that great men 'have, almost all of them, their singularities, sometimes even weaknesses. 'To flatter their tastes, their opinions, 'their temper, one must know them; 'to know them, one must study them; 'and, if you please, beautiful Agathe, 'you can abridge that study for me. 'After all, what is the point? To 'gain the good-will of your uncle! 'Nothing in the world is more innocent.'—'Is it the custom, then, in 'the country, to come to an understanding with the neices, in order to 'succeed with the uncles? That is very 'dexterous, indeed!'—'Nothing in it 'but what is very natural.'—'But if 'my uncle had, as you say, singularities 'and foibles, must I tell you of them?' —'Why not? would you suspect me 'of wanting to make an ill use of them?' —'No; but his niece——' 'Very 'well; his niece ought to wish that 'one should endeavour to please him. 'He is past the time of life in which we 'correct ourselves; nothing remains 'then but to manage him.'—'An admirable remover of scruples!'—'Ah! 'you would not have any if you knew 'me better; but no, you have dissembled.'—'Truly, I see the gentleman 'for the second time; how can I have 'any secrets from him?'—'I am indiscreet, I confess, and I ask you pardon.'—'No, it is I who have been 'wrong, to let you fancy the thing more 'serious than it is. The fact is this: 'my uncle is a good man, and would 'never have pretended to any thing 'more, if they had not put it into his 'head to know every thing, to judge of 'arts and letters, to be the guide, estimator, and arbiter of talents. That 'hurts nobody; but it draws a crowd 'of blockheads to our house, whom 'my uncle protects, and with whom he 'shares the ridicule of being a wit. It 'were much to be wished, for his own 'ease, that he would abandon this chimera; for the publick seem to have made 'it their business never to be of his opinion, and we have every day some 'new scene.'—'You afflict me.'—'You are now in possession of all the 'secrets of the family, and we have nothing more to conceal from you.' Just as she finished, word was brought to Celicour that the Connoisseur was visible.

The study, into which he was introduced, announced the multiplicity of his studies and the variety of his knowledge: the floor was covered with folios, piled up on one another in the utmost confusion; rolls of prints, maps lying open, and manuscripts jumbled together; on a table, a Tacitus open near a sepulchral lamp surrounded by antique medals; farther off, a telescope on it's carriage, the sketch of a picture on the easel, a model of bas-relief in wax, scraps of natural history; and in the fret-work of the cieling, a representation of books picturesquely overturned. The young man knew not where to set his foot, and his embarrassment gave the Connoisseur infinite pleasure. 'Forgive,' said he to him, 'the confusion in 'which you find me: this is my study; 'I have occasion for all these things at 'hand; but do not imagine that the 'same disorder reigns in my head; every 'thing there is in it's place; the variety, 'nay, the number itself, causes no confusion there.'—'Wonderful!' said Celicour, who knew not what he said, for his thoughts were still on Agathe. 'Oh, very wonderful!' replied Fintac, 'and I am often surprized myself when 'I reflect on the mechanism of the memory, and the manner in which the 'ideas class and arrange themselves as 'fast as they arise: it seems as if there 'were drawers for every different kind 'of knowledge. For example, across 'that multitude of things which had 'passed through my imagination, who 'will explain to me how I came to retrace in my memory, to a given point, 'what I had read formerly on the return of the comet? for you are to 'know, that it was I who gave the 'watch-word to our astronomers.'—

'You,

'You, Sir?'—'They never thought of 'it; and, but for me, the comet had 'passed incognito over our horizon. I 'have not boasted of it, as you may 'plainly see: I tell it you in confi-'dence.'—'And why suffer yourself to 'be deprived of the glory of so impor-'tant a piece of intelligence?'—'Good! 'I should never have done if I were 'to lay claim to all that they steal from 'me. In general, my lad, take it for 'granted, that a solution, a discovery, 'a piece of poetry, of painting, or of 'eloquence, belong not, so much as is 'imagined, to the person who takes the 'credit of it to himself. But what is 'the object of a connoisseur! To en-'courage talents at the same time that 'he enlightens them. Whether the 'thought of this bas-relief, the dispo-'sition of this picture, the beauties of 'the parts, or the whole of this play, 'be the artist's or mine, is matter of 'indifference to the progress of the art; 'now that is all my concern. They 'come, I tell them my thought: they 'listen to me, they make their advan-'tage of it. It is excellent. I am re-'compensed when they have succeeded.' —'Nothing finer,' said Celicour: 'the 'Arts ought to regard you as their 'Apollo. And does Mademoiselle A-'gathe condescend to be also their muse?' —'No, my niece is a madcap, whom I 'wanted to bring up with care; but 'she has no taste for study. I had en-'gaged her to cast her eye over history; 'she returned me my books, saying that 'it was not worth while to read, for 'the sake of seeing in all ages illustrious 'madmen and rogues sporting with a 'crowd of fools. I wanted to try if 'she had a greater taste for eloquence; 'she pretended that Cicero, Demosth-'enes, &c. were only dexterous jug-'glers; and when one had good rea-'sons, there was no need of so many 'words. For morality, she maintains 'that she knows it all by heart, and 'that Lucas, her foster-father, is as 'wise as Socrates. There is nothing, 'therefore, but poetry that amuses her 'sometimes; and then she prefers fa-'bles to the more sublime poems, and 'tells you plainly that she had rather 'hear Fontaine's animals speak, than 'the heroes of Virgil and Homer. In 'a word, she is at eighteen as much a 'child as at twelve: and in the midst of 'the most serious, the most interesting 'conversations, you would be surprized 'to see her amusing herself with a trifle, 'or growing dull the moment one would 'captivate her attention.' Celicour, laughing within himself, took leave of M. De Fintac, who did him the favour to invite him to dine with him the next day.

The young man was so transported, that he slept not that night. To dine with Agathe! it was the happiest day of his life. He arrives, and by his beauty, by his youth, by the air of serenity diffused over his countenance, one might have imagined they saw Apollo, if Fintac's Parnassus had been better composed; but as he wanted none but dependents and flatterers, he drew to his house only such persons as were fit to be so.

He introduced Celicour to them as a young poet of the greatest expectation, and made him take his place at table at his right-hand. From that moment, behold all the eyes of envy fixed upon him. Each of the guests thought he saw his own place usurped, and swore in the bottom of their souls to take revenge on him by decrying the first work he should publish. In the mean time Celicour was graciously received, caressed by all these gentlemen, and took them from that instant for the most honest people in the world. A new comer excited emulation; Wit hoisted all her sails: they judged the republick of letters; and as it is just to mingle commendation with criticism, they praised generously all the dead, and tore in pieces the living; the present company always excepted. All the new works, which had succeeded without passing under the inspection of Fintac, could but have their day, and that a short one; all those to which he had given the seal of his approbation, were to attain to immortality, whatever the present age thought of them. They ran through all kinds of literature; and in order to give more scope to erudition and criticism, they brought on the carpet this entirely new question, viz. 'Which merited the preference, 'Corneille or Racine?' They said also on the subject the finest things in the world; when the little niece, who had not spoke a word, took it into her head to ask simply which of the two fruits, the orange or the peach, had the most exquisite taste, and merited the most commendation. Her uncle blushed at

her

her simplicity, and the guests all looked down, without deigning to reply to this idle foolery. 'Niece,' said Fintac, 'at 'your age one should hear and hold 'one's tongue.' Agathe, with an imperceptible half-smile, looked at Celicour, who had understood her perfectly well, and whose glance consoled her for the contempt of the company. I forgot to mention that he was placed opposite to her, and you may easily imagine that he listened very little to what was said around him. But the Connoisseur, who examined his countenance, perceived in it a very extraordinary fire. 'See,' said he to his geniusses, 'see 'how talent pierces.'—'Yes,' replied one of them, 'we see it transpire like 'water through the pores of an eolipyle.' Fintac, taking Celicour by the hand, said to him, 'There is a comparison 'now! Poetry and philosophy blended 'together! It is thus that the talents 'border on each other, and that the 'Muses join hands. Confess,' continued he, 'that such dinners are not 'found in your country-towns; and 'you see nothing: there are days, when 'these gentlemen have even a hundred 'times more wit.'—'It would be hard 'not to have it,' said one of them; 'we are at the fountain-head, *et pur-* '*pureo bibimus ore nectar.*'—'Ah! '*purpureo!*' replied Fintac modestly, 'you do me a great deal of honour.'—'Hark, young man, learn to quote.' The young man was all the while very attentive to catch Agathe's looks, who on her side thought him very handsome.

On rising from table, they went to walk in the garden, where the Connoisseur had taken care to get together the rare plants from all quarters. He had, among other wonders, a particoloured cabbage, which drew the admiration of naturalists. It's folds, it's festoon, the mixture of it's colours, was the most astonishing thing in the world. 'Let them show,' said Fintac, 'a foreign plant, which Nature has taken 'the trouble to form with more labour 'and delicacy. It is for the sake of 'avenging Europe on the prejudice of 'certain *virtuosi*, in favour of every 'thing that comes from the Indies and 'the new world, that I have preserved 'this fine cabbage.'

While they were admiring this prodigy, Agathe and Celicour had joined each other, as it were, without intending it, in a neighbouring walk. 'Beau-'tiful Agathe!' said the young man, shewing her a rose, 'would you let this 'flower die on the stalk?'—'Where, 'then, would you have it die?'—'Where 'I would die myself.' Agathe blushed at this answer; and in that instant her uncle, with two wits, came and seated themselves in an adjacent arbour, from whence, without being perceived, he could overhear them. 'If it is true,' continued Celicour, 'that souls pass 'from one body into another, I wish 'after my death to be such a rose as 'that. If any profane hand advances 'to gather me, I will conceal myself 'amid the prickles; but if some charming nymph deigns to cast her eyes on 'me, I will lean towards her, expand 'my bosom, exhale my perfumes, mingle them with her breath; and the 'desire of pleasing her shall animate my 'colours.'—'Very well; you will do 'so much, that you will be plucked off 'your stalk, and the moment after you 'will be no more.'—'Ah, Madam! do 'you consider as nothing the happiness 'of being one moment——' His eyes finished saying what his mouth had begun. 'And I,' said Agathe, disguising her confusion, 'if I had my choice, 'would wish to be changed into a dove, 'which is gentleness and innocence itself.'—'Add to these, tenderness and 'fidelity: yes, beautiful Agathe, the 'choice is worthy of you. The dove is 'the bird of Venus; Venus would distinguish you among your fellows; you 'would be the ornament of her car; 'Love would repose himself on your 'wings, or rather, he would cherish 'you in his bosom. It would be from 'his divine mouth that your bill would 'take ambrosia.' Agathe interrupted him, saying, that he carried his fictions too far. 'One word more,' said Celicour: 'a dove has a mate; if it depended 'on you to chuse yours, what kind of a 'soul would you give him?'—'That 'of a she-friend,' replied she. At these words Celicour looked on her with two eyes, in which were painted love, reproach, and grief.

'Very well!' said the uncle, getting up: 'very well! there, now, is fine and 'good poetry for you. The image of 'this rose is of a freshness worthy Van-'huysum; that of the dove is a little 'picture of Boucher, the freshest, the 'most gallant in the world, *ut pictura*

poesis.

'*poesis*. Courage, my lad, courage! 'the allegory is extremely well supported; we shall make something of you. 'Agathe, I have been pretty well pleased with your dialogue, and here is 'M. De Lexergue, who is as much surprized at it as I.'—'It is certain,' said M. De Lexergue, 'that there is in 'Miss's language something Anacreontick: it is the impression of her uncle's 'taste; he says nothing which is not 'stamped with the mark of sound antiquity. M. Lucide found in Celicour's fictions the *molle atque facetum*. 'We 'must conclude this little scene,' said Fintac; 'we must put it into verse; 'it will be one of the prettiest things 'we have ever seen.' Celicour said, that in order to compleat it, he stood in need of Agathe's assistance; and, that the dialogue might have more ease and freedom in it, they thought it right to leave them alone. 'To the dove, your mate, '*the soul of a she-friend!*' resumed Celicour. 'Ah, beautiful Agathe! is your 'heart made only for friendship?' Is it 'for that Love has delighted to assemble 'in you so many charms?'—'There, 'now,' said Agathe, smiling, 'is the 'dialogue excellently renewed. I have 'but to take the reply: there is matter 'enough to carry us a great way.'—'If you please,' said Celicour, 'it is 'easy to abridge it.'—'Let us talk of 'something else,' interrupted she. 'Did 'the dinner amuse you?'—'I heard there 'but one single word full of sense and 'refinement, which they had the folly 'to take for a simple question; all the 'rest escaped me. My soul was not at 'my ear.'—'It was very happy!'—'Ah, very happy! for it was in my 'eyes.'—'If I pleased, I might pre'tend not to hear, or not to understand 'you; but I never put on disguise. I 'think it very natural, then, under favour of our wits, for you to take 'more pleasure in looking at me than 'in listening to them; and I confess to 'you, in my turn, that I am not sorry 'at having one to speak to me, though 'it were only by his eyes, in order to 'save me from the spleen that they gave 'me. Now, then, we are to come to 'a right understanding, and we shall 'amuse ourselves, for we have originals, entertaining enough in their 'kind. For example, this M. Lucide 'thinks he always sees in things what 'nobody else has perceived in them. 'He seems as if Nature had told her se'cret in his ear; but every body is not 'worthy to know what he thinks. He 'chuses in a circle a privileged confident. 'This is commonly the most distinguish'ed person; he leans mysteriously towards that person, and whispers his 'opinion.—As for M. De Lexergue, he 'is a scholar of the first class: full of 'contempt for every thing modern, he 'esteems things by the number of ages. 'He would chuse even that a young wo'man should have the air of antiquity, 'and he honours me with his attention, 'because he thinks I have the profile 'of the Empress Popæa.—In the groupe 'which you see below there, is an up'right starch man, who makes pretty 'little nothings; but does not know 'what he means by them. He demands 'a day for reading; he names his auditory himself; he requires that the 'gate should be shut against every pro'fane person; he arrives on his tip'toes, places himself before a table be'tween two flambeaus; draws mysteriously out of his pocket a rose-co'loured porte-folio; throws around him 'a gracious look, which demands si'lence; announces a little romance of 'his own making, which has had the 'good fortune to please some persons 'of consideration; reads it deliberately, 'in order to be the better tasted; and 'goes quite to the end, without per'ceiving that every body yawns at 'him.—That little fidgeting man near 'him, so full of gesticulation, excites 'a pity in me which I am not able to 'express. Wit is to him like those 'sneezings which are going to come, 'but never do come. We see him 'dying with the desire of saying fine 'things: he has them at his tongue's 'end; but they seem to escape him the 'moment he is going to catch them. 'Ah, he is a man much to be pitied! —'That dry and tall man, who walks 'alone apart from them, is the most 'thoughtful and most empty person I 'know: because he has a bob wig, 'and the vapours, he thinks himself 'an English philosopher; he grows 'heavy on the wing of a fly, and is so 'obscure in his ideas, that one is some'times tempted to think him profound.'

While Agathe's wit was exercising itself on these characters, Celicour had his eyes fixed on her's. 'Ah!' said he, 'that your uncle, who knows so many

'things,

'things, should know so little of his 'niece's understanding! he represents 'you as a child!'—'Oh, to be sure! 'and these gentlemen all consider me as 'such. Accordingly they put no re'straint upon themselves, and the ab'surdity of wit is with me quite at it's 'ease. Do not go and betray me now.' —'Never fear; but we must, beautiful 'Agathe, cement our understanding by 'stricter ties than those of friendship.' —'You do injustice to friendship,' replied Agathe; 'there is something sweet'er, perhaps; but there is nothing more 'solid.'

At these words they came to interrupt them, and the Connoisseur walking along with Celicour, asked him if the dialogue with his niece had been cleverly resumed. 'It is not precisely what 'I wanted,' said the young man; 'but 'I will endeavour to supply it.'—'I 'am sorry,' says Fintack, 'that we in'terrupted you. Nothing is so difficult 'as to recover the natural thread, when 'once we let it escape. This giddy 'girl has not caught your idea. She has 'sometimes lights; but all on a sudden 'they vanish. I hope, at least, that mar'riage will form her.'—'You think, 'then, of marrying her?' demanded Celicour, with a faltering voice. 'Yes,' repliedFintack, 'and I depend upon you 'for the worthy celebration of that festi'val. You have seen M. De Lexergue; 'he is a man of great sense and pro'found erudition. It is to him that I 'give my niece.' If Fintack had observed Celicour's countenance, he would have seen it grow pale at this news. 'A 'man so serious, and so full of appli'cation, as M. De Lexergue, has need,' continued he, 'of something to dissipate 'him. He is rich; he has taken a lik'ing to this girl, and in a week's time 'he is to marry her; but he exacts the 'greatest secresy, and my niece herself 'knows nothing of it yet. As for you, 'it is highly necessary that you should 'be initiated into the mystery of an 'union which you are to celebrate. *O 'Hymen! ô Hymenæe!* you understand 'me. It is an epithalamium that I ask 'of you; and here, now, is an oppor'tunity to signalize yourself.'—'Ah, 'Sir!——' 'No modesty; it smothers 'all talents.'—'Excuse me.'—'You 'shall execute it: it is a piece in your 'own way, and which will do you a 'great deal of honour. My niece is 'young and handsome, and with an 'imagination and soul, one is not ex'hausted on such a subject. With respect 'to the husband, I have already told 'you he is an extraordinary man. 'Nobody so knowing in antiques. He 'has a cabinet of medals which he va'lues at forty thousand crowns. He 'was even going to see the ruins of 'Herculaneum, and was very near 'making a voyage to Palmyra. You 'see how many images all this presents 'to poetry. But you are ruminating 'upon it already; yes, I see on your 'countenance that profound meditation 'which hatches the buds of genius, 'and disposes them to fruitfulness. 'Go, then; go, and profit of such pre'cious moments. I am going also to 'bury myself in study.'

Seized with consternation at what he had just heard, Celicour burned with impatience to see Agathe again. The next day he made a pretence to go and consult the Connoisseur; and before he went into his study, he asked if she was to be seen. 'Ah, Mademoiselle!' said he to her, 'you see a man driven to de'spair.'—'What ails you?'—'I am 'undone; you are to marry M. De 'Lexergue.'—'Who has told you that 'story?'—'Who! M. De Fintack him'self.'—'Seriously?'—'He has charg'ed me to write your epithalamium.'— 'Very well, will it be a pretty one?'— 'You laugh! you think it charming 'to have M. De Lexergue for a hus'band!'—'Oh, very charming!'— 'Ah! at least, cruel maid, in pity to 'me who adore you, and who am to 'lose you!——' Agathe interrupted him as he fell on his knees. 'Con'fess,' said she to him, 'that there 'moments of distraction are convenient 'for a declaration: as the person that 'makes it is not himself, so she who 'hears him dares not complain; and, 'by favour of this disorder, love thinks 'it may risk every thing. But, softly; 'moderate yourself, and let us see what 'distracts you.'—'Your tranquillity, 'cruel as you are.'—'You would have 'me afflict myself, then, at a misfortune 'which I am not afraid of?'—'I tell 'you, that it is determined that you 'shall marry M. De Lexergue.'—'How 'would you have them determine, with'out me, on that which, without me, 'cannot be put in execution?'—'But 'if your uncle has given his word?'—

'If he has given it, he shall retract it.'—'How, would you have the courage!' 'The courage of not saying *Yes!* a fine 'effort of resolution!'—'Ah, I am at 'the summit of joy!'—'And your joy 'is a folly as well as your grief.'—'You will not be M. De Lexergue's!'—'Very well; what then?'—'You will 'be mine.'—'O, to be sure! there is 'no medium; and every woman who 'will not be his wife will be yours, 'that is clear! Indeed, you argue like 'a country poet. Go, go see my uncle; 'and take care that he has no suspicion 'of the information that you have given 'me.'

'Well, is the epithalamium in forwardness?' said the Connoisseur to him, as soon as he came into his presence. 'I have the plan in my head.'—'Let us see!'—'I have taken the 'allegory of Time espousing Truth.'—'The thought is beautiful; but it is 'gloomy; and, besides, Time is very 'old.'—'M. De Lexergue is an antiquary.'—'True; but we do not love 'to be told that we are as old as Time.'—'Would you like the nuptials of Venus and Vulcan better?'—'Vulcan! 'On account of bronzes and medals. 'No: the adventure of Mars is too disagreeable. You will find out, on consideration, some thought still more 'happy.—But *à-propos* of Vulcan, will 'you come this evening with us to see 'the essay of an artificer whom I protect? It is some Chinese rockets, of 'which I have given him the composition: I have even added something to 'it; for I must always put in something 'of my own.' Celicour doubted not but Agathe would be of the party, and repaired thither with eagerness.

The spectators were seated; Fintack and his niece took up one window, and there remained on Agathe's side a small space, which she had contrived to leave vacant. Celicour stole timorously into it, and leaped with joy on seeing himself so near Agathe. The uncle's eyes were attentive to follow the flight of the rockets; Celicour's were fixed upon the niece. The stars might have fallen from the heavens, and not have disturbed him. His hand met on the side of the window a hand softer than the down of flowers; a trembling seized him, which Agathe must have perceived. The hand he touched scarce made a motion to withdraw itself; his made one to retain it; Agathe's eyes turned upon him, and met his, which asked for pardon. She perceived that she should afflict him by withdrawing that dear hand, and, whether through weakness or pity, she thought proper to leave it immoveable. This was a great deal, but not quite enough; Agathe's hand was shut, and Celicour's could not clasp it. Love inspired him with the courage to open it. Gods! what was his surprize and joy, when he found her yield insensibly to this soft violence! He holds Agathe's hand open in his—he presses it amorously—conceive his felicity! It is not yet perfect: the hand he presses replies not to his; he draws it towards him, inclines towards her, and dares to rest it on his heart, which advances to meet it. It wants to get from him, he stops it, he holds it captive; and love knows with what rapidity his heart beats under this timid hand. This was as a loadstone to her. O triumph! O rapture! It is no longer Celicour that presses it; it is the hand itself that answers the beatings of Celicour's heart. Those who have never loved have never known this emotion; and even those who have loved have never tasted it but once. Their looks were mingled with that touching languor which is the sweetest of all declarations, when the branch of the fireworks displayed itself in the air. Then Agathe's hand made a new effort to impress itself on the heart of Celicour; and while around them they applauded the glittering beauty of the rockets, our lovers, taken up with themselves, expressed, by burning sighs, the regret of separation. Such was this dumb scene, worthy to be cited among the examples of eloquent silence.

From this moment their hearts understanding each other, there was no longer any secret between them: both tasted, for the first time, the pleasure of loving; and this blossom of sensibility is the purest essence of the soul. But love, which takes the complexion of characters, was timid and serious in Celicour; lively, joyous, and waggish, in Agathe.

However, the day appointed for informing her of her marriage with M. De Lexergue arrives. The antiquary comes to see her, finds her alone, and makes her a declaration of his love, founded on the consent of her uncle. 'I know,' said she, raillying, 'that 'you

'you love me in profile; but for me, 'I should like a husband that I could 'love in front; and, to speak frankly, 'you are not the thing for me. You 'have, you say, my uncle's consent, 'but you shall not marry me without 'my own; and I believe I may assure 'you that you will not have it as long 'as I live.' In vain did Lexergue protest to her that she united in her eyes more charms than the Venus De Medicis; Agathe wished him antique Venuses, and assured him that she was not one. 'You have your choice,' said she to him, 'to expose me to displease my 'uncle, or to spare me that chagrin. 'You will afflict me in charging me 'with the rupture, you will oblige me 'by taking it upon yourself; and the 'best thing we can do when we are not 'loved, is to endeavour not to be hated. 'And so your very humble servant.'

The antiquary was mortally offended at Agathe's refusal; but out of pride he would have concealed it, if the reproach cast upon him of failing in his word had not extorted the confession from him. Fintack, whose authority and consideration were now brought into question, was enraged at the opposition of his niece, and did all that was possible to conquer it; but he never could draw from her any other answer but that she was no medal, and he concluded by telling her in his passion that she should never have any other husband. This was not the only obstacle to the happiness of our lovers. Celicour could hope for only part of a small inheritance; and Agathe was entirely dependent on her uncle, who was now less than ever disposed to strip himself of his wealth for her. In happier times he might have taken upon him their little family affairs; but after this refusal of Agathe's, it required a little miracle to engage him to it; and it was Love himself that wrought it.

'Flatter my uncle,' said Agathe to Celicour; 'intoxicate him with enco-'miums, and carefully conceal from 'him our love. For that purpose let us 'diligently avoid being found together, 'and content yourself with informing 'me of your conduct *en passant*.' Fintack dissembled not to Celicour his resentment against his niece. 'Can she 'have,' said he, 'any secret inclin-'tion? If I knew it— But, no! she is 'a little fool, who loves nothing, and 'feels nothing. Ah! if she reckons 'upon my inheritance, she is mistaken: 'I know better how to dispose of my 'favours.' The young man, terrified at the menaces of the uncle, took the first opportunity to inform the niece of it. She only raillied on the occasion. 'He is raving mad against you, my 'dear Agathe.'—'That is quite in-'different to me.'—'He says he will 'disinherit you.'—'Say as he says; 'gain his confidence, and leave the rest 'to love and time.' Celicour followed Agathe's advice, and at every commendation that he bestowed on Fintack, Fintack thought he discovered in him a new degree of merit. 'The justness 'of understanding, the penetration of 'this young man, is without example 'at his age,' said he to his friends. At last, the confidence he placed in him was such, that he thought he could trust to him what he called the secret of his life; this was a dramatick piece which he had composed, and which he had not had the resolution to read to any one, for fear of risking his reputation. After demanding an inviolable secresy, he appointed the time for reading it. At this news Agathe was transported with joy. 'That is well,' said she; 'cou-'rage! Redouble the dose of incense; 'good or bad, in your eyes this piece 'has no equal.'

Fintack, *tête-à-tête* with the young man, after double-locking his study-door, drew out of a casket this precious manuscript, and read with enthusiasm the coldest, the most insipid comedy, that ever was written. It cost the young man a deal of mortification to applaud such flat stuff; but Agathe had recommended it to him. He applauded it, therefore, and the Connoisseur was transported. 'Confess,' said he to him, after reading it, 'confess that this is 'fine.'—'Oh, very fine!'—'Very well, 'it is time to tell you, then, why I have 'chosen you for my only confident. I 'have burned with desire this great 'while to see this piece on the stage, but 'I would not have it go under my 'name.' Celicour trembled at these words. 'I was unwilling to trust any 'body; but, in short, I think you worthy 'of this mark of my friendship: you 'shall present my work as your own; I 'will have nothing but the pleasure of 'the success, and I leave the glory of it to 'you.' The thought of imposing upon

the publick would alone have terrified the young man, but that of seeing appear, and being damned under his name, so contemptible a work, shocked him still more. Confounded at the proposal, he withstood it a long time; but his opposition was to no purpose. 'My secret being confided,' said Fintack, 'engages you in honour to grant me 'what I ask. It is indifferent to the 'publick whether the piece be yours 'or mine, and this friendly imposition 'can hurt nobody. My piece is my 'treasure; I make you a present of it: 'the very remotest posterity will know 'nothing of it. Here, then, your delicacy is spared every way: if, after 'this, you refuse to present this work 'as your own, I shall think that you do 'not like it, that you only deceive me 'in praising it, and that you are equally unworthy of my friendship and 'esteem.' What would not Agathe's lover resolve upon rather than incur the hatred of her uncle? He assured him, that he was only restrained by laudable motives, and asked twenty-four hours to determine. 'He has read it to me,' said he to Agathe. 'Well?'—'Well, 'it is execrable.'—'I thought so.'—'He wants me to bring it on the stage 'in my name.'—'What?'—'To have 'it pass for mine.'—'Ah, Celicour, 'Heaven be praised! have you accepted it?—'Not yet, but I shall be forced to it.'—'So much the better!'—'I tell you it is detestable.'—'So much 'the better.'—'It will be damned.'—'So much the better, I tell you; we 'must submit to every thing.' Celicour did not sleep that night for vexation; and the next day went to the uncle, and told him, that there was nothing which he would not sooner resolve upon than to displease him. 'I would 'not expose you rashly,' said the Connoisseur; 'copy out the piece with 'your own hand; you shall read it to 'our friends, who are excellent judges, 'and if they do not think the success 'infallible, you shall not be bound to 'any thing. I require only one thing 'of you; and that is to study it, in 'order to read it well.' This precaution gave the young man some hope. 'I am,' said he to Agathe, 'to read the 'piece to his friends; if they think it 'bad, he excuses me from bringing it 'out.'—'They will think it good, and 'so much the better: we should be undone if they were to dislike it.'—'Explain yourself.'—'Get thee gone! 'they must not see us together.' What she had foreseen came to pass. The judges being assembled, the Connoisseur announced this piece as a prodigy, and especially in a young poet. The young poet read his best, and, after Fintack's example, they were in extasies at every line, and applauded every scene. At the conclusion they clapped and huzzaed; they discovered in it the delicacy of Aristophanes, the elegance of Plautus, the comic force of Terence, and they knew no piece of Moliere fit to be set in competition with this. After this trial, there was no room to hesitate. The players were not of the same opinion with the wits; for they knew before-hand that these good people had no taste, but there was an order to perform the piece. Agathe, who had assisted at the reading, had applauded it with all her might; there were even pathetick passages at which she appeared to be moved, and her enthusiasm for the work had a little reconciled her with the author. 'Could it be possible,' said Celicour to her, 'that you should have 'thought that good?'—'Excellent,' said she; 'excellent for us!' and at these words she left him. While the piece was in rehearsal, Fintack ran from house to house to dispose the wits in favour of a young poet of such great expectation. At last the great day arrives, and the Connoisseur assembles his friends to dinner. 'Let us go, gentlemen,' said he, 'to support your own 'performance. You have judged the 'piece admirable, you have warranted 'the success, and your honour is concerned. As to me, you know how 'great my weakness is: I have the 'bowels of a father for all rising geniuses, and I feel in as lively a manner as themselves the uneasinesses they 'suffer in those terrible moments.'

After dinner, the good friends of the Connoisseur tenderly embraced Celicour; and told him that they were going into the pit to be the witnesses rather than instruments of his triumph. They repaired thither; the piece was played; it did not go through, and the first mark of impatience was given by these good friends.

Fintack was in the house, trembling and

and pale as death; but all the time that the play lasted, this unhappy and tender father made incredible efforts to encourage the spectators to succour his child. In short, he saw it expire, and then sinking beneath his grief, dragged himself to his coach, confounded, dejected, and murmuring against Heaven for having been born in so barbarous an age. And where was poor Celicour? Alas! they had granted him the honours of a latticed box, where, sitting on thorns, he had seen what they called his piece, tottering in the first act, stumbling in the second, and tumbling in the third. Fintack had promised to go and take him up, but had forgot it. What was now to become of him? How escape through that multitude who would not fail to know him again, and to point him out with the finger? At last, seeing the front of the house empty, he took courage and descended; but the stove-rooms, the galleries, the stairs, were yet full; his consternation made him be taken notice of, and he heard on all sides, 'It is he 'without doubt! yes, there he is; that 'is he! Poor wretch! It is pity! he 'will do better another time.' He perceived in a corner a groupe of damned authors cracking jests on their companions. He saw also the good friends of Fintack, who triumphed in his fall, and on seeing him, turned their backs upon him. Overwhelmed with confusion and grief, he repaired to the true author's, and his first care was to ask for Agathe: he had entire liberty of seeing her, for her uncle had shut himself up in his closet. 'I forwarned you of it: it is 'fallen, and fallen shamefully,' said Celicour, throwing himself into a chair. 'So much the better,' said Agathe. 'What, so much the better! when 'your lover is covered with shame, and 'makes himself, in order to please you, 'the talk and ridicule of all Paris? Ah! 'it is too much. No, Mademoiselle, 'it is no longer time to jest. I love 'you more than my life; but in the 'state of humiliation in which you now 'see me, I am capable of renouncing 'both life and yourself. I do not 'know how it has happened that the 'secret has not escaped me. It is but 'little to expose myself to the contempt 'of the publick; your cruel uncle will 'abandon me! I know him, he will 'be the first to blush at seeing me again; 'and what I have done to obtain you, 'perhaps, cuts off my hope for ever. 'Let him prepare, however, to resume 'his piece, or to give me your hand. 'There is but one way to console me, 'and to oblige me to silence. Heaven 'is my witness, that if through an impossibility, his work had succeeded, I 'should have given to him the honour of 'it; it is fallen, and I bear the shame; 'but it is an effort of love, for which 'you alone can be the recompence.'—'It must be confessed,' said the wicked Agathe, in order to irritate him still more, 'that it is a cruel thing to see 'one's self hissed for another.'—'Cruel 'to such a degree, that I would not play 'such a part for my own father.'—'With what an air of contempt they 'see a wretch pass along whose play is 'damned!'—'The contempt is unjust, 'that is one comfort; but insolent pity, 'there is the mortification!'—'I suppose you were greatly confused in 'coming down stairs! Did you salute 'the ladies?'—'I could have wished 'to annihilate myself.'—'Poor boy! 'and how will you dare to appear in 'the world again?'—'I will never appear again, I swear to you, but with 'the name of your husband, or till after I have retorted on M. de Fintack 'the humiliation of this failure.'—'You are resolved then to drive him to 'the wall?'—'Fully resolved, do not 'doubt it. Let him determine this very 'evening. If he refuses me your hand, 'all the newspapers shall publish that 'he is the author of the damned piece.'—'And that is what I wanted,' said Agathe with triumph; 'there is the 'object of all those *so much the betters* 'which put you so much out of patience. 'Go to my uncle; hold firm, and be 'assured that we shall be happy.'

'Well, Sir, and what say you to it?' demanded Celicour of the Connoisseur. 'I say, my friend, that the publick is a 'stupid animal, and that we must renounce all labour for it. But console 'yourself; your work does you honour in the opinion of men of taste.'—'My work! it is all yours.'—'Talk 'lower, I beseech you, my dear lad; 'talk lower!'—'It is very easy for you 'to moderate yourself, Sir; you, who 'have prudently saved yourself from the 'fall of your piece; but I whom it 'crushes——' 'Ah! do not think 'that such a fall does you any injury. 'The more enlightened persons have

'discerned

'discerned in this work strokes that 'proclaim genius.'—'No, Sir, I do 'not flatter myself; the piece is bad: 'I have purchased the right of speaking 'of it with freedom, and all the world 'are of the same opinion. If it had 'succeeded, I should have declared that 'it was yours; if it had been but 'partly condemned, I should have taken 'it upon myself; but so thorough a 'damnation is above my strength, and 'I beg of you to take the burden upon 'yourself.'—'I, child! I, on my de-'cline, incur this ridicule! To lose in 'one day a respect which is the work 'of forty years, and which forms the 'hope of my old age! would you have 'the cruelty to require it?'—'Have not 'you the cruelty to render me the vic-'tim of my complaisance? You know 'how much it has cost me.'—'I know 'all that I owe to you; but, my dear 'Celicour, you are young, you have 'time enough to take your revenge, and 'there needs but one instance of suc-'cess to make you forget this misfor-'tune: in the name of friendship sup-'port it with constancy; I conjure you 'with tears in my eyes!'—'I consent, 'Sir; but I perceive too well the conse-'quences of this first essay, to expose 'myself to the prejudice which it leaves 'behind it: I renounce the theatre, 'poetry, the belles lettres—' 'Well, 'you are in the right: for a young man 'of your age there are many other ob-'jects of ambition.'—'There is but 'one for me, Sir, and that depends on 'you.'—'Speak; there is no service 'which I would not do you: what do you 'require?'—'Your niece's hand.'—'Agathe's hand!'—'Yes, I adore her, 'and it was she, who to please you, 'made me consent to every thing that 'you desired.'—'My niece in the se-'cret?'—'Yes, Sir.'—'Ah! her gid-'diness will perhaps—— Hola! some-'body; run to my niece, and bid her 'come here.'—'Compose yourself: A-'gathe is less a child, less giddy, than 'she appears.'—'Ah! you make me 'tremble.——My dear Agathe, you 'know what has passed, and the mis-'fortune which has just happened.'—'Yes, uncle.'—'Have you revealed 'this fatal secret to any one?'—'To 'nobody in the world.'—'Can I tho-'roughly depend upon it?'—'Yes, I 'swear to you.'—'Well, then, my chil-'dren, let it die with us three: I ask it 'of you as I would ask my life.—Aga-'the, Celicour loves you; he renounces, 'out of friendship to me, the theatre, 'poetry, letters, and I owe him your 'hand as the price of so great a sacri-'fice.'—'He is too well paid,' cried Celicour, seizing Agathe's hand. 'I 'marry an unsuccessful author!' said she smiling; 'but I engage to console 'him for his misfortune. The worst 'of the matter is, that they deny him 'wit, and so many honest people are 'contented without it! And now, my 'dear uncle, while Celicour renounces 'the glory of being a poet, had not you 'as well renounce that of being a Con-'noisseur? You will be a great deal the 'easier.' Agathe was interrupted by the arrival of Clement, the faithful valet of her uncle. 'Ah, Sir,' said he quite out of breath, 'your friends! your good 'friends!'—'Well, Clement?'—'I 'was in the pit, they were all there.'—'I know it. Did they applaud?'—'Ap-'plaud! the traitors! If you had seen 'with what fury they mangled this un-'fortunate young man. I beg, Sir, you 'would discharge me, if such people 'are ever to enter your house again.'—'Ah! the rascals! scoundrels!' said Fintack. 'Yes, it is done, I will burn 'my books, and break off all commerce 'with these men of letters.'—'Keep 'your books for your amusement,' said Agathe, embracing her uncle; 'and 'with respect to men of letters, wish to 'have none but your friends, and you 'will find some worthy of esteem.'

THE SCHOOL OF FATHERS.

THE misfortune incident to a father, employed in raising a fortune for his children, is not to be able to watch himself over their education, a point of still more consequence than their fortune. The young Timantes, called M. De Volny,

ny, had received from Nature an agreeable figure, an eaſy temper, a good heart; but, thanks to the cares of the good lady his mother, this happy diſpoſition was ſoon ſpoiled, and the moſt agreeable child in the world at ſix years old became a little coxcomb at fifteen. They gave him all the frivolous accompliſhments, and not one of the uſeful: uſeful knowledge might be well enough for a man like his father, who had been obliged to labour to enrich himſelf; but he who found his fortune made, need only know how to enjoy it nobly. They had laid it down to him as a maxim, that he was never to live with his equals; accordingly, he ſaw none but young people, who being ſuperior to him in birth, pardoned his being richer than they, provided he paid for their pleaſures. His father would not have had the complaiſance to furniſh ſupplies to his liberalities; but his mother did honour to them all. She was not ignorant, that at the age of nineteen he had, according to the genteel cuſtom, a little houſe and a handſome miſtreſs: one ſhould paſs over ſome things in him. She required only that he ſhould obſerve a little ſecreſy, for fear that Timantes, who did not *know the world*, ſhould take it ill that his ſon amuſed himſelf. If in the intervals of his labour the father ſhewed any uneaſineſs on account of the diſſipated life which this young man led, the mother was at hand to juſtify him, and complaiſant falſhoods were never wanting on occaſion. Timantes had the pleaſure to hear it ſaid, that nobody at the ball had danced like his ſon. 'It is a great comfort,' ſaid the good man, 'to have given one's ſelf ſo 'much trouble for a ſon who dances 'well!' He did not conceive the neceſſity of this little ſeignior's having lacqueys ſo finely dreſſed, and ſuch a brilliant equipage; but his good lady wife repreſented to him, that reſpect depended on it, and that in order to ſucceed in the world, one muſt be on a certain footing. If he aſked why his ſon came home ſo late, 'It was,' ſhe told him, 'becauſe women of quality do not go 'to bed ſooner.' He did not think theſe reaſons very good; but for the ſake of peace, he was obliged to be contented with them. However, his ſon gave a looſe to himſelf in the diſſipations of his age, till love ſeemed to take pity of him, and to undertake his reformation.

His ſiſter Lucy had had, for ſome little time paſt, in her convent, a charming companion. Angelica had loſt her mother; and being too young to keep houſe, ſhe had prevailed upon her father to diſpenſe with her, till he ſhould diſpoſe of her hand.

Conformity of age and condition, and ſtill more that of tempers, ſoon united Angelica and Lucy. The latter, on wiping away the tears of her companion, appeared ſo ſenſible of her loſs, that Angelica no longer obſerved any reſerve in the effuſion of her grief. 'I 'have loſt,' ſaid ſhe to her, 'the beſt 'mother that ever lived. Since I have 'had the uſe of my reaſon, I have 'found in her a friend, and a friend ſo 'intimate, that if my heart and her 'virtues had not continually recalled to 'my mind the reſpect which I owed 'her, her familiarity would have made 'me forget it. She always diſguiſed 'her inſtructions under an air of mer-'riment; and what inſtructions, my dear 'Lucy! thoſe of wiſdom itſelf. With 'what ſtrokes was this world, in which 'I was to live, painted to my aſtoniſhed 'eyes! What charms did ſhe give to the 'pure and modeſt manners, of which ſhe 'was a living example! Ah, under 'her enchanting pencil all the Virtues 'became Graces!' Thus did this amiable daughter, ſpeaking of her mother, continually mingle with the moſt tender regret the moſt touching eulogies; but her underſtanding and her ſoul praiſed ſtill more worthily the perſon who had formed them. If any one about her wanted thoſe comforts which affluence beſtows, Angelica deprived herſelf of them with joy; the ſacrifice coſt her only the trouble of concealing them, and the want of obliging was the only want ſhe knew. 'Do you think like 'me?' ſaid ſhe ſometimes to Lucy; 'being more happy than our compa-'nions, that inequality mortifies me, 'and I bluſh for fortune, who has diſ-'tributed her gifts ſo ill. If any thing 'makes the unhappy amends, it is that 'they are pitied and beloved; whereas 'to us, whom they might envy, they 'make it a favour if they do not hate 'us. We ought, therefore, to be very 'attentive to make our companions for-'get, by beneficence and modeſty, this 'dangerous advantage which we have 'over them.'

Lucy, charmed with the diſpoſition of

of Angelica, could have wished to attach herself to her by all the bands of affection. 'My dear friend,' said she to her one day, 'we touch, perhaps, on 'the moment when we may be separated for ever: this reflection is the 'sole unhappiness of my life; but I 'have one, if you did but approve of 'it—— I want to shew you my brother; he is beautiful as the day, a 'very picture, and well accomplished.' —'He is very young,' said Angelica, 'and very much in the world for his 'age! I am afraid your mother has 'been too fond of him.'

Volny being come to see Lucy, she prevailed upon her friend to accompany her to the parlour. 'Ah, my sister, 'what charms!' cried the young coxcomb. 'Never was so much beauty: 'what features, what a figure, what 'eyes! You in a convent, Mademoi'selle! It is robbery, treason!'—'I 'foresaw,' said Lucy, 'that you would 'be transported; and yet her soul is a 'thousand times more beautiful.'— 'Sister, she has the look of the Marchioness of Alcine, whom I handed 'yesterday out of the opera. They cry 'up the figure of the Countess of Flavell, whom I am to sup with this 'evening; but there is no comparison 'between her person and this lady's; 'and though I am the intimate friend 'of the young Madam De Blanes, who 'passes for the beauty of the day, I 'will lay a thousand to one that your 'friend will eclipse her when she comes 'out into the world.'

While Volny spoke thus, Angelica viewed him with eyes of pity. 'Sir,' said she to him, 'you can have no 'doubt but your praises are insults: 'for, know, that the first sentiment 'that a virtuous woman ought to in'spire, is the fear of wounding her 'modesty, and that it is not permitted 'to praise without reserve, any but per'sons without shame.'—'There are 'transports of surprize which we can'not matter,' replied Volny, a little confused. 'When respect accompanies 'them, it prevents them from break'ing out. But I see that I afflict my 'friend in appearing offended with your 'address to me: I will console her, and 'put you at your ease. Beautiful or 'not, I am so little vain of an endow'ment with which we are often very 'contemptible, that I give you leave to 'say whatever you please before me; 'I will not have the vanity to blush at 'your praises.'—'One must be well 'accustomed,' said Volny, 'to be beau'tiful, and greatly superior to that ad'vantage, to speak of it with so much 'negligence. As for me, I cannot persuade myself that beauty is so contemptible; but since you take the homages that are paid it so ill, we must 'adore it in silence.' From that moment he talked of nothing but himself, his horses, his friends, his suppers, and his intrigues. Lucy, who had her eyes on Angelica, saw with grief that all this prejudiced Volny in her opinion.

'It is pity,' said Angelica, when he was withdrawn, 'it is a great pity that 'they have spoiled him so early!'— 'Confess, however,' said Lucy, 'that 'he is made up of graces.'—'And 'of follies, my dear friend.'—'He will 'correct them.'—'No, for that absurdity succeeds at his age, and we are 'never disposed to correct ourselves of 'a fault which pleases.'—'But he has 'seen you, he will love you; and if he 'loves you, he will become wise.'— 'You do not doubt that I wish it; but 'I am far from hoping it.'

Volny did not doubt that he had made a compleat conquest. 'My sister 'was right,' said he, 'her friend is 'handsome! a little singular; but her 'disposition is only the more lively for 'it. The only thing wanting in her is 'birth: my mother will have me marry some young woman of quality. 'Let us visit her, however; this girl 'resembles nothing that we have in the 'great world, and she has at least sufficient charms to amuse one.'

He went, therefore, to see his sister again, and with her he again saw Angelica. 'What have I done to you,' said he to Lucy, 'that you have dis'turbed my repose? I was so easy! 'I amused myself so cleverly before I 'saw your dangerous friend!—Ah, Ma'demoiselle, how insipid is the world, 'and it's amusements, how cold to a 'heart taken up with you! Who would 'have told me that I should have been 'jealous of my sister? Mixed with the 'most brilliant company, solicited by 'all the pleasures, who could believe 'it? Yes, I wish to be in her place; 'she sees you continually, tells you that 'she loves you, and hears you say that 'you love her.'—'You have reason to

'envy

'envy my happineſs; but, Volny, if 'you pleaſed, yours would be ſtill more 'deſerving of envy.' At theſe words Angelica bluſhed. 'O Heaven, ſiſter! 'what do I hear?'—'I have ſaid too 'much.'—'No, my dear Lucy: in vir- 'tuous ſentiments there is nothing to 'be concealed.—Your ſiſter wiſhes that 'Heaven may have deſtined us for each 'other, and I cannot but be obliged 'to her. Nay, more; I flatter myſelf 'with being born to make a good man 'happy, and you *might* be ſuch a man 'as my huſband ought to be: you need 'only reſemble your ſiſter.'—'If that 'be all, I am happy; for they flatter 'me that I am very like her.'—'True, 'they flatter you; but I, who never 'flatter, aſſure you it is no ſuch thing. 'My Lucy is not vain either of the 'graces of her underſtanding, or her 'figure.'—'Ah! I proteſt, now, that 'nobody in the world is leſs vain than 'I; and if I have merit, I know nothing 'of it.'—'Nothing is more ſimple than 'Lucy's manners; ſhe is Nature itſelf 'in all her candour. See, if in her 'behaviour, her language, her geſture, 'there is any thing affected, any thing 'ſtudied.'—'She is like me: for the 'ſake of avoiding affectation, I often 'fall into negligence; I am told of it 'every day.'—'Lucy makes no pre- 'tenſions to any thing: wholly taken 'up with the recommendation of others, 'herſelf is the only perſon ſhe forgets.' —'And I, whatever talents Nature may 'have given me, do they ſee me vain 'of them, or preſume upon them? All 'the world ſays, that I excel in every 'circumſtance of the agreeable; I alone 'never mention it. Ah! if it be mo- 'deſty and ſimplicity which you love in 'my ſiſter, I am very ſure that you will 'love me: theſe are my favourite vir- 'tues.'—'Would they were!' ſaid An- gelica. 'However, if you have any de- 'ſign of ever pleaſing me, I adviſe you 'to examine yourſelf more cloſely.'

'You have given him,' ſaid Lucy, 'a leſſon which he will not forget.'— 'No; for he has forgot it already.' Angelica was in the right. All that he had drawn from their converſation was, that ſhe liked him, and that ſhe would be very glad to be his wife. 'With 'what frankneſs,' ſaid he, 'did ſhe 'make the declaration to me! How 'well that candour becomes beauty!' Whether vanity or paſſion, he was real- ly moved by it; but this growing paſ- ſion, if it was one, had no effect upon his manners. Intoxicated with the in- cenſe of his flatterers, agreeably deceiv- ed by a young enchantreſs, he forgot that they ſold him the pains which they took to pleaſe him; and his vanity, ca- reſſed by the Pleaſures, ſmiled careleſsly upon them. This voluptuous ſoftneſs is the moſt fatal languor into which a young man can be plunged. Every thing, except that, is painful to him; the lighteſt duties are fatiguing; deco- rums the leaſt auſtere, dull and trou- bleſome; he is not at his eaſe, but in that ſtate of indolence and liberty, where every thing obeys him, nothing conſtrains him.

Sometimes the image of Angelica pre- ſented itſelf to him like a dream. 'She 'is charming,' ſaid he; 'but what ſhall 'I do with her? Nothing is more in- 'convenient than a delicate and faithful 'wife to a huſband who is not ſo. My 'father would expect that I ſhould live 'only for my wife. There would be 'love, jealouſy, reproaches, tears; hor- 'rible! However, I will ſee her again.'

Lucy came alone this time. 'Well, 'how does ſhe like me?'—'A great 'deal too well.'—'I thought ſo.' —'Too well as to figure. That advan- 'tage makes you neglect, ſhe ſays, more 'amiable qualities, which you would 'ſtand in need of without it.'—'This 'Angelica of yours moralizes a little, 'and it is pity. Tell her that nothing 'is more dull, and that ſo pretty a 'mouth as her's is not made to talk 'reaſon.'—'It is not ſhe,' ſaid Lucy; 'it is you whom I would correct.'— 'And of what, pray; of loving pleaſure, 'and every thing that inſpires it?'— 'Pleaſure! is there one more pure than 'that of poſſeſſing the heart of a virtu- 'ous and beautiful woman; of loving, 'and of being loved? I believe that 'you are affectionate. Angelica has 'ſenſibility; every thing that belongs 'to me is dear to her, but——' 'But 'ſhe is very difficult, and what is it ſhe 'requires?'—'Morals.'—'Morals at 'my age! and who has told her that 'I have none?'—'I don't know; but 'ſhe has conceived a prejudice againſt 'you that grieves me.'—'Ah, I will 'bring her to herſelf again. Bring her 'to me, ſiſter! bring her to me the firſt 'time I come to ſee you. It is to no 'purpoſe that men are diſcreet,' ſaid he,

as he was going away; 'women cannot be silent; and with whatever care I conceal my intrigues, the secret will out. But what hurt does that do me? If Angelica will have a husband who has always been chaste, she has nothing to do but to marry a fool or a child. Am I obliged to be faithful to a wife that is to be? Oh! I will make her see the folly of her notions.' She appeared, and he was himself very much humbled, very much confounded, when he heard her speak with the eloquence of virtue and reason on the shame and danger of vice. 'Can you think, Sir,' said she to him, after having let him treat as slightly as he pleased the principles of good morals; can you think, without blushing, on the union of a pure and chaste soul with one tarnished and profaned by the most unworthy of all inclinations? Of what value in your eyes would a heart be, debased by the vices of which you are vain? and do you think us less sensible than yourself to the charms of virtue, modesty, and innocence? You have given yourself a dispensation from those laws which you have imposed upon us; but Nature and Reason are more equitable than you. For me, I will never believe that a man can dare to love me while he loves things that are scandalous; and if he has had the misfortune to be unworthy of me before knowing me, it is by the pains he shall take to wipe away that blemish that I shall see whether I ought to forget it.' Volny wanted to make her understand, that by changing condition we changed our conduct; that love, virtue, beauty, had numberless rights over a soul; and that the frivolous and transient pleasures which had before occupied that indolent soul, would disappear before an object more dear, and more worthy to possess it. 'Have you faith, Sir,' said she, in these sudden revolutions: do you know that they suppose a soul naturally delicate and noble? that there are very few of this temper; and that it is not a good presage of the change which you promise, to wait, in the very bosom of vice, the moment of becoming virtuous all on a sudden?'

Volny, surprized and confounded at this serious language, contented himself with telling her, that in all this he flattered himself there was nothing personal. 'Pardon me!' said Angelica. 'I have heard much talk of you; I am besides pretty well acquainted with the way of life of the young men of fashion: you are rich, of very extensive acquaintance; and, unless by a kind of prodigy, you must be more irregular than another. But the opinion which I have of you ought not to discourage you. You think you love me; I wish it: that perhaps will give you resolution and force to become a valuable man. You have a fine example; a father who, without all the accomplishments which you are set off with, has acquired, by talents useful to his country and himself, the highest reputation. There, now, is what I call an uncommon man; and when you shall become worthy of him, I shall be proud of being worthy of you.'

This discourse had thrown Volny into serious reflections; but his friends came to draw him out of them. He was expected at a delicious supper, at which Fatime, Doris, and Chloe, were to assist. Their merriment was lively and brilliant, and if Volny's heart did not give itself up to it, at least his senses did.

We may easily judge, that in this polite circle a serious engagement passed for the highest extravagance. 'When a person's fortune is concerned,' said they, 'it is time enough, we resolve on it; but can a young man, born to a great fortune; can such a one be fool enough, or mad enough, to forge himself a chain? If he does not love his wife, she is a burden which he wantonly imposes upon himself; and if he loves her, what a sad method of pleasing himself is that of being her husband? Is there in all the world a more ridiculous creature than a loving husband? Suppose, also, that this should succeed, what then? They are pleased for six months, to be dull all their lives. Ah, my dear Volny! no marriage: you would be a lost man. If you have a fancy for any honest girl, wait till another marries her; they always come round to us sooner or later, and you will be happy in your turn.' Would one believe that this unthinking young man thought these reflections very wise. 'And yet only see,' said he, 'what empire virtue and beauty

'beauty have over a ſoul, ſince they 'make it forget the care of it's repoſe, 'and the value of it's liberty.'

He would fain not have ſeen Angelica again; but he was not well with himſelf, when he had paſſed a few days without ſeeing her. Such, nevertheleſs, is the attraction of libertiniſm, that on quitting that adorable young lady, penetrated, raviſhed, enchanted, with her wiſdom and her charms, he plunged himſelf again into the diſſipations, of which ſhe had made him aſhamed.

It is poſſible, that it can be a happineſs to a ſon to loſe his mother. Volny, at the death of his, thought he ſaw the ſource of all his fooliſh expences dried up; but it did not even come into his head to renounce thoſe things which had engaged him in them; and the only care with which he was taken up, was to ſupply the means which he had loſt to ſupport them. Being the only ſon of ſo rich a father, he could not fail to be rich in his turn; and a young man finds at Paris a pernicious facility of anticipating his fortune. Timantes, now on his decline, wanted to repoſe himſelf from his long fatigues, and to engage his ſon to take his place. 'Sir,' ſaid the young man to him, 'I do not think myſelf 'born for that.'—'Well, my ſon, would 'you rather take the profeſſion of arms?' —'My inclination is not that way, and 'my birth does not oblige me to it.'— 'The law, without doubt, pleaſes you 'better?'—'Oh, not at all! I have an 'invincible averſion for the law.'— 'What will you be, then?'—'My mo- 'ther had views of an office which con- 'fers nobility, which requires no duty, 'and might be diſcharged at Paris.'— 'I underſtand you, my ſon; I will 'think of it; an excellent vocation! 'Oh, I ſee!' ſaid the good man in himſelf, 'that you would live an idle life; 'but I will hinder you if I can. An 'office which confers nobility, and requires no duty! very convenient. And 'why ſhould I ſtill wear myſelf out with 'labour and inquietude? Let me repoſe, 'let me have no other care than that 'which I have taken up rather too late, 'the care of obſerving the conduct of 'a ſon who promiſes me nothing but 'ſorrow; for he who loves idleneſs, 'loves the vices of which idleneſs is 'the mother.'

But what was the affliction of Timantes, when he learned that his ſon, intoxicated with pride, and plunged in libertiniſm, gave into all kinds of irregularities; that he had miſtreſſes and flatterers; that he gave ſhews and entertainments, and that he played at a rate ſufficient to ruin him. 'It is my 'fault,' ſaid Timantes, 'and I muſt 'repair it; but how? The habit is con- 'tracted: the reliſh for vice has made 'great progreſs. Shall I conſtrain this 'young man? He will eſcape me. Shall 'I diſavow his expences and debts? 'That would be diſhonouring myſelf; 'it would be extinguiſhing in his abaſed ſoul the very ſeeds of honeſty. To 'ſhut him up is ſtill worſe: thank Hea- 'ven! he is not come to that paſs, as to 'merit that the laws ſhould deprive him 'of the natural right of freedom; and 'there are none but unnatural parents 'who would be ſeverer towards their 'children than the laws. In the mean 'time he is running on to his ruin; 'what ſhall I do to draw him from the 'precipice on which I ſee him? Let us 'go back to the ſource of the evil. My 'riches have turned his head; born of 'a father without fortune, he had been 'like another, modeſt, laborious, and 'prudent: the remedy is eaſy, and my 'courſe is taken.'

Timantes began from that time to ſettle his wealth in ſuch a manner as that it ſhould be detached, independent, and free. Excepting his eſtate of Volny, and his town-houſe, his fortune was all in his porte-folio, and he took care to adjuſt matters with all his correſpondents. Things being thus diſpoſed, he returns home one day in conſternation. His ſon and his friends, who waited his coming to ſeat themſelves at table, were ſtruck with his dejection. One of them could not refrain from aſking him the cauſe. 'You ſhall know it,' ſaid he; 'let us make a little haſte, if you pleaſe, 'to dine; I am taken up with ſerious 'affairs.' They dined in profound ſilence; and Timantes, at their getting up from table, having taken leave of his gueſts, ſhut himſelf up with his ſon. 'Volny,' ſaid he to him, 'I have bad 'news to tell you, but you muſt ſupport your misfortune with courage. 'My child, I am ruined! Two-thirds 'of my fortune are juſt taken on board 'two veſſels; and the diſhoneſty of a 'perſon whom I truſted has deprived 'me of half the reſt. The deſire of 'leaving you a large fortune has undone

'me; happily, I owe but little, and out 'of the remains of my fortune I shall 'save my estate of Volny, which is 'worth twenty thousand livres a year: 'on that we shall be able to live. It is 'a terrible blow, but you are young, 'and you may rise under it. I have not 'rendered myself unworthy the confi-'dence of my correspondents; my name 'will perhaps still retain some credit in 'Europe; but I am too old to begin 'anew, and you must repair the mis-'fortunes of your father. I set out in 'greater difficulties than you will do; 'and with probity, labour, and my in-'structions, it is easy for you to go far-'ther than I have done.'

The situation of a traveller, at whose feet the thunder has just fallen, is not to be compared to that of Volny. 'What, 'my father, ruined without resource!' —'You, my son, are the only resource 'left me, and I have no longer any hope 'but in you. Go, consult yourself, 'and leave me to take the measures 'suitable to our misfortune.'

The news was soon made publick. The house at Paris was let; the equi-pages sold; a plain coach, a decent lodging, a frugal table, a family of ser-vants suitable to the necessities of a pru-dent way of living; every thing pro-claimed this reverse of fortune, and it is unnecessary to say that the number of Timantes's friends diminished consi-derably.

Those of Volny were touched with his accident. 'What is the matter?' said one; 'they tell me your father is 'ruined!'—'It is too true.'—'What 'a folly! You have your little box, 'then, no longer?'—'Alas! no.'—'I am very sorry for it; I reckoned to 'have gone there to supper to-morrow.' Another accosted him, and said, 'Tell 'me a little how this is; your fortune is 'entirely ruined?'—'It is at least re-'duced to a very small matter.'—'You 'have a very silly father of your own! 'Why the devil did he meddle? you 'would have been ruined yourself 'well enough without him.'—'I am 'quite distracted,' said a third; 'they 'tell me that you have sold your fine 'horses?'—'Alas! yes.'—'If I had 'known it, I would have bought them. 'What a fellow you are! you never 'think of your friends.'—'I was taken 'up with more serious affairs.'—'With 'your little mistress, was not it? You 'will have her no longer on your own 'account; but you will always be good 'friends: take comfort, I know she 'loves you; she will behave well.' Some of them said to him as they went along, 'Adieu, Volny!' and all the rest shunned him.

As to his mistress, whom he had en-riched, she was so afflicted that she had not the courage to see him again. 'Spare 'me,' writ she to him; 'you know my 'sensibility; the sight of you would 'make too grievous an impression on 'me: I find myself unable to support 'it.' It was then, his soul pierced both by the cold slights of his friends, and the unworthy desertion of his mistress, that Volny, for the first time, saw the veil fall which he had over his eyes. 'Where 'have I been?' said he; 'what have I 'done? how was I going to spend my 'life? Ah! what reproaches have I not 'merited; what wrongs have I not to 'repair? Let me go and see my sister,' added he; for he had not the courage to say, 'Let me go and see Angelica.'

Lucy was overwhelmed with the news which her father had just told her. 'It is not for myself,' said she; 'I am 'content; and to be happy far from the 'world, but little is necessary; but 'you, my father, but Volny!'—'What 'would you have, daughter? I was not 'born in the opulence wherein I have 'seen myself. If my son is prudent, he 'will still have riches enough; if not, 'he will have too much.' Lucy's grief redoubled on seeing her brother. 'I 'have not the courage to console you,' said she; 'but I go to call to my assist-'ance our wife and affectionate Ange-'lica.'—'Oh! no, sister; I have not 'deserved her interesting herself in my 'sorrow! when I might have done her 'honour by sacrifices, it was then that 'I should have rendered myself worthy 'of her esteem and pity: now, that every 'one abandons me, my return, though 'humiliating to me, has nothing flatter-'ing in it for her.' While he was speak-ing thus, Angelica came of her own ac-cord, and with the most touching air testified to him all her sensibility for his loss. 'It is a great misfortune for 'your father,' added she; 'it is so too 'for this dear girl; but it is perhaps a 'happiness for you. It would be cruel 'to afflict you by reproaches, when we 'owe you consolations; but you may 'draw from the loss of your wealth bles-

'sings

'sings more valuable than that wealth 'itself.'—'I abused it; Heaven punishes 'me for it, but punishes me too cruelly 'in depriving me of the hope of being 'hers whom I love. I was young; 'and I dare believe that, without this 'desperate lesson, time, love, and rea'son, would have rendered me less un'worthy of you.'—'I see you dejected,' said she to him; 'it is no longer 'from presumption, it is from despon'dency that we must preserve you, and 'what it would have been dangerous to 'confess to you in prosperity, you stand 'in need of knowing in adversity. Whe'ther it was not possible for me to think 'ill of the brother of my friend, or 'whether it was that you yourself had 'inspired me with that prepossession 'which does not listen to reason, I 'thought I discerned in you, amidst all 'the errors and vices of your age, a dis'position at bottom naturally good. 'Happily your past errors have nothing 'shameful in the eyes of the world: the 'path of honour and virtue is open to 'you, and it is more easy for you than 'ever to become such as I wish. As to 'fortune, the reverse which you have 'experienced is overwhelming. I shall 'not make you a panegyrick upon me'diocrity: when we have known our'selves rich, it is humiliating, it is hard, 'to cease to be so; but the evil is not 'without remedy. Conform yourself 'to your present situation; emerge out 'of that indolent softness in which you 'have been plunged; let the love of la'bour take place of the taste for dissipa'tion; do all that depends on yourself, 'if you love me, in order to re-establish 'between us that equality of fortune 'required in marriage. My father, 'who loves me, and who would not 'have me unhappy, will allow me, I 'hope, the liberty of waiting for you. 'If in six years your fortune is re-esta'blished, or on the point of being re'established, all the obstacles will be 'smoothed; if, with prudence, frugali'ty, and labour, you have the misfor'tune not to succeed, I require then of 'you, in the room of all riches, only to 'have consideration of your condition. 'I am an only daughter, very rich my'self; I will cast myself at my father's 'feet, and obtain his permission to in'demnify a valuable man for the in'justice of Fortune.' Lucy could no longer refrain from embracing Angelica. 'Ah, how justly art thou named!' said she to her; 'there is nothing but a 'heavenly spirit that could be capable 'of so much virtue.' Volny, on his side, in the tenderness and respect with which he was seized, applied his mouth, as he threw himself down, on the bar of the grate which Angelica's hand had touched. 'Mademoiselle,' said he to her, 'you render my misfortune dear 'to me; and I am going to employ my 'whole life to merit, if it be possible, 'the favours with which you overwhelm 'me. Permit me to come often, to 'derive from you the courage, the pru'dence, and the virtue, which I have 'need of in order to deserve you.'

He retired, not such as heretofore, vain, and full of himself; but humbled, confounded, at having so little known the value of the most noble heart that Heaven had ever formed. He enters his father's closet. 'Your fortune is changed,' said he, 'but your son is still more so; 'and I hope that one day you will bless 'Heaven for the reverse which restores 'me to my duty and to myself. Conde'scend to instruct and to direct me: di'ligent, laborious, and docile, I am 'going to be the support and consola'tion of your old age, and you may 'dispose of me.' The good man, transported, dissembled his joy, and contented himself with commending such good dispositions. He presented his son to his correspondents, and demanded in his behalf their friendship and confidence. We pity, above all, unfortunate persons whom we esteem; and each of them, touched with the misfortune of this gallant man, made it a point to console him.

Volny, who resumed the name of Timantes, had but few difficulties to encounter in his first operations: his dexterity, which at first was purely his father's, but which soon after became actually his own, made his credit visibly increase. The moments of relaxation, which his father obliged him to take, he passed with Angelica, and he felt a sensible pleasure in telling her his progress. Angelica, who attributed partly to herself the wonderful change in her lover, enjoyed her own influence with the double satisfaction of love and friendship. Lucy was in adoration of her, and ceased not to give her thanks for the happiness which she had procured them.

One

One day that her father came to see her, and testified his satisfaction at the consolation which his son gave him; 'Do you know,' said Lucy, 'to whom 'we are indebted for this reformation? to the most beautiful, and most 'virtuous person breathing, to the only 'daughter of Alcimon, my companion 'and friend.' She then related to him all that had passed. 'You melt me,' said the good man; 'I must know this 'charming girl.' Angelica came, and received the commendations of Timantes with a modesty which still heightened her beauty. 'Sir,' said she to him, 'I depend on a father; but it is true, 'that if he has the goodness to allow me 'to dispose of myself, and that you are 'satisfied with your son, I shall take a 'pride in becoming your daughter. My 'friendship for Lucy inspired me with 'the first desire of it; my respect for 'yourself still adds to it: your very mis'fortunes have only made me interest 'myself more in every thing that could 'make you amends for them; and if 'the conduct of your son is such as you 'wish, and I desire, whether he be rich 'or not, the most honourable and the 'most agreeable use I can make of my 'fortune, is to share it with him.' At this discourse the old man was very near letting his secret escape him; but he had the prudence to contain himself. 'I did not think, Madam,' said he, 'that it was possible to increase, in the 'soul of a father, the desire of seeing 'his son a wise and virtuous man; but 'you add a new interest to that of pa'ternal love: I do not know what Hea'ven will do with us; but in all the si'tuations of life, and till my last breath, 'be assured of my gratitude!'

'That you should not have confided 'to me,' said he on seeing his son again, 'the follies of your youth, I am but 'little surprized, and I pardon you for 'it; but why conceal from me a vir'tuous inclination? Why not confess 'to your father your love for Angeli'ca, the daughter of my old friend?'— 'Alas!' said the young man, 'have 'you not misfortunes enough of your 'own, without afflicting you with my 'sorrows? And who has revealed my 'secret to you?'—'Your sister; Ange'lica herself.—I am charmed with her, 'I am in love with her, and I wish she 'was my daughter.'—'Ah, I wish so 'too! but how superior is her fortune 'to mine!'—'In time you may come 'near it. Visit this lovely girl often.' —'I visit only her; and I have no other 'ambition in the world, than to be 'worthy of her and of you.'

Timantes felt an inexpressible satisfaction at seeing daily the success of the trial which he had put him to. He had the firmness to let him apply himself for five whole years, without relaxation, to the re-establishing of his fortune, detached from the world, and dividing his life between his compting-house and Angelica's parlour. At length, seeing his reformation become habit, and all the old seeds of vice extirpated, he went to visit Alcimon. 'My old friend,' said he, 'you have, they tell me, a 'charming daughter; I come to pro'pose for her an agreeable partner in 'point of condition, and advantageous 'in point of fortune.'—'I am obliged 'to you,' said Alcimon; 'but I tell 'you beforehand, that I would have a 'person of the same condition with my'self, and who would take a pride in 'calling me his father; I have not la'boured all my life to give my daugh'ter a husband who may be ashamed of 'me.'—'The person I propose,' said Timantes, 'is precisely such a one as 'you like. He is rich, he is honest, 'he will always respect you.'—'What 'is he?'—'I cannot tell you but at my 'own house, where I invite you to 'come and renew, over a bottle, a 'friendship of forty years. Do me the 'favour to bring Angelica there. My 'daughter, who is her companion in 'the convent, shall have the honour of 'accompanying her; you shall both of 'you see the young man who demands 'her; and to put you more at your 'ease, he shall not know himself that 'I have spoke to you about him.' The day appointed, Alcimon and Timantes go and fetch Angelica and Lucy; they arrive, they prepare to sit down at table; they send word to the son, who, busied in his office, expected nothing less than the happiness which was preparing for him. He enters; what is his surprize! Angelica there! Angelica with her father! What was he to think, what to hope, from this unforeseen rendezvous! Why had they made a secret of it to him? Every thing seems to proclaim his happiness to him, but his happiness is not probable. In this confusion of thoughts he lost the use of his senses.

A sudden

A ſudden giddineſs ſpread a cloud over his eyes; he wanted to ſpeak, his voice failed him, and a low bow alone expreſſed to the father and the daughter how much he was moved with the honour his father and he received. His ſiſter, who came to throw herſelf into his arms, gave him time to recover from his confuſion. Never was embrace ſo tender. He thought he held in his boſom Angelica with Lucy, and he could not ſeparate himſelf from her.

At table, Timantes diſplayed an alacrity at which all the company were ſurprized. Alcimon, prepoſſeſſed with the demand which he had made him, and impatient to ſee the young man whom he propoſed arrive, freely gave himſelf up to the pleaſure of finding himſelf again with his old friend; he had even the kindneſs to enter into converſation with the young Timantes. 'I 'ſee,' ſaid he to him, 'that you are 'the comfort of your father. People 'talk of your application to buſineſs 'and your talents with great commen-'dations; and ſuch is the advantage 'of your condition, that a ſenſible and 'honeſt man cannot fail of ſucceſs.'— 'Ah, my friend,' replied the old Timantes, 'it requires a great deal of time 'to make one's fortune, and very little 'to ruin it! What a pity not to have 'mine to offer you! Inſtead of pro-'poſing to you a ſtranger as a huſband 'to this amiable young lady, I ſhould 'have ſolicited that happineſs for my 'ſon.'—'I ſhould have preferred him 'to every body elſe,' ſaid Alcimon.— 'Indeed!'—'Aye, indeed. But you 'know where one is liable to have a 'numerous family, there ſhould be 'wherewithal to ſupport it.'—'If it 'depends only on that,' ſaid Timantes, 'the caſe is not deſperate, and we may 'come to an agreement.' On ſaying theſe words he roſe from table, and returning the moment after, 'There,' ſaid he, 'ſee, there is my porte-folio: it is yet 'pretty well furniſhed:' and obſerving Alcimon's ſurprize; 'know,' added he, 'that my ruin is all a fiction. This 'young man hath been ſpoiled by the 'notion that he was born rich: I knew 'no better method to reform him, than 'to make him believe that I was ruined. 'This feint has ſucceeded: he is now 'in a good way; I am even certain 'that he has no deſire to relapſe again 'into the errors of his youth, and it is 'time to truſt him.—Yes, my ſon, I 'have all the wealth I had, augmented 'by five years ſavings, and the fruit of 'your labour.—It is for him, there-'fore,' ſaid he to his friend, 'that I 'demand Angelica; and if there be oc-'caſion for any new motive to engage 'you to grant her to me, I will confeſs 'to you that he has ſeen her at the con-'vent, that he has conceived for her the 'moſt tender love, and that this love has 'done more than ill fortune itſelf to-'wards attaching him to his duties.' While Timantes did but ſound the diſpoſition of Angelica's father, ſhe herſelf, her friend, and her lover, had felt only the emotion and anxiety of hope and fear; but at ſight of the porte-folio, at the news that Timantes's ruin was but a feint, at the demand which he made himſelf of Angelica's hand for his ſon, Lucy, all wild and beſide herſelf, flew into the arms of her father; the young Timantes, ſtill more confuſed, fell at Alcimon's knees; and Angelica, her countenance overſpread with paleneſs, had not the power to lift up her eyes. Alcimon raiſed the young man with his embraces; and turning towards the old Timantes, 'My 'friend,' ſaid he to him, 'when we 'would contrive an agreeable ſurprize, 'we muſt take inſtruction from you. 'Come, you are a good father; and 'your ſon deſerves to be happy.'

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

MORAL TALES.

VOLUME THE THIRD.

THE SYLPH-HUSBAND.

'AVOID the ſnares of men,' we are perpetually ſaying to young women. 'Avoid the ſeductions of women,' we are perpetually ſaying to young men. Do we think we are following the plan of Nature, by making one ſex the enemy of the other? Are they formed only to hurt each other? Are they deſtined to fly one another? And what would be the fruits of theſe leſſons if both ſexes ſhould take them literally?

When Eliſa quitted the convent to go to the altar to eſpouſe the Marquis De Volange, ſhe was thoroughly perſuaded that, next to a lover, the moſt dangerous being in nature was a huſband. Brought up by one of thoſe recluſe devotees, whoſe melancholy imagination paints to itſelf all objects in black, ſhe ſaw nothing for her in the world but rocks, and nothing but ſnares in marriage. Her ſoul, naturally delicate and timid, was immediately blaſted by fear; and age had not yet given to her ſenſes the happy power of conquering the aſcendant of opinion. Thus every thing in marriage was to her humiliating and painful. The firſt aſſiduities of her huſband, far from encouraging her, alarmed her the more. 'It is thus,' ſaid ſhe, 'that the men 'cover with flowers the chains of our 'ſlavery. Flattery crowns the victim; 'Pride ſoon prepares to ſacrifice it. He 'conſults my deſires now, in order to 'oppoſe them eternally hereafter. He 'would penetrate into my heart, in or'der to unfold all it's receſſes; and if 'he diſcovers any foible in me, it is by 'that very foible that he will take care 'to humble me with more advantage. 'Let us guard ourſelves well againſt the 'ſnares which they ſpread for us!'

It is eaſy to foreſee the bitterneſs and coldneſs which this unhappy prejudice created on the ſide of Eliſa in their moſt intimate commerce. Volange perceived the repugnance which ſhe had for him. He would have endeavoured to have conquered it, had he gueſſed the cauſe; but the perſuaſion that he was hated diſcouraged him; and in loſing the hope of pleaſing, it was natural enough for him to loſe the endeavour.

His ſituation was the more painful, as it was quite oppoſite to his character. Volange was gaiety, gallantry, complaiſance itſelf. He had conſidered his marriage as a jolly feſtival, rather than a ſerious affair. He had taken a wife young and handſome, as we chuſe a divinity, in order to raiſe altars to her. 'The world will adore her,' ſaid he; 'I ſhall lead her thither in triumph. I 'ſhall have a thouſand rivals; ſo much 'the better! I ſhall eclipſe them all by 'my aſſiduities, my vows, and my 'homages; and the inquietude ever at'tached to jealouſy, delicate and timid, 'ſhall preſerve the lover of Eliſa from 'the negligences of the huſband.'

The impatient and diſdainful coldneſs of his wife deſtroyed this illuſion. The more he was in love with her, the more he was hurt by the diſtance which ſhe obſerved towards him; and that love, ſo tender and ſo pure, which would have formed his happineſs, was likely

to be his torment. But an innocent artifice, of which chance gave him the first idea, re-established him in all his rights.

The sensibility of the soul must exert itself; and if it has not a real object, it creates a fantastick one. Elisa's repugnance was founded in a settled notion, that there was nothing in nature worthy to attach her. But she had found in fiction something to engage, to move, to melt her. The fable of the Sylphs was in vogue. Some of those romances, in which is represented the delicious commerce of those spirits with mortals, had fallen into her hands; and these brilliant chimeras had in her eyes all the charms of truth.

In short, Elisa believed in Sylphs, and burned with the desire of having one. We must be able at least to form to ourselves some notion of what we desire; and it is not easy to form a notion of a spirit. Elisa had been obliged to attribute all the features of a man to the sylph which she desired. But for the mansion of a celestial soul, she had composed a body at pleasure; a shape, elegant and noble; a figure, animated, interesting, ingenious; a complexion, of a bloom and figure worthy of the sylph that presides over the morning star; eyes fine, blue, and languishing; and I know not what of aërial in all the graces of his person. To all this she had super-added a vesture, the lightest imaginable, formed of ribbands, colours the most tender, a tissue of silk, almost transparent, in which the Zephyrs sported; two wings like those of Cupid, of whom this beautiful sylph was the image: such was the chimera of Elisa; and her heart, seduced by her imagination, sighed after her own fiction.

It is natural for our most familiar and most lively ideas to recur in sleep: and the dreams of Elisa soon persuaded her that her chimera had some reality.

Volange, very sure that he was not beloved by his wife, had in vain observed her with the eyes of jealousy; he saw her with her own sex gay and gentle, easy and affable, and sometimes even with an air of friendship; but no man had yet met with such a reception from her as could alarm him. With that sex her countenance was severe, her air disdainful, her whole behaviour cold; she spoke little, scarce vouchsafed attention to what was said, and when she did not seem tired, she appeared quite out of patience. To be, at her age, neither tender nor a coquette; inconceivable! However, at last she betrayed herself.

The opera of Zelindor, at it's first appearance, had the most brilliant success. Elisa was present at the representation in her own little box, with one of her women, for whom she had a great partiality. Justina was her confidante, and nothing attaches a timid soul so much as having once surmounted the difficulty of unbosoming itself. Elisa would fain have had this confidante of her weakness perpetually with her; and her little box at the theatre was so dear to her, only on account of the liberty it afforded them of being there together and alone.

Volange, who from the opposite side of the theatre observed all the movements of Elisa, saw her several times start at the sight of Zelindor, and talk to Justina with an air of passion.

A strange uneasiness possessed him; but in the evening, having found Justina a moment alone; 'Your mistress,' said he, 'seemed highly entertained at 'the play?'—'Ah, Sir! she is distractedly fond of it: Zelindor is her passion. It seems to have been made on 'purpose for her. She is not recovered 'of the surprize into which she has been 'thrown by seeing her own dreams represented.'—'What! does your mistress dream of such things?'—'Alas! 'yes, Sir; and you are much to blame 'to reduce her to the pleasure of dreaming. Indeed, you are very happy, 'that, young and handsome as she is, 'she confines herself to the loving of 'sylphs.'—'Sylphs!'—'Yes, Sir, 'sylphs. But I am betraying her secret.'—'You jest, Justina?'—'A fine 'jest, indeed! Indeed, Sir, it is a shame 'to live with her as you do. Ah! when 'I see so young a lady, when she wakes, 'her complexion blooming, eyes languishing, with a mouth fresher than a 'rose, telling me, with a sigh, that she 'has just been happy in a dream, how 'I pity her, and how I hate you!'—'What do you mean? Your mistress 'had in her husband an uncommon 'lover; but she has returned the highest 'tenderness of love only with a coldness 'almost amounting to aversion.'—'You 'fancy so, you have mistaken timidity 'for coldness; and that is always the

'way

'way with the men: they have no pity 'on a young woman. Why should you 'grow cool? Why not make use of 'your power over her?'—'That is 'what has restrained me. I was un-'willing to owe any thing to constraint, 'and I should have been much warmer 'in my instances, had she been more 'free in her refusals.'—'Alas, poor 'gentleman! how good you are, with 'this delicacy of yours! You shall see 'how vastly they are obliged to you for 'it!'—'Hark'e, Justina, a thought 'has just struck me, which, if you will 'but assist me, may reconcile us.'—'If I'll assist you!'—'Elisa is in love 'with sylphs; I may personate a sylph 'in love with her.'—'And how will 'you make yourself invisible?'—'By 'visiting her only by night.'—'Well, 'that is a good scheme enough.'—'It 'is not very new: more than one lover 'has availed himself of it; but Elisa 'does not expect it, and I am persuaded 'will be deceived. The chief difficulty 'is the opening the first stage of the 'plot; but I depend on your address 'to furnish me with an occasion.'

An opportunity was not long in presenting itself. 'Ah, Justina!' said Elisa, the next day on waking, 'what happiness have I just enjoyed! I dreamed 'that I was under an arbour of roses, 'where the most beautiful of the celestial spirits sighed at my knees.'—'How, Madam! spirits sigh! and how 'was this beautiful spirit made?'—'It 'would be in vain for me to endeavour 'to describe what has not it's image 'among mankind. When the idea is 'effaced by my waking, I can scarce 'retrace it to myself.'—'But I may 'know, at least, what passed at your 'conference?'—'I do not know what; 'but I was transported, I heard a ravishing voice, drew in the sweetest 'perfumes, and at my waking all vanished.'

Volange was informed of his wife's dream, and in her regrets he thought he saw the means of beginning to act the sylph towards her. At that time essence of roses was scarce known at Paris; Volange put into Justina's hands a small phial of that precious elixir. 'To-morrow,' said he, 'before your 'mistress wakes, take care to perfume 'her bed with it.'

'O Heaven!' said Elisa on waking, 'is it still a dream? Come here, Justi-'na; smell, and tell me what you smell!'—'I, Madam? I smell nothing.'—'Nothing! do you not smell roses?'—'You grow distracted, my dear mis-'tress; pardon me for saying so. Your 'dreams might be passed over; but 'quite awake!—Indeed I do not con-'ceive you.'—'You are right, nothing 'is more inconceivable. Leave me! 'draw the curtains. Ah! the smell is 'still more prevailing.'—'You alarm 'me!'—'Hark'e! I told you yester-'day, if I remember right, that I was 'sorry that the dream of the arbour was 'dissipated, and that I was delighted 'with the fragrance I had breathed 'there. He has heard me, my dear 'Justina.'—'Who, Madam?'—'Who! 'do not you know? You put me out 'of patience. Leave me! But he should 'know, as he is present, that it is not 'the flowers that I regret. Ah! how 'much sweeter was his voice! How 'much more did it touch my heart! 'And his features, his divine features! 'Unavailing wishes! Alas! I shall ne-'ver see him.'—'Why really, Ma-'dam, there is no great probability.'—'You throw me into despair: is it 'love to envy me, even to want to de-'stroy the most pleasing illusion? For 'that it is one, I must believe; I am 'not a child.—And yet this fragrance 'of the roses!—Yes, I perceive it, no-'thing is more real; and it is not now 'the season for those flowers.'—'What 'would you have me say to you, Ma-'dam? All the desire I have to please 'you cannot make me believe a dream 'to be a reality.'—'Very well, Ma-'demoiselle, do not believe it. Pre-'pare my toilette, that I may dress. I 'am in a confusion, in an emotion at 'which I blush, and which I know not 'how to appease.'

'Victory, Sir,' said Justina, on seeing Volange; 'the sylph is announced 'and desired: we wish for him; let 'him appear; and, take my word for it, 'he will be very well received.'

Elisa was plunged all the day in a reverie, which had the air of an enchantment; and in the evening her husband perceived that she waited with impatience the moment of going to deliver herself up to sleep. There was a communication between their apartments, according to custom, and Volange had agreed with her confidante on the method of getting, without noise, to his

wife's pillow. But it was neceſſary, that either by a ſigh, or by ſome words which were to eſcape, ſhe ſhould herſelf invite him to ſpeak.

I forgot to mention, that Eliſa would not have any light by her in the night; not without reaſon. The pictures of the imagination are never ſo lively as in profound darkneſs. Thus Volange, without being perceived, eſpied the favourable moment. He heard Eliſa ſigh and ſeek repoſe with inquietude. 'Come, 'then,' ſaid ſhe, 'happy Sleep, thou alone 'makeſt me love life.'—'It is for me,' ſaid Volange, in a voice ſo ſoft that Eliſa ſcarce heard him, 'it is for me to 'call upon Sleep: I am happy only 'through him; it is in his boſom that I 'poſſeſs you.' He had not time to finiſh. Eliſa gave a loud ſhriek, and Volange having diſappeared, Juſtina ran up at Eliſa's voice. 'What is the matter, 'Madam?'—'Ah! I die; I have juſt 'heard him. Recal me, if poſſible, to 'life. I am loved, I am happy. Make 'haſte, I cannot breathe.' Juſtina haſtens, unties her ribbands, gives her ſome ſalts to ſmell, which revive her, and ſtill ſupporting her part of being incredulous, reproaches her for delivering herſelf up to ideas which diſturb her repoſe, and affect her health. 'Treat me, as a 'child, as a fool!' ſaid Eliſa; 'but it 'is no longer a dream, nothing is ſo 'true; I heard him as plain as I hear 'you.'—'Very well, Madam, I will 'not put you out of patience; but endeavour to calm your ſpirits; remember that, in order to pleaſe a ſylph, one 'muſt be handſome, and that we ſoon become otherwiſe without ſleep.'—'Going, Juſtina? How cruel! Do not 'you ſee that I tremble all over? Stay 'at leaſt till I ſleep, if it be poſſible to 'ſleep in my preſent agitation.'

At laſt her fine eyes grew heavy, and it was reſolved between Juſtina and Volange, that ſcared by the cry which Eliſa had made, the ſylph ſhould in vain be wiſhed for the next night. Accordingly, ſhe called upon him in vain.

She was afraid he would never return more. 'My cries have frighted 'him,' ſaid ſhe. 'Good Madam,' ſaid Juſtina, 'is a ſpirit ſo fearful then? 'And ought he not to have expected 'the fright which he put you into? Be 'eaſy: he knows what paſſes in your 'heart, as well as yourſelf. And perhaps at this moment he is liſtening.' —'What ſay you? You make me ſtart.' —'How! are you not very glad that 'your ſylph reads your ſoul?'—'Aſſuredly: nothing paſſes there with which 'he has not reaſon to be pleaſed. But 'there is always ſomething of man intermingled in the idea which we form 'of ſylphs, and modeſty—' 'Modeſty, 'in my opinion, is out of the caſe with 'ſpirits. Where would be the harm, 'for example, in engaging him to return this evening?'—'Ah! it would 'be vain to diſſemble; he knows very 'well how much I wiſh it.'

Eliſa's wiſh was accompliſhed. She was laid down, the light put out, and Volange at her bed's head. 'Do you think 'he will return?' ſaid ſhe to Juſtina. 'Yes, if he be gallant, he muſt be here 'already.'—'Ah, if he could but hear 'me!'—'He hears you,' replied Volange with a ſoft voice; 'but remove this 'witneſs who gives me uneaſineſs.'—'Juſtina,' ſaid Eliſa, trembling, 'get 'away.'—'What now, Madam? You 'ſeem moved.'—'Nothing; leave me, I 'ſay.' Juſtina obeyed, and as ſoon as they were alone, 'What, then,' ſaid the ſylph, 'does my voice fright you! It is not 'uſual to fear what we love.'—'Alas,' ſaid ſhe, 'can I ſee without emotion my 'dreams thus realized; and paſſing, by 'an inconceivable prodigy, from illuſion to reality? Shall I believe that 'one of the celeſtial ſpirits deigns to 'quit the heavens for me, and to be familiar with a mere mortal?'—'If you 'knew,' replied Volange, 'how much 'you efface all the charms of the nymphs 'of the air, you would be but little flattered with your conqueſt. Nor is it to 'vanity that I would owe the reward 'of my paſſion. That paſſion is pure 'and unalterable as the eſſence of my 'being; but it is delicate alſo to exceſs. We have only the ſenſations of 'the ſoul: you have them as well as 'we, Eliſa; but in order to reliſh their 'delights, you muſt reſerve for me that 'ſoul of which I am jealous; amuſe 'yourſelf with all that the world has 'intereſting and amiable; but love nothing in it like myſelf.'—'Alas! it 'is very eaſy for me to obey you,' ſaid ſhe, in a voice ſtill faltering. 'The 'world has no charms for me. My 'ſoul, even when unoccupied, could not 'give acceſs to vain pleaſures which 'would ſeduce it; how can it be acceſſible then, now that you poſſeſs it?

'But

'But you, O spirit celestial and pure, 'how can I flatter myself with fixing 'you, and being able to content you?' —'Learn,' replied Volange, 'what distinguishes us from all the spirits dispersed through the universe, and still more from the human species. A sylph 'has no happiness in himself: he is 'happy only in what he loves. Nature 'has forbid him the power of loving 'himself alone; and as he partakes all 'the pleasures which he excites, he feels 'also all the pains which he occasions. 'Fate has left me the choice of this half 'of myself on which my happiness is 'to depend; but, that choice decided, 'we have no longer but one soul, and 'it is only in rendering you happy that 'I can hope to be so.'—'Be happy, 'then,' said she to him with transport, 'for the mere idea of an union so sweet 'ravishes me, and lifts me above my-'self. What comparison between this 'intimate commerce, and that of dan-'gerous mortals, whose slaves we are 'here? Alas! you know that I have 'submitted to the laws of Hymen, and 'that they have imposed fetters on me.' —'I know it,' said Volange; 'and one 'of my cares shall be to render them 'light.'—'Ah!' resumed she, 'be not 'jealous on that account. My husband 'is perhaps the man in the world who 'has the least tincture of the vice of his 'species; but they are all so conceited 'and so proud of their advantages, so 'indulgent to their own faults, and so 'rigorous to ours, so little scrupulous 'as to the means of seducing and 'making us slaves, that there would 'be as much imprudence as weakness 'in delivering ourselves up to them.'— 'Well,' said her sylph, 'would you 'believe it? All that with which you 'reproach the men, do we reproach the 'sylphids. Soft, insinuating, fertile in 'evasions, there is no art which they do 'not employ to domineer over the spi-'rits; but once sure of their power, a 'capricious and absolute will, an impe-'rious pride, to which every thing must 'bow, take place of timidity, gentle-'ness, and complaisance; and it is not 'till after having loved them, that we 'perceive we ought to hate them. This 'prevailing character, which Nature has 'given them, has however it's excep-'tions; it is the same among the men, 'But be that as it may, my dear Elisa, 'both the one and the other world will 'be strangers to us, if you love me as I 'do you. Adieu! my duty and your 'repose oblige me to quit you. Hea-'ven has confided to me the care of 'your star; I am going to direct it's 'course. May it diffuse over you the 'most favourable influence!'—'Alas! 'going so soon!'—'Yes, in order to 'see you again to-morrow at the same 'hour.'—'Adieu! but no; one word 'more. May I have a confidante?'— 'You have one, confine yourself to her. 'Justina loves you, and she is dear to 'me.'—'What name shall I give you 'in speaking to her about you?'—'In 'heaven they call me *Valoë*, and in the 'sylphid language that name signifies '*all Soul*.'—'Ah! I merit the same 'name since I have heard you.' The sylph then vanished. Elisa's heart swam in joy, she was at the summit of her wishes, and in the midst of the delicious ideas which possessed her, sleep seized her senses.

Justina was informed of every thing that had passed, and had no need to repeat it to Volange. She only acquainted him that he had left his wife in an enchantment. 'That is not enough,' said he; 'in the sylph's absence, I would 'have every thing recal his passion to 'her. You read her soul, you know 'her likings; instruct me in her wishes; 'the sylph will have the air of divining 'them.' In the evening, Elisa, to be the more at liberty, went to walk alone with Justina in one of those magnificent gardens which are the ornament of Paris; and though she was there wholly taken up with her sylph, an inclination, natural to young women, made her cast her eyes on the dress of an unknown lady. 'Ah! what a pretty gown!' cried she to herself; and Justina pretended not to hear her. But the adroit attendant, having heard the name of this lady who was so well dressed, remembered it, and told it to Volange.

The hour of rendezvous being come, Elisa goes to bed, and as soon as she is alone, 'Ah, my dear Valoë!' said she, 'have you forgot me! Here am I alone, 'and you come not!'—'He waited for 'you,' said Volange; 'your image has 'followed him into Heaven. He has 'seen only you in the midst of all the 'aërial court. But you, Elisa, in his 'absence, have you wished only for 'him?'—'No,' said she to him assuredly, 'nothing but you interests me.'— 'I know,

'I know, however, Eliſa, that you have 'formed a wiſh that was not for me.' —'You make me uneaſy,' ſaid ſhe; 'I 'have examined myſelf in vain, I know 'not what that wiſh can be.'—'You 'have forgot it, but I remember it, and 'far from complaining of it, I wiſh 'that you may often have the like. I 'have told you the ſylphs are jealous, 'but it only renders them the more 'earneſt to pleaſe. Do not be aſtoniſh-'ed to ſee me curious of the ſmalleſt 'particulars of your life: I would leave 'in it only the flowers, and remove the 'ſmalleſt thorn. For example, your 'huſband ceaſes not to give me uneaſi-'neſs. How are you with him?'— 'Why,' ſaid Eliſa, a little confounded, 'I live with him as with a man; in 'that diffidence and fear which a ſex 'born the enemy of ours naturally in-'ſpires. They gave me to him with-'out conſulting me; I followed my du-'ty, and not my inclination. He ſaid 'he loved me, and he would have pleaſ-'ed me; that is, have captivated me: 'he has not ſucceeded; and his vanity, 'which he calls delicacy, has diverted 'him from his deſign. Thus you ſee 'we are good friends; or, if you pleaſe, 'both of us free.'—'Is he at leaſt a 'little complaiſant?'—'Why, yes, 'ſufficiently to ſeduce a woman who 'did not know ſo well as I how dan-'gerous men are.'—'You might have 'fallen into worſe hands; and this huſ-'band is not ſo troubleſome as his ſex 'generally are. He does well as to the 'reſt; and if ever you ſhould have cauſe 'to complain of him, he ſhall be puniſhed 'for it inſtantly.'—'Oh no, I conjure 'you,' ſaid ſhe, trembling, 'though 'he ſhould totally neglect me, never in-'terfere in it. I owe you all my con-'fidence; but it would be a cruel abuſe 'of it to do him any manner of hurt. 'He is unhappy enough in being a man, 'and it is a ſufficient puniſhment.'— 'Your ſoul is celeſtial, charming Eliſa; 'a mortal did not deſerve you. Liſten; 'I have not told you our manner of 'puniſhing the men. They know only 'fire and ſword; but we have gentler 'methods of vengeance. Whenever 'your huſband ſhall have diſpleaſed 'you, you ſhall inform me of it; and 'from that inſtant, regret, reproach, ſhall 'ſeize his ſoul, and he ſhall have nei-'ther peace with me, nor with himſelf, 'till he has expiated at your knees the 'diſpleaſure he has occaſioned. I will do 'more, I will inſpire into him all that 'you inſpire into me. Thus the ſpirit of 'your ſylph ſhall animate your huſband, 'and ſhall be preſent to you without ceaſ-'ing.'—'That,' ſaid Eliſa tranſported, 'is the only way of making me love him.' Thus paſſed this laſt converſation.

The day after, Eliſa being at her toilette, Juſtina caſt her eyes on the ſo-pha in her cloſet, and ſets up a cry of aſtoniſhment. Eliſa turns about, and ſees there diſplayed a gown like that which ſhe had ſeen in her walk. 'Ah! 'ſee now in what manner he avenges 'himſelf of a wiſh not formed for him! 'Juſtina, will you believe me at laſt? 'Is not a ſylph to be adored?' Eliſa's eyes could not weary themſelves in ad-miring this new prodigy. Volange ar-rives in that moment. 'There is a beau-'tiful gown!' ſaid he. 'Your taſte, 'Madam, does great honour to what 'you love. I think,' continued he, examining the ſtuff nearer, 'this is 'made by the hands of fairies.' This familiar manner of ſpeaking came out ſo *à-propos*, that Eliſa bluſhed as if ſhe had been betrayed, and her ſecret re-vealed.

In the evening ſhe failed not to extol the forward gallantry of her handſome little ſylph; and he in his turn ſaid to her a thouſand things, ſo delicate, and ſo tender, on the happineſs of embelliſhing what we love, and of enjoying the good which we do, that ſhe was perpetually repeating it. 'No, never mortal knew 'ſuch language: none but a celeſtial 'being can think and ſpeak thus.'—'I 'acquaint you, however, before-hand,' ſaid he, 'that your huſband will ſoon be-'come my rival. I take a pleaſure in pu-'rifying his ſoul, in rendering it as gen-'tle, as tender, as flexible to your deſires, 'as his nature permits. You will be a 'gainer by it without doubt, Eliſa, and 'your happineſs is wholly mine: but 'ſhall not I be a loſer?'—'Ah! can you 'doubt,' ſaid ſhe, 'that I ſhall not attri-'bute to you all the care he ſhall take to 'pleaſe me? Is he not like a ſtatue which 'you endeavour to animate?'—'Thus 'you will love me in him; and in think-'ing that it is I who animate him, you 'will take a pleaſure in rendering him 'happy.'—'No, Valoë, that would be 'to deceive him: I hate falſhood. It 'is you that I love, not him; and to 'teſtify to him what I feel for you, 'would be to deceive both.' Volange, not to engage any farther in ſo delicate a diſpute,

a diſpute, changed the ſubject, and aſked her how ſhe had amuſed herſelf all the day. 'Hey!' ſaid ſhe to him, 'do 'not you know, you who read my 'thoughts? The moments in which I 'was diſengaged, I employed in tracing 'out a cypher, in which our two names 'are entwined. I draw flowers pretty 'well, and I never did any thing with 'ſo much taſte as thoſe which form 'that kind of chain.'—'You have 'alſo,' ſaid he to her, 'a rare talent 'which you neglect, and the pleaſures 'of which are heavenly: you have a 'touching voice, an exquiſite ear, and 'the harp under your fingers, mingling 'it's accords with your ſounds, would 'form the delight of the inhabitants of 'the air.' Eliſa promiſed to exerciſe herſelf in it, and they parted more taken, more enchanted, with each other, than ever.

'I am often alone,' ſaid ſhe to her huſband; 'muſick would amuſe me. 'The harp is in faſhion, and I have an 'inclination to try it.'—'Nothing ſo 'eaſy,' ſaid Volange, with an air of complaiſance: and that very evening ſhe had an harp.

The ſylph returned at his hour, and appeared charmed with ſeeing her ſeize and follow his ideas with ſo much vivacity. 'Alas!' ſaid Eliſa to him, 'you are more happy, you divine my 'wiſhes, and know how to prevent 'them. How precious is the gift of 'reading the ſoul of the perſon we love! 'We do not allow time to wiſh. Such 'is your advantage over me.'—'Con-'ſole yourſelf,' ſaid Valoë to her; 'complaiſance has it's value: I fulfil 'my own wiſhes when I prevent yours; 'and you, in waiting for mine, have 'the pleaſure of telling yourſelf that it 'is my ſoul guides you. It is more 'flattering to prevent; but it is ſweeter 'to comply. My advantage is that of 'ſelf-love; yours is that of love.'

So much delicacy was to Eliſa the moſt charming of all ties. She would fain have never ceaſed to hear a voice ſo dear; but, out of tenderneſs to her, Volange took care to withdraw as ſoon as he had gently moved her, and ſleep came to calm her ſpirits.

The firſt idea which ſhe had at her waking was that of her ſylph, and the ſecond that of her harp. It was brought to her the evening before, quite plain, and without ornaments. She flies into her cabinet, and finds a harp decorated with a garland of flowers, which ſeemed freſhly gathered. Her joy was equal to her aſtoniſhment. 'No!' ſaid ſhe, 'no! 'never has the pencil in the hand of a 'mortal produced this illuſion.' And what doubt but this was a preſent from her ſylph? Two brilliant wings crowned this harp, the ſame, without doubt, which Valoë played on in the celeſtial choir. While ſhe was returning him thanks, the muſician arrives, whom ſhe had ſent for to give her leſſons.

Timotheus, inſtructed by Volange in the part which he was to perform, opened with an encomium on the harp. 'What fulneſs, what harmony, in the 'ſounds of this fine inſtrument! What 'could be more ſoft, more majeſtick!' The harp (if we might take his word for it) would renew all the prodigies of the lyre. 'But the triumph of the 'harp,' added this new Orpheus, 'is 'when it ſupports with it's ſymphonies 'the accents of a voice melodious and 'tender. Obſerve, too, Madam, that 'nothing diſcovers to more advantage 'the graces of a fine hand and arm; 'and when a lady knows how to give 'her head an air of enthuſiaſm, ſo that 'her features grow animated, and her 'eyes kindle at the ſounds which ſhe 'occaſions, ſhe becomes half as beauti-'ful again.'

Eliſa cut ſhort this encomium, by aſking her maſter whether he was a deſcendant of Timotheus, Alexander's muſician. 'Yes, Madam,' ſaid he, 'of the ſame family.' She took her firſt leſſon. The muſick-maſter appeared enchanted with the ſeraphick tones of the harp. 'Divine!' cried he. 'I warrant it,' ſaid Eliſa to herſelf. 'Come, Madam, try theſe harmonious 'ſtrings.' Eliſa applied to them a timid hand, and every note that ſhe drew from the inſtrument thrilled to her very heart. 'Wonderful, Madam!' cried Timotheus, 'wonderful! I hope ſoon 'to hear you accompany your touching 'voice, and ſet off my muſick, and my 'verſes.'—'You make verſes then too?' demanded ſhe, ſmiling. 'Ah, Ma-'dam!' ſaid Timotheus, 'that is the 'ſtrangeſt thing in the world, and I 'can ſcarce conceive it myſelf. I had 'heard that we had a genius, and I 'took it for a fable; but upon my word 'nothing is more real. I had one, I 'who now ſpeak to you, and I had him

'without

' without knowing it. It was but ' yesterday evening that I had fresh con- ' firmation of it.'—' And how did you ' make this discovery?'—' How! Last ' night, in my sleep, my Genius appear- ' ed to me in a dream, and dictated the ' following verses—

" The empty honour I renounce
" To guide thy car, Aurora!
" No more, no more, will I announce
" Thy sweet return, O Flora!
" Me now employs a gentler, happier care;
" To guard my waking, guard my sleeping
" fair.
" In vain Aurora weeps, in vain
" Would Flora bind me in her rosy chain:
" With dear Elisa will I stay,
" Elisa, fairer—fairer far than they."

' What!' said Elisa, with much emotion; ' what, Timotheus! did you make ' these verses?'—' I, Madam! I never ' made any in my life. It was my Ge- ' nius that dictated them to me. He ' has done more: he has set them to ' musick, as you shall hear.——Well, ' Madam,' said he, after having sung them, ' how do you like them? Is it ' not happy to have a Genius like mine?' —' But, Sir, do not you know at least ' who this Elisa is whom you cele- ' brate?'—' Why, Madam, I believe ' it is a name like Phyllis, Chloris, or ' Iris. My Genius pitched upon that, ' because it is agreeable to the ear.'— ' So, you do not pique yourself upon ' understanding the meaning of the ' verses which you sing?'—' No, Ma- ' dam, but that is no matter: they are ' melodious, and full of sensibility, and ' that is enough for a song.'—' Let me ' beg you,' resumed she, ' to repeat ' them to nobody else, and if your Ge- ' nius should inspire any more, pray ' reserve them for me.'

She expected her sylph with impatience, in order to thank him for the inspiration. He denied them; but so weakly, that she was but the more convinced. He confessed, however, that it was not without reason that those men were regarded as inspired, who, without reflection, produced fine thoughts. ' These are,' said he, ' the favourites of ' the sylphs, and each of them has his ' own particular one, whom he calls ' his Genius. It is no wonder, there- ' fore, that Timotheus should have one; ' and if he inspires him with verses which ' please you, he may boast of being, ' next to me, the happiest of the inhabi- ' tants of the air.' The Genius of Timotheus became every day more fertile, and every day Elisa was more sensible of the praises he bestowed on her. However, Volange prepared her a new surprize, and the following was the object of it.

The reader remembers that she amused herself in tracing out a cypher, in which the name of Valoë was interwoven with her own. One day, being invited to a feast, she was preparing to put on her diamonds: she opens her casket, and what does she see! her bracelets, her necklace, her aigrette, her ear-rings, mounted after the pattern of that very cypher which she had drawn. Her first sensation was that of embarrassment and surprize. ' What will Volange think? ' what will he suspect?' While she was yet at her toilette, enters Volange, and casting his eyes on her jewels, ' Ah!' said he, ' nothing can be more ' gallant. My name and yours in the ' same cypher! I should be very much ' flattered, Madam, to suppose that this ' were a stroke of sentiment.' She blushed instead of feigning; but in the evening Valoë was chid. ' You have ' exposed me,' said she, ' to a danger ' at which I tremble even yet: I have ' seen the instant wherein there was a ' necessity for me either to deceive my ' husband, or to give him the most hu- ' miliating opinion of me; and although ' the advantage which the men draw ' from our sincerity authorizes us to ' use dissimulation, I perceive that in ' making use of that right, I should be ' ill at ease with myself.' Valoë failed not to commend her delicacy. ' A ' little lye,' said he, ' is always a little ' evil, and I should have been sorry to ' have been the occasion. But the re- ' semblance of the name of Volange ' to mine had not escaped me, and I ' knew that your husband would go no ' farther than appearances. I have be- ' gun by rendering him discreet: that ' is the first good quality in a husband.'

The whole winter had passed away in gallantries on the part of the sylph, and on the side of Elisa in emotions of surprize and joy, which bordered on enchantment.

The first and the most beautiful of the seasons, the time in which we enjoy Nature, arrives. Volange had a country-house. ' We will set out when- ' ever

'ever you pleaſe,' ſaid he to his wife; and though he had ſaid this in the handſomeſt manner, and in the ſweeteſt tone of voice, ſhe perceived very well, ſhe ſaid, that this invitation carried in it the imperious will of a huſband. She confided her pain to Valoë. 'I do not 'ſee,' ſaid he to her, 'any thing painful in what he has propoſed to you. 'Nothing attaches you to the town; 'and the country is at preſent a delicious abode, eſpecially to a ſoul ſenſible and benevolent as yours. We 'there ſee in Nature the firſt efforts of 'her bounteous inclination; and the 'care of making mortals happy, renews 'itſelf there under a thouſand forms. 'The foreſts crowned with a thick verdure, the orchards in bloom, the corn 'ſpringing up, the meadows enamelled, 'the flocks newly recruited, and bounding with joy at the firſt ſight of the 'light; all concur to preſent us in the 'country the image of bounty. In winter, Nature ſhews herſelf under an 'aſpect threatening and horrible; in 'autumn ſhe is rich and fruitful, but 'ſhe groans to unburden herſelf, and 'her liberality afflicts her: even in 'ſummer ſhe ſells her gifts, and the 'ſad image of exceſſive labour joins itſelf to that of abundance. It is in 'ſpring that Nature is gaily prodigal 'of her riches, and fond of the good 'ſhe is doing.'—'Alas!' ſaid Eliſa, 'Nature is beautiful, I grant; but will, 'ſhe be ſo to me, in that very place 'where I connected my fortunes to thoſe 'of a mortal; where I took an oath to 'be devoted to him; where every thing 'will recal the humiliating remembrance to my mind?'—'No,' replied the ſylph, 'nothing, my dear Eliſa, 'nothing in Nature is humiliating, but 'what is contrary to her ordinances. 'The perfection of a plant is to flouriſh 'and bud: the perfection of a woman 'is to become a wife and a mother. If 'you had oppoſed the wiſdom of this 'deſign, you would not have received 'my vows.'—'What! ſaid Eliſa! 'can a pure eſſence, a celeſtial ſpirit, 'love in me that which degrades me 'beneath him!'—'Be what you are, 'my dear creature; I love you as a 'ſylph; and it is not of your ſenſes 'that I am jealous. Let your ſoul be 'fair and pure, let it be devoted to me, 'that is ſufficient. As to what are 'called your charms, they are ſubmitted to the laws of mortals: one of 'them poſſeſſes them; let him diſpoſe 'of them; far from complaining I ſhall 'rejoice at it, for one of your duties is 'to render him happy.'—'Ah! give 'me time, at leaſt, to accuſtom myſelf 'to this way of thinking. In the country we ſee one another oftener: I ſhall 'familiarize myſelf, perhaps, to that 'duty. But pr'ythee do not abandon 'me!'—'I ſhall be there with you perpetually: I love peace and ſilence.'

There was at this country-houſe a ſavage and ſolitary place, which Eliſa called her wilderneſs, where ſhe uſed to retire to read or think at her eaſe. Scarce was ſhe arrived there, when ſhe went to it; but all was changed. Inſtead of her ſeat of moſs, ſhe found a throne of turf, interſperſed with violets growing in feſtoons and love-knots. This throne was ſhaded with lilies, which overarched the ſweet-briar, formed the circuit of it, and mingled with the odour of the lilies the moſt delicious perfumes.

Eliſa's firſt care, at her return, was to thank her huſband for the attention which he had ſhewn in embelliſhing her little hermitage. 'It is, I ſuppoſe,' ſaid he, 'a piece of gallantry of my 'gardener: I am much obliged to him 'for having thought of it.'—'Hilary,' ſaid Eliſa, on ſeeing the gardener, 'I 'am obliged to you for having made ſo 'pretty an arbour for me.'—'Arbours, 'Madam!' ſaid the ſly ruſtick. 'Yes, 'yes, I have enough to do to think of 'arbours, truly! I am hardly able to 'go through the labour of my kitchen-'garden. If they would have arbours, 'and well kept up, they muſt allow me 'more hands.'—'At leaſt you have not 'neglected mine; and this fine bower of 'lilies, with that hedge of ſweet briar, 'enchants me.'—'Oh! the lilies, the 'ſweet-briar, and all that, thank God, 'comes of itſelf, and without any trouble of mine.'—'What in earneſt, 'then, have not you touched it?'—'No, Madam, but that is nothing; and 'if you pleaſe, after the riſing of the 'ſap, I will give it a few cuts with the 'pruning-knife.'—'And this turf, interſperſed with violets, was it not you 'that cultivated it?'—'Troth, Madam, 'not I: neither turf nor violets will do 'for your table; and my garden takes 'up enough of my time without all 'theſe fineries.'

Eliſa, after this diſcourſe, no longer

doubted that the metamorphosis of her wilderness into a delicious arbour was the work of her sylph. 'Ah!' said she, in her transport, 'this shall be the temple to which I will repair to adore 'him. I flatter myself he will be present there; but will he be for ever invisible?'

He came in the evening, according to custom. 'Valoë,' said she to him, 'my 'arbour is charming. But, shall I tell 'you? to compleat it's beauty, you 'must perform one final prodigy, and 'there render yourself visible to me. 'That alone is now wanting to my 'happiness.'—'You demand of me, 'my dear Elisa, a thing that depends 'not on myself. The king of the air 'sometimes grants that favour to his 'favourites; but it is so rare! And 'even when he grants it, he prescribes 'the form which they shall take, and he 'generally prefers the most fantastick, 'in order to amuse himself.'—'Ah!' said Elisa, 'so I do but see you, no mat'ter under what form.' He promised her, therefore, to solicit that favour with the most pressing instances.

'At present,' said he to her, 'how 'passed your journey?'—'Why, very 'well. My husband prattled with a 'gaiety that was natural enough; and 'I can easily discover the effect of the 'trouble which you take with him. 'But it is in vain that the natural im'periousness of the men bends a little; 'it still keeps it's spring: one may tem'per, but cannot change it, at least not 'without long habitude.'—'Let us not 'despair of any thing,' said Valoë; 'I have a deal of power over his soul. 'What do you propose doing to mor'row, my dear Elisa?'—'I shall bathe 'in the morning.'—'I will come to see 'you bathe, if possible, and I will pass 'a moment with you.'

On Elisa's waking in the morning, word was brought her that the bath was ready. She went there with the faithful Justina; but as the sylph was to come to see her, and modesty is always timid, she would have the curtains drawn, and scarce admit any light into the room.

Elisa enters the bath; and, in a pannel opposite to her, her eyes perceive some confused features. This was the portrait of Elisa painted beneath glass, and which Volange had caused to be put there instead of a looking-glass: a striking delusion, but easy to be produced, by means of a groove made in the partition, through which silently slided, by turns, the looking-glass and picture, one after another.

In this picture, Elisa was exalted on a cloud, and surrounded with aërial spirits, who presented her with garlands of flowers. At first she took what she saw for the reflection of the opposite objects; but in proportion as, with an eye more attentive, she discovers what strikes her, surprize succeeds to mistake. 'Justina,' said she, 'let in some light. Either I 'dream, or I see—— O Heaven!' cried she, as soon as a sufficient degree of light was thrown on the picture, 'my image 'in that glass!'—'Why, Madam, I see 'mine there too. Where is the wonder, that one sees one's self in a look'ing-glass?'—'Come here yourself, 'then; come here, I say. Is that the 'effect of a looking-glass?'—'Certain'ly.'—'Certainly! this cloud, these 'flowers, these genii, and I in the midst 'of that celestial circle, borne in tri'umph through the air!'—'You are 'not well awake yet, Madam; and no 'doubt but you are finishing your dream 'in the bath.'—'No, Justina, I do not 'dream; but I see that picture is not 'made for your eyes. O, my dear Va'loë! it is you that have painted it. 'How ingenious is your tenderness!'

Elisa's eyes were for a whole hour fixed on the picture. She expected her sylph; but he came not. 'He has but 'just passed by,' said she, 'and in that 'homage has declared himself. But 'what will my husband say? How shall 'I explain this prodigy to him?'—'Ah, 'Madam!' said Justina, 'if this picture 'be not visible to my eyes, why should 'it be so to his?'—'Right; but I am 'so confounded——' In saying these words, she lifts up her eyes, and instead of the picture which she had seen, she finds there only the looking-glass. 'Ah, 'I am easy,' said she: 'the picture is 'vanished. My amiable sylph will not 'give me the slightest uneasiness. And 'how should I not love a spirit wholly 'occupied with my pleasures and re'pose?'

Impatient of knowing the success of her request, she pretended in the evening to be fatigued with walking, and to have need of sleep. The sylph did not make her wait. 'I know not,' said he, 'my 'dear Elisa, whether you will be con-

'tent

'tent with what I have obtained. I am 'permitted to appear to you.'—'Ah, 'that is all that I desire!'—'But what 'I foresaw is come to pass. The king 'of the air, who reads our thoughts, 'has prescribed to me the form which 'I am to take, and that form is—— 'gues's.'—'I cannot tell, put me quick-'ly out of my pain.'—'Your hus-'band's.'—'My husband's!'—'I have 'done every thing in the world to ob-'tain a form which should please you 'more; but it was impossible. He 'threatened to withdraw his boon from 'me, if I was not content; and, reduc-'ed to this alternative, I liked that 'better than nothing.'—'Very well; 'and when shall I see you?'—'To-'morrow in your little wilderness, at 'sun-set.'—'I shall be there, for I de-'pend on you.'—'You may, without 'doubt.'—'And yet you promised to 'come to see me this morning. I re-'ceived the most gallant homage from 'you. But it was you that I expected.' —'I was not far off; but intimidated 'by the presence of Justina—' 'Ah! 'I was wrong, I ought to have sent 'her away. But you shall have no 'more reason to blame me on that ac-'count; and I shall be alone in the ar-'bour.'

This assignation did not fail to give Volange some little uneasiness. 'She 'delivers herself up to me,' said he. 'Shall I avail myself, to try her, of the 'illusion into which I have thrown her? 'It would be very pleasing to me to 'attempt her, if I was sure that she 'would resist! But if I were so sure of 'that, I should have no need of trial. 'Fatal curiosity! Let me consider: 'let me see which is the less dangerous 'way. Ought I to clear it up to my-'self, or remain in doubt? In the first 'case, doubt leaves me in a cloud; and 'can I answer for my thoughts? Per-'haps, when it shall be too late to jus-'tify her, I shall do her the injury to 'believe, that her imagination being se-'duced, would have triumphed over her 'virtue. I shall then reproach myself 'in vain; and the evil will be without 'remedy. If on, the contrary, I try 'her, and she resist, I am too happy. 'But if she yield— Well, if she yield! 'I shall think that the virtue of women 'is not able to hold out against spirits. 'Yes, but that spirit is cloathed with a 'body; and though that body be mine, 'no thanks to Elisa. What a laby-'rinth! On entering into it, I foresaw 'every thing, except the means of get-'ting out. Let me deliberate no long-'er; let me repair to the arbour, and 'the occasion shall determine me.'

Volange, without pretending to observe Elisa, did not suffer one of her movements to escape him. He saw her dress herself with a modesty full of grace, and the decency she mingled in her attire re-encouraged him a little. He remarked also, that she wore all the day an air of sweetness, and a serenity which announced an innocent joy.

However, the impatient eyes of Elisa measured the course of the sun. At last the happy moment approaches; and Volange, whom she had seen set out in a hunting-dress, repairs first to the arbour in the most elegant habit.

Elisa arrives, perceives him at a distance; and the emotion it excited in her almost makes her faint away. He flies to her, reaches out his hand to her; and seeing her trembling, seats her on her little throne of turf.

Elisa, recovering her spirits, finds her sylph at her knees. 'What!' said he to her, 'was it fear that the sight of me 'was to inspire into you? Did I not 'spare you the surprize of it? Did not 'you desire to see me? Are you sorry 'for it, and would you have me disap-'pear?'—'Alas! no; punish not me 'for an involuntary weakness. Joy 'and tenderness have a greater share 'than terror in the disorder you now 'occasion.'—'I tremble,' said Volange to himself: 'she is softened; a bad be-'ginning!—Ah, my dear Elisa! why 'was I not free to chuse among mor-'tals him whose figure might have 'pleased you most; and how ill at ease 'is a lover under the form of a hus-'band!'—'That is the same thing,' said she smiling. 'It would have been 'more agreeable to me, I confess, to 'have seen you under the image of one 'of these flowers which I love, or of 'one of those birds which, like you, 'are inhabitants of the air; but as a 'man, I had as lief see you under the 'features of my husband, as those of 'any other person. You seem to me 'even to set it off. It is, indeed, Vo-'lange that I see in you; but your 'soul gives to his eyes something, I 'know not what, that is celestial. Your 'voice, in passing through his mouth,

'communicates to it a charm perfectly 'divine; and in his action I perceive 'graces which never body animated by 'a mere mortal poſſeſſed.'—'Well, 'then, if you love me ſuch as you now 'ſee me, I can always be the ſame.'—'You enchant me!'—'Shall you be 'happy, then?' added he, kiſſing her hand. Eliſa bluſhed, and withdrew the hand which he had ſeized. 'You 'forget,' ſaid ſhe, 'that it is a ſylph, 'and not a man that I love in you. 'Valoë is to me only a ſpirit, as Eliſa 'is to you only a ſoul; and if you 'have not been able to take the figure 'of a mortal without changing the purity of your eſſence and of your love, 'quit that degrading form, and make 'me not bluſh any longer at the imprudence of my wiſhes.'—'Very well!' ſaid Volange, in a low voice: 'but I 'now touch on the critical moment.

'Eliſa, it is no longer time to feign. 'I have done what you deſired; but 'learn what it coſts me. "I conſent "to it," ſaid the king of the genii to 'me; "obey the laws of a woman, "become man; but flatter not thyſelf "with having his ſenſations only in "appearance. Thou art now going to "love like other mortals, and to feel "the pleaſures and pains of it. If thou "art unhappy, come not groaning and "troubling the air with thy complaints. "I baniſh thee from the heavens till the "moment wherein Eliſa ſhall have "crowned thy wiſhes." I hoped to 'prevail on you,' added the ſylph, 'or 'rather I meant to comply with you; 'I ſubmitted to that ſevere decree. 'Judge, then, whether I love you, and 'whether you ought to puniſh me for 'it.'

This diſcourſe drove Eliſa to deſpair. 'O thou moſt imprudent, and moſt 'cruel of aërial ſpirits!' cried ſhe. 'What have you done? And to what 'extremity do you reduce me?' Volange quaked at ſeeing his wife's eyes filled with tears. 'Why did you not 'conſult me?' added ſhe. 'Was it for 'my ſhame, or for your puniſhment, 'that I deſired to ſee you? And whatever that deſire was, could you think 'that it could overcome what I owe to 'you, and what I owe to myſelf? I love 'you, Valoë, I repeat it to you; and if 'there needed nothing but my life to 'repair the evils which I do you, you 'ſhould no longer have cauſe to complain. But my virtue is dearer to me 'than my life and my love.' Volange leaped with joy. 'I cannot blame you,' ſaid he, 'for an exceſs of delicacy; but 'ſee how much I reſemble Volange: it 'is almoſt he, or rather he himſelf, who 'falls at your feet, who adores you, and 'demands of you the reward of the moſt 'faithful and tendereſt paſſion.'—'No, 'it is in vain that you reſemble him: 'you are not he; and it is to him alone 'that the reward which you demand is 'due. Ariſe; depart from me; and 'ſee me not again all your life! Leave 'me, I ſay; are you mad? What is 'that inſulting joy which I ſee ſparkling in your eyes? Would you have 'the audacioufneſs to hope yet?'—'Yes, I hope, my dear Eliſa, that thou 'wilt live only for me.'—'Ah, this is 'the height of outrage!'—'Hear me.'—'No, I will hear nothing!'—'A ſingle 'word will diſarm thee.'—'That word, 'then, muſt be an eternal farewel.'—'No, death only ſhall ſeparate us; be'hold thy huſband in thy ſylph. Yes, 'it is Volange whom you hated, that 'is this Valoë whom you love.'—'O 'Heaven—— But no, you impoſe upon me by the reſemblance.'—'No, I 'tell thee, and Juſtina is witneſs, that 'the whole affair is but a jeſt.'—'Juſtina! ſhe is my confidante.'—'She 'has helped me to miſlead you; ſhe 'ſhall aſſiſt me to undeceive you.'—'You, my huſband! can it be poſſible? 'I tremble yet; finiſh, tell me how theſe 'prodigies were performed?'—'It is 'Love has wrought them all; and you 'ſhall know by what means.'—'Ah! 'if it be true——' 'If it be true, my 'Eliſa! can you believe that there is in 'the world a man worthy to be loved?' —'Yes, I will believe that there is one, 'and that it is I who poſſeſs him.'

Juſtina being interrogated, confeſſed all, and was obliged to take her oath that Valoë was none other than Volange. 'It is now,' ſaid Eliſa, throwing herſelf into the arms of her huſband; 'it is 'now that I am enchanted; and I hope 'that nothing but death alone will break 'the charm.'

LAURETTA.

IT was the festival of the village of Coulange. The Marquis of Clancé, whose seat was at no great distance, was come with his company to see this rural spectacle, and to mingle in the dances of the villagers, as it happens pretty often to those whom disgust chaces from the lap of Luxury, and who are carried, in despite of themselves, towards pleasures that are pure and simple.

Among the young country girls who gave new life to the joy that reigned there, and who were dancing under the elm, who would not have distinguished Lauretta, by the elegance of her figure, the regularity of her features, and that natural grace which is more touching than beauty? She eclipsed all others who assisted at the festival. Ladies of quality, who piqued themselves on being handsome, could not help owning that they had never seen any thing so ravishing. They called her up to them, and examined her, as a painter does a model. 'Lift up your eyes, child,' said the ladies. 'What vivacity, what sweetness, what voluptuousness in her looks! 'If she did but know what they ex'press! What havock a skilful co'quette would make with those eyes! 'And that mouth! Can any thing be 'more fresh? What a vermilion on 'her lips! How pure an enamel on her 'teeth! Her face is a little brown, and 'sun-burnt; but it is the complexion 'of health. See how that ivory neck 'is rounded on those fine shoulders! 'How well she would look in a genteel 'dress! And those little budding charms 'which Love himself seems to have 'planted! Well, that is extremely 'pleasant! On whom is Nature going 'to lavish her gifts! Where is Beauty 'going to hide herself?—Lauretta, how 'old are you?'—'I was fifteen last 'month.'—'You are to be married 'soon, without doubt?'—'My father 'says that there is no hurry.'—'And 'you, Lauretta, have you no sweetheart 'lurking in your heart?'—'I do not 'know what a sweetheart is.'—'What, 'is there no young man that you wish 'to have for a husband?'—'I never 'trouble my head about that: it is my 'father's business.'—'What does your 'father do?'—'He cultivates his farm.' —'Is he rich?'—'No; but he says he 'is happy if I am discreet.'—'And how 'do you employ yourself?'—'I help 'my father; I work with him.'—'With him! What, do you cultivate 'the ground?'—'Yes, but the toils of 'the vineyard are only an amusement to 'me. To weed, plant vine-props, bind 'the vine-branch to them, to thin the 'leaves that the grapes may ripen, and 'to gather them when they are ripe, all 'that is not very laborious.'—'Poor 'child! I am not surprized that those 'fine hands are tanned! What pity that 'she should be born in a low and ob'scure state!'

Lauretta, who in her village had never excited any thing but envy, was a little surprized at her inspiring pity. As her father had carefully concealed from her whatever might have given her uneasiness, it had never come into her head that she was an object of pity. But in casting her eyes on the dress of those ladies, she saw very well that they were in the right. What difference between their cloaths and her's! What freshness and what beauty in the light silken stuff which flowed in long folds about them! What delicate shoes! With what grace and elegance their hair was dressed! What new lustre that fine linen, and those ribbands, those laces, gave to their half-veiled charms! Indeed, those ladies had not the lively air of high health; but could Lauretta imagine that the luxury which dazzled her was the cause of that langour, which rouge itself was not able to disguise? While she was ruminating on all this, the Count de Luzy approaches her, and invites her to dance with him. He was young, well dressed, well made, and too seducing for Lauretta.

Though she had not the most delicate taste in dancing, she could not but remark in the nobleness, the justness, and the lightness of the count's movements, a grace which was not to be found in the caperings of the young villagers. She had sometimes felt her hand pressed, but never by a hand so soft. The count in dancing followed her with his eyes. Lauretta found that his looks

gave

gave life and ſoul to the dance; and whether it was that ſhe tried from emulation to give the ſame grace to her's, or whether the firſt ſpark of love communicated itſelf from her heart to her eyes, they replied to thoſe of the count by the moſt natural expreſſion of joy and ſentiment.

The dance ended, Lauretta went and ſeated herſelf at the foot of the elm, and the count at her knees. 'Let us not 'part any more,' ſaid he to her, 'my 'pretty dear: I will dance with no-'body but you.'—'That is doing me 'a great deal of honour,' ſaid ſhe; 'but 'it would make my companions un-'eaſy; and in this village they are 'apt to be jealous.'—'And well they 'may, to ſee you ſo handſome; and in 'town they would be the ſame: it is a 'misfortune which will follow you eve-'ry where. Ah, Lauretta! if in Pa-'ris, in the midſt of thoſe women ſo 'vain of beauty which is only artificial, 'they were to ſee you appear, all at 'once, with thoſe natural charms of 'which you are ſo unconſcious—' 'I, 'Sir, at Paris! alas, what ſhould I do 'there?'—'Be the delight of all eyes, 'and make the conqueſt of all hearts. 'Hark'e, Lauretta, we have not op-'portunity to talk together here. But, 'in two words; it depends only on 'yourſelf to have, inſtead of an obſcure 'cottage, and a vineyard to cultivate; 'it depends only on yourſelf to have, 'at Paris, a little palace ſhining with 'gold and ſilk, a table according to 'your wiſh, the gayeſt furniture, the 'moſt elegant equipage, gowns for all 'ſeaſons, and of all colours; in ſhort, 'every thing which forms the agree-'ableneſs of an eaſy, quiet, and deli-'cious life; without any other care than 'that of enjoying them, and of loving 'me as I do you. Think of it at your 'leiſure. To-morrow there is to be a 'ball at the caſtle; all the youth of the 'village are invited. You will be there, 'my ſweet Lauretta, and tell me if my 'paſſion touches you, and whether you 'accept my offers. To-day I aſk no-'thing but ſecreſy; ſecreſy the moſt in-'violable. Obſerve it well: if it eſcape 'you, all the happineſs which now a-'waits you will vaniſh like a dream.'

Lauretta thought ſhe had been in a dream. The brilliant lot that had been painted to her was ſo far from the humble ſtate to which ſhe was reduced, that a paſſage ſo eaſy; and ſo rapid, from one to the other, was inconceivable. The handſome young man who had made her thoſe offers, had not, however, the air of a deceiver. He had talked to her ſo ſeriouſly! ſhe had ſeen ſo much ſincerity in his eyes, and in his language!

'I ſhould eaſily have perceived it,' ſaid ſhe, 'if he had wanted to make a 'fool of me. And yet, why all this 'myſtery which he has ſo ſtrongly en-'joined me? For making me happy, 'he requires me to love him: nothing 'more juſt; but ſure he will conſent 'that my father ſhall partake of his 'benefits; why then conceal our pro-'ceedings from my father?' If Lauretta had had the idea of ſeduction and vice, ſhe would eaſily have comprehended wherefore Luzy demanded ſecreſy; but the diſcretion they had infuſed into her, went no farther than to teach her to decline the rough liberties of the village youths; and in the honeſt and reſpectful air of the count, ſhe ſaw nothing againſt which ſhe was to be upon her guard.

Wholly taken up with theſe reflections, her head filled with the image of luxury and abundance, ſhe returns to her humble habitation; every thing there ſeemed changed. Lauretta, for the firſt time, was mortified at living under thatch. The plain moveables, which uſe had before made precious to her, were debaſed in her eyes; the domeſtick cares which ſhe had charged herſelf with, began to be diſagreeable: ſhe found no longer the ſame taſte in that bread to which labour gives a reliſh; and on that freſh ſtraw where ſhe ſlept ſo well, ſhe ſighed for gilded roofs and a rich down bed.

It was much worſe the next day, when ſhe was obliged to return to labour, and to go on a burning hill, to ſupport the heat of the day. 'At Pa-'ris,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhould wake only to 'enjoy myſelf at my eaſe, without any 'other care than that of loving, and of 'pleaſing: his honour the count, aſ-'ſured me of it. How amiable the 'count is! Of all the girls in the 'village he regarded only me; he even 'quitted the ladies of the caſtle for a 'poor country girl. He is not proud, 'ſweet gentleman! And yet he might 'very well be ſo! One would have 'thought that I did him a favour in

'preferring

'preferring him to the young fellows 'of the village: he thanked me for it 'with looks ſo tender; an air ſo humble and touching! and language, what 'an amiable ſweetneſs in his language! 'Though he had talked to the lady of 'the place, he could not have ſpoken 'more genteelly. By good luck I was 'pretty well dreſſed; but if he were to 'ſee me to-day! What cloaths! what 'a condition am I in!'

The diſguſt at her ſituation only redoubled, during three days of fatigue and heavineſs, which ſhe had ſtill to ſuſtain before ſhe ſhould again ſee the count.

The moment, which they both expected with impatience, arrives. All the youth of the village are aſſembled at the neighbouring caſtle; and in a bower of linden trees, the ſound of inſtruments ſoon gives the ſignal for the dance. Lauretta advances with her companions, no longer with that deliberate air which ſhe had at the village-feaſt, but with an air modeſt and timorous. This was to Luzy a new beauty, and ſhe appeared as one of the Graces, timid and decent, inſtead of a lively and wanton nymph. He diſtinguiſhed her from the reſt in his ſalute, but without any ſymptom of correſpondence between them. He abſtained even from approaching her, and delayed dancing with her till another had ſet him the example. This other was the Chevalier De Soligny; who, ever ſince the village-feaſt, had never ceaſed talking of Lauretta in a ſtrain of rapture. Luzy imagined him a rival, and anxiouſly followed him with his eyes; but it was needleſs for Lauretta to perceive his jealouſy, in order to remove it. In dancing with Soligny, her look was vague, her air indifferent, her behaviour cold and negligent. It came to Luzy's turn to dance with her, and he thought he ſaw, as he ſaluted her, all her graces animate themſelves, all her charms ſpring up in her countenance. The precious colouring of modeſty diffuſed itſelf there; a furtive, and almoſt imperceptible ſmile, moved her roſy lips; and the favour of a touching look tranſported him with joy and love. His firſt emotion, had they been alone, would have been to fall at Lauretta's feet, to thank her, and to adore her; but he commands his very eyes to reſtrain the fire of their looks; his hand alone, in preſſing that of her whom his heart calls his love, expreſſes to her by tremblings his tranſports.

'Beautiful Lauretta,' ſaid he to her, after the dance, 'remove a little from 'your companions. I am impatient to 'know what you have reſolved.'—'Not 'to take one ſtep without the conſent 'of my father, and to follow his advice in every thing. If you mean me 'good, I would have him partake of 'it; if I follow you, I would have him 'conſent to it.'—'Ah! beware of conſulting him! it is he whom, above all, 'I ought to fear. There are formalities among you, previous to love and 'union, with which my title, my condition, forbid me to comply. Your 'father would ſubject me to them; he 'would require impoſſibilities of me; 'and on my refuſal, he would accuſe 'me of having wanted to deceive you. 'He knows not how much I love you; 'but you, Lauretta, can you think me 'capable of doing you an injury?'—'Alas! no; I believe you to be goodneſs itſelf. You would be a great hypocrite if you were bad!'—'Dare then 'to truſt to me.'—'It is not that I 'diſtruſt you; but I cannot deal myſteriouſly with my father: I belong 'to him; I depend on him. If what 'you propoſe is proper, he will conſent 'to it.'—'He will never conſent to it. 'You will deſtroy me; you will repent 'it when too late; and you will be all 'your life condemned to thoſe vile labours, which to be ſure you love, 'ſince you dare not abandon them. Ah, 'Lauretta! are theſe delicate hands 'made to cultivate the ground? Muſt 'the ſun deſtroy the colours of that 'beautiful complexion? You, the charm 'of Nature, of all the Graces, all the 'Loves! you, Lauretta, will you wear 'yourſelf out in an obſcure and toilſome 'life! to be cloſed in becoming the wife 'of ſome rude villager! to grow old, 'perhaps, in indigence, without having taſted any of thoſe pleaſures which 'ought to follow you perpetually? This 'is what you prefer to the delights of 'eaſe and affluence which I promiſe you. 'And on what do you found your reſolution? On the fear of giving ſome 'moments of uneaſineſs to your father? 'Yes, your flight will afflict him; but 'afterwards, what will be his joy at 'ſeeing you rich by my favours, with 'which he alſo ſhall be loaded? What

'a pleaſing

'a pleasing violence will you not do 'him, in obliging him to quit his cot-'tage, and give himself repose? For, 'from that time, I shall no longer have 'his denials to fear: my happiness, 'yours, and his, will be assured for 'ever.'

Lauretta had a good deal of difficulty to withstand the temptation, but she did withstand it; and but for the fatal accident which at last threw her again into the snare, the mere instinct of innocence would have sufficed to preserve her from it.

In a storm which fell on the village of Coulange, the hail destroyed all the promised vintages and harvests. The desolation was general. During the storm, a thousand mournful cries mingled with the roaring of the winds and claps of thunder; but when the ravage was accomplished, and a light, more dreadful than the darkness which had preceded it, let them see the vine-branches stripped and broken, the ears of corn hanging on their shattered stalks, the fruits of the trees beaten down or blasted, nothing prevailed throughout the desolated country but one vast and doleful silence; the roads were covered with a crowd of unfortunate people, pale, struck with consternation, and immoveable; who, with a melancholy eye contemplating their ruin, bewailed the loss of the year, and saw nothing to come but despair, misery, and death. On the thresholds of the cottages, the disconsolate mothers pressed against their bosoms their tender nurslings, exclaiming, with tears in their eyes, 'Who will 'give suck to you if we want bread?'

At the sight of this calamity, the first thought which occurred to Luzy, was the distress of Lauretta and her father. Impatient to fly to their relief, he veiled the tender interest he took in their fortunes, under a pretext of common pity to this multitude of wretches. 'Let 'us go to the village,' said he to his company; let us carry consolation thi-'ther. It will be but little expence to 'each of us, to save twenty families 'from the despair into which this dis-'aster has plunged them. We have 'partaken their joy, let us go and par-'take of their grief.'

These words made an impression on their hearts, already moved by pity. The Marquis De Clancé set the example. He presented himself to the peasants, offered them assistance, promised them relief, and restored them to hope and courage. While tears of gratitude flowed around him, his company, of both sexes, dispersed themselves through the village, entered the straw-huts, distributed their gifts, and tasted the rare and sensible delight of seeing themselves adored by a grateful people. In the mean time, Luzy ran like a madman, seeking the abode of Lauretta. It was shewn him; he flies thither, and sees a countryman sitting at the door, his head inclined on his knees, and covering his face with both his hands, as if he feared to see the light again. This was Lauretta's father. 'My friend,' said the count to him, 'I see you are in 'consternation; but do not despair: 'Heaven is just, and there are compas-'sionate hearts among mankind.'—'Ah, 'Sir,' replied the villager, lifting up his head, 'is it for a man who, after having 'served his county twenty years, re-'tired covered with wounds, and who 'has never since ceased to labour with-'out relaxation; is it for him to stretch 'out his hand for charity? Ought not 'the earth, which is bedewed with 'my sweat, to give me subsistence? 'Shall I end my life by begging my 'bread?' A soul so lofty, and so noble, in an obscure person, astonished the count. 'You have served, then?' said he. 'Yes, Sir, I took up arms under 'Berwick; I made the campaigns of 'Maurice. My father, before an un-'fortunate law-suit had stripped him of 'his estate, had sufficient to support me 'in the rank to which I was arrived. 'But at the same time that I was re-'duced, he was undone. We came 'here to conceal ourselves; and out of 'the wreck of our fortune we purchased 'a little farm, which I cultivated with 'my own hands. Our former condi-'tion was unknown; and this latter, to 'which I seemed born, gave me no 'shame. I maintained, and consoled, 'my father. I married; there was my 'misfortune; and it is now that I feel 'it.'—'Your father is dead?'—'Alas! 'yes.'—'Your wife?'—'She is happy 'in not having seen this dismal day.'—'Have you a family?'—'I have but 'one daughter, and the poor girl—— 'Do you not hear her sighs? She hides 'herself, and keeps at a distance from 'me, that she may not distract my soul.' Luzy would fain have rushed into the cottage

cottage where Lauretta was mourning; but he reſtrained himſelf, for fear of a diſcovery.

'Here,' ſaid he to the father, giving him his purſe; 'this aſſiſtance is very 'ſmall; but when you want, remember 'the Count De Luzy. I live at Paris.' On ſaying theſe words he went away, without giving Lauretta's father time to return him thanks.

What was the aſtoniſhment of the good old Bazil, on finding a conſiderable ſum in the purſe! Fifty Louis, more than triple the revenue of his little vineyard! 'Come hither, my child,' cried he, 'look at him who goes yonder; it 'is not a man, it is an angel from 'Heaven. But I am deceived. It is 'not poſſible that he ſhould intend to 'give me ſo much. Go, Lauretta, 'run after him, and let him ſee that he 'has committed a miſtake.' Lauretta flies after Luzy, and having overtaken him, 'My father,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'cannot believe that you intended to 'make us ſo great a preſent. He ſends me 'to return it to you.'—'Ah, Lauretta! 'is not all that I have at your and your 'father's diſpoſal? Can I pay him too 'richly for having given birth to you? 'Carry back this poor gift; it is only 'an earneſt of my good-will; but care-'fully conceal from him the motive: 'tell him only that I am too happy in 'obliging a man of worth.' Lauretta was about to return him thanks. 'To-'morrow,' ſaid he to her, 'at break of 'day, as I paſs the end of the village, I 'will receive, if you pleaſe, your thanks 'with your adieus.'—'What! do you 'go away to-morrow!'—'Yes, I go 'away the moſt paſſionate lover, and 'moſt unhappy of men.'—'At break 'of day?—that is about the hour when 'my father and I go out to work.'—'Together?'—'No; he goes firſt: I 'have the care of the houſe upon me, 'and that delays me a little.'—'And 'do you paſs my road?'—'I croſs it 'above the village; but were it neceſ-'ſary to go out of my way, it is cer-'tainly the leaſt that I owe you for ſo 'many marks of friendſhip.'—'Adieu, 'then, Lauretta, till to-morrow. Let 'me ſee you, though but for a moment: 'that pleaſure will be the laſt of my 'life.'

Bazil, at Lauretta's return, had no more doubt of Luzy's benefactions. 'Ah, the good young man! Ah, ex-'cellent heart!' cried he every inſtant. 'However, daughter, let us not neglect 'what the hail has left us. The leſs 'there is of it, the more care we muſt 'take of what is left.'

Lauretta was ſo touched with the count's goodneſs, ſo afflicted at being the cauſe of his unhappineſs, that ſhe wept all the night. 'Ah, if it were 'not for my father,' ſaid ſhe, 'what 'pleaſure ſhould I have had in follow-'ing him!' The next day ſhe did not put on her holiday-cloaths; but notwithſtanding the extreme ſimplicity of her dreſs, ſhe forgot not to mingle in it a little coquetry natural to her age. 'I 'ſhall ſee him no more: what does it 'ſignify whether I am more or leſs 'handſome in his eyes? For one mo-'ment is not worth the trouble.' On ſaying theſe words, ſhe adjuſted her cap and her tucker. She bethought her of carrying him ſome fruit in her breakfaſt-baſket. 'He will not deſpiſe them,' ſaid ſhe: 'I will tell him that I have 'gathered them.' And while ſhe ranged the fruit on a bed of vine-leaves, ſhe bedewed them with her tears. Her father was already ſet out; and with the grey light of the dawn was already mingled that gentle tint of gold and purple diffuſed by Aurora, when the poor girl, with a diſtracted heart, arrived alone at the end of the village. The inſtant after, ſhe ſaw the count's poſt-coach appear, and at that ſight ſhe was troubled. The moment that he ſaw her, Luzy leaped out of his carriage; and coming towards her with an air of ſorrow, 'I am penetrated, beautiful 'Lauretta,' ſaid he to her, 'with the 'favour which you do me. I have, at 'leaſt, the conſolation to ſee you ſenſible 'of my pain, and I can believe that you 'are ſorry at having made me unhappy.' —'I am diſtreſſed at it,' replied Lauretta, 'and would give all the wealth 'you have beſtowed on us, never to 'have ſeen you.'—'And I, Lauretta, 'I would give all I have never to quit 'you as long as I live.'—'Alas! I 'ſhould think it depended only on your-'ſelf: my father could refuſe you no-'thing; he loves you, he reveres you.' —'Fathers are cruel; they would have 'us marry; and I cannot marry you: 'let us think no more of it; we are go-'ing to leave each other, to bid an eter-'nal adieu; we who never, if you had 'been inclined to it, would have ceaſed

'to live for one another, to love each 'other, to enjoy together all the gifts 'which Fortune has beſtowed on me, 'and all thoſe which Love has conferred 'on you. Ah! you have no conception 'of the pleaſures which awaited us. 'If you had any idea of them! If you 'knew what you renounce!'—'Why, 'without knowing them, I feel them. 'Be aſſured, that ever ſince I have ſeen 'you, every thing that is not you, is 'nothing to me. At firſt my mind 'was dazzled with the fine things which 'you had promiſed me; but ſince, all 'that is vaniſhed: I have thought of it 'no longer, I have thought only of 'you. Ah! if my father would agree 'to it!'—'What occaſion for his agree-'ing to it! Do you wait for his conſent 'to love me! Does not our happineſs 'depend on ourſelves? Love, fidelity, 'Lauretta; theſe are your titles, and my 'ſecurities. Are there any more ſacred, 'more inviolable? Ah! believe me, 'when the heart is beſtowed, every thing 'is over, and the hand has only to fol-'low it. Give me, then, that hand, 'that I may kiſs it a thouſand times, 'that I may bedew it with my tears.' —'There it is,' ſaid ſhe weeping. 'It 'is mine,' cried he, 'this dear hand is 'mine, I hold it of Love: to take it 'from me, they muſt take my life. 'Yes, Lauretta, I ſhall die at your feet, 'if we muſt part.' Lauretta really believed that he would literally die on loſing her. 'Alas!' ſaid ſhe; 'and 'ſhall I be the cauſe?'—'Yes, cruel 'girl! you will be the cauſe. You de-'ſire my death, you do'—'Oh, Hea-'ven! no: I would lay down my life 'for you.'—'Prove it then,' ſaid he, doing her at the ſame time a kind of violence, 'and follow me if you love 'me.'—'No,' ſaid ſhe, 'I cannot; I 'cannot without the conſent of my fa-'ther.'—'Very well; leave, leave me, 'then, to my deſpair.' At theſe words, Lauretta, pale and trembling, her heart pierced with ſorrow and fear, dared neither to hold Luzy's hand nor let it go. Her eyes, full of tears, followed with terror the diſtracted looks of the count. 'Deign,' ſaid ſhe to him, in order to appeaſe him, 'deign to pity 'me, and to ſee me without anger. I 'hoped this teſtimony of my gratitude 'would have been agreeable to you; 'but I dare no longer offer it to you.' —'What is it?' ſaid he; 'fruit, and 'for me! Ah, you little tyrant, you 'inſult me! Give me poiſon!' And throwing down the baſket, he retired in a rage.

Lauretta took that emotion for hatred, and her heart, already too much ſoften-ed, could not ſupport this laſt attack. Scarce had ſhe ſtrength to get away a few paces, and faint at the foot of a tree. Luzy, who followed her with his eyes, runs up and finds her bathed with tears, her boſom choaked with ſobs, pale, and almoſt lifeleſs. He is diſtreſſed; he thinks at firſt only of recalling her to life; but ſoon as he ſees her ſpirits re-turn, he avails himſelf of her weakneſs, and before ſhe is well recovered of her ſwooning, ſhe is already at a great diſ-tance from the village, in the count's coach, and in the arms of her raviſher. 'Where am I?' ſaid ſhe on opening her eyes, 'Ah, my lord count, is it 'you! Are you carrying me back to 'the village?'—'Deareſt half of my 'ſoul,' ſaid he to her, preſſing her a-gainſt his boſom, 'I have lived to ſee 'the moment when our adieus almoſt 'coſt us both our lives. Let us put 'no more to that trial two hearts too 'weak to ſuſtain it.

'I reſign myſelf to thee, my dear 'Lauretta; on thy lips I ſwear to live 'for thee alone.'—'I aſk no better lot,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'than to live alſo for 'you alone. But my father! Shall I 'leave my father? Has not he a right 'to diſpoſe of me?'—'Thy father, my 'Lauretta, ſhall be loaded with riches; 'he ſhall partake the happineſs of his 'daughter: we will be both his chil-'dren. Depend on my tenderneſs to 'eaſe and conſole him. Come, let me 'catch thoſe tears, let me drop my own 'into thy boſom: they are the tears of 'joy, the tears of pleaſure.' The dan-gerous Luzy mingled with his language all the charms of ſeduction, and Lau-retta was not inſenſible: while her fa-ther, uneaſy, afflicted, ſeeking his daugh-ter, calling on her with loud cries, aſked after her through the whole village; and not ſeeing her again in the evening, and retiring diſtreſſed, in deſpair at having loſt her, that image preſents itſelf to his mind, wholly occupies it, and troubles it without ceaſing. It was neceſſary to beguile his grief.

Luzy ran with his horſes; the blinds of his carriage were let down; his people were ſure and faithful; and Lauretta left

left behind her no trace of her flight. It was even essential to Luzy to conceal his having carried her off. He detached one of his domesticks, who, from a village quite out of the road, contrived to transmit to the Minister of Coulange this billet, in which Luzy had disguised his hand-writing.

'TELL Lauretta's father to be easy; 'that she is well; and that the 'lady, who has taken her with her, will 'have the same care of her as of her 'own child. In a short time he shall 'know what is become of her.'

This note, which was far from affording consolation to the father, sufficed to palliate the crime of elopement to the daughter. Love had penetrated into her soul; he laid open the avenues of it to pleasure; and from that time the clouds of grief dispersed, the tears dried up, sorrow was appeased, and a transient, but profound oblivion of every thing but her lover, suffered her to taste, without remorse, the criminal happiness of being his.

The kind of delirium into which she fell on arriving at Paris, compleated the dissipation of her soul. Her house was a fairy palace; every thing in it had the air of enchantment. The bath, the toilette, the supper, the delicious repose which love left her, were so many varied forms which voluptuousness assumed, to seduce her through the medium of her senses. When she waked, she thought herself still deceived by a dream. When she rose, she saw herself surrounded with women, attentive to serve her, and jealous of pleasing her. She, who had only studied to obey, had only to desire in order to be obeyed. 'You are queen 'here,' said her lover, 'and I am your 'principal slave.'

Imagine, if it is possible, the surprize and transport of a young and simple country-girl, at seeing her fine black hair, so negligently tied till that time, the wavy ringlets of which Nature alone had formed, now rounding into curls beneath the ply of art, and rising into a diadem, bespangled with flowers and diamonds; at seeing displayed to her eyes the most gallant ornaments, which seemed to solicit her choice; at seeing, I say, her beauty issue, radiant as from a cloud, and spring up again in the brilliant pannels which environed her, in order to multiply her charms. Nature had lavished on her all her graces; but some of those gifts had need of being cultivated, and the accomplishments came in a crowd to dispute with each other the care of instructing her, and the glory of embellishing her. Luzy possessed and adored his conquest, intoxicated with joy and love.

In the mean time, the good Bazil was the most unhappy of fathers. Brave, full of honour, and, above all, jealous of his daughter's reputation, he had sought her, expected her in vain, without publishing his uneasiness; and nobody in the village was made acquainted with his misfortune. The minister came to assure him of it himself, by communicating to him the note which he had received. Bazil gave no credit to this note, but, dissembling with the pastor, 'My daughter is discreet,' said he to him; 'but she is young, simple, 'and credulous. Some lady has had 'a mind to take her into her service, 'and has prevailed on her to prevent 'my denial. Let us, for fear of scan-'dal, hush up this little imprudence 'of youth, and leave the people to 'believe that my daughter quitted me 'with my own consent. The secret 'rests with you; spare the daughter 'and the father.' The minister, a prudent and worthy man, promised and kept silence. But Bazil, devoured by chagrin, passed the days and nights in tears. 'What is become of her?' said he. 'Is it a lady that she has follow-'ed? Is there any so mad as to rob a 'father of his daughter, and to under-'take to carry her off? No, no! it is 'some ravisher who has seduced and 'ruined her. Ah! if I can discover 'him, either his blood or mine shall 'wash out my injury.' He went himself to the village, whence they had brought the note. By the minister's informations he contrived to discover the person who had been charged with the message: he examined him; but his answers only confused him the more. The very situation of the place served only to mislead him. It was six leagues out of the road which Luzy had taken, and lay quite across the country. But had Bazil even combined the two circumstances of the departure of the count and his daughter's elopement, he would never have suspected so virtuous a young man. As he confided his grief to no-

body, nobody could give him any light. He groaned, therefore, within himself, in expectation of some casual gleam to clear up his suspicions. 'Oh, Heaven!' said he, 'it was in your wrath that you 'gave her to me! and I, mad as I was, 'congratulated myself on seeing her 'grow up and improve! What formed 'my pride, now constitutes my shame. 'Oh, that she had died as soon as she 'was born!'

Lauretta endeavoured to persuade herself that her father was easy; and the regret of having left him, touched her but faintly. Love, vanity, a taste for pleasures, a taste ever so lively in it's birth, the care of cultivating her talents; in short, a thousand amusements, continually varied, divided her life, and filled her soul. Luzy, who loved her to idolatry, and who feared lest he should lose her, exposed her as little as possible in publick; but he contrived her all the means which mystery has invented, of being invisible amidst the great world. This was enough for Lauretta: happy in pleasing him whom she loved, she felt not that restless desire, that want of being seen and admired, which alone brings out so many handsome women to our spectacles and gardens. Though Luzy, by the choice of a small circle of amiable men, rendered his suppers amusing, she was taken up at them only with him; and she was able to convince him of it without disobliging any body else. The art of reconciling partialities to good manners, is the secret of delicate souls: coquetry studies it; love knows it without having learned it.

Six months passed away in that union, that sweet intelligence of two hearts filled and ravished with each other, without weariness, without uneasiness, without any other jealousy than that which makes us fear that we do not please so much as we love, and which renders us desirous of combining every thing that can captivate a heart.

In this interval, Lauretta's father had twice received news of his daughter, with presents from the lady who had taken her into friendship. It was to the minister that Luzy directed. Remitted to the next post to the village by a faithful servant, the packets came to hand anonymous; Bazil could not tell to whom to send them back; and then his refusals would have created doubts of what he wished to be believed, and he trembled lest the curate should have the same suspicions with himself. 'Alas!' said the good father to himself, 'my 'daughter is, perhaps, yet virtuous. 'Appearances accuse her; but they are 'only appearances: and though my 'suspicions should be just, I must la- 'ment, but I ought not to dishonour 'my child.'

Heaven owed some consolation to the virtue of this worthy father; and it was Heaven, without doubt, which brought about the accident I am going to relate.

The little wine trade which Bazil carried on, obliged him to come to Paris. As he was traversing that immense city, he was stopped in the street by some carriages crossing each other. The voice of a lady in a fright engaged his attention. He sees—He dares not believe his eyes—Lauretta, his daughter, in a gilt-glass chariot, superbly dressed, and crowned with diamonds. Her father would not have known her, if, perceiving him herself, surprize and confusion had not made her shrink back and cover her face. At the movement which she made to hide herself, and still more at the cry which escaped her, he could not doubt but it was she. While the carriages, which were locked together, were disengaging, Bazil slips between the wall and his daughter's chariot, gets up to the step of the chariot-door, and, with a severe tone, says to Lauretta, 'Where do you live?' Lauretta, seized with fear and trembling, tells him her habitation. 'And what 'name do you go by?'—'Coulange,' replied she, looking down, 'from the 'place of my birth.'—'Of your birth! 'Ah, wretch!'—'This evening, at dusk, 'be at home, alone.' At these words he gets down, and pursues his way.

The shock which Lauretta had received was not yet overcome, when she found herself at home.

Luzy supped in the country. She was left to herself at the moment when she had most need of counsel and support. She was going to appear before her father, whom she had betrayed, forsaken, and overwhelmed with grief and shame: her crime then presented itself to her in the most odious form. She began to feel the vileness of her condition. The intoxication of love, the charms of pleasure, had banished the thought; but as soon as the veil was fallen off, she saw herself such as she was

Plate III.

Publishd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Nov.r 1.1781.

was in the eyes of the world, and in the eyes of her father. Terrified at the examination and sentence which she was about to undergo; 'Wretch!' cried she, melting into tears, 'where can I fly? 'where can I hide me? My father, 'honesty itself, again finds me, gone 'astray, abandoned to vice, with a man 'who is nothing to me! O my father! 'O terrible judge! how shall I appear 'before you?' It came more than once into her mind to avoid him, and disappear; but vice had not yet effaced from her soul the holy laws of Nature. 'I, 'to reduce him to despair,' said she, 'and after having merited his reproaches, to draw his curse upon me! No, 'though unworthy the name of his 'daughter, I revere that sacred name. 'Though he come to kill me with his 'own hand, I ought to wait it, and to 'fall at his feet. But, no; a father is 'always a father: mine will be touched with my tears. My age, my weakness, the count's love, his favours, 'all plead for me; and when Luzy 'shall speak, I shall no longer be so 'culpable.'

She would have been distressed if her people had been witnesses of the humiliating scene which was preparing. By good luck she had given out that she supped with a friend, and her women had made themselves a holiday that evening. It was easy to her to get rid of two footmen who attended her, and when her father arrived, she received him herself.

'Are you alone?'—'Yes, Sir.'—He enters with emotion, and after having looked her in the face, in a sorrowful and melancholy silence, 'What business have you here?' said he. Lauretta answered by throwing herself at his feet, and bathing them with her tears. 'I see,' said the father, casting his eyes around him, 'in this apartment where 'every thing bespeaks riches and luxury, I see that vice is at it's ease in this 'town. May I know who has taken 'care to enrich you in so short a time? 'and from whom came this furniture, 'these cloaths, that fine equipage in 'which I saw you?'—Lauretta still replied only by tears and sighs. 'Speak to 'me,' said he; 'you shall weep afterwards; you will have time enough.'

At the recital of her story, of which she disguised nothing, Bazil passed from astonishment to indignation. 'Luzy!' said he, 'that worthy man! These, 'then, are the virtues of the great! The 'base wretch, in giving me his gold, 'did he think he paid me for my daughter? These proud rich folks think, 'that the honour of the poor is a thing 'of no value, and that misery sets itself 'to sale. He flattered himself with 'consoling me! He promised you to 'do it! Unnatural man! how little 'does he know the soul of the father! 'No, ever since I lost thee, I have not 'had one moment without sorrow, not 'one quarter of an hour of peaceful 'sleep. By day, the ground which I 'cultivated was watered with my tears; 'in the night, while you forgot yourself, while you were losing yourself 'in guilty pleasures, your father, stretched on his straw, tore his hair, and called on you with loud cries. Ah, what! 'Have my groans never re-echoed to 'thy soul? Has the image of a father 'distressed never presented itself to your 'thought, never troubled your repose?'—'Oh! Heaven is my witness,' said she, 'that if ever I had thought I had 'occasioned you so much sorrow, I 'would have quitted every thing to fly 'to your arms. I revere you, I love 'you, I love you more than ever. Alas, 'what a father have I afflicted! At this 'very instant, when I expected to find 'in you an inexorable judge, I hear 'from your own mouth only reproaches 'full of gentleness. Ah, my father! 'when I fell at your feet, I felt only 'shame and fear; but now it is with 'affection that you see me penetrated, 'and to the tears of repentance are 'joined those of love!'—'Ah! I revive, I now find my daughter again,' cried Bazil, raising her up. 'Your 'daughter! Alas,' said Lauretta, 'she 'is no longer worthy of you!'—'No, 'do not discourage thyself. Honour, 'Lauretta, is, without doubt, a great 'happiness! innocence a greater still; 'and if I had the choice, I would rather have seen thee deprived of life. 'But when innocence and honour are 'lost, there still remains one inestimable 'good; virtue, which never perishes, 'which we never lose without return. 'We have only to wish for it, it springs 'up again in the soul; and when we 'think it extinguished, a single touch 'of remorse gives birth to it anew. 'This will console you, daughter, for 'the loss of your innocence; and if 'your

'your repentance be sincere, Heaven 'and your father are appeased. For 'the rest, nobody in the village knows 'your adventure; you may appear there 'again without shame.'—'Where, my 'father?'—'At Coulange, whither I 'am going to carry you.'—These words embarrassed Lauretta. 'Haste,' continued Bazil, 'to strip off those ornaments of vice. Plain linen, a simple 'boddice, a white petticoat, these are 'the raiments of thy condition. Leave 'his envenomed gifts to the wretch who 'has seduced you, and follow me without more delay.'

One must have been possessed at this moment of the timid and tender soul of Lauretta; must have loved, like her, a father and a lover; to conceive, to feel the combat which arose in her feeble heart, between love and nature. The trouble and agitation of her spirits kept her immoveable and mute. 'Let us go,' said the father; 'moments are precious.' —'Pardon me,' cried Lauretta, falling again on her knees before him, 'pardon 'me, my father; be not offended if I am 'slow to obey you. You have read the 'bottom of my soul. Luzy wants the 'name of husband; but all the rights 'which the tenderest love can give him, 'he has over me. I would fly him, 'detach myself from him, follow you, 'though to death. But to steal away 'in his absence, to leave him to believe 'that I have betrayed him!'—'How, 'wretch! and what signifies to you the 'opinion of a vile deceiver? and what 'are the rights of a passion which has 'ruined and dishonoured you? You 'love him! you love your shame then! 'You prefer his vile favours to the innocence which he has robbed you of! 'You prefer to your father the most 'cruel of your enemies! You dare not 'fly him in his absence, and quit him 'without his consent! Ah, when you 'were to quit your father, to overwhelm him, to drive him to destruction, you were not then so timorous! 'And what do you expect from your 'ravisher? That he should defend you? 'That he should withdraw you from 'paternal authority? Oh, let him come! 'let him dare to drive me hence; I am 'alone, unarmed, enfeebled by age; 'but they shall see me extended on the 'threshold of your door, calling for 'vengeance to God and man. Your 'lover himself, in order to get at thee, 'shall march over my body; and passers-by shall say with horror, "There "is the father whom she disavows, and "whom her lover tramples under his "feet!"

'Ah! my father,' said Lauretta, terrified at this image, 'how little do you 'know the man whom you rail against 'so cruelly! Nothing is gentler, nothing more sensible. You will be to 'him respectable and sacred.'—'Dare 'you talk to me of the respect of one 'who dishonours me? Dost thou hope 'that he may seduce me with his perfidious gentleness? I will not see him: 'if you can answer for him, I cannot 'answer for myself.'—'Well, do not 'see him, but permit me to see him, 'but for a moment.'—'What do you 'ask? me to leave you alone with him! 'Ah! though he should take away my 'life, I would not shew him that complaisance. While he was able to keep 'you from me, it was his crime, it 'was thine, I was not answerable for 'it. But Heaven now puts you again 'under my guard, and from this moment I answer to Heaven for thee. 'Let us go, daughter, it is already 'dark; this is the instant for us to depart! Resolve: renounce thy father, 'or obey.'—'You pierce my heart!' 'Obey, I tell thee, or dread my curse!' At these terrible words, the trembling Lauretta had no strength to reply. She undresses herself before her father's eyes, and puts on, not without a flood of tears, the plain dress which he had prescribed to her. 'My father,' said she to him at the moment she was preparing to follow him, 'dare I ask, as the price 'of my obedience, one single favour? 'You do not wish the death of him 'whom I sacrifice to you. Suffer me 'to write him two words, to inform 'him it is you that I obey, and that 'you oblige me to follow you.'—'What! that he may come to carry you 'off again, to steal you from me? No, 'I will leave no trace of you. Let him 'die of shame, he will do justice upon 'himself; but of love! never fear that; 'libertines never die of it.' Then, taking his daughter by the hand, he carried her out without noise; and the next morning, embarking on the Seine, they returned into their own country.

At midnight the count arrives at his house,

houſe, where he flatters himſelf Pleaſure awaits, and Love invites him, and finds all there in alarm and confuſion.

Lauretta's people tell him with fright that they do not know what is become of her; that they have ſought her in vain; that ſhe had taken care to ſend them out of the way, and had ſeized that moment to elude their vigilance; that ſhe did not ſup at her friend's; and that on going off ſhe had left every thing behind her, even to her diamonds, and to the gown ſhe had worn that day.

'We muſt wait for her,' ſaid Luzy, after a long ſilence. 'Do not go to 'bed; there is ſomething incomprehen-'ſible in this affair.'

Love, which ſeeks to flatter itſelf, began by conjectures to excuſe Lauretta; but finding them all deſtitute of probability, he delivered himſelf up to the moſt cruel ſuſpicions. 'An involuntary ac-'cident might have detained her; but 'in the abſence of her people to undreſs 'herſelf, to make her eſcape alone, at 'duſk; to leave her houſe in uneaſineſs! 'all this,' ſaid he, 'clearly ſhews a 'premeditated flight. Has Heaven 'touched her? Is it remorſe that has 'determined her to fly me? Ah, why 'can I not at leaſt believe it! but if ſhe 'had taken an honeſt part, ſhe would 'have had pity of me; ſhe would have 'written to me, though it were but two 'words, of conſolation and adieu. Her 'letter would not have betrayed her; 'and would have ſpared me ſuſpicions, 'grievous to me, and diſhonourable to 'her. Lauretta! O Heaven! candour 'itſelf, innocence, truth! Lauretta un-'faithful and perfidious! ſhe, who but 'this very morning—— No, no, it is 'incredible; and yet it is but too true.' Every moment, every reflection, ſeemed a new proof; but hope and confidence could not quit his heart. He ſtruggled againſt perſuaſion, as an expiring man againſt death. If ſhe were to return,' ſaid he; 'if ſhe were to return innocent 'and faithful! Ah, would my fortune, 'my life, all my love, be ſufficient to 'repair the injury I do her! What plea-'ſure ſhould I have in confeſſing myſelf 'in fault! With what tranſports, with 'what tears, would I efface the crime 'of having accuſed her! Alas, I dare 'not flatter myſelf with being unjuſt: 'I am not ſo happy!'

There is nobody who, in the uneaſineſs and ardour of expectation, has not ſometimes experienced at Paris the torment of liſtening to the noiſe of the coaches, each of which we take for that which we expect, and each of which by turns arrives, and carries away, as it paſſes, the hope which it has juſt excited. The unhappy Luzy was till three in the morning in this cruel perplexity. Every carriage which he heard was, perhaps, that which was bringing back Lauretta; at laſt hope, ſo often deceived, gave place to deſpair. 'I am betrayed,' ſaid he; 'I can no 'longer doubt it. It is a plot which 'has been concealed from me. The 'careſſes of the perfidious creature ſerv-'ed only the better to diſguiſe it. They 'have artfully choſen the day on which 'I was to ſup in the country. She has 'left every thing behind her, to let me 'underſtand that ſhe has no farther oc-'caſion for my preſents. Another, 'without doubt, overwhelms her with 'them. She would have been aſhamed 'to have had any thing of mine. The 'moſt feeble pledge of my love would 'have been a perpetual reproach of her 'treachery and ingratitude. She would 'forget me, in order to deliver herſelf 'up in peace to the man ſhe prefers. 'Ah, the perjured wretch! does ſhe 'hope to find any one who loves her 'like me? I loved her too well, I gave 'myſelf too much up to it. Her de-'ſires, by being perpetually prevented, 'became extinct. Theſe are the ways 'of women. They grow tired of every 'thing, even of being happy. Ah, canſt 'thou be ſo now, perfidious girl! Canſt 'thou be ſo, and think of me? Of me, 'do I ſay! What ſignify to her my 'love and grief? Ah, while I can ſcarce 'reſtrain my cries, while I bathe her bed 'with my tears, another, perhaps—— 'Horrible thought! I cannot ſupport 'it. I will know this rival, and if the 'fire which burns in my breaſt has not 'conſumed me before day, I will not 'die without vengeance. It is doubt-'leſs ſome one of thoſe falſe friends 'whom I have imprudently introduced 'to her. Soligny, perhaps. He was 'taken with her when we ſaw her in her 'own village. She was ſimple and 'ſincere then. How is ſhe changed! 'He wanted to ſee her again; and I, 'poor eaſy fool! thinking myſelf be-'loved, believing it impoſſible for Lau-'retta to be unfaithful, brought my 'rival to her. I may be deceived; but,

'in

'in short, it is he whom I suspect. I will 'be satisfied instantly.—Follow me,' said he to one of his domesticks; and it was scarce day-light, when, knocking at the chevalier's door, Luzy asked to see him. 'He is not at home, Sir,' said the Swiss. 'Not at home!'—'No, Sir, 'he is in the country.'—'How long 'since?'—'Since yesterday evening.'—'At what hour?'—'About dusk.'—'And what part of the country is he 'gone to?'—'We do not know: he 'has taken only his valet de chambre 'with him.'—'In what carriage?'—'In his vis-a-vis.'—'Is his absence to 'be long?'—'He will not be back this 'fortnight, and has ordered me to take 'care of his letters.'—'At his return 'tell him that I was here, and that I de-'sired to see him.

'At last,' said he, on going away, 'I am convinced. Every thing agrees. 'Nothing remains but to discover where 'they have concealed themselves. I will 'tear her from his arms, the perfidious 'wretch! and I will have the pleasure 'of washing away with his blood my 'injury and her treachery!'

His reseaches were ineffectual. The chevalier's journey was a mystery which he could not penetrate. Luzy was, therefore, fifteen days on the rack; and the full persuasion that Soligny was the ravisher, diverted him from every other idea,

In his impatience, he sent every morning to know if his rival was returned. At last he was told, that he was just arrived. He flies to him, enflamed with anger; and the favourable reception given him by the chevalier only irritated him more. 'My dear count,' said Soligny, 'you have been very earnest in 'your enquiries for me; how can I serve 'you?'—'In ridding me,' replied Luzy, at the same time turning pale, 'either of 'a life which I detest, or of a rival 'whom I hate. You have carried off my 'mistress; nothing remains but to pluck 'out my heart.'—'My friend,' said the chevalier to him, 'I have as great a de-'sire to have my throat cut as yourself, 'for I am quite mad with vexation; 'but I have no quarrel with you; if 'you please, let us understand each 'other. Lauretta has been carried off, 'you say; I am very sorry for it; she 'was a charming girl; but upon my 'honour it was not by me! Not that 'I pique myself on any delicacy in that 'point. In love I forgive my own 'friends, and allow myself these little 'petit-larcenies; and though I heartily 'love you, yet if Lauretta had thought 'proper to deceive you for me, rather 'than for another, I should not have 'been cruel. But as to carrying them 'off, I don't like that, that is too seri-'ous a business for me; and if you 'have no other reason for killing me, I 'advise you to let me live, and to break-'fast with me.' Though the chevalier's language had very much the air of frankness, Luzy still retained his suspicions. 'You disappeared,' said he, 'the same evening, at the same hour; 'you lay hid for a fortnight; I know 'besides that you loved her, and that 'you had an inclination for her at the 'very time that I took her.'

'You are in luck,' said Soligny, 'that 'in the humour I am now in, I love 'you enough to come to an explana-'tion. Lauretta went off the same even-'ing with me; I have nothing to say 'to that: it is one of those critical ren-'counters which form the intrigue of 'romances. I thought Lauretta beau-'tiful as an angel, and I had an incli-'nation for her, it is true; but if you 'will cut the throats of all who are 'guilty of the same crime, mercy upon 'one half of Paris! The important 'article, then, is the secret of my jour-'ney and absence? Very well, I will 'explain that matter.

'I was in love with Madam De 'Blanson; or rather, I was in love with 'her riches, her birth, her credit at 'court; for that woman has every thing 'in her favour, except herself. You 'know, that if she is neither young nor 'handsome, to make amends she has a 'deal of sensibility, and is easily set on 'fire. I had got into her good graces, 'and saw no impossibility to be, as it is 'called, happy, without proceeding to 'marriage. But marriage was my point; 'and under cover of that respectful ti-'midity, inseparable from a delicate 'love, I eluded all opportunities of 'making an ill use of her weakness. 'So much reserve disconcerted her. She 'never saw, she said, a man so timorous 'and so much of the novice. I was as 'bashful as a young girl: my modesty 'absolutely tantalized her. In short, 'not to trouble you with all the arts I 'employed for three months to sustain 'attacks without surrendering, never

'did

'did coquette ſtrive ſo much to kindle 'ineffectual deſires. My conduct was 'a maſter-piece of prudence and dex-'terity: but the widow was too hard 'for me I am her dupe: yes, my 'friend, ſhe has ſurprized my credulous 'innocence. Seeing that ſhe muſt at-'tack me regularly, ſhe talked of mar-'riage. Nothing was more advanta-'geous than her propoſals. Her for-'tune was to be entirely in my power. 'There remained only one bar to our 'happineſs. I was very young, and 'ſhe was not ſufficiently acquainted 'with my character. In order to try 'one another, ſhe propoſed to me to 'paſs ſome days together. *tête-a-tête*, 'in the country. "A fortnight's ſo-"litude and liberty," ſaid ſhe, "will "give us a truer idea of each other, "than two years at Paris." I gave 'into the ſnare, and ſhe managed ſo 'well, that I forgot my reſolution. 'How frail is man, and how little cer-'tain of himſelf! Having taken up the 'part of huſband, I was obliged to 'maintain it, and I gave her the beſt 'opinion of me that I poſſibly could; 'but in a ſhort time ſhe thought ſhe 'perceived that my love abated. It 'was in vain that I proteſted it was the 'ſame; ſhe told me that ſhe was not to 'be deceived with empty words, and 'that ſhe plainly ſaw the change in 'me. In ſhort, this morning, I receiv-'ed my diſcharge in form from under 'her own hands. It runs in theſe 'words.

"THE ſlender trial which I have "made of your ſentiments is "ſufficient. Be gone, Sir, whenever you "pleaſe. I would have a huſband whoſe "attentions ſhould never relax; who "loves me always, and always the "ſame."

'Are you ſatisfied? There is my 'adventure. You ſee it is quite of a dif-'ferent nature from that which you at-'tribute to me. I have been carried 'off as well as your Lauretta; Heaven 'grant, that they have not done by her 'as they did by me! But now you are 'undeceived with reſpect to me, have 'you no other ſuſpicion?'—'I am loſt 'in them,' ſaid Luzy: 'forgive my ſor-'row, my deſpair, and my love, the ſtep 'which I have juſt taken.'—'Pſhaw!' replied Soligny, 'nothing was more juſt. 'If I had taken away your miſtreſs, I 'muſt have given you ſatisfaction. 'There is nothing in it; ſo much the 'better: and ſo we are good friends. 'Will you breakfaſt with me?'—'I 'would die.'—'That would be going 'rather too far. Preſerve that remedy 'for more ſerious diſgraces. Lauretta 'is a pretty girl, though a little knaviſh 'baggage: endeavour to ſee her again; 'but if you cannot get her, take an-'other, and the ſooner the better.'

While Luzy remained inconſolable, and was ſcattering his money with a li-beral hand, in order to diſcover ſome traces of Lauretta, ſhe was at her fa-ther's, lamenting her error, or rather her lover.

Bazil had given out in the village, that he had not been able to live without his daughter, and that he had been to fetch her home. They found her ſtill improved. Her graces were now blown; and that which is called the air of Pa-ris had given her new charms, even in the eyes of the villagers. The ardour of the youths who had ſought her was renewed, and became ſtill more lively; but her father refuſed them all. 'You 'ſhall never marry in my life-time,' ſaid he. 'I would not impoſe upon any 'one. Work and lament with me. I 'have juſt ſent back to your unworthy 'lover all his preſents. We owe him 'nothing now, except our ſhame.'

Lauretta, humble and ſubmiſſive, obeyed her father without complaining, and without daring to raiſe her eyes to-wards him. It was to her an incredible difficulty to reſume the habitude of in-digence and labour. Her feet, grown tender, were wounded; her delicate hands were made ſore; but theſe were ſlight evils. 'The pains of the body are no-'thing,' ſaid ſhe, groaning; 'thoſe of 'the ſoul are much more grievous.'

Though Luzy was perpetually preſent to her, and her heart was not able to detach itſelf from him, ſhe had no longer either the hope or deſire of re-turning to him. She knew what bitter-neſs her going aſtray had diffuſed over the life of her unhappy father; and though ſhe had been at liberty to quit him again, ſhe would not have conſent-ed to it. But the image of the grief in which ſhe had left her lover purſued her, and was her torment. The right he had to accuſe her of perfidy and ingratitude was a freſh cauſe of anguiſh. 'If I

'could but write to him! But I have 'neither the liberty nor the means. 'Not content with obliging me to a-'bandon him, they would have me for-'get him. I shall sooner forget my-'self; and it is as impossible for me to 'hate him as to forget him. If he was 'culpable, his love was the cause, and I 'cannot punish him for it. In all that 'he did he meant only my happiness 'and my father's. He deceived him-'self, he led me astray; but at his age 'one thinks only of love. Yes, I owe 'it to him, I owe it to myself, to clear 'up my conduct; and in that point 'alone my father shall not be obeyed.' The difficulty now was only to procure the means of writing; but her father, without intending it, had spared her the trouble.

One evening Luzy, retiring more afflicted than ever, received an anonymous packet. The hand in which the direction was written was unknown to him; but the post-mark told him enough. He opens it with precipitation; he discovers the purse which he had given Bazil, with the fifty louis which he had left in it, and two like sums which he had sent to him. 'I see the whole af-'fair,' said he: 'I have been discover-'ed. The father in indignation sends 'me back my presents. Haughty and 'severe, as I perceived him. As soon 'as he knew where his daughter was, 'he came to fetch her, and forced her 'to follow him.' That moment he assembles such of his domesticks as attended Lauretta. He examines them; he asks if any one among them had not seen with her a countryman, whom he describes to them. One of them actually remembers that, the very day that she went away, a man exactly like the person he describes got up to the boot of Lauretta's coach, and spoke to her for a moment. 'Come quickly,' cried Luzy, 'put post-horses to my chaise!'

The second night, being arrived at some leagues from Coulange, he causes the servant who attended him to disguise himself like a peasant, sends him to get information, and in the mean while endeavours to take rest. Alas, there is none for the soul of a lover in so violent a situation! He counts the minutes from the departure of his emissary to his return.

'Sir,' said the servant, 'good news! 'Lauretta is at Coulange, at her fa-'ther's.'—'Ah, I breathe again!'—'They talk even of marrying her.'—'Of marrying her! I must see her.'—'You will find her in the vineyard: 'she works there all day.'—'Just Hea-'ven, what hardship! Come, I will 'lie concealed; and you, under that 'disguise, shall watch the moment when 'she is alone. Let us not lose an instant. 'Away!'

Luzy's emissary had told him truth. A rich person in his situation had offered himself as a match for Lauretta; and the minister had sent to Bazil to persuade him to accept it.

In the mean time, Lauretta toiled in the vineyard, and thought of the unhappy Luzy. Luzy arrives, and perceives her at a distance: he advances with precaution, sees her alone, runs up, throws himself before her, and stretches out his arms. At the noise which he made, across the vine-leaves, she raises her head, and turns her eyes. 'My God!' cried she. Surprize and joy took from her the use of her voice. She was in his arms, all trembling, without having been able to mention his name. 'Ah, Luzy!' said she, at last, 'is it you? This is 'what I asked of Heaven. I am innocent 'in your eyes, that is enough: I will 'endure the rest. Adieu, Luzy, adieu 'for ever! Be gone; and lament your 'Lauretta. She reproaches you with 'nothing. You will be dear to her to 'her last breath.'—'I!' cried he, locking her in his arms, as if they were about to tear her from him again: 'I 'quit you! Thou half of myself, I live 'without thee, far from thee! No, there 'is not that power on earth that shall 'separate us.'—'There is one which 'is sacred to me; the will of my father. 'Ah, my lost friend! if you had known 'the profound grief into which my flight 'plunged him, sensible and good as you 'are, you would have restored me to 'his tears. To take me away from 'him a second time, or to plunge a dag-'ger into his bosom, would be to me 'the same thing. You know me too 'well to require it of me; you are too 'humane to wish it yourself. Cast a-'way a hope which I have lost. Adieu! 'Heaven grant that I may expiate my 'fault! But I can scarce reproach my-'self for it. Adieu, I say! my father 'is coming: it would be dreadful that 'he should find us together.'—'It is 'what I would have,' said Luzy: 'I

'wait

'wait for him.'—'Ah! you are now 'going to redouble my sorrows.'

At that instant Basil arrives; and Luzy, advancing some paces to meet him, throws himself at his feet. 'Who 'are you? what do you want?' said Bazil, astonished at first. But as soon as he had fixed his eyes on him, 'Wretch,' cried he, drawing back, 'be gone, take yourself away from my 'sight!'—'No, I shall die at your feet, 'if you will not vouchsafe to hear me.' —'After having ruined, dishonoured 'the daughter, dare you present your-'self to the father!'—'I am to blame, 'I confess, and here are the means to 'punish me,' said he, presenting his sword. 'But if you will hear me, I 'hope that you will have compassion on 'me.'—'Ah!' said Basil, looking at the sword, 'if I were as base, as cruel 'as you—— See,' said he to his daughter, 'how groveling is vice, and how 'great the shame of it, since it obliges 'a man to crouch at the feet of his fel-'low-creature, and to sustain his con-'tempt.'—'If I were only vicious,' replied Luzy haughtily, 'far from im-'ploring you, I should brave you. At-'tribute my humiliation only to that 'which is the most honest, and most no-'ble cause in Nature; to love, to virtue 'itself, to the desire which I have of ex-'piating a fault, excusable, perhaps, 'and with which I reproach myself so 'cruelly, only because I have a good 'heart.' Then, with all the eloquence of sentiment, he endeavoured to justify himself, attributing the whole to the warmth of youth, and the intoxication of passion.

'The world is very happy,' replied Bazil, 'that your passion has not been 'that of money! You would have been 'a Cartouche.' Luzy chafed at this discourse. 'Yes, a Cartouche. And why 'not? Will you have the meanness to 'think that innocence and honour are 'of less value than riches and life? 'Have you not availed yourself of the 'weakness, the infirmity of this unhappy 'girl, in order to rob her of these two 'treasures? And me, her father, do you 'think you have done me a less injury 'than if you had murdered me? A Cartouche is broken on the wheel, because 'he steals riches, with which we may 'dispense; but for you, who have ta-'ken from us what a well-educated 'girl, what a virtuous father cannot 'lose without dying, what have you 'merited? They call you noble, and 'you believe yourself so. These are 'the marks of that nobility of which 'you are so vain. At a time of dis-'tress, when the most wicked of man-'kind would have had pity on me, you 'accost me, you pretend to pity me, and 'you say in your heart, "There, now, "is a wretch who has no other conso-"lation in the world but his daughter: "she is the only blessing Heaven has "left him; and to-morrow I will car-"ry her away from him." Yes, bar-'barian! yes, villain! this is what pass-'ed in your soul. And I, poor, cre-'dulous fool! I admired you, loaded 'you with blessings, and prayed Hea-'ven to accomplish all your wishes; 'while all your wishes were to seduce 'my daughter! What do I say, wretch 'as I am! I delivered her up to you, 'I engaged her to run after you, in 'truth, to restore to you that gold, that 'poison, with which you thought to 'corrupt me: it seemed as if Heaven 'had warned me that it was a destruc-'tive and treacherous gift; I resisted the 'impulse, and forced myself to believe 'you compassionate and generous; you 'were only perfidious and unpitying; 'and the hand which I would have 'kissed, which I would have watered 'with my tears, was preparing to pluck 'out my heart. Behold,' continued he, baring his bosom, and shewing his scars; 'behold what a man you have dishono-'noured! I have shed, for my coun-'try, more blood than you have in all 'your veins: and you, Sir, what are 'your exploits? Distressing a father, 'and debauching his daughter! empoi-'soning my days and her's! See, there, 'the unhappy victim of your seduction; 'see her there, steeping in her tears her 'daily bread. Brought up in the sim-'plicity of an innocent and laborious 'life, she loved it; she now detests it: 'you have rendered insupportable labour 'and poverty to her; she has lost her 'joy with her innocence, and she can 'no longer lift up her eyes without 'blushing. But that which distracts 'me, that which I will never forgive 'you, is, that you have shut the heart 'of my daughter against me; you have 'extinguished the sentiments of nature 'in her soul; you have made the com-

'pany of her father a torment to her: 'perhaps, alas!—I dare not speak it— 'perhaps I am her aversion.'

'Ah, my father!' cried Lauretta, who till then had remained in dejection and confusion; 'Ah, my father! this is 'punishing me too much. I merit every 'thing except the reproach of having 'ceased to love you.'' On saying these words, she fell at his feet, and kissed the dust of them. Luzy prostrated himself before him, and in an excess of tenderness, 'My father,' said he, 'pardon her, par- 'don me, embrace your children; and, 'if the ravisher of Lauretta be not too 'unworthy of the name of her husband, 'I conjure you to grant me that title.'

This return would have softened a harder heart than Bazil's. 'If there 'were,' said he to Luzy, 'any other 'way of restoring to me my honour, 'and to both of you your innocence, I 'would refuse this. But it is the only 'one; I accept it, and much more for 'your sakes than for my own; for I 'neither expect, and will have nothing 'from you, and will die in cultivating 'my vineyard.'

The love of Luzy and Lauretta was consecrated at the foot of the altar. Many people said that he had done a mean thing, and he agreed to it: 'But 'it is not,' said he, 'that which they 'attribute to me. The shame was in 'doing the wrong, and not in repairing 'it.'

There was no way of engaging Bazil to quit his humble habitation. After having tried every art to draw him to Paris, Madam De Luzy obtained of her husband to purchase an estate near Coulange, and the good father consented at last to go there and spend his old age.

Two hearts formed for virtue were ravished in having recovered it. That image of celestial pleasures, the agreement of love and innocence, left them nothing more to desire, but to see the fruits of so sweet an union. Heaven heard the wish of nature; and Bazil, before he died, embraced his grandchildren.

A WIFE OF TEN THOUSAND!

'ENJOY, Madam, all the com- 'forts of your house; do the 'honours, and be the delight of it; but 'never trouble your head about the con- 'duct of it.' This, near eight years ago, was the language of the haughty Melidor to his wife. The advice was agreeable to follow; and accordingly the young and lively Acelia had pretty well followed it. But reason came with age; and the kind of intoxication, in which she had been plunged, vanished.

Melidor had had the misfortune of being born in opulence. Brought up among the young nobility of the kingdom, invested on entering into the world with a considerable charge, master of his wealth from the age of reason; it became to him the age of follies. His prevailing foible was to want to live like a man of quality. He made himself familiar with the great, carefully studied their manners; and as the noble and simple graces of a true courtier are not easy to imitate, it was to the airs of our little lords that he attached himself, as to good models.

He would have thought it a disgrace not to have been able to say, *My domains, and my vassals*: he laid out, therefore, the better part of his ready-money in the purchase of lands, the revenue of which was small, indeed, but the rights whereof were magnificent.

He had heard say, that the great lords had stewards who robbed them, creditors whom they did not pay, and mistresses who were not very faithful; he considered it, therefore, as beneath him to look into his accounts, to pay his debts, or to be delicate in love.

His eldest son had scarce attained his seventh year; he took particular care to chuse him a governor that was self-sufficient and a coxcomb, who had no other merit than that of making a handsome bow.

This governor was the dependant of an humble friend of Melidor's, called Duranson, naturally an insolent, low fellow; a kind of dog, who barked at all passers-by, and caressed only his master. The part he acted was that of a misan-

a misanthrope, full of arrogance and moroseness. Rich, but covetous, he found it covenient to have a good house which was not his own, and pleasures of every sort of which another bore the expence. A silent observer of all that passed, one might see him sunk in his armed chair, deciding on every thing with a few cutting words, and setting himself up as a family censor. Woe to the good man who was not an object of fear! He tore him to pieces without mercy, if his air had displeased him ever so little.

Melidor took the moroseness of Duranson for philosophy. He was conscious that he was his hero; and the incense of a man of his character was to him a delicate perfume. The rough flatterer took care not to expose himself to the world. If he applauded Melidor in publick, it was only with a glance, or a complaisant smile: he kept his panegyrick, for a *tête-à-tête*; but then he gave him a full meal of it. Melidor could scarce believe himself endowed with such eminent merit; but there must be something in it, for his friend Duranson, who assured him of it, was the farthest in the world from being a nauseous flatterer.

It was not enough to please the husband; Duranson had also flattered himself with seducing the young wife. He began by speaking well of her alone, and very ill of all others of her age and condition. But she was as little touched with his satires as his encomiums. He suspected that he was despised; he endeavoured to make himself dreaded, and by some malignant and sharp strokes, he made her perceive that it was at any time in his power to be severe even on herself. That succeeded no better. 'I 'may have foibles,' said she to him, 'and I allow them to be attacked, but 'at a little more distance, if you please. 'A perpetual censor would be almost 'as tiresome to me as a servile flat-'terer.'

By the resolute tone which she assumed, Duranson saw plainly that, in order to reduce her, he must go a little farther about. 'Let me endeavour,' said he, 'to make her stand in need of 'me: let me afflict her in order to con-'sole her; and when her wounded va-'nity shall throw her off her guard, I 'will seize one of those moments of 'disgust. The confident of a woman's 'sorrows is often the happy avenger of 'them.'

'I pity you, Madam,' said he; 'and 'I ought no longer to conceal from you 'what affects me sensibly. For some 'time past Melidor goes astray; he is 'guilty of follies; and if he goes on in 'this manner, he will no longer have 'occasion for such a friend as myself.'

Whether it was levity or dissimulation with a man whom she did not esteem, Acelia received this information without deigning to appear moved. He dwelt upon it, made a merit of his own zeal, and declaimed against the caprices and irregularities of husbands of the age; said that he had made Melidor blush at it; and opposing the charms of Acelia to the dowdies which touched her husband, he grew so very warm, that he forgot his part, and soon betrayed himself. She smiled with disdain at the knave's want of address. 'That is 'what I call a friend,' said she, 'and 'not those base adulators, whom vice 'keeps in pay in order to flatter and 'serve it. I am very sure, for ex-'ample, that you have told Melidor 'to his face all that you have just now 'said to me.'—'Yes, Madam, and a 'great deal more.'—'You will, then, 'to be sure, have the courage to re-'proach him with his wrongs before 'me; to overwhelm him with them.'—'Before you, Madam! Ah, beware of 'making a noise! that would be to 'alienate him irrecoverably. He is 'proud; he would be hurt at having 'cause to blush before you. He would 'consider me only as a perfidious friend. 'And who knows to what hidden mo-'tive he would impute our correspon-'dence?'—'No matter; I will convict 'him, and confront him, in you, with a 'witness whom he cannot disprove.'—'No, Madam, no; you will be undone. 'It is by dissembling wrongs that a 'woman governs: discretion, gentle-'ness, and your charms, these are your 'advantages over us. Complaint and 'reproach only serve to exasperate us; 'and of all the methods of correcting, 'the worst is to put us to confusion.' He was in the right, but to no purpose. Acelia would hear nothing. 'I know,' said she, 'all my risk; but though it 'were to come to a rupture, I would 'not act, by my silence, the convenient 'woman to my husband.' He strove in vain to dissuade her; he was reduced

to

to ask her pardon, and to entreat her not to punish him for a zeal which, perhaps, was imprudent. 'And this, then, said Acelia, 'is that courageous free-'dom of yours which nothing can intimidate? I shall be more discreet than 'you; but remember, Duranson, never 'hereafter to say any thing of your 'friends that you would not have them 'hear again. As to me, whatever injury my husband does me, I forbid 'you ever to speak to me about it.'

Duranson, enraged at so scurvy a reception, vowed the destruction of Acelia; but it was necessary first to involve her in the ruin of her husband.

Nobody at Paris has so many friends as an opulent and prodigal man. Melidor's friends, at his suppers, never failed to commend him to his face; and they had the kindness to wait till they were withdrawn from table, before they ridiculed him. His creditors, who daily increased, were not so complaisant; but his friend Duranson kept off the throng. He knew, he said, the way to impose on those knaves. However, as they were not all equally timid, there was a necessity from time to time, in order to appease the most turbulent, to have recourse to expedients; and Duranson, under a fictitious name, coming to the succour of his friend, lent him money on pledges, on the most usurious contracts.

The more Melidor's affairs became disordered, the less he wished to hear of them. 'Manage it,' said he to his steward; 'I will sign, but leave me at peace.' At last the steward came to tell him that his capital was exhausted, and his effects were going to be seized. Melidor fell on his agent, and told him he was a rogue. 'Call me what you please,' replied the cool steward, 'but you are 'in debt, and must pay; and because 'you fail, they are going to sue you.'

Melidor ordered the faithful Duranson to be called, and asked him if he had no resource. 'You have one very 'sure one: let your wife engage her-'self.'—'Ah! but will she consent to 'it?'—'To be sure! can she hesitate, 'when your honour is at stake? How-'ever, do not alarm her; treat the mat-'ter as a trifle, and let her see in this 'engagement nothing more than a com-'mon form, which she cannot avoid 'fulfilling.' Melidor embraced his friend, and repaired to his wife.

Acelia, wholly devoted to her amusements, knew nothing of what passed. But, happily, Heaven had endued her with a just way of thinking, and a firm soul. 'I am just come, Madam,' said her husband, 'from seeing your new 'carriage: it will be exquisite. Your 'new horses are arrived. Ah, my dear, 'what a beautiful set! the Count De 'Pisa trains them. They are full of 'spirit; but he will break them: he is 'the best driver in all Paris.'

Though Acelia was accustomed to the gallantries of her husband, she could not help being surprized and pleased with this last. 'I ruin you!' said she. 'Pr'ythee, my dear, what better use 'can I make of my fortune than to 'employ it in what pleases you? Give 'a loose to your desires, and enjoy 'them at your ease. I have nothing 'which is not at your service; and I 'flatter myself that you think so. A-'propos,' added he carelessly, 'I have 'some deeds to settle, which the com-'mon forms of business will require 'you to sign. But we will talk of that 'this evening. At present I can think 'of nothing but the colour of your car-'riage; the varnisher only waits for 'your directions.'—'I will consider of 'it,' said she. And as soon as he was gone, she fell into reflections on what had passed between them.

Acelia was a rich heiress, and the law secured her the disposal of her fortune. She perceived the consequences of the engagement proposed to her; and in the evening, instead of going to the play, she went to her attorney. What was her surprize, on learning that Melidor was reduced to the most ruinous expedients! She employed the time of the play in getting intelligence and advice.

At her return she concealed her uneasiness before the company at supper; but when her husband, *tête-à-tête* with her, proposed to her to engage for him, 'I will not abandon you,' said she, 'if 'you will deign to trust yourself to me; 'but I require an entire confidence, a 'full power of ruling my house.'

Melidor was humbled at the thought of having his wife for a tutor: he told her that she had no reason to be alarmed, and that he would not suffer her to take so disagreeable a charge upon herself. 'No, Sir, I have neglected it too long: 'it is a fault which I will no longer be 'guilty

'guilty of.' He gave up the point; and the creditors being assembled the next day—'Gentlemen,' said he to them, 'your visits are troublesome to me; 'my wife would be glad to talk with 'you; see and settle with her.'—'Gentlemen,' said Acelia to them, in a prudent, but assured tone, 'though my 'estate be my children's, I am sensible 'that I ought to assist their father with 'it; but I will have it done fairly. 'Those who are honest shall find me 'punctual; but I will not satisfy knaves 'for the follies of a spendthrift. Bring 'me your demands to-morrow. I require only time to examine them; I 'will not let you wait.'

From the moment that Acelia saw herself at the head of her house, she was no longer the same woman. She cast her eyes on her past life, and saw nothing in it but the flutter of a thousand idle occupations. 'Are these,' said she, 'the duties of a mother of a family? 'Is it, then, at the price of her honour 'and of her peace, that she must pay 'for handsome suppers, rich equipages, 'and brilliant trifles?'

'Sir,' said she to her husband, 'to-'morrow I shall have the state of your 'debts; I must have that of your re-'venues: order your steward to come to 'me.' The steward came and gave in his accounts. Nothing was more clear; far from having money in hand, it was found that he had advanced, and there was due to him above double the amount of his accumulated wages. 'I 'see,' said Acelia, 'that the steward 'understands his accounts better than 'we do. We have nothing to do but to 'pay him, thanking him at the same 'time that we are not more in his debt.' —'To pay him!' said Melidor in a low voice, 'and with what?'—'Out 'of my fund. The first step in œco-'nomy is to turn off the steward.'

A reformation was instantly made in the household, and in the expence; and Acelia setting the example, 'Courage, 'Sir,' said she, 'let us cut to the quick. 'we sacrifice only our vanity.'—'But 'decency, Madam?'—'Decency, Sir, 'consists in not dissipating the substance 'of another, and the innocent enjoy-'ment of one's own.'—'But, Madam, 'at discharging your people you pay 'them; and that is exhausting our only 'resource.'—'Be easy, my dear: I 'have trinkets and diamonds; and by 'sacrificing only these ornaments, I 'make myself one which is well worth 'them all.'

Next day the creditors arrive, and Acelia gives them audience. Those of whom Melidor had purchased moveables of value, or superfluous knick-knacks, consented to take them back again, with a fair allowance. The rest, enchanted with the reception and good intentions of Acelia, unanimously agreed to abide by her decisions; and her conciliatory graces united all minds.

One alone, with an air somewhat confused, said that he could not abate any thing. He had valuable effects in pledge; and on the list of monies borrowed, he was set down for an enormous usury. Acelia detained him by himself, in order to bend him, if possible. 'I, Madam!' said he, pressed by her reproaches; 'I come not here on my 'own account, and M. Duranson had 'better have excused me from playing 'this villainous part.'—'Duranson, 'say you! What, is it he who under 'your name—' 'He himself.'—'So 'our pledges are in his hands.'—'Yes, 'and a writing from me, in which I 'declare there is nothing due to me.'— 'And may I have a duplicate of that 'writing?'—'Certainly, and presently 'if you will, for the name of an usurer 'sits heavy on me.' This was a weapon for Acelia; but it was not yet time to enlighten Melidor, and incense Duranson. She thought it necessary to dissemble some time longer.

Her lawyer, who came to see her, found that in twenty-four hours she had laid by a good part of her revenue, and discharged a multitude of debts. 'You 'proceed,' said he, 'upon good princi-'ples. Oeconomy is, of all resources, 'the most sure and the easiest. It en-'riches one in an instant with all the 'wealth that has been dissipated.'

While they were discoursing, Melidor in confusion afflicted himself at seeing his house stripped. 'Nay, Sir,' said his wife, 'console yourself: I retrench 'nothing but your follies.' But he considered only the world, and the humiliation of a fall. He retired in consternation, leaving Acelia with her lawyer.

A young woman has in business a prodigious advantage: besides inspiring hope and the desire of pleasing, she interests and disposes to a kind of easiness which men have not for one another.

Nature

Nature contrives a ſecret intelligence between the two ſexes. Every obſtacle is removed before them, every difficulty vaniſhes; and inſtead of treating one another as enemies, like man to man, with a woman we deliver ourſelves up as friends. Acelia was more than once a proof of it; and her lawyer exerted a zeal and affection in ſerving her, which he would not have had for her huſband.

'Madam,' ſaid he to her, on ſtating the balance of Melidor's eſtate with his debts, 'I find enough to acquit them. 'But effects ſold in a hurry commonly 'go at a low price. Let us ſuppoſe 'that his are free; they will more than 'anſwer the two hundred thouſand 'crowns which he owes; and if you 'will engage yourſelf for him, it is not 'impoſſible to reduce this multitude of 'ruinous debts to a ſmall number of 'more ſimple and leſs burdenſome ar'ticles.'—'Do it, Sir,' ſaid Acelia; 'I 'conſent: I engage myſelf for my huſ'band; but let it be without his know'ledge.' The lawyer acted with prudence; and Acelia was authorized to contract in Melidor's name.

Melidor had acted openly with her in every article but one, which he had not dared to declare to his wife. In the night Acelia, hearing him groan, endeavoured tenderly to comfort him. 'You do not know all!' ſaid he; and theſe words were followed with a profound ſilence. Acelia preſſed him in vain; ſhame ſtopped his mouth. 'What!' ſaid ſhe, 'have you ſorrows which you 'dare not confide to me! have you a 'friend more tender, more ſure, more 'indulgent?'—'The greater right you 'have to my eſteem,' replied Melidor, 'the more I ought to bluſh at the con'feſſion' which I have yet to make to 'you. You have heard of the cour'tezan Eleonora—What ſhall I ſay to 'you? She has notes from me for up'wards of fifty thouſand crowns.' Acelia ſaw with joy the moment to regain the heart of her huſband. 'It is not a 'time for reproaching you,' ſaid ſhe, 'with a folly of which your are aſhamed, 'and to which my own diſſipation has 'perhaps expoſed you. Let us repair 'and forget our wrongs: this laſt is not 'without remedy.' Melidor had no conception that a woman, till that time ſo full of levity, ſhould all of a ſudden have acquired ſo much conſideration. Acelia was not leſs ſurprized that a man, ſo haughty and vain, ſhould ſuddenly become ſo modeſt. 'May it not be 'happy for us,' ſaid they to each other, 'that we have fallen into misfortune?'

The next day Acelia, having conſidered well, went in perſon to Eleonora's. 'You know not,' ſaid ſhe to her, 'who is come to ſee you? It is a 'rival.' And without any farther preparation ſhe told her her name. 'Ma'dam,' ſaid Eleonora, 'I am con'founded at the honour you do me. I 'am ſenſible I have done you wrong, 'but my condition muſt be my excuſe. 'Melidor is to blame, and on ſeeing 'you I blame him myſelf: he is more 'unjuſt than I imagined.'—'Madam,' ſaid Acelia, 'I complain neither of you 'nor of him. It is a puniſhment due to 'a thoughtleſs woman to have a liber'tine huſband; and I have at leaſt the 'pleaſure of ſeeing that Melidor has 'ſtill ſome delicacy in his taſte. You 'have underſtanding, and an appearance 'of decency and graces worthy to em'belliſh virtue.'—'You view me, Ma'dam, with two much indulgence; 'which convinces me of the truth of 'what has been often told me, that 'the moſt virtuous women are not 'thoſe who are moſt ſevere on us. 'As they have nothing to envy us, 'they have the goodneſs to pity us. 'Thoſe who reſemble us are much more 'rigid! they tear us to pieces, while 'they imitate us.'—'I will tell you,' replied Acelia, meaning to bring her to her purpoſe, 'what we blame moſt in 'perſons of your way of life; it is not 'that weakneſs of which ſo many wo'men have cauſe to bluſh, but a paſ'ſion ſtill more odious. The fire of 'youth, the reliſh of pleaſures, the at'traction of a voluptuous and uncon'fined life, ſometimes even ſentiment 'itſelf, for I can believe you ſuſceptible 'of it, all this may have it's excuſe; 'but in renouncing the modeſty of a 'woman, you are at leaſt the more 'obliged to have that of a man; and 'is there not a kind of honeſty which 'you do not renounce?'—'Yes, with'out doubt.'—'Very well; tell me, then, 'does that honeſty permit you to make 'an ill uſe of the intoxication and folly 'of a lover, to ſuch a degree as to re'quire, and to accept of his mad en'gagements, that are ruinous to his fa'mily? Melidor, for example, has given

'you

'you notes for fifty thousand crowns; 'and do you perceive the consequence 'of them, and how much room there 'is to be severe against such a seduc- 'tion?'—'Madam,' replied Eleonora, 'it was a voluntary gift; and M. Du- 'ranson can witness for me that I have 'refused much larger.'—'You know 'M. Duranson?'—'Yes, Madam; it 'was he that put Melidor into my 'hands; and I was willing on that 'account to acquit him of all his own 'promises.'—'Very well: he has set 'down his own article, then, to his 'friend's account?—'He told me so, 'and I imagined that Melidor had ap- 'proved of it. As to the rest, Melidor 'was at his own liberty; I have no- 'thing of his but what he has given 'me, and nothing, in my opinion, can 'be more fairly acquired.'—'You 'think so; but would you think so, if 'you were the child that is stripped for 'it? Put yourself in the place of a 'mother of a family, whose husband 'ruins her in this manner; who is on 'the point of seeing him dishonoured, 'pursued, driven from his house, de- 'prived of his estate, obliged to con- 'ceal himself from the eyes of the 'world, and to leave his wife and chil- 'dren a prey to shame and grief; put 'yourself for one moment in the place 'of that miserable and distressed wo- 'man, and judge yourself, in that con- 'dition. What steps would not you 'take, Mademoiselle? You would, 'without doubt, have recourse to the 'laws which superintend our morals. 'Your complaints, and your tears, 'would put in their claim against an 'odious surprize, and the voice of na- 'ture and of equity would rise up in 'your favour. Yes, Mademoiselle, the 'laws would rage against poison; and 'the gift of pleasing is poison, when 'we make an ill use of it. It attacks 'not life; but it attacks reason and 'honour; and if, in the intoxication 'which it occasions, mad sacrifices are 'required and obtained of a man, what 'you call free gifts are in reality rob- 'beries. This is what any other would 'say; what you would say, perhaps, in 'my place, yourself. But I am more 'moderate. There is somewhat due 'to you: I am come to pay you; but 'nobly, and not madly. It is six months 'that Melidor has been your lover, and 'in giving you a thousand guineas, you 'will confess that he is magnificent.' Eleonora, softened and confounded, had not the courage to refuse. She took Melidor's notes, and followed Acelia to her lawyer.

'Would not you like,' said Acelia to her, on arriving there, 'an annuity 'of a hundred guineas, rather than this 'sum in hand, which will soon be dis- 'sipated? The way to detach one's self 'from vice, child, is to set one's self 'above want; and I am of opinion, 'that you will one day be glad to have 'it in your power to be virtuous.'

Eleonora kissing Acelia's hand, and letting fall some tears; 'Ah, Madam,' said she, 'under your features how ami- 'able and touching is virtue! If I have 'the happiness to return to it, my heart 'will owe that return to you.'

The lawyer, charmed with Acelia, informed her that the two hundred thou- sand crowns were ready in his hands, and that they waited her orders. She departed transported with joy, and on seeing Melidor again, 'There are your 'notes,' said she: 'it was very hard to 'part with them. Write no more so 'tender!' His friend Duranson was present; and by the dull air of Melidor, she plainly saw that he had made him ashamed of having resigned himself to his wife. 'You receive them very cold- 'ly,' said she to her husband, 'consider- 'ing they come from so dear a hand.' —'Would you have me, Madam, re- 'joice at being the talk of all Paris? 'They speak of nothing but my ruin; 'and you make it so very publick, that 'my friends themselves are not able 'to deny it.'—'Your friends, then, 'Sir, had some way of remedying it 'without noise? They are come pro- 'bably to offer you their credit, and 'their good offices? M. Duranson, for 'example—' 'I, Madam! I can do 'nothing; but I think that without 'such a disgraceful publication, it would 'have been easy to find resources.'— 'Yes, resources which leave none! My 'husband has made too much use of 'them: you know it better than any- 'body. As for the disgrace which you 'affix to the publication of our mis- 'fortune, I know how great your deli- 'cacy is, and I esteem it as I ought.'— 'Madam! I am an honest man, and it 'is well known.'—'It ought to be 'known, for you tell all the world of 'it; but as Melidor will have no more

'love-intrigues to form, your honesty 'grows useless.' Melidor, at these words, took fire himself, and told his wife, that it was an affront to him to insult his friend. She was about to answer; but, without deigning to hear her, he retired in a rage, and Duranson followed him.

Acelia was not the least shaken by this; and leaving them to conspire together, devoted herself entirely to the care of her family. Her son's governor, since their failure, thought his office beneath him, and plainly told them his mind. He was discharged that very evening; and in his place came a good abbé, simple, modest, and sufficiently learned, whom she entreated to be their friend, and to infuse his own morals into his pupil.

Melidor, whom Duranson had taught to consider the ascendent which his wife had assumed, as the utmost mortification, was incensed at hearing that the governor was discharged. 'Yes, Sir,' said she to him, 'I give my son the example and direction of a wise man instead of a coxcomb; I mean also to 'rid you of an insolent parasite, who 'makes you pay for his pleasures. 'These are the injuries I do you, I confess them, and you may make them 'publick.'—'It is odious, replied Melidor, without listening to her; 'it is 'odious to avail yourself of the condition to which I am reduced, to prescribe laws to me. No, Madam, my 'misfortune is not such as to degrade 'me into your slave. It was your duty 'to enter into the engagement which I 'proposed to you: you have declined 'it; you are no longer dear to me, and 'your cares are useless. If I have run 'out, it was for you: the only remedy 'to my misfortune, is to remove the 'cause, and to-morrow we separate.' —'No, Sir, this is not the proper juncture. In a little time you shall peaceably enjoy a reputable fortune; you 'shall be free, and easy, and happy. 'Then, after having re-established your 'honour and your peace, I shall see 'whether I ought to give place to the 'workers of your ruin, and to leave 'you, by way of punishment, at the 'brink of the abyss, whence I am now 'going to draw you. Till then we 'are inseparable; and my duty and 'your misfortune are inviolable ties to 'me. For the rest, you shall judge 'to-morrow what a man he is whom 'you prefer to me. I will give you 'proofs of his perfidy, before his face; 'and I renounce all claim to your esteem 'if he dares disavow them.'

Melidor, shaken by the generous firmness of Acelia, was distracted all night between anger and gratitude. But in the morning he received a letter, which threw him into despair. They writ to him that nothing was talked of at court but his luxury, his extravagance, and the misfortune which was the fruit of it; that every-body blamed him loudly; and that they proposed nothing less than to oblige him to quit his charge. 'Read,' said he, on seeing Acelia; 'read, Madam, and tremble at 'the condition to which you have re'duced me.—Oh, my friend,' said he to Duranson, who arrived just at that instant, 'I am undone; you foretold 'it to me. The bustle she has made 'dishonours me. They are taking 'away my place.' Duranson pretended to be overcome with the news. 'Be 'not afraid,' said Acelia to him; 'your 'security is good. You will lose nothing by it, but the monstrous usury 'which you would extort from your 'friend.—Yes, Melidor, he is our 'usurer, our lender upon pledges.'— 'I, Madam!'—'Yes, Sir, you yourself, and I have the proof in my hands. '—There it is,' said she to her husband; 'but this is not all: this worthy 'friend made you pay Eleonora for the 'favours which he had received from 'her; he had the presumption to want 'to seduce your wife, by informing her 'of your amours, at the same time that 'he ruined you under a borrowed name.' —'Ah, this is too much!' said Duranson, and he rose to depart. 'One 'word more,' said Acelia to him. 'You shall be unmasked in an hour, 'known by the city and the court, and 'marked every-where with infamy, if 'you do not this very instant carry to my 'lawyer's, where I am going to wait for 'you, both the pledges and the notes 'which you have of Melidor's.' Duranson turned pale, was confused, disappeared, and left Melidor confounded and immoveable with indignation and astonishment.

'Courage, my dear,' said Acelia to her husband. 'I answer for laying the 'storm. Adieu. This evening it shall 'be appeased.'

She

She repairs to the attorney's, becomes bound, receives the two hundred thousand crowns, discharges his debts, tears the bills, beginning with those of Duranson, who had prudently done as he was ordered. From thence she takes a post-chaise, and repairs immediately to court.

The minister did not dissemble his discontent, nor the resolution which had been taken to oblige Melidor to sell his place. 'I do not attempt to excuse 'him,' said she: 'luxury is a folly in 'our situation, I confess; but it has 'been my folly rather than my husband's. His complaisance has been 'his only fault; and ah, Sir, what 'will not men do for a wife whom they 'love! I was young and handsome in 'his eyes; my husband consulted my 'desires rather than his own means; 'he knew no fear, nor misfortune, 'but that of displeasing me: this was 'his imprudence; it is now repaired; 'he owes nothing more than my portion, and I make him the sacrifice of 'it.'—'What, Madam,' cried the minister, 'have you become bound for 'him?'—'Yes, Sir, who ought to repair his misfortune, but she who occasioned it? Yes, Sir, I have engaged 'myself, but thereby I have acquired 'the right of managing his estate, and 'of ensuring my children's fortune. He 'does not know what I have done for 'him, and he allows me full power to 'dispose of every thing. I am at the 'head of my family, and the whole of 'it is already reduced to the most severe 'œconomy. Here, in two words, is 'what I have done, and what I propose 'to do.' She then entered into some details, which the minister was graciously pleased to hear. 'But,' continued she, 'the friendship, the esteem, the confidence of my husband, all is lost to 'me, if you punish him for a fault with 'which he must reproach me till I shall 'have effaced it. You are just, sensible, and humane; for what would 'you punish him? For having loved 'the other half of himself too much? 'for having forgot himself, and sacrificed himself for me? I shall then be 'odious to him; and he will have reason perpetually to repeat to my children the error and dishonour into 'which their mother shall have plunged 'him. To whom would you make 'satisfaction by punishing him? To 'the publick? Ah, Sir! it is an envious, wicked publick, unworthy of 'that complaisance. As to that part 'of the publick which is indifferent 'and just, leave us to give it a sight 'much more useful, and more touching, than that of our ruin. It shall 'see that a discreet woman can reclaim 'an honest husband; and that there are, 'to well-disposed hearts, inexhaustible 'resources in courage and virtue. Our 'reformation will be an example; and 'if it be honourable to us to set it, it 'will be glorious to follow it; whereas, if the punishment of an imprudence 'which hurts us alone, exceeds the 'fault, and survives it, they will, perhaps, be incensed to no purpose, at 'seeing us unhappy without being criminal.'

The minister listened with astonishment. 'Far from being any obstacle 'to your intentions,' said he, 'Madam, 'I will second them, even in punishing 'your husband. He must renounce all 'title to his place.'—'Ah, Sir!'—'I 'have disposed of it in favour of your 'son; and it is out of regard, out of 'respect for you, that I leave the survivorship to the father.' Acelia's surprize, at obtaining from the minister a favour instead of a punishment, made her almost fall at his feet. 'Sir,' said she to him, 'it is worthy yourself to 'correct, in this manner, the father of 'a family. The tears which you see 'flow are the expression of my gratitude. My children, my husband, and 'myself, shall never cease to bless you.'

Melidor waited Acelia with terror; and uneasiness gave place to joy, when he learned with what gentleness his dissipation was punished. 'Well,' said Acelia, embracing him, 'are we to part 'to-day? Have you still any good friend 'whom you prefer to your wife?'

It is well known with what ease reports in Paris are spread, and destroyed as soon as propagated: Melidor's misfortune had been the news of the day; his re-establishment, or rather the noble part which his wife had acted, caused a kind of revolution in people's minds, and in their conversation. They talked of nothing but the wisdom and resolution of Acelia; and when she appeared abroad, with the modest and free air of a person who neither braves nor fears the looks of the publick, she was received with a respect which she had never

before inſpired. It was then that ſhe perceived the value of the conſideration which virtue gives; and the homages which had been paid to her youth and beauty, had never flattered her ſo much.

Melidor, more timid, or more vain, knew not what air to aſſume, nor what countenance to wear. 'Let us wear,' ſaid his wife, 'the air of confeſſing 'frankly, that we have been imprudent, 'and that we are become diſcreet. No- 'body has any thing to reproach us 'with; let us not humiliate ourſelves. 'If they ſee us glad of being amended, 'they will eſteem us the more.'—'And 'with what eyes,' ſaid he, 'will you 'look upon that multitude of falſe 'friends who have abandoned us?'— 'With the ſame eyes that I have always 'ſeen them; as people whom pleaſure 'attracts, and who fly away at it's de- 'parture. What right had you to de- 'pend upon them? Was it for them 'that your feaſts were made? The 'houſe of a rich man is a theatre, in 'which every one thinks he has paid 'for his place, when he has filled it 'agreeably: the ſhew ended, every one 'retires, acquitted of all demands on 'them. This is a diſagreeable re- 'flection; but in loſing the illuſion of 'being loved, you convert an agreeable 'error into an uſeful experience. And 'it is with this remedy, as with many 'others: the bitterneſs forms it's effi- 'cacy. View, then, the world as it is, 'without being mortified at having miſ- 'taken it, without boaſting that you 'know it better. Above all, let no- 'body be informed of our little quar- 'rels: let neither of us ſeem to have 'given way to the other; but let it ap- 'pear, that the ſame ſpirit animates and 'actuates us both. Though it be not 'ſo great a ſhame as it is accounted, 'to ſuffer one's ſelf to be guided by a 'wife, I would not have them know 'that it was I who determined you.'

Melidor owed every-thing to his wife, but nothing touched him ſo ſenſibly as this mark of delicacy, and he was ſo ingenuous as to confeſs it. Acelia had another view beſides flattering the vanity of her huſband. She wanted to engage him, by his vanity itſelf, to follow the plan which ſhe had traced out to him. 'If he ſees all the world perſuaded,' ſaid ſhe, 'that he has acted only ac- 'cording to his own pleaſure, he will 'ſoon believe it himſelf, as well as the 'reſt of the world: we ſtand to our 'own reſolutions by this ſentiment of 'liberty, which reſiſts thoſe of others; 'and the moſt eſſential point in the art 'of leading people, is that of conceal- 'ing from them that they are led.' Acelia took care, therefore, to reflect on her huſband thoſe praiſes which were beſtowed on her; and Melidor, on his ſide, ſpoke of her with nothing but eſteem.

However, ſhe dreaded, on his account, the ſolitude and ſilence of her houſe. There is no keeping in a man who grows dull and weary; and before Melidor could fall into ſome employment, it was neceſſary he ſhould have amuſements. Acelia took care to form for him a ſociety, not numerous, but well-choſen. 'I invite you not to feaſts,' ſaid ſhe to the ladies whom ſhe engaged; 'but inſtead of pomp, we ſhall have 'pleaſure. I will give you a hearty 'ſupper, which ſhall coſt nothing; we 'will there drink in freedom to the 'health of our friends; perhaps, alſo, 'we ſhall laugh there, a circumſtance 'uncommon enough in the world.' She kept her promiſe; and her huſband alone ſtill regretted the opulence in which he had lived. Not that he did not try to accuſtom himſelf to a plain way of life; but one would have thought that the ſame void had taken poſſeſſion of his ſoul and of his houſe. His eyes and ears, habituated to tumult, were ſtupified as it were with calm and repoſe. He ſtill viewed with envy thoſe who were ruining themſelves, like himſelf; and Paris, where he found himſelf condemned to privations, in the midſt of enjoyments, became odious to him.

Acelia, who perceived it, and who purſued her plan with that conſtancy which is found only in women, propoſed to him to go and ſee the lands which they had bought. But, before ſetting out, ſhe charged her lawyer to hire her, inſtead of the hotel which they occupied, a houſe genteelly plain, to live in at their return.

Of three eſtates, which Melidor had, the two moſt honourable produced ſcarce a third of the intereſt of the purchaſe-money. It was reſolved, therefore, that he ſhould ſell them. The other having been long neglected, required only improvement to become an excellent eſtate. 'This is the eſtate we muſt keep,' ſaid Acelia; 'let us employ all our care in

'raiſing

'raising it's value. It is a wholesome 'air, an agreeable prospect, and a fertile 'soil: we will pass the pleasant part of 'the year there; and, believe me, we 'will love one another there. Your 'wife will not have the airs, the ca-'prices, the art of coquettes, but a sin-'cere and tender friendship; which will 'constitute, if you partake it, your hap-'pineſs; mine, that of our children, 'and the joy of our family. I know 'not how it is, but since I breathe the 'air of the country, my pleasures are 'more simple and natural; happiness 'seems more within my reach, more 'accessible to my desires; I see it pure, 'and without clouds, in the innocence 'of rural manners; and I have, for the 'first time, the idea of the serenity of 'an innocent life, which flows in peace 'to the very end.' Melidor heard his wife with complaisance, and consolation diffused itself over his soul like a delicious balm.

He consented, not without repugnance, to the sale of those of his lands, the rights of which had flattered him the most; and the good lawyer managed so well, that in the space of six months, Melidor found himself indebted to nobody in the world.

Nothing now remained, but to strengthen him against the bent of habit; and Acelia, who knew his foible, did not despair of extinguishing in him the relish of luxury, by a taste more discreet and satisfactory. The estate which they had reserved, presented a vast field for useful labours; and Acelia bethought her of forming a little council of husbandmen for the direction of them. This council was composed of seven honest, sensible villagers, to whom she gave a dinner every Sunday. This dinner was called, The Banquet of the Seven Wise Men. The council was held at table, and Melidor, Acelia, and the little abbé, assisted at the deliberations. The quality of soils, and the culture which suited them; the choice of the plants and seeds; the establishment of new farms, and the division of the ground into woods, pasturages, and corn-fields; the distribution of the flocks, destined for fattening and labour; the direction and employment of the waters, plantations, and enclosures, and even the smallest particulars of rural œconomy; were treated in this council. Our sages, glass in hand, animated and enlightened each other; to hear them, one might have imagined that one saw treasures buried in the earth, which waited only for hands to come and dig them out.

Melidor was flattered with this hope, and above all with the kind of domination which he should exercise in the conduct of these labours; but he did not think that he had means sufficient to carry them into execution. 'Let us 'begin,' said Acelia, 'and the ground 'will assist us.' They did but little the first year, but sufficient to give Melidor a foretaste of the pleasure of creating.

The council, at Acelia's departure, received from her a small recompence, and the good grace with which she gave it enhanced the value.

Melidor, on his return to town, was enchanted with his new house. It was commodious and pleasing, furnished without pomp, but with taste. 'This, 'my dear, is what suits us,' said his wife. 'There is enough of it to be 'happy in it, if we are wise.' She had the pleasure of seeing him grow dull at Paris, where he found himself confounded in the crowd, and sigh after the country, where the desire of reigning recalled him.

They went down there before the return of spring; and the sages being assembled, they regulated the labours of the year.

From the moment that Melidor saw the ground enlivened by his influence, and a multitude of people employed in fertilizing it for him, he felt himself lifted above himself. A new farm, which he had established, was adjudged by the council, and Melidor had the sensible joy of seeing the first crop.

Their joy was renewed every day, on seeing those very fields, which two years before languished uncultivated and unpeopled, covered with labourers and flocks, with wood, harvests, and herbages; and Melidor saw with regret the arrival of the season which recalled him to Paris.

Acelia could not resist the inclination of visiting the minister, who, in her misfortune, had stretched out his hand to her. She gave him so touching a picture of the happiness which they enjoyed, that he was moved to the bottom of his soul. 'You are,' said he to her, 'the model of women: may such an

'example

'example make, on all hearts, the impression which it makes on mine! Go on, Madam, and depend on me. It is too much honour to be able to contribute to the happiness which you occasion.'

That fortunate country, to which our couple were recalled by the fine weather, became a smiling picture of œconomy and abundance. But a picture, still more touching, was that of the education which they gave to their children.

They talked in the neighbourhood of a couple like themselves, withdrawn from the world, and who, in a pleasing solitude, made it their delight to cultivate the tender fruits of their love. 'Let us go and see them,' said Acelia; 'let us go and take lessons from them.' On arriving, they saw the image of happiness and of virtue; M. and Madame de Lisbé, in the midst of their young family, solely occupied with the care of forming the understanding and the heart.

Acelia was touched at the grace, the decency, and, above all, with the air of gaiety which she remarked in these children. They had neither the rustick bashfulness nor the indiscreet familiarity of childhood. In their address, their conversation, their language, nothing appeared but a natural excellence; so very easy had habit rendered all the movements which it had directed.

'This is not a visit of ceremony,' said Acelia to Madame De Lisbé: 'we come 'to take instructions from you in the 'art of bringing up our children, and 'to entreat you to teach us the principles and the method which you have 'followed with so much success.'

'Alas, Madam! nothing is more 'plain,' replied Madame De Lisbé. 'Our principles consist in treating children as children; to make useful things 'a play to them; to make plain what 'we teach them, and to teach them only 'what they are able to conceive. Our 'method is equally simple: it consists 'in leading them to instruction by curiosity; in concealing from them, under that allurement, the idea of labour 'and constraint, and in directing their 'very curiosity, by certain thoughts 'thrown in their way, and which we 'give them an inclination of seizing. 'The most difficult is that of exciting 'emulation without jealousy; and in that, 'perhaps, we have less merit than good 'fortune.'—'You have given them, 'without doubt, excellent masters?'—'No, Madam, we learned whatever we 'wished to teach them. See how the 'dove digests the nourishment of her 'young ones. Let us imitate her; and 'from thence result two advantages, 'and two pleasures; that of instructing 'ourselves, and that of instructing our 'children.'

'This little labour is so much the 'more amusing,' said Monsieur De Lisbé, 'as we have reserved all the abstracted studies for the age of reason; 'and as our lessons are, at present, confined to what falls beneath the senses. 'Childhood is the age in which the 'imagination is most lively, and the 'memory most docile; it is to objects 'of these two organs that we apply the 'minds of our children. The surface 'of the ground is an image; the history 'of men, and that of nature, are a succession of pictures; the natural philosophy of tongues is only sounds; the 'part of the mathematicks, to be perceived by the senses, is reduced to 'lines; all the arts may be described. 'Religion itself, and moral philosophy, 'are better learned by our feelings than 'they are conceived in idea; in a word, 'all our simple and primitive perceptions come to us by the senses. Now, 'the senses of children have more fineness, delicacy, and vivacity, than those 'of maturer age. It is taking nature, 'then, in her strength, to take her in 'childhood; to perceive and seize every 'thing which requires not the combinations of the understanding; besides, 'that the soul, free from all other care, 'is entirely at leisure to attend to this; 'that it is greedy of knowledge, exempt 'from prejudice, and that all the cells 'of the understanding and the memory 'being empty, we range ideas there at 'pleasure, especially if, in the art of introducing them, we follow their natural order, if we are not in too much 'haste to accumulate them, and if we 'give them leisure to settle themselves 'each in their place.'

'I see,' said Acelia, 'but without 'terrifying myself at it, that all this 'demands a continued attention.'—'That attention,' replied Madame De Lisbé, 'has nothing constraining nor 'painful. We live with our children, 'we have them under our eyes, we converse with them, we accustom them to 'examine and to reflect; we assist them,

'without

'without impatience, in developing 'their ideas; we never discourage them 'by a tone of ill-humour or contempt; 'severity, which is only of service to 'remedying the fault of negligence, 'has scarce ever place in an unremitted 'education; and as we do not suffer 'nature to take any vicious bent, we 'are not obliged to put it under con-'straint.'

'Shall I not be indiscreet,' said Acelia to her, 'in testifying to you the de-'sire I have of being present at one of 'your lessons?' Madame De Lisbé called her children, who were employed together in a corner of the hall. They flew to the arms of their mother with a natural joy, at which Acelia was touched. 'Children,' said the mother, 'the 'lady would willingly hear you: we 'are going to question each other.'

Acelia admired the order and clearness of the knowledge which they had acquired; but she was still more enchanted at the grace and modesty with which they replied in their turns, at the good understanding which reigned among them, and at the lively interest which they took at the success of each other.

Acelia's object was to interest Melidor in this sight, and he was moved even to tears. 'How happy are you,' said he continually to Madame De Lisbé; 'how happy are you in having 'such children! It is the sweetest of all 'enjoyments.'

Acelia, on quitting her neighbours, requested their friendship; she embraced a thousand times their children, and prayed them to give her leave to come sometimes to instruct herself by their studies.

'What can be more astonishing, and 'more plain?' said she to Melidor, on going away. 'Can it be that a pleasure 'so pure is so little known, and that 'what is most natural should be what 'is most uncommon? People have 'children, and grow tired of them! and 'seek abroad for amusements, when 'they have such touching pleasures at 'home!'—'True,' said Melidor; 'all 'children are not so well endowed.'— 'And who has told us,' replied Acelia, 'that Heaven has not granted us the 'same favour? Ah, my dear, it is for 'the sake of sparing ourselves, that we 'so often reproach Nature. We gene-'rally blame her, in order to justify 'ourselves. Before we have a right to 'think her incorrigible, we should have 'done every thing to correct her. We are 'neither weak nor wicked; our children 'ought not to be so. Let us live with 'them, and for them; and I promise 'you that they will resemble us.'

'You are going to have two assist-'ants,' said she in the evening to the abbé. 'We have just had a foretaste of the 'pleasure of educating our children.' And she related what they had seen and heard. 'We would follow the same 'plan,' added she. 'You, my good 'abbé, you shall teach them the lan-'guages; Melidor is going to apply 'himself to the study of the arts, and 'of nature, in order to be able to give 'lessons on them. I reserve to myself 'what is easiest and most simple, the 'manners, the objects of sentiment; 'and I hope, in a year, to be able to 'keep pace with you. You must shew 'us the sources, and direct our studies, 'step by step, on the shortest plan.'

The abbé applauded this emulation, and each of them set about filling his task with an ardour, which, far from weakening itself, only redoubled.

Melidor found no farther vacancy in the leisure of the country. It seemed to him as if time hastened his course. The days were not long enough to attend to the cares of agriculture, and the studies of the closet. One might have said, that these employments stole from one another. Acelia was divided, in like manner, between the cares of her household and the instruction of her children. Nature seconded her views. Her children, full of application and docile, whether by the example of their parents, or through a mutual emulation, made their little exercises their diversion.

But this success, satisfying as it was to the heart of a good mother, was not her most serious object. She had ensured to Melidor the only inexhaustible resource against the dullness of solitude, and the attraction of dissipation. 'I 'am easy,' said she, 'at last,' when she saw in him a determined liking for study. 'It is a pleasure which costs little, 'which we find every-where, which 'never tires, and with which we are 'sure of not being obliged to fly our-'selves.'

Melidor, restored to himself, far from being ashamed to confess that he owed his

his reformation to his wife, took a pride in relating all she had done to reclaim him from his errors: he ceased not to commend the courage, the understanding, the sweetness, the firmness, she had mingled in it; and all the world, on hearing him, said, 'This is a Wife of 'Ten Thousand!'

FRIENDSHIP PUT TO THE TEST.

IN one of those schools of morality to which the English youth go to study the duties of a man and a citizen, to enlighten the understanding and elevate the soul, Nelson and Blanford were distinguished by a friendship worthy of the first ages. As it was founded on a perfect agreement of sentiments and principles, time only served to confirm it; and the more it was enlightened every day, the more intimate it every day became. But this friendship was put to a test, which it had some difficulty to support.

Their studies being finished, each of them took to that way of life to which Nature invited him. Blanford, active, robust, and courageous, determined for the profession of arms, and for the sea-service. Voyages were his school. Inured to fatigues, instructed by dangers, he arrived, from rank to rank, to the command of a vessel.

Nelson, endowed with a manly eloquence, and of a genius wise and profound, was of the number of those deputies, of whom the national senate is composed; and in a short time he rendered himself famous there.

Thus each of them served his country, happy in the good which he did it: while Blanford sustained the shock of war, and of the elements, Nelson stood proof against favour and ambition. Examples of an heroick zeal, one would have thought that, jealous of each other, they contended for virtue and glory; or rather that, at two extremities of the world, the same spirit animated them both.

'Courage,' said Nelson, in his letters to Blanford, 'does honour to friendship 'by preserving it's country; live for the 'one, if it be possible, and die for the 'other, if there be occasion: a death, 'worthy of it's tears, is more valuable 'than the longest life.'—'Courage,' said Blanford, in his letters to Nelson, 'defends the rights of the people 'and of liberty: a smile from one's 'country is of more value than the fa-'vour of kings.'

Blanford enriched himself by doing his duty: he returned to London with the prizes he had taken on the Indian seas; but the most valuable part of his treasure was a young Indian, of a beauty that would have been uncommon in any climate. A Bramin, to whom Heaven had given this only daughter in reward for his virtues, had consigned her up, in his dying moments, to the hands of the generous Englishman.

Coraly had not yet attained her fifteenth year; her father made her his delight, and the tenderest object of his cares. The village in which he dwelt was taken and pillaged by the English. Solinzeb (that was the Bramin's name) presents himself on the threshold of his habitation. 'Hold!' said he to the soldiers, who were come quite up to his humble sanctuary; 'hold! Whoever 'you be, the God of Nature, the bene-'ficent God, is yours and mine: respect 'in me his minister.'

These words, the sound of his voice, his venerable air, impress respect; but the fatal stroke is given, and the Bramin falls, mortally wounded, into the arms of his trembling daughter.

At that instant Blanford arrives. He comes to repress the fury of the soldiery. He cries out; he makes a passage through them; he sees the Bramin leaning on a young girl scarce able to support him, and who, tottering herself, bathes the old man with her tears. At this sight, nature, beauty, love, exercise all their influence on Blanford's soul. He easily discovers in Solinzeb the father of her who embraces him with such affectionate sorrow.

'Barbarians,' said he to the soldiers, 'be gone! Is it feebleness and inno-'cence, old age and childhood, that

'you

Stothard del. Walker sculp.

Plate. V.

Publish'd as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Nov.r 18. 1781.

'you ought to attack?—Mortal, sacred 'to me,' said he to the Bramin, 'live, 'live; suffer me to repair the crime of 'those savages!' At these words he takes him into his arms, makes him lie down, examines the wound, and procures him all the assistance of art. Coraly, witness to the piety, the sensibility of this stranger, thought she saw a god descended from Heaven to succour and comfort her father.

Blanford, who did not quit Solinzeb, endeavoured to soften the sorrow of his daughter; but she seemed to have a presage of her misfortune, and passed the nights and days in tears.

The Bramin perceiving his end to approach—'I would fain,' said he to Blanford, 'go and die on the border of 'the Ganges, and purify myself in it's 'waves.'—'Father,' replied the young Englishman to him, 'it would be easy 'to give you that consolation, if all hope 'was lost: but wherefore add to the 'peril in which you are, that of so 'painful a removal? It is so far from 'hence to the Ganges! And, then, (be 'not offended at my sincerity) it is the 'purity of the heart which the God of 'nature requires; and if you have ob'served the law which he has engraven 'on our souls, if you have done man'kind all the good that you have been 'able, if you have avoided doing them 'ill, the God who loves them will love 'you.'

'Thou art full of consolation,' said the Bramin. 'But thou, who re'duceſt the duties of mankind to a plain 'piety and purity of manners, how can 'it be that thou art at the head of those 'robbers who ravage India, and who 'bathe themselves in blood?'

'You have seen,' said Blanford, 'whether I authorize those ravages. 'Commerce draws us to India; and if 'men acted uprightly, that mutual ex'change of conveniences would be just 'and peaceable. The violence of your 'masters obliged us to take arms; and 'the transition is so quick from defence 'to attack, that at the first success, at 'the smallest advantage, the oppressed 'becomes the oppressor. War is a 'violent state, which it is not easy to 'soften. Alas! when man becomes un'natural, how can he be just? It is my 'duty here to protect the commerce of the 'English, to make my country honour'ed and respected. In the discharge of 'this duty, I spare, as far as possible, 'the effusion of blood and tears which 'war occasions: happy if the death of 'a good man, the death of Coraly's fa'ther, be one of those crimes and mis'fortunes which I am destined to save 'the world!' Thus spoke the virtuous Blanford, and embraced the old man.

'Thou wouldest persuade me,' said Solinzeb, 'that virtue is every where the 'same. But thou believest not in the 'god Vistnou and his nine metamor'phoses: how can a good man refuse 'his assent to them?'—'Father,' replied the Englishman, 'there are mil'lions of people upon the earth who 'have never heard either of Vistnou, or 'his adventures; for whom, however, 'the sun rises every day, who breathe 'a pure air, who drink wholesome wa'ters, and to whom the earth lavishes 'the fruits of the seasons. Would you 'believe it! There are among these 'people, as well as among the children 'of Brachma, virtuous hearts, and 'good men. Equity, candour, upright'ness, beneficence, and piety, are in 'veneration among them, and even 'among the wicked. O, my father! 'the dreams of the imagination differ 'according to climates; but the mind 'is every where the same, and the light 'which is it's source, is as widely dif'fused as that of the sun.'

'This stranger enlightens and asto'nishes me,' said Solinzeb within him'self: 'all that my heart, my reason, the 'inward voice of nature, tell me to be'lieve, he believes also; and of my 'worship he denies only that part which 'I have so much trouble myself not to 'deem absurd.'—'Thou thinkest, then, said he to Blanford, 'that a good man 'may die in peace?'—'Certainly.'—'I think so too, and I wait death as a 'gentle sleep. But when I am gone, 'what will become of my daughter? I 'see nothing in my country but slavery 'and desolation. My daughter had only 'me in the world, and in a few mo'ments I shall be no more.'—'Ah!' said the young Englishman, 'if to her 'misfortune, death deprives her of a 'father, deign to confide her to my 'cares. I call Heaven to witness that 'her chastity, innocence, and liberty, 'shall be a deposit guarded by honour, 'and for ever inviolable.'—'And in 'what principles shall she be brought 'up?'—'In yours, if you please; in

'mine, if you will allow me; but at 'all events in that modesty and virtue 'which are every where the glory of a 'woman.'—'Young man,' replied the Bramin with an august and threatening air, 'God has just heard thy words; 'and the old man with whom thou now 'speakest will perhaps in an hour be 'with him.'—'You have no need,' said Blanford to him, 'to make me 'perceive the sacredness of my promises. 'I am but a feeble mortal; but nothing 'under Heaven is more immoveable than 'the honesty of my heart.' He spoke these words with such firmness, that the Bramin was penetrated with them. 'Come, Coraly,' said he to his daughter; 'come, embrace thy dying father: 'let him be, after me, thy guide and 'thy support. There, my daughter,' added he, 'is the book of the law of 'thy forefathers, the *Veidam*: after 'having well meditated on it, suffer 'thyself to be instructed in the creed 'of this virtuous stranger, and chuse 'that of the two forms of worship which 'shall seem to thee the most proper to 'make people virtuous.'

The night following the Bramin expired. His daughter, who filled the air with her cries, was not able to detach herself from that livid and cold corpse, which she watered with her tears. At last, sorrow exhausted her strength, and the attendants availed themselves of her fainting, to carry her away from the melancholy place.

Blanford, whom his duty recalled from Asia to Europe, carried thither with him his pupil; and though she was beautiful and easy to seduce, though he was young and strongly taken, he respected her innocence. During the voyage, he employed himself in teaching her a little English, in giving her an idea of the manners of Europe, and in disengaging her docile mind from the prejudices of her country.

Nelson was gone to meet his friend. They saw each other again with the most sensible joy. But the first sight of Coraly struck and afflicted Nelson. 'What 'do you do with this girl?' said he to Blanford in a severe tone. 'Is she a 'captive, a slave? Have you carried 'her off from her parents? Have you 'made nature mourn?' Blanford related what had passed; he gave him so touching a portrait of the innocence, candour, and sensibility of the young Indian, that Nelson himself was moved at it. 'This is my design,' continued Blanford; 'at my mother's, and under 'her eyes, she shall be instructed in our 'manners: I will form that simple and 'docile heart; and if she can be happy 'with me, I will marry her.'—'I am 'easy, and acknowledge my friend.'

The surprizes and different emotions of a young stranger, to whom every thing is new, have been often described; Coraly experienced them all. But her happy facility in seizing and comprehending every thing, even outstripped the pains which they took to instruct her. Genius, talents, and the graces, were in her innate gifts: they had only the trouble of developing them by a slight culture. She was near sixteen, and Blanford was going to marry her, when death deprived him of his mother. Coraly lamented her as if she had been her own; and the pains which she took to console Blanford, touched him sensibly. But during the mourning, which retarded the nuptials, he had orders to embark on a new expedition. He went to see Nelson, and he confided to him not the grief which he felt at quitting the young Indian; Nelson would have made him blush at that; but the grief of leaving her to herself, in the midst of a world which was unknown to her. 'If my mother,' said he, 'were still 'living, she would be her guide; but 'the ill fortune which pursues this poor 'girl, has taken away from her her 'only support,'—'Have you, then, for-'got,' said Nelson, 'that I have a sis-'ter, and that my house is your own?' 'Ah, Nelson,' replied Blanford, fixing his eyes on his, 'if you knew what 'that charge is which you would have 'me confide to you!' At these words Nelson smiled with disdain. 'This un-'easiness,' said he, 'is a fine compli-'ment to us both. You dare not trust 'me with a woman!' Blanford, in confusion, blushed. 'Pardon my weak-'ness,' said he: 'it made me see dan-'ger where thy virtue finds none. I 'judged of your heart by my own: it 'is me whom my fear humbles. Let 'us say no more of it: I shall set out 'in peace, leaving the pledge of my 'love under the guard of friendship. 'But, my dear Nelson, if I die, let me 'request you to take my place.'—'Yes,

'that

'that of father, I promiſe you: aſk 'no more.'—'Enough: nothing far- 'ther detains me.'

The adieus of Coraly and Blanford were mingled with tears; but Coraly's tears were not thoſe of love. A lively gratitude, a reſpectful friendſhip, were the tendereſt ſentiments which Blanford had inſpired her with. Her own ſenſibility was not known to her: the dangerous advantage of unfolding it was reſerved for Nelſon.

Blanford was handſomer than his friend; but his figure, like his temper, had a manly and auſtere fierceneſs in it. The ſentiments which he had conceived for his pupil ſeemed to have given him rather the diſpoſition of a father than of a lover: his attentions were without complaiſance, his goodneſs without charms, his concern tender but ſolemn, and his deſire was that of rendering her happy with him, rather than of being happy with her.

Nelſon, who was of a more engaging temper, had alſo more ſweetneſs in his features and his language. His eyes, eſpecially; his eyes expreſſed the eloquence of the ſoul. His look, the moſt touching in the world, ſeemed to penetrate to the bottom of people's hearts, and to procure him a ſecret correſpondence with them. His voice thundered when there was a neceſſity to defend the intereſts of his country, her laws, her glory, her liberty; but in familiar converſation it was full of ſenſibility and charms. What rendered him ſtill more engaging, was an air of modeſty diffuſed over his whole perſon. This man, who at the head of his nation would have made a tyrant tremble, was, in company, of a timid baſhfulneſs: one ſingle word of commendation made him bluſh.

Lady Juliet Albury, his ſiſter, was a widow of great prudence, and an excellent heart; but of that kind of unhappy prudence which always anticipates misfortune, and accelerates inſtead of preventing it. It was ſhe who was charged with conſoling the young Indian. 'I 'have loſt my ſecond father,' ſaid that amiable girl to her; 'I have now only 'you and Nelſon in the world. I will 'love you, I will obey you. My life 'and heart are yours.' While ſhe was yet embracing Juliet, Nelſon arrives, and Coraly riſes with a ſmiling and heavenly countenance, but ſtill bedewed with tears.

'Well,' ſaid Nelſon to his ſiſter, 'have you conſoled her a little?'—'Yes, 'I am conſoled, I have no farther com- 'plaint;' cried the young Indian, at the ſame time wiping her fine black eyes. Then making Nelſon ſeat himſelf by the ſide of Juliet, and falling on her knees before them, ſhe took them by their hands, put them one in the other, and preſſing them tenderly in her own, 'There is my mother,' ſaid ſhe to Nelſon, with a look which would have ſoftened marble; 'and you, Nelſon, 'what will you be to me?'—'I, Ma- 'dam—your good friend.'—*My good 'friend!* that is charming! then I ſhall 'be your good friend too? Give me 'only that name.'—'Yes, my good 'friend, my dear Coraly, your frank- 'neſs delights me. My God,' ſaid he to his ſiſter, 'what a beautiful girl! 'She will be the delight of your life.' —'Yes, if ſhe is not the miſery of 'yours,' replied the provident ſiſter. Nelſon ſmiled with diſdain. 'No,' ſaid he, 'love never diſputes in my 'ſoul the rights of ſacred friendſhip, 'Be eaſy, ſiſter, and employ yourſelf 'in peace, in the care of cultivating 'this beautiful innocent. Blanford 'will be enchanted with her, if, at his 'return, ſhe is miſtreſs of our language; 'for we may perceive in her ideas, 'ſhadows of ſentiment, which ſhe is 'unhappy at not being able to expreſs. 'Her eyes, her geſtures, her features, 'every thing about her, proclaims in- 'genious thoughts, which only want 'words to call them forth. This, ſiſter, 'will be an amuſement to you, and 'you will ſee her mind open like a 'flower.'—'Yes, my brother, as a 'flower with a multitude of thorns.'

Lady Albury conſtantly gave Engliſh leſſons to her pupil, and the latter rendered them every day more intereſting, by intermingling with them ſtrokes of ſentiment, of a vivacity and delicacy which belongs only to pure nature. It was a triumph to her but to make diſcovery of a word, which expreſſed any gentle affection of the ſoul. She made the moſt natural, the moſt touching applications of them. Nelſon arrived; ſhe flew to him, and repeated her leſſon to him with a joy and ſimplicity, which yet he found only amuſing. Juliet alone ſaw the danger, and wanted to prevent it.

She began, by making Coraly underſtand, that it was not polite to *thee* and

thou it, and that she should say *you*: at least, unless it were a brother and a sister. Coraly made her explain what politeness was, and asked what it was good for, if brother and sister had no need of it? They told her, that in the world it supplied the place of good-humour. She concluded, that it was useless to those who wished well to each other. They added, that it displayed a desire of obliging and of pleasing. She replied, that this desire displayed itself without politeness: then giving for an example Juliet's little dog, which never quitted her, and caressed her perpetually, she asked if he was polite. Juliet entrenched herself behind the punctilios of decorum, which approved not, said she, the too free and joyous air of Coraly towards Nelson; and the latter, who had the idea of jealousy, because Nature gives us the sensation of it, imagined within herself that the sister was jealous of the kindnesses which her brother did her. 'No,' said she to her, 'I will 'afflict you no longer. I love you, I 'submit, and I will say *you* to Nel-'son.'

He was surprized at this change in Coraly's language, and complained of it to Juliet. 'The *you*,' said he, 'dis-'pleases me in her mouth: it agrees 'not with her simplicity.'—'It dis-'pleases me too,' replied the Indian; 'it has something rebuffing and severe; 'whereas the *thou* is so soft! so inti-'mate! so attracting!'—'Do you hear, 'sister? She begins to understand the 'language.'—'Ha! it is not that which 'makes me uneasy: with a soul like 'her's, we express ourselves but too 'well.'—'Explain to me,' said Coraly to Nelson, 'whence can arise the 'ridiculous custom of saying *you*, in 'speaking to a single person.'—'It 'arises, child, from the pride and weak-'ness of man: he perceives that he is 'insignificant, being but one; he en-'deavours to double himself, to multi-'ply himself in idea.'—'Yes, I com-'prehend that folly; but thou, Nelson, 'thou art not vain enough—' 'Again!' interrupted Juliet with a severe tone. 'Hey! what, sister, are you going to 'chide her!—Come, Coraly, come to 'me.'—'I forbid her.'—'How cruel 'you are? Is she in danger with me? 'Do you suspect me of laying snares 'for her? Ah! leave her that pure 'nature; leave her the amiable candour 'of her country and age. Wherefore 'tarnish in her that flower of innocence, 'more precious than virtue itself, and 'which our factitious manners have so 'much difficulty to supply? It seems to 'me that Nature is afflicted when the 'idea of evil penetrates into the soul. 'Alas! it is a venomous plant, which 'grows wild but too readily, without 'our giving ourselves the trouble of 'sowing it.'—'What you say is very 'fine, to be sure; but since evil exists 'we must avoid it; and in order to 'avoid it, we must know it.'—'Ah! my 'poor little Coraly,' said Nelson, 'into 'what a world art thou transplanted! 'What manners are those, in which we 'are obliged to lose one half of our in-'nocence, in order to save the other!'

In proportion as the moral ideas increased in the young Indian's mind, she lost her gaiety, and natural ingenuousness. Every new institution seemed to her a new fetter. 'Another duty!' said she; 'another prohibition! My 'soul is enveloped as with a net; they 'are going soon to render it immove-'able.' That they made a crime of what was hurtful, Coraly comprehended without difficulty; but she could not imagine any harm in what did no harm to any body. 'What greater happi-'ness in living together,' said she, 'than 'to see one another with pleasure? and 'why conceal from ourselves so sweet 'an impression? Is not pleasure a bless-'ing? Why then hide it from the per-'son who occasions it? They pretend 'to feel it with those whom they do 'not love, and to feel none with those 'whom they do! Some enemy of truth 'devised these manners.'

Reflections of this sort plunged her into melancholy; and when Juliet reproached her with it, 'You know the 'cause of it,' said she: 'every thing 'that is contrary to Nature must make 'her sorrowful; and in your manners 'every thing is contrary to Nature.' Coraly, in her little impatiences had something so soft and touching, that Lady Albury accused herself of afflicting her by too much rigour. Her manner of consoling her, and of restoring to her her good-humour, was by employing her in little services, and by commanding her as her child. The pleasure of thinking that she was useful, flattered her sensibly: she foresaw the instant, in order to seize it; but the same

same attentions that she paid to Juliet, she wanted to pay to Nelson, and they distressed her by moderating her zeal. 'The good offices of servitude,' said she, 'are low and vile, because they are 'not voluntary; but from the moment 'that they are free, there is no longer 'shame, and friendship ennobles them. 'Fear not, my good friend, that I shall 'suffer myself to be abased. Though 'very young, before I quitted India, I 'knew the dignity of the tribe in which 'I was born; and when your fine ladies 'and young lords come to examine me 'with such familiar curiosity, their disdain only elevates my soul, and I perceive that I am well worth them all. 'But with you and Nelson, who love 'me as your daughter, what can there 'be humiliating to me?'

Nelson himself seemed sometimes confused at the trouble she took. 'You 'are very vain, then,' said she to him, 'since you blush at having need of me! 'I am not so proud as you: serve me; 'I shall be flattered with it.'

All these strokes of an ingenuous and sensible soul, made Lady Albury uneasy. 'I tremble,' said she to Nelson, when they were alone; 'I tremble, lest she 'love you, and lest that love occasion 'her unhappiness.' He took this hint for an injury to innocence. 'See there, 'now,' said he, 'how the abuse of 'words alters and displaces ideas. Co'raly loves me, I know it; but she 'loves me as you do. Is there any 'thing more natural than to attach 'one's self to the person who does us 'good? Is it a fault in this girl, if the 'tender and lively expression of a sen'timent so just, and so laudable, is pro'faned in our manners? Whatever cri'minality we affix to it, has it ever 'come into her thought?'—'No, bro'ther, you do not understand me. No'thing more innocent than her love for 'you; but—' 'But, sister, why sup'pose, why want it to be love? It is true 'and pure friendship for me, which she 'has for you likewise.'—'You per'suade yourself, Nelson, that it is the 'same sentiment, will you make trial 'of it? Let us have the appearance of 'separating, and of reducing her to the 'choice of quitting the one or the other.' —'See there, now: snares! wiles! Why 'impose them on her? Why teach her 'to dissemble? Alas! does her soul 'practise disguise?'—'Yes, I begin to 'constrain her: she is grown afraid of 'me, ever since she has loved you.'— 'And why have you inspired her with 'that fear? You would have us be in'genuous, and you make it dangerous 'to be so: you recommend truth, and 'if it escape, you make it a reproach. 'Ah! Nature is not to blame: she 'would be frank if she had liberty; it 'is the art which is employed to con'strain her that gives her a bias to fal'sity.'—'These are very grave reflec'tions for what is in fact a mere jest! 'For, after all, what does the whole 'amount to? To make Coraly uneasy 'for a moment, in order to see to which 'side her heart will incline: that is all.' —'That is all: but that is a falsity; and, 'which is worse, an afflicting one.'— 'Let us think no more of it: it answers 'no end to examine what we would not 'see.'—'I, sister! I only want infor'mation to know how to behave. The 'manner alone has displeased me; but 'no matter: what do you require of 'me?'—'Silence, and a serious air. 'Coraly comes; now you shall hear.'

'What is the matter, now?' said Coraly, on coming up to them: 'Nelson 'in one corner! Juliet in the other! 'Are you displeased?'—'We have just 'taken,' said Juliet to her, 'a resolu'tion which afflicts us; but there was 'a necessity of coming to it. We are 'no longer to live together; each of 'us is to have an house of our own; 'and we are agreed to leave you the 'choice.'

At these words, Coraly viewed Juliet with eyes immoveable, with sorrow and astonishment. 'It is I,' said she, 'that 'am the cause of your wanting to quit 'Nelson. You are displeased that he 'loves me; you are jealous of the pity 'which a young orphan inspires him 'with. Alas! what will you not envy, 'if you envy pity, if you envy her who 'loves you, and who would give her 'life for you, the only valuable thing 'which is left her? You are unjust, my 'lady; yes, you are unjust. Your bro'ther, in loving me, loves not you less; 'and if it were possible he would love 'you more, for my sentiments would 'pass into his soul, and I have nothing 'to inspire into him towards you but 'complaisance and love.'

Juliet would fain have persuaded her, that she and Nelson parted good friends. 'It is impossible,' said she: 'you 'made

'made it your delight to live together; 'and since when is it become neceſſary 'that you ſhould have two houſes? 'People who love one another are never 'put to ſtraits; diſtance pleaſes only 'thoſe who hate each other.—You, O 'Heaven! You to hate!' reſumed ſhe, 'And who will love, if two hearts, ſo 'good, ſo virtuous, do not. It is I, 'wretch as I am, that have brought 'trouble into the houſe of peace. I 'will baniſh myſelf from it: yes, I be-'ſeech you, ſend me back into my own 'country. I ſhall there find ſouls ſen-'ſible to my misfortune and to my tears, 'who will not make it a crime in me 'to inſpire a little pity.'

'You forget,' ſaid Juliet to her, 'that 'you are our charge.'—'I am free,' replied the young Indian fiercely: 'I 'may diſpoſe of myſelf. What ſhould 'I do here? With whom ſhould I live? 'With what eyes would one of you re-'gard me, after having deprived you of 'the other? Should I ſupply the place 'of a ſiſter to Nelſon? Should I conſole 'you for the loſs of a brother? To oc-'caſion the unhappineſs of what alone 'I love! No, you ſhall not part: my 'arms ſhall be a chain to you.' Then running towards Nelſon, and ſeizing him by the hand; 'Come,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'ſwear to your ſiſter, that you 'love nothing in the world ſo well as 'her.' Nelſon, touched to the bottom of his ſoul, ſuffered himſelf to be led to his ſiſter's feet; and Coraly, throwing herſelf on Juliet's neck, 'You,' continued ſhe, 'if you are my mother, par-'don him for having loved your child: 'his heart has enough for us both; and 'if you are any loſer there, mine ſhall 'indemnify you for it.'—'Ah! dan-'gerous girl,' ſaid Juliet, 'what for-'rows will you ſoon occaſion us!'—'Ah, ſiſter,' cried Nelſon, who felt himſelf preſſed by Coraly againſt Juliet's boſom, 'have you the heart to afflict 'this poor girl!'

Coraly, enchanted at her triumph, kiſſed Juliet tenderly, at the very inſtant when Nelſon put his face to his ſiſter's. He felt his cheek touch the glowing cheek of Coraly, ſtill wet with tears. He was ſurprized at the confuſion and extaſy which this accident occaſioned him. 'Happily, that,' ſaid he, 'is on-'ly a ſimple emotion of the ſenſes: it 'goes not to the ſoul. I am myſelf, 'and I am ſure of myſelf. He diſ-ſembled, however, from his ſiſter, what he would fain have concealed from him-ſelf. He tenderly conſoled Coraly, in confeſſing to her that all they had juſt ſaid to her, to make her uneaſy, was no-thing more than a jeſt. 'But what is 'no jeſt,' added he, 'is the counſel 'which I give you of diſtruſting, my 'dear Coraly, your own heart, which 'is too innocent, and too ſenſible. No-'thing more charming than this affect-'ing and tender diſpoſition; but the 'beſt things very often become dange-'rous by their exceſs.'

'Will you not quiet my uneaſineſſes?' ſaid Coraly to Juliet, as ſoon as Nelſon was retired. 'Though you tell me ſo, 'it is not natural to make ſport of my 'ſorrow. There is ſomething ſerious 'in this paſtime. I ſee you deeply 'moved; Nelſon himſelf was ſeized 'with I know not what terror; I felt 'his hand tremble in mine; my eyes 'met his, and I ſaw there ſomething ſo 'tender, and ſo ſorrowful at the ſame 'time! He dreads my ſenſibility. He 'ſeems to be afraid that I ſhould de-'liver myſelf up to it. My good friend, 'would it be any harm to love?'—'Yes, child, ſince we muſt tell you ſo; 'it is a misfortune both for you and 'for him. A woman; you may have 'ſeen it in the Indies as well as among 'us; a woman is deſtined for the ſo-'ciety of one man alone; and by that 'union, ſolemnized and ſacred, the plea-'ſure of loving becomes a duty to her.'—'I know it.' ſaid Coraly ingenuouſly: 'that is what they call marriage.'—'Yes, Coraly; and that friendſhip is 'laudable between two married per-'ſons; but till then it is forbidden.'—'That is not reaſonable,' ſaid the young Indian: 'for before uniting one to the 'other, we muſt know whether we love 'each other; and it is but in propor-'tion to our love before-hand, that we 'are ſure of loving afterwards. For 'example, if Nelſon loved me as I love 'him, it would be clear that each of 'us had met their counter-part.'—'And 'do you not ſee in how many reſpects, 'and by how many compacts, we are 'ſlaves; and that you are not deſtined 'for Nelſon?'—'I underſtand you,' ſaid Coraly, looking down; 'I am poor, 'and Nelſon is rich; but my ill for-'tune at leaſt does not forbid me to 'honour and cheriſh beneficent virtue. 'If a tree had ſentiment, it would pleaſe

'itſelf

'itself in seeing the person who culti-
'vates it repose himself under it's shade,
'breathe the perfume of it's flowers,
'and taste the sweetness of it's fruits:
'I am that tree, cultivated by you two,
'and Nature has given me a soul.'

Juliet smiled at the comparison; but she soon gave her to understand, that nothing would be less decent, than what to her seemed so just. Coraly heard her, and blushed; from that time, to her gaiety, to her natural ingenuousness, succeeded an air the most reserved, and a conversation the most timid. What hurt her most in our manners, though she might have seeen examples of it in India, was the excessive inequality of riches: but she had not yet been humiliated by it; she was so now for the first time.

'Madam,' said she, the next day, to Juliet, 'my life is spent in instructing 'myself in things which are rather su-
'perfluous. An industry, which fur-
'nishes bread, would be much more
'useful to me. It is a resource, which
'I beseech you to be pleased to procure
'me.'—'You will never be reduced
'to that,' said Lady Albury; 'and,
'not to mention us, it is not for no-
'thing that Blanford has assumed to-
'wards you the quality of father.'—
'Favours,' replied Coraly, 'bind us
'much oftener than we would chuse.
'It is not disgraceful to receive them;
'but I clearly perceive that it is still
'more reputable to do without them.'
It was in vain that Juliet complained of this excess of delicacy: Coraly would not hear of amusements, or of useless studies. Amidst the labours which suit feeble hands, she chose those which required the most address and understanding; and, on applying herself to them, her only anxiety was to know whether they afforded a subsistence. 'You will
'leave me then?' said Juliet. 'I would
'put myself,' replied Coraly, 'above
'all wants, except that of loving you.
'I would have it in my power to rid
'you of me, if I am any obstacle to
'your happiness; but if I can contri-
'bute to it, entertain no fear of my re-
'moving myself. I am useless, and
'yet I am dear to you; that disintere-
'stedness is an example which I think
'myself worthy of imitating.'

Nelson knew not what to think of Coraly's application to a labour merely mechanical, and of the disgust which had seized her for matters of pure entertainment. He saw with the same surprize, the modest simplicity which she had assumed in her dress; he asked her the reason. 'I am trying what it is to
'be poor,' replied she, with a smile; and casting her eyes downwards, bedewed them with her tears. These words, and involuntary tears, touched him to the soul. 'O Heaven!' said he,
'can my sister have made her afraid of
'seeing herself poor and desolate!' As soon as he was alone with Juliet, he pressed her to clear up the matter to him.

'Alas!' said he, after having heard her, 'what cruel pains you take to
'poison her life and mine! Though
'you were less certain of her innocence,
'are you not persuaded of my honour?'
—'Ah, Nelson! it is not the crime, it
'is the misfortune which terrifies me.
'You see with what dangerous security
'she delivers herself up to the pleasure
'of seeing you; how she attaches her-
'self insensibly to you; how Nature
'leads her, without her knowledge, into
'the snare. Ah, brother! at your age
'and her's, the name of friendship is
'but a veil. And why can I not leave
'you both under the illusion! No, Nel-
'son, your duty is dearer to me than
'your ease. Coraly is destined for your
'friend; he himself has confided her to
'you; and, without intending it, you
'take her from him.'—'I, sister! what
'is it you dare to warn me of?'—'Of
'what you ought to shun. I would
'have her, at the same time that she
'loves you, consent to give herself to
'Blanford; I would have him flatter
'himself with being loved by her, and
'be happy with her; but will she be
'happy with him? Were you sen-
'sible only of pity, of which she is
'so worthy, what sorrow would you
'not feel at having troubled, perhaps
'for ever, the repose of this unfor-
'tunate young creature? But it would
'be a prodigy to see her consume with
'love, and you do nothing more than
'pity her. You will love her—Will,
'do I say? Ah, Nelson! Heaven grant
'that you do not already!'—'Yes,
'sister, it is time to take whatever reso-
'lution you please. I only beg of you
'to spare the sensibility of that innocent
'soul, and not to afflict her too much.'
—'Your absence will afflict her with-
'out doubt; yet that alone can cure
'her.

'her. This is the time of the year for 'the country; I was to follow you 'there, and to bring Coraly; do you 'go alone: we will remain at London. 'Write, however, to Blanford, that we 'have occasion for his return.'

From the moment the Indian saw that Nelson left her at London with Juliet, she thought herself cast into a desart, and abandoned by all nature. But as she had learned to be ashamed, and of course to dissemble, she pretended, as an excuse for her sorrow, the blame she took to herself of having separated them from each other. 'You 'was to have followed him,' said she to Lady Albury; 'it is I that keep you 'here. Ah, wretch that I am! leave 'me alone, abandon me!' And in saying these words she wept bitterly. The more Juliet tried to divert her, the more she increased her sorrows. All the objects which surrounded her, served only just to touch her senses; one idea alone possessed her soul. There was a necessity for a kind of violence to draw her from it; but the instant they left her to herself, it seemed as if one saw her thought fly back again to the object which she had been made to quit. If the name of Nelson was pronounced before her, a deep blush overspread her visage, her bosom heaved, her lips trembled, her whole body was seized with a sensible shivering. Juliet surprized her in a walk, tracing out on the sand, from place to place, the letters of that dear name. Nelson's picture decorated Juliet's apartment; Coraly's eyes never failed to fix themselves upon it, as soon as they were free: it was in vain she wanted to turn them aside; they soon returned there again, as it were of themselves, and by one of those emotions, in which the soul is accomplice, and not confidante. The gloominess into which she was plunged dispersed at this sight, her work fell out of her hands, and the utmost tenderness of sorrow and love animated her beauty.

Lady Albury thought it her duty to remove this feeble image. This was to Coraly the most distressful misfortune. Her despair now broke all bounds. 'Cruel friend!' said she to Juliet, 'you 'delight in afflicting me. You would 'have all my life be only sorrow and 'bitterness. If any thing softens my 'troubles, you cruelly take it from me. 'Not content to banish from me the 'man I love, his very shadow has too 'many charms for me; you envy me 'the pleasure, the feeble pleasure, of 'seeing it.'—'Ah, unhappy girl! what 'would you?'—'Love, adore him! 'live for him, while he shall live for 'another. I hope nothing, I ask no-'thing. My hands are sufficient to en-'able me to live, my heart is sufficient 'to enable me to love. I am trouble-'some to you, perhaps odious; remove 'me from you, and leave me only that 'image wherein his soul breathes, or 'wherein I think at least I see it breathe. 'I will see it, I will speak to it; I will 'persuade myself that it sees my tears 'flow, that it hears my sighs, and that 'it is touched by them.'—'And where-'fore, my dear Coraly, nourish this 'cruel flame, which devours you? I 'afflict you! but it is for your good, 'and Nelson's peace. Would you ren-'der him unhappy? He will be so, if 'he knows that you love him; and still 'more so if he loves you. You are not 'in a condition to hear my reasons; 'but this inclination which we think 'so sweet, would be the poison of his 'life. Have pity, my dear child, of 'your friend, and my brother: spare 'him the remorse, the complaints, which 'would bring him to his grave.' Coraly trembled at this discourse. She prefsed Lady Albury to tell her how Nelson's love for her could be so fatal to him. 'To explain myself farther,' said Juliet, 'would be to render odious 'to you, what you ought for ever to 'cherish. But the most sacred of all 'duties forbids him the hope of being 'yours.'

How is it possible to express the distress into which Coraly's soul was plunged! 'What manners! what a coun-'try!' said she, 'wherein one cannot 'dispose of one's self; wherein the first 'of all blessings, mutual love, is a ter-'rible evil! I must tremble, then, at 'seeing Nelson again! I must tremble 'at pleasing him! At pleasing him! 'Alas! I would give my life to be one 'moment, in his eyes, as amiable as he 'is in mine. Let me banish myself 'from this fatal shore, where it is made 'a misfortune to be loved.'

Coraly heard, every day, of vessels sailing for her country. She resolved to embark, without taking leave of Juliet. Only one evening, on going to bed, Juliet perceived that in kissing her hand,

hand, her lips preſſed her more tenderly than uſual, and that ſome profound ſighs eſcaped her. 'She leaves me more 'moved than ever before,' ſaid Juliet, alarmed. 'Her eyes are fixed on mine 'with the moſt lively expreſſion of ten-'derneſs and ſorrow. What paſſes in 'her ſoul?' This uneaſineſs diſturbed her the whole night, and the next morning ſhe ſent to know if Coraly was not yet up. They told her that ſhe was gone out alone, and in a very plain dreſs, and that ſhe had taken the way to the water-ſide. Lady Albury gets up in diſtreſs, and orders them to go in purſuit of the Indian. They find her on board a veſſel, begging her paſſage, environed by ſailors, whom her beauty, her graces, her youth, the ſound of her voice, and, above all, the native ſimplicity of her requeſt, raviſhed with ſurprize and admiration. She had nothing with her but bare neceſſaries. Every thing they had given her which was valuable, ſhe had left behind, excepting a little heart of cryſtal, which ſhe had received from Nelſon.

At the name of Lady Albury, ſhe ſubmitted without reſiſtance, and ſuffered herſelf to be reconveyed home. She appeared before her a little confuſed at her elopement; but to her reproaches ſhe anſwered, that ſhe was unhappy and free. 'What, my dear Coraly! do you 'ſee nothing here but unhappineſs?'—'If I ſaw here only my own,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhould never leave you. It is Nel-'ſon's unhappineſs that frights me, and 'it is for his peace that I would fly.'

Juliet knew not what to reply: ſhe durſt not talk to her of the rights which Blanford had acquired over her: this would have been to make her hate him, as the cauſe of her unhappineſs. She choſe rather to leſſen her fears. 'I could 'not conceal from you,' ſaid ſhe to her, 'all the danger of a fruitleſs love; but 'the evil is not without remedy. Six 'months of abſence, reaſon, friendſhip, 'how can we tell? Another object, 'perhaps——' The Indian interrupted her. 'Say death; there is my only 'remedy. What! will reaſon cure me 'of loving the moſt accompliſhed, the 'moſt worthy of men? Will ſix months 'of abſence give me a ſoul that loves 'him not? Does time change nature? 'Friendſhip will pity me: but will it 'cure me? Another object! You do 'not think ſo. You do not do me that 'injuſtice. There are not two Nelſons 'in the world: but though there were 'a thouſand, I have but one heart; that 'is given away. It is, you ſay, a fatal 'gift: that I do not comprehend; but 'if it be ſo, ſuffer me to baniſh myſelf 'from Nelſon, to hide from him my 'perſon and my tears. He is not inſenſible, he would be moved at it; 'and if it be a misfortune to him to 'love me, pity might lead him to it. 'Alas! who can, with indifference, ſee 'himſelf cheriſhed as a father, revered 'as a god? Who can ſee himſelf loved, 'as I love him, and not love in his 'turn?'—'You will not expoſe him to 'that danger,' replied Juliet; 'you 'will conceal your weakneſs from him, 'and you will triumph over it. No, 'Coraly, it is not the ſtrength that is 'wanting to you, but the courage of 'virtue.'—'Alas! I have courage a-'gainſt misfortune; but is there any 'againſt love? And what virtue would 'you have me oppoſe to him? They all 'act in concert with him. No, my 'lady, you talk to no purpoſe: you 'throw clouds over my underſtanding; 'you ſhed not the leaſt light on it. Let 'me ſee and hear Nelſon; he ſhall de-'cide upon my life.'

Lady Albury, in the moſt cruel perplexity, ſeeing the unhappy Coraly withering and pining in tears, and begging to be ſuffered to depart, reſolved to write to Nelſon, that he might come and diſſuade the poor girl from her deſign of returning to India, and preſerve her from that diſguſt of life which daily conſumed her. But Nelſon himſelf was not leſs to be pitied. Scarce had he quitted Coraly, but he perceived the danger of ſeeing her, by the repugnance which he had to leave her. All that had appeared only play to him with her became ſerious on being deprived of her. In the ſilence of ſolitude, he had interrogated his ſoul: he had found there friendſhip languiſhing, zeal for the publick good weakened, nay almoſt extinguiſhed, and Love alone ruling there, with that ſweet and terrible ſway which he exerciſes over good hearts. He perceived, with horror, that his very reaſon had ſuffered itſelf to be ſeduced. The rights of Blanford were no longer ſo ſacred; and the involuntary crime of depriving him of Coraly's heart was at leaſt very excuſable: after all, the Indian was free, and Blanford himſelf

would not have wished to impose it on her as a duty to be his. 'Ah, wretch!' cried Nelson, terrified at these ideas, 'whither does a blind passion lead me 'astray! The poison of vice gains upon 'me: my heart is already corrupted. 'Is it for me to examine whether the 'charge, which is committed to me, be-'long to the person who commits it? 'And am I made the judge, to whom 'it belongs, when I have promised to 'keep it? The Indian is free; but 'am I so? Should I doubt the rights 'of Blanford, if it were not in order to 'usurp them? My crime was, at first, 'involuntary; but it is no longer so, 'the moment I consent to it. I justify 'perjury! I think a faithless friend ex-'cusable! Who would have told thee, 'Nelson, who would have told thee, 'that on embracing the virtuous Blan-'ford, thou shouldest call in doubt, 'whether it were permitted thee to ra-'vish from him the woman who is to 'be his wife, and whom he delivered 'up to thy trust? To what a degree 'does Love debase a man; and what a 'strange revolution it's intoxication 'makes in a heart! Ah, let him rend 'mine if he will; he shall not make it 'either perfidious or base: and if my 'reason abandon me, my conscience, at 'least, shall not betray me. It's light is 'incorruptible; the cloud of passions 'cannot obscure it: there is my guide; 'and friendship, honour, and fidelity, 'have still some support.'

In the mean time Coraly's image pursued him perpetually. If he had only seen her with all her charms, arrayed in simple beauty, bearing in her countenance the serenity of innocence, the smile of candour on her lips, the fire of desire in her eyes, and in all the graces of her person the attracting air of voluptuousness, he would have found in his principles, in the severity of his manners, sufficient force to withstand seduction; but he thought he saw that amiable girl as sensible as himself, more feeble, with no other defence than a prudence which was not her own, innocently abandoning herself to an inclination which would be her unhappiness; and the pity which she inspired him with, served as fuel to his love. Nelson blamed himself for loving Coraly, but forgave himself for pitying her. Sensible of the evils which he was on the point of being the cause of, he could not paint to himself her tears, without thinking of the fine eyes which were to shed them, and the heaving bosom which they would bedew: thus the resolution of forgetting her rendered her still dearer to him. He attached himself to her by renouncing her: but in proportion as he perceived himself weaker, he became more courageous. 'Let me give over,' said he, 'the thoughts of a cure: I exhaust 'myself in fruitless efforts. It is a fit 'which I must suffer to go off. I burn, 'I languish, I die; but all that is mere 'suffering, and I am answerable to 'nobody but myself for what passes 'within. Provided nothing escape me 'from without that discovers my pas-'sion, my friend has no reason to com-'plain. It is only a misfortune to be 'weak; and I have the courage to be 'unhappy.'

It was in this resolution of dying, rather than betraying his friendship, that he received the letter from his sister. He read it with emotion, an extasy that was inexpressible. 'Oh, sweet and ten-'der victim,' said he, 'thou groanest, 'thou wouldest sacrifice thyself to my 'repose, and to my duty! Pardon! 'Heaven is my witness, that I feel, 'more strongly than thyself, all the 'pangs which I occasion thee. Oh, 'may my friend, thy husband, soon ar-'rive, and wipe away thy precious tears! 'He will love thee as I love thee; he 'will make his own happiness thine. 'However, I must see her, in order to 'detain and console her. Why should I 'see her? To what do I expose myself? 'Her touching graces, her sorrow, her 'love; her tears, which I occasion to 'flow, and which it would be so sweet to 'dry up; those sighs, which a heart sim-'ple and artless suffers to escape; that 'language of nature, in which a soul 'the most sensible paints itself with so 'much candour: what trials to sup-'port! What will become of me; and 'what can I say to her! No matter: 'I must see her, and talk to her, as a 'friend and a father. After seeing her, 'I only shall be the more uneasy, the 'more unhappy for it; but it is not 'my own peace that is in question, it 'is her's: and, above all, the happiness 'of a friend depends on it; a friend 'for whom she must live. I am cer-'tain of subduing myself, and how 'painful

'painful foever the conteſt may be, it 'would be a weakneſs and ſhame to 'avoid it.'

At Nelſon's arrival, Coraly, trembling and confuſed, ſcarce dare preſent herſelf to him. She had wiſhed his return with ardour; and at ſeeing him, a mortal chilneſs glided through her veins. She appeared, as it were, before a judge who was preparing, with one ſingle word, to decide her fate.

What were Nelſon's feelings, on ſeeing the roſes of youth faded on her beautiful cheeks, and the fire of her eyes almoſt extinguiſhed! 'Come,' ſaid Juliet to her brother, 'appeaſe the mind 'of this poor girl, and cure her of her 'melancholy. She is eaten up with 'the vapours with me; ſhe wants to 'return to India.'

Nelſon ſpeaking to her in a friendly manner, wanted to engage her, by gentle reproaches, to explain herſelf before his ſiſter: but Coraly kept ſilence, and Juliet perceiving that ſhe was a reſtraint upon her, went away.

'What is the matter with you, Co'raly? What have we done to you?' ſaid Nelſon. 'What ſorrow preſſes 'you?'—'Do not you know it? Muſt 'you not have ſeen that my joy and my 'ſorrow can no longer have more than 'one cauſe? Cruel friend! I live only 'through you, and you fly me: you 'would have me die! But you would 'not have it ſo; they make you do it: 'they do more, they require of me to 'renounce you, and to forget you. 'They fright me, they damp my very 'ſoul, and they oblige you to make me 'diſtracted. I aſk of you but one fa'vour,' continued ſhe, throwing herſelf at his knees; 'it is to tell me whom 'I offend in loving you, what duty I 'betray, and what evil I occaſion. Are 'there here laws ſo cruel, are there ty'rants ſo rigorous, as to forbid me the 'moſt worthy uſe of my heart and my 'reaſon? Muſt we love nothing in the 'world? or, if I may love, can I make 'a better choice?'

'My dear Coraly,' replied Nelſon, 'nothing is truer, nothing is more ten'der, than the friendſhip which attaches 'me to you. It would be impoſſible, 'it would be even unjuſt, that you 'ſhould not be ſenſible of it.'—'Ah! 'I revive, this is talking reaſon.'—'But though it would be extremely 'agreeable to me to be what you hold 'deareſt in the world, it is what I can'not pretend, neither ought I even to 'conſent to it.'—'Alas! now I don't 'underſtand you.'—'When my friend 'confided you to my care, he was dear 'to you?'—'He is ſo ſtill.'—'You 'would have thought yourſelf happy to 'be his?'—'I believe it.'—'You loved 'nothing ſo much as him in the world?' —'I did not know you.'—'Blanford, 'your deliverer, the depoſitary of your 'innocence, in loving you has a right 'to be loved.'—'His favours are al'ways preſent to me: I cheriſh him as 'a ſecond father.'—'Very well: know 'that he has reſolved to unite you to 'him, by a tie ſtill more ſweet and ſa'cred than that of his favours. He has 'confided to me the half of himſelf, 'and at his return he aſpires only to 'the happineſs of being your huſband.' —'Ah,' ſaid Coraly, comforted; 'this, 'then, is the obſtacle which ſeparates us? 'Be eaſy, it is removed.'—'How?' —'Never, never, I ſwear to you, will 'Coraly be the wife of Blanford!'— 'It muſt be ſo.'—'Impoſſible! Blan'ford himſelf will confeſs it.'—'What! 'he who received you from the hand of 'a dying father, and who himſelf has 'acted as a father to you!'—'Under 'that ſacred title I revere Blanford; 'but let him not require more.'—'You 'have then reſolved his unhappineſs?' —'I have reſolved to deceive nobody. 'If I were given to Blanford, and 'Nelſon demanded my life of me, I 'would lay down my life for Nelſon; 'I ſhould be perjured to Blanford.'— 'What ſay you?'—'What I will dare 'to tell Blanford himſelf. And why 'ſhould I diſſemble it? Does love de'pend on myſelf?'—'Ah, how cul'pable you make me!'—'You! in 'what? In being amiable in my eyes? 'Aye, Heaven diſpoſes of us. Hea'ven has given to Nelſon thoſe graces, 'thoſe virtues, which charm me: Hea'ven has given to me this ſoul, which 'it has made expreſsly for Nelſon. If 'they knew how full it is of him, how 'impoſſible that it ſhould love any 'thing but you, any thing like you!— 'Let them never talk to me of living, 'if it be not for you that I live.'—'And 'this is what diſtreſſes me. With what 'reproaches has not my friend a right 'to overwhelm me?'—'He! of what 'can he complain? What has he loſt? 'What have you taken from him? I

'love Blanford as a tender father; I 'love Nelson as myself, and more than 'myself: these sentiments are not in-'compatible. If Blanford delivered me 'into your hands as a deposit which 'was his own, it is not you, it is he 'that is unjust.'—'Alas! it is me, 'who oblige you to reclaim from him 'that treasure of which I rob him: it 'would be his if it were not mine; and 'the keeper becomes the purloiner.'— 'No, my friend, be equitable. I was 'my own, I am yours. I alone could 'give myself away, and have given my-'self to you. By attributing to friend-'ship rights which it has not, it is you 'that usurp them in it's behalf, and 'you render yourself an accomplice of 'the violence which they do me.'— 'He, my friend! do you violence?'— 'What signifies it to me whether he 'does it himself, or that you do it for 'him? Am I treated the less like a 'slave? One single interest occupies 'and touches you; but if another than 'your friend wanted to retain me cap-'tive, far from subscribing to it, would 'not you make it your glory to set me 'free? It is, then, only for the sake of 'friendship that you betray nature! 'What do I say? Nature!—and Love, 'Nelson, Love, has not that also it's 'rights? Is there not some law among 'you in favour of sensible souls? Is it 'just and generous to overwhelm, to 'drive to despair a fond female, and 'to tear, without pity, a heart whose 'only crime is loving you?'

Sobs interrupted her voice; and Nelson, who saw her choaked with them, had not even time to call his sister. He hastens to untie the ribbands which bound her bosom; and then all the charms of youth in it's flower were unveiled to the eyes of this passionate lover. The terror with which he was seized, rendered him at first insensible of them; but when the Indian, resuming her spirits, and perceiving herself pressed in his arms, thrilled with love and transport, and when on opening her fine languishing eyes she sought the eyes of Nelson; 'Heavenly 'powers,' said he, 'support me! all my 'virtue abandons me. Live, my dear 'Coraly!'—'Would you that I should 'live, Nelson! would you then, that 'I love you?'—'No, I should be 'perjured to friendship, I should be 'unworthy to see the light; unworthy 'of seeing my friend again. Alas! he 'foretold me this, and I vouchsafed 'not to believe him. I have presumed 'too much on my own heart. Have 'pity on it, Coraly, of that heart which 'you rend to pieces. Suffer me to fly you 'and to subdue myself.'—'Ah! you 'would have my death,' said she to him, falling into a fit at his feet. Nelson, who thinks he sees what he loves expiring, rushes to embrace her, and restraining himself suddenly at the sight of Juliet, 'My sister,' said he, 'assist 'her! it is for me to die!' On saying these words he withdraws.

'Where is he?' demanded Coraly, on opening her eyes. 'What have I 'done to him? Why fly me?—And 'you, Juliet, more cruel still, why re-'cal me to life?' Her sorrow redoubled, when she learned that Nelson was just gone; but reflection gave her a little hope and courage. The concern and tenderness which Nelson had not been able to conceal, the terror with which she had seen him seized, the tender words which had escaped him, and the violence which it was to him to subdue himself and withdraw, all persuaded her that she was beloved. 'If it be 'true,' said she, 'I am happy. Blan-'ford will return, I will confess the 'whole to him; he is too just and too 'generous to want to tyrannize over me.' But this illusion was soon dissipated.

Nelson received in the country a letter from his friend, announcing his return. 'I hope,' said he, at the end of his letter, 'to see myself, in three days, 'united to all that I love. Pardon, 'my friend, if I associate to thee in 'my heart the amiable and tender Co-'raly. My soul was a long time solely 'devoted to thee; now she partakes of 'it. I have confided to thee the sweet-'est of my wishes, and I have seen 'friendship applaud love. I form my 'happiness both of one and the other; 'I make it my felicity to think that by 'thy cares and those of thy sister, I 'shall see my dear pupil again; her 'mind ornamented with new acquire-'ments, her soul enriched with new 'virtues, more amiable, if possible, and 'more disposed to love. It will be the 'purest bliss to me to possess her as a 'benefit conferred by you.'

'Read this letter,' writ Nelson to his sister, 'and make Coraly read it. What

'a lesson

'a leſſon for me! What a reproach to 'her!'

'It is over,' ſaid Coraly, after having read; 'I ſhall never be Nelſon's; 'but let him not aſk me to be another's. 'The liberty of loving is a good which 'I am not able to renounce.' This reſolution ſupported her; and Nelſon in his ſolitude was much more unhappy than ſhe.

'By what fatality', ſaid he, 'is it, 'that what forms the charm of nature 'and the delight of all hearts, the happineſs of being loved, forms my torment? What ſay I? Of being loved? 'That is nothing; but to be loved of 'what I love! To touch on happineſs! 'To have only to deliver myſelf up to 'it! Ah, all that I am able to do, is 'to fly! inviolable and ſacred friendſhip aſks no more. In what a condition have I ſeen this poor girl! In 'what a condition did I abandon her! 'She may well ſay, that ſhe is the ſlave 'of my virtues. I ſacrifice her as a 'victim, and I am generous at her expence. There are, then, virtues which 'wound nature; and to be honeſt, one 'is ſometimes obliged to be unjuſt and 'cruel! Oh, my friend! mayeſt thou 'gather the fruit of the efforts which it 'coſts me; enjoy the good which I reſign to thee, and live happy from my 'misfortune! Yes, I wiſh that ſhe may 'love thee; I wiſh it, Heaven is my 'witneſs; and the moſt ſenſible of all 'my pains is, that of doubting the 'ſucceſs of my wiſhes.'

It was impoſſible for nature to ſupport herſelf in a ſtate ſo violent. Nelſon, after long ſtruggles, ſought repoſe; alas! there was no more repoſe for him. His conſtancy was at laſt exhauſted, and his diſcouraged ſoul fell into a mortal languor. The weakneſs of his reaſon, the inefficacy of his virtue, the image of a painful and ſorrowful life, the void and the ſtate of annihilation into which his ſoul would fall if it ceaſed to love Coraly, the evils without intermiſſion which he was to ſuffer if he continued to love her; and, above all, the terrifying idea of ſeeing, of envying, of hating, perhaps a rival in his faithful friend; all rendered his life a torment to him, all urged him to ſhorten the courſe of it. Motives more ſtrong reſtrained him. It was not a part of Nelſon's principles, that a man, a citizen, might diſpoſe of himſelf. He made it a law to himſelf to live, conſoled in his miſery if he could ſtill be uſeful to the world, but conſumed with heavineſs and ſorrow, and become as it were inſenſible to everything.

The time appointed for Blanford's return approached. It was neceſſary that every thing ſhould be ſo diſpoſed as to conceal from him the miſchief which his abſence had occaſioned; and who ſhould determine Coraly to conceal it, but Nelſon? He returned therefore to London, but languiſhing, dejected, to ſuch a degree as not to be known. The ſight of him overwhelmed Juliet with grief, and what impreſſion did it not make on the ſoul of Coraly! Nelſon took upon him to re-encourage them; but that very effort only ſerved to compleat his own dejection. The ſlow fever which conſumed him redoubled; he was forced to give way to it; and this furniſhed occaſion for a new conteſt between his ſiſter and the young Indian. The latter would not quit Nelſon's pillow. She urgently entreated them to accept of her care and attendance. They kept her out of the way from pity to herſelf, and for the ſake of ſparing him; but ſhe taſted not the repoſe which they meant to procure her. Every moment of the night they found her wandering round the apartment of the diſeaſed, or motionleſs on the threſhold of his door, with tears in her eyes, her ſoul on her lips, her ear attentive to the ſlighteſt noiſes, every one of which congealed her with fear.

Nelſon perceived that his ſiſter ſuffered her to ſee him with regret. 'Afflict 'her not,' ſaid he to her; 'it is to no 'purpoſe: ſeverity is no longer neceſſary. It is by gentleneſs and patience 'that we muſt endeavour at our cure.— 'Coraly, my good friend,' ſaid he to her one day when they were alone with Juliet, 'you would readily give ſome'thing to reſtore my health, would not 'you?'—'O Heaven! I would give 'my life.'—'You can cure me at leaſt. 'Our prejudices are, perhaps, unjuſt, 'and our principles inhuman; but the 'honeſt man is a ſlave to them. I have 'been Blanford's friend from my infancy. He depends on me as on himſelf, and the chagrin of taking from 'him a heart of which he has made me the 'keeper, is every day digging my grave. 'You may ſee whether I exaggerate. I 'do not conceal from you the ſource of

'the

'the slow poison which consumes me. 'You alone can dry it up. I require 'it not: you shall be still free; but 'there is no other remedy for my dis- 'ease. Blanford arrives. If he per- 'ceive your disinclination for him, if 'you refuse him that hand which but 'for me would have been granted him, 'be assured that I shall not survive his 'misfortune and my own remorse. Our 'embraces will be our adieus. Consult 'yourself, my dear child; and if you 'would that I live, reconcile me with 'myself, justify me towards my friend.' —'Ah! live, and dispose of me!' said Coraly to him, forgetting herself; and these words, distressing to love, bore joy to the bosom of friendship.

'But,' resumed the Indian, after a long silence, 'how can I give myself 'to him whom I do not love, with a 'heart full of him whom I do love?'— 'My dear, in an honest soul, duty tri- 'umphs over every-thing. By losing 'the hope of being mine, you will soon 'lose the thought. It will give you 'some pain, without doubt, but my 'life depends on it, and you will have 'the consolation of having saved it.'— 'That is every thing to me: I give my- 'self up at that price. Sacrifice your 'victim: it will groan, but it will obey. 'But you, Nelson, you, who are truth 'itself, would you have me disguise my 'inclinations, and impose thus on your 'friend? Will you instruct me in the 'art of dissembling?'—'No, Coraly; 'dissimulation is useless. I have not 'had the misfortune of extinguishing 'in you gratitude, esteem, and tender 'friendship; these sentiments are due 'to your benefactor, and they are suf- 'ficient for your husband: only display 'these towards him. As to that in- 'clination which leans not towards 'him, you owe him the sacrifice of it, 'but not the confession. That which 'would hurt if it were known, ought 'to remain for ever concealed; and 'dangerous truth has silence for it's re- 'fuge.'

Juliet interrupted this scene, too pain- ful to both, by leading away Coraly, whom she employed every endearment and commendation to console. 'It is 'thus,' said the young Indian, with a smile of sorrow, 'that on the Ganges 'they flatter the grief of a widow, who 'is going to devote herself to the flames 'of her husband's funeral pile. They 'adorn her, they crown her with flowers, 'they stupify her with songs of praise. 'Alas! her sacrifice is soon finished; 'mine will be cruel and lasting. My 'good friend, I am not eighteen years 'of age! What tears have I yet to shed 'till the moment when my eyes shall 'shut themselves for ever!' This me- lancholy idea painted to Juliet a soul absorbed in sorrow. She employed her- self no longer in consoling her, but in grieving along with her. Complaisance, persuasion, indulgent and feeling com- passion, all that friendship has most de- licate, was put in practice to no effect.

At last, they inform her that Blan- ford is landed; and Nelson, enfeebled and faint as he is, goes to receive and embrace him at the harbour. Blanford, on seeing him, could not conceal his astonishment and his uneasiness. 'Cou- 'rage, man,' said Nelson, 'I have been 'very ill; but my health is returning. 'I see you again, and joy is a balm 'which will soon revive me. I am not 'the only one whose health has suffered 'by your absence. Your pupil is a 'little changed: the air of our climate 'may contribute to it. As to the rest, 'she has made a great progress: her un- 'derstanding, her talents, have unfolded 'themselves; and if the kind of lan- 'guor into which she is fallen vanishes, 'you will possess what is pretty uncom- 'mon, a woman in whom Nature has 'left nothing wanting.'

Blanford, therefore, was not surprized to find Coraly weak and languishing; but he was much affected at it. 'It 'seems,' said he, 'as if Heaven want- 'ed to moderate my joy, and to punish 'me for the impatience which my duty 'excited in me at a distance from you. 'I am now here again, free, and restored 'to love and friendship.' The word *love* made Coraly tremble: Blanford perceived her concern. 'My friend,' said he to her, 'ought to have prepared 'you for the confession which you have 'just heard.'—'Yes, your goodness is 'well known to me; but can I approve 'the excess of it?'—'That is a lan- 'guage which savours of the politeness 'of Europe: join with me to forget it. 'Frank and tender, Coraly, I have seen 'the time when if I had said, "Shall "Hymen unite us?" you would have 'answered me without disguise, "With "all my heart;" or possibly, "I can- "not consent to it." Use the same free-

'dom

'dom now. I love you, Coraly, but 'I love to make you happy: your mis-'fortune would be mine.' Nelson, trembling, looked at Coraly, and durst not guess her answer. 'I hesitate,' said she to Blanford, 'through a fear 'like yours. While I saw you only 'as a friend, a second father, I said to 'myself, "He will be content with my "veneration and affectionate regard;" 'but if the name of husband mingle 'with titles already sacred, what have 'you not a right to expect? Have I 'wherewith to acquit me towards you?' —'Ah! that amiable modesty is worthy 'of adorning thy virtues. Yes, thou 'half of myself, your duties are ful-'filled, if you return my affection. Thy 'image has followed me every-where. 'My soul flew back towards thee across 'the depths which separated us: I have 'taught the name of Coraly to the 'echoes of another world.—Madam,' said he to Juliet, 'pardon me, if I envy 'you the happiness of possessing her. 'It will soon be my turn to watch over 'a health which is so precious to me. 'I will leave you the care of Nelson's: 'it is a charge not less dear to me. Let 'us live happy, my friends: it is you 'who have made me know the value of 'life; and, in exposing it, I have often 'experienced by what strong ties I was 'attached to you.'

It was settled, that in less than a week Coraly should be married to Blanford. In the mean time, she remained with Juliet, and Nelson never quitted her. But his courage was exhausted in supporting the young Indian's. To be perpetually constrained to suppress his own tears, to dry up those of a fond girl, who sometimes distressed at his feet, sometimes fainting and falling into his arms, conjuring him to have pity on her, without allowing one moment to his own weakness, and without ceasing to recal to his mind his cruel resolution, this trial appears above the strength of nature: accordingly, Nelson's virtue abandoned him every moment. 'Leave me,' said he to her, 'unhappy girl! I am 'not a tiger; I have a feeling soul, and 'you distract it. Dispose of yourself, 'dispose of my life; but leave me to 'die faithful to my friend.'—'And 'can I, at the hazard of your life, use 'my own will? Ah, Nelson! at least 'promise me to live; no longer for me, 'but for a sister who adores you.'— 'I should deceive you, Coraly. Not 'that I would make any attempt upon 'myself; but see the condition to which 'my grief has reduced me; see the ef-'fect of my remorse and shame antici-'pated: shall I be the less odious, less 'inexorable to myself, when the crime 'shall be accomplished?'—'Alas! you 'talk of a crime! Is it not one, then, to 'tyrannize over me?'—'You are free, 'I no longer require any thing; I 'know not even what are your duties; 'but I know too well my own, and I 'will not betray them.'

It was thus that their private conversation served only to distress them. But Blanford's presence was still more painful to them. He came every day to converse with them, not on the barren topicks of love, but the care he took, that every thing in his house should breathe chearfulness and ease; that every thing there should forestal the desires of his wife, and contribute to her happiness. 'If I die without children,' said he, 'the half of my wealth is her's, the 'other half is his who, after me, shall 'know how to please and to console her 'for having lost me. That, Nelson, is 'your place; there is no growing old 'in my profession: take my place when 'I shall be no more. I have not the 'odious pride of wanting my wife to 'continue faithful to my shade. Co-'raly is formed to embellish the world, 'and to enrich Nature with the fruits 'of her fecundity.'

It is more easy to conceive than describe the situation of our two lovers. Their concern and confusion were the same in both; but it was a kind of consolation to Nelson, to see Coraly in such worthy hands, whereas Blanford's favours and love were an additional torment to her. On losing Nelson, she would have preferred the desertion of all nature, to the cares, the favours, the love of all the world beside. It was decided, however, even with the consent of this unfortunate girl, that there was no longer time to hesitate, and that it was necessary she should submit to her fate.

She was led, then, as a victim to that house, which she had cherished as her first asylum, but which she now dreaded as her grave. Blanford received her there as a sovereign; and what she could not conceal of the violent state of her soul, he attributes to timidity, to the

the concern which, at her age, the approach of marriage inſpires.

Nelſon had ſummoned up all the ſtrength of a ſtoical ſoul, in order to preſent himſelf at this feſtival with a ſerene countenance.

They read the ſettlement which Blanford had made. It was, from one end to the other, a monument of love, eſteem, and beneficence. Tears flowed from every eye, even from Coraly's.

Blanford approaches reſpectfully, and ſtretching out his hand to her; 'Come,' ſaid he, 'my beſt-beloved, give to this 'pledge of your fidelity, to this title 'of the happineſs of my life, the in-'violable ſanctity with which it is to 'be cloathed.'

Coraly, on doing herſelf the utmoſt violence, had ſcarce ſtrength to advance, and put her hand to the pen. At the inſtant ſhe would have ſigned, her eyes were covered with a miſt; her whole body was ſeized with a ſudden trembling; her knees bent under her, and ſhe was on the point of falling, if Blanford had not ſupported her. Shocked, congealed with fear, he looks at Nelſon, and ſees him with the paleneſs of death on his countenance. Lady Albury had ran up to Coraly, in order to aſſiſt her. 'O Heaven,' cries Blanford, 'what is it that I ſee! Sorrow, death, 'ſurround me. What was I going to 'do? What have you concealed from 'me?—Ah, my friend, could it be poſ-'ſible!—See the light again, my dear 'Coraly; I am not cruel, I am not 'unjuſt; I wiſh only for your happi-'neſs!'

The women who ſurrounded Coraly, exerted themſelves to revive her; and decency obliged Nelſon and Blanford to keep at a diſtance. But Nelſon remained immoveable, with his eyes fixed on the ground, like a criminal. Blanford comes up to him, and claſps him in his arms.' 'Am I no longer thy friend?' ſaid he. 'Art thou not ſtill the half of 'myſelf? Open thy heart to me, and 'tell me what has paſſed. No, tell me 'nothing: I know all. This poor girl 'could not ſee thee, hear thee, and live 'with thee, without loving thee. She 'has ſenſibility, ſhe has been touched 'with thy goodneſs and thy virtues. 'Thou haſt condemned her to ſilence; 'thou haſt required of her the moſt 'grievous ſacrifice. Ah, Nelſon! had 'it been accompliſhed, what a misfor-'tune! Juſt Heaven would not permit 'it! Nature, to whom thou didſt vio-'lence, has reſumed her rights. Do 'not afflict thyſelf: it is a crime which 'ſhe has ſpared thee. Yes, the devo-'tion of Coraly was the crime of friend-'ſhip.'—'I confeſs it,' replied Nelſon, throwing himſelf at his knees: 'I have 'been the innocent cauſe of thy unhap-'pineſs, of my own, and that of this 'amiable girl; but I call fidelity, friend-'ſhip, honour, to witneſs——' 'No 'oaths,' interrupted Blanford; 'they 'wrong us both. Go, my friend,' continued he, raiſing him, 'thou wouldeſt 'not be in my arms, if I had been able 'to ſuſpect thee of a ſhameful perfidy. 'What I foreſaw is come to paſs, but 'without thy conſent. What I have 'juſt now ſeen is a proof of it, and that 'very proof is unneceſſary: thy friend 'has no need of it.'—'It is certain,' replied Nelſon, 'that I have nothing to 'reproach myſelf, but my preſumption 'and imprudence. But that is enough, 'and I ſhall be puniſhed for it. Co-'raly will not be thine, but I will not 'be her's.'—'Is it thus that you an-'ſwer a generous friend?' replied Blanford to him in a firm and grave tone of voice. 'Do you think yourſelf obliged 'to obſerve childiſh punctilios with me? 'Coraly ſhall not be mine, becauſe ſhe 'would not be happy with me. But 'an honeſt man for a huſband, whom 'but for you ſhe would have loved, is 'a loſs to her, of which you are the 'cauſe, and which you muſt repair. 'The contract is drawn up, they ſhall 'change the names; but I inſiſt that 'the articles remain. What I meant 'to give Coraly as a huſband, I now 'give her as a father. Nelſon, make 'me not bluſh by an humiliating re-'fuſal.'—'I am confounded, and not 'ſurprized,' ſaid Nelſon, 'at this gene-'roſity, which overpowers me. I muſt 'ſubſcribe to it with confuſion, and re-'vere it in ſilence. If I knew not how 'well reſpect reconciles itſelf to friend-'ſhip, I ſhould no longer dare to call 'you my friend.'

During this converſation Coraly had recovered, and again ſaw with terror the light which was reſtored to her. But what was her ſurprize, and the revolution which was ſuddenly wrought in her ſoul! 'All is known, all is forgiven!' ſaid Nelſon, embracing her; 'fall at the 'feet of our benefactor; from his hand

'I re-

'I receive yours.' Coraly would have been profuse in her acknowledgments. 'You are a child,' said Blanford to her. 'You should have told me every thing. 'Let us talk no more of it; but let us 'never forget that there are trials, to 'which virtue itself would do well not 'to expose herself.'

THE MISANTHROPE CORRECTED.

THERE is no correcting the natural disposition, they will tell me, and I agree to it; but among a thousand combined accidents which compose a character, what eye is sufficiently fine to distinguish that indelible characteristick? How many vices and irregularities are attributed to Nature, which she never occasioned? Such is, in man, the hatred of mankind: it is a factitious character; a part which we take up out of whim, and maintain through habit; but in acting which, the soul is under restraint, from which she struggles to be delivered. What happened to the misanthrope, whom Moliere has painted, is an instance of it; and we are now going to see how he was brought to himself again.

Alcestes, dissatisfied as you know with his mistress and his judges, detesting the city and the court, and resolved to fly mankind, retired very far from Paris, into the Voges, near Loval, on the banks of the Vologne. This river, whose shells contain the pearl, is still more valuable, on account of the fertility which it communicates to it's borders. The valley which it waters is a beautiful meadow. On one side arise smiling hills, interspersed with woods and hamlets; on the other extend, in a plain, vast fields covered with corn. Thither Alcestes retired, to live forgotten by all nature. Free from cares and duties, wholly resigned to himself, and at length delivered from the hateful sight of the world, he praised Heaven for having broken all his connections. A little study, much exercise, the less lively but tranquil pleasures of a gentle vegetation; in one word, a life peaceably active, preserved him from the dullness of solitude: he desired, he regretted nothing.

One of the pleasures of his retreat was to see around him the earth, cultivated and fertile, nourish a people who seemed to be happy. A misanthrope, who is such from virtue, thinks that he hates men, only because he loves them. Alcestes felt an emotion mingled with joy, at the sight of his fellow-creatures rich by the labour of their own hands. 'These people,' said he, 'are very happy in being yet half savages; they 'would soon be corrupted if they were 'more civilized.'

Walking in the fields, he accosts a labourer, ploughing and singing. 'God 'preserve you, good man,' said he to him; 'you are very merry!'—'According to custom,' replied the villager. —'I am very glad of it: it proves that 'you are content with your condition.' —'And well I may.'—'Are you married?'—'Yes, thank Heaven.'—'Have 'you any children?'—'I had five: I 'have lost one; but that loss may be 'repaired.'—'Is your wife young?'— 'Twenty-five.'—'Is she handsome?' 'She is so to me; but she is better 'than handsome, she is good.'—'And 'you love her?'—'Love her! who 'would not love her?'—'She loves you 'too, without doubt?'—'O, as to that, 'most heartily, and as well as before 'marriage.'—'You loved one another, 'then, before marriage?'—'Or else should 'we have taken each other?'—'And 'your children, do they come on well?' —'Ah, that is a pleasure! The eldest 'is but five; he has more wit than his 'father already. And my two girls! 'they are charming. It would be a 'very great pity if they should want 'husbands! The youngest boy sucks 'still; but the little rogue will be a 'sturdy fellow. Would you believe 'it? he beats his sisters when they go 'to kiss their mother. He is afraid 'that they are coming to take the breast 'from him.'—'All this is very happy?' —'Happy! I think so. You should

'see our joy, when I return from work. 'You would think they had not seen 'me for a year: I know not which to 'listen to. My wife hangs upon my 'neck, my daughters jump into my arms, 'my eldest boy seizes me by the legs; 'not one of them neglects me even to 'little Jackey himself, who rolling on 'his mother's bed, stretches out his 'little hands to me; while I laugh, and 'cry, and kiss them; for all this moves 'me.'—'I believe it.'—'You ought to 'feel it, for to be sure you are a father.' —'I have not that happiness.'—'So 'much the worse: there is no other 'joy.'—'And how do you live?'— 'Very well; upon excellent bread, good 'milk, and the fruits of our orchard. 'My wife, with a little bacon, makes a 'supper of cabbage, of which the king 'himself might eat. Then we have the 'eggs of our fowls; and on Sundays 'we regale ourselves, and drink a cup 'of wine.'—'Yes, but when the year 'turns out bad?'—'We are prepared 'for it, and live comfortably on what 'we have saved in a good one.'—'Aye, 'but the rigour of the weather, the 'cold, the rain, the heats?'—'We 'are accustomed to them; and if you 'knew what pleasure we have in com- 'ing in the evening to breathe the fresh 'air after a summer's day; or, in win- 'ter, to unnumb one's hands at a fire of 'good brush-wood, between one's wife 'and one's children! And then we sup 'heartily, and go to sleep; and do you 'think that we ever bestow a thought 'upon the bad weather? Sometimes 'my wife says to me, "My good "man, do you hear the wind and the 'storm? Ah, if you were now in the "fields!"—"I am not there, I am "with thee," I tell her; and in order 'to assure her of it, I press her against 'my bosom. Ah, Sir! there are a great 'many of the fine people who do not 'live so happy as we.'—'And the 'taxes?'—'We pay them chearfully: 'it must be so. All the country can- 'not be noble. The lord of the manor, 'and the judge, cannot come to labour. 'They supply our wants, we supply 'theirs; and every state of life, as it is 'said, has it's troubles.'—'What equi- 'ty?' said the misanthrope. 'There, 'now, in two words, is the whole œco- 'nomy of primitive society. O Nature! 'there is nothing just but thee: it is in 'thy uncultivated simplicity that we 'find sound reason!—But in paying the 'tribute so well, do not you give room 'to be charged more heavily?'—'We 'used to fear it formerly; but, thank 'God! the lord of the manor has freed 'us from that uneasiness. He performs 'the duty of our good king: he im- 'poses, he receives himself, and in cases 'of necessity he makes the advances. 'He takes care of us, as if we were his 'children.'—'And who is this gallant 'man?—'The Viscount De Laval. 'He is well enough known: the whole 'country respects him.'—'Does he re- 'side in his castle?'—'He passes eight 'months of the year there.'—'And 'the rest?'—'At Paris, I believe.'— 'Does he see company?'—'The towns- 'men of Bruyers, and sometimes our 'old folks, who go to eat his soup, and 'to chatter with him.'—'And does he 'bring any-body from Paris?'—'No- 'body but his daughter.'—'He is very 'much in the right!—And how does 'he employ himself?'—'In judging 'us, reconciling us, marrying our chil- 'dren, maintaining peace in our fami- 'lies, and assisting them when the sea- 'sons are bad.'—'I will go,' said Alce- stes, 'to see his village: it must be 'moving.'

He was surprized to find the roads, even the cross-roads, bordered with hedges, and kept with care; but having met people busied in keeping them even; 'Ah,' said he, 'there are the 'statute-labourers.'—'Statute-labour- 'ers!' replied an old man, who pre- sided over these works; 'we know none 'such here: these people are paid; no- 'body is constrained. Only, if there 'come to the village a vagabond, an 'idle fellow, I am sent to him; and if 'he wants bread, he earns it, or he 'goes to seek it elsewhere.'—'And 'who has established this happy poli- 'cy?'—'Our good lord, the father to 'us all.'—'And the funds for this ex- 'pence, who provides them?'—'The 'community; and as she imposes them 'herself, it comes not to pass, as is 'seen elsewhere, that the rich are ex- 'empted at the charge of the poor.'

Alcestes redoubled his esteem for the wise and beneficent man who governed this little people. 'How powerful would 'a king be,' said he, 'and a state how 'happy, if all the great proprietors of 'lands would follow the example of this 'nobleman! But Paris absorbs both 'the

'the wealth and the men: it ſtrips, it 'carries away every thing.'

The firſt glance of the village preſented him with the image of eaſe and health. He enters into a plain and large building, which was to appearance a public edifice, and there he finds a multitude of children, women, and old men, employed in uſeful labours. Idleneſs was not permitted, excepting to the laſt weakneſs. Infancy, almoſt at it's iſſuing from the cradle, acquired the habit and reliſh of labour; and old age, at the brink of the grave, ſtill exerciſed it's trembling hands. The ſeaſon in which the earth reſts, aſſembled to the workhouſe the vigorous men; and then the ſhuttle, the ſaw, and the hatchet, gave a new value to the productions of Nature. 'I am not ſurpriz-'ed,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'that theſe people 'ſhould be exempt from vice and want. 'They are laborious and perpetually 'employed.' He enquired how the workhouſe had been eſtabliſhed. 'Our 'good lord,' ſaid they to him, 'advanced the money. It was but a ſmall 'matter at firſt; and all was done at 'his riſk, at his expence, and his pro-'fit; but after being well aſſured that 'it was advantageous, he gave up the 'undertaking to us: he interferes no 'longer, except in protecting it; and 'every year he gives to the village the 'tools of ſome one of our arts: it is the 'preſent he makes at the firſt wedding 'that is celebrated in the year.'—'I 'muſt ſee this man,' ſaid Alceſtes: 'his character pleaſes me.'

He advances into the village, and he obſerves a houſe into which the people are going and coming with uneaſineſs. He demands the cauſe of theſe movements; they tell him that the head of the family is at the point of death. He enters, and ſees an old man, who with an expiring, but ſerene eye, ſeems to bid adieu to his children, who melt into tears around him. He diſtinguiſhes, in the midſt of the crowd, a perſon moved, but leſs afflicted, who encourages and conſoles them. By his plain and grave dreſs, he takes him for the phyſician of the village. 'Sir,' ſaid he to him, 'be not ſurprized at ſeeing here a 'ſtranger. It is not an idle curioſity 'that brings me hither. Theſe good 'people may have need of aſſiſtance 'at ſo melancholy a juncture; and I 'come—' 'Sir,' ſaid the viſcount to him, 'my peaſants thank you: I hope, 'as long as I live, they will have need 'of nobody; and if money could pro-'long the days of a good man, this 'worthy father of a family ſhould be 'reſtored to his children.'—'Ah, Sir,' ſaid Alceſtes, on diſcovering Monſieur De Laval by this talk, 'pardon an un-'eaſineſs which I ought not to have 'had.'—'I am not offended,' replied M. De Laval, 'that a good deed ſhould 'be diſputed with me; but may I know 'who you are, and what brings you 'here?' At the name of Alceſtes, he recollected that cenſor of human nature, whoſe rigour was ſo well known; but, without being intimidated, 'Sir,' ſaid he, 'I am very glad to have you in my 'neighbourhood, and if I can be of 'ſervice to you in any thing, I beg you 'to command me.'

Alceſtes went to viſit M. De Laval, and was received by him with that plain and ſerious gentility which proclaims neither the want, nor the deſire of being connected. 'There, now,' ſaid he, 'is a man of ſome reſerve. I like him 'the better for it.' He felicitated M. De Laval on the pleaſures of his ſolitude. 'You come to live here,' ſaid he, 'far from mankind, and you are 'very much in the right to fly from 'them!'—'I, Sir! I do not fly from 'mankind. I have neither the weak-'neſs to fear them, the pride to de-'ſpiſe them, nor the misfortune to hate 'them.'—This anſwer came ſo home, that Alceſtes was diſconcerted at it. But he would ſupport what he ſet out with, and he began the ſatire of the world. 'I have lived in the world, as well as 'others,' ſaid M. De Laval, 'and I 'have not found it ſo wicked. There 'are vices and virtues in it, good and 'evil, I confeſs; but nature is ſo com-'pounded, we muſt know how to ac-'commodate ourſelves to it.'—'Aye, 'but,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'in that com-'pound, the good is ſo very ſmall, and 'the evil ſo predominant, that the lat-'ter choaks up the former.'—'Ah, 'Sir,' replied the viſcount, 'if we were 'as ſtrongly fired with the good as with 'the evil, if we uſed the ſame warmth 'in publiſhing it, and good examples 'were poſted up as bad ones are, can 'you doubt but that the good ones 'would carry it on the balance? But 'gratitude ſpeaks ſo low, and com-'plaint declaims ſo loud, that we only

'hear the latter. Eſteem and friend-'ſhip are commonly moderate in their 'commendations: they imitate the mo-'deſty of the virtuous in praiſing them; 'whereas reſentment and injury ex-'aggerate every thing to exceſs. Thus 'we ſee not the good, but through a 'medium which leſſens it, and we view 'the evil through a vapour which mag-'nifies it.'

'Sir,' ſaid Alceſtes to the viſcount, 'you make me wiſh to think like you; 'and though I might have on my ſide 'the melancholy truth, your miſtake 'would be preferable.'—'Why, yes, 'without doubt: fretfulneſs is of no 'ſervice. A fine part for a man to play 'to be out of humour like a child, and 'get into a corner to pout at all the 'world! and why? For the bicker-'ings of the circle in which we live; 'as if all nature were an accomplice 'and reſponſible for the injuries at 'which we are hurt!'—'You are right,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'it would be unjuſt to 'render man a ſolitary animal; but how 'many griefs have we not to reproach 'them with in common? Believe me, 'Sir, my prejudice has ſerious and 'weighty motives. You will do me 'juſtice, when you know me. Per-'mit me to ſee you often.'—'Often; 'that is difficult,' ſaid the viſcount: 'my time is very much taken up; and 'my daughter and I have our ſtudies, 'which leave us little leiſure; but ſome-'times, if you pleaſe, we will enjoy 'our neighbourhood, at our eaſe, and 'without laying any conſtraint on each 'other; for the privilege of the coun-'try is to have it in our power to be 'alone when we have a mind.'

'This man is rare in his ſpecies,' ſaid Alceſtes on going away. 'And 'his daughter, who liſtened to us with 'the air of ſo tender a veneration for 'her father: this daughter, brought 'up under his eyes, accuſtomed to a 'plain life, pure manners, and plea-'ſures that are innocent, will be an 'eſtimable woman, or I am very much 'miſtaken—at leaſt,' reſumed he, 'un-'leſs they lead her aſtray in that Paris, 'where every thing is ruined.'

If we were to repreſent to ourſelves delicacy and ſentiment perſonified, we ſhould have the idea of Urſula's beauty. (It was thus that Mademoiſelle De La-val was called.) Her figure was ſuch as imagination gives to the youngeſt of the Graces. She was eighteen years compleat; and by the freſhneſs and regularity of her charms, one might ſee that Nature had juſt put the laſt hand to her. When unmoved, the lilies of her complexion prevailed over the roſes; but on the ſlighteſt emotion of her ſoul, the roſes effaced the lilies. It was little to have the colouring of flowers; her ſkin had alſo that fineneſs, and that down ſo ſoft, ſo velvet-like, which nothing has yet tarniſhed. But it was in the features of Urſula's countenance that a thouſand charms, varied perpetually, diſplayed themſelves ſucceſſively. In her eyes, ſometimes a modeſt languor, a timid ſenſibility, ſeemed to iſſue from her ſoul, and to expreſs itſelf by her looks; ſometimes a noble ſeverity, and commanding with ſweetneſs, moderated the touching luſtre of it; and we ſaw there reigning, by turns, ſevere decency, fearful modeſty, and lively and tender voluptuouſneſs. Her voice and mouth were of that kind which embelliſh every thing; her lips could not move without diſcovering new attractions; and when ſhe condeſcended to ſmile, her very ſilence was ingenuous. Nothing more ſimple than her attire, and nothing more elegant. In the country, ſhe let grow her hair which was of a pale white, of the ſofteſt tint; and ringlets, which art could not hold captive, floated around her ivory neck, and waved down upon her beautiful boſom. The miſanthrope had found in her the genteeleſt air, and the moſt decent converſation. 'It would 'be a pity,' ſaid he, 'that ſhe ſhould 'fall into bad hands: ſhe might make 'an accompliſhed woman. Indeed, the 'more I think of it, the more I con-'gratulate myſelf in having her father 'for a neighbour; he is an upright man, 'a gallant man: I do not believe that 'he has a very right way of thinking, 'but he has an excellent heart.'

Some days after, M. De Laval in walking out returned his viſit; and Alceſtes talked to him of the pleaſure which he muſt have in making people happy. 'It is a fine example,' added he, 'and to the ſhame of mankind a 'pretty rare one! How many folks, 'richer and more powerful than you, 'are only a burden to the people!'—'I 'neither excuſe them, nor blame them,' replied M. De Laval. 'To do good, 'there muſt be the power; and when 'we can, we ought to know how to

'ſeize

'seize it. But think not that it is so 'easy to effect it. It is not sufficient 'to be dexterous enough; we must be 'also happy enough; we must know 'how to treat just, sensible, docile 'minds; and frequently a great deal of 'address and patience is necessary to 'lead on a people, naturally diffident 'and fearful, to what is advantageous 'to them.'—'Truly,' said Alcestes, 'it 'is the excuse which they make; but 'do you think it a very solid one? And 'the obstacles which you have over-'come, cannot they also conquer them?' —'I have been,' said M. De Laval, 'solicited by opportunity, and second-'ed by circumstances. This people, 'newly conquered, thought themselves 'undone without resource, and the mo-'ment that I held open my arms to 'them, their despair made them rush 'into them. At the mercy of an arbi-'trary impost, they had conceived so 'much terror, that they chose rather to 'endure their vexations than to shew a 'little ease. The expences of the levy ag-'gravated the impost: these good peo-'ple were over-rated; and poverty was 'the asylum into which discourage-'ment had thrown them. On my ar-'rival here I found established this di-'stressing and destructive maxim to the 'country: *The more we labour, the 'more we shall be trampled upon.* The 'men durst not be laborious, the wo-'men trembled at becoming fruitful. 'I went back to the source of the evil: 'I addressed myself to the man appoint-'ed to collect the tribute.—"Sir," said 'I to him, "my vassals groan under the "burdens of constraint: I would wish "to hear no more of it. Let us see "what they owe yet of the year's im-"post; I am come to acquit them."— "Sir," replied the receiver to me, "that "cannot be."—"Why so?" said I. "It "is not the rule."—"How! not the rule "to pay the king the tribute which he "demands? to pay it him with the least "expence possible, and with the least de-"lay?"—"Yes," said he, "that is the "king's interest, but not mine. What "would become of me, if it were to be "paid down? The expences are the per-"quisites of my office."—To so good 'a reason I had no reply; and with-'out insisting farther, went to see the 'intendant.—"I beg two favours of "you," said I to him: "one, that I "may be permitted, every year, to pay "the tribute for my vassals; the other, "that their district may experience on-"ly the variations of the publick tax." 'I obtained what I asked.

"Friends," said I to my peasants, 'whom I assembled at my arrival, "I "now give you notice, that it is in my "hands you are to deposit for the fu-"ture the just tribute which you owe "to the king. No more vexations, no "more expence. Every Sunday, at "the parish-bank, your wives shall "bring their savings, and you will be "insensibly cleared. Labour, cultivate "your estates, increase their value to a "hundred fold; may the ground en-"rich you; you shall not be charged "the more for it: I, your father, will "be answerable to you for it. Those "who shall be deficient, I will assist; "and a few days of the dead season of "the year, employed on my works, "will re-imburse me what I advance."

'This plan was approved, and we 'have followed it. Our farmers wives 'never fail to bring me their little offer-'ing. On receiving it, I encourage 'them; I tell them of our good king; 'they go away with tears in their eyes: 'thus I make an act of love, of what 'they looked upon, before my time, as 'an act of servitude.

'The statute-works had their turn, 'and the intendant, who detested them, 'but knew not how to remedy them, 'was enchanted at the method which I 'had taken to exempt my village from 'them.

'Lastly, as there was here a great 'deal of superfluous time, and useless 'hands, I established the workhouse, 'which you may have seen. It is the 'property of the community; they ad-'minister it under their own eyes: every 'one works there; but that labour is 'not sufficiently paid to divert them 'from working in the fields. The hus-'bandman employs in it only the time 'which would otherwise be lost. The 'profit which they draw from it, forms 'a fund which is employed in contri-'buting to the militia, and to the ex-'pences of publick works. But an ad-'vantage, more precious still, from this 'establishment, is to have increased the 'human race. When children are a 'charge, we get no more than we are 'able to maintain; but from the mo-'ment that, at their issue from the cradle, 'they are able to provide for their own

'subsistence,

'subsistence, Nature delivers herself up 'to her attraction, without reserve or 'uneasiness. We seek the means of 'population: there is but one; the sub-'sistence, the employment of mankind. 'As they are born only to live, we must 'insure them a livelihood at their birth.'

'Nothing wiser than your principles, 'nothing more virtuous than your 'cares; but confess,' replied the misan-thrope, 'that this good, important as 'it is, is not so difficult as to discou-'rage those who love it; and that if 'there were men like you—' 'Say, 'rather, if they were so situated. I 'have had circumstances in my favour, 'and every thing depends upon that. 'We see what is right; we love it; we 'wish to effect it; but obstacles arise 'on every step we take. There needs 'but one to prevent it; and instead of 'one, there arise a thousand. I was 'here very much at my ease: not a man 'of credit had an interest in the evil 'which I meant to destroy; and how 'little would have been sufficient to 'prevent my being able to remedy it? 'Suppose, instead of a tractable in-'tendant, I had been under the neces-'sity of seeing, persuading, prevailing 'on an absolute man, jealous of his 'power, entirely led by his own opi-'nions, or swayed by the counsels of 'his subaltern officers. Nothing of all 'this scheme could have taken place: 'they would have told me not to busy 'myself, but to let things of this kind 'alone. Thus it is that good-will re-'mains often useless on the part of the 'rich. I know that you do not suspect 'it; but there is in your prejudices 'more caprice than you imagine.'

Alcestes, touched to the quick by this reproach, from a man whose esteem was to him of so great value, endeavoured to justify himself. He told him of the law-suit he had lost, of the coquette who had deceived him, and of all his subjects of complaint against human nature.

'Truly,' said the viscount to him, 'this was a mighty matter to make one 'uneasy! You go to chuse among a 'thousand women a giddy creature, who 'amuses herself, and makes a fool of 'you, as it were with reason; you take 'most seriously, that love of which she 'makes a mere diversion: who is to 'blame? But granting her wrong, are 'all women like her? What! because 'there are knaves among the men, are 'you and I the less honest on that ac-'count? In the individual, who hurts 'you, you hate the species! There is 'caprice, neighbour; there is caprice in 'this, you must agree.

'You have lost a cause which you 'thought just; but does not a suitor, who 'is a person of integrity, always think 'that he has a good cause? Are you 'alone more disinterested, more infal-'lible, than your judges? And if they 'have wanted lights, are they criminal 'for that? I, Sir, when I see men 'devote themselves to a state of life 'which has many troubles in it, and 'very few pleasures, which impose on 'their manners all the constraint of the 'most severe decorum, which requires 'an unremitted application, a steady re-'collection, a labour without any sala-'ry, where virtue herself is almost with-'out lustre; when I see them environed 'with the luxury and pleasures of an 'opulent city, live retired, solitary, in 'the frugality, simplicity, and mo-'desty of the first ages; I consider, as 'a sacrilege, the reproach of their equi-'ty. Now, such is the life of the 'greater part of the judges whom you 'accuse upon such slight foundations. 'It is not some giddy persons, whom 'you see fluttering in the world, that 'hold the balance of the laws. Till 'such time as they become more pru-'dent, they have at least the modesty 'to be silent before consummate judges. 'The latter are sometimes mistaken, 'without doubt, because they are not 'angels; but they are less of men than 'you and I; and I will never be per-'suaded, that a venerable old man, who 'at the break of day drags himself to 'the hall with a tottering pace, goes 'there to commit injustice.

'With regard to the court, there are 'so many interests in it, so compli-'cated, and so powerful, which thwart 'and oppose each other, that it is na-'tural that men should there be more 'delivered up to their passions, and 'more wicked than elsewhere. But 'neither you nor I have passed through 'these great trials of ambition and en-'vy; and it has depended, perhaps, 'on but a trifle, that we have not been, 'as well as others, false friends and 'base flatterers. Believe me, Sir, few 'people have a right to settle the police 'of the world.'

'All

'All honeſt people have that right,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'and if they would league 'themſelves together, the wicked would 'not have ſo much audacioufneſs and 'credit in the world.'—'When that 'league is formed,' ſaid M. De Laval, going away, 'we will both enrol our-'ſelves in it. Till then, neighbour, I 'adviſe you to do, without noiſe, in 'your little corner, the utmoſt good 'you can, by taking for a rule the love 'of mankind, and in reſerving your 'hatred for a few ſad exceptions.'

'It is a very great pity,' ſaid Alceſtes, when M. De Laval was gone, 'that goodneſs ſhould be always ac-'companied with weakneſs, while wick-'edneſs has ſo much ſtrength and vi-'gour!'—'It is a very great pity,' ſaid M. De Laval, 'that this honeſt 'man has taken a bias, which renders 'him uſeleſs to himſelf and others! He 'has uprightneſs, he loves virtue; but 'virtue is but a chimera without the 'love of human nature.' Thus both, judging each other, were diſpleaſed with one another.

An incident, pretty ſingular, rendered Alceſtes ſtill leſs at his eaſe with M. De Laval. The Baron of Blonzac, a right Gaſcon, a man of honour, but haughty, and a miſanthrope in his manner, had married the Canoneſs of Remiremont, a relation of the viſcount. His garriſon was in Lorraine. He came to ſee M. De Laval; and whether it was to amuſe himſelf, or to correct two miſanthropes by means of each other, M. De Laval wanted to ſet them by the ears. He ſent to invite Alceſtes to dinner.

Among men, table-talk turns pretty often upon politicks; and the Gaſcon, from the moment they had dined, began laying on, and drinking at a great rate. 'I make no point of concealing it,' ſaid he, 'I have taken an averſion to the 'world. I would be two thouſand 'leagues out of my own country, and 'two thouſand years removed from my 'own age. It is the country of whores 'and knaves; it is the age of favour-'ites; intrigue and favour have done 'their parts, and have forgot nothing 'but merit. He that pays his court 'obtains every thing, and he that does 'his duty has nothing. Myſelf, for 'example, who have never known but 'to march where honour calls, and to 'fight as becomes a ſoldier, I am 'known by the enemy; but may the 'devil take me if either the miniſtry, 'or the court, know that I exiſt! If 'they were to hear any mention of me, 'they would take me for one of my 'grandfathers; and if they ſhould be 'told that a cannon-ball had taken off 'my head, I will lay a wager they 'would aſk, if there were any more 'Blonzacs.'—'Why do you not ſhew 'yourſelf?' ſaid M. De Laval to him. 'There is no neceſſity to let one's ſelf 'be forgot.'—'Why, my lord, I ſhew 'myſelf in the day of battle. Is it at 'Paris that the colours are flying?'

In the midſt of this talk, letters were brought M. De Laval from Paris. He aſks leave to read them, 'In order to 'know,' ſaid he, 'if there be any thing 'new:' and one of his letters informs him, that the command of the citadel, which he ſolicited for M. De Blonzac, without his knowledge, had juſt been granted him. 'Hold,' ſaid he to him, 'there now is one who regards you.' Blonzac read, leaped with joy, and ran to embrace the viſcount; but after the ſally he had made, he durſt not mention what had happened to him. Alceſtes, believing he had found in him a ſecond, did not fail in urging him. 'There,' ſaid he, 'there, now, is an 'example of thoſe acts of injuſtice 'which ſhock me: a man of birth, a 'good ſoldier, after having ſerved the 'ſtate, remains forgotten, unrewarded; 'and let them tell me, now, that all 'goes well.'—'Why,' replied Blonzac, 'we muſt be juſt: every thing goes 'not ſo ill as is ſaid. Rewards are to 'be waited for a little; but they come 'in time. It is not the fault of the 'miniſtry, if more ſervices are perform-'ed than there are rewards to be be-'ſtowed; and, in fact, they do what 'they can.' Alceſtes was a little ſurprized at this change of language, and the apologetical tone which Blonzac aſſumed during the reſt of the entertainment. 'Come,' ſaid the viſcount, 'in 'order to reconcile you, let us drink 'the commandant's health:' and he publiſhed what he had juſt learned. 'I 'aſk the gentleman's pardon,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'for having dwelt on his com-'plaints: I did not know the reaſons 'which he had to retract them.'—'I!' ſaid Blonzac, 'I have no animoſity, and 'I come to like a child.'—'You ſee,' reſumed M. De Laval, 'that a miſan-'thrope is to be brought back to rea-'ſon.'

'son.'—'Yes,' replied Alceſtes, 'when 'he regulates his ſentiments on his own 'perſonal intereſt.'—'Ah, Sir!' ſaid Blonzac, 'do you know any one who 'is warm for what touches him neither 'nearly nor at a diſtance?'—'Every 'thing that concerns humanity,' replied Alceſtes, 'touches a good man 'nearly; and doubt not but there are 'friends enough of the order, to hate 'the evil as evil, without any reſpect 'to themſelves.'—'I will believe it,' replied the Gaſcon, 'when I ſee any 'one uneaſy at what paſſes in China; 'but as long as people are afflicted only 'at the hurt which they feel themſelves, 'or which they may feel, I ſhall believe that they think only of themſelves, while they have the air of being 'taken up with the thought of others. 'As for me, I am ſincere: I never gave 'myſelf up as an advocate for the diſcontented. Let every one plead his 'own cauſe. I complained while I had 'reaſon to complain; I now make 'my peace with the world, as ſoon as 'I have reaſon to be ſatisfied with it.'

As much as the ſcene with Blonzac diſturbed Alceſtes, ſo much did it rejoice M. De Laval and his daughter. 'There,' ſaid they, 'has our miſanthrope received a good leſſon.'

Whether it was ſhame or policy, he was ſome days without ſeeing them. He came again, however, one afternoon. The viſcount was gone to the village: Mademoiſelle De Laval received him; and on ſeeing himſelf alone with her, a tranſport ſeized him, which he had ſome difficulty to conceal.

'We have not had the honour of ſee'ing you,' ſaid ſhe to him, 'ſince M. 'De Blonzac's viſit; what ſay you to 'that gentleman?'—'Why, he is a 'man like the reſt.'—'Not ſo much 'like the reſt: he ſpeaks with an open 'heart; he ſays what others conceal; 'and that frankneſs makes him, in my 'opinion, a pretty ſingular character.'—'Yes, Mademoiſelle, frankneſs is 'rare; and I am very glad to ſee that 'at your age you are convinced of it. 'You will often have occaſion to recollect it, I promiſe you. Ah, in what a 'world you are going to fall! My lord 'excuſes it in the beſt manner he is 'able; his own beautiful ſoul does the 'reſt of mankind the honour to judge 'of them according to itſelf; but if 'you knew how dangerous and hateful 'the greater part are!'—'You, for 'example,' ſaid Urſula, ſmiling, 'you 'have very great reaſon to complain of 'it, is it not true?'—'Spare me, I 'pray you, and attribute not to me the 'perſonalities of M. De Blonzac. I 'think as he does in certain reſpects; 'but our motives are not the ſame.'—'I believe it; but explain to me what I 'am not able to conceive. Vice and 'virtue, I have been told, are nothing 'more than relative terms. The one is 'vice, becauſe it hurts mankind; the 'other virtue, on account of the good 'which it occaſions.'—'Exactly ſo.'—'To hate vice, to love virtue, is therefore only to intereſt ourſelves in the 'welfare of mankind; and in order to 'intereſt ourſelves we muſt love them. 'For how can you at once intereſt yourſelf, and hate them?'—'I intereſt 'myſelf in the welfare of the good whom 'I love, and I deteſt the wicked who 'hurt them; but the good are ſo very 'few in number, and the world is ſo 'full of bad people.'—'See there, now. 'Your hatred at leaſt extends not to 'all mankind. But do you think that 'thoſe whom you love are every where 'ſo few in number? Let us make a 'voyage together in idea. Do you agree 'to it?'—'With all my heart.'—'Firſt, 'in the country, are you not perſuaded 'that there are morals; and if not virtues, at leaſt ſimplicity, goodneſs, innocence?'—'There is alſo commonly 'diſtruſt and craft.'—'Alas! I can 'eaſily conceive what my father has ſaid 'more than once: craft and diſtruſt are 'the conſequence of weakneſs. We 'find them in the villagers, as in women and children. They have every 'thing to fear; they eſcape, they defend themſelves as well as they can; 'and we obſerve the ſame inſtinct in 'moſt animals.'—'Yes,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'and that very circumſtance forms the 'ſatyr of the cruel and rapacious animals which they have to guard againſt.'—'I underſtand you; but we are now 'ſpeaking only of the country people, 'and you will agree with me, that they 'are more worthy of pity than of hatred.'—'Oh, I agree.'—'Let us paſs 'to the cities, and take Paris for example.'—'My God! what an example you chuſe.'—'Very well; even 'in that ſame Paris, the common people 'are good: my father frequents them; 'he goes often into thoſe obſcure re-

'ceſſes,

'ceſſes, where poor families crouded 'together groan in want; he ſays that 'he finds there a modeſty, patience, an 'honeſty, and ſometimes even a noble-'neſs of thinking, which moves and 'aſtoniſhes him.'—'And this it is 'which ought to ſet us againſt an un-'pitying world, which forſakes ſuffer-'ing virtue, and pays reſpect to ſucceſs-'ful and inſolent vice.'—'Not ſo faſt: 'we are at the common people. Agree 'that, in general, they are good, docile, 'courteous, honeſt, and that their own 'ſincerity gives them a confidence which 'is very often abuſed.'—'Oh, very 'often!'—'You love the common peo-'ple, then? And in all places the com-'mon people form the greater number.' —'Not every-where.'—'We are ſpeak-'ing only of our own country: it is 'with that which I would reconcile you 'at preſent. Now let us come to the 'great folks; and tell me, firſt, if my 'father has impoſed on me in it, when 'he has painted the manners of the wo-'men. "As their duties," ſaid he, "are "included in the interior of a private "life, their virtues have nothing daz-"zling: it is only their vices that are "conſpicuous; and the folly of one wo-"man makes more noiſe than the diſ-"cretion of a thouſand. Thus the evil "riſes in evidence, and the good re-"mains buried." My father adds, that 'one moment of weakneſs, one im-'prudence, ruins a woman, and that 'this blemiſh has ſometimes tarniſhed 'a thouſand excellent qualities. He 'confeſſes, in ſhort, that the vice which 'we moſt reproach women with, and 'which does them the moſt injury, 'hurts only themſelves, and that there 'is no reaſon for hating them. For 'the reſt, what is it you reproach us 'with? A little falſhood? But that is 'all by agreement. Inſtructed from 'our infancy to endeavour to pleaſe 'you, we have no other care but to con-'ceal what will not pleaſe you. If we 'diſguiſe ourſelves, it is only under 'thoſe charms which you love better 'than our own. And do you know 'that nothing is more humiliating to 'us? I am young; but I can eaſily 'perceive, that the moſt beautiful act 'of our freedom is, to ſhew ourſelves 'ſuch as we are; but to diſguiſe one's 'ſoul, and to diſavow one's ſelf, is of 'all the acts of ſervitude the moſt de-'grading; and we muſt do to ſelf-love 'the moſt painful violence, to debaſe 'one's ſelf to a lye, and to diſſimulation. 'This is what I find woman a ſlave in; 'and it is a yoke which has been im-'poſed on us.'—'If all women thought 'as nobly as you do, beautiful Urſula, 'they would not ſo lightly, and in 'gaiety of heart, make a mere paſtime 'of deceiving us.'—'If they deceive 'you, it is your own fault. You are 'our kings: convince us that you love 'nothing ſo much as truth, that truth 'alone pleaſes and touches you, and we 'will tell it you always. What is the 'ambition of a woman? To be lovely, 'and to be loved. Very well, write on 'the apple, *To the moſt ſincere*; they 'will all diſpute it with each other in 'unaffected ſimplicity.' But you have 'written, *To the moſt ſeducing*; and each 'tries, who ſhall ſeduce you the beſt. 'As for our jealouſies, our little ani-'moſities, our tattlings, our bickerings; 'all theſe things are only amuſing to 'you; and you will agree that your 'wars are of very different conſequence. 'Nothing remains, then, but the fri-'volouſneſs of our taſtes and humours; 'but whenever you pleaſe, we ſhall be 'more ſolid; and, perhaps, there are 'many women who have ſeized, as it 'were by ſtealth, lights and principles 'which cuſtom envied them.'—'You 'are a proof of it,' ſaid Alceſtes to her, 'you whoſe ſoul is ſo much above your 'ſex and your age.'—'I am young,' replied Urſula, 'and I have a right to 'your indulgence; but the queſtion is 'not concerning me; it is the world 'which you fly, which you abandon, 'without well knowing why. I have 'attempted the defence of the women; 'I leave to my father the care of ac-'compliſhing that of the men; but I tell 'you before-hand, that in giving me 'the picture of their ſociety, he has 'often told me, that there were almoſt 'as few perverſe minds as there are 'heroick ſouls, and that the majority 'was compoſed of weak, harmleſs peo-'ple, who required nothing but peace 'and quiet.'—'Yes, peace and quiet, 'every one for himſelf, and at the ex-'pence of the perſon to whom it be-'longs. The world, Mademoiſelle, is 'compoſed only of dupes and knaves: 'now, nobody would be a dupe; and 'to ſpeak only of what concerns your-'ſelf, I muſt tell you, that all the idle people there are at Paris of an age to

'pleaſe, are employed morning and 'evening in nothing elſe but in laying 'ſnares for the women.'—'Good!' ſaid Urſula, 'they know it; and my 'father is perſuaded that this conteſt 'of gallantry on the one ſide, and co-'quetry on the other, is nothing but a 'diverſion, in which both are agreed. 'Let who will be of the party: thoſe 'who like not the ſport, have only to 'keep themſelves in their own corners; 'and nothing, he ſays, is in leſs danger 'than virtue, when it is real.'—'You 'think ſo?'—'I am ſo thoroughly per-'ſuaded of it, that if ever I commit an 'indiſcretion, I declare to you before-'hand, it will be becauſe I ſhall have 'liked it.'—'Without doubt they like 'it; but they like it when ſeduced by 'an enchanter who makes you like it.' —'That alſo is an excuſe which at 'preſent I renounce: I have no faith 'in enchantments.'

They were got ſo far, when Monſieur De Laval arrived from his walk. 'What 'ſay you to Alceſtes?' continued Ur-ſula. 'He would have me tremble at 'being expoſed in the world to the ſe-'duction of the men.'—'Why,' ſaid the father, 'we muſt not be too confi-'dent; I do not think thee infallible.' —'No, but you ſhall be my guard; 'and if you loſe ſight of me, you know 'what you have promiſed me.'—'I will 'endeavour to keep my word.'—'May 'I be in the ſecret?' demanded Alce-ſtes, with a timid air. 'There is no 'ſecret in it,' replied Urſula: 'my fa-'ther has had the goodneſs to inſtruct me 'in my duties; and if he could guide me 'perpetually, I ſhould be very ſure of 'not going aſtray. If I forgot myſelf, 'he would not forget me; accuſtomed 'to read my ſoul, he would regulate 'all it's motions; but as he will not 'always have his eyes upon me, he has 'promiſed me another guide, a huſband, 'which may be his friend and mine, 'and who ſhall ſupply the place of a 'father.'—'Add alſo, and of a lover; 'for a young woman muſt have love. 'I would have you be diſcreet, but I 'would likewiſe have you be happy; 'and if I had the imprudence to give 'you a huſband who did not love you, 'or knew not how to pleaſe you, I 'ſhould no longer have the right of 'taking it ill, that the deſire of enjoy-'ing the greateſt of felicities, that of 'loving and being loved, ſhould make 'you forget my leſſons.'

Alceſtes went away, charmed at the wiſdom of ſo good a father, and more ſtill with the candour and honeſty of the daughter. 'A diſtinction has been 'made,' ſaid he, 'between the age of 'innocence and of reaſon; but in her 'happy diſpoſition, innocence and rea-'ſon unite. Her ſoul purifies, at the 'ſame time that it enlightens itſelf. 'Ah! if there were a man worthy of 'cultivating gifts ſo precious, what a 'ſource of delicious enjoyments to him! 'There is nothing but this world, filled 'with ſhelves, from which it is neceſ-'ſary to keep her at a diſtance. But 'if ſhe loved, what would it be to her? 'A virtuous and tender huſband would 'ſuffice her, would be to her inſtead of 'every thing. I dare believe, that at 'twenty-five, I was the man who ſuited 'her——At twenty-five! and what did 'I know then? To amuſe myſelf, and 'run into diſſipations! Was I capable 'of filling the place of a wiſe and vigi-'lant father, I ſhould have loved her 'to diſtraction; but what confidence 'ſhould I have inſpired into her? It is 'not, perhaps, too much yet to have 'fifteen years more experience. But 'from eighteen to forty, the interval 'muſt be frightful to her. There is no 'thinking of it.'

He thought of it, however, all night long; the next day he did nothing elſe; and the day following, the firſt idea which preſented itſelf to him was that of his amiable Urſula. 'Ah, what a pity; ſaid he, 'what a pity, if ſhe were to take 'to the vices of the world! her ſoul is 'pure as her beauty. What ſweetneſs 'in her temper! what touching ſimpli-'city in her manners and language! 'They talk of eloquence; is there any 'truer? It was impoſſible for her to 'convince me; but ſhe has perſuaded 'me. I have deſired to think like her: 'I could have wiſhed that the illuſion, 'which ſhe ſpread before me, were never 'diſſipated. Why have I not over her, 'or rather over her father, that ſoft em-'pire which ſhe has over me? I would 'engage them to live here in the ſimpli-'city of nature. And what need ſhould 'we have of the world? Ah! three 'hearts, thoroughly united, two lovers 'and a father, have they not, in the in-'timacy of a mutual tenderneſs, ſuffi-

'cient

'cient to render themſelves fully hap-
'py?'

In the evening, on walking out, his ſteps turned, as it were of themſelves, towards M. De Laval's gardens. He found him there with the pruning-knife in his hand, amidſt his eſpaliers. 'Con-
'feſs,' ſaid he to him, 'that theſe tran-
'quil pleaſures are well worth thoſe
'noiſy ones which people like, or think
'they like, at Paris.'—'Every thing
'has it's ſeaſon,' replied the viſcount.
'I love the country, while it is alive: I
'am uſeleſs at Paris, and my village
'has need of me; I enjoy myſelf there,
'and the good which I do; my daugh-
'ter is pleaſed and amuſed there; this
'is what attracts and retains me. But
'think not that I live there alone. Our
'little town of Bruyers is full of honeſt
'people, who love and cultivate letters.
'There is no part of the world where
'the inhabitants have gentler manners.
'They are polite with freedom; plain,
'yet informed. Candour, uprightneſs,
'and gaiety, are the character of that
'amiable people: they are ſocial, hu-
'mane, beneficent. Hoſpitality is a
'virtue, which the father tranſmits to
'his ſon. The women are ſprightly
'and virtuous; and ſociety, embelliſh-
'ed by them, unites the charms of de-
'cency to the pleaſures of liberty. But
'in enjoying ſo ſweet a commerce, I
'ceaſe not ſtill to love Paris; and if
'friendſhip, the love of letters, con-
'nections which I hold dear, did not
'recal me there, the attraction of va-
'riety alone would carry me back every
'year. The moſt lively pleaſures lan-
'guiſh at laſt, and the ſweeteſt become
'inſipid to him who knows not how to
'vary them.'—'I can conceive, how-
'ever,' ſaid the miſanthrope, 'that a
'ſociety, not numerous, intimately con-
'nected with eaſe and truth, might
'ſupply every thing to itſelf; and if
'an offer, agreeable to Mademoiſelle
'De Laval, had no other inconvenience
'in it than that of fixing her in the
'country, I am perſuaded that you your-
'ſelf—' 'Why, truly,' ſaid M. De Laval, 'if my daughter could be hap-
'py there, I ſhould make her happineſs
'mine: that is moſt certain. It is now
'fifty years ſince I have lived for my-
'ſelf; it is high time now that I ſhould
'live for her. But we are not come to
'that. My daughter loves Paris, and
'I am rich enough to ſettle her there
'decently.'

This was enough for Alceſtes; and for fear of diſcovering himſelf, he turned the converſation to gardening, by aſking M. De Laval if he did not cultivate flowers. 'They paſs away too
'ſoon,' replied the viſcount. 'The
'pleaſure and regret of them border ſo
'nearly on each other, and the idea of
'deſtruction intermingles I know not
'what of melancholy in the ſentiment
'of enjoyment. In a word, I feel more
'chagrin in ſeeing a roſe-buſh ſtripped,
'than joy in ſeeing it flouriſh. The
'culture of kitchen-herbs has an inte-
'reſt more gradual, more ſupported,
'and, to ſay the truth, more ſatisfac-
'tory; for it terminates in the uſeful.
'While Art exerciſes and fatigues it-
'ſelf in varying the ſcenes of a flower-
'garden, Nature herſelf changes the
'decorations of the kitchen-garden.
'How many metamorphoſes, for ex-
'ample, have theſe peach-trees expe-
'rienced, from the very budding of
'their leaves to the full maturity of
'their fruits! Talk to me, neighbour,
'of laſting pleaſures: thoſe which,
'like flowers, endure but a day, coſt
'too much to renew.'

Maſter of the father's temper, Alceſtes wanted to inform himſelf of that of the daughter, and it was eaſy for him to have a private converſation with her. 'The more I penetrate,' ſaid he to her, 'into your father's heart, the
'more I admire and love him.'—'So
'much the better,' ſaid Urſula; 'his
'examples will ſoften your manners;
'he will reconcile you with thoſe like
'him.'—'Like him! Ah, how few
'there are of them! It is to him,
'without doubt, a favour from Hea-
'ven to have a daughter like you,
'beautiful Urſula; but it is a happi-
'neſs as rare to have a father like him.
'May the huſband which the Almighty
'deſtines you, be worthy both of one
'and the other!'—'Pray to Heaven,' ſaid ſhe, ſmiling, 'that he be not a mi-
'ſanthrope! Men of that caſt are too
'difficult to correct.'—'Would you
'like better,' ſaid Alceſtes, 'one of
'thoſe cold and trifling men, whom
'every thing amuſes, and nothing in-
'tereſts; one of thoſe weak and eaſy
'men, whom the mode bends and
'faſhions to her own taſte; who are

'wax, with respect to the manners of 'the time, and to whom custom is the 'supreme law? A misanthrope loves 'but few; but when he loves, he loves 'truly.'—'Yes, I perceive that such a 'conquest is flattering to vanity; but 'I am plain, and not vain. I would 'not find in a heart devoted to me as- 'perity or moroseness; I would wish 'to be able to communicate to it the 'softness of my own temper, and that 'sentiment of universal benevolence, 'which makes me see men and things 'on the most comfortable side. I could 'not spend my life in loving a man who 'would pass his in hatred.'—'That is 'not civil, for they accuse me of being 'a misanthrope.'—'Why, it is from 'you, and you alone, that I have taken 'the idea of that character: for M. De 'Blonzac's humour was nothing but a 'fit of the pouts; and you have seen 'how small a matter could bring him 'to himself again; but a hatred of 'mankind, arising from reflection and 'founded on principles, is horrible; 'and this is what you profess. I am per- 'suaded that your aversion for the world 'is nothing but whim, an excess of 'virtue: you are not wicked, you are 'only rigid; and I believe you as little 'indulgent to yourself as to another; 'but this too severe and impatient pro- 'bity renders you unsociable; and you 'must confess, that a husband of that 'temper would not be entertaining.'— 'You would have a husband entertain 'you, then?'—'And entertain him- 'self,' replied she, 'with the same 'things as me; for if marriage be a 'participation of cares, it ought, in re- 'turn, to be a society of pleasures.'

'Nothing clearer,' said Alcestes to himself, after their conversation: 'she 'could not have told me her thoughts 'more plainly, though she had divined 'mine. This is for me and my comrades 'a discharge before hand. And what 'am I thinking of? I am forty years, 'free and easy; it depends on myself 'only to be happy. Happy! And can 'I be so alone, with a soul so sensible? 'I fly the men! Ah, it was the wo- 'men, the handsome women, whom I 'ought to have flown. I thought I 'knew them sufficiently to have no 'more to fear from them; but who 'could have expected what has hap- 'pened to me? I must, to my misfor- 'tune, in the corner of a province, find 'beauty, youth, graces, wisdom, virtue 'herself, united in one and the same 'object. It seems as if Love pursued 'me, and that he had purposely made 'this dear girl to confound and distress 'me. And what a way she takes to 'trouble my repose! I detest airs; no- 'thing more simple than she. I despise 'coquetry; she thinks not even of 'pleasing. I love, I adore candour; 'her soul shews itself quite naked. She 'tells me, to my face, the most cruel 'truths: what would she do more, if 'she had resolved to turn my brain? 'She is very young; she will change: 'launched into the world, which she 'loves, she will soon assume the man- 'ners of it; and it is to be believed that 'she will at last be a woman like the 'rest—To be believed! Ah, I do not 'believe it; and if I believed it, I 'should be too unjust. She will be the 'happiness and glory of her husband, 'if he be worthy of her. And I, I 'shall live alone, detached from every 'thing, in a state of solitude and anni- 'hilation; for it must be confessed, the 'soul is annihilated as soon as it loves 'nothing any longer. What do I say? 'Alas! if I loved no longer, would that 'repose, that sleep of the soul, be fright- 'ful to me? Flattering idea of a greater 'happiness! It is thou, thou that makest 'me perceive the void and dulness of 'myself. Ah, to cherish my solitude 'for ever, I should never have gone out 'of it!'

These reflections, and these struggles, plunged him into a melancholy, which he thought it his duty to bury. Eight days having rolled away, the viscount, surprized at not seeing him again, sent to know if he was sick. Alcestes returned answer, that in fact he had not been well for some time past. The sensible soul of Ursula was affected at this answer. She had entertained, since his absence, some suspicion of the truth; she was now the more persuaded of it, and reproached herself for having afflicted him. 'Let us go and see him,' said the viscount; 'his condition moves my 'pity. Ah, daughter, what a gloomy 'and painful resolution is that of living 'alone, and of being sufficient to one's 'self! Man is too weak to support it.'

When Alcestes saw Mademoiselle De Laval, for the first time, enter his house,

house, it seemed as if his habitation had transformed itself into a temple. He was seized with joy and respect; but the impression of melancholy still made an alteration in his features. 'What 'is the matter, Alceste?' said M. De Laval to him 'I find you afflicted; 'and you lay hold of that moment to 'fly me. Do you think us some of 'those people who do not love sorrowful countenances, and who must always be accosted with a laugh? When 'you are easy and happy, keep at home; 'very well: but when you have any 'grief, come to me, either to pity or 'console you.' Alceste listened, and admired in silence. 'Yes,' said he, 'I 'am struck with a thought which pursues and afflicts me: I would not, and 'I ought not, to conceal it from you. 'Heaven is my witness, that after having renounced the world, I regretted 'nothing when I knew you. Since, I 'perceive that I deliver myself up to the 'pleasure of your company; that my 'soul is attached to you by all the ties 'of esteem and friendship; and that 'when they must be broken, alas! perhaps for ever, this retreat, which I 'should have cherished, will be my 'grave. My resolution, therefore, is 'taken, not to wait till the charm of 'so sweet a connection render the solitude in which I am to live compleatly 'odious; and in revering you, in loving both the one and the other, as 'two beings by which Nature is to procure honour to herself, and of which 'the world is not worthy, I beg you to 'permit me to bid you an eternal farewel.' Then taking the viscount's hands, and kissing them respectfully, he watered them with his tears. 'I 'will see you no more, Sir,' added he, 'but I will hold you dear for ever.'

'Nonsense!' said M. De Laval to him; 'and who hinders us to live together, if you like my acquaintance? 'You have taken an aversion to the 'world: a mere whim; but no matter. 'I know you have a good heart; and 'though our tempers may not be the 'same, I see nothing incompatible in 'them; and perhaps they resemble 'each other more than you imagine. 'Why, then, take a resolution which 'afflicts you, and which would afflict 'me? You think with sorrow on the 'moment of our separation: it depends 'only on yourself to follow us. No'thing more easy than to live at Paris, 'free, solitary, and detached from the 'world. My company is not tumul'tuous: it shall be yours; and I pro'mise you, I will not force you to see 'any but such as you shall esteem.'—'Your goodness penetrates me,' said Alceste; 'and I know what I owe to 'such kindness.'—'Nothing in it,' replied the viscount; 'such as you are, you 'suit me. I esteem you, I pity you; 'and if I deliver you up to your own 'melancholy, you are a lost man. That 'would be a pity; and the condition 'which you are in, permits me not to 'abandon you. In a month I quit the 'country; I have room for you; and 'whether under the title of friendship 'or gratitude, I insist on your accept'ing it.'—'Ah!' said Alceste, 'that 'it were possible!'—'Have you,' demanded the viscount, 'any obstacle? 'If your fortune were out of order, I 'flatter myself that you are not the 'man to blush at confessing it.'—'No,' said Alceste, 'I am richer than a single 'person has need to be. I have ten thou'sand crowns a year, and owe nothing. 'But a more serious motive retains me 'here: you shall judge of it.'—'Come 'and sup with us, then, and I will 'disperse all these clouds, if I can.—'You make a hydra,' said he to Alceste on the road, 'of the vice and wick'edness you have seen in the world. 'Would you try, now, to what a small 'number this class of men, who ter'rify you, are reduced, make out a list 'of them with me this evening; and I 'defy you to name a hundred persons 'whom you have a right to hate.'—'O Heaven! I could name a thousand,'—'We'll see. Remember only to be 'just, and to establish your complaints 'well.'—'Nay, it is not on particular 'facts that I judge them, but by the 'gross of their manners. For example; 'it is pride which I condemn in some, 'meanness in others. I object to them, 'the abuse of riches, of credit, of au'thority, an exclusive love of them'selves, a cruel insensibility to the mis'fortunes and wants of others: and 'although these vices, in every stage of 'life, have not features sufficiently 'marked, formally to exclude a man 'from the number of honest people, 'they authorize me to banish him from 'the

'the number of those whom I esteem 'and love.'—'From the instant that 'we talk in general,' said the viscount, 'we declaim as much as we please; 'but we render ourselves liable to be 'unjust. Our esteem is a possession of 'which we are but the depositaries, and 'which appertains of right to him who 'deserves it: our contempt is a punish-'ment, which it depends on us to in-'flict, but not according to our own 'caprice; and every one of us, in judg-'ing of his fellow, owes him the exa-'mination which he would require, if 'it were himself were to be judged; 'for, in regard to manners, publick 'censure is a tribunal where we all sit, 'but to which we are also all cited. 'Now, who of us consents that we 'should be accused there on vague pre-'sumptions, and to be condemned with-'out proofs? Consult your own heart, 'and see in yourself whether you duly 'observe the first of all laws.'

Alcestes walked with his eyes cast down, and sighed deeply. 'You have in 'your mind,' said the viscount, 'some 'deep wound, which I do not probe. 'I only combat your opinions; and it 'is, perhaps, to your sensations that I 'ought to apply the remedy.'

On these words, they arrive at the castle of Laval; and, whether through penetration or delicacy, Ursula steals away, and leaves them together.

'Sir,' said Alcestes to the viscount, 'I am now going to talk to you as to 'a friend of twenty years: your good-'ness engages me, and my duty obliges 'me to it. It is but too true, that I 'must renounce what formed the con-'solation and the charm of my life, 'the pleasure of seeing you, and liv-'ing with you. Another man would 'make use of circumlocution, and blush 'to break silence; but I see nothing in 'my misfortune which I ought to dis-'semble. I have not been able to see 'with indifference, what Nature has 'formed the most accomplished in it's 'kind: I confess it to Ursula's father; 'and I beseech him to forget it after I 'have taken my leave.'—'How!' said the viscount, 'is this the great secret? 'Very well, now we have it; you are 'in love: is there any thing in that to 'make you unhappy? Ah! I would 'fain be so yet; and, far from being 'ashamed, I should glory in it. Come, 'we must endeavour to please, to be 'very tender, very complaisant: we are 'still amiable at your age; perhaps you 'will be beloved.'—'Ah, Sir, you do 'not understand me:'—'Pardon me; 'I believe I do. You are in love with 'Ursula?'—'Alas! yes, Sir.'—'Ve-'ry well; who hinders you from try-'ing, at least, if so good a heart will 'be touched with the feelings of yours?' —'What, Sir, do you authorize me!' —'Why not? Sure you think me very 'difficult! you have by inheritance a 'handsome fortune; and if my daugh-'ter consents, I do not see what can 'happen better.' Alcestes fell, in a-maze, at the viscount's knees. 'Your 'goodness, Sir, overpowers me!' said he; 'but it is of no service to me. Ma-'demoiselle De Laval has declared to 'me, that a misanthrope was her aver-'sion; and this is the idea she has 'formed of my character.'—'That 'does not signify: you will change.' —'I cannot dissemble.'—'You shall 'not; you shall reconcile yourself to 'mankind in good earnest. You will 'not be the first bear that has been 'tamed by the women.'

Supper being served up, they seated themselves at table; and never before was M. De Laval in so sprightly an humour. 'Come, neighbour,' said he, 'chear up: nothing sets us off like spi-'rits.' Alcestes, thus encouraged, took heart. He made the most touching eulogy on the intimate commerce of souls, whom the relish of virtue, the love of truth, the sentiment of what is just and honest, unites. 'What an attraction,' said he, 'have they for each other! 'With what effusion they communi-'cate! What agreement, and what har-'mony they form in uniting! I find 'here but two that are like me; and 'they are a whole world to me. My 'soul is full; I could wish to be able 'to fix my existence in this delicious 'state, or that my life were a chain of 'incidents resembling this.'—'I would 'lay a wager,' replied the viscount, 'that if Heaven were to take you at 'your word, you would be very sorry 'not to have asked more.'—'I confess 'it, and if I were worthy of forming 'yet one wish—' 'Did not I say so? 'Such is man. He has always some-'what to wish for. We are but three; 'and yet there is not one of us who

'does

'does not wish for something—What 'say you, daughter? For my part, I 'confess I ask of Heaven, with ardour, 'a husband whom you may love, and 'who may render you happy.'—'I ask 'also,' said she, 'a husband, who may 'assist me in making you happy.'—'And you, Alcestes?'—'And I, if I 'durst, would ask to be that husband.'—'There are now three wishes,' said M. De Laval, 'which might easily be 'made one.'

I have already given some intimation, that Ursula had conceived for Alcestes an esteem and good-will: the trouble she had taken to soften his temper, proclaimed it; but it was only in this instant that she perceived how sensibly that disposition, which we must either love or hate, had touched her.

'Hey!' said her father, after a long silence, 'we are all three struck dumb! 'That Alcestes, at forty, should be 'confused at having made a declaration 'to a lady of eighteen, is natural enough 'that Ursula should blush, look down; 'and observe a modest silence, is quite 'natural too; but I, who am but a 'mere confident, why should I be grave? 'The scene is amusing.'—'Sir,' said Ursula, 'spare me, I beseech you. Alcestes gives me a mark of esteem, of 'which I am very sensible: and he 'would be angry that we should make 'a jest of it.'—'Would you have me 'believe that he is in earnest?'—'I am 'sure of it, and I am obliged to him.'—'You do not think so. Forty! A 'man of his temper.'—'His temper 'should estrange him from all sorts of 'engagements, and he knows very well 'what I think of it.'—'And his age!'—'That is another thing; and I beg 'you to forget age, when you chuse me 'a husband.'—'Ah, child, but you are 'so young!'—'For that reason, I have 'need of a husband who is not so.'—'There is nothing, then, but this unfortunate misanthropy, which you have 'to object to him; and I own that it is 'incompatible with your temper.'—'And more still with the plan which I 'have formed to myself.'—'And what 'is that plan?'—'That of nature: to 'live happily with my husband; to 'sacrifice my taste to him, if unluckily I have not his; to renounce all 'society, rather than deprive me of 'his, and not to take one step in 'the world without his counsel and 'consent. Judge, therefore, of what 'concern it is to me, that his wisdom 'should have nothing savage in it, and 'that he should be pleased with that 'world in which I hope to live with 'him.'—'Whoever he be, Mademoiselle,' replied Alcestes, 'I dare answer, 'that he will be pleased wherever you 'are.'—'My father,' continued Ursula, 'takes a pleasure in bringing together 'to his suppers a circle of genteel people, both of the city and court; I 'would wish my husband to be of all 'these suppers, I would have him in 'particular be agreeable.'—'Animated 'with the desire of pleasing you, he will 'certainly do his best.'—'I propose to 'myself to frequent the plays, the public walks.'—'Alas! these were my 'only pleasures; there are none more 'innocent.'—'Balls, too, are my passion. And I would have my husband carry me there.'—'In mask; 'nothing is more easy.'—'In a mask, 'or without a mask, just as I like.'—'Right: that is a matter of indifference, 'as long as one is there with one's 'wife.'—'Nay, more, I would have 'him dance there.'—'Very well, Mademoiselle, I will dance there,' said Alcestes with transport, throwing himself at her feet. 'Nay,' cried the viscount, 'there is no resisting that; and 'since he consents to dance at a ball, 'he will do impossibilities for you.'—'My lord thinks me ridiculous, and he 'has reason, but I must compleat my 'being so.—Yes, Mademoiselle, you 'see at your feet, a friend, a lover, and 'since you will have it so, a second father; a man, in short, who renounces 'life, if he is not to live for you.' Ursula enjoyed her triumph; but it was not the triumph of vanity. She restored to the world, and to himself, a virtuous man, an useful citizen, who but for her had been lost. Such was the conquest with which she was pleased; but her silence was her only consent. Her eyes, timidly cast on the ground, dared not raise themselves to those of Alcestes: one of her hands only was suffered to drop into his, and the crimson of her beautiful cheeks expressed the transport and emotion of her heart. 'Hey!' said the father, 'you are motionless and 'dumb! What will you say to him?'—'Whatever you please.'—'What I

'please,

'pleaſe, is to ſee him happy, provided 'he make my daughter ſo.'—'It is in 'his power: he is virtuous, he reveres 'you, and you love him.'—'Let us 'embrace, then, my children. This 'has been a happy evening, and I fore-'bode well of a marriage, which is con-'cluded as in the good old times.—'Take my advice, my friend,' continued he; 'be a man, and live with 'mankind. It is the intention of Na-'ture. She has given faults to us all, 'that nobody may be diſpenſed with be-'ing indulgent to the faults of others.'

FINIS.

PR
1297
N6
v.6

The Novelist's magazine

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY